

VISVA-BHARATI  
LIBRARY



PRESENTED BY











THE  
POETICAL WORKS OF  
ROBERT  
BROWNING

*Complete from 1833 to 1868  
and the shorter poems thereafter*

*Oxford University Press, Amen House, London, E.C.4*

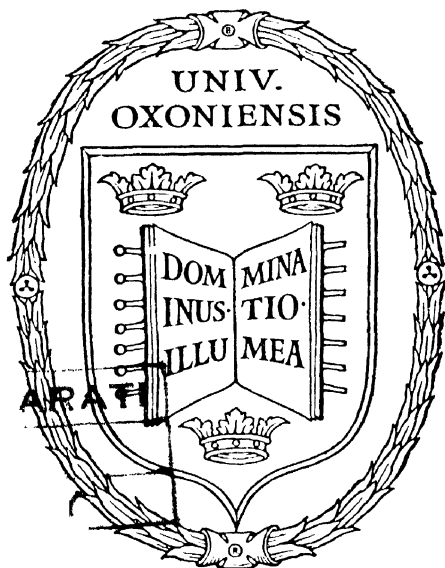
GLASGOW NEW YORK TORONTO MELBOURNE WELLINGTON

BOMBAY CALCUTTA MADRAS CAPE TOWN

*Geoffrey Cumberlege, Publisher to the University*

THE  
POETICAL WORKS OF  
ROBERT  
BROWNING

*Complete from 1833 to 1868  
and the shorter poems thereafter*



GEOFFREY CUMBERLEGE  
OXFORD UNIVERSITY PRESS  
LONDON    NEW YORK    TORONTO

*This edition of Robert Browning's Poems was first published in 1905, and reprinted in 1907, 1909, 1910, 1911, 1912, 1913, 1916, 1917, 1919, 1920.*

PRINTED IN GREAT BRITAIN  
O.S.A.







[*Dedication to the three volumes of 1863*]

I DEDICATE THESE VOLUMES TO MY OLD FRIEND JOHN FORSTER, GLAD AND GRATEFUL THAT HE WHO, FROM THE FIRST PUBLICATION OF THE VARIOUS POEMS THEY INCLUDE, HAS BEEN THEIR PROMPTTEST AND STAUCHEST HELPER, SHOULD SEEM EVEN NEARER TO ME NOW THAN ALMOST THIRTY YEARS AGO.

R. B.

LONDON: *April* 21, 1863.



## AUTHOR'S PREFACE TO EDITION OF 1868

THE poems that follow are printed in the order of their publication. The first piece in the series I acknowledge and retain with extreme repugnance, indeed purely of necessity; for not long ago I inspected one, and am certified of the existence of other transcripts, intended sooner or later to be published abroad: by forestalling these, I can at least correct some misprints (no syllable is charged) and introduce a boyish work by an exculpatory word. The thing was my earliest attempt at 'poetry always dramatic in principle, and so many utterances of so many imaginary persons, not mine,' which I have since written according to a scheme less extravagant and scale less impracticable than were ventured upon in this crude preliminary sketch—a sketch that, on reviewal, appears not altogether wide of some hint of the characteristic features of that particular *dramatis persona* it would fain have reproduced: good draughtsmanship, however, and right handling were far beyond the artist at that time.

R. B.

LONDON: *December 25, 1867.*

## AUTHOR'S PREFACE TO EDITION OF 1888

I PRESERVE, in order to supplement it, the foregoing preface. I had thought, when compelled to include in my collected works the poem to which it refers, that the honest course would be to reprint, and leave mere literary errors unaltered. Twenty years' endurance of an eyesore seems more than sufficient: my faults remain duly recorded against me, and I claim permission to somewhat diminish these, so far as style is concerned, in the present and final edition where 'Pauline' must needs, first of my performances, confront the reader. I have simply removed solecisms, mended the metre a little, and endeavoured to strengthen the phraseology—experience helping, in some degree, the helplessness of juvenile haste and heat in their untried adventure long ago.

The poems that follow are again, as before, printed in chronological order; but only so far as proves compatible with the prescribed size of each volume, which necessitates an occasional change in the distribution of its contents. Every date is subjoined as before.

R. B.

LONDON: *February 27, 1888.*



# CONTENTS

PAULINE: A FRAGMENT OF A CONFESSION . . . . .	1	PIPPA PASSES— <i>Contd.</i>	
		III. EVENING . . . . .	178
PARACELSUS—		IV. NIGHT . . . . .	182
I. PARACELSUS ASPIRES . . . . .	14	KING VICTOR AND KING CHARLES: A TRAGEDY—	
II. PARACELSUS ATTAINS . . . . .	23	FIRST YEAR, 1730.—	
III. PARACELSUS . . . . .	31	KING VICTOR. PART I . . . . .	185
IV. PARACELSUS ASPIRES . . . . .	44	KING VICTOR. PART II . . . . .	189
V. PARACELSUS ATTAINS . . . . .	52	SECOND YEAR, 1731.—	
NOTE . . . . .	63	KING CHARLES. PART I . . . . .	197
STRAFFORD: A TRAGEDY—		KING CHARLES. PART II . . . . .	202
ACT I.		DRAMATIC LYRICS—	
SCENE I. A HOUSE NEAR WHITE-		CAVALIER TUNES—	
HALL . . . . .	66	I. MARCHING ALONG . . . . .	207
„ II. WHITEHALL . . . . .	70	II. GIVE A ROUSE . . . . .	207
ACT II.		III. BOOT AND SADDLE . . . . .	207
SCENE I. A HOUSE NEAR WHITE-		THE LOST LEADER . . . . .	208
HALL . . . . .	74	‘HOW THEY BROUGHT THE GOOD NEWS FROM GHENT TO AIX’ . . . . .	208
„ II. WHITEHALL . . . . .	75	THROUGH THE METIDJA TO ABD-EL-	
ACT III.		KADR . . . . .	209
SCENE I. OPPOSITE WESTMINSTER		NATIONALITY IN DRINKS . . . . .	210
HALL . . . . .	80	GARDEN FANCIES—	
„ II. WHITEHALL . . . . .	80	I. THE FLOWER’S NAME . . . . .	210
„ III. THE ANTECHAMBER OF		II. SIBRANDUS SCHAFNABURGENSIS . . . . .	211
THE HOUSE OF LORDS . . . . .	84	SOLILOQUY OF THE SPANISH CLOISTER . . . . .	212
ACT IV.		THE LABORATORY . . . . .	212
SCENE I. WHITEHALL . . . . .	85	THE CONFESSIONAL . . . . .	213
„ II. A PASSAGE ADJOINING		CRISTINA . . . . .	214
WESTMINSTER HALL . . . . .	87	THE LOST MISTRESS . . . . .	215
„ III. WHITEHALL . . . . .	90	EARTH’S IMMORTALITIES . . . . .	215
ACT V.		MEETING AT NIGHT . . . . .	215
SCENE I. WHITEHALL . . . . .	92	PARTING AT MORNING . . . . .	215
„ II. THE TOWER . . . . .	92	SONG . . . . .	215
SORDELLO—		A WOMAN’S LAST WORD . . . . .	216
DEDICATION . . . . .	97	EVELYN HOPE . . . . .	216
BOOK THE FIRST . . . . .	97	LOVE AMONG THE RUINS . . . . .	217
BOOK THE SECOND . . . . .	108	A LOVER’S QUARREL . . . . .	218
BOOK THE THIRD . . . . .	120	UP AT A VILLA—DOWN IN THE CITY . . . . .	219
BOOK THE FOURTH . . . . .	132	A TOCCATA OF GALUPPI’S . . . . .	220
BOOK THE FIFTH . . . . .	143	OLD PICTURES IN FLORENCE . . . . .	221
BOOK THE SIXTH . . . . .	155	‘DE GUSTIBUS—’ . . . . .	225
PIPPA PASSES: A DRAMA—		HOME-THOUGHTS, FROM ABROAD . . . . .	226
INTRODUCTION . . . . .	165	HOME-THOUGHTS, FROM THE SEA . . . . .	226
I. MORNING . . . . .	168		
II. NOON . . . . .	173		

## CONTENTS

### DRAMATIC LYRICS—*Contd.*

SAUL . . . . .	226
MY STAR . . . . .	232
BY THE FIRE-SIDE . . . . .	232
ANY WIFE TO ANY HUSBAND . . . . .	235
TWO IN THE CAMPAGNA . . . . .	237
MISCONCEPTIONS . . . . .	238
A SERENADE AT THE VILLA . . . . .	238
ONE WAY OF LOVE . . . . .	239
ANOTHER WAY OF LOVE! . . . . .	239
A PRETTY WOMAN . . . . .	239
RESPECTABILITY . . . . .	240
LOVE IN A LIFE . . . . .	241
LIFE IN A LOVE . . . . .	241
IN THREE DAYS . . . . .	241
IN A YEAR . . . . .	242
WOMEN AND ROSES . . . . .	242
BEFORE . . . . .	243
AFTER . . . . .	244
THE GUARDIAN-ANGEL . . . . .	244
MEMORABILIA . . . . .	245
POPULARITY . . . . .	245
MASTER HUGUES OF SAXE-GOTHA . . . . .	246

### THE RETURN OF THE DRUSES: A TRAGEDY—

ACT I . . . . .	248
„ II . . . . .	253
„ III . . . . .	258
„ IV . . . . .	262
„ V . . . . .	267

### A BLOT IN THE 'SCUTCHEON: A TRAGEDY—

ACT I.	
SCENE I. THE INTERIOR OF A LODGE IN LORD TRE- SHAM'S PARK . . . . .	272
„ II. A SALOON IN THE MAN- SION . . . . .	274
„ III. MILDRED'S CHAMBER . . . . .	276
ACT II.	
SCENE. THE LIBRARY . . . . .	280
ACT III.	
SCENE I. THE END OF THE YEW- TREE AVENUE UNDER MILDRED'S WINDOW . . . . .	285
„ II. MILDRED'S CHAMBER . . . . .	289

### COLOMBE'S BIRTHDAY: A PLAY—

ACT I. MORNING.	
SCENE. A CORRIDOR LEADING TO THE AUDIENCE- CHAMBER . . . . .	291
ACT II. NOON.	
SCENE. THE PRESENCE-CHAMBER . . . . .	296
ACT III. AFTERNOON.	
SCENE. THE VESTIBULE . . . . .	301
ACT IV. EVENING.	
SCENE. AN ANTECHAMBER . . . . .	306
ACT V. NIGHT.	
SCENE. THE HALL . . . . .	312

### DRAMATIC ROMANCES—

INCIDENT OF THE FRENCH CAMP . . . . .	317
THE PATRIOT . . . . .	317
MY LAST DUCHESS . . . . .	318
COUNT GISMOND . . . . .	318
THE BOY AND THE ANGEL . . . . .	320
INSTANS TYRANNUS . . . . .	321
MESMERISM . . . . .	321
THE GLOVE . . . . .	323
TIME'S REVENGES . . . . .	325
THE ITALIAN IN ENGLAND . . . . .	325
THE ENGLISHMAN IN ITALY . . . . .	327
IN A GONDOLA . . . . .	330
WARING . . . . .	332
THE TWINS . . . . .	334
A LIGHT WOMAN . . . . .	335
THE LAST RIDE TOGETHER . . . . .	335
THE PIED PIPER OF HAMELIN: A CHILD'S STORY . . . . .	337
THE FLIGHT OF THE DUCHESS . . . . .	340
A GRAMMARIAN'S FUNERAL . . . . .	350
THE HERETIC'S TRAGEDY . . . . .	351
HOLY-CROSS DAY . . . . .	353
PROTUS . . . . .	355
THE STATUE AND THE BUST . . . . .	355
PORPHYRIA'S LOVER . . . . .	358
'CHILDE ROLAND TO THE DARK TOWER CAME' . . . . .	359

### LURIA: A TRAGEDY—

ACT I. MORNING . . . . .	362
„ II. NOON . . . . .	367
„ III. AFTERNOON . . . . .	371
„ IV. EVENING . . . . .	376
„ V. NIGHT . . . . .	380

# CONTENTS

## A SOUL'S TRAGEDY—

ACT I.	
SCENE. INSIDE LUITOLFO'S HOUSE .	384
ACT II.	
SCENE. THE MARKET-PLACE. .	390

## CHRISTMAS-EVE AND EASTER-DAY—

CHRISTMAS-EVE . . . .	396
EASTER-DAY . . . .	409

## MEN AND WOMEN—

'TRANSCENDENTALISM: A POEM IN TWELVE BOOKS'. . . .	419
HOW IT STRIKES A CONTEMPORARY .	419
ARTEMIS PROLOGIZES . . . .	421
AN EPISTLE CONTAINING THE STRANGE MEDICAL EXPERIENCE OF KAR- SHISH, THE ARAB PHYSICIAN .	422
JOHANNES AGRICOLA IN MEDITATION	426
PICTOR IGNOTUS . . . .	426
FRA LIPPO LIPPI . . . .	427
ANDREA DEL SARTO (CALLED 'THE FAULTLESS PAINTER') . . . .	432
THE BISHOP ORDERS HIS TOMB AT SAINT PRAXED'S CHURCH . .	435
BISHOP BLOUGRAM'S APOLOGY .	437
CLEON . . . .	448
RUDEL TO THE LADY OF TRIPOLI .	452
ONE WORD MORE . . . .	453

## IN A BALCONY . . . .

456

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ—

### JAMES LEE'S WIFE—

I. JAMES LEE'S WIFE SPEAKS AT THE WINDOW . . . .	467
II. BY THE FIRESIDE . . . .	467
III. IN THE DOORWAY . . . .	468
IV. ALONG THE BEACH . . . .	468
V. ON THE CLIFF . . . .	469
VI. READING A BOOK, UNDER THE CLIFF . . . .	469
VII. AMONG THE ROCKS . . . .	470
VIII. BESIDE THE DRAWING BOARD	471
IX. ON DECK . . . .	471
GOLD HAIR: A STORY OF PORNIC .	472
THE WORST OF IT . . . .	474
DÏS ALITER VISUM; OR, LE BYRON DE NOS JOURS . . . .	475

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ—Contd.

TOO LATE . . . .	477
ABT VOGLER . . . .	479
R/ BBI BEN EZRA . . . .	481
A DEATH IN THE DESERT . . . .	483
CALIBAN UPON SETEBOS; OR, NATURAL THEOLOGY IN THE ISLAND . . . .	492
CONFESSIONS . . . .	495
MAY AND DE. TH . . . .	496
DEAF AND DUMB: A GROUP BY WOOLNER . . . .	496
PROSPICE . . . .	496
EURYDICE TO ORPHEUS: A PICTURE BY LEIGHTON . . . .	497
YOUTH AND ART . . . .	497
A FACE . . . .	498
A LIKENESS . . . .	498
MR. SLUDGE, 'THE MEDIUM' . .	499
APPARENT FAILURE . . . .	518
EPILOGUE . . . .	519

## FROM 'FIFINE AT THE FAIR'

PROLOGUE . . . .	520
EPILOGUE . . . .	521

## PACCHIAROTTO, AND HOW HE WORKED IN DISTEMPER, ET CETERA—

PROLOGUE . . . .	522
OF PACCHIAROTTO, AND HOW HE WORKED IN DISTEMPER . . . .	522
AT THE 'MERMAID' . . . .	528
HOUSE . . . .	529
SHOP . . . .	530
PISGAH-SIGHTS. I . . . .	531
„ II. . . .	531
FEARS AND SCRUPLES . . . .	532
NATURAL MAGIC . . . .	533
MAGICAL NATURE . . . .	533
BIFURCATION . . . .	533
NUMPHOLEPTOS . . . .	534
APPEARANCES . . . .	535
ST. MARTIN'S SUMMER . . . .	536
HERVÉ RIEL . . . .	537
A FORGIVENESS . . . .	538
CENCIAJA . . . .	543
FILIPPO BALDINUCCI ON THE PRIVI- LEGE OF BURIAL . . . .	546
EPILOGUE . . . .	551



# CONTENTS

LA SAISIAZ . . . . .	554
THE TWO POETS OF CROISIC . . . . .	565

## DRAMATIC IDYLS: FIRST SERIES—

MARTIN RELPH . . . . .	584
PHEDIPIDES. . . . .	586
HALBERT AND HOB . . . . .	588
IVAN IVANOVITCH . . . . .	590
TRAY . . . . .	596
NED BRATTS. . . . .	597

## DRAMATIC IDYLS: SECOND SERIES—

ECHETLOS . . . . .	603
CLIVE . . . . .	603
MULÉYKEH . . . . .	607
PIETRO OF ABANO . . . . .	609
DOCTOR ——— . . . . .	617
PAN AND LUNA . . . . .	620

## JOCOSERIA—

'WANTING IS—WHAT?' . . . . .	622
DONALD . . . . .	622
SOLOMON AND BALKIS . . . . .	625
CRISTINA AND MONALDESCHI . . . . .	626
MARY WOLLSTONECRAFT AND FUSELI . . . . .	627
ADAM, LILITH, AND EVE. . . . .	627
IXION . . . . .	628
JOCHANAN HAKKADOSH . . . . .	630
NEVER THE TIME AND THE PLACE . . . . .	641
PAMBO. . . . .	641

## FERISHTAH'S FANCIES—

PROLOGUE . . . . .	642
THE EAGLE . . . . .	643
THE MELON-SELLER . . . . .	643
SHAH ABBAS. . . . .	644
THE FAMILY . . . . .	646
THE SUN . . . . .	647
MIHRAB SHAH . . . . .	649

## FERISHTAH'S FANCIES—*Contd.*

A CAMEL-DRIVER . . . . .	651
TWO CAMELS . . . . .	653
CHERRIES . . . . .	654
PLOT-CULTURE † . . . . .	655
A PILLAR AT SEBZEWAJ . . . . .	656
A BEAN-STRIPE: ALSO, APPLE-EATING . . . . .	658
EPILOGUE . . . . .	664

## ASOLANDO: FANCIES AND FACTS—

PROLOGUE . . . . .	665
ROSNY. . . . .	666
DUBIETY . . . . .	666
NOW . . . . .	666
HUMILITY . . . . .	667
POETICS . . . . .	667
SUMMUM BONUM . . . . .	667
A PEARL, A GIRL . . . . .	667
SPECULATIVE. . . . .	667
WHITE WITCHCRAFT . . . . .	667
BAD DREAMS. I . . . . .	667
" II . . . . .	668
" III . . . . .	668
" IV . . . . .	669
INAPPREHENSIVENESS . . . . .	669
WHICH? . . . . .	670
THE CARDINAL AND THE DOG . . . . .	670
THE POPE AND THE NET . . . . .	670
THE BEAN-FEAST . . . . .	671
MUCKLE-MOUTH MEG . . . . .	672
ARCADES AMBO . . . . .	672
THE LADY AND THE PAINTER . . . . .	672
PONTE DELL' ANGELO, VENICE. . . . .	673
BEATRICE SIGNORINI . . . . .	675
FLUTE-MUSIC, WITH AN ACCOMPANIMENT . . . . .	679
'IMPERANTE AUGUSTO NATUS EST——' . . . . .	681
DEVELOPMENT . . . . .	683
REPHAN . . . . .	535
REVERIE . . . . .	686
EPILOGUE . . . . .	688

## A CHRONOLOGICAL LIST OF ROBERT BROWNING'S POEMS AND PLAYS 689

## INDEX OF TITLES . . . . . 693

## INDEX TO FIRST LINES OF SHORTER POEMS AND SONGS. . . . . 696

# PAULINE

## A FRAGMENT OF A CONFESSION

1833

Plus ne suis ce que j'ai été,  
Et ne le s., aurois jamais être.—*Marot.*

NON dubito, quin titulus libri raritate sua quamplurimos allicit ad legendum: inter quos nonnulli obliquæ opinionis, mente languidi, multi etiam maligni, et in ingenium nostrum ingrati accedent, qui temeraria sua ignorantia, vix conspecto titulo clamabunt Nos vetita docere, hæresium semina jacere: piis auribus offendiculo, præclaris ingeniis scandalo esse: . . . adeo conscientia suæ consulentes, ut nec Apollo, nec Musæ omnes, neque Angelus de cælo me ab illorum execratione vindicare queant: quous et ego nunc consulo, ne scripta nostra legant, nec intelligant, nec meminerint: nam noxia sunt, venenosa sunt: Acherontis ostium est in hoc libro, lapides loquitur, caveant, ne cerebrum illis excutiat. Vos autem, qui æqua mente ad legendum venitis, si tantam prudentiæ discretionem adhibueritis, quantum in melle legendo apes, jam securi legite. Puto namque vos et utilitatis haud parum et voluptatis plurimum accepturos. Quod si qua repereritis, quæ vobis non placeant, mittite illa, nec utimini. NAM ET EGO VOBIS ILLA NON PROBO, SED NARRO. Cætera tamen propterea non respuite. . . . Ideo, si quid liberius dictum sit, ignoscite adolescentiæ nostræ, qui minor quam adolescens hoc opus composui.—*Hen. Corn. Agrippa, De Occult. Philosoph. in Præfat.*

LONDON: January '833.

V.A. XX.

[This introduction would appear less absurdly pretentious did it apply, as was intended, to a completed structure of which the poem was meant for only a beginning and remains a fragment.]

PAULINE, mine own, bend o'er me—thy  
soft breast  
Shall pant to mine—bend o'er me—thy  
sweet eyes,  
And loosened hair and breathing lips, and  
arms  
Drawing me to thee—these build up a  
screen  
To shut me in with thee, and from all fear;  
So that I might unlock the sleepless brood  
Of fancies from my soul, their lu'king-  
place,  
Nor doubt that each would pass, ne'er to  
return  
To one so watched, so loved and so se-  
cured.  
But what can guard thee but thy naked  
love?  
Ah dearest, whoso sucks a poisoned  
wound  
Envenoms his own veins! Thou art so  
good,  
So calm—if thou shouldst wear a brow less  
light  
Fo. some wild thought which but for me,  
were kept  
From out thy soul as from a sacred star!  
Yet till I have unlocked them it were vain  
To hope to sing; some woe would light on  
me;  
Nature would point at one whose quivering  
lip  
Was bathed in her enchantments, whose  
brow burned  
Beneath the crown to which her secrets  
knelt,  
Who learned the spell which can call up the  
dead,

And then departed smiling like a fiend  
Who has deceived God,—if such one  
should seek  
Again her altars and stand robed and  
crowned  
Amid the faithful! Sad confession first,  
Remorse and pardon and old claims re-  
newed,  
Ere I can be—as I shall be no more.

I had been spared this shame if I had sat  
By thee for ever from the first, in place  
Of my wild dreams of beauty and of good,  
Or with them, as an earnest of their truth:  
No thought nor hope having been shut  
from thee,  
No vague wish unexplained, no wandering  
aim  
Sent back to bind on fancy's wings and seek  
Some strange fair world where it might be  
a law;  
But, doubting nothing, had been led by  
thee,  
Thro' youth, and saved, as one at length  
awaked  
Who has slept through a peril. Ah vain,  
vain!

Thou lovest me; the past is in its grave  
Tho' its ghost haunts us; still this much is  
ours,  
To cast away restraint, lest a worse thing  
Wait for us in the dark. Thou lovest me;  
And thou art to receive not love but faith,  
For which thou wilt be mine, and smile and  
take  
All shapes and shames, and veil without a  
fear

## PAULINE

That form which music fol'ows like a  
slave:

And I look to thee and I trust in thee,  
As in a Northern night one looks alway  
Unto the East for morn and spring and  
joy.

Thou seest then my aimless, hopeless state,  
And, resting on some few old feelings won  
Back by thy beauty, wouldst that I essay  
The task which was to me what now thou  
art:

And why should I concea' one weakness  
more?

Thou wilt remember one warm morn when  
winter

Crept aged from the earth, and spring's  
first breath

Blew soft from the moist hills; the black-  
thorn boughs,

So dark in the bare wood, when glistening  
In the sunshine were white with coming  
buds,

Like the bright side of a sorrow, and the  
banks

Had violets opening from sleep like eyes.  
I walked with thee who knew'st not a deep  
shame

Lurked beneath smiles and careless words  
which sought

To hide it till they wandered and were mute,  
As we stood listening on a sunny mound  
To the wind murmuring in the damp copse,  
Like heavy breathings of some hidden  
thing

Betrayed by sleep; until the feeling rushed  
That I was low indeed, yet not so low  
As to endure the calmness of thine eyes.  
And so I told thee all, while the cool breast  
I leaned on altered not its quiet beating:  
And long ere words like a hurt bird's com-  
plaint

Bade me look up and be what I had been,  
I felt despair could never live by thee:  
Thou wilt remember. Thou art not more  
dear

Than song was once to me; and I ne'er sung  
But as one entering bright halls where all  
Will rise and shout for him: sure I must own  
That I am fallen, having chosen gifts  
Distinct from theirs—that I am sad and  
fain

Would give up all to be but where I was,  
Not high as I had been if faithful found,  
But low and weak yet full of hope, and sure  
Of goodness as of life—that I would lose  
All this gay mastery of mind, to sit  
Once more with them, trusting in truth and  
love

And with an aim—not being what I am.

Oh Pauline, I am ruined who believed  
That though my soul had floated from its  
sphere

Of wild dominion into the lim orb  
Of self—that it was strong and free as ever.  
It has conformed itself to that dim orb,  
Reflecting all its shades and shapes, and  
now

Must stay where it alone can be adored.  
I have felt this in dreams—in dreams in  
which

I seemed the fate from which I fled; I felt  
A strange delight in causing my decay.

I was a fiend in darkness chained for ever  
Within some ocean cave; and ages rolled,  
Till through the cleft rock, like a moon-  
beam, came

A white swan to remain with me; and ages  
Rolled, yet I tired not of my first free joy  
In gazing on the peace of its pure wings:  
And then I said 'It is most fair to me,

'Yet its soft wings must sure have suffered  
change

'From the thick darkness, sure its eyes are  
dim,

'Its silver pinions must be cramped and  
numbed

'With sleeping ages here; it cannot leave  
me,

'For it would seem, in light beside its kind,  
'Withered, tho' here to me most beautiful.'  
And then I was a young witch whose blue  
eyes,

As she stood naked by the river springs,  
Drew down a god: I watched his radiant  
form

Growing less radiant, and it gladdened me;  
Till one morn, as he sat in the sunshine.

Upon my knees, singing to me of heaven,  
He turned to look at me, ere I could lose  
The grin with which I viewed his perishing:  
And he shrieked and departed and sat long  
By his deserted throne, but sunk at last  
Murmuring, as I kissed his lips and curled  
Around him, 'I am still a god—to thee.'

Still I can lay my soul bare in its fall,  
Since all the wandering and all the weak-  
ness

Will be a saddest comment on the song:  
And if, that done, I can be young again,  
I will give up all gained, as willingly  
As one gives up a charm which shuts him  
out

From hope or part or care in human kind.  
As life wanes, all its care and strife and toil  
Seem strangely valueless, while the old  
trees

Which grew by our youth's home, the  
waving mass

Of climbing plants heavy with bloom and  
dew,

The morning swallows with their songs like  
words,

All these seem clear and only worth our  
thoughts:

So, aught connected with my early life,

My rude songs or my wild imaginings,  
How I look on them—most distinct amid  
The fever and the stir of after years!  
I ne'er had ventured e'en to hope for this,  
Had not the glow I felt at His award,  
Assured me all was not extinct within:  
His whom all honour, whose renown  
springs up

Like sunlight which will visit all the world,  
So that e'en they who sneered at him at  
first,

Come out to it, as some dark spider crawls  
From his foul nets which some lit torch  
invades,

Yet spinning still new films for his retreat.  
Thou didst smile, poet, but can we forgive?

Sun-treader,<sup>1</sup> life and light be thine for  
ever!

Thou art gone from us; years go by and  
spring

Gladdens and the young earth is beautiful,  
Yet thy songs come not, other bards arise,  
But none like thee: they stand, thy majesties,

Like mighty works which tell some spirit  
there

Hath sat regardless of neglect and scorn,  
Till, its long task completed, it hath risen  
And left us, never to return, and all  
Rush in to peer and praise when all in vain.

The air seems bright with thy past presence  
yet,

But thou art still for me as thou hast been  
When I have stood with thee as on a  
throne

With all thy dim creations gathered round  
Like mountains, and I felt of mould like  
them,

And with them creatures of my own were  
mixed,

Like things half-lived, catching and giving  
life,

But thou art still for me who have adored  
Tho' single, panting but to hear thy name  
Which I believed a spell to me alone,  
Scarce deeming thou wast as a star to men!

As one should worship long a sacred  
spring

Scarce worth a moth's flitting, which long  
grasses cross,

And one small tree embowers drooping-  
ly—

Joying to see some wandering insect won  
To live in its few rushes, or some locust  
To pasture on its boughs, or some wild  
bird

Stoop for its freshness from the trackless  
air:

And then should find it but the fountain-  
head,

Long lost, of some great river washing  
towns

<sup>1</sup> Shelley.

And towers, and seeing old woods which  
will live

But by its banks untrod of human foot,  
Which, when the great sun sinks, lie  
quivering

In light as some thing lieth half of life  
Before God's foot, waiting a wondrous  
change;

Then girt with rocks which seek to turn or  
stay

Its course in vain, for it does ever spread  
Like a sea's arm as it goes rolling on,  
Being the pulse of some great country—so  
Wast thou to me, and art thou to the  
world!

And I, perchance, half feel a strange regret  
That I am not what I have been to thee:  
Like a girl one has silently loved long  
In her first loneliness in some retreat,

When, late emerged, all gaze and glow to  
view

Her fresh eyes and soft hair and lips which  
bloom

Like a mountain berry: doubtless it is sweet  
To see her thus adored, but there have  
been

Moments when all the world was in our  
praise,

Sweeter than any pride of after hours.  
Yet, sun-treader, all hail! From my heart's  
heart

I bid thee hail! E'en in my wildest dreams,  
I proudly feel I would have thrown to dust  
The wreaths of fame which seemed o'er-  
hanging me,

To see thee for a moment as thou art.

And if thou livest, if thou lovest, spirit!  
Remember me who set this final seal

To wandering thought—that one so pure  
as thou

Could never die. Remember me who flung  
All honour from my soul, yet paused and  
said

'There is one spark of love remaining yet,  
'For I have nought in common with him,

shapes

'Which followed him avoid me, and foul  
forms

'Seek me, which ne'er could fasten on his  
mind;

'And though I feel how low I am to him,  
'Yet I aim not even to catch a tone

'Of harmonies he called profusely up;  
'So, one gleam still remains, although the  
last.'

Remember me who praise thee e'en with  
tears,

For never more shall I walk calm with thee;  
Thy sweet imaginings are as an air,

A melody some wondrous singer sings,  
Which, though it haunt men oft in the still  
eve,

They dream not to essay; yet it no less

## PAULINE

But more is honoured. I was thine in shame,  
And now when all thy proud renown is out,  
I am a watcher whose eyes have grown dim  
With looking for some star which breaks on him  
Altered and worn and weak and full of tears.

Autumn has come like spring returned to us,  
Won from her girlishness; like one returned

A friend that was a lover, nor forgets  
The first warm love, but full of sober thoughts  
Of fading years; whose soft mouth quivers yet  
With the old smile, but yet so changed and still!

And here am I the scoffer, who have probed  
Life's vanity, won by a word again  
Into my own life—by one little word  
Of this sweet friend who lives in loving me,  
Lives strangely on my thoughts and looks and words,

As fathoms down some nameless ocean thing

Its silent course of quietness and joy.  
O dearest, if indeed I tell the past,  
May'st thou forget it as a sad sick dream!  
Or if it linger—my lost soul too soon  
Sinks to itself and whispers we shall be  
But closer linked, two creatures whom the earth

Bears singly, with strange feelings unrevealed

Save to each other; or two lonely things  
Created by some power whose reign is done,

Having no part in God or his bright world.  
I am to sing whilst ebbing day dies soft,  
As a lean scholar dies worn o'er his book,  
And in the heaven stars steal out one by one

As hunted men steal to their mountain watch.

I must not think, lest this new impulse die  
In which I trust; I have no confidence:  
So, I will sing on fast as fancies come;  
Rudely, the verse being as the mood it paints.

I strip my mind bare, whose first elements  
I shall unveil—not as they struggled forth  
In infancy, nor as they now exist,  
When I am grown above them and can rule—

But in that middle stage when they were full

Yet ere I had disposed them to my will;  
And then I shall show how these elements  
Produced my present state, and what it is.

I am made up of an intensest life,  
Of a most clear idea of consciousness  
Of self, distinct from all its qualities,  
From all affections, -passions, feelings, powers;

And thus far it exists, if tracked, in all:  
But linked, in me, to self-supremacy,  
Existing as a centre to all things,  
Most potent to create and rule and call  
Upon all things to minister to it;  
And to a principle of restlessness  
Which would be all, have, see, know, taste, feel, all—

This is myself; and I should thus have been  
Though gifted lower than the meanest soul.  
And of my powers, one springs up to save  
From utter death a soul with such desire  
Confined to clay—of powers the only one  
Which marks me—an imagination which  
Has been a very angel, coming not  
In fitful visions but beside me ever  
And never failing me; so, though my mind  
Forgets not, not a shred of life forgets,  
Yet I can take a secret pride in calling  
The dark past up to quell it regally.

A mind like this must dissipate itself,  
But I have always had one lode-star; now,  
As I look back, I see that I have halted  
Or hastened as I looked towards that star—  
A need, a trust, a yearning after God:  
A feeling I have analysed but late,  
But it existed, and was reconciled  
With a neglect of all I deemed his laws,  
Which yet, when seen in others, I abhorred.  
I felt as one beloved, and so shut in  
From fear: and thence I date my trust in signs

And omens, for I saw God everywhere;  
And I can only lay it to the fruit  
Of a sad after-time that I could doubt  
Even his being—e'en the while I felt  
His presence, never acted from myself,  
Still trusted in a hand to lead me through  
All danger; and this feeling ever fought  
Against my weakest reason and resolve.

And I can love nothing—and this dull truth  
Has come the last: but sense supplies a love  
Encircling me and mingling with my life.

These make myself: I have long sought in vain

To trace how they were formed by circumstance,

Yet ever found them mould my wildest youth

Where they alone displayed themselves, converted

All objects to their use: now see their course!

They came to me in my first dawn of life  
Which passed alone with wisest ancient books

All halo-girt with fancies of my own;  
And I myself went with the tale—a god  
Wandering after beauty, or a giant  
Standing vast in the sunset—an old hunter  
Talking with gods, or a high-crested chief  
Sailing with troops of friends to Tenedos.  
I tell you, nought has ever been so clear  
As the place, the time, the fashion of those  
lives:

I had not seen a work of lofty art,  
Nor woman's beauty nor sweet nature's  
face,

Yet, I say, never morn broke clear as those  
On the dim clustered isles in the blue sea,  
The deep groves and white temples and wet  
caves:

And nothing ever will surprise me now—  
Who stood beside the naked Swift-footed,  
Who bound my forehead with Proserpine's hair.

And strange it is that I who could so dream  
Should e'er have stooped to aim at aught  
beneath—

Aught low or painful; but I never doubted:  
So, as I grew, I rudely shaped my life  
To my immediate wants; yet strong be-  
neath

Was a vague sense of power though folded  
up—

A sense that, though those shades and times  
were past,

Their spirit dwelt in me, with them should  
rule.

Then came a pause, and long restraint  
chained down

My soul till it was changed. I lost myself,  
And were it not that I so loathe that loss,  
I could recall how first I learned to turn  
My mind against itself; and the effects  
In deeds for which remorse were vain as  
for

The wanderings of delirious dream; yet  
thence

Came cunning, envy, falsehood, all world's  
wrong

That spotted me: at length I cleansed my  
soul.

Yet long world's influence remained; and  
nought

But the still life I led, apart once more,  
Which left me free to seek soul's old de-  
lights,

Could e'er have brought me thus far back  
to peace.

As peace returned, I sought out some pur-  
suit;

And song rose, no new impulse but the one  
With which all others best could be com-  
bined.

My life has not been that of those whose  
heaven

Was lampless save where poesy shone out;  
But as a clime where glittering mountain-  
tops

And glancing sea and forests steeped in  
light

Give back reflected the far-flashing sun;  
For music (which is earnest of a heaven,  
Seeing we know emotions strange by it,  
Not else to be revealed,) is like a voice,  
A low voice calling fancy, as a friend,  
To the green woods in the gay summer  
time:

And she fills all the way with dancing  
shades

Which have made painters pale, and they  
go on

Till stars look at them and winds call to  
them

As they leave life's path for the twilight  
world

Where the dead gather. This was not at  
first,

For I scarce knew what I would do. I had  
An impulse but no yearning—only sang.

And first I sang as I in dream have seen  
Music wait on a lyrist for some thought,  
Yet singing to herself until it came.

I turned to those old times and scenes where  
all

That's beautiful had birth for me, and  
made

Rude verses on them all; and then I  
paused—

I had done nothing, so I sought to know  
What other minds achieved. No fear out-  
broke

As on the works of mighty bards I gazed,  
In the first joy at finding my own thoughts  
Recorded, my own fancies justified,  
And their aspirings but my very own.

With them I first explored passion and  
mind,—

All to begin afresh! I rather sought  
To rival what I wondered at than form  
Creations of my own; if much was light  
Lent by the others, much was yet my own.

I paused again: a change was coming—  
came:

I was no more a boy, the past was breaking  
Before the future and like fever worked.  
I thought on my new self, and all my  
powers

Burst out. I dreamed not of restraint, but  
gazed

On all things: schemes and systems went  
and came,

And I was proud (being vainest of the  
weak)

In wandering o'er thought's world to seek  
some one

To be my prize, as if you wandered o'er  
The White Way for a star.

## PAULINE

And my choice fell  
Not so much on a system as a man—  
On one, whom praise of mine shall not  
offend,  
Who was as calm as beauty, being such  
Unto mankind as thou to me, Pauline,—  
Believing in them and devoting all  
His soul's strength to their winning back  
to peace;  
Who sent forth hopes and longings for  
their sake,  
Clothed in all passion's melodies: such first  
Caught me and set me, slave of a sweet  
task,  
To disentangle, gather sense from song:  
Since, song-inwoven, lurked there words  
which seemed  
A key to a new world, the muttering  
Of angels, something yet unguessed by  
man,  
How my heart leapt as still I sought and  
found  
Much there, I felt my own soul had conceived,  
But there living and burning! Soon the  
orb  
Of his conceptions dawned on me; its  
praise  
Lives in the tongues of men, men's brows  
are high  
When his name means a triumph and a  
pride,  
So, my weak voice may well forbear to  
shame  
What seemed decreed my fate: I threw  
myself  
To meet it, I was vowed to liberty,  
Men were to be as gods and earth as  
heaven,  
And I—ah, what a life was mine to prove!  
My whole soul rose to meet it. Now,  
Pauline,  
I shall go mad, if I recall that time!

Oh let me look back ere I leave for ever  
The time which was an hour one fondly  
waits  
For a fair girl that comes a withered hag!  
And I was lonely, far from woods and  
fields,  
And amid dullest sights, who should be  
loose  
As a stag; yet I was full of bliss, who lived  
With Plato and who had the key to life;  
And I had dimly shaped my first attempt,  
And many a thought did I build up on  
thought,  
As the wild bee hangs cell to cell; in vain,  
For I must still advance, no rest for mind.

'Twas in my plan to look on real life,  
The life all new to me; my theories  
Were firm, so then I left, to look and learn

Mankind, its cares, hopes, fears, its woes  
and joys;  
And, as I pondered on their ways, I sought  
How best life's end might be attained—an  
end  
Comprising every joy. I deeply mused.

And suddenly without heart-wreck I  
awoke  
As from a dream: I said 'Twas beautiful,  
'Yet but a dream, and so adieu to it!'  
As some world-wanderer sees in a far  
meadow  
Strange towers and high walled gardens  
thick with trees,  
Where song takes shelter and delicious  
mirth  
From laughing fairy creatures peeping  
over,  
And on the morrow when he comes to lie  
For ever 'neath those garden-trees fruit-  
flushed  
Sing round by fairies, all his search is  
vain.  
First went my hopes of perfecting man-  
kind,  
Next—faith in them, and then in free-  
dom's self  
And virtue's self, then my own motives,  
ends  
And aims and loves, and human love went  
last.  
I felt this no decay, because new powers  
Rose as old feelings left—wit, mockery,  
Light-heartedness; for I had oft been sad,  
Mistrusting my resolves, but now I cast  
Hope joyously away: I laughed and said  
'No more of this!' I must not think: at  
length  
I looked again to see if all went well.

My powers were greater: as some temple  
seemed  
My soul, where nought is changed and in-  
cense rolls  
Around the altar, only God is gone  
And some dark spirit sitteth in his seat.  
So, I passed through, the temple and to me  
Kneelt troops of shadows, and they cried  
'Hail, king!  
'We serve thee now and thou shalt serve  
no more!  
'Call on us, prove us, let us worship thee!'  
And I said 'Are ye strong? Let fancy bear  
me  
'Far from the past!' And I was borne  
away,  
As Arab birds float sleeping in the wind,  
O'er deserts, towers and forests, I being  
calm.  
And I said 'I have nursed up energies,  
'They will prey on me.' And a band knelt  
low

And cried 'Lord, we are here and we will make  
 'Safe way for thee in thine appointed life!  
 'But look on us!' And I said 'Ye will worship  
 'Me; should my heart not worship too?'  
 They shouted  
 'Thyself, thou art our king!' So, I stood there  
 Smiling—oh, vanity of vanities!  
 For buoyant and rejoicing was the spirit  
 With which I looked out how to end my course;  
 I felt once more myself, my powers—all mine;  
 I knew while youth and health so lifted me  
 That, spite of all life's nothingness, no grief  
 Came nigh me, I must ever belight-hearted;  
 And that this knowledge was the only veil  
 Betwixt joy and despair: so, if age came,  
 I should be left— a wreck linked to a soul  
 Yet fluttering, or mind-broken and aware  
 Of my decay. So a long summer morn  
 Found me; and ere noon came, I had resolved  
 No age should come on me ere youth was spent,  
 For I would wear myself out, like that morn  
 Which wasted not a sunbeam; every hour  
 I would make mine, and die.

And thus I sought  
 To chain my spirit down which erst I freed  
 For flights to fame: I said 'The troubled life  
 'Of genius, seen so gay when working forth  
 'Some trusted end, grows sad when all  
 proves vain—  
 'How sad when men have parted with  
 truth's peace  
 'For falsest fancy's sake, which waited first  
 'As an obedient spirit when delight  
 'Came without fancy's call: but alters  
 soon,  
 'Comes darkened, seldom, hastens to de-  
 part,  
 'Leaving a heavy darkness and warm tears.  
 'But I shall never lose her; she will live  
 'Dearer for such seclusion. I but catch  
 'A hue, a glance of what I sing: so, pain  
 'Is linked with pleasure, for I ne'er may  
 tell  
 'Half the bright sights which dazzle me;  
 but now  
 'Mine shall be all the radiance: let them  
 fade  
 'Untold—others shall rise as fair, as fast!  
 'And when all's done, the few dim gleams  
 transferred,—  
 (For a new thought sprang up how well it  
 were,

Discarding shadowy hope, to weave such  
 lays  
 As straight encircle men with praise and  
 love,  
 So, I should not die utterly,—should bring  
 One branch from the gold forest, like the  
 knight  
 Of old tales, witnessing I had been there)—  
 'And when all's done, how vain seems e'en  
 success—  
 'The vaunted influence poets have o'er  
 men!  
 'Tis a fine thing that one weak as myself  
 'Should sit in his lone room, knowing the  
 words  
 'He utters in his solitude shall move  
 'Men like a swift wind—that tho' dead  
 and gone,  
 'New eyes shall glisten when his beauteous  
 dreams  
 'Of love come true in happier frames than  
 his.  
 'Ay, the still night brings thoughts like  
 these, but morn  
 'Comes and the mockery again laughs out  
 'At hollow praises, smiles allied to sneers;  
 'And my soul's idol ever whispers me  
 'To dwell with him and his unhonoured  
 song:  
 And I foreknew my spirit, that would  
 press  
 'First in the struggle, fail again to make  
 'All bow enslaved, and I again should  
 sink.  
 'And then know that this curse will come  
 on us,  
 'To see our idols perish; we may wither,  
 'No marvel, we are clay, but our low fate  
 'Should not extend to those whom trust-  
 ingly  
 'We sent before into time's yawning gulf  
 'To face what dread may lurk in darkness  
 there.  
 'To find the painter's glory pass, and feel  
 'Music can move us not as once, or, worst,  
 'To weep decaying wits ere the frail body  
 'Decays! Nought makes me trust some  
 love is true,  
 'But the delight of the contented lowness  
 'With which I gaze on him I keep for ever  
 'Above me; I to rise and rival him?  
 'Feed his fame rather from my heart's best  
 blood,  
 'Wither unseen that he may flourish still.'

Pauline, my soul's friend, thou dost pity  
 yet  
 How this mood swayed me when that soul  
 found thine,  
 When I had set myself to live this life,  
 Defying all past glory. Ere thou camest  
 I seemed defiant, sweet, for old delights  
 Had flocked like birds again; music, my  
 life,



## PAULINE

Nourished me more than ever; then the  
lore

Loved for itself and all it shows—that king  
Treading the purple calmly to his death,<sup>1</sup>  
While round him, like the clouds of eve,  
all dusk,

The giant shades of fate, silently flitting,  
Pile the dim outline of the coming doom;  
And him sitting alone in blood while  
friends

Are hunting far in the sunshine; and the  
boy

With his white breast and brow and clus-  
tering curls

Streaked with his mother's blood, but  
striving hard

To tell his story ere his reason goes.

And when I loved thee as love seemed so  
oft,

Thou lovedst me indeed: I wondering  
searched

My heart to find some feeling like such  
love,

Believing I was still much I had been.

Too soon I found all faith had gone from  
me,

And the late glow of life, like change on  
clouds,

Proved not the morn-blush widening into  
day,

But eve faint-coloured by the dying sun  
While darkness hastens quickly. I will tell

My state as though 'twere none of mine—  
despair

Cannot come near us—this it is, my state.

Souls alter not, and mine must still ad-  
vance;

Strange that I knew not, when I flung away  
My youth's chief aims, their loss might  
lead to loss

Of what few I retained, and no resource  
Be left me: for behold how changed is all!

I cannot chain my soul: it will not rest  
In its clay prison, this most narrow sphere:

It has strange impulse, tendency, desire,  
Which nowise I account for nor explain,

But cannot stifle, being bound to trust  
All feelings equally, to hear all sides:

How can my life indulge them? yet they  
live,

Referring to some state of life unknown.

My selfishness is satiated not,

It wears me like a flame; my hunger for  
All pleasure, howsoe'er minute, grows  
pain;

I envy—how I envy him whose soul  
Turns its whole energies to some one end,

To elevate an aim, pursue success  
However mean! So, my still baffled hope

Seeks out abstractions; I would have one  
joy,

<sup>1</sup> Agamemnon.

But one in life, so it were wholly mine,  
One rapture all my soul could fill: and this

Wild feeling places me in dream afar  
In some vast country, where the eye can see

No end to the far hills and dales bestrewn  
With shining towers and towns, till I grow  
mad

Wellnigh, to know not one abode but holds  
Some pleasure, while my soul could grasp  
the world,

But must remain this vile form's slave. I  
look

With hope to age at last, which quenching  
much,

May let me concentrate what sparks it  
spares.

This restlessness of passion meets in me  
A craving after knowledge: the sole proof

Of yet commanding will is in that power  
Repressed; for I beheld it in its dawn,

The sleepless harpy with just-budding  
wings,

And I considered whether to forego  
All happy ignorant hopes and fears, to  
live,

Finding a recompense in its wild eyes.  
And when I found that I should perish so,

I bade its wild eyes close from me for ever,  
And I am left alone with old delights;

See! it lies in me a chained thing, still  
prompt

To serve me if I loose its slightest bond:  
I cannot but be proud of my bright slave.

How should this earth's life prove my only  
sphere?

Can I so narrow sense but that in life  
Soul still exceeds it? In their elements

My love outsoars my reason; but since  
love

Perforce receives its object from this earth  
While reason wanders chainless, the few  
truths

Caught from its wanderings have sufficed  
to quell

Love chained below; then what were love,  
set free,

Which, with the object it demands, would  
pass

Reason companioning the seraphim?  
No, what I feel may pass all human love

Yet fall far short of what my love should  
be.

And yet I seem more warped in this than  
ought,

Myself stands out more hideously: of old  
I could forget myself in friendship, fame,

Liberty, nay, in love of mightier souls;  
But I begin to know what thing hate is—

To sicken and to quiver and grow white—  
And I myself have furnished its first prey.

Hate of the weak and ever-wavering will,  
The selfishness, the still-decaying frame...

But I must never grieve whom wing can  
waft  
Far from such thoughts—as now. Andro-  
meda!

And she is with me; years roll, I shall  
change,  
But change can touch her not—so beauti-  
ful

With her fixed eyes, earnest and still, and  
hair

Lifted and spread by the salt-sweeping  
breeze,

And one red beam, all the storm leaves in  
heaven,

Resting upon her eyes and hair, such hair,  
As she awaits the snake on the wet beach  
By the dark rock and the white wave just  
breaking

At her feet; quite naked and alone; a thing  
I doubt not, nor fear for, secure some god  
To save will come in thunder from the  
stars.

Let it pass! Soul requires another change.  
I will be gifted with a wondrous mind,  
Yet sunk by error to men's sympathy,  
And in the wane of life, yet only so  
As to call up their fears; and there shall  
come

A time requiring youth's best energies;  
And lo, I fling age, sorrow, sickness off,  
And rise triumphant, triumph through  
decay.

And thus it is that I supply the chasm  
'Twixt what I am and all I fain would be:  
But then to know nothing, to hope for  
nothing,

To seize on life's dull joys from a strange  
fear

Lest, losing them, all's lost and nought  
remains!

There's some vile juggle with my reason  
here;

I feel I but explain to my own loss  
These impulses: they live no less the same.  
Liberty! what though I despair? my blood  
Rose never at a slave's name proud as now.  
Oh sympathies, obscured by sophistries!—  
Where else have I sought refuge in myself,  
But from the woes I saw and could not  
stay?

Love! is not this to love thee, my Pauline?  
I cherish prejudice, lest I be left  
Utterly loveless? witness my belief.  
In poets, though sad change has come there  
too;

No more I leave myself to follow them—  
Unconsciously I measure me by them—  
Let me forget it: and I cherish most  
My love of England—how her name, a  
word

Others in a strange tongue makes my heart  
beat!

Pauline, could I but break the spell! Not  
now—

All's fever—but when calm shall come  
again,

I am prepared: I have made life my own.  
I would not be content with all the change  
One frame should feel, but I have gone in  
thought

Thro' all conjuncture, I have lived all life  
When it is most alive, where strangest fate  
New-shapes it past surmise—the throes of  
men

Bit by some curse or in the grasps of doom  
Half-visible and still-increasing round,  
Or crowning their wide being's general  
aim.

These are wild fancies, but I feel, sweet  
friend,

As one breathing his weakness to the ear  
Of pitying angel—dear as a winter flower,  
A slight flower growing alone, and offering  
Its frail cup of three leaves to the cold sun,  
Yet joyous and confiding like the triumph  
Of a child: and why am I not worthy thee?  
I can live all the life of plants, and gaze  
Drowsily on the bees that flit and play,  
Or bare my breast for sunbeams which will  
kill,

Or open in the night of sounds, to look  
For the dim stars; I can mount with the  
bird

Leaping airily his pyramid of leaves  
And twisted boughs of some tall mountain  
tree,

Or rise cheerfully springing to the heavens;  
Or like a fish breathe deep the morning air  
In the misty sun-warm water; or with  
flower

And tree can smile in light at the sinking  
sun

Just as the storm comes, as a girl would  
look

On a departing lover—most serene.

Pauline, come with me, see how I could  
build

A home for us, out of the world, in thought!  
I am uplifted: fly with me, Pauline!

Night, and one single ridge of narrow path  
Between the sullen river and the woods  
Waving and muttering, for the moonless  
night

Has shaped them into images of life,  
Like the uprising of the giant-ghosts,  
Looking on earth to know how their sons  
fare:

Thou art so close by me, the roughest swell  
Of wind in the tree-tops hides not the  
panting

Of thy soft breasts. No, we will pass to  
morning—

Morning, the rocks and valleys and old  
woods.

## PAULINE

How the sun brightens in the mist, and here,  
 Half in the air, like creatures of the place,  
 Trusting the element, living on high boughs  
 That swing in the wind—look at the silver spray  
 Flung from the foam-sheet of the cataract  
 Amid the broken rocks! Shall we stay here  
 With the wild hawks? No, ere the hot noon come,  
 Dive we down—safe! See this our new retreat  
 Walled in with a sloped mound of matted shrubs,  
 Dark, tangled, old and green, still sloping down  
 To a small pool whose waters lie asleep  
 Amid the trailing boughs turned water-plants:  
 And tall trees overarch to keep us in,  
 Breaking the sunbeams into emerald shafts  
 And in the dreamy water one small group  
 Of two or three strange trees are got together  
 Wondering at all around, as strange beasts herd  
 Together far from their own land: all wildness,  
 No turf nor moss, for boughs and plants pave all,  
 And tongues of bank go shelving in the lymph,  
 Where the pale-throated snake reclines his head,  
 And old grey stones lie making eddies there,  
 The wild-mice cross them dry-shod.  
 Deeper in!  
 Shut thy soft eyes—now look—still deeper in!  
 This is the very heart of the woods all round  
 Mountain-like heaped above us; yet even here  
 One pond of water gleams; far off the river  
 Sweeps like a sea, barred out from land; but one—  
 One thin clear sheet has overleaped and wound  
 Into this silent depth, which gained, it lies  
 Still, as but let by sufferance; the trees bend  
 O'er it as wild men watch a sleeping girl,  
 And through their roots long creeping plants out-stretch  
 Their twined hair, steeped and sparkling;  
 farther on,  
 Tall rushes and thick flag-knots have combined  
 To narrow it; so, at length, a silver thread,  
 It winds, all noiselessly through the deep wood  
 Till thro' a cleft-way, thro' the moss and stone,  
 It joins its parent-river with a shout.

Up for the glowing day, leave the old woods!  
 See, they part like a ruined arch: the sky!  
 Nothing but sky appears, so close the roots  
 And grass of the mill-top level with the air—  
 Blue sunny air, where a great cloud floats laden  
 With light, like a dead whale that white birds pick,  
 Floating away in the sun in some north sea.  
 Air, air, fresh life-blood, thin and searching air,  
 The clear, dear breath of God that loveth us,  
 Where small birds reel and winds take their delight!  
 Water is beautiful, but not like air:  
 See, where the soid azure waters lie  
 Made as of thickened air, and down below,  
 The fern-ranks like a forest spread themselves  
 As though each pore could feel the element;  
 Where the quick glancing serpent winds his way,  
 Float with me there, Pauline!—but not like air.

Down the hill! Stop—a clump of trees, see, set  
 On a heap of rock, which look o'er the far plain:  
 So, envious climbing shrubs would mount to rest  
 And peer from their spread boughs; wide they wave, looking  
 At the muleteers who whistle on their way,  
 To the merry chime of morning bells, past all  
 The little smoking cots, mid fields and banks  
 And corpses bright in the sun. My spirit wanders:  
 Hedgerows for me—those living hedgerows where  
 The bushes close and clasp above and keep  
 Thought in—I am concentrated—I feel;  
 But my soul saddens when it looks beyond:  
 I cannot be immortal, taste all joy.

O God, where do they tend—these struggling aims?<sup>1</sup>  
 What would I have? What is this 'sleep' which seems  
 To bound all? can there be a 'waking' point  
 Of crowning life? The soul would never rule;  
 It would be first in all things, it would have  
 Its utmost pleasure filled, but, that complete,  
 Commanding, for commanding, sickens it.

<sup>1</sup> See note at the end of the poem.

PAULINE

The last point I can trace is—rest beneath  
Some better essence than itself, in weak-  
ness;

This is 'myself,' not what I think should be:  
And what is that I hunger for but God?

My God, my God, let me for once look on  
thee

As though nought else existed, we alone!  
And as creation crumbles, my soul's spark  
Expands till I can say,—Even from myself  
I need thee and I feel thee and I love thee.  
I do not plead my rapture in thy works  
For love of thee, nor that I feel as one  
Who cannot die: but there is that in me  
Which turns to thee, which loves or which  
should love.

Why have I girt myself with this hell-dress?  
Why have I laboured to put out my life?  
Is it not in my nature to adore,  
And e'en for all my reason do I not  
Feel him, and thank him, and pray to him—  
now?

Can I forego the trust that he loves me?  
Do I not feel a love which only ONE . . .  
O thou pale form, so dimly seen, deep-  
eyed!

I have denied thee calmly—do I not  
Pant when I read of thy consummate  
power,

And burn to see thy calm pure truths out-  
flash

The brightest gleams of earth's philo-  
sophy?

Do I not shake to hear aught question  
thee?

If I am erring save me, madden me,  
Take from me powers and pleasures, let  
me die

Ages, so I see thee! I am knit round  
As with a charm by sin and lust and pride,  
Yet though my wandering dreams have  
seen all shapes

Of strange delight, oft have I stood by  
thee—

Have I been keeping lonely watch with  
thee

In the damp night by weeping Olivet,  
Or leaning on thy bosom, proudly less,  
Or dying with thee on the lonely cross,  
Or witnessing thine outburst from the  
tomb.

A mortal, sin's familiar friend, doth here  
Avow that he will give all earth's reward,  
But to believe and humbly teach the faith,  
In suffering and poverty and shame,  
Only believing he is not unloved.

And now, my Pauline, I am thine for ever!  
I feel the spirit which has buoyed me up  
Desert me, and old shades are gathering  
fast;

Yet while the last light waits, I would say  
much,

This chiefly, it is gain that I have said  
Somewhat of love I ever felt for thee  
But seldom told; our hearts so beat to-  
gether

That speech seemed mockery; but when  
dark hours come,  
And joy departs, and thou, sweet, deem'st  
it strange

As sorrow moves me, thou canst not remove,  
Look on this life I dedicate to thee,  
Which through thee I began, which thus I  
end.

Collecting the last gleams to strive to tell  
How I am thine, and more than ever now  
That I sink fast: yet though I deeper sink,  
No less song proves one word has brought  
me bliss,

Another still may win bliss surely back.  
Thou knowest, dear, I could not think all  
calm,

For fancies followed thought and bore me  
off,

And left all indistinct; ere one was caught  
Another glanced; so, dazzled by my wealth,  
I knew not which to leave nor which to  
choose,

For all so floated, nought was fixed and  
firm.

And then thou said'st a perfect bard was  
one

Who chronicled the stages of all life,  
And so thou bad'st me shadow this first  
stage.

'Tis done, and even now I recognize  
The shift, the change from last to past—  
discern

Faintly how life is truth and truth is good.  
And why thou must be mine is, that e'en  
now

In the dim hush of night, that I have done,  
Despite the sad forebodings, love looks  
through—

Whispers,—'E'en at the last I have her still,  
With her delicious eyes as clear as heaven  
When rain in a quick shower has beat  
down mist,

And clouds float white above like broods  
of swans.

How the blood lies upon her cheek, out-  
spread

As thinned by kisses! only in her lips  
It wells and pulses like a living thing,  
And her neck looks like marble misted  
o'er

With love-breath,—a Pauline from heights  
above,

Stooping beneath me, looking up—one  
look

As I might kill her and be loved the more.

So, love me—me, Pauline, and nought but  
me,

## PAULINE

Never leave loving! Words are wild and weak,

Believe them not, Pauline! I stained myself  
But to behold thee purer by my side,  
To show thou art my breath, my life, a last  
Resource, an extreme want: never believe  
Aught better could so look on thee; nor  
seek

Again the world of good thoughts left for  
mine!

There were bright troops of undiscovered  
suns,

Each equal in their radiant course; there  
were

Clusters of far fair isles which ocean kept  
For his own joy, and his waves broke on  
them

Without a choice; and there was a dim  
crowd

Of visions, each a part of some grand whole:  
And one star left his peers and came with  
peace

Upon a storm, and all eyes pined for him;  
And one isle harboured a sea-beaten ship,  
And the crew wandered in its bowers and  
plucked

Its fruits and gave up all their hopes of  
home;

And one dream came to a pale poet's sleep,  
And he said, 'I am singled out by God,  
'No sin must touch me.' Words are wild  
and weak,

But what they would express is,—Leave  
me not,

Still sit by me with beating breast and hair  
Loosened, be watching earnest by my side,  
Turning my books or kissing me when I  
Look up—like summer wind! Bestill to me  
A help to music's mystery which mind fails  
To fathom, its solution, no mere clue!  
O reason's pedantry, life's rule prescribed!  
I hopeless, I the loveless, hope and love.  
Wiser and better, know me now, not when  
You loved me as I was. Smile not! I have  
Much yet to dawn on you, to gladden  
you.

No more of the past! I'll look within no  
more.

I have too trusted my own lawless wants,  
Too trusted my vain self, vague intuition—  
Draining soul's wine alone in the still night,  
And seeing how, as gathering films arose,  
As by an inspiration life seemed bare  
And grinning in its vanity, while ends  
Foul to be dreamed of, smiled at me as  
fixed

And fair, while others changed from fair  
to foul

As a young witch turns an old hag at night.  
No more of this! We will go hand in hand,  
I with thee, even as a child—love's slave,  
Looking no farther than his liege com-  
mands.

And thou hast chosen where this life shall  
be:

The land which gave me thee shall be our  
home,

Where nature lies all wild amid her lakes  
And snow-swathed mountains and vast  
pines begirt

With ropes of snow—where nature lies all  
bare,

Suffering none to view her but a race  
Or stunted or deformed, like the mute  
dwarfs

Which wait upon a naked Indian queen.  
And there (the time being when the  
heavens are thick

With storm) I'll sit with thee while thou  
dost sing

Thy native songs, gay as a desert bird  
Which crieth as it flies for perfect joy,  
Or telling me old stories of dead knights;  
Or I will read great lays to thee—how she,  
The fair pale sister, went to her chill grave!  
With power to love and to be loved and  
live:

Or we will go together, like twin gods  
Of the infernal world, with scented lamp  
Over the dead, to call and to awake,  
Over the unshaped images which lie  
Within my mind's cave: only leaving all,  
That tells of the past doubt. So, when  
spring comes

With sunshine back again like an old smile,  
And the fresh waters and awakened birds  
And budding woods await us, I shall be  
Prepared, and we will question life once  
more,

Till its old sense shall come renewed by  
change,

Like some clear thought which harsh  
words veiled before;

Feeling God loves us, and that all which  
errs

Is but a dream which death will dissipate.  
And then what need of longer exile? Seek  
My England, and, again there, calm ap-  
proach

All I once fled from, calmly look on those  
The works of my past weakness, as one  
views

Some scene where danger met him long  
before.

Ah that such pleasant life should be but  
dreamed!

But whate'er come of it, and though it fade,  
And though ere the cold morning all be  
gone,

As it may be;—tho' music wait to wile,  
And strange eyes and bright wine lure,  
laugh like sin

Which steals back softly on a soul half  
saved,

And I the first deny, decry, despise,

<sup>1</sup> Antigone.

## PAULINE

With this avowal, these intents so fair,—  
Still be it all my own, this moment's pride!  
No less I make an end in perfect joy.  
E'en in my brightest time, a lurking fear  
Possessed me: I well knew my weak re-  
solves.

I felt the witchery that makes mind sleep  
Over its treasure, as one half afraid  
To make his riches definite: but now  
These feelings shall not utterly be lost,  
I shall not know again that nameless care  
Lest, leaving all undone in youth, some new  
And undreamed end reveal itself too late:  
For this song shall remain to tell for ever  
That when I lost all hope of such a change,  
Suddenly beauty rose on me again.  
No less I make an end in perfect joy,  
For I, who thus again was visited,  
Shall doubt not many another bliss awaits,  
And, though this weak soul sink and dark-  
ness whelm,

Some little word shall light it, raise aloft,  
To where I clearer see and better love,  
As I again go o'er the tracts of thought.  
Like one who has a right, and I shall live  
With poets, calmer, purer still each time,

And beautiful shapes will come for me to  
seize,  
And unknown secrets will be trusted me  
Which were denied the waverer once; but  
now  
I shall be priest and prophet as of old.

Sun-treader, I believe in God and truth  
And love; and as one just escaped from  
death  
Would bind himself in bands of friends to  
feel.

He lives indeed, so, I would lean on thee!  
Thou must be ever with me, most in gloom  
If such must come, but chiefly when I die,  
For I seem, dying, as one going in the dark  
To fight a giant; but live thou for ever,  
And be to all what thou hast been to me!  
All in whom this wakes pleasant thoughts  
of me

Know my last state is happy, free from  
doubt  
Or touch of fear. Love me and wish me  
well.

RICHMOND:

October 22, 1832.

## NOTE

Je crains bien que mon pauvre ami ne soit pas toujours parfaitement compris dans ce qui reste à lire de cet étrange fragment, mais il est moins propre que tout autre à éclaircir ce qui de sa nature ne peut jamais être que songe et confusion. D'ailleurs je ne sais trop si en cherchant à mieux co-ordonner certaines parties l'on ne courrait pas le risque de nuire au seul mérite auquel une production si singulière peut prétendre, celui de donner une idée assez précise du genre qu'elle n'a fait qu'ébaucher. Ce début sans prétention, ce remuement des passions qui va d'abord en accroissant et puis s'apaise par degrés, ces élans de l'âme, ce retour soudain sur soi-même, et par-dessus tout, la tournure d'esprit tout particulière de mon ami, rendent les changemens presque impossibles. Les raisons qu'il fait valoir ailleurs, et d'autres encore plus puissantes, ont fait trouver grâce à mes yeux pour cet écrit qu'autrement je lui eusse conseillé de jeter au feu. Je n'en crois pas moins au grand principe de toute composition—à ce principe de

Shakespeare, de Raphaëlle, de Beethoven, d'où il suit que la concentration des idées est due bien plus à leur conception qu'à leur mise en exécution: j'ai tout lieu de craindre que la première de ces qualités ne soit encore étrangère à mon ami, et je doute fort qu'un redoublement de travail lui fasse acquérir la seconde. Le mieux serait de brûler ceci; mais que faire?

Je crois que dans ce qui suit il fait allusion à un certain examen qu'il fit autrefois de l'âme, ou plutôt de son âme, pour découvrir la suite des objets auxquels il lui serait possible d'atteindre, et dont chacun une fois obtenu devait former une espèce de plateau d'où l'on pouvait apercevoir d'autres buts, d'autres projets, d'autres jouissances qui, à leur tour, devaient être surmontés. Il en résultait que l'oubli et le sommeil devaient tout terminer. Cette idée, que je ne sais pas parfaitement, lui est peut-être aussi inintelligible qu'à moi.

PAULINE.

# PARACELSUS

1835

INSCRIBED TO

AMÉDÉE DE RIPERT-MONCLAR

BY HIS AFFECTIONATE FRIEND

LONDON: March 15, 1835

R. B.

## PERSONS

AUREOLUS PARACELSUS, a student.

FESTUS and MICHAL, his friends.

APRILE, an Italian poet.

## I.—PARACELSUS ASPIRES

SCENE.—*Würzburg; a garden in the environs. 1512.*

FESTUS, PARACELSUS, MICHAL

*Par.* Come close to me, dear friends;  
still closer; thus!  
Close to the heart which, though long time  
roll by

Ere it again beat quicker, pressed to yours,  
As now it beats—perchance a long, long  
time—

At least henceforth your memories shall  
make

Quiet and fragrant as befits their home.  
Nor shall my memory want a home in  
yours—

Alas, that it requires too well such free  
Forgiving love as shall embalm it there!  
For if you would remember me aright,  
As I was born to be, you must forget  
All fitful strange and moody waywardness  
Which e'er confused my better spirit, to  
dwell

Only on moments such as these, dear  
friends!

—My heart no truer, but my words and  
ways

More true to it: as Michal, some months  
hence,

Will say, 'this autumn was a pleasant time,'  
For some few sunny days; and overlook  
Its bleak wind, hankering after pining  
leaves.

Autumn would fain be sunny; I would look  
Like my nature's truth: and both are frail,  
And both beloved, for all our frailty.

*Mich.* Aureole!

*Par.* Drop by drop! she is weeping like  
a child!

Not so! I am content—more than content;  
Nay, autumn wins you best by this its mute  
Appeal to sympathy for its decay:

Look up, sweet Michal, nor esteem the less  
Your stained and drooping vines their  
grapes bow down,

Nor blame those creaking trees bent with  
their fruit,

That apple-tree with a rare after-birth  
Of peeping blooms sprinkled its wealth  
among!

Then for the winds—what wind that ever  
raved

Shall vex that ash which overlooks you  
both,

So proud it wears its berries? Ah, at length,  
The old smile meet for her, the lady of this  
Sequestered nest!—this kingdom, limited

Alone by one old populous green wall  
Tenanted by the ever-busy flies,  
Grey crickets and shy lizards and quick  
spiders,

Each family of the silver-threaded moss—  
Which, look through near, this way, and it  
appears

A stubble-field or a cane-brake, a marsh  
Of bulrush whitening in the sun: laugh  
now!

Fancy the crickets, each one in his house,  
Looking out, wondering at the world—or  
best,

Yon painted snail with his gay shell of dew,  
Travelling to see the glossy balls high up  
Hung by the caterpillar, like gold lamps.

*Mich.* In truth we have lived carelessly  
and well.

*Par.* And shall, my perfect pair!—  
each, trust me, born

For the other; nay, your very hair, when  
mixed,

Is of one hue. For where save in this  
nook

Shall you two walk, when I am far away,  
And wish me prosperous fortune? Stay:  
that plant

Shall never wave its tangles lightly and  
softly,

As a queen's languid and imperial arm  
Which scatters crowns among her lovers,  
but you

Shall be reminded to predict to me  
Some great success! Ah see, the sun sinks  
broad

Behind Saint Saviour's: wholly gone, at  
last!

*Fest.* How, Aureole, stay those wander-  
ing eyes awhile!

You are ours to-night, at least; and while  
 Of Michael and her tears, I thought that  
 Could willing leave what he so seemed to  
 But that last look destroys my dream—that  
 As if, where'er you gazed, there stood a  
 How far was Würzburg with its church and  
 And garden-walls and all things they con-  
 From that look's far alighting?

*Par.* I but spoke  
 And looked alike from simple joy to see  
 The beings I love best, shut in so well  
 From all rude chances like to be my lot,  
 That, when afar, my weary spirit,—  
 To lose awhile its care in soothing thoughts  
 Of them, their pleasant features, looks and  
 Needs never hesitate, nor apprehend  
 Encroaching trouble may have reached  
 them too,

Nor have recourse to fancy's busy aid  
 And fashion even a wish in their behalf  
 Beyond what they possess already here;  
 But, unobstructed, may at once forget  
 Itself in them, assured how well they fare.  
 Beside, this Festus knows he holds me one  
 Whom quiet and its charms arrest in vain,  
 One scarce aware of all the joys I quit,  
 Too filled with airy hopes to make account  
 Of soft delights his own heart garners up:  
 Whereas beholds how much our sense of  
 all.

That's beauteous proves alike! When  
 Festus learns

That every common pleasure of the world  
 Affects me as himself; that I have just  
 As varied appetite for joy derived  
 From common things; a stake in life, in  
 short,

Like his; a stake which rash pursuit of aims  
 That life affords not, would as soon de-  
 stroy;—

He may convince himself that, this in view,  
 I shall act well advised. And last, because,  
 Though heaven and earth and all things  
 were at stake,

Sweet Michael must not weep, our parting  
 eve.

*Fest.* True; and the eve is deepening,  
 and we sit

As little anxious to begin our talk  
 As though to-morrow I could hint of it  
 As we paced arm-in-arm the cheerful town  
 At sun-down; or could whisper it by fits  
 (Trithemius busied with his class the while)  
 In that dim chamber where the noon-  
 streaks peer

Half-frightened by the awful tomes a-  
 round;

Or in some grassy lane unbosom all  
 From even-blush to midnight: but, to-  
 morrow!

Have I full leave to tell my inmost mind?  
 We have been brothers, and henceforth  
 the world

Will rise between us:—all my freest mind?  
 'Tis the last night, dear Aureole!

*Par.* Oh, say on!  
 Devise some test of love, some arduous  
 feat

To be performed for you: say on! If night  
 Be spent the while, the better! Recall how  
 oft

My wondrous plans and dreams and hopes  
 and fears

Have—never wearied you, oh no!—as I  
 Recall, and never vividly as now,  
 Your true affection, born when Einsiedeln  
 And its green hills were all the world to us;  
 And still increasing to this night which  
 ends

My further stay at Würzburg. Oh, one day  
 You shall be very proud! Say on, dear  
 friends!

*Fest.* In truth? 'Tis for my proper peace,  
 indeed,

Rather than yours; for vain all projects  
 seem

To stay your course: I said my latest hope  
 Is fading even now. A story tells  
 Of some far embassy despatched to win  
 The favour of an eastern king, and how  
 The gifts they offered proved but dazzling  
 dust

Shed from the ore-beds native to his clime.  
 Just so, the value of repose and love,  
 I meant should tempt you, better far than I  
 You seem to comprehend; and yet desist  
 No whit from projects where repose nor  
 love

Has part.  
*Par.* Once more? Alas! As I foretold.

*Fest.* A solitary brier the bank puts forth  
 To save our swan's nest floating out to sea.

*Par.* Dear Festus, hear me. What is it  
 you wish?

That I should lay aside my heart's pursuit,  
 Abandon the sole ends for which I live,  
 Reject God's great commission, and so  
 die!

You bid me listen for your true love's sake:  
 Yet how has grown that love? Even in a  
 long

And patient cherishing of the self-same  
 spirit

If now would quell; as though a mother  
 hoped

To stay the lusty manhood of the child  
 Once weak upon her knees. I was not born  
 Informed and fearless from the first, but  
 shrank



## PARACELSUS

[1

Clear as your yearning to be singled out  
For its pursuer. Dare you answer this?

*Par.* [after a pause]. No, I have nought  
to fear! Who will may know  
The secret'st workings of my soul. What  
though

It be so?—if indeed the strong desire  
Eclipse the aim in me?—if splendour break  
Upon the outset of my path alone,  
And duskest shade succeed? What fairer  
seal

Shall I require to my authentic mission  
Than this fierce energy?—this instinct  
striving

Because its nature is to strive?—enticed  
By the security of no broad course,  
Without success forever in its eyes!  
How know I else such glorious fate my  
own,

But in the restless irresistible force  
That works within me? Is it for human  
will

To institute such impulses?—still less,  
To disregard their promptings! What  
should I

Do, kept among you all; your loves, your  
cares,

Your life—all to be mine? Be sure that  
God

Ne'er dooms to waste the strength he  
deigns impart!

Ask the geier-eagle why she stoops at once  
Into the vast and unexplored abyss,  
What full-grown power informs her from  
the first,

Why she not marvels, strenuously beating  
The silent boundless regions of the sky!  
Be sure they sleep not whom God needs!  
Nor fear

Their holding light his charge, when every  
hour

That finds that charge delayed, is a new  
death.

This for the faith in which I trust; and  
hence

I can abjure so well the idle arts  
These pedants strive to learn and teach;

Black Arts,  
Great Works, the Secret and Sublime,  
forsooth—

Let others prize: too intimate a tie  
Connects me with our God! A sullen fiend  
To do my bidding, fallen and hateful  
sprites

To help me—what are these, at best, be-  
side

God helping, God directing everywhere,  
So that the earth shall yield her secrets up,  
And every object there be charged to  
strike,

Teach, gratify her master God appoints?  
And I am young, my Festus, happy and  
free!

I can devote myself; I have a life

To give; I, singled out for this, the One!  
Think, think! the wide East, where all  
Wisdom sprung;

The bright South, where she dwelt; the  
hopeful North,

All are passed o'er —it lights on me! 'Tis  
time

New hopes should animate the world, new  
light

Should dawn from new revealings to a  
race

Weighed down so long, forgotten so long;  
thus shall

The heaven reserved for us at last receive  
Creatures whom no unworlded splendours

blind,  
But ardent to confront the unclouded  
blaze

Whose beams not seldom blessed their  
pilgrimage,

Not seldom glorified their life below.  
*Fest.* My words have their old fate and  
make faint stand

Against your glowing periods. Call this,  
truth—

Why not pursue it in a fast retreat,  
Some one of Learning's many palaces,

After approved example?—seeking there  
Calm converse with the great dead, soul to

soul,  
Who laid up treasure with the like intent  
—So lift yourself into their airy place,

And fill out full their unfulfilled careers,  
Unravelling the knots their baffled skill

Pronounced inextricable, true!—but left  
Far less confused. A fresh eye, a fresh

hand,  
Might do much at their vigour's waning-  
point;

Succeeding with new-breathed new-  
hearted force,

As at old games the runner snatched the  
torch

From runner still: this way success might  
be.

But you have coupled with your enterprise,  
An arbitrary self-repugnant scheme

Of seeking it in strange and untried paths.  
What books are in the desert? Writes the  
sea

The secret of her yearning in vast caves  
Where yours will fall the first of human

feet?  
Has wisdom sat there and recorded aught  
You press to read? Why turn aside from  
her

To visit, where her vesture never glanced,  
Now—solitudes consigned to barrenness

By God's decree, which who shall dare  
impugn?

Now—ruins where she paused but would  
not stay,

Old ravaged cities that, renouncing her,  
She called an endless curse on, so it came:

Or worst of all, now—men you visit, men,  
Ignoblest troops who never heard her  
voice

Or hate it, men without one gift from  
Rome

Or Athens,—these shall Aureole's teachers  
be!

Rejecting past example, practice, precept,  
Aidless mid these he thinks to stand  
alone:

Thick like a glory round the Stagirite  
Your rivals throng, the sages: here stand  
you!

Whatever you may protest, knowledge is  
not

Paramount in your love; or for her sake  
You would collect all help from every  
source—

Rival, assistant, friend, foe, all would  
merge

In the broad class of those who showed  
her haunts,

And those who showed them not.

*Par.* What shall I say?

Festus, from childhood I have been pos-  
sessed

By a fire—by a true fire, or faint or fierce,  
As from without some master, so it  
seemed,

Repressed or urged its current: this but ill  
Expresses what would I convey: but rather  
I will believe an angel ruled me thus,

Than that my soul's own workings, own  
high nature,

So became manifest. I knew not then  
What whispered in the evening, and spoke  
out

At midnight. If some mortal, born too  
soon,

Were laid away in some great trance—the  
ages

Coming and going all the while—till  
dawned

His true time's advent; and could then  
record

The words they spoke who kept watch by  
his bed,—

Then I might tell more of the breath so light  
Upon my eyelids, and the fingers light

Among my hair. Youth is confused; yet  
never

So dull was I but, when that spirit passed,  
I turned to him, scarce consciously, as  
turns

A water-snake when fairies cross his sleep.  
And having this within me and about me

While Einsiedeln, its mountains, lakes and  
woods

Confined me—what oppressive joy was  
mine

When life grew plain, and I first viewed the  
thronged,

The everlasting concourse of mankind!  
Believe that ere I joined them, ere I knew

The purpose of the pageant, or the place  
Consigned me in its ranks—while, just  
awake,

Wonder was freshest and delight most  
pure—

'Twas then that least supportable appeared  
A station with the brightest of the crowd,

A portion with the proudest of them all.  
And from the tumult in my breast, this  
only

Could I collect, that I must thenceforth die  
Or elevate myself far, far above

The gorgeous spectacle. I seemed to long  
At once to trample on, yet save mankind,

To make some unexampled sacrifice  
In their behalf, to wring some wondrous  
good

From heaven or earth for them, to perish,  
winning

Eternal weal in the act: as who should dare  
Pluck out the angry thunder from its  
cloud,

That, all its gathered flame discharged on  
him,

No storm might threaten summer's azure  
sleep:

Yet never to be mixed with men so much  
As to have part even in my own work,  
share

In my own largess. Once the feat achieved,  
I would withdraw from their officious  
praise,

Would gently put aside their profuse  
thanks.

Like some knight traversing a wilderness,  
Who, on his way, may chance to free a  
tribe

Of desert-people from their dragon-foe;  
When all the swarthy race press round to  
kiss

His feet, and choose him for their king, and  
yield

Their poor tents, pitched among the sand-  
hills, for

His realm: and he points, smiling, to his  
scarf

Heavy with riveled gold, his burgonet  
Gay set with twinkling stones—and to the  
East,

Where these must be displayed!  
*Fest.* Good: let us hear

No more about your nature, 'which first  
shrank

'From all that marked you out apart from  
men!'

*Par.* I touch on that; these words but  
analyse

The first mad impulse: 'twas as brief as  
fond,

For as I gazed again upon the show,  
I soon distinguished here and there a  
shape

Palm-wreathed and radiant, forehead and  
full eye.

Well pleased was I their state should thus  
at once

Interpret my own thoughts:—‘Behold the  
clue

‘To all,’ I rashly said, ‘and what I pine  
‘To do, these have accomplished: we are  
peers.

‘They know and therefore rule: I, too, will  
know!’

You were beside me, Festus, as you say;  
You saw me plunge in their pursuits whom  
fame

Is lavish to attest the lords of mind,  
Not pausing to make sure the prize in  
view

Would satiate my cravings when obtained,  
But since they strove I strove. Then came  
a slow

And strangling failure. We aspired alike,  
Yet not the meanest plodder, Tritheim  
counts

A marvel, but was all-sufficient, strong,  
Or staggered only at his own vast wits;  
While I was restless, nothing satisfied,  
Distrustful, most perplexed. I would slur  
over

That struggle; suffice it, that I loathed my-  
self

As weak compared with them, yet felt  
somehow

A mighty power was brooding, taking  
shape

Within me; and this lasted till one night  
When, as I sat revolving it and more,

A still voice from without said—‘Seest  
thou not,

‘Desponding child, whence spring defeat  
and loss?

‘Even from thy strength. Consider: hast  
thou gazed

‘Presumptuously on wisdom’s counte-  
nance,

‘No veil between; and can thy faltering  
hands,

‘Unguided by the brain the sight absorbs,  
‘Pursue their task as earnest blinkers do

‘Whom radiance ne’er distracted? Live  
their life

‘If thou wouldst share their fortune, choose  
their eyes

‘Unfed by splendour. Let each task present  
‘Its petty good to thee. Waste not thy gifts

‘In profitless waiting for the gods’ descent,  
‘But have some idol of thine own to dress

‘With their array. Know, not for know-  
ing’s sake,

‘But to become a star to men for ever;  
‘Know, for the gain it gets, the praise it  
brings,

‘The wonder it inspires, the love it breeds:  
‘Look one step onward, and secure that  
step!’

And I smiled as one never smiles but  
once,

Then first discovering my own aim’s ex-  
tent,

Which sought to comprehend the works  
of God,

And God himself, and all God’s inter-  
course

With the human mind; I understand, no  
less,

My fellows’ studies, whose true worth I  
saw,

But smiled not, well aware who stood by  
me.

And softer came the voice—‘There is a  
way:

‘‘Tis hard for flesh to ‘read therein, im-  
bued

‘With frailty—hopeless, if indulgence first  
‘Have ripened inborn germs of sin to  
strength:

‘Wilt thou adventure for my sake and  
man’s,

‘Apart from all reward.’ And last it  
breathed—

‘Be happy, my good soldier; I am by thee,  
‘Be sure, even to the end!’—I answered  
not,

Knowing him. As he spoke, I was endued  
With comprehension and a steadfast will;

And when he ceased, my brow was sealed  
his own.

If there took place no special change in  
me,

How comes it all things wore a different  
hue

Thenceforward?—pregnant with vast con-  
sequence,

Teeming with grand result, loaded with  
fate?

So that when, quailing at the mighty range  
Of secret truths which yearn for birth, I  
haste

To contemplate undazzled some one truth,  
Its bearings and effects alone—at once

What was a speck expands into a star,  
Asking a life to pass exploring thus,

Till I near craze. I go to prove my soul!  
I see my way as birds their trackless way.

I shall arrive! what time, what circuit first,  
I ask not: but unless God send his hail

Or blinding fireballs, sleet or stifling snow,  
In some time, his good time, I shall arrive:

He guides me and the bird. In his good  
time!

*Mich.* Vex him no further, Festus; it is  
so!

*Fest.* Just thus you help me ever. This  
would hold

Were it the trackless air, and not a path  
Inviting you, distinct with footprints yet

Of many a mighty marcher gone that way.  
You may have purer views than theirs, per-  
haps,

But they were famous in their day—the  
proofs

Remain. At least accept the light they lend.

*Par.* Their light! the sum of all is briefly this:

They laboured and grew famous, and the fruits

Are best seen in a dark and groaning earth  
Given over to a blind and endless strife  
With evils, what of all their lore abates?  
No; I reject and spurn them utterly

And all they teach. Shall I still sit beside  
Their dry wells, with a white lip and filmed  
eye,

While in the distance heaven is blue above  
Mountains where sleep the unsunned  
tarns?

*Fest.* And yet

As strong delusions have prevailed ere  
now.

Men have set out as gallantly to seek  
Their ruin. I have heard of such: your-  
self

Avow all hitherto have failed and fallen.

*Mich.* Nay, Festus, when but as the  
pilgrims faint

Through the drear way, do you expect to  
see

Their city dawn amid the clouds afar?

*Par.* Ay, sounds it not like some old  
well-known tale?

For me, I estimate their works and them  
So rightly, that at times I almost dream  
I too have spent a life the sages' way,  
And tread once more familiar paths. Per-  
chance

I perished in an arrogant self-reliance  
Ages ago; and in that act, a prayer  
For one more chance went up so earnest,  
so

Instinct with better light let in by death,  
That life was blotted out—not so com-  
pletely

But scattered wrecks enough of it remain,  
Dim memories, as now, when once more  
seems

The goal in sight again. All which, indeed,  
Is foolish, and only means—the flesh I  
wear,

The earth I tread, are not more clear to me  
Than my belief, explained to you or no.

*Fest.* And who am I, to challenge and  
dispute

That clear belief? I will divest all fear.

*Mich.* Then Aureole is God's com-  
missary! he shall

Be great and grand—and all for us!

*Par.* No, sweet!

Not great and grand. If I can serve man-  
kind

'Tis well; but there our intercourse must  
end:

I never will be served by those I serve.

*Fest.* Look well to this; here is a plague-  
spot, here,

Disguise it how you may! 'Tis true, you  
utter

This scorn while by our side and loving us:  
'Tis but a spot as yet; but it will break  
Into a hideous blotch if overlooked.

How can that course be safe which from  
the first

Produces carelessness to human love?  
It seems you have abjured the helps which  
men

Who overpass their kind, as you would do,  
Have humbly sought; I dare not thorough-  
ly probe

This matter, lest I learn too much. Let be  
That popular praise would little instigate  
Your efforts, nor particular approval  
Reward you; put reward aside; alone  
You shall go forth upon your arduous task,  
None shall assist you, none partake your  
toil,

None share your triumph: still you must  
retain

Some one to cast your glory on, to share  
Your rapture with. Were I elect like you,  
I would encircle me with love, and raise  
A rampart of my fellows; it should seem  
Impossible for me to fail, so watched  
By gentle friends who made my cause their  
own.

They should ward off fate's envy—the  
great gift,

Extravagant when claimed by me alone,  
Being so a gift to them as well as me.  
If danger daunted me or ease seduced,  
How calmly their sad eyes should gaze  
reproach!

*Mich.* O Aureole, can I sing when all  
alone,

Without first calling, in my fancy, both  
To listen by my side—even I! And you?  
Do you not feel this? Say that you feel this!

*Par.* I feel 'tis pleasant that my aims, at  
length

Allowed their weight, should be supposed  
to need

A further strengthening in these goodly  
helps!

My course allures for its own sake, its sole  
Intrinsic worth; and ne'er shall boat of  
mine

Adventure forth for gold and apes at once.  
Your sages say, 'if human, therefore  
weak.'

If weak, more need to give myself entire  
To my pursuit; and by its side, all else . . .  
No matter! I deny myself but little  
In waiving all assistance save its own.

Would there were some real sacrifice to  
make!

Your friends the sages threw their joys  
away,

While I must be content with keeping mine.

*Fest.* But do not cut yourself from  
human weal!

You cannot thrive—a man that dares affect

To spend his life in service to his kind  
For no reward of theirs, unbound to them  
By any tie; nor do so, Aureole! No—  
There are strange punishments for such.

Give up  
(Although no visible good flow thence)  
some part

Of the glory to another; hiding thus,  
Even from yourself, that all is for yourself.  
Say, say almost to God—'I have done all  
'For her, not for myself!'

*Par.* And who but lately  
Was to rejoice in my success like you?  
Whom should I love but both of you?

*Fest.* I know not:  
But know this, you, that 'tis no will of  
mine

You should abjure the lofty claims you  
make;

And this the cause—I can no longer seek  
To overlook the truth, that there would be  
A monstrous spectacle upon the earth,  
Beneath the pleasant sun, among the trees:  
—A being knowing not what love is. Hear  
me!

You are endowed with faculties which bear  
Annexed to them as 'twere a dispensation  
To summon meaner spirits to do their will  
And gather round them at their need; in-  
spiring

Such with a love themselves can never feel,  
Passionless 'mid their passionate votaries.  
I know not if you joy in this or no,

Or ever dream that common men can live  
On objects you prize lightly, but which  
make

Their heart's sole treasure: the affections  
seem

Beauteous at most to you, which we must  
taste

Or die: and this strange quality accords,  
I know not how, with you; sits well upon  
That luminous brow, though in another it  
scowls

An eating brand, a shame. I dare not  
judge you.

The rules of right and wrong thus set aside,  
There's no alternative—I own you one  
Of higher order, under other laws

Than bind us; therefore, curb not one bold  
glance!

'Tis best aspire. Once mingled with us  
all . . .

*Mich.* Stay with us, Aureole! cast those  
hopes away,

And stay with us! An angel warns me, too;  
Man should be humble; you are very  
proud:

And God, dethroned, has doleful plagues  
for such!

—Warns me to have in dread no quick  
repulse,

No slow defeat, but a complete success:  
You will find all you seek, and perish so!

*Par.* [after a pause]. Are these the barren  
firstfruits of my quest?

Is love like this the natural lot of all?  
How many years or pain might one such  
hour

O'erbalance? Dearest Michal, dearest  
Festus,

What shall I say, if not that I desire  
To justify your love; and will, dear friends,  
In swerving nothing from my first resolves.  
See, the great moon! and ere the mottled  
owls

Were wide awake, I was to go. It seems  
You acquiesce at last in all save this—

If I am like to compass what I seek  
By the untried career I choose; and then,  
If that career, making but small account  
Of much of life's delight, will yet retain  
Sufficient to sustain my soul: for thus  
I understand these fond fears just ex-  
pressed.

And first; the lore you praise and I neglect,  
The labours and the precepts of old time,  
I have not lightly disesteemed. But,  
friends,

Truth is within ourselves; it takes no rise  
From outward things, whate'er you may  
believe.

There is an inmost centre in us all,  
Where truth abides in fulness; and around,  
Wall upon wall, the gross flesh hems it in,  
This perfect, clear perception—which is  
truth.

A baffling and perverting carnal mesh  
Binds it, and makes all error: and to know  
Rather consists in opening out a way  
Whence the imprisoned splendour may  
escape,

Than in effecting entry for a light  
Supposed to be without. Watch narrowly  
The demonstration of a truth, its birth,  
And you trace back the effluence to its  
spring

And source within us; where broods  
radiance vast,

To be elicited ray by ray, as chance  
Shall favour: chance—for hitherto, your  
sage

Even as he knows not how those beams are  
born,

As little knows he what unlocks their fount:  
And men have oft grown old among their  
books

To die case-hardened in their ignorance,  
Whose careless youth had promised what  
long years

Or unremitted labour ne'er performed:  
While, contrary, it has chanced some idle  
day,

To autumn loiterers just as fancy-free  
As the midges in the sun, gives birth at  
last

To truth—produced mysteriously as cape  
Of cloud grown out of the invisible air.  
Hence, may not truth be lodged alike in  
all,  
The lowest as the highest? some slight film  
The interposing bar which binds a soul  
And makes the idiot, just as makes the  
sage  
Some film removed, the happy outlet  
whence  
Truth issues proudly? See this soul of  
ours!  
How it strives weakly in the child, is loosed  
In manhood, clogged by sickness, back  
compelled  
By age and waste, set free at last by death:  
Why is it, flesh enthrals it or enthrones?  
What is this flesh we have to penetrate?  
Oh, not alone when life flows still, do truth  
And power emerge, but also when strange  
chance  
Ruffles its current; in unused conjuncture,  
When sickness breaks the body—hunger,  
watching,  
Excess or languor—oftenest death's ap-  
proach,  
Peril, deep joy or woe. One man shall  
crawl  
Through life surrounded with all stirring  
things,  
Unmoved; and he goes mad: and from the  
wreck  
Of what he was, by his wild talk alone,  
You first collect how great a spirit he hid.  
Therefore, set free the soul alike in all,  
Discovering the true laws by which the  
flesh  
Accloys the spirit! We may not be doomed  
To cope with seraphs, but at least the rest  
Shall cope with us. Make no more giants,  
God,  
But elevate the race at once! We ask  
To put forth just our strength, our human  
strength,  
All starting fairly, all equipped alike,  
Gifted alike, all eagle-eyed, true-hearted—  
See if we cannot beat thine angels yet!  
Such is my task. I go to gather this  
The sacred knowledge, here and there dis-  
persed  
About the world, long lost or never found.  
And why should I be sad or lorn of hope?  
Why ever make man's good distinct from  
God's,  
Or, finding they are one, why dare mis-  
trust?  
Who shall succeed if not one pledged like  
me?  
Mine is no mad attempt to build a world  
Apart from his, like those who set them-  
selves  
To find the nature of the spirit they bore,  
And, taught betimes that all their gorgeous  
dreams

Were only born to vanish in this life,  
Refused to fit them to its narrow sphere,  
But chose to figure forth another world  
And other frames meet for their vast de-  
sires,—  
And all a dream! Thus was life scorned;  
but life  
Shall yet be crowned: twine amaranth! I  
am priest!  
And all for yielding with a lively spirit  
A poor existence, parting with a youth  
Like those who squander every energy  
Convertible to good, on painted toys,  
Breath-bubbles, gilded dust! And though  
I spurn  
All adventitious aims, from empty praise  
To love's award, yet whoso deems such  
helps  
Important, and concerns himself for me,  
May know even these will follow with the  
rest—  
As in the steady rolling Mayne, asleep  
Yonder, is mixed its mass of schistous ore.  
My own affections laid to rest awhile,  
Will waken purified, subdued alone  
By all I have achieved. Till then—till  
then . . .  
Ah, the time-wiling loitering of a page  
Through bower and over lawn, till eve  
shall bring  
The stately lady's presence whom he  
loves—  
The broken sleep of the fisher whose rough  
coat  
Enwraps the queenly pearl—these are  
faint types!  
See, see, they look on me: I triumph now!  
But one thing, Festus, Michal! I have told  
All I shall e'er disclose to mortal: say—  
Do you believe I shall accomplish this?  
Fest. I do believe!  
Mich. . . . I ever did believe!  
Par. Those words shall never fade from  
out my brain!  
This earnest of the end shall never fade!  
Are there not, Festus, are there not, dear  
Michal,  
Two points in the adventure of the diver,  
One—when, a beggar, he prepares to  
plunge,  
One—when, a prince, he rises with his  
pearl?  
Festus, I plunge!  
Fest. We wait you when you rise!

## II.—PARACELSUS ATTAINS

SCENE.—*Constantinople; the house of a  
Greek Conjuror.* 1521.

### PARACELSUS

Over the waters in the vaporous West  
The sun goes down as in a sphere of gold  
Behind the arm of the city, which between,

With all that length of domes and minarets,  
Athwart the splendour, black and crooked  
runs

Like a Turk verse along a scimitar.  
There lie, sullen memorial, and no more  
Possess my aching sight! 'Tis done at last.  
Strange—and the juggles of a sallow cheat  
Have won me to this act!<sup>1</sup> 'Tis as yon cloud  
Should voyage unwrecked o'er many a  
mountain-top

And break upon a molehill. I have dared  
Come to a pause with knowledge; scan  
for once

The heights already reached, without re-  
gard

To the extent above; fairly compute  
All I have clearly gained; for once exclud-  
ing

A brilliant future to supply and perfect  
All half-gains and conjectures and crude  
hopes:

And all because a fortune-teller wills  
His credulous seekers should inscribe thus  
much

Their previous life's attainment, in his roll,  
Before his promised secret, as he vaunts,  
Make up the sum: and here amid the  
scrawled

Uncouth recordings of the dupes of this  
Old arch-genethliac,<sup>1</sup> lie my life's results!

A few blurred characters suffice to note  
A stranger wandered long through many  
lands

And reaped the fruit he coveted in a few  
Discoveries, as appended here and there,  
The fragmentary produce of much toil,  
In a dim heap, fact and surmise together  
Confusedly massed as when acquired; he  
was

Intent on gain to come too much to stay  
And scrutinise the little gained: the whole  
Slip in the blank space 'twixt an idiot's  
gibber

And a mad lover's ditty—there it lies.

And yet those blottings chronicle a life—  
A whole life, and my life! Nothing to do,  
No problem for the fancy, but a life  
Spent and decided, wasted past retrieve  
Or worthy beyond peer. Stay, what does  
this

Remembrancer set down concerning 'life'?  
"Time fleets, youth fades, life is an empty  
dream,"

'It is the echo of time; and he whose heart  
'Beat first beneath a human heart, whose  
speech

'Was copied from a human tongue, can  
never

'Recall when he was living yet knew not  
this.

'Nevertheless long seasons pass o'er him

<sup>1</sup> Birth-day-book maker, γενεθλιακός.

'Till some one hour's experience shows  
what nothing,

'It seemed, could clearer show; and ever  
after,

'An altered brow, and eye and gait and  
speech

'Attest that now he knows the adage true,

"Time fleets, youth fades, life is an empty  
dream."

Ay, my brave chronicler, and this same  
hour

As well as any: now, let my time be!

Now! I can go no farther; well or ill,

'Tis done. I must desist and take my  
chance.

I cannot keep on the stretch: 'tis no back-  
shrinking—

For let but some assurance beam, some  
close

To my toil grow visible, and I proceed  
At any price, though closing it, I die.

Else, here I pause. The old Greek's pro-  
phesy

Is like to turn out true: 'I shall not quit  
'His chamber till I know what I desire!'

Was it the light wind sang it o'er the sea?

An end, a rest! strange how the notion,  
once

Encountered, gathers strength by mo-  
ments! Rest!

Where has it kept so long? this throbbing  
brow

To cease, this beating heart to cease, all  
cruel

And gnawing thoughts to cease! To dare  
let down

My strung, so high-strung brain, to dare  
unnerve

My harassed o'ertasked frame, to know  
my place,

My portion, my reward, even my failure,  
Assigned, made sure for ever! To lose my-  
self

Among the common creatures of the  
world,

To draw some gail from having been a  
man,

Neither to hope nor fear, to live at length!  
Even in failure, rest! But rest in truth

And power and recompense . . . I hoped  
that once!

What, sunk insensibly so deep? Has all  
Been undergone for this? This is the re-  
quest

My labour qualified me to present  
With no fear of refusal? Had I gone

Slightly through my task, and so judged  
fit

To moderate my hopes; nay, were it now  
My sole concern to exculpate myself,

End things or mend them,—why, I could not choose

A humble mood to wait for the event!  
No, no, there needs not this; no, after all,  
At worst I have performed my share of the task:

The rest is God's concern; mine, merely this,

To know that I have obstinately held  
By my own work. The mortal whose brave foot

Has trod, unscathed, the temple-court so far

That he descries at length the shrine of shrines,

Must let no sneering of the demons' eyes,  
Whom he could pass unquailing, fasten now

Upon him, fairly past their power; no, no—

He must not stagger, faint, fall down at last,

Having a charm to baffle them; behold,  
He bares his front: a mortal ventures thus  
Serene amid the echoes, beams and glooms!  
If he be priest henceforth, if he wake up  
The god of the place to ban and blast him there,

Both well! What's failure or success to me?

I have subdued my life to the one purpose  
Whereto I ordained it; there alone I spy,  
No doubt, that way I may be satisfied.

Yes, well have I subdued my life! beyond  
The obligation of my strictest vow,  
The contemplation of my wildest bond,  
Which gave my nature freely up, in truth,  
But in its actual state, consenting fully  
All passionate impulses its soil was formed  
To rear, should wither; but foreseeing not  
The tract, doomed to perpetual barrenness,

Would seem one day, remembered as it was,

Beside the parched sand-waste which now it is,

Already strewn with faint blooms, viewless then.

I ne'er engaged to root up loves so frail  
I felt them not; yet now, 'tis very plain  
Some soft spots had their birth in me at first,

If not love, say, like love: there was a time  
When yet this wolfish hunger after knowledge

Set not remorselessly love's claims aside.  
This heart was human once, or why recall  
Einsiedeln, now, and Würzburg which the  
Mayne

Forsakes her course to fold as with an arm?

And Festus—my poor Festus, with his praise

And counsel and grave fears—where is he now

With the sweet maiden, long ago his bride?  
I surely loved them—that last night, at least,

When we . . . gone! gone! the better. I am saved

The sad review of an ambitious youth  
Choked by vile lusts, unnoticed in their birth,

But let grow up and wind around a will  
Till action was destroyed. No, I have gone  
Purging my path successively of aught  
Wearing the distant likeness of such lusts.  
I have made life consist of one idea:

Ere that was master, up till that was born,  
I bear a memory of a pleasant life  
Whose small events I treasure; till one morn

I ran o'er the seven little grassy fields,  
Startling the flocks of nameless birds, to tell

Poor Festus, leaping all the while for joy,  
To leave all trouble for my future plans,  
Since I had just determined to become  
The greatest and most glorious man on earth.

And since that morn all life has been forgotten:

All is one day, one only step between  
The outset and the end: one tyrant all—  
Absorbing aim fills up the interspace,  
One vast unbroken chain of thought, kept up

Through a career apparently adverse  
To its existence: life, death, light and shadow,

The shows of the world, were bare receptacles

Or indices of truth to be wrung thence,  
Not ministers of sorrow or delight:  
A wondrous natural robe in which she went.

For some one truth would dimly beacon me

From mountains rough with pines, and slit and wink

O'er dazzling wastes of frozen snow, and tremble

Into assured light in some branching mine  
Where ripens, swathed in fire, the liquid gold—

And all the beauty, all the wonder fell  
On either side the truth, as its mere robe;  
I see the robe now—then I saw the form.  
So far, then, I have voyaged with success,  
So much is good, then, in this working sea  
Which parts me from that happy strip of land:

But o'er that happy strip a sun shone, too!  
And fainter gleams it as the waves grow rough,

And still more faint as the sea widens; last  
I sicken on a dead gulf streaked with light



From its own putrefying depths alone.  
Then, God was pledged to take me by the hand;

Now, any miserable juggle can bid  
My pride depart. All is alike at length:  
God may take pleasure in confounding  
pride

By hiding secrets with the scorned and  
base—

I am here, in short: so little have I paused  
Throughout! I never glanced behind to  
know

If I had kept my primal light from wane,  
And thus insensibly am—what I am!

Oh, bitter; very bitter!

And more bitter,  
To fear a deeper curse, an inner ruin,  
Plague beneath plague, the last turning the  
first

To light beside its darkness. Let me weep  
My youth and its brave hopes, all dead and  
gone,

In tears which burn! Would I were sure  
to win

Some startling secret in their stead, a tinc-  
ture

Of force to flush old age with youth, or  
breed

Gold, or imprison moonbeams till they  
change

To opal shafts!—only that, hurling it  
Indignant back, I might convince myself  
My aims remained supreme and pure as  
ever!

Even now, why not desire, for mankind's  
sake,

That if I fail, some fault may be the cause,  
That, though I sink, another may succeed?  
O God, the despicable heart of us!

Shut out this hideous mockery from my  
heart!

'Twas politic in you, Aureole, to reject  
Single rewards, and ask them in the lump;  
At all events, once launched, to hold  
straight on:

For now 'tis all or nothing. Mighty profit  
Your gains will bring if they stop short of  
such

Full consummation! As a man, you had  
A certain share of strength; and that is  
gone

Already in the getting these you boast.  
Do not they seem to laugh, as who should  
say—

'Great master, we are here indeed, dragged  
forth

'To light; this hast thou done: be glad!  
Now, seek

'The strength to use which thou hast spent  
in getting!'

And yet 'tis much, surely 'tis very much,  
Thus to have emptied youth of all its gifts,

To feed a fire meant to hold out till morn  
Arrived with inexhaustible light; and lo,  
I have heaped up my last, and day dawns  
not!

And I am left with grey hair, faded hands,  
And furrowed brow. Ha, have I, after all,  
Mistaken the wild nursling of my breast?  
Knowledge it seemed, and power, and re-  
compense!

Was she who glided through my room of  
nights,

Who laid my head on her soft knees and  
smoothed

The damp locks,—whose sly soothings just  
began

When my sick spirit craved repose awhile—  
God! was I fighting sleep off for death's  
sake?

God! Thou art mind! Unto the master-  
mind

Mind should be precious. Spare my mind  
alone!

All else I will endure; if, as I stand  
Here, with my gains, thy thunder smite  
me down,

I bow me; 'tis thy will, thy righteous will;  
I o'erpass life's restrictions, and I die;

And if no trace of my career remain  
Save a thin corpse at pleasure of the wind

In these bright chambers level with the air,  
See thou to it! But if my spirit fail,

My once proud spirit forsake me at the  
last,

Hast thou done well by me? So do not  
thou!

Crush not my mind, dear God, though I  
be crushed!

Hold me before the frequency of thy  
seraphs

And say—'I crushed him, lest he should  
disturb

'My law. Men must not know their  
strength: behold,

'Weak and alone, how he had raised him-  
self!'

But if delusions trouble me, and thou,  
Not seldom felt with rapture in thy help

Throughout my toils and wanderings, dost  
intend

To work man's welfare through my weak  
endeavour,

To crown my mortal forehead with a beam  
From thine own blinding crown, to smile,

and guide

This puny hand and let the work so  
wrought

Be styled my work,—hear me! I covet not  
An influx of new power, an angel's soul:

It were no marvel then—but I have reached  
Thus far, a man; let me conclude, a man!

Give but one hour of my first energy,  
Of that invincible faith, but only one!

That I may cover with an eagle-glance  
The truths I have, and spy some certain  
way  
To mould them, and completing them,  
possess!

Yet God is good: I started sure of that,  
And why dispute it now? I'll not believe  
But some undoubted warning long ere this  
Had reached me: a fire-labour was not  
deemed  
Too much for the old founder of these  
walls.

Then, if my life has not been natural,  
It has been monstrous: yet, till late, my  
course

So ardently engrossed me, that delight,  
A pausing and reflecting joy, 'tis plain,  
Could find no place in it. True, I am worn;  
But who clothes summer, who is life itself?  
God, that created all things, can renew!  
And then, though after-life to please me  
now

Must have no likeness to the past, what  
hinders

Reward from springing out of toil, as  
changed

As bursts the flower from earth and root  
and stalk?

What use were punishment, unless some  
sin

Be first detected? let me know that first!  
No man could ever offend as I have done...

[*A voice from within.*]

I hear a voice, perchance I heard,  
Long ago, but all too low,  
So that scarce a care it stirred  
If the voice were real or no:  
I heard it in my youth when first  
The waters of my life outburst:  
But, now their stream ebbs faint, I hear  
That voice, still low, but fatal-clear—  
As if all poets, God ever meant  
Should save the world, and therefore  
lent

Great gifts to, but who, proud, refused  
To do his work, or lightly used  
Those gifts, or failed through weak en-  
deavour,

So, mourn cast off by him for ever,—  
As if these leaned in airy ring  
To take me; this the song they sing:

'Lost, lost! yet come,  
With our wan troop make thy home.  
Come, come! for we  
Will not breathe, so much as breathe  
Reproach to thee,  
Knowing what thou sink'st beneath.  
So sank we in those old years,  
We who bid thee, come! thou last  
Who, living yet, hast life o'erpast.  
And altogether we, thy peers,

Will pardon crave for thee, the last  
Whose trial is done, whose lot is cast  
With those who watch but work no more,  
Who gaze on life but live no more.  
Yet we trusted thou shouldst speak  
The message which our lips, too weak,  
Refused to utter,—shouldst redeem  
Our fault: such trust, and all a dream!  
Yet we chose thee a birthplace  
Where the richness ran to flowers:  
Couldst not sing one song for grace?  
Not make one blossom man's and ours?  
Must one more recreant to his race  
Die with unexerted powers,  
And join us, leaving as he found  
The world, he was to loosen, bound?  
Anguish! ever and for ever;  
Still beginning, ending never.  
Yet, lost and last one, come!  
How couldst understand, alas,  
What our pale ghosts strove to say,  
As their shades did glance and pass  
Before thee night and day?  
Thou wast blind as we were dumb:  
Once more, therefore, come, O come!  
How should we clothe, how arm the  
spirit  
Shall next thy post of life inherit—  
How guard him from thy speedy ruin?  
Tell us of thy sad undoing  
Here, where we sit, ever pursuing  
Our weary task, ever renewing  
Sharp sorrow, far from God who gave  
Our powers, and man they could not  
save!'

*APRILE enters.*

Ha, ha! our king that wouldst be, here at  
last?

Art thou the poet who shall save the world?  
Thy hand to mine! Stay, fix thine eyes on  
mine!

Thou wouldst be king? Still fix thine eyes  
on mine!

*Par.* Ha, ha! why crouchest not? Am  
I not king?

So torture is not wholly unavailing!  
Have my fierce spasms compelled thee  
from thy lair?

Art thou the sage I only seemed to be,  
Myself of after-time, my very self  
With sight a little clearer, strength more  
firm,

Who robes him in my robe and grasps my  
crown

For just a fault, a weakness, a neglect?  
I scarcely trusted God with the surmise  
That such might come, and thou didst hear  
the while!

*Apr.* Thine eyes are lustreless to mine;  
my hair

Is soft, nay silken soft: to talk with thee  
Flushes my cheek, and thou art ashy-pale.

Truly, thou hast laboured, hast withstood  
her lips,

The siren's! Yes, 'tis like thou hast attained!

Tell me, dear master, wherefore now thou comest?

I thought thy solemn songs would have their need

In after-time; that I should hear the earth  
Exult in thee and echo with thy praise,  
While I was laid forgotten in my grave.

*Par.* Ah fiend, I know thee, I am not thy dupe!

Thou art ordained to follow in my track,  
Reaping my sowing, as I scorned to reap  
The harvest sown by sages passed away.

Thou art the sober searcher, cautious  
striver,

As if, except through me, thou hast  
searched or striven!

Ay, tell the world! Degrade me after all,  
To an aspirant after fame, not truth—

To all but envy of thy fate, be sure!

*Apr.* Nay, sing them to me; I shall envy  
not:

Thou shalt be king! Sing thou, and I will  
sit

Beside, and call deep silence for thy songs,  
And worship thee, as I had ne'er been  
meant

To fill thy throne: but none shall ever  
know!

Sing to me; for already thy wild eyes  
Unlock my heart-strings, as some crystal-  
shaft

Reveals by some chance blaze its parent  
fount

After long time: so thou reveal'st my soul.  
All will flash forth at last, with thee to  
hear!

*Par.* (His secret! I shall get his secret—  
fool!)

I am he that aspired to know: and thou?

*Apr.* I would love infinitely, and be  
loved!

*Par.* Poor slave! I am thy king indeed.

*Apr.* Thou deem'st  
That—born a spirit, dowered even as  
thou,

Born for thy fate—because I could not  
curb

My yearnings to possess at once the full  
Enjoyment, but neglected all the means

Of realizing even the frailest joy,  
Gathering no fragments to appease my  
want,

Yet nursing up that want till thus I die—  
Thou deem'st I cannot trace thy safe sure  
march

O'er perils that o'erwhelm me, triumphing,  
Neglecting nought below for aught above,

Despising nothing and ensuring all—  
Nor that I could (my time to come again)

Lead thus my spirit securely as thine own.

Listen, and thou shalt see I know thee  
well.

I would love infinitely . . . Ah, lost! lost!  
Oh ye who armed me at such cost,

How shall I look on all of ye  
With your gifts even yet on me?

*Par.* (Ah, 'tis some moonstruck crea-  
ture after all!

Such fond fools as are like to haunt this  
den:

They spread contagion, doubtless: yet he  
seemed

To echo one foreboding of my heart  
So truly, that . . . no matter! How he stands

With eve's last sunbeams staying on his  
hair

Which turns to it as if they were akin:  
And those clear smiling eyes of saddest  
blue

Nearly set free, so far they rise above  
The painful fruitless striving of the brow

And enforced knowledge of the lips, firm-  
set

In slow despondency's eternal sigh!  
Has he, too, missed life's end, and learned  
the cause?)

I charge thee, by thy fealty, be calm!  
Tell me what thou wouldst be, and what  
I am.

*Apr.* I would love infinitely, and be  
loved.

First: I would carve in stone, or cast in  
brass,

The forms of earth. No ancient hunter  
lifted

Up to the gods by his renown, no nymph  
Supposed the sweet soul of a woodland  
tree

Or sapphirine spirit of a twilight-star,  
Should be too hard for me; no shepherd-  
king

Regal for his white locks; no youth who  
stands

Silent and very calm amid the throng,  
His right hand ever hid beneath his robe

Until the tyrant pass; no lawgiver,  
No swan-soft woman rubbed with lucid  
oils

Given by a god, for love of her—too  
hard!

Every passion sprung from man, con-  
ceived by man,

Would I express and clothe it in its right  
form,

Or blend with others struggling in one  
form,

Or show repressed by an ungainly form.  
Oh, if you marvelled at some mighty spirit

With a fit frame to execute its will—  
Even unconsciously to work its will—

You should be moved no less beside some  
strong

Rare spirit, fettered to a stubborn body,  
Endeavouring to subdue it and inform it

With its own splendour! All this I would do:

And I would say, this done, 'His sprites created,

'God grants to each a sphere to be its world,

'Appointed with the various objects needed

'To satisfy its own peculiar want;

'So, I create a world for these my shapes  
'Fit to sustain their beauty and their strength!'

And, at the word, I would contrive and paint

Woods, valleys, rocks and plains, dells,  
sands and wastes,

Lakes which, when morn breaks on their quivering bed,

Blaze like a wyvern flying round the sun,  
And ocean isles so small, the dog-fish tracking

A dead whale, who should find them,  
would swim thrice

Around them, and fare onward—all to hold

The offspring of my brain. Nor these alone:

Bronze labyrinth, palace, pyramid and crypt,

Baths, galleries, courts, temples and terraces,

Marts, theatres and wharfs—all filled with men,

Men everywhere! And this performed in turn,

When those who looked on, pined to hear the hopes

And fears and hates and loves which moved the crowd,

I would throw down the pencil as the chisel,

And I would speak; no thought which ever stirred

A human breast should be untold; all passions,

All soft emotions, from the turbulent stir  
Within a heart fed with desires like mine,

To the last comfort shutting the tired lids  
Of him who sleeps the sultry noon away

Beneath the tent-tree by the wayside well:  
And this in language as the need should be,

Now poured at once forth in a burning flow,

Now piled up in a grand array of words.

This done, to perfect and consummate all,  
Even as a luminous haze links star to star,

I would supply all chasms with music breathing

Mysterious motions of the soul, no way  
To be defined save in strange melodies.

Last, having thus revealed all I could love,  
Having received all love bestowed on it,

I would die: preserving so throughout my course

God full on me, as I was full on men:  
He would approve my prayer, 'I have gone through

'The loveliness of life; create for me  
'If not for men, or take me to thyself,

'Eternal, infinite love!'

If thou hast ne'er  
Conceived this mighty aim, this full desire,

Thou hast not passed my trial, and thou art

No king of mine.

Par. Ah me!  
Apr. But thou art here!

Thou didst not gaze like me upon that end  
Till thine own powers for compassing the bliss

Were blind with glory; nor grow mad to grasp

At once the prize long patient toil should claim,

Nor spurn all granted short of that. And I  
Would do as thou, a second time: nay, listen!

Knowing ourselves, our world, our task so great,

Our time so brief, 'tis clear if we refuse  
The means so limited, the tools so rude

To execute our purpose, life will fleet,  
And we shall fade, and leave our task undone.

We will be wise in time: what though our work

Be fashioned in despite of their ill-service,  
Be crippled every way? 'Twere little praise

Did full resources wait on our goodwill  
At every turn. Let all be as it is.

Some say the earth is even so contrived  
That tree and flower, a vesture gay, conceal  
A bare and skeleton framework. Had we means

Answering to our mind! But now I seem  
Wrecked on a savage isle: how rear thereon  
My palace? Branching palms the props shall be,

Fruit glossy mingling; gems are for the East;

Who needs them? I can pass them. Serpents' scales,

And painted birds' down, furs and fishes' skins

Must help me; and a little here and there  
Is all I can aspire to: still my art

Shall show its birth was in a gentler clime.  
'Had I green jars of malachite, this way

'I'd range them: where those sea-shells glisten above,

'Cressets should hang, by right: this way we set

'The purple carpets, as these mats are laid,  
'Woven of fern and rush and blossoming flag.'

Or if, by fortune, some completer grace

## PARACELSUS

[u]

Be spared to me, some fragment, some  
slight sample  
Of the prouder workmanship my own  
home boasts,  
Some trifle little heeded there, but here  
The place's one perfection—with what  
joy

Would I enshrine the relic, cheerfully  
Foregoing all the marvels out of reach!  
Could I retain one strain of all the psalm  
Of the angels, one word of the Fiat of God,  
To let my followers know what such things  
are!

I would adventure nobly for their sakes:  
When nights were still, and still the moan-  
ing sea,

And far away I could descry the land  
Whence I departed, whither I return,  
I would dispart the waves, and stand once  
more

At home, and load my bark, and hasten  
back,

And fling my gains to them, worthless or  
true.

'Friends,' I would say, 'I went far, far for  
them,

'Past the high rocks the haunt of doves,  
the mounds

'Of red earth from whose sides strange  
trees grow out,

'Past tracks of milk-white minute blinding  
sand,

'Till, by a mighty moon, I tremblingly  
'Gathered these magic herbs, berry and  
bud,

'In haste, not pausing to reject the weeds,  
'But happy plucking them at any price.

'To me, who have seen them bloom in  
their own soil,

'They are scarce lovely: plait and wear  
them, you!

'And guess, from what they are, the springs  
that fed them,

'The stars that sparkled o'er them, night  
by night,

'The snakes that travelled far to sip their  
dew!'

Thus for my higher loves; and thus even  
weakness

Would win me honour. But not these  
alone

Should claim my care; for common life,  
its wants

And ways, would I set forth in beauteous  
hues:

The lowest hind should not possess a hope,  
A fear, but I'd be by him, saying better

Than he his own heart's language. I would  
live

For ever in the thoughts I thus explored,  
As a discoverer's memory is attached

To all he finds; they should be mine hence-  
forth,

Imbued with me, though free to all before:

For clay, once cast into my soul's rich  
mine,

Should come up crusted o'er with gems.  
Nor this

Would need a meaner spirit, than the  
first;

Nay, 'twould be but the selfsame spirit,  
clothed

In humbler guise, but still the selfsame  
spirit:

As one spring wind unbinds the mountain  
snow

And comforts violets in their hermitage.

But, master, poet, who hast done all this,  
How didst thou 'scape the ruin whelming  
me?

Didst thou, when nerving thee to this  
attempt,

Ne'er range thy mind's extent, as some  
wide hall,

Dazzled by shapes that filled its length  
with light,

Shapes clustered there to rule thee, not  
obey,

That will not wait thy summons, will not  
rise

Singly, nor when thy practised eye and  
hand

Can well transfer their loveliness, but  
crowd

By thee for ever, bright to thy despair?  
Didst thou ne'er gaze on each by turns,

and ne'er

Resolve to single out one, though the rest  
Should vanish, and to give that one,  
entire

In beauty, to the world; forgetting, so,  
its peers, whose number baffles mortal  
power?

And, this determined, wast thou ne'er  
seduced

By memories and regrets and passionate  
love,

To glance once more farewell? and did  
their eyes

Fasten thee, brighter and more bright,  
until

Thou couldst but stagger back unto their  
feet,

And laugh that man's applause or welfare  
ever

Could tempt thee to forsake them? Or  
when years

Had passed and still their love possessed  
thee wholly,

When from without some murmur startled  
thee

Of darkling mortals famished for one ray  
Of thy so-hoarded luxury of light,

Didst thou ne'er strive even yet to break  
those spells

And prove thou couldst recover and fulfil  
Thy early mission, long ago renounced,

And to that end, select some shape once more?

And did not mist-like influences, thick films,

Faint memories of the rest that charmed so long

Thine eyes, float fast, confuse thee, bear thee off,

As whirling snow-drifts blind a man who treads

A mountain ridge, with guiding spear, through storm?

Say, though I fell, I had excuse to fall; Say, I was tempted sorely: say but this,

Dear lord, Aprile's lord!

*Par.* Clasp me not thus, Aprile! That the truth should reach me thus!

We are weak dust. Nay, clasp not or I faint!

*Apr.* My king! and envious thoughts could outrage thee?

Lo, I forget my ruin, and rejoice In thy success, as thou! Let our Gods

praise Go bravely through the world at last!

What care Through me or thee? I feel thy breath.

Why, tears? Tears in the darkness, and from thee to me?

*Par.* Love me henceforth, Aprile, while I learn

To love; and, merciful God, forgive us both!

We wake at length from weary dreams; but both

Have slept in fairy-land: though dark and drear

Appears the world before us, we no less

Wake with our wrists and ankles jewelled still.

I too have sought to know as thou to LOVE—

Excluding love as thou refusedst knowledge.

Still thou hast beauty and I, power. We wake:

What penance canst devise for both of us?

*Apr.* I hear thee faintly. The thick darkness! Even

Thine eyes are hid. 'Tis as I knew: I speak, And now I die. But I have seen thy face!

O poet, think of me, and sing of me!

But to have seen thee and to die so soon!

*Par.* Die not, Aprile! We must never part.

Are we not halves of one dissevered world? Whom this strange chance unites once

more? Part? never!

Till thou the lover, know; and I, the knower,

Love—until both are saved. Aprile, hear!

We will accept our gains, and use them—now!

God, he will die upon my breast! Aprile!

*Apr.* To speak but once, and die! yet by his side.

Hush! hush!

Ha! go you ever girt about With phantoms, powers? I have created

such, But these seem real as I.

*Par.* Whom can you see Through the accursed darkness?

*Apr.* Stay; I know, I know them: who should know them well as I?

White brows, lit up with glory; poets all!

*Par.* Let him but live, and I have my reward!

*Apr.* Yes; I see now. God is the perfect poet,

Who in his person acts his own creations. Had you but told me this at first! Hush!

hush! *Par.* Live! for my sake, because of my

great sin, To help my brain, oppressed by these wild

words And their deep import. Live! 'tis not too

late. I have a quiet home for us, and friends.

Michal shall smile on you. Hear you?

Lean thus, And breathe my breath. I shall not lose

one word Of all your speech, one little word, Aprile!

*Apr.* No, no. Crown me? I am not one of you!

'Tis he, the king, you seek. I am not one.

*Par.* Thy spirit, at least, Aprile! Let me love!

I have attained, and now I may depart.

### III.—PARACELSUS

SCENE.—*Basil; a chamber in the house of PARACELSUS. 1526.*

PARACELSUS, FESTUS

*Par.* Heap logs and let the blaze laugh out!

*Fest.* True, true! 'Tis very fit all, time and chance and

change Have wrought since last we sat thus, face

to face And soul to soul—all cares, far-looking

fears, Vague apprehensions, all vain fancies bred

By your long absence, should be cast away,

Forgotten in this glad unhop'd renewal Of our affections.

*Par.* Oh, omit not aught

Which witnesses your own and Michal's  
own

Affection: spare not that! Only forget  
The honours and the glories and what  
not,

It pleases you to tell profusely out.

*Fest.* Nay, even your honours, in a  
sense, I waive:

The wondrous Paracelsus, life's dispenser,  
Fate's commissary, idol of the schools  
And courts, shall be no more than Aureole  
still,

Still Aureole and my friend as when we  
parted

Some twenty years ago, and I restrained  
As best I could the promptings of my spirit  
Which secretly advanced you, from the  
first,

To the pre-eminent rank which, since, your  
own

Adventurous ardour, nobly triumphing,  
Has won for you.

*Par.* Yes, yes. And Michal's face  
Still wears that quiet and peculiar light  
Like the dim circlet floating round a pearl?

*Fest.* Just so.

*Par.* And yet her calm sweet  
countenance,  
Though saintly, was not sad; for she would  
sing

Alone. Does she still sing alone, bird-like,  
Not dreaming you are near? Her carols  
dropt

In flakes through that old leafy bower built  
under

The sunny wall at Würzburg, from her  
lattice

Among the trees above, while I, unseen,  
Sat conning some rare scroll from Tri-  
theim's shelves

Much wondering notes so simple could  
divert

My mind from study. Those were happy  
days.

Respect all such as sing when all alone!

*Fest.* Scarcely alone: her children, you  
may guess,

Are wild beside her.

*Par.* Ah, those children quite  
Unsettle the pure picture in my mind:

A girl, she was so perfect, so distinct:  
No change, no change! Not but this added  
grace

May blend and harmonize with its com-  
peers,

And Michal may become her motherhood;  
But 'tis a change, and I detest all change,  
And most a change in aught I loved long  
since.

So, Michal—you have said she thinks of  
me?

*Fest.* O very proud will Michal be of  
you!

Imagine how we sat, long winter-nights,

Scheming and wondering, shaping your  
presumed

Adventure, or devising its reward;  
Shutting out fear with all the strength of  
hope.

For it was strange how, even when most  
secure

In our domestic peace, a certain dim  
And fitting shade could sadden all; it  
seemed

A restlessness of heart, a silent yearning,  
A sense of something wanting, incom-  
plete—

Not to be put in words, perhaps avoided  
By mute consent—but, said or unsaid, felt  
To point to one so loved and so long lost.  
And then the hopes rose and shut out the  
fears—

How you would laugh should I recount  
them now!

I still predicted your return at last  
With gifts beyond the greatest of them all,  
All Trithem's wondrous troop; did one  
of which

Attain renown by any chance, I smiled,  
As well aware of who would prove his  
peer.

Michal was sure some woman, long ere  
this,

As beautiful as you were sage, had loved...

*Par.* Far-seeing, truly, to discern so  
much.

In the fantastic projects and day-dreams  
Of a raw restless boy!

*Fest.* Oh, no: the sunrise  
Well warranted our faith in this full noon!

Can I forget the anxious voice which said  
'Festus, have thoughts like these ere shaped  
themselves

'In other brains than mine? have their  
possessors

'Existed in like circumstance? were they  
weak

'As I, or ever constant from the first,  
'Despising youth's allurements and re-  
jecting

'As spider-films the shackles I endure?  
'Is there hope for me?'—and I answered

gravely

As an acknowledged elder, calmer, wiser,  
More gifted mortal. O you must remem-  
ber,

For all your glorious...

*Par.* Glorious? ay, this hair,  
These hands—nay, touch them, they are

mine! Recall  
With all the said recallings, times when

thus  
To lay them by your own ne'er turned you  
pale

As now. Most glorious, are they not?

*Fest.* Why—why—  
Something must be subtracted from suc-  
cess

So wide, no doubt. He would be scrupulous, truly,  
Who should object such drawbacks. Still,  
still, Aureole,  
You are changed, very changed! 'Twere  
losing nothing  
To look well to it: you must not be stolen  
From the enjoyment of your well-won  
meed.

*Par.* My friend! you seek my pleasure,  
past a doubt:  
You will best gain your point, by talking,  
not

Of me, but of yourself.

*Fest.* Have I not said  
All touching Michal and my children?  
Sure

You know, by this, full well how Aennchen  
looks

Gravely, while one disparts her thick  
brown hair;

And Aureole's glee when some stray gannet  
builds

Amid the birch-trees by the lake. Small  
hope

Have I that he will honour (the wild imp)  
His namesake. Sigh not! 'tis too much to  
ask

That all we love should reach the same  
proud fate.

But you are very kind to humour me  
By showing interest in my quiet life;  
You, who of old could never tame yourself  
To tranquil pleasures, must at heart de-  
spise . . .

*Par.* Festus, strange secrets are let out  
by death

Who blabs so oft the follies of this world:  
And I am death's familiar, as you know.  
I helped a man to die, some few weeks  
since,

Warped even from his go-cart to one end—  
The living on princes' smiles, reflected  
from

A mighty herd of favourites. No mean  
trick

He left untried, and truly well-nigh wormed  
All traces of God's finger out of him:

Then died, grown old. And just an hour  
before,

Having lain long with blank and soulless  
eyes,

He sat up suddenly, and with natural voice  
Said that in spite of thick air and closed  
doors

God told him it was June; and he knew  
well,

Without such telling, harebells grew in  
June;

And all that kings could ever give or take  
Would not be precious as those blooms to  
him.

Just so, allowing I am passing sage,  
It seems to me much worthier argument

Whypansies,<sup>1</sup> eyes that laugh, bear beauty's  
prize

From violets, eyes that dream—(your  
Michal's choice)—

Than all fools find to wonder at in me  
Or in my fortunes. And be very sure  
I say this from no prurient restlessness,  
No self-complacency, itching to turn,  
Vary and view its pleasure from all points,  
And, in this instance, willing other men  
May be at pains, demonstrate to itself  
The realness of the very joy it tastes.

What should delight me like the news of  
friends

Whose memories were a solace to me oft,  
As mountain-baths to wild fowls in their  
flight?

Often than you had wasted thought on me  
Had you been wise, and rightly valued  
bliss.

But there's no taming nor repressing  
hearts:

God knows I need such!—So, you heard  
me speak?

*Fest.* Speak? when?

*Par.* When but this  
morning at my class?

There was noise and crowd enough. I saw  
you not.

Surely you know I am engaged to fill  
The chair here?—that 'tis part of my proud  
fate

To lecture to as many thick-skulled youths  
As please, each day, to throng the theatre,  
To my great reputation, and no small  
Danger of Basil's benches long unused  
To crack beneath such honour?

*Fest.* I was there;  
I mingled with the throng: shall I avow  
Small care was mine to listen?—too intent  
On gathering from the murmurs of the  
crowd

A full corroboration of my hopes!  
What can I learn about your powers? but  
they

Know, care for nought beyond your actual  
state,

Your actual value; yet they worship you,  
Those various natures whom you sway as  
one!

But ere I go, be sure I shall attend . . .

*Par.* Stop, o' God's name: the thing's  
by no means yet

Past remedy! Shall I read this morning's  
labour

—At least in substance? Nought so worth  
the gaining

As an apt scholar! Thus then, with all due  
Precision and emphasis—you, beside, are  
clearly

Guiltless of understanding more, a whit,  
The subject than your stool—allowed to be

<sup>1</sup> Citrinula (flammula) herba Paracelso multum  
familiaris.—DORN.



A notable advantage.

*Fest.* Surely, Aureole,  
You laugh at me!

*Par.* I laugh? Ha, ha! thank  
heaven,

I charge you, if 't be so! for I forget  
Much, and what laughter should be like.

No less,  
However, I forego that luxury  
Since it alarms the friend who brings it  
back.

True, laughter like my own must echo  
strangely

To thinking men; a smile were better far;  
So, make me smile! If the exulting look

You wore but now be smiling, 'tis so long  
Since I have smiled! Alas, such smiles are  
born

Alone of hearts like yours, or herdsmen's  
souls

Of ancient time, whose eyes, calm as their  
flocks,

Saw in the stars mere garnishry of heaven,  
And in the earth a stage for altars only.

Never change, Festus! I say, never change!  
*Fest.* My God, if he be wretched after  
all!

*Par.* When last we parted, Festus, you  
declared,

—Or Michal, yes, her soft lips whispered  
words

I have preserved. She told me she believed  
I should succeed (meaning, that in the  
search

I then engaged in, I should meet success)  
And yet be wretched: now, she augured  
false.

*Fest.* Thank heaven! but you spoke  
strangely: could I venture

To think bare apprehension lest your  
friend,

Dazzled by your resplendent course, might  
find

Henceforth less sweetness in his own,  
could move

Such earnest mood in you? Fear not, dear  
friend,

That I shall leave you, inwardly repining  
Your lot was not my own!

*Par.* And this for ever!  
For ever! gull who may, they will be  
gulled!

They will not look nor think; 'tis nothing  
new

In them: but surely he is not of them!  
My Festus, do you know, I reckoned,  
you—

Though all beside were sand-blind—you, my  
friend,

Would look at me, once close, with piercing  
eye

Untroubled by the false glare that con-  
founds

A weaker vision: would remain serene,

Though singular amid a gazing throng.  
I feared you, or I had come, sure, long ere  
this,

To Einsiedeln. Well, error has no end,  
And Rhasis is a sage, and Basil boasts

A tribe of wits, and I am wise and blest  
Past all dispute! 'Tis vain to fret at it.

I have vowed long ago my worshippers  
Shall owe to their own deep sagacity

All further information, good or bad.  
Small risk indeed my reputation runs,

Unless perchance the glance now search-  
ing me

Be fixed much longer; for it seems to spell  
Dimly the characters a simpler man

Might read distinct enough. Old Eastern  
books

Say, the fallen prince of morning some  
short space

Remained unchanged in semblance; nay,  
his brow

Was hued with triumph: every spirit then  
Praising, his heart on flame the while:—

A tale!  
Well, Festus, what discover you, I pray?

*Fest.* Some foul deed sullies then a life  
which else

Were raised supreme?  
*Par.* Good: I do well, most well!

Why strive to make men hear, feel, fret  
themselves

With what's past their power to compre-  
hend?

I should not strive now: only, having  
nursed

The faint surmise that one yet walked the  
earth,

One, at least, not the utter fool of show,  
Not absolutely formed to be the dupe

Of shallow plausibilities alone:  
One who, in youth, found wise enough to  
choose

The happiness his riper years approve,  
Was yet so anxious for another's sake,

That, ere his friend could rush upon a  
mad

And ruinous course, the converse of his  
own,

His gentle spirit essayed, prejudged for  
him

The perilous path, foresaw its destiny,  
And warned the weak one in such tender

words,  
Such accents—his whole heart in every  
tone—

That oft their memory comforted that  
friend

When it by right should have increased  
despair:

—Having believed, I say, that this one  
man

Could never lose the light thus from the  
first

His portion—how should I refuse to grieve

At even my gain if it disturb our old  
Relation, if it make me out more wise?  
Therefore, once more reminding him how  
well

He prophesied, I note the single flaw  
That spoils his prophet's title. In plain  
words,

You were deceived, and thus were you  
deceived—

I have not been successful, and yet am  
Most miserable; 'tis said at last; nor you  
Give credit, lest you force me to concede  
That common sense yet lives upon the  
world!

*Fest.* You surely do not mean to banter  
me?

*Par.* You know, or—if you have been  
wise enough  
To cleanse your memory of such matters  
—knew,

As far as words of mine could make it  
clear,

That 'twas my purpose to find joy or grief  
Solely in the fulfilment of my plan  
Or plot or whatso'er it was; rejoicing  
Alone as it proceeded prosperously,  
Sorrowing then only when mischance re-  
tarded

its progress. That was in those Würzburg  
days!

Not to prolong a theme I thoroughly hate,  
I have pursued this plan with all my  
strength;

And having failed therein most signally,  
Cannot object to ruin utter and drear  
As all-excelling would have been the prize  
Had fortune favoured me. I scarce have  
right

To vex your frank good spirit late so glad  
In my supposed prosperity, I know,  
And, were I lucky in a glut of friends,  
Would well agree to let your error live,  
Nay, strengthen it with fables of success.  
But mine is no condition to refuse  
The transient solace of so rare a godsend,  
My solitary luxury, my one friend:  
Accordingly I venture to put off

The wearisome vest of falsehood galling  
me,

Secure when he is by. I lay me bare,  
Prone at his mercy—but he is my friend!  
Not that he needs retain his aspect grave;  
That answers not my purpose; for 'tis like,  
Some sunny morning—Basil being  
drained

Of its wise population, every corner  
Of the amphitheatre crammed with  
learned clerks,

Here Ecolampadius, looking worlds of  
wit,

Here Castellanus, as profound as he,  
Munsterus here, Frobenius there, all  
squeezed

And staring,—that the zany of the show,

Even Paracelsus, shall put off before them  
His trappings with a grace but seldom  
judged

Expedient in such cases:—the grim smile  
That will go round! Is it not therefore  
best

To venture a rehearsal like the present  
In a small way? Where are the signs I  
seek,

The first-fruits and fair sample of the  
scorn?

Due to all quacks? Why, this will never  
do!

*Fest.* These are foul vapours, Aureole;  
nought beside!

The effect of watching, study, weariness.  
Were there a spark of truth in the con-  
fusion

Of these wild words, you would not out-  
rage thus

Your youth's companion. I shall ne'er  
regard

These wanderings, bred of faintness and  
much study.

'Tis not thus you would trust a trouble to  
me,

To Michael's friend.  
*Par.* I have said it, dearest

Festus!

For the manner, 'tis ungracious probably;  
You may have it told in broken sobs, one  
day,  
And scalding tears, ere long: but I thought  
best

To keep that off as long as possible.

Do you wonder still?

*Fest.* No; it must oft fall out  
That one whose labour perfects any work,  
Shall rise from it with eye so worn that he  
Of all men least can measure the extent  
Of what he has accomplished. He alone  
Who, nothing tasked, is nothing weary  
too,

May clearly scan the little he effects:  
But we, the bystanders, untouched by toil,  
Estimate each aright.

*Par.* This worthy Festus  
Is one of them, at last! 'Tis so with all!  
First, they set down all progress as a  
dream;

And next, when he whose quick discom-  
figure

Was counted on, accomplishes some few  
And doubtful steps in his career,—behold,  
They look for every inch of ground to  
vanish

Beneath his tread, so sure they spy success!

*Fest.* Few doubtful steps? when death  
retires before

Your presence—when the noblest of man-  
kind,

Broken in body or subdued in soul,  
May through your skill renew their vigour,  
raise

The shattered frame to pristine stateliness?  
When men in racking pain may purchase dreams

Of what delights them most, swooning at once  
Into a sea of bliss or rapt along  
As in a flying sphere of turbulent light?

When we may look to you as one ordained  
To free the flesh from fell disease, as frees  
Our Luther's burning tongue the fettered soul?

When . . .  
*Par.* When and where, the devil, did you get  
This notable news?

*Fest.* Even from the common voice;  
From those whose envy, daring not dispute  
The wonders it decries, attributes them  
To magic and such folly.

*Par.* Folly? Why not  
To magic, pray? You find a comfort doubtless

In holding, God ne'er troubles him about  
Us or our doings: once we were judged worth

The devil's tempting . . . I offend: forgive me,  
And rest content. Your prophecy on the whole

Was fair enough as prophesyings go;  
At fault a little in detail, but quite  
Precise enough in the main; and hereupon  
I pay due homage: you guessed long ago  
(The prophet!) I should fail—and I have failed.

*Fest.* You mean to tell me, then, the hopes which fed  
Your youth have not been realized as yet?  
Some obstacle has barred them hitherto?  
Or that their innate . . .

*Par.* As I said but now,  
You have a very decent prophet's fame,  
So you but shun details here. Little matter  
Whether those hopes were mad,—the aims they sought,

Safe and secure from all ambitious fools;  
Or whether my weak wits are overcome  
By what a better spirit would scorn: I fail.  
And now methinks 'twere best to change a theme

I am a sad fool to have stumbled on.  
I say confusedly what comes uppermost;  
But there are times when patience proves at fault,

As now: this morning's strange encounter—  
—you

Beside me once again! you, whom, I guessed

Alive, since hitherto (with Luther's leave)  
No friend have I among the saints at peace,  
To judge by any good their prayers effect.  
I knew you would have helped me—why not he,

My strange competitor in enterprise,  
Bound for the same end by another path,  
Arrived, or ill or well, before the time,  
At our disastrous journey's doubtful close?

How goes it with April? Ah, they miss  
Your lone sad sunny idleness of heaven,  
Our martyrs for the world's sake; heaven shuts fast:

The poor mad poet is howling by this time!  
Since you are my sole friend then, here or there,

I could not quite repress the varied feelings  
This meeting wakens; they have had their vent,

And now forget them. Do the rear-mice still

Hang like a fretwork on the gate (or what  
In my time was a gate) fronting the road  
From Einsiedeln to Lachen?

*Fest.* Trifle not:  
Answer me, for my sake alone! You smiled  
Just now, when I supposed some deed,  
'unworthy

Yourself, might blot the else so bright result;

Yet if your motives have continued pure,  
Your will unfaltering, and in spite of this,  
You have experienced a defeat, why then  
I say not you would cheerfully withdraw  
From contest—mortal hearts are not so fashioned—

But surely you would ne'ertheless withdraw.

You sought not fame nor gain nor even love,

No end distinct from knowledge,—I repeat  
Your very words: once satisfied that knowledge

Is a mere dream, you would announce as much,

Yourself the first. But how is the event?  
You are defeated—and I find you here!

*Par.* As though 'here' did not signify defeat!

I spoke not of my little labours here,  
But of the break-down of my general aims:

For you, aware of their extent and scope,  
To look on these sage lecturings, approved  
By beardless boys, and bearded dotards worse,

As a fit consummation of such aims,  
Is worthy notice. A professorship  
At Basil! Since you see so much in it,  
And think my life was reasonably drained  
Of life's delights to render me a match  
For duties arduous as such post de-  
mands,—

Be it far from me to deny my power  
To fill the petty circle allotted out  
Of infinite space, or justify the host  
Of honours thence accruing. So, take notice,

This jewel dangling from my neck pre-  
 serves  
 The features of a prince, my skill restored  
 To plague his people some few years to  
 come:  
 And all through a pure whim. He had  
 eased the earth  
 For me, but that the droll despair which  
 seized  
 The vermin of his household, tickled me.  
 I came to see. Here, drivelled the physi-  
 cian,  
 Whose most infallible nostrum was at  
 fault;  
 There quaked the astrologer, whose horo-  
 scope  
 Had promised him interminable years;  
 Here a monk fumbled at the sick man's  
 mouth  
 With some undoubted relic—a sudary  
 Of the Virgin; while another piebald knave  
 Of the same brotherhood (he loved them  
 ever)  
 Was actively preparing 'neath his nose  
 Such a suffumigation as, once fired,  
 Had stunk the patient dead ere he could  
 groan.  
 I cursed the doctor and upset the brother,  
 Brushed past the conjurer, vowed that the  
 first gust  
 Of stench from the ingredients just alight  
 Would raise a cross-grained devil in my  
 sword,  
 Not easily laid: and ere an hour the prince  
 Slept as he never slept since prince he  
 was.  
 A day—and I was posting for my life,  
 Flacarded through the town as one whose  
 spite  
 Had near availed to stop the blessed effects  
 Of the doctor's nostrum which, well  
 seconded  
 By the sudary, and most by the costly  
 smoke—  
 Not leaving out the strenuous prayers sent  
 up  
 Hard by in the abbey—raised the prince  
 to life:  
 To the great reputation of the seer  
 Who, confident, expected all along  
 The glad event—the doctor's recom-  
 pense—  
 Much largess from his highness to the  
 monks—  
 And the vast solace of his loving people,  
 Whose general satisfaction to increase,  
 The prince was pleased no longer to defer  
 The burning of some dozen heretics  
 Remanded till God's mercy should be  
 shown  
 Touching his sickness: last of all were  
 joined  
 Ample directions to all loyal folk  
 To swell the complement by seizing me

Who—doubtless some rank sorcerer—en-  
 deavoured  
 To thwart these pious offices, obstruct  
 The prince's cure, and frustrate heaven by  
 help  
 Of certain devils dwelling in his sword.  
 By luck, the prince in his first fit of thanks  
 Had forced this bable on me as an earnest  
 Of further favours. This one case may  
 serve  
 To give sufficient taste of many such,  
 So, let them pass. Those shelves support  
 a pile  
 Of patents, licences, diplomas, titles  
 From Germany, France, Spain, and Italy;  
 They authorize some honour; ne'ertheless,  
 I set more store by this Erasmus sent;  
 He trusts me; our Frobenius is his friend,  
 And him 'I raised' (nay, read it) 'from the  
 dead.'  
 I weary you, I see. I merely sought  
 To show, there's no great wonder after all  
 That, while I fill the class-room and attract  
 A crowd to Basil, I get leave to stay,  
 And therefore need not scruple to accept  
 The utmost they can offer, if I please:  
 For 'tis but right the world should be pre-  
 pared  
 To treat with favour e'en fantastic wants  
 Of one like me, used up in serving her.  
 Just as the mortal, whom the gods in part  
 Devoured, received in place of his lost limb  
 Some virtue or other—cured disease, I  
 think;  
 You mind the fables we have read together.  
*Fest.* You do not think I comprehend a  
 word.  
 The time was, Aurcole, you were apt  
 enough  
 To clothe the airiest thoughts in specious  
 breath;  
 But surely you must feel how vague and  
 strange  
 These speeches sound.  
*Par.* Well, then; you know my hopes;  
 I am assured, at length, those hopes were  
 vain;  
 That truth is just as far from me as ever;  
 That I have thrown my life away; that  
 sorrow  
 On that account is idle, and further effort  
 To mend and patch what's marred beyond  
 repairing,  
 As useless: and all this was taught your  
 friend  
 By the convincing good old-fashioned  
 method  
 Of force—by sheer compulsion. Is that  
 plain?  
*Fest.* Dear Aureole, can it be my fears  
 were just?  
 God wills not . . .  
*Par.* Now, 'tis this I most  
 admire—

The constant talk men of you stamp keep  
Of God's will, as they style it; one would  
swear

Man had but merely to uplift his eye,  
And see the will in question charactered  
On the heaven's vault. 'Tis hardly wise to  
moot

Such topics: doubts are many and faith is  
weak.

I know as much of any will of God  
As knows some dumb and tortured brute  
what Man,

His stern lord, wills from the perplexing  
blows

That plague him every way; but there, of  
course,

Where least he suffers, longest he re-  
mains—

My case; and for such reasons I plod on,  
Subdued but not convinced. I know as  
little

Why I deserve to fail, as why I hoped  
Better things in my youth. I simply know  
I am no master here, but trained and beaten  
into the path I tread; and here I stay,  
Until some further intimation reach me,  
Like an obedient drudge. Though I prefer  
To view the whole thing as a task imposed  
Which, whether dull or pleasant, must be  
done—

Yet, I deny not, there is made provision  
Of joys which tastes less jaded might  
affect;

Nay, some which please me too, for all my  
pride—

Pleasures that once were pains: the iron  
ring

Festering about a slave's neck grows at  
length

Into the flesh it eats. I hate no longer  
A host of petty vile delights, undreamed of  
Or spurned before; such now supply the  
place

Of my dead aims: as in the autumn woods  
Where tall trees used to flourish, from their  
roots

Springs up a fungous brood sickly and  
pale,

Chill mushrooms coloured like a corpse's  
cheek.

*Fest.* If I interpret well your words, I  
own

It troubles me but little that your aims,  
Vast in their dawning and most likely  
grown

Extravagantly since, have baffled you.  
Perchance I am glad; you merit greater  
praise;

Because they are too glorious to be gained,  
You do not blindly cling to them and  
die;

You fell, but have not sullenly refused  
To rise, because an angel worsted you

In wrestling, though the world holds not  
your peer,

And though too harsh and sudden is the  
change

To yield content as yet, still you pursue  
The ungracious path as though 'twere rosy-  
strewn.

'Tis well: and your reward, or soon or late,  
Will come from him whom no man serves  
in vain.

*Par.* Ah, very fine! For my part, I con-  
ceive

The very pausing from all futher toil,  
Which you find heinous, would become a  
seal

To the sincerity of all my deeds.  
To be consistent I should die at once;

I calculated on no after-life;  
Yet (how crept in, how fostered, I know  
not)

Here am I with as passionate regret  
For youth and health and love so vainly  
lavished,

As if their preservation had been first  
And foremost in my thoughts; and this  
strange fact

Humbled me wondrously, and had due  
force

In rendering me the less averse to follow  
A certain counsel, a mysterious warning—

You will not understand—but 'twas a  
man

With aims not mine and yet pursued like  
mine,

With the same fervour and no more suc-  
cess,

Perishing in my sight; who summoned me  
As I would shun the ghastly fate I saw,

To serve my race at once; to wait no longer  
That God should interfere in my behalf,

But to distrust myself, put pride away,  
And give my gains, imperfect as they were,

To men. I have not leisure to explain  
How, since, a singular series of events

Has raised me to the station you behold,  
Wherein I seem to turn to most account

The mere wreck of the past,—perhaps re-  
ceive

Some feeble glimmering token that God  
views

And may approve my penance: therefore  
here

You find me, doing most good, or least  
harm.

And if folks wonder much and profit little  
'Tis not my fault; only, I shall rejoice

When my part in the farce is shuffled  
through,

And the curtain falls: I must hold out till  
then.

*Fest.* Till when, dear Aureole?  
*Par.* Till I'm fairly thrust

From my proud eminence. Fortune is  
fickle

And even professors fall: should that arrive,

I see no sin in ceding to my bent.

You little fancy what rude shocks apprise us

We sin; God's intimations rather fail  
In clearness than in energy: 'twere well  
Did they but indicate the course to take  
Like that to be forsaken. I would fain  
Be spared a further sample. Here I stand,  
And here I stay, be sure, till forced to flit.

*Fest.* Be you but firm on that head! long ere then

All I expect will come to pass, I trust:  
The cloud that wraps you will have disappeared.

Meantime, I see small chance of such event:

They praise you here as one whose lore, already

Divulged, eclipses all the past can show,  
But whose achievements, marvellous as they be,

Are faint anticipations of a glory  
About to be revealed. When Basil's crowds  
Dismiss their teacher, I shall be content  
That he depart.

*Par.* This favour at their hands  
I look for earlier than your view of things  
Would warrant. Of the crowd you saw to-day,

Remove the full half sheer amazement draws,

Mere novelty, nought else; and next, the tribe

Whose innate blockish dulness just perceives

That unless miracles (as seem my works)  
Be wrought in their behalf, their chance is slight

To puzzle the devil; next, the numerous set

Who bitterly hate established schools, and help

The teacher that oppugns them, till he once

Have planted his own doctrine, when the teacher

May reckon on their favour in his turn;  
Take, too, the sprinkling of sagacious knaves

Whose cunning runs not counter to the vogue

But seeks, by flattery and crafty nursing,  
To force my system to a premature

Short-lived development. Why swell the list?

Each has his end to serve, and his best way  
Of serving it: remove all these, remains

A scantling, a poor dozen at the best,  
Worthy to look for sympathy and service,

And likely to draw profit from my pains.

*Fest.* 'Tis no encouraging picture: still these few

Redeem their fellows. Once the germ implanted,

Its growth, if slow, is sure.

*Par.* God grant it so!  
I would make some amends: but if I fail,

The luckless rogues have this excuse to urge,

That much is in my method and my manner,

My uncouth habits, my impatient spirit,  
Which hinders of reception and result

My doctrine: much to say, small skill to speak!

These old aims suffered not a looking-off  
Though for an instant; therefore, only when

I thus renounced them and resolved to reap

Some present fruit—to teach mankind some truth

So dearly purchased—only then I found  
Such teaching was an art requiring cares

And qualities peculiar to itself:  
That to possess was one thing—to display

Another. With renown first in my thoughts,

Or popular praise, I had soon discovered it:

One grows but little apt to learn these things.

*Fest.* If it be so, which nowise I believe,  
There needs no waiting fuller dispensation

To leave a labour of so little use.  
Why not throw up the irksome charge at once?

*Par.* A task, a task!

But wherefore hide the whole  
Extent of degradation, once engaged

In the confessing vein? Despite of all  
My fine talk of obedience and repugnance,

Docility and what not, 'tis yet to learn  
If when the task shall really be performed,

My inclination free to choose once more,  
I shall do aught but slightly modify

The nature of the hated task I quit.  
In plain words, I am spoiled; my life still tends

As first it tended; I am broken and trained  
To my old habits: they are part of me.

I know, and none so well, my darling ends  
Are proved impossible: no less, no less,

Even now what humours me, fond fool, as when

Their faint ghosts sit with me and flatter me

And send me back content to my dull round?

How can I change this soul?—this apparatus

Constructed solely for their purposes,  
So well adapted to their every want,

To search out and discover, prove and perfect;

This intricate machine whose most minute

And meanest motions have their charm to me

Though to none else—an aptitude I seize,  
An object I perceive, a use, a meaning,  
A property, a fitness, I explain  
And I alone:—how can I change my soul?  
And this wronged body, worthless save  
when tasked

Under that soul's dominion—used to care  
For its bright master's cares and quite  
subdue

Its proper cravings—not to ail nor pine  
So he but prosper—whither drag this poor  
Tried patient body? God! how I essayed  
To live like that mad poet, for a while,  
To love alone; and how I felt too warped  
And twisted and deformed! What should

I do,  
Even tho' released from drudgery, but re-  
turn

Faint, as you see, and halting, blind and  
sore,

To my old life and die as I began?  
I cannot feed on beauty for the sake  
Of beauty only, nor can drink in balm  
From lovely objects for their loveliness;  
My nature cannot lose her first imprint;  
I still must hoard and heap and class all  
truths

With one ulterior purpose: I must know!  
Would God translate me to his throne,  
believe

That I should only listen to his word  
To further my own aim! For other men,  
Beauty is prodigally strewn around,  
And I were happy could I quench as they  
This mad and thriveless longing, and con-  
tent me

With beauty for itself alone: alas,  
I have addressed a frock of heavy mail  
Yet may not join the troop of sacred  
knights;

And now the forest-creatures fly from me,  
The grass-banks cool, the sunbeams warm  
no more

Best follow, dreaming that ere night arrive,  
I shall o'ertake the company and ride  
Glittering as they!

*Fest.* I think I apprehend  
What you would say: if you, in truth,  
design

To enter once more on the life thus left,  
Seek not to hide that all this consciousness  
Of failure is assumed!

*Par.* My friend, my friend,  
I toil, you listen; I explain, perhaps  
You understand: there our communion  
ends.

Have you learnt nothing from to-day's dis-  
course?

When we should thoroughly know the sick  
man's state

We feel awhile the fluttering pulse, press  
soft

The hot brow, look upon the languid eye,  
And thence divine the rest.' Must I lay bare  
My heart, hideous and beating, or tear up  
My vitals for your gaze, ere you will deem  
Enough made known? You! who are you,  
forsooth?

That is the crowning operation claimed  
By the arch-demonstrator—heaven the  
hall,

And earth the audience. Let Aprile and  
you

Secure good places: 'twill be worth the  
while.

*Fest.* Are you mad, Aureole? What can  
I have said

To call for this? I judged from your own  
words.

*Par.* Oh, doubtless! A sick wretch  
describes the ape

That mocks him from the bed-foot, and all  
gravely

You thither turn at once: or he recounts  
The perilous journey he has late per-  
formed,

And you are puzzled much how that could  
be!

You find me here, half stupid and half  
mad:

It makes no part of my delight to search  
Into these matters, much less undergo  
Another's scrutiny; but so it chanced  
That I am led to trust my state to you:  
And the event is, you combine, contrast  
And ponder on my foolish words as  
though

They thoroughly conveyed all hidden  
kere—

Here, loathsome with despair and hate and  
rage!

Is there no fear, no shrinking and no  
shame?

Will you guess nothing? will you spare me  
nothing?

Must I go deeper? Ay or no?

*Fest.* Dear friend . . .

*Par.* True: I am brutal—'tis a part of it;  
The plague's sign—you are not a laz-  
haunter,

How should you know? Well then, you  
think it strange

I should profess to have failed utterly,  
And yet propose an ultimate return

To courses void of hope: and this, because  
You know not what temptation is, nor  
how

'Tis like to ply men in the sickliest part.  
You are to understand that we who make  
Sport for the gods, are hunted to the end:  
There is not one sharp volley shot at us,  
Which 'scaped with life, though hurt, we  
slacken pace

And gather by the wayside herbs and roots  
To staunch our wounds, secure from  
further harm:

We are assailed to life's extremest verge.  
It will be well indeed if I return,  
A harmless busy fool, to my old ways!  
I would forget hints of another fate,  
Significant enough, which silent hours  
Have lately scared me with.

*Fest.* Another! and what?

*Par.* After all, Festus, you say well: I am

A man yet: I need never humble me.

I would have been—something, I know  
not what;

But though I cannot soar, I do not crawl.  
There are worse portions than this one of  
mine.

You say well!

*Fest.* Ah!

*Par.* And deeper degradation!  
If the mean stimulants of vulgar praise,  
If vanity should become the chosen food  
Of a sunk mind, should stifle even the wish  
To find its early aspirations true,  
Should teach it to breathe falsehood like  
life-breath—

An atmosphere of craft and trick and lies;  
Should make it proud to emulate, surpass  
Base natures in the practices which woke  
Its most indignant loathing once . . . No,  
no!

Utter damnation is reserved for hell!

I had immortal feelings; such shall never  
Be wholly quenched: no, no!

My friend, you wear  
A melancholy face, and certain 'tis  
There's little cheer in all this dismal work.  
But was it my desire to set abroad  
Such memories and forebodings? I fore-  
saw

Where they would drive. 'Twere better we  
discuss

News from Lucerne or Zurich; ask and tell  
Of Egypt's flaring sky or Spain's cork-  
groves.

*Fest.* I have thought: trust me, this  
mood will pass away!

I know you and the lofty spirit you bear,  
And easily ravel out a clue to all.

These are the trials meet for such as you,  
Nor must you hope exemption: to be  
mortal

Is to be plied with trials manifold.

Look round! The obstacles which kept  
the rest

From your ambition, have been spurned  
by you;

Their fears, their doubts, the chains that  
bind them all,

Were flax before your resolute soul, which  
nought

Avails to awe save these delusions bred  
From its own strength, its selfsame  
strength disguised,

Mocking itself. Be brave, dear Aureole!  
Since

The rabbit has his shade to frighten him,  
The fawn a rustling bough, mortals their  
cares,

And higher natures yet would slight and  
laugh

At these entangling fantasies, as you  
At trammels of a weaker intellect,—

Measure your mind's height by the shade  
it casts!

I know you.

*Par.* And I know you, dearest Festus!  
And how you love unworthily; and how  
All admiration renders blind.

*Fest.* You hold  
That admiration blinds?

*Par.* Ay and alas!

*Fest.* Nought blinds you less than ad-  
miration, friend!

Whether it be that all love renders wise  
In its degree; from love which blends with  
love—

Heart answering heart—to love which  
spends itself

In silent mad idolatry of some  
Pre-eminent mortal, some great soul of  
souls,

Which ne'er will know how well it is  
adored.

I say, such love is never blind; but rather  
Alive to every the minutest spot

Which mars its object, and which hate  
(supposed

So vigilant and searching) dreams not of.  
Love broods on such: what then? When  
first perceived

Is there no sweet strife to forget, to change,  
To overflush those blemishes with all

The glow of general goodness they disturb?  
—To make those very defects an endless  
source

Of new affection grown from hopes and  
fears?

And, when all fails, is there no gallant  
stand

Made even for much proved weak? no  
shrinking-back

Lest, since all love assimilates the soul  
To what it loves, it should at length become  
Almost a rival of its idol? Trust me,

If there be fiends who seek to work our  
hurt,

To ruin and drag down earth's mightiest  
spirits

Even at God's foot, 'twill be from such as  
love,

Their zeal will gather most to serve their  
cause;

And least from those who hate, who most  
essay

By contumely and scorn to blot the light  
Which forces entrance even to their hearts:

For thence will our defender tear the veil  
And show within each heart, as in a shrine,  
The giant image of perfection, grown



In hate's despite, whose calumnies were spawned

In the untroubled presence of its eyes.  
True admiration blinds not; nor am I  
So blind. I call your sin exceptional;  
It springs from one whose life has passed  
the bounds

Prescribed to life. Compound that fault  
with God!

I speak of men; to common men like me  
The weakness you reveal endears you  
more,

Like the far traces of decay in suns.

I bid you have good cheer!

*Par.* *Præclare! Optime!*  
Think of a quiet mountain-cloistered  
priest

Instructing Paracelsus! yet 'tis so.  
Come, I will show you where my merit  
lies.

'Tis in the advance of individual minds  
That the slow crowd should ground their  
expectation

Eventually to follow; as the sea  
Waits ages in its bed till some one wave  
Out of the multitudinous mass, extends  
The empire of the whole, some feet per-  
haps,

Over the strip of sand which could confine  
Its fellows so long time: thenceforth the  
rest,

Even to the meanest, hurry in at once,  
And so much is clear gained. I shall be  
glad

If all my labours, failing of aught else,  
Suffice to make such inroad and procure  
A wider range for thought: nay, they do  
this;

For, whatso'er my notions of true know-  
ledge

And a legitimate success, may be,  
I am not blind to my undoubted rank  
When classed with others: I precede my  
age:

And whoso wills is very free to mount  
These labours as a platform whence his  
own

May have a prosperous outset. But, alas!  
My followers—they are noisy as you  
heard;

But, for intelligence, the best of them  
So clumsily wield the weapons I supply  
And they extol, that I begin to doubt  
Whether their own rude clubs and pebble-  
stones

Would not do better service than my  
arms

Thus vilely swayed—if error will not fall  
Sooner before the old awkward batterings  
Than my more subtle warfare, not half  
learned.

*Fest.* I would supply that art, then, or  
withhold  
New arms until you teach their mystery.

*Par.* Content you, 'tis my wish; I have  
recourse

To the simplest training. Day by day I seek  
To wake the mood, the spirit which alone  
Can make those arms of any use to men.  
Of course they are for swaggering forth at  
once

Graced with Ulysses' bow, Achilles'  
shield—

Flash on us, all in armour, thou Achilles!  
Make our hearts dance to thy resounding  
step!

A proper sight to scare the crows away!  
*Fest.* Pity you choose not then some  
other method

Of coming at your point. The marvellous  
art

At length established in the world bids  
fair

To remedy all hindrances like these:  
Trust to Frobenius' press the precious lore  
Obscured by uncouth manner, or unfit  
For raw beginners; let his types secure  
A deathless monument to after-time;  
Meanwhile wait confidently and enjoy  
The ultimate effect: sooner or later  
You shall be all-revealed.

*Par.* The old dull question  
In a new form; no more. Thus: I possess  
Two sorts of knowledge; one,—vast,  
shadowy,

Hints of the unbounded aim I once pur-  
sued:

The other consists of many secrets, caught  
While bent on nobler prize,—perhaps a  
few

Prime principles which may conduct to  
much:

These last I offer to my followers here.  
Now, bid me chronicle the first of these,  
My ancient study, and in effect you bid  
Revert to the wild courses just abjured:  
I must go find them scattered through the  
world.

Then, for the principles, they are so simple  
(Being chiefly of the overturning sort),  
That one time is as proper to propound  
them

As any other—to-morrow at my class,  
Or half a century hence embalmed in print.  
For if mankind intend to learn at all,  
They must begin by giving faith to them  
And acting on them: and I do not see  
But that my lectures serve indifferent well:  
No doubt these dogmas fall not to the  
earth,

For all their novelty and rugged setting.  
I think my class will not forget the day  
Let them know the gods of Israel,  
Aëtius, Oribasius, Galen, Rhasis,  
Serapion, Avicenna, Averröes,  
Were blocks!

*Fest.* And that reminds me, I heard  
something

About your waywardness: you burned  
their books,  
It seems, instead of answering those sages.

*Par.* And who said that?

*Fest.* Some I met yesternight  
With Ecolampadius. As you know, the  
purpose

Of this short stay at Basil was to learn  
His pleasure touching certain missives  
sent

For our Zuinglius and himself. 'Twas he  
Apprised me that the famous teacher here  
Was my old friend.

*Par.* Ah, I forgot: you went . . .

*Fest.* From Zurich with advices for the  
ear

Of Luther, now at Wittenberg—(you  
know,

I make no doubt, the differences of late  
With Carolstadius)—and returning sought  
Basil and . . .

*Par.* I remember. Here's a case,  
now,

Will teach you why I answer not, but burn.  
The books you mention. Pray, does  
Luther dream

His arguments convince by their own force  
The crowds that own his doctrine? No,  
indeed!

His plain denial of established points  
Ages had sanctified and men supposed  
Could never be oppugned while earth was  
under

And heaven above them—points which  
chance or time

Affected not—did more than the array  
Of argument which followed. Bldly  
deny!

There is much breath-stopping, hair-  
stiffening

Awile; then, amazed glances, mute  
awaiting

The thunderbolt which does not come:  
and next,

Reproachful wonder and inquiry: those  
Who else had never stirred, are able now  
To find the rest out for themselves, perhaps  
To outstrip him who set the whole at work,  
—As never will my wise class its instruc-  
tor.

And you saw Luther?

*Fest.* 'Tis a wondrous soul!

*Par.* True: the so-heavy chain which  
galled mankind  
Is shattered, and the noblest of us all  
Must bow to the deliverer—nay, the  
worker

Of our own project—we who long before  
Had burst our trammels, but forgot the  
crowd,

We should have taught, still groaned be-  
neath their load:

• This he has done and nobly. Speed that  
may!

Whatever be my chance or my mischance,  
What benefits mankind must glad me too;  
And men seem made, though not as I  
believed,

For something better than the times pro-  
duce.

Witness these gangs of peasants your new  
lights

From Suabia have possessed, whom  
Münzer leads,

And whor! the duke, the landgrave and  
the elector

Will calm in blood! Well, well; 'tis not  
my world!

*Fest.* Hark!

*Par.* 'Tis the melancholy wind  
astir

Within the trees; the embers too are grey:  
Morn must be near.

*Fest.* Best ope the casement: see,  
The night, late strewn with clouds and  
flying stars,

Is sleep and motionless: how peaceful  
sleep

The tree-tops altogether! Like an asp,  
The wind slips whispering from bough to  
bough.

*Par.* Ay; you would gaze on a wind-  
shaken tree

By the hour, nor count time lost.

*Fest.* So you shall gaze:  
Those happy times will come again.

*Par.* Gone, gone,  
Those pleasant times! Does not the moan-  
ing wind

Seem to bewail that we have gained such  
gains

And bartered sleep for them?

*Fest.* It is our trust  
That there is yet another world to mend  
All error and mischance.

*Par.* Another world!  
And why this world, this common world,  
to be

A make-shift, a mere foil, how fair soever,  
To some fine life to come? Man must be  
fed

With angels' food, forsooth; and some few  
traces

Of a diviner nature which look out  
Through his corporeal baseness, warrant  
him

In a supreme contempt of all provision  
For his inferior tastes—some straggling  
marks

Which constitute his essence, just as truly  
As here and there a gem would constitute  
The rock, their barren bed, one diamond.

But were it so—were man all mind—he  
gains

A station little enviable. From God  
Down to the lowest spirit ministrant,  
Intelligence exists which casts our mind  
Into immeasurable shade. No, no:

Love, hope, fear, faith—these make humanity;  
 These are its sign and note and character,  
 And these I have lost!—gone, shut from me for ever,  
 Like a dead friend safe from unkindness more!  
 See, morn at length. The heavy darkness seems  
 Diluted, grey and clear without the stars;  
 The shrubs bestir and rouse themselves as if  
 Some snake, that weighed them down all night, let go  
 His hold; and from the East, fuller and fuller,  
 Day, like a mighty river, flowing in;  
 But clouded, wintry, desolate and cold.  
 Yet see how that broad prickly star-shaped plant,  
 Half-down in the crevice, spreads its woolly leaves  
 All thick and glistering with diamond dew.  
 And you depart for Einsiedeln this day,  
 And we have spent all night in talk like this!  
 If you would have me better for your love,  
 Revert no more to these sad themes.  
*Fest.* One favour,  
 And I have done. I leave you, deeply moved;  
 Unwilling to have fared so well, the while  
 My friend has changed so sorely. If this mood  
 Shall pass away, if light once more arise  
 Where all is darkness now, if you see fit  
 To hope and trust again, and strive again,  
 You will remember—not our love alone—  
 But that my faith in God's desire that man  
 Should trust on his support, (as I must think  
 You trusted) is obscured and dim through you:  
 For you are thus, and this is no reward.  
 Will you not call me to your side, dear Aureole?

#### IV.—PARACELSUS ASPIRES

SCENE.—*Colmar in Alsatia: an Inn.* 1528.

PARACELSUS, FESTUS

*Par.* [to JOHANNES OPORINUS, *his Secretary*]. *Sic itur ad astra!* Dear Von Visenburg  
 Is scandalized, and poor Torinus paralysed,  
 And every honest soul that Basil holds  
 Aghast; and yet we live, as one may say,  
 Just as though Liechtenfels had never set  
 So true a value on his sorry carcass,  
 And learned Pütter had not frowned us dumb.  
 We live; and shall as surely start to-morrow

For Nuremberg, as we drink speedy scathe  
 To Basil in this mantling wine, suffused  
 A delicate blush, no fainter tinge is born  
 I' the shut heart of a bud. Pledge me, good John—  
 'Basil; a hot plague ravage it, and Pütter  
 'Oppose the plague!' Even so? Do you  
 too share  
 Their panic, the reptiles? Ha, ha; faint  
 through these,  
 Desist for these! They manage matters so  
 At Basil, 'tis like: but others may find  
 means  
 To bring the stoutest braggart of the tribe  
 Once more to crouch in silence—means to  
 breed  
 A stupid wonder in each fool again,  
 Now big with admiration at the skill  
 Which stript a vain pretender of his  
 plumes:  
 And, that done,—means to brand each  
 slavish brow  
 So deeply, surely, ineffaceably,  
 That henceforth flattery shall not pucker it  
 Out of the furrow; there that stamp shall  
 stay  
 To show the next they fawn on, what they  
 are,  
 This Basil with its magnates,—fill my  
 cup,—  
 Whom I curse soul and limb. And now  
 despatch,  
 Despatch, my trusty John; and what re-  
 mains  
 To do, whate'er arrangements for our trip  
 Are yet to be completed, see you hasten  
 This night; we'll weather the storm at least:  
 to-morrow  
 For Nuremberg! Now leave us; this grave  
 clerk  
 Has divers weighty matters for my ear:  
 [OPORINUS goes out.  
 Festus,  
 And spare my lungs. At last, my gallant  
 I am rid of this arch-knave that dogs my  
 heels  
 As a gaunt crow a gasping sheep; at last  
 May give a loose to my delight. How kind,  
 How very kind, my first best only friend!  
 Why, this looks like fidelity. Embrace me!  
 Not a hair silvered yet? Right! you shall  
 live  
 Till I am worth your love; you shall be  
 proud,  
 And I—but let 'time show! Did you not  
 wonder?  
 I sent to you because our compact  
 weighed  
 Upon my conscience—(you recall the  
 night  
 At Basil, which the gods confound!)—  
 because  
 Once more I aspire. I call you to my  
 side:

You come. You thought my message strange?

*Fest.* So strange  
That I must hope, indeed, your messenger  
Has mingled his own fancies with the words

Purporting to be yours.

*Par.* He said no more,  
'Tis probable, than the precious folk I leave

Said fiftyfold more roughly. Well-a-day,  
'Tis true! poor Paracelsus is exposed  
At last; a most egregious quack he proves:  
And those he overreached must spit their hate

On one who, utterly beneath contempt,  
Could yet deceive their topping wits. You heard

Bare truth; and at my bidding you come here

To speed me on my enterprise, as once  
Your lavish wishes sped me, my own friend!

*Fest.* What is your purpose, Auréole?

*Par.* Oh, for purpose,  
There is no lack of precedents in a case  
Like mine; at least, if not precisely mine,  
The case of men cast off by those they sought

To benefit.

*Fest.* They really cast you off?  
I only heard a vague tale of some priest,  
Cured by your skill, who wrangled at your claim,  
Knowing his life's worth best; and how the judge

The matter was referred to, saw no cause  
To interfere, nor you to hide your full  
Contempt of him; nor he, again, to smother

His wrath thereat, which raised so fierce  
a flame

That Basil soon was made no place for you.

*Par.* The affair of Liechtenfels? the shallowest fable,  
The last and silliest outrage—mere pretence!

I knew it, I foretold it from the first,  
How soon the stupid wonder you mistook  
For genuine loyalty—a cheering promise  
Of better things to come—would pall and pass;

And every word comes true. Saul is among  
The prophets! Just so long as I was pleased  
To play off the mere antics of my art,  
Fantastic gambols leading to no end,  
I got huge praise: but one can ne'er keep down

Our foolish nature's weakness. There they  
flocked,

Poor devils, jostling, swearing and perspiring,

Till the walls rang again; and all for me!  
I had a kindness for them, which was right;

But then I stopped not till I tacked to that  
A trust in them and a respect—a sort  
Of sympathy for them; I must needs begin  
To teach them, not amaze them, 'to impart  
'The spirit which should instigate the search

'Of truth,' just what you bade me! I spoke out.

Forthwith a mighty squadron, in disgust,  
Filed off—'the sifted chaff of the sack,' I said,

Redoubling my endeavours to secure  
The rest. When lo! one man had tarried so long

Only to ascertain if I supported  
This tenet of his, or that; another loved  
To hear impartially before he judged,  
And having heard, now judged; this bland disciple

Passed for my dupe, but all along, it seems,  
Spied error where his neighbours marvelled most;

That fiery doctor who had hailed me friend,  
Did it because my by-paths, once proved wrong

And beaconed properly, would commend again

The good old ways our sires jogged safely o'er,

Though not their squeamish sons; the other worthy

Discovered divers verses of St. John,  
Which, read successively, refreshed the soul,

But, muttered backwards, cured the gout,  
the stone,

The colic and what not. *Quid multa?* The end

Was a clear class-room, and a quiet leer  
From grave folk, and a sour reproachful glance

From those in chief who, cap in hand, installed

The new professor scarce a year before;  
And a vast flourish about patient merit  
Obscured awhile by flashy tricks, but sure  
Sooner or later to emerge in splendour—  
Of which the example was some luckless wight

Whom my arrival had discomfited,  
But now, it seems, the general voice recalled

To fill my chair and so efface the stain  
Basil had long incurred. I sought no better,  
Only a quiet dismissal from my post,  
And from my heart I wished them better suited

And better served. Good night to Basil, then!

But fast as I proposed to rid the tribe  
Of my obnoxious back, I could not spare them

The pleasure of a parting kick.

*Fest.* You smile:

Despise them as they merit! \*

*Par.* If I smile,  
'Tis with as very contempt as ever turned  
Flesh into stone. This courteous recom-  
pense,

This grateful . . . Festus, were your nature  
fit

To be defiled, your eyes the eyes to ache  
At gangrene-blotches, eating poison-  
blains,

The ulcerous barky scurf of leprosy  
Which finds—a man, and leaves—a hide-  
ous thing

That cannot but be mended by hell fire,  
—I would lay bare to you the human heart  
Which God cursed long ago, and devils  
make since

Their pet nest and their never-tiring home.  
Oh, sages have discovered we are born  
For various ends—to love, to know: has  
ever

One stumbled, in his search, on any signs  
Of a nature in us formed to hate? To hate?  
If that be our true object which evokes  
Our powers in fullest strength, be sure 'tis  
hate!

Yet men have doubted if the best and  
bravest

Of spirits can nourish him with hate alone.  
I had not the monopoly of fools,  
It seems, at Basil.

*Fest.* But your plans, your plans!  
I have yet to learn your purpose, Aureole!

*Par.* Whether to sink beneath such pon-  
derous shame,

To shrink up like a crushed snail, undergo  
In silence and desist from further toil,  
And so subside into a monument  
Of one their censure blasted? or to bow  
Cheerfully as submissively, to lower  
My old pretensions even as Basil dictates,  
To drop into the rank her wits assign me  
And live as they prescribe, and make that  
use

Of my poor knowledge which their rules  
allow,

Proud to be patted now and then, and  
careful

To practise the true posture for receiving  
The amplest benefit from their hoofs' ap-  
pliance

When they shall condescend to tutor me?  
Then, one may feel resentment like a flame  
Within, and deck false systems in truth's  
garb,

And tangle and entwine mankind with  
error,

And give them darkness for a dower and  
falsehood

For a possession, ages: or one may mope  
Into a shade through thinking, or else  
drowse

Into a dreamless sleep and so die off.  
But I,—now Festus shall divine!—but I

Am merely setting out once more, em-  
bracing

My earliest aims again! What thinks he  
now?

*Fest.* Your aims? the aims?—to know?  
and where is found

The early trust . . .

*Par.* Nay, not so fast; I say,  
The aims—not the old means. You know  
they made me

A laughing-stock; I was a fool; you know  
The when and the how: hardly those means  
again!

Not but they had their beauty; who should  
know

Their passing beauty, if not I? Still, dreams  
They were, so let them vanish, yet in beauty  
If that may be. Stay: thus they pass in  
song! [*He sings.*

Heap cassia, sandal-buds and stripes  
Of labdanum, and aloe-balls,  
Smeared with dull nard an Indian wipes  
From out her hair: such balsam falls  
Down sea-side mountain pedestals,  
From tree-tops where tired winds are  
fain,  
Spent with the vast and howling main,  
To treasure half their island-gain.

And strew faint sweetness from some old  
Egyptian's fine worm-eaten shroud  
Which breaks to dust when once un-  
rolled;

Or shredded perfume, like a cloud  
From closet long to quiet vowed,  
With moth and dropping arras hung,  
Mouldering her lute and books among,  
As when a queen, long dead, was young.

Mine, every word! And on such pile shall  
die

My lovely fancies, with fair perished things,  
Themselves fair and forgotten; yes, for-  
gotten,

Or why abjure them? So, I made this rhyme  
That fitting dignity might be preserved;  
No little proud was I; though the list of  
drugs

Smacks of my old vocation, and the verse  
Halts like the best of Luther's psalms.

*Fest.* But, Aureole,  
Talk not thus wildly and madly. I am  
here—

Did you know all! I have travelled far,  
indeed,

To learn your wishes. Be yourself again!  
For in this mood I recognize you less

Than in the horrible despondency  
I witnessed last. You may account this,  
joy;

But rather let me gaze on that despair  
Than hear these incoherent words and see  
This flushed cheek and intensely-sparkling  
eye.

*Par.* Why, man, I was light-hearted in my prime,  
I am light-hearted now; what would you have?

Aprile was a poet, I make songs—  
'Tis the very augury of success I want!  
Why should I not be joyous now as then?  
*Fest.* Joyous! and how? and what remains for joy?

You have declared the ends (which I am sick  
Of naming) are impracticable.

*Par.* Ay,  
Pursued as I pursued them—the arch-fool!  
Listen: my plan will please you not, 'tis like,

But you are little versed in the world's ways.  
This is my plan—(first drinking its good luck)—

I will accept all helps; all I despised  
So rashly at the outset, equally  
With early impulses, late years have quenched:

I have tried each way singly: now for both!  
All helps! no one sort shall exclude the rest.  
I seek to know and to enjoy at once,  
Not one without the other as before.  
Suppose my labour should seem God's own cause

Once more, as first I dreamed,—it shall not baulk me

Of the meanest earthliest senselest delight  
That may be snatched; for every joy is gain,

And gain is gain, however small. My soul  
Can die then, nor be taunted—'what was gained?'

Nor, on the other hand, should pleasure follow

As though I had not spurned her hitherto,  
Shall she o'ercloud my spirit's rapt communion

With the tumultuous past, the teeming future,

Glorious with visions of a full success.

*Fest.* Success!

*Par.* And wherefore not? Why not prefer

Results obtained in my best state of being,  
To those derived alone from seasons dark  
As the thoughts they bred? When I was best, my youth

Unwasted, seemed success not surest too?  
It is the nature of darkness to obscure.

I am a wanderer: I remember well,  
One journey, how I feared the track was missed,

So long the city I desired to reach  
Lay hid; when suddenly its spires afar  
Flashed through the circling clouds; you may conceive

My transport. Soon the vapours closed again,

But I had seen the city, and one such glance  
No darkness could obscure: nor shall the present—

A few dull hours, a passing shame or two,  
Destroy the vivid memories of the past.  
I will fight the battle out; a little spent  
Perhaps, but still an able combatant.

You look at my grey hair and furrowed brow?

But I can turn even weakness to account:  
Of many tricks I know, 'tis not the least  
To push the ruins of my frame, whereon  
The fire of vigour trembles scarce alive,  
Into a heap, and send the flame aloft.

What should I do with age? So, sickness lends

An aid; it being, I fear, the source of all  
We boast of: mind is nothing but disease,  
And natural health is ignorance.

*Fest.* I see  
But one good symptom in this notable scheme.

I feared your sudden journey had in view  
To wreak immediate vengeance on your foes.

'Tis not so: I am glad.

*Par.* And if I please  
To spit on them, to trample them, what then?

'Tis sorry warfare truly, but the fools  
Provoke it. I would spare their self-conceit,

But if they must provoke me, cannot suffer  
Forbearance on my part, if I may keep  
No quality in the shade, must needs put forth

Power to match power, my strength against their strength,

And teach them their own game with their own arms—

Why, be it so and let them take their chance!

I am above them like a god, there's no  
Hiding the fact, what idle scruples, then,  
Were those that ever bade me soften it,

Communicate it gently to the world,  
Instead of proving my supremacy,  
Taking my natural station o'er their head,  
Then owning all the glory was a man's!

—And in my elevation man's would be.  
But live and learn, though life's short,  
learning, hard!

And therefore, though the wreck of my past self,

I fear, dear Pütter, that your lecture-room  
Must wait awhile for its best ornament,  
The penitent empiric, who set up  
For somebody, but soon was taught his place;

Now, but too happy to be let confess  
His error, snuff the candles, and illustrate  
(*Fiat experientia corpore viii*)

Your medicine's soundness in his person.  
Wait,

## [IV]

See! I have cast off this remorseless care  
Which clogged a spirit born to soar so free,  
And my dim chamber has become a tent,  
Festus is sitting by me, and his Michal . . .  
Why do you start? I say, she listening here,  
(For yonder—Würzburg through the  
orchard-bough!)

Motions as though such ardent words  
should find

No echo in a maiden's quiet soul,  
But her pure bosom heaves, her eyes fill  
fast

With tears, her sweet lips tremble all the  
while!

Ha, ha!

*Fest.* It seems, then, you expect to reap  
No unreal joy from this your present  
course,

But rather . . .

*Par.* Death! To die! I owe that much  
To what, at least, I was. I should be sad  
To live contented after such a fall,  
To thrive and fatten after such reverse!  
The whole plan is a makeshift, but will last  
My time.

*Fest.* And you have never mused and  
said,

'I had a noble purpose, and the strength  
'To compass it; but I have stopped half-  
way,

'And wrongly given the first-fruits of my  
toil

'To objects little worthy of the gift.

'Why linger round them still? why clench  
my fault?

'Why seek for consolation in defeat,

'In vain endeavours to derive a beauty  
'From ugliness? why seek to make the  
most

'Of what no power can change, nor strive  
instead

'With mighty effort to redeem the past

'And, gathering up the treasures thus cast  
down,

'To hold a steadfast course till I arrive

'At their fit destination and my own?'

You have never pondered thus?

*Par.* Have I, you ask?  
Often at midnight, when most fancies  
come,

Would some such airy project visit me:

But ever at the end . . . or will you hear

The same thing in a tale, a parable?

You and I, wandering o'er the world wide,

Chance to set foot upon a desert coast.

Just as we say, 'No human voice heftre

'Broke the inveterate silence of these  
rocks!'

—Their querulous echo startles us; we  
turn:

What ravaged structure still looks o'er the  
sea?

Some characters remain, too! While we  
read,

The sharp salt wind, impatient for the last  
Of even this record, wistfully comes and

goes,  
Or sings what we recover, mocking it.  
This is the record; and my voice, the  
wind's. [*He sings.*]

Over the sea our galleys went,  
With cleaving prows in order brave  
To a speeding wind and a bounding  
wave,

A gallant armament:  
Each park built out of a forest-tree

Left leafy and rough as first it grew,  
And nailed all over the gaping sides,  
Within and without, with black bull-  
hides,

Seethed in fat and suppld in flame,  
To bear the playful billows' game:  
So, each good ship was rude to see,  
Rude and bare to the outward view,

But each upbore a stately tent  
Where cedar pales in scented row  
Kept out the flakes of the dancing brine,  
And an awning drooped the mast below,  
In fold on fold of the purple fine,  
That neither noontide nor starshine  
Nor moonlight cold which maketh mad,

Might pierce the regal tenement.  
When the sun dawned, oh, gay and glad  
We set the sail and plied the oar;  
But when the night-wind blew like  
breath,

For joy of one day's voyage more,  
We sang together on the wide sea,  
Like men at peace on a peaceful shore;  
Each sail was loosed to the wind so free,  
Each helm made sure by the twilight  
star,

And in a sleep as calm as death,  
We, the voyagers from afar,

Lay stretched along, each weary crew  
In a circle round its wondrous tent  
Whence gleamed soft light and curled  
rich scent,

And with light and perfume, music  
too:

So the stars wheeled round, and the  
darkness past,

And at morn we started beside the mast,  
And still each ship was sailing fast.

Now, one morn, land appeared—a speck  
Dim trembling betwixt sea and sky:

'Avoid it,' cried our pilot, 'check  
'The shout, restrain the eager eye!'

But the heaving sea was black behind  
For many a night and many a day,  
And land, though but a rock, drew nigh;  
So, we broke the cedar pales away,  
Let the purple awning flap in the wind,

And a statue bright was on every  
deck!



# PARACELSUS

[iv

We shouted, every man of us,  
And steered right into the harbour thus,  
With pomp and pæan glorious.

A hundred shapes of lucid stone!  
All day we built its shrine for each,  
A shrine of rock for every one,  
Nor paused till in the westerling sun  
We sat together on the beach  
To sing because our task was done.  
When lo! what shouts and merry songs!  
What laughter all the distance stirs!  
A loaded raft with happy throngs  
Of gentle islanders!

'Our isles are just at hand,' they cried,  
'Like cloudlets faint in even sleeping;  
'Our temple-gates are opened wide,  
'Our olive-groves thick shade are  
keeping

'For these majestic forms'—they cried.  
Oh, then we awoke with sudden start  
From our deep dream, and knew, too  
late,

How bare the rock, how desolate,  
Which had received our precious freight:  
Yet we called out—'Depart!

'Our gifts, once given, must here  
abide.

'Our work is done; we have no heart  
'To mar our work,'—we cried.

*Fest.* In truth?

*Par.* Nay, wait: all this in  
tracings faint  
On rugged stones strewn here and there,  
but piled  
In order once: then follows—mark what  
follows!

'The sad rhyme of the men who proudly  
clung

'To their first fault, and withered in their  
pride.'

*Fest.* Come back then, Aureole; as you  
fear God, come!

This is foul sin; come back! Renounce  
the past

Forswear the future; look for joy no more,  
But wait death's summons amid holy  
sights,

And trust me for the event—peace, if not  
joy.

Return with me to Einsiedeln, dear  
Aureole!

*Par.* No way, no way! it would not turn  
to good.

A spotless child sleeps on the flowering  
moss—

'Tis well for him; but when a sinful man,  
Envyng such slumber, may desire to put  
His guilt away, shall he return at once  
To rest by lying there? Our sires knew well  
(Spite of the grave discoveries of their  
sons)

The fitting course for such: dark cells, dim  
lamps,

A stone floor one may writhe on like a  
worm:

No mossy pillow blue with violets!

*Fest.* I see no symptom of these absolute  
And tyrannous passions. You are calmer  
now.

This verse-making can purge you well  
enough

Without the terrible penance you describe.  
You love me still: the lusts you fear will  
never

Outrage your friend. To Einsiedeln, once  
more!

Say but the word!

*Par.* No, no; those lusts forbid:  
They crouch, I know, cowering with half-  
shut eye

Beside you; 'tis their nature. Thrust your-  
self

Between them and their prey; let some fool  
style me

Or king or quack, it matters not—then try  
Your wisdom, urge them to forego their  
treat!

No, no; learn better and look deeper,  
*Festus!*

If you knew how a devil sneers within me  
While you are talking now of this, now  
that,

As though we differed scarcely save in  
trifles!

*Fest.* Do we so differ? True, change  
must proceed,

Whether for good or ill; keep from me,  
which!

Do not confide all secrets: I was born  
To hope, and you . . .

*Par.* To trust: you know the fruits!

*Fest.* Listen: I do believe, what you call  
trust

Was self-delusion at the best: for, see!  
So long as God would kindly pioneer

A path for you, and screen you from the  
world,

Procure you full exemption from man's  
lot,

Man's common hopes and fears, on the  
mere pretext

Of your engagement in his service—yield  
you

A limitless licence, make you God, in fact,  
And turn your slave—you were content  
to say

Most courtly praises! What's it, at last,  
But selfishness without example? None

Could trace God's will so plain as you,  
while yours

Remained implied in it; but now you fail,  
And we, who prate about that will, are  
fools!

In short, God's service is established here  
As he determines fit, and not your way,

And this you cannot brook. Such discontent  
Is weak. Repounce all creatureship at once!

Affirm an absolute right to have and use  
Your energies; as though the rivers should say—

‘We rush to the ocean; what have we to do  
‘With feeding streamlets, lingering in the vales,

‘Sleeping in lazy pools?’ Set up that plea,  
That will be bold at least!

*Par.* ‘Tis like enough.  
The serviceable spirits are those, no doubt,  
The East produces: lo, the master bids,—  
They wake, raise terraces and garden-grounds

In one night’s space; and, this done, straight  
begin

Another century’s sleep, to the great praise  
Of him that framed them wise and beautiful,

Till a lamp’s rubbing, or some chance  
akin,

Wake them again. I am of different mould.  
I would have soothed my lord, and slaved  
for him

And done him service past my narrow  
bond,

And thus I get rewarded for my pains!  
Beside, ‘tis vain to talk of forwarding  
God’s glory otherwise; this is alone  
The sphere of its increase, as far as men  
Increase it; why, then, look beyond this  
sphere?

We are his glory; and if we be glorious,  
Is not the thing achieved?

*Fest.* Shall one like me  
Judge hearts like yours? Though years  
have changed you much,  
And you have left your first love, and  
retain

Its empty shade to veil your crooked ways,  
Yet I still hold that you have honoured  
God.

And who shall call your course without  
reward?

For, wherefore this repining at defeat  
Had triumph ne’er injured you to high  
hopes?

I urge you to forsake the life you curse,  
And what success attends me?—simply  
talk.

Of passion, weakness and remorse; in  
short,

Anything but the naked truth—you choose  
This so-despised career, and cheaply hold  
My happiness; or rather other men’s.  
Once more, return!

*Par.* And quickly. John the thief  
Has pilfered half my secrets by this time:  
And we depart by daybreak. I am weary,  
I know not how; not even the wine-cup  
soothes

My brain to-night . . .

Do you not thoroughly despise me, Festus?  
No flattery! One like you needs not be told  
We live and breathe deceiving and de-  
ceived.

Do you not scorn me from your heart of  
hearts,

Me and my cant, each petty subterfuge,  
My rhymes and all this frothy shower of  
words,

My glozing self-deceit, my outward crust  
Of lies which wrap, as, tetter, morphew,  
furfair

Wrapt tile sound flesh?—so, see you flatter  
not!

Even God flatters: but my friend, at least,  
Is true. I would depart, secure hence-  
forth

Against all further insult, hate and wrong  
From puny foes; my one friend’s scorn  
shall brand me:

No fear of sinking deeper!

*Fest.* No, dear Aureole!  
No, no; I came to counsel faithfully.

There are old rules, made long ere we were  
born,

By which I judge you. I, so fallible,  
So infinitely low beside your mighty  
Majestic spirit!—even I can see  
You own some higher law than ours which  
call

Sin, what is no sin—weakness, what is  
strength.

But I have only these, such as they are,  
To guide me; and I blame you where they  
bid,

Only so long as blaming promises  
To win peace for your soul: the more, that  
sorrow

Has fallen on me of late, and they have  
helped me

So that I faint not under my distress.  
But wherefore should I scruple to avow  
In spite of all, as brother judging brother,  
Your fate is most inexplicable to me?

And should you perish without recom-  
pense

And satisfaction yet—too hastily  
I have relied on love: you may have sinned,  
But you have loved. As a mere human  
matter—

As I would have God deal with fragile men  
In the end—I say that you will triumph  
yet!

*Par.* Have you felt sorrow, Festus?—  
‘tis because

You love me. Sorrow, and sweet Michal  
yours!

Well thought on: never let her know this  
last

Dull winding-up of all: these miscreants  
dared

Insult me—me she loved:—so, grieve her  
not!

*Fest.* Your ill success can 'little grieve her now.

*Par.* Michal is dead! pray Christ we do not craze!

*Fest.* Aureole, dear Aureole, look not on me thus!

Fool, fool! this is the heart grown sorrow-proof—

I cannot bear those eyes.

*Par.* Nay, really dead?

*Fest.* 'Tis scarce a month.

*Par.* Stone dead!

—then you have laid her

Among the flowers ere this. Now, do you know,

I can reveal a secret which shall comfort Even you. I have no julep, as men think, To cheat the grave; but a far better secret. Know, then, you did not ill to trust your love

To the cold earth: I have thought much of it:

For I believe we do not wholly die.

*Fest.* Aureole!

*Par.* Nay, do not laugh; there is a reason

For what I say: I think the soul can never Taste death. I am, just now, as you may see,

Very unfit to put so strange a thought

In an intelligible dress of words;

But take it as my trust, she is not dead.

*Fest.* But not on this account alone? you surely,

—Aureole, you have believed this all along?

*Par.* And Michal sleeps among the roots and dews,

While I am moved at Basil, and full of schemes

For Nuremberg, and hoping and despairing,

As though it mattered how the farce plays out,

So it be quickly played. Away, away!

Have your will, rabble! while we fight the prize,

Troop you in safety to the snug back-seats And leave a clear arena for the brave

About to perish for your sport!—Behold!

Another night, and still no sigh has stirred That fallen discoloured mouth, no pang  
relit

Those fixed eyes, quenched by the decay-  
ing body,

Like torch-flame choked in dust. While  
all beside

Was breaking, to the last they held out  
bfight,

As a stronghold where life intrenched it-  
self;

But they are dead now—very blind and  
dead:

He will drowse into death without a groan.

My Aureole—my forgotten, ruined Au-  
reole!

The days are gone, are gone! How grand  
thou wast!

And now not one of those who struck thee  
down—

Poor glorious spirit—concerns him even  
to stay

And satisfy himself his little hand

Could turn God's image to a livid thing.

Another night, and yet no change! 'Tis  
much

That I should sit by him, and bathe his  
brow,

And chafe his hands; 'tis much: but he  
will sure

Know me, and look on me, and speak to me  
Once more—but only once! His hollow  
cheek

Looked all night long as though a creeping  
laugh

At his own state were just about to break  
From the dying man: my brain swam, my  
throat swelled,

And yet I could not turn away. In truth,  
They told me how, when first brought here,  
he seemed

Resolved to live, to lose no faculty;  
Thus striving to keep up his shattered  
strength,

Until they bore him to this stifling cell:  
When straight his features fell, an hour  
made white

The flushed face, and relaxed the quivering  
limb,

Only the eye remained intense awhile  
As though it recognized the tomb-like  
place,

And then he lay as here he lies.

Ay, here!

Here is earth's noblest, nobly garlanded—  
Her bravest champion with his well-won  
prize—

Her best achievement, her sublime amends  
For countless generations fleeting fast  
And followed by no trace;—the creature-  
god

She instances when angels would dispute

## V.—PARACELSUS ATTAINS

SCENE.—*Salzburg; a cell in the Hospital of  
St. Sebastian. 1541.*

FESTUS, PARACELSUS

*Fest.* No change! The weary night is  
well-nigh spent,

The lamp burns low, and through the case-  
ment-bars

Grey morning glimmers feebly: yet no  
change!

The title of her brood to rank with them.  
Angels, this is our angel! Those bright  
forms

We clothe with purple, crown and call to  
thrones,

Are human, but not h<sup>l</sup>; those are but men  
Whom other men press round and kneel  
before;

Those palaces are dwelt in by mankind;  
Higher provision is for him you seek  
Amid our pomps and glories: see it here!  
Behold earth's paragon! Now, raise thee,  
clay!

God! Thou art love! I build my faith on  
that.

Even as I watch beside thy tortured child  
Unconscious whose hot tears fall fast by  
him,

So doth thy right hand guide us through  
the world

Wherein we stumble. God! what shall we  
say?

How has he sinned? How else should he  
have done?

Surely he sought thy praise—thy praise,  
for all

He might be busied by the task so much  
As half forget awhile its proper end.

Dost thou well, Lord? Thou canst not but  
prefer

That I should range myself upon his side—  
How could he stop at every step to set  
Thy glory forth? Hadst thou but granted  
him

Success, thy honour would have crowned  
success,

A halo round a star. Or, say he erred,—  
Save him, dear God; it will be like thee:  
bathe him

In light and life! Thou art not made like us;  
We should be wroth in such a case; but  
thou

Forgivest—so, forgive these passionate  
thoughts

Which come unsought and will not pass  
away!

I know thee, who hast kept my path, and  
made

Light for me in the darkness, tempering  
sorrow

So that it reached me like a solemn joy;  
It were too strange that I should doubt thy  
love.

But what art I? Thou madest him and  
knowest

How he was fashioned. I could never err  
That way: the quiet place beside thy feet,  
Reserved for me, was ever in my thoughts:  
But he—thou shouldst have favoured him  
as well!

Ah! he wakens! Aureole, I am here! 'tis  
Festus!

I cast away all wishes save one wish—  
Let him but know me, only speak to me!  
He mutters; louder and louder; any other  
Than I, with brain less laden, could collect  
What he pours forth. Dear Aureole, do  
but look!

Is it talking or singing, this he utters fast?  
Misery that he should fix me with his eye,  
Quick talking to some other all the while!  
If he would husband this wild vehemence  
Which frustrates its intent!—I heard, I  
know

I heard my name amid those rapid words.  
Oh, he will know me yet! Could I divert  
This current, lead it somehow gently back  
Into the channels of the past!—His eye  
Brighter than ever! It must recognize me!

I am Erasmus: I am here to pray  
That Paracelsus use his skill for me.  
The schools of Paris and of Padua send  
These questions for your learning to re-  
solve.

We are your students, noble master: leave  
This wretched cell, what business have you  
here?

Our class awaits you; come to us once  
more!

(O agony! the utmost I can do  
Touches him not; how else arrest his ear?)

I am commissioned . . . I shall craze like  
him.

Better be mute and see what God shall  
send.

*Par.* Stay, stay with me!

*Fest.* I will; I am come here  
To stay with you—Festus, you loved of  
old;

Festus, you know, you must know!

*Par.* Festus! Where's

Aprile, then? Has he not chanted softly  
The melodies I heard all night? I could not  
Get to him for a cold hand on my breast,

But I made out his music well enough,  
O well enough! If they have filled him full  
With magical music, as they freight a star  
With light, and have remitted all his sin,  
They will forgive me too, I too shall know!

*Fest.* Festus, your Festus!

*Par.* Ask him if Aprile

Knows as he Loves—if I shall Love and  
Know?

I try; but that cold hand, like lead—so  
cold!

*Fest.* My hand, see!

*Par.* Ah, the curse, Aprile,

Aprile!

We get so near—so very, very near!  
'Tis an old tale: Jove strikes the Titans  
down,

Not when they set about their mountain-  
piling

But when another rock would crown the  
work.

And Phaeton—doubtless his first radiant  
plunge

Astonished mortals, though the gods were  
calm,

And Jove prepared his thunder: all old  
tales!

*Fest.* And what are these to you?

*Par.* Ay, friends must laugh  
So cruelly, so well! most like I never  
Could tread a single pleasure underfoot,  
But they were grinning by my side, were  
chuckling

To see me toil and drop away by flakes!  
Hell-spawn! I am glad, most glad, that  
thus I fail!

Your cunning has o'ershot its aim. One  
year,  
One month, perhaps, and I had served  
your turn!

You should have curbed your spite awhile.  
But now,

Who will believe 'twas you that held me  
back?

Listen: there's shame and hissing and con-  
tempt,

And none but laughs who names me, none  
but spits

Measureless scorn upon me, me alone,  
The quack, the cheat, the liar,—all on me!  
And thus your famous plan to sink man-  
kind

In silence and despair, by teaching them  
One of their race had probed the inmost  
truth,

Had done all man could do, yet failed no  
less—

Your wise plan proves abortive. Men  
despair?

Ha, ha! why, they are hooting the empiric,  
The ignorant and incapable fool who  
rushed

Madly upon a work beyond his wits;  
Nor doubt they but the simplest of them-  
selves

Could bring the matter to triumphant  
issue.

So, pick and choose among them all, ac-  
cursed!

Try now, persuade some other to slave for  
you,

To ruin body and soul to work your  
ends!

No, no; I am the first and last, I think.

*Fest.* Dear friend, who are accursed?  
who has done . . .

*Par.* What have I done? Fiends dare  
ask that? or you,

Brave men? Oh, you can chime in boldly,  
backed

By the others! What had you to do, sage  
peers?

Here stands my rivals; Latin, Arab, Jew,  
Greek, join dead hands against me: all I  
ask

Is, that the world enrol my name with  
theirs,

And even this poor privilege, it seems,  
They range themselves, prepared to dis-  
allow.

Only observe! why, fiends may learn from  
them!

How they talk calmly of my throes, my  
fierce

Aspirings, terrible watchings, each one  
claiming

Its price of blood and brain; how they  
dissect

And sneeringly disparage the few truths  
Got at a life's cost; they too hanging the

while  
About my neck, their lies misleading me  
And their dead names browbeating me!

Grey crew,  
Yet steeped in fresh malevolence from hell,  
Is there a reason for your hate? My

truths  
Have shaken a little the palm about each  
prince?

Just think, Aprile, all these leering dotards  
Were bent on nothing less than to be  
crowned

As we! That yellow blear-eyed wretch in  
chief

To whom the rest cringe low with feigned  
respect,

Galen of Pergamos and hell—nay speak  
The tale, old man! We met there face to  
face:

I said the crown should fall from thee.  
Once more

We met as in that ghastly vestibule:  
Look to my brow! Have I redeemed my

pledge?  
*Fest.* Peace, peace; ah, see!

*Par.* Oh, emptiness of fame!  
Oh Persic Zoroaster, lord of stars!

—Who said these old renowns, dead long  
ago,

Could make me overlook the living world  
To gaze through gloom at where they  
stood, indeed,

But stand no longer? What a warm light  
life

After the shade! In truth, my delicate  
witch,

My serpent-queen, you did but well to  
hide

The juggles I had else detected. Fire  
May well run harmless o'er a breast like  
yours!

The cave was not so darkened by the  
smoke

But that your white limbs dazzled me: oh,  
white,

And panting as they twinkled, wildly  
dancing!

I cared not for your passionate gestures  
then,

But now I have forgotten the charm of charms,

The foolish knowledge which I came to seek,

While I remember that quaint dance; and thus

I am come back, not for those mummeries,  
But to love you, and to kiss your little feet  
Soft as an ermine's winter coat!

*Fest.* A light  
Will struggle through these thronging words at last.

As in the angry and tumultuous West  
A soft star trembles through the drifting clouds.

These are the strivings of a spirit which hates

So sad a vault should coop it, and calls up  
The past to stand between it and its fate.  
Were he at Einsiedeln—or Michal here!

*Par.* Cruel! I seek her now—I kneel—  
I shriek—

I clasp her vesture—but she fades, still fades;

And she is gone; sweet human love is gone!  
'Tis only when they spring to heaven that angels

Reveal themselves to you; they sit all day  
Beside you, and lie down at night by you  
Who care not for their presence, muse or sleep,

And all at once they leave you, and you know them!

We are so fooled, so cheated! Why, even now

I am not too secure against foul play;  
The shadows deepen and the walls contract:

No doubt some treachery is going on.  
'Tis very dusk. Where are we put, Aprile?

Have they left us in the lurch? This murky loathsome

Death-trap, this slaughter-house, is not the hall

In the golden city! Keep by me, Aprile!  
There is a hand groping amid the blackness  
To catch us. Have the spider-fingers got you,

Poet? Hold on me for your life! If once  
They pull you!—Hold!

'Tis but a dream—no more!

I have you still; the sun comes out again;  
Let us be happy: all will yet go well!

Let us confer: is it not like, Aprile,  
That spite of trouble, this ordeal passed,

The value of my labours ascertained,  
Just as some stream foams long among the rocks

But after glideth glassy to the sea,  
So, full content shall henceforth be my lot?

What think you, poet? Louder! Your clear voice

Vibrates too like a harp-string. Do you ask

How could I still remain on earth, should God

Grant me the great approval which I seek?  
I, you, and God can comprehend each other,

But men would murmur, and with cause enough;

For when they saw me, stainless of all sin,  
Preserved and sanctified by inward light,  
They would complain that comfort, shut from them,

I drank thus unespied; that they live on,  
Nor taste the quiet of a constant joy,  
For ache and care and doubt and weariness,

While I am calm; help being vouchsafed to me,

And hid from them.—'Twere best consider that!

You reason well, Aprile; but at least  
Let me know this, and die! Is this too much?

I will learn this, if God so please, and die!

If thou shalt please, dear God, if thou shalt please!

We are so weak, we know our motives least  
In their confused beginning. If at first  
I sought . . . but wherefore bare my heart to thee?

I know thy mercy; and already thoughts  
Flock fast about my soul to comfort it,  
And intimate I cannot wholly fail,  
For love and praise would clasp me willingly

Could I resolve to seek them. Thou art good,

And I should be content. Yet—yet first show

I have done wrong in daring! Rather give  
The supernatural consciousness of strength

Which fed my youth! Only one hour of that

With thee to help—O what should bar me then!

Lost, lost! Thus things are ordered here!

God's creatures,  
And yet he takes no pride in us!—none, none!

Truly there needs another life to come!

If this be all—(I must tell Festus that)  
And other life await us not—for one,

I say 'tis a poor cheat, a stupid bungle,  
A wretched failure. I, for one, protest

Against it, and I hurl it back with scorn.

Well, onward though alone! Small time remains,

And much to do: I must have fruit, must reap

Some profit from my toils. I doubt my body

Will hardly serve me through; while I have  
laboured

It has decayed; and now that I demand  
its best assistance, it will crumble fast:

A sad thought, a sad fate! How very full  
Of wormwood 'tis, that just at altar-  
service,

The rapt hymn rising, with the rolling  
smoke,

When glory dawns and all is at the best,  
The sacred fire may flicker and grow faint  
And die for want of a wood-pile's help!  
Thus fades the flagging body, and the soul  
Is pulled down in the overthrow. Well,  
well—

Let men catch every word, let them lose  
nought

Of what I say; something may yet be done.

They are ruins! Trust me who am one of  
you!

All ruins, glorious once, but lonely now.  
It makes my heart sick to behold you  
crouch

Beside your desolate fane: the arches dim,  
The crumbling columns grand against the  
moon,

Could I but rear them up once more—but  
that

May never be, so leave them! Trust me,  
friends,

Why should you linger here when I have  
built

A far resplendent temple, all your own?  
Trust me, they are but ruins! See, Aprile,

Men will not heed! Yet were I not prepared  
With better refuge for them, tongue of  
mine

Should ne'er reveal how blank their dwell-  
ing is:

I would sit down in silence with the rest.

Ha, what? you spit at me; you grin and  
shriek

Contempt into my ear—my ear which  
drank

God's accents once? you curse me? Why  
men, men,

I am not formed for it! Those hideous eyes  
Will be before me sleeping, waking, pray-  
ing,

They will not let me even die. Spare, spare  
me,

Sinning or no, forget that, only spare me  
The horrible scorn! You thought I could  
support it.

But now you see what silly fragile creature  
Cowers thus. I am not good nor bad  
enough,

Not Christ nor Cain, yet even Cain was  
saved

From Hate like this. Let me but totter  
back!

Perhaps I shall elude those jeers which creep

Into my very brain, and shut these  
scorched

Eyelids and keep those mocking faces out.

Listen, Aprile! I am very calm:  
Be not deceived, there is no passion here  
Where the blood leaps like an imprisoned  
thing:

I am calm: I will exterminate the race!  
Enough of that: 'tis said and it shall be.  
And now be merry: safe and sound am I  
Who broke through their best ranks to get  
at you.

And such a havoc, such a rout, Aprile!  
*Fest.* Have you no thought, no memory  
for me,

Aureole? I am so wretched—my pure  
Michal

Is gone, and you alone are left me now,  
And even you forget me. Take my hand—  
Lean on me thus. Do you not know me,  
Aureole?

*Par.* Festus, my own friend, you are  
come at last?

As you say, 'tis an awful enterprise;  
But you believe I shall go through with it:

'Tis like you, and I thank you. Thank him  
for me,

Dear Michal! See how bright St. Saviour's  
spire

Flames in the sunset; all its figures quaint  
Gay in the glancing light: you might con-  
ceive them

A troop of yellow-vested white-haired Jews  
Bound for their own land where redemp-  
tion dawns.

*Fest.* Not that blest time—not our  
youth's time, dear God!

*Par.* Ha—stay! true, I forget—all is  
done since,

And he is come to judge me. How he  
speaks,

How calm, how well! yes, it is true, all true;  
All quackery; all deceit; myself can laugh

The first at it, if you desire: but still  
You know the obstacles which taught me  
tricks

So foreign to my nature—envy and hate,  
Blind opposition, brutal prejudice,

Bald ignorance—what wonder if I sunk  
To humour men the way they most ap-  
proved?

My cheats were never palmed on such as  
you,

Dear Festus! I will kneel if you require me,  
Impart the meagre knowledge I possess,

Explain its bounded nature, and avow  
My insufficiency—what'er you will:

Give the fight up: let there be an end,  
A privacy, an obscure nook for me.

I want to be forgotten even by God.  
But if that cannot be, dear Festus, lay me,

When I shall die, within some narrow  
grave,

Not by itself,—for that would be too proud—

But where such graves are thickest; let it look

Nowise distinguished from the hillocks round,

So that the peasant at his brother's bed  
May tread upon my own and know it not;  
And we shall all be equal at the last,

Or classed according to life's natural ranks,  
Fathers, sons, brothers, friends—not rich,  
nor wise,

Nor gifted: lay me thus, then say, 'He lived  
'Too much advanced before his brother  
men;

'They kept him still in front: 'twas for  
their good

'But yet a dangerous station. It were  
strange

'That he should tell God he had never  
ranked

'With men: so, here at least he is a man,'  
*Fest.* That God shall take thee to his  
breast, dear spirit,

Unto his breast, be sure! and here on earth  
Shall spendour sit upon thy name for ever.

Sun! all the heaven is glad for thee: what  
care

If lower mountains light their snowy  
phases

At thine effulgence, yet acknowledge not  
The source of day? Their theft shall be  
their bale:

For after-ages shall retrack thy beams,  
And put aside the crowd of busy ones  
And worship thee alone—the master-  
mind,

The thinker, the explorer, the creator!  
Then, who should sneer at the convulsive  
throes

With which thy deeds were born, would  
scorn as well

The sheet of winding subterranean fire  
Which, pent and writhing, sends no less at  
last

Huge islands up amid the simmering sea.  
Behold thy might in me! thou hast infused  
Thy soul in mine; and I am grand as thou,  
Seeing I comprehend, thee—I so simple,  
Thou so august. I recognize thee first;  
I saw thee rise, I watched thee early and  
late,

And though no glance reveal thou dost  
accept

My homage—thus no less I proffer it,  
And bid thee enter gloriously thy rest.

*Par.* Festus!

*Fest.* I am for noble Aureole, God!  
I am upon his side, come weal or woe;  
His portion shall be mine. He has done  
well.

I would have sinned, had I been strong  
enough,

As he has sinned. Reward him or I waive

Reward! If thou canst find no place for  
him,

He shall be king elsewhere, and I will be  
His slave for ever. There are two of us.

*Par.* Dear Festus!

*Fest.* Here, dear Aureole! ever  
by you!

*Par.* Nay, speak on, or I dream again.  
Speak on!

Some story, anything—only your voice.  
I shall dream else. Speak on! ay, leaning  
so!

*Fest.* Thus the Mayre glideth

Where my Love abideth.

Sleep's no softer: it proceeds

On through lawns, on through meads,

On and on, whate'er befall,

Meandering and musical,

Though the niggard pasturage

Bears not on its shaven ledge

Aught but weeds and waving grasses

To view the river as it passes,

Save here and there a scanty patch

Of primroses too faint to catch

A weary bee.

*Par.* More, more; say on!

*Fest.* And scarce it pushes

Its gentle way through strangling  
rushes

Where the glossy kingfisher

Flutters when noon-heats are near,

Glad the shelving banks to shun,

Red and steaming in the sun,

Where the shrew-mouse with pale  
throat

Burrows, and the speckled stoat;

Where the quick sandpipers flit

In and out the marl and grit

That seems to breed them, brown as  
they;

Nought disturbs its quiet way,

Save some lazy stork that springs,

Trailing & with legs and wings,

Whom the shy fox from the hill

Rouses, creep he ne'er so still.

*Par.* My heart! they loose my heart,  
those simple words;

Its darkness passes, which nought else  
could touch:

Like some dark snake that force may not  
expel,

Which glideth out to music sweet and low.  
What were you doing when your voice

broke through

A chaos of ugly images? You, indeed!

Are you alone here?

*Fest.* All alone: you know me?

Thy cell?

*Par.* An unexceptionable vault:

Good brick and stone: the bats kept out,  
the rats

Kept in: a snug nook: how should I mis-  
take it?

*Fest.* But wherefore am I here?



*Par.* Ah, well remembered!  
Why, for a purpose—for a purpose, Festus!  
'Tis like me: here I trifle while time fleets,  
And this occasion, lost, will ne'er return.  
You are here to be instructed. I will tell  
God's message; but I have so much to say,  
I fear to leave half out. All is confused  
No doubt; but doubtless you will learn in  
time.

He would not else have brought you here:  
no doubt

I shall see clearer soon.

*Fest.* Tell me but this—  
You are not in despair?

*Par.* I? and for what?  
*Fest.* Alas, alas! he knows not, as I  
feared!

*Par.* What is it you would ask me with  
that earnest

Dear searching face?

*Fest.* How feel you, Aureole?

*Par.* Well:

Well. 'Tis a strange thing: I am dying,  
Festus,

And now that fast the storm of life sub-  
sides,

I first perceive how great the whirl has been.

I was calm then, who am so dizzy now—

Calm in the thick of the tempest, but no less

A partner of its motion and mixed up

With its career. The hurricane is spent,

And the good boat speeds through the

brightening weather;

But is it earth or sea that heaves below?

The gulf rolls like a meadow-swell, o'er-  
strewn

With ravaged boughs and remnants of the  
shore;

And now some islet, loosened from the  
land,

Swims past with all its trees, sailing to  
ocean;

And now the air is full of upturned canes,  
Light strippings from the fan-trees, tamar-  
isks

Unrooted, with their birds still clinging to  
them.

All high in the wind. Even so my varied  
life

Drifts by me; I am young, old, happy, sad,

Hoping, desponding, acting, taking rest,

And all at once: that is, those past condi-  
tions

Float back at once on me. If I select

Some special epoch from the crowd, 'tis  
but

To will, and straight the rest dissolve away,

And only that particular state is present

With all its long-forgotten circumstance

Distinct and vivid as at first—myself

A careless looker-on and nothing more,

Indifferent and amused, but nothing more.

And this is death: I understand it all.

New being waits me; new perceptions must

Be born in me before I plunge therein;

Which last is Death's affair; and while I  
speak,

Minute by minute he is filling me

With power; and while my foot is on the  
threshold

Of boundless life—the doors unopened yet,  
All preparations not complete within—

I turn, new knowledge upon old events,  
And the effect is . . . but I must not tell;

It is not lawful. Your own turn will come

One day. Wait, Festus! You will die like  
me.

*Fest.* 'Tis of that past life that I burn to  
hear.

*Par.* You wonder 'it engages me just  
now?

In truth, I wonder too. What's life to me?  
Where'er I look is fire, where'er I listen

Music, and where I tend bliss evermore.

Yet how can I refrain? 'Tis a refined

Delight to view those chances,—one last  
view.

I am so near the perils I escape,

That I must play with them and turn them  
over,

To feel how fully they are past and gone.

Still, it is like, some further cause exists

For this peculiar mood—some hidden  
purpose;

Did I not tell you something of it, Festus?

I had it fast, but it has somehow slip't

Away from me; it will return anon.

*Fest.* (Indeed his cheek seems young  
again, his voice

Complete with its old tones: that little  
laugh

Concluding every phrase, with upturned  
eye,

As though one stooped above his head to  
whom

He looked for confirmation and approval,

Where was it gone so long, so well pre-  
served?

Then, the fore-finger pointing as he speaks,

Like one who traces in an open book

The matter he declares; 'tis many a year

Since I remarked it last: and this in him,  
But now a ghastly wreck!)

And can it be,

Dear Aureole, you have then found out at  
last

That worldly things are utter vanity?

That man is made for weakness, and should  
wait

In patient ignorance, till God appoint . . .

*Par.* Ha, the purpose: the true purpose:  
that is it!

How could I fail to apprehend! You here,

I thus! But no more trifling; I see all,

I know all: my last mission shall be done

If strength suffice. No trifling! Stay; this  
posture

Hardly befits one thus about to speak:

I will arise.

*Fest.* Nay, Aureole, are you wild?  
You cannot leave your couch.

*Par.* No help; no help;  
Not even your hand. So! there, I stand  
once more!

Speak from a couch? I never lectured thus.  
My gown—the scarlet lined with fur; now  
put

The chain about my neck; my signet-ring  
is still upon my hand, I think—even so;  
Last, my good sword; ah, trusty Azoth,  
leapest

Beneath thy master's grasp for the last  
time?

This couch shall be my throne: I bid these  
walls

Be consecrate, this wretched cell become  
A shrine, for here God speaks to men  
through me.

Now, Festus, I am ready to begin.

*Fest.* I am dumb with wonder.

*Par.* Listen, therefore, Festus!  
There will be time enough, but none to  
spare.

I must content myself with telling only  
The most important points. You doubtless  
feel

That I am happy, Festus; very happy.

*Fest.* 'Tis no delusion which uplifts him  
thus!

Then you are pardoned, Aureole, all your  
sin?

*Par.* Ay, pardoned: yet why pardoned?

*Fest.* 'Tis God's praise  
That man is bound to seek, and you . . .

*Par.* Have lived!  
We have to live alone to set forth well  
God's praise. 'Tis true, I sinned much, as  
I thought,

And in effect need mercy, for I strove  
To do that very thing; but, do your best  
Or worst, praise rises, and will rise for ever.  
Pardon from him, because of praise de-  
nied—

Who calls me to himself to exalt himself?  
He might laugh as I laugh!

*Fest.* But all comes  
To the same thing. 'Tis fruitless for man-  
kind

To fret themselves with what concerns  
them not;

They are no use that way: they should lie  
down

Content as God has made them, nor go  
mad

In thrivelless cares to better what is ill.

*Par.* No, no; mistake me not; let me not  
work

More harm than I have worked! This is  
my case:

If I go joyous back to God, yet bring

No offering, if I render up my soul  
Without the fruits it was ordained to bear,

If I appear the better to love God

For sin, as one who has no claim on him,—  
Be not deceived! It may be surely thus

With me, while higher prizes still await  
The mortal persevering to the end.

Beside I am not all so valueless:

I have been something, though too soon I  
left

Following the instincts of that happy time.

*Fest.* What happy time? For God's  
sake, for man's sake,

What time was happy? All I hope to know  
That answer will decide. What happy  
time?

*Par.* When but the time I vowed myself  
to man?

*Fest.* Great God, thy judgments are in-  
scrutable!

*Par.* Yes, it was in me; I was born for  
it—

I, Paracelsus: it was mine by right.

Doubtless a searching and impetuous soul  
Might learn from its own motions that  
some task

Like this awaited it about the world;  
Might seek somewhere in this blank life of  
ours

For fit delights to stay its longings vast;  
And, grappling Nature, so prevail on her  
To fill the creature full she dared thus  
frame

Hungry for joy; and, bravely tyrannous,  
Grow in demand, still craving more and  
more,

And make each joy conceded prove a  
pledge

Of other joy to follow—bating nought  
Of its desires, still seizing fresh pretence  
To turn the knowledge and the rapture  
wrung

As an extreme, last boon, from destiny,  
Into occasion for new covetings,  
New strifes, new triumphs:—doubtless a  
strong soul,

Alone, unaided might attain to this,  
So glorious is our nature, so august  
Man's inborn uninstructed impulses,  
His naked spirit so majestic!

But this was born in me; I was made so;  
Thus much time saved: the feverish ap-  
petites,

The tumult of unproved desire, the un-  
aimed

Uncertain yearnings, aspirations blind,  
Distrust, mistake, and all that ends in tears  
Were saved me; thus I entered on my  
course.

You may be sure I was not all exempt  
From human trouble; just so much of  
doubt

As bade me plant a surer foot upon  
The sun-road, kept my eye unruined 'mid  
The fierce and flashing splendour, set my  
heart

Trembling so much as warned me I stood  
there

On sufferance—not to idly gaze, but cast  
Light on a darkling race; save for that  
doubt,

I stood at first where all aspire at last  
To stand: the secret of the world was mine.  
I knew, I felt, (perception unexpressed,  
Uncomprehended by our narrow thought,  
But somehow felt and known in every shift  
And change in the spirit,—nay, in every  
pore

Of the body, even.)—what God is, what we  
are,

What life is—how God tastes an infinite  
joy

In infinite ways—one everlasting bliss,  
From whom all being emanates, all power  
Proceeds; in whom is life for evermore,  
Yet whom existence in its lowest form  
Includes; where dwells enjoyment there is  
he:

With still a flying point of bliss remote,  
A happiness in store afar, a sphere  
Of distant glory in full view; thus climbs  
Pleasure its heights for ever and for ever.  
The centre-fire heaves underneath the  
earth,

And the earth changes like a human face;  
The molten ore bursts up among the rocks,  
Winds into the stone's heart, outbranches  
bright

In hidden mines, spots barren river-beds,  
Crumbles into fine sand where sunbeams  
bask—

God joys therein. The wroth sea's waves  
are edged

With foam, white as the bitten lip of hate,  
When, in the solitary waste, strange groups  
Of young volcanos come up, cyclops-like,  
Staring together with their eyes on flame—  
God tastes a pleasure in their uncouth  
pride.

Then all is still; earth is a wintry clod:  
But spring-wind, like a dancing psaltress,  
passes

Over its breast to waken it, rare verdure  
Buds tenderly upon rough banks, between  
The withered tree-roots and the cracks of  
frost,

Like a smile striving with a wrinkled face;  
The grass grows bright, the boughs are  
swoln with blooms

Like chrysalids impatient for the air,  
The shining dorrs are busy, beetles run  
Along the furrows, ants make their ado;  
Above, birds fly in merry flocks, the lark  
Soars up and up, shivering for very joy;  
Afar the ocean sleeps; white fishing-gulls  
Flit where the strand is purple with its tribe  
Of nested limpets; savage creatures seek  
Their loves in wood and plain—and God  
renews

His ancient rapture. Thus he dwells in all,

From life's minute beginnings, up at last  
To man—the consummation of this  
scheme

Of being, the completion of this sphere  
Of life: whose attributes had here and  
there

Been scattered o'er the visible world before,  
Asking to be combined, dim fragments  
meant

To be united in some wondrous whole,  
Imperfect qualities throughout creation,  
Suggesting some one creature yet to make,  
Some point where all those scattered rays  
should meet

Convergent in the faculties of man.  
Power—neither put forth blindly, nor con-  
trolled

Calmly by perfect knowledge; to be used  
At risk, inspired or checked by hope and  
fear:

Knowledge—not intuition, but the slow  
Uncertain fruit of an enhancing toil,  
Strengthened by love: love—not serenely  
pure,

But strong from weakness, like a chance-  
sown plant

Which, cast on stubborn soil, puts forth  
changed buds

And softer stains, unknown in happier  
climes;

Love which endures and doubts and is op-  
pressed

And cherished, suffering much and much  
sustained,

And blind, oft-failing, yet believing love,  
A half-enlightened, often-chequered  
trust:—

Hints and previsions of which faculties,  
Are strewn confusedly everywhere about  
The inferior natures, and all lead up higher,  
All shape out dimly the superior race,  
The heir of hopes too fair to turn out false,  
And man appears at last. So far the seal  
Is put on life; one stage of being complete,  
One scheme wound up: and from the  
grand result

A supplementary reflux of light,  
Illustrates all the inferior grades, explains  
Each back step in the circle. Not alone  
For their possessor dawn those qualities,  
But the new glory mixes with the heaven  
And earth; man, once descried, imprints  
for ever

His presence on all lifeless things: the  
winds

Are henceforth voices, wailing or a shout,  
A querulous mutter or a quick gay laugh,  
Never a senseless gust now man is born.  
The herded pines commune and have deep  
thoughts,

A secret they assemble to discuss  
When the sun drops behind their trunks  
which glare

Like grates of hell: the peerless cup afloat

Of the lake-lily is an urn, some nymph  
Swims bearing high above her head: no  
bird

Whistles unseen, but through the gaps  
above

That let light in upon the gloomy woods,  
A shape peeps from the breezy forest-top,  
Arch with small puckered mouth and  
mocking eye.

The morn has enterprise, deep quiet droops  
With evening, triumph takes the sunset  
hour,

Voluptuous transport ripens with the corn  
Beneath a warm moon like a happy face:  
—And this to fill us with regard for man.  
With apprehension of his passing worth,  
Desire to work his proper nature out,  
And ascertain his rank and final place,  
For these things tend still upward, pro-  
gress is

The law of life, man is not Man as yet.  
Nor shall I deem his object served, his end  
Attained, his genuine strength put fairly  
forth,

While only here and there a star dispels  
The darkness, here and there a towering  
mind

O'erlooks its prostrate fellows: when the  
host

Is out at once to the despair of night,  
When all mankind alike is perfected,  
Equal in full-blown powers—then, not till  
then,

I say, begins man's general infancy.  
For wherefore make account of feverish  
starts

Of restless members of a dormant whole,  
Impatient nerves which quiver while the  
body

Slumbers as in a grave? Oh long ago  
The brow was twitched, the tremulous lids  
astir,

The peaceful mouth disturbed; half-  
uttered speech

Ruffled the lip, and then the teeth were  
set,

The breath drawn sharp, the strong right-  
hand clenched stronger,

As it would pluck a lion by the jaw;  
The glorious creature laughed out even in  
sleep!

But when full roused, each giant-limb  
awake,

Each sinew strung, the great heart pulsing  
fast,

He shall start up and stand on his own  
earth,

Then shall his long triumphant march  
begin,

Thence shall his being date,—thus wholly  
roused,

What he achieves shall be set down to him.  
When all the race is perfected alike  
As man, that is; all tended to mankind,

And, man produced, all has its end thus  
far:

But in completed man begins anew  
A tendency to God. Prognostics told  
Man's near approach; so in man's self arise  
August anticipations, symbols, types  
Of a dim splendour ever on before.  
In that eternal circle life pursues.

Formen begin to pass their nature's bound,  
And find new hopes and cares which fast  
supplant

Their proper joys and griefs; they grow too  
great

For narrow creeds of right and wrong,  
which fade

Before the unmeasured thirst for good:  
while peace

Rises within them ever more and more.  
Such men are even now upon the earth,  
Serene amid the half-formed creatures  
round

Who should be saved by them and joined  
with them.

Such was my task, and I was born to it—  
Free, as I said but now, from much that  
chains

Spirits, high-dowered but limited and  
vexed

By a divided and delusive aim,  
A shadow mocking a reality

Whose truth avails not wholly to disperse  
The flitting mimic called up by itself,  
And so remains perplexed and nigh put  
out

By its fantastic fellow's wavering gleam.  
I, from the first, was never cheated thus;

I never fashioned out a fancied good  
Distinct from man's; a service to be done,  
A glory to be ministered unto

With powers put forth at man's expense,  
withdrawn

From labouring in his behalf; a strength  
Denied that might avail him. I cared not

Lest his success ran counter to success  
Elsewhere: for God is glorified in man,

And to man's glory vowed I soul and limb.  
Yet, constituted thus, and thus endowed,

I failed: I gazed on power till I grew blind.  
Power; I could not take my eyes from that:  
That only, I thought, should be preserved,  
increased

At any risk, displayed, struck out at once—  
The sign and note and character of man.

I saw no use in the past: only a scene  
Of degradation, ugliness and tears,

The record of disgraces best forgotten,  
A sullen page in human chronicles

Fitted to erase. I saw no cause why man  
Should not stand all-sufficient even now,

Or why his annals should be forced to  
tell

That once the tide of light, about to break  
Upon the world, was sealed within its  
spring:

I would have had one day, one moment's  
 space,  
 Change man's condition, push each slum-  
 bering claim  
 Of mastery o'er the elemental world  
 At once to full maturity, then roll  
 Oblivion o'er the work, and hide from man  
 What night had ushered morn. Not so,  
 dear child  
 Of after-days, wilt thou reject the past  
 Big with deep warnings of the proper  
 tenure  
 By which thou hast the earth: for thee the  
 present  
 Shall have distinct and trembling beauty,  
 seen  
 Beside that past's own shade when, in  
 relief,  
 Its brightness shall stand out: nor yet on  
 thee  
 Shall burst the future, as successive zones  
 Of several wonder open on some spirit  
 Flying secure and glad from heaven to  
 heaven:  
 But thou shalt painfully attain to joy,  
 While hope and fear and love shall keep  
 thee man!  
 All this was hid from me: as one by one  
 My dreams grew dim, my wide aims cir-  
 cumscribed,  
 As actual good within my reach decreased,  
 While obstacles sprung up this way and  
 that  
 To keep me from effecting half the sum,  
 Small as it proved; as objects, mean within  
 The primal aggregate, seemed, even the  
 least,  
 Itself a match for my concentrated strength—  
 What wonder if I saw no way to shun  
 Despair? The power I sought for man,  
 seemed God's.  
 In this conjuncture, as I prayed to die,  
 A strange adventure made me know, one  
 sin  
 Had spotted my career from its uprise;  
 I saw Aprile—my Aprile there!  
 And as the poor melodious wretch dis-  
 burdened  
 His heart, and moaned his weakness in my  
 ear,  
 I learned my own deep error; love's un-  
 doing  
 Taught me the worth of love in man's  
 estate,  
 And what proportion love should hold  
 with power  
 In his right constitution; love preceding  
 Power, and with much power, always  
 much more love;  
 Love still too straitened in his present  
 means,  
 And earnest for new power to set love free.  
 I learned this, and supposed the whole was  
 learned:

And thus, when men received with stupid  
 wonder  
 My first revealings, would have wor-  
 shipped me,  
 And I despised and loathed their proffered  
 praise—  
 When, with awakened eyes, they took re-  
 venge  
 For past credulity in casting shame  
 On my real knowledge, and I hated them—  
 It was not strange I saw no good in  
 man,  
 To overbalance all the wear and waste  
 Of faculties, displayed in vain, but born  
 To prosper in some better sphere: and  
 why?  
 In my own heart love had not been made  
 wise  
 To trace love's faint beginnings in man-  
 kind,  
 To know even hate is but a mask of love's,  
 To see a good in evil, and a hope  
 In ill-success; to sympathize, be proud  
 Of their half-reasons, faint aspirings, dim  
 Struggles for truth, their poorest falla-  
 cies,  
 Their prejudice and fears and cares and  
 doubts;  
 All with a touch of nobleness, despite  
 Their error, upward tending all though  
 weak,  
 Like plants in mines which never saw the  
 sun,  
 But dream of him, and guess where he may  
 be,  
 And do their best to climb and get to him.  
 All this I knew not, and I failed. Let  
 men  
 Regard me, and the poet dead long ago  
 Who loved too rashly; and shape forth a  
 third  
 And better-tempered spirit, warned by  
 both:  
 As from the over-radiant star too mad  
 To drink the life-springs, beamless thence  
 itself—  
 And the dark orb which borders the abyss,  
 Ingulfed in icy night,—might have its  
 course  
 A temperate and equidistant world.  
 Meanwhile, I have done well, though not  
 all well.  
 As yet men cannot do without contempt;  
 'Tis for their good, and therefore fit  
 awhile  
 That they reject the weak, and scorn the  
 false,  
 Rather than praise the strong and true, in  
 me:  
 But after, they will know me. If I stoop  
 Into a dark tremendous sea of cloud,  
 It is but for a time; I press God's lamp  
 Close to my breast; its splendour, soon or  
 late,

Will pierce the gloom: I shall emerge one day.

You understand me? I have said enough?

*Fest.* Now die, dear Aureole!

*Par.* Festus, let my hand—

This hand, *lie* in your own, my own true friend!

*Aprile!* Hand in hand with you, *Aprile!*

*Fest.* And this was Paracelsus!

### NOTE

THE liberties I have taken with my subject are very trifling; and the reader may slip the foregoing scenes between the leaves of any memoir of Paracelsus he pleases, by way of commentary. To prove this, I subjoin a popular account, translated from the *Biographie Universelle*, Paris, 1822, which I select, not as the best, certainly, but as being at hand, and sufficiently concise for my purpose. I also append a few notes, in order to correct those parts which do not bear out my own view of the character of Paracelsus; and have incorporated with them a notice or two, illustrative of the poem itself.

\*PARACELSUS (Philippus Aureolus Theophrastus Bombastus ab Hohenheim) was born in 1493 at Einsiedeln (1), a little town in the canton of Schwyz, some leagues distant from Zurich. His father, who exercised the profession of medicine at Villach in Carinthia, was nearly related to George Bombast de Hohenheim, who became afterward Grand Prior of the Order of Malta: consequently Paracelsus could not spring from the dregs of the people, as Thomas Erastus, his sworn enemy, pretends.\* It appears that his elementary education was much neglected, and that he spent part of his youth in pursuing the life common to the travelling *literati* of the age; that is to say, in wandering from country to country, predicting the future by astrology and cheiromancy, evoking apparitions, and practising the different operations of magic and alchemy, in which he had been initiated whether by his father or by various ecclesiastics, among the number of whom he particularizes the Abbot Trithemius (2), and many German bishops.

As Paracelsus displays everywhere an ignorance of the rudiments of the most ordinary knowledge, it is not probable that he ever studied seriously in the schools; he contented himself with visiting the Universities of Germany, France, and Italy; and in spite of his boasting himself to have been the ornament of those institutions, there is no proof of his having legally acquired the title of Doctor, which he assumes. It is only known that he applied himself long, under the direction of the wealthy Sigismond Fugger of Schwatz, to the discovery of the Magnum Opus.

Paracelsus travelled among the mountains of Bohemia, in the East, and in Sweden, in order to inspect the labours of the miners, to be initiated in the mysteries of the oriental adepts, and to observe the secrets of nature and the famous mountain of loadstone (3). He professes also to have visited Spain, Portugal, Prussia, Poland, and Transylvania; everywhere communicating freely, not

\* I shall disguise M. Renaudin's next sentence a little. "Hic (Erastus sc.) Paracelsum trimum a milite quodam, alii a supsectum ferunt: constat imbricem illum, mulierumque osorem fuisse." A standing High-Dutch joke in those days at the expense of a number of learned men, as may be seen by referring to such rubbish as Melander's *Jocoseria*, etc. In the prints from his portrait by Tintoretto, painted a year before his death, Paracelsus is *barbatus*, at all events. But Erastus was never without a good reason for his faith—e.g. 'Helvetium fuisse (Paracelsum) vix credo, vix enim ea regio tale monstrum edidit.' (*De Medicina Nova*.)

merely with the physicians, but the old women, charlatans and conjurers of these several lands. It is even believed that he extended his journeyings as far as Egypt and Tartary, and that he accompanied the son of the Khan of the Tartars to Constantinople, for the purpose of obtaining the secret of the tincture of Trismegistus from a Greek who inhabited that capital.

The period of his return to Germany is unknown: it is only certain that, at about the age of thirty-three, many astonishing cures which he wrought on eminent personages procured him such a celebrity, that he was called in 1526, on the recommendation of Ecolampadius (4), to fill a chair of physic and surgery at the University of Basil. There Paracelsus began by burning publicly in the amphitheatre the works of Avicenna and Galen, assuring his auditors that the latches of his shoes were more instructed than those two physicians; that all Universities, all writers put together, were less gifted than the hairs of his beard and of the crown of his head; and that, in a word, he was to be regarded as the legitimate monarch of medicine. "You shall follow me," cried he, "you, Avicenna, Galen, Rhasis, Montagnana, Mesues, you, gentlemen of Paris, Montpellier, Germany, Cologne, Vienna,† and whomsoever the Rhine and Danube nourish; you who inhabit the isles of the sea; you, likewise, Dalmatians, Athenians; thou, Arab; thou, Greek; thou, Jew: all shall follow me, and the monarchy shall be mine."‡

But at Basil it was speedily perceived that the new Professor was no better than an egregious quack. Scarcely a year elapsed before his lectures had fairly driven away an audience incapable of comprehending their emphatic jargon. That which above all contributed to sully his reputation was the debauched life he led. According to the testimony of Oporinus, who lived two years in his intimacy, Paracelsus scarcely ever ascended the lecture-desk unless half drunk, and only dictated to his secretaries when in a state of intoxication: if summoned to attend the sick, he rarely proceeded thither without previously drenching himself with wine. He was accustomed to retire to bed without changing his clothes; sometimes he spent the night in pot-houses with peasants, and in the morning

† Erastus, who relates this, here oddly remarks, "mirum quod non et Garamantos, Indos et *Anglos* adjunxit." Not so wonderful neither, if we believe what another adversary 'had heard somewhere'—that all Paracelsus' system came of his pillaging 'Anglum quendam, Rogerium Bacchonem.'

‡ See his works *passim*. I must give one specimen:—Somebody had been styling him "Luther alter." And why not? (he asks, as he well might). "Luther is abundantly learned, therefore you hate him and me; but we are at least a match for you.—Nam et contra vos et vestros universos principes Avicennam, Galenum, Aristotelem, etc. me satis superque munitum esse novi. Et vertex iste meus calvus ac depilatus multo plura et sublimiora novit quam vester vel Avicenna vel universæ academia. Proditte, et signum date, qui viri sitis, quid roboris habeatis? quid autem sitis? Doctores et magistri, pediculos pectentes et fricantes podicem." (*Frag. Med.*)

## PARACELSUS

knew no longer what he was about; and, nevertheless, up to the age of twenty-five his only drink had been water (5).

'At length, fearful of being punished for a serious outrage on a magistrate (6), he fled from Basil towards the end of the year 1527, and took refuge in Alsatia, whither he caused Oporinus to follow with his chemical apparatus.

'He then entered once more upon the career of ambulatory theosophist.\* Accordingly we find him at Colmar in 1528; at Nuremberg in 1529; at St. Gall in 1531; at Pfeffers in 1535; and at Augsburg in 1536: he next made some stay in Moravia, where he still further compromised his reputation by the loss of many distinguished patients, which compelled him to betake himself to Vienna; from thence he passed into Hungary; and in 1538 was at Villach, where he dedicated his *Chronicle* to the States of Carinthia, in gratitude for the many kindnesses with which they had honoured his father. Finally, from Mindelheim, which he visited in 1540, Paracelsus proceeded to Salzburg, where he died in the Hospital of St. Stephen (*Sebastian* is meant), Sept. 24, 1541.—(Here follows a criticism on his writings, which I omit.)

(1) *Paracelsus* would seem to be a fantastic version of *Von Hohenheim*; Einsiedeln is the Latinized Eremus, whence Paracelsus is sometimes called, as in the correspondence of Erasmus, *Eremita*; Bombast, his proper name, probably acquired, from the characteristic phraseology of his lectures, that unlucky signification which it has ever since retained.

(2) Then Bishop of Spanheim, and residing at Würzburg in Franconia; a town situated in a grassy fertile country, whence its name, *Herbipolis*. He was much visited there by learned men, as may be seen by his *Epistola Familiæ*, Hag. 1536: among others, by his staunch friend Cornelius Agrippa, to whom he dates thence, in 1510, a letter in answer to the dedicatory epistle prefixed to the treatise *De Occult. Philosoph.*, which last contains the following ominous allusion to Agrippa's sojourn: 'Quum nuper tecum, R. P. in cœnobio tuo apud Herbipolim aliquamdiu conversatus, multa de chymicis, multa de magicis, multa de cabalisticis, cæterisque quæ adhuc in occulto delitescent, arcanis scientiis atque artibus una consulissemus,' etc.

(3) 'Inexplebilis illa aviditas naturæ perscrutandi secreta et reconditarum suppellectile scientiarum acumine locupletandi, uno eodemque loco diu persistere non patiebatur, sed Mercurii instar, omnes terras, nationes et urbes perlustrandis igniculos supponebat, ut cum viris naturæ scrutatoribus, chymicis præsertim, ore tenus conferret, et quæ diuturnis laboribus nocturnisque vigiliis invenerant una vel altera communicatione obtineret.' (*Bitisius in Præfat.*) 'Patris auxilio primum, deinde propria industria doctissimos viros in Germania, Italia, Gallia, Hispania, aliisque Europæ regionibus, nactus est præceptores; quorum liberali doctrina, et potissimum propria inquisitione ut

qui esset ingenio acutissimo ac fere divino, tantum profecit, ut multi testati sint, in universa philosophia, tam ardua, tam arcana et abdita eruisse mortalium neminem.' (Melch. Adam. in *Vit. Germ. Medic.*) 'Paracelsus qui in intima naturæ viscera sic penitus introierit, metallorum stirpiumque vires et facuities tam incredibili ingenii acumine exploraverit ac præviderit, ad morbos omnes vel desperatos et opinione hominum insanabiles percurandum; ut cum Theophrasto nam primum medicina perfectæque videtur.' (*Petri Rami Orat. de Basilea.*) His passion for wandering is best described in his own words: 'Ecce amatorem adolescentem difficillimi itineris haud piget, ut venustam saltem puellam vel fœminam aspiciat: quanto minus nobilissimum artium amore laboris ac cujuslibet tædii pigeat.'? etc. (*Defensiones Septem adversus Amulo suos.* 1573. Def. 4ta. *De peregrinationibus et exilio.*)

(4) The reader may remember that it was in conjunction with Ecclampadius, then Divinity Professor at Basil, that Zuinglius published in 1528 an answer to Luther's Confession of Faith; and that both proceeded in company to the subsequent conference with Luther and Melancthon at Marburg. Their letters fill a large volume.—*D. D. Johannis Ecclampadii et Huldrici Zuinglii Epistolarum*, lib. quatuor, Bas. 1536. It must be also observed that Zuinglius began to preach in 1516, and at Zurich in 1519, and that in 1525 the Mass was abolished in the cantons. 'The tenets of Ecclampadius were supposed to be more evangelical than those up to that period maintained by the glorious German, and our brave Bishop Fisher attacked them as the fouler heresy:—'About this time arose out of Luther's school one Ecclampadius, like a mighty and fierce giant; who, as his master had gone beyond the Church, went beyond his master (or else it had been impossible he could have been reputed the better scholar), who denied the real presence; him, this worthy champion (the Bishop) sets upon, and with five books (like so many smooth stones taken out of the river that doth always run with living water) slays the Philistine; which five books were written in the year of our Lord 1526, at which time he had governed the see of Rochester twenty years.' (*Life of Bishop Fisher*, 1655.) Now, there is no doubt of the Protestantism of Paracelsus, Erasmus, Agrippa, etc., but the nonconformity of Paracelsus was always scandalous. L. Crasso (*Elogj d' Humini Letterati*, Ven. 1666) informs us that his books were excommunicated by the Church. Quenstedt (*de Pair. Doct.*) affirms 'nec tantum novæ medicinæ, verum etiam novæ theologiæ autor est.' Delrio, in his *Disquisit. Magicar.*, classes him among those 'partim atheos, partim hæreticos' (lib. i. cap. 3). 'Omnino tamen multa theologia in ejusdem scriptis plane atheismum olent, ac duriuscule sonant in auribus vere Christiani.' (*D. Gbrielis Claudii Schediasma de Tinct. Univ. Norimb.*, 1736.) I shall only add one more authority:—'Oporinus dicit se (Paracelsum) aliquando Lutherum et Papam, non minus quam nunc Galerum et Hippocratem redactum in ordinem minabatur, neque enim eorum qui hactenus in scripturam sacram scripsissent, sive veteres, sive recentiores, quenquam scripturæ nucleum recte eruisse, sed circa corticem et quasi membranam tantum hæere.' (*Th. Erastus, Disputat. de Med. Nova.*) These and similar notions had their due effect on Oporinus, who, says Zuingerus, in his *Theatrum*, 'longum valedixit ei (Paracelo), ne ob præceptoris, alioqui amicissimi, horrendas blas-

\* 'So migratory a life could afford Paracelsus but little leisure for application to books, and accordingly he informs us that for the space of ten years he never opened a single volume, and that his whole medical library was not composed of six sheets: in effect, the inventory drawn up after his death states that the only books which he left were the Bible, the New Testament, the Commentaries of St. Jerome on the Gospels, a printed volume on Medicine, and seven manuscripts.'

phemias ipse quoque aliquando pœnas Deo Opt. Max. lucret.'

(5) His defenders allow the drunkenness. Take a sample of their excuses: 'Gentis hoc, non viri vitium est, a Taciti seculo ad nostrum usque non interrupto filo devolutum, sinceritati forte Germanæ cœvum, et nescio an aliquo consanguinitatis vinculo iunctum.' (Bitiskius.) The other charges were chiefly trumped up by Oporinus: 'Domi, quod Oporinus amanuensis ejus saepe narravit, nunquam nisi potus ad explicanda sua accessit, atque in medio conclavi ad columnam *τετυφωμένος* assistens, apprehenso manibus capulo ensis, cujus *κόλασμα* hospitium præbuit, ut aiunt, spiritui familiari, imaginationes aut concepta sua protulit:—alii illud quod in capulo habuit, ab ipso Azoth appellatum, medicinam fuisse præstantissimam aut lapidem Philosophicum putant.' (Melch. Adam.) This famous sword was no laughing-matter in those days, and it is now a material feature in the popular idea of Paracelsus. I recollect a couple of allusions to it in our own literature, at the moment.

Ne had been known the Danish Gonswart,  
Or Paracelsus with his long sword.

*Vulpone*, act. ii. scene 2.

Bumbastus kept a devil's bird  
Shut in the pommel of his sword,  
That taught him all the cunning pranks  
Of past and future mountebanks.

*Hudibras*, part ii. cant. 3.

This Azoth was simply '*laudanum suum*.' But in his time he was commonly believed to possess the double tincture—the power of curing diseases and transmuting metals. Oporinus often witnessed, as he declares, both these effects, as did also Franciscus, the servant of Paracelsus, who describes, in a letter to Neander, a successful projection at which he was present, and the results of which, good golden ingots, were confided to his keeping. For the other quality, let the following notice vouch among many others:—'Degebat: Theophrastus Norimbergæ prociutus a medicentibus illius urbis, et vaniloquis deceptorque proclamatus, qui, ut laboranti famæ subveniat, viros quosdam auctoritatis summæ in Republica illa adit, et infamie amoliendæ, artique suæ asserendæ, specimen ejus pollicetur editurum, nullo stipendio vel accepto pretio, horum faciles præbentium aures jussu elephantiacos aliquot, a communione hominum cæterorum segregatos, et in valetudinarium detrusos, qui alieno arbitrio eliguntur, quos virtute singulari remedium suorum Theophrastus a fœda Græcorum lepra mundat, pristinaque sanitati restituit; conservat illustre harum curationum urbs in archivis suis testimonium.' (Bitiskius.)\* It is to be remarked that Oporinus afterwards repented of his treachery: 'Sed resipuit tandem, et quem vivum convitiis insectatus fuerat defunctum veneratione prosequutus, infames famæ præceptoris morsus in remorsus conscientie conversi penitentia, heu nimis tarda, vulnera clausere exanimi quæ spiranti inflixerant.' For these 'bites' of Opori-

\* The premature death of Paracelsus casts no manner of doubt on the fact of his having possessed the *Lixir Vitæ*: the alchemists have abundant reasons to adduce, from which I select the following, as explanatory of a property of the Tincture not calculated on by its votaries:—'Objectionem illam, quod Paracelsus non fuerit longævus, nonnulli quoque solvunt per rationes physicas: vitæ nimirum abreviationem fortasse talibus accidere posse, ob Tincturam frequentiore ac largiore dosi sumtam, dum a summe efficacæ et penetrabilis hujus virtute calor innatus quasi suffocatur.' (Gabrielis Clauderi Schediasma.)

nus, see *Disputat. Erastii*, and Andree Joscisci *Oratio de Vit. ob. Oport*; for the 'remorse', Mic. Toxita in *pref. Testamenti*, and Conringius (otherwise an enemy of Paracelsus), who says it was contained in a letter from Oporinus to Doctor Vegerus.†

Whatever the moderns may think of these marvellous attributes, the title of Paracelsus to be considered the father of modern chemistry is indisputable. Gerardus Vossius, *De Philoſoſa et Philoſophia sectis*, thus prefaces the ninth section of cap. 9 'De Chymia'—'Nobilem hanc medicinæ partem, diu sepultam avorum ætate, quasi ab orco revocavit Th. Paracelsus.' I suppose many hints lie scattered in his neglected books, which clever appropriators have since developed with applause. Thus, it appears from his treatise *De Phlebotomia*, and elsewhere, that he had discovered the circulation of the blood and the sanguification of the heart; as did after him Realdo Colombo, and still more perfectly Andrea Cesalpino of Arezzo, as Bayle and Bartoli observe. Even Lavater quotes a passage from his work, *De Natura Rerum*, on practical Physiognomy, in which the definitions and axioms are precise enough: he adds, 'though an astrological enthusiast, a man of prodigious genius.' See Holcroft's translation, vol. iii, p. 179.—'The Eyes.' While on the subject of the writings of Paracelsus, I may explain a passage in the third part of the Poem. He was, as I have said, unwilling to publish his works, but in effect did publish a vast number. Valentius (in *Præfat. in Paramyr*) declares 'quod ad librorum Paracelsi copiam attinet, audio, a Germanis prope trecentos recenseri.' 'O facunditas ingenii!' adds he, appositely. Many of these were, however, spurious; and Fred. Bitiskius gives his good edition (3 vols. fol. Gen. 1658) 'rejectis suppositis solo ejus nomine superbentibus quorum ingens circumfertur numerus.' The rest were 'charissimum et pretiosissimum authoris pignus, extorsum potius ab illo quam obtentum.' 'Jam minime eo volente atque jubente hæc ipsius scripta in lucem prodire videntur; quippe quæ muro inclusa ipso absente, servi cujusdam indicio, furto surrepta atque sublata sunt,' says Valentius. These have been the study of a host of commentators, amongst whose labours are most notable, Petri Severini, *Idea Medicinæ Philosophiæ*, Bas. 1571; Mic. Toxetis, *Onomastica*, Arp. 1574; Dornici, *Dict. Parac.*, Franc. 1584; and *Pi. Philoſoſ Compendium cum scholiis auctore Leone Suavio*. Paris. (This last, a good book.)

(6) A disgraceful affair. One Liechtenfels, a canon, having been rescued in *extremis* by the '*laudanum*' of Paracelsus, refused the stipulated fee, and was supported in his meanness by the authorities, whose interference Paracelsus would not brook. His own liberality was allowed by his bitterest foes, who found a ready solution of his indifference to profit in the aforesaid sword-handle and its guest. His freedom from the besetting sin of a profession he abhorred—(as he curiously says somewhere, 'Quis quæso deinceps honorem deferat professioni tali, quæ a tam facinorosis nebulonibus obitur et administratur?')—is recorded in his epitaph, which affirms—'Bona sua in pauperes distribuenda collocandaque erogavit,' *honoravit*, or *ordinavit*—for accounts differ.

† For a good defence of Paracelsus I refer the reader to Olaus Borrichius' treatise—*Hermelis. e. Sapientia vindicata*, 1674. Or, if he is no more learned than myself in such matters, I mention simply that Paracelsus introduced the use of Mercury and Laudanum.



# STRAFFORD

## A TRAGEDY

1837

DEDICATED, IN ALL AFFECTIONATE ADMIRATION,

TO

WILLIAM C. MACREADY

LONDON: April 23, 1837.

### PERSONS

CHARLES I.  
Earl of HOLLAND.  
Lord SAVILE.  
Sir HENRY VANE.  
WENTWORTH, Viscount WENTWORTH, Earl of  
STRAFFORD.  
JOHN PYM.  
JOHN HAMPDEN.  
The younger VANE.  
DENZIL HOLLIS.  
BENJAMIN RUDYARD.

NATHANIEL FIENNES.  
Earl of LOUDON.  
MAXWELL, *Usher of the Black Rod.*  
BALFOUR, *Constable of the Tower.*  
*A Puritan.*  
QUEEN HENRIETTA.  
LUCY PERCY, Countess of Carlisle.

*Presbyterians, Scots Commissioners, Adherents of  
Strafford, Secretaries, Officers of the Court, &c.  
Two of Strafford's children.*

### ACT I

SCENE I.—*A House near Whitehall.* HAMPDEN, HOLLIS, the younger VANE, RUDYARD, FIENNES and many of the *Presbyterian Party*; LOUDON and other *Scots Commissioners.*

Vane. I say, if he be here—

Rud. (And he is here!)

Hol. For England's sake let every man be still

Nor speak of him, so much as say his name,  
Till Pym rejoin us! Rudyard! Henry Vane!

One rash conclusion may decide our course  
And with it England's fate—think—  
England's fate!

Hampden, for England's sake they should be still!

Vane. You say so, Hollis? Well, I must be still.

It is indeed too bitter that one man,  
Any one man's mere presence, should suspend

England's combined endeavour: little need  
To name him!

Rud. For you are his brother, Hollis!

Hamp. Shame on you, Rudyard! time to tell him that

When he forgets the Mother of us all.

Rud. Do I forget her?

Hamp. You talk idle hate  
Against her foe: is that so strange a thing?  
Is hating Wentworth all the help she needs?

*A Puritan.* The Philistine strode, cursing  
as he went:

But David—five smooth pebbles from the  
brook

Within his scrip . . .

Rud. Be you as still as David!

Fien. Here's Rudyard not ashamed to wag a tongue

Stiff with ten years' disuse of Parliaments;

Why, when the last sat, Wentworth sat with us!

Rud. Let's hope for news of them now he returns—

He that was safe in Ireland, as we thought!  
—Bu. I'll abide Pym's coming.

Vane. Now, by Heaven,  
They may be cool who can, silent who will—

Some have a gift that way! Wentworth is here,

Here, and the King's safe closeted with him

Ere this. And when I think on all that's past

Since that man left us, how his single arm  
Rolled the advancing good of England back

And set the woeful past up in its place,  
Exalting Dagon where the Ark should be,—

How that man has made firm the fickle King

(Hampden, I will speak out!)—in aught he feared

To venture on before; taught tyranny  
Her dismal trade, the use of all her tools,  
To ply the scourge yet screw the gag so close

That strangled agony bleeds mute to death;

How he turns Ireland to a private stage  
For training infant villainies, new ways

Of wringing treasure out of tears and blood,  
Unheard oppressions nourished in the dark

To try how much man's nature can endure  
—If he dies under it, what harm? if not,  
Why, one more 'rick is added to the rest  
Worth a king's knowing, and what Ireland bears

England may learn to bear:—how all this while

That man has set himself to one dear task,  
The bringing Charles to relish more and more

Power, power without law, power and blood too

—Can I be still?

*Hamp.* For that you should be still.

*Vane.* Oh Hampden, then and now!

The year he left us,

The People in full Parliament could wrest  
The Bill of Rights from the reluctant King;  
And now, he'll find in an obscure small room

A stealthy gathering of great-hearted men  
That take up England's cause: England is here!

*Hamp.* And who despairs of England?

*Rud.* That do I,

If Wentworth comes to rule her. I am sick  
To think her wretched masters, Hamilton,  
The muckworm Cottington, 'he maniac  
Laud,

May yet be longed-for back again. I say,  
I do despair.

*Vane.* And, Rudyard, I'll say this—  
Which all true men say after me, not loud  
But solemnly and as you'd say a prayer!  
This King, who treads our England under-  
foot,

Has just so much . . . it may be fear or craft,  
As bids him pause at each fresh outrage;  
friends,

He needs some sterner hand to grasp his  
own,

Some voice to ask, 'Why shrink? Am I  
not by?'

Now, one whom England loved for serving  
her,

Found in his heart to say, 'I know where  
best

'The iron heel shall bruise her, for she leans  
'Upon me when you trample.' Witness,  
you!

So Wentworth heartened Charles, so  
England fell.

But inasmuch as life is hard to take

From England . . .

*Many Voices.* Go on, Vane! 'Tis we!  
said, Vane!

*Vane.* —Who has not so forgotten  
Runnymede!—

*Voices.* 'Tis well and bravely spoken,  
Vane! Go on!

*Vane.* — There are some little signs of  
late she knows

The ground no place for her. She glances  
round,

Wentworth has dropped the hand, is gone  
his way

On other service: what if she arise?

No! the King beckons, and beside him  
stands

The same bad man once more, with the  
same smile

And the game gesture. Now shall England  
crouch,

Or catch at us and rise?

*Voices.* The Renegade!

Haman! Ahithophel!

*Hamp.* Gentlemen of the North,

It was not thus the night your claims were  
urged,

And we pronounced the League and Cove-  
nant,

The cause of Scotland, England's cause as  
well:

Vane there, sat motionless the whole night  
through.

*Vane.* Hampden!

*Fien.* Stay, Vane!

*Lou.* Be just and patient, Vane!

*Vane.* Mind how you counsel patience,  
London! you

Have still a Parliament, and this your  
League

To back it; you are free in Scotland still:  
While we are brothers, hope's for England  
yet.

But know you wherefore Wentworth  
comes? to quench

This last of hopes? that he brings war with  
him?

Know you the man's self? what he dares?

*Lou.* We know,

All know—'tis nothing new.

*Vane.* And what's new, then,

In calling for his life? Why, Pym him-  
self—

You must have heard—ere Wentworth  
dropped our cause

He would see Pym first; there were many  
more

Strong on the people's side and friends of  
his,

Eliot that's dead, Rudyard and Hampden  
here,

But for these Wentworth cared not; only,  
Pym

He would see—Pym and he were sworn,  
'tis said,

To live and die together; so, they met  
At Greenwich. Wentworth, you are sure,

was long,

Specious enough, the devil's argument  
Lost nothing on his lips; he'd have Pym

own

A patriot could not play a purer part

Than follow in his track; the/ two combined

Might put down England. Well, Pym heard him out;

One glance—you know Pym's eye—one word was all:

'You leave us, Wentworth! while your head is on.

'I'll not leave you.'

*Hamp.* Has he left Wentworth, then?

Has England lost him? Will you let him speak,

Or put your crude surmises in his mouth? Away with this! Will you have Pym or Vane?

*Voices.* Wait Pym's arrival! Pym shall speak.

*Hamp.* Meanwhile

Let Loudon read the Parliament's report From Edinburgh: our last hope, as Vane

says,

Is in the stand it makes. Loudon!

*Vane.* No, no!

Silent I can be: not indifferent!

*Hamp.* Then each keep silence, praying God to spare

His anger, cast not England quite away In this her visitation!

*A Puritan.* Seven years long

The Midianite drove Israel into dens And caves. Till God sent forth a mighty man,

*PYM enters.*

Even Gideon!

*Pym.* Wentworth's come: nor sickness, care,

The ravaged body nor the ruined soul, More than the winds and waves that beat

his ship,

Could keep him from the King. He has not reached

Whitehall: they've hurried up a Council there

To lose no time and find him work enough. Where's Loudon? your Scots' Parliament . . .

*Lou.* Holds firm:

We were about to read reports.

*Pym.* The King

Has just dissolved your Parliament.

*Lou. and other Scots.* Great God!

An oath-breaker! Stand by us, England, then!

*Pym.* The King's too sanguine; doubtless Wentworth's here;

But still some little form might be kept up. *Hamp.* Now speak, Vane! Rudyard,

you had much to say!

*Hol.* The rumour's false, then . . .

*Pym.* Ay, the Court gives out

His own concerns have brought him back: I know

'Tis the King calls him. Wentworth supersedes

The tribe of Cottingtons and Hamiltons Whose part is played; there's talk enough,

by this,—

Merciful talk, the King thinks: time is now To turn the record's last and bloody leaf

Which, chronicling a nation's great distress,

Tells they were long rebellious, and their lord

Indulgent, till, all kind expedients tried, He drew the sword on them and reigned in

peace.

Laud's laying his religion on the Scots Was the last gentle entry: the new page

Shall run, the King thinks, 'Wentworth thrust it down

'At the sword's point.'

*A Puritan.* I'll do your bidding, Pym, England's and God's—one blow!

*Pym.* A goodly thing—

We all say, friends, it is a goodly thing To right that England. Heaven grows dark

above:

Let's snatch one moment ere the thunder fall,

To say how well the English spirit comes out

Beneath it! All have done their best, indeed,

From lion Eliot, that grand Englishman, To the least here: and who, the least one

here,

When she is saved (for her redemption dawns

Dimly, most dimly, but it dawns—it dawns)

Who'd give at any price his hope away Of being named along with the Great

Men?

We would not—no, we would not give that up!

*Hamp.* And one name shall be dearer than all names.

When children, yet unborn, are taught that name

After their fathers',—taught what matchless man . . .

*Pym.* . . . Saved England? What if

Wentworth's should be still

That name?

*Pud. and others.* We have just said it,

Pym! His death

Saves her! We said it—there's no way beside!

I'll do God's bidding, Pym! They struck down Joab

And purged the land.

*Vane.* No villanous striking-down!

*Rud.* No, a calm vengeance: let the whole land rise

And shout for it. No Feltons!

*Pym.*

Rudyard, no!

England rejects all Feltons; most of all  
Since Wentworth . . . Hampden, say the  
trust again

Of England in her servants—but I'll think  
You know me, all of you. Then, I believe,  
Spite of the past, Wentworth rejoins you,  
friends!

*Vane and others.* Wentworth? Apostate!  
Judas! Double-dyed  
A traitor! Is it Pym, indeed . . .

*Pym.* . . . Who says  
Vane never knew that Wentworth, loved  
that man,

Was used to stroll with him, arm locked in  
arm,

Along the streets to see the people pass,  
And read in every island-countenance  
Fresh argument for God against the  
King,—

Never sat down, say, in the very house  
Where Eliot's brow grew broad with noble  
thoughts,

(You've joined us, Hampden—Hollis, you  
as well,)

And then left talking over Gracchus'  
death . . .

*Vane.* To frame, we know it well, the  
choicest clause

In the Petition of Right: he framed such  
clause

One month before he took at the King's  
hand

His Northern Presidency, which that Bill  
Denounced.

*Pym.* Too true! Never more, never  
more

Walked we together! Most alone I went.  
I have had friends—all here are fast my  
friends—

But I shall never quite forget that friend.  
And yet it could not but be real in him!

You, Vane,—you, Rudyard, have no right  
to trust

To Wentworth: but can no one hope with  
me?

Hampden, will Wentworth dare shed  
English blood

Like water?

*Hamp.* Ireland is Aeldama.

*Pym.* Will he turn Scotland to a hunt-  
ing-ground

To please the King, now that he knows the  
King?

The People or the King? and that King,  
Charles!

*Hamp.* Pym, all here know you: you'll  
not set your heart

On any baseless dream. But say one  
deed

Of Wentworth's since he left us . . .

*[Shouting without.*  
*Vane.* There! he comes,

And they shout for him! Wentworth's at  
Whitehall,

The King embracing him, now, as we  
speak,

And he, to be his match in courtesies,  
Talking the whole war's risk upon himself,  
Now, while you tell us here how changed  
he is!

Heard you?

*Pym.* And yet 'tis a dream, no more.  
That Wentworth chose their side, and  
brought the King

To love it as though Laud had loved it first,  
And the Queen after;—that he led their  
cause

Calm to success, and kept it spotless  
through,

So that our very eyes could look upon  
The travail of our souls, and close content  
That violence, which something mars even  
right

Which sanctions it, had taken off no grace  
From its serene regard. Only a dream!

*Hamp.* We meet here to accomplish  
certain good

By obvious means, and keep tradition up  
Of free assemblages, else obsolete,

In this poor chamber: nor without effect  
Has friend met friend to counsel and con-  
firm,

As, listening to the beats of England's  
heart,

We spoke its wants to Scotland's prompt  
reply

By these her delegates. Remains alone  
That word grow deed, as with God's help

it shall—  
But with the devil's hindrance, who doubts  
too?

Looked we or no that tyranny should turn  
Her engines of oppression to their use?

Whereof, suppose the worst be Wentworth  
here—

Shall we break off the tactics which succeed  
In drawing out our formidablest foe,

Let bickering and disunion take their  
place?

Or count his presence as our conquest's  
proof,

And keep the old arms at their steady play?  
Proceed to England's work! Fiennes, read  
the list!

*Fien.* Ship-money is refused or fiercely  
paid

In every county, save the northern parts  
Where Wentworth's influence . . .

*[Shouting.*  
*Vane.* I, in England's name,

Declare her work, this way, at end! Till  
now,

Up to this moment, peaceful strife was  
best.

We English had free leave to think; till now,  
We had a shadow of a Parliament

In Scotland. But all's changed: they  
change the first,

They try brute-force for law, they, first of all . . .

*Voices.* Good! Talk enough! The old true hearts with Vane!

*Vane.* Till we crush Wentworth for her, there's no act

Serves England!

*Voices.* Vane for England!

*Pym.* Pym should be something to England. I seek Wentworth, friends.

SCENE II.—*Whitehall.*

Lady CARLISLE and WENTWORTH.

*Went.* And the King?

*Lady Car.* Wentworth, lean

on me! Sit then!

I'll tell you all; this horrible fatigue

Will kill you.

*Went.* No;—or, Lucy, just your arm; I'll not sit till I've cleared this up with him:

After that, rest. The King?

*Lady Car.* Confides in you.

*Went.* Why? or, why now?—They have kind throats, the knaves!

Shout for me—they!

*Lady Car.* You come so strangely soon:

Yet we took measures to keep off the crowd—

Did they shout for you?

*Went.* Wherefore should they not?

Does the King take such measures for himself?

Beside, there's such a dearth of malcontents,

You say!

*Lady Car.* I said but few dared carp at you.

*Went.* At me? at us, I hope! The King and I!

He's surely not disposed to let me bear the fame away from him of these late deeds

In Ireland? I am yet his instrument

Be it for well or ill? He trusts me, too!

*Lady Car.* The King, dear Wentworth, purposes, I said,

To grant you, in the face of all the Court . . .

*Went.* All the Court! Evermore the Court about us!

Savile and Holland, Hamilton and Vane About us,—then the King will grant me—what?

That he for once put these aside and say—'Tell me your whole mind, Wentworth!'

*Lady Car.* You professed You would be calm.

*Went.* Lucy, and I am calm!

How else shall I do all I come to do, Broken, as you may see, body and mind, How shall I serve the King? Time wastes meanwhile,

You have not told me half. His footstep! No.

Quick, then, before I meet him,—I am calm—

Why does the King distrust me?

*Lady Car.* He does not

Distrust you.

*Went.* Lucy, you can help me; you Have even seemed to care for me: one word!

Is it the Queen?

*Lady Car.* No, not the Queen: the party

That poisons the Queen's ear, Savile and Holland.

*Went.* I know, I know: old Vane, too, he's one too?

Go on—and he's made Secretary. Well? Or leave them out and go straight to the charge—

The charge!

*Lady Car.* Oh, there's no charge, no precise charge;

Only they sneer, make light of—one may say,

Nibble at what you do.

*Went.* I know! but, Lucy, I reckoned on you from the first!—Go on!

—Was sure could I once see this gentle friend

When I arrived, she'd throw an hour away To help her . . . what am I?

*Lady Car.* You thought of me, Dear Wentworth?

*Went.* But go on! The party here!

*Lady Car.* They do not think your Irish government

Of that surpassing value . . .

*Went.* The one thing Of value! The one service that the crown

May count on! All that keeps these very Vanes

In power, to vex me—not that they do vex,

Only it might vex some to hear that service Decried, the sole support that's left the

King!

*Lady Car.* So the Archbishop says.

*Went.* Ah? well, perhaps The only hand held up in my defence

May be old Laud's! These Hollands then, these Saviles

Nibble? They nibble?—that's the very word!

*Lady Car.* Your profit in the Customs, Bristol says,

Exceeds the due proportion: while the tax . . .

*Went.* Enough! 'tis too unworthy,—I am not

So patient as I thought. What's Pym about?

*Lady Car.* Pym?

*Went.* Pym and the People.

*Lady Car.* Oh, the Faction!  
Extinct—of no account: there'll never be  
Another Parliament.

*Went.* Tell Savile that!  
You may know—(ay, you do—the crea-  
tures here  
Never forget!) that in my earliest life  
I was not . . . much that I am now! The

*King*  
May take my word on points concerning  
Pym

Before Lord Savile's, Lucy, or if not,  
I bid them ruin their wise selves, not me,  
These Vanes and Hollands! I'll not be  
their tool

Who might be Pym's friend yet.  
But there's the King!

Where is he?  
*Lady Car.* Just apprised that you  
arrive.

*Went.* And why not here to meet me?  
I was told

He sent for me, nay, longed for me.  
*Lady Car.* Because,

He is now . . . I think a Council's sitting  
now

About this Scots affair.  
*Went.* A Council sits?

They have not taken a decided course  
Without me in the matter?

*Lady Car.* I should say . . .  
*Went.* The war? They cannot have  
agreed to that?

Not the Scots' war?—without consulting  
me—

Me, that am here to show how rash it is,  
How easy to dispense with?—Ah, you  
too

Against me! well,—the King may take his  
time.

—Forget it, Lucy! Cares make peevish:  
mine

Weigh me (but 'tis a secret) to my grave.  
*Lady Car.* For life or death I am your  
own, dear friend!

[*Goes out.*  
*Went.* Heartless! but all are heartless  
here. Go now,

Forsake the People!

I did not forsake  
The People: they shall know it, when the  
King

Will trust me!—who trusts all beside at  
once,

While I have not spoke Vane and Savile  
fair,

And am not trusted: have but saved the  
throne.

Have not picked up the Queen's glove  
prettily,

And am not trusted. But he'll see me  
now.

Weston is dead: the Queen's half English  
now—

More English: one decisive word will brush

These insects from . . . the step I know so  
well!

The King! But now, to tell him . . . no—  
'to ask

What's in me he distrusts:—or, best begin  
By proving that this frightful Scots affair

Is just what I foretold. So much to say,  
And the flesh fails, now, and the time is

come,  
And one false step no way to be repaired.

You were avenged, Pym, could you look  
on me.

*Pym enters.*

*Went.* I little thought of you just then.  
*Pym.* No? I

Think always of you, Wentworth.  
*Went.* The old voice!

I wait the King, sir.  
*Pym.* True—you look so pale!

A Council sits within; when that breaks up  
He'll see you.

*Went.* Sir, I thank you.  
*Pym.* O, thank Laud!

You know when Laud once gets on Church  
affairs

The case is desperate: he'll not be long  
To-day: he only means to prove, to-day,

We English all are mad to have a hand  
In butchering the Scots for serving God

After their fathers' fashion: only that!  
*Went.* Sir, keep your jests for those who  
relish them!

(Does he enjoy their confidence?) 'Tis  
kind

To tell me what the Council does.  
*Pym.* You grudge

That I should know it had resolved on  
war

Before you came? no need: you shall have  
all

The credit, trust me!  
*Went.* Have the Council dared—

They have not dared . . . that is—I know  
you not.

Farewell, sir: times are changed.  
*Pym.*—Since we two met

At Greenwich? Yes: poor patriots though  
we be,

You cut a figure, makes some slight return  
For your exploits in Ireland! Changed

indeed,  
Could our friend Eliot look from out his  
grave!

Ah, Wentworth, one thing for acquaint-  
ance' sake,

Just to decide a question; have you, now,  
Felt your old self since you forsook us?

*Went.* Sir!  
*Pym.* Spare me the gesture! you mis-  
apprehend.

Think not I mean the advantage is with me.  
I was about to say that, for my part,

I never quite held up my head since then—

Was quite myself since then: for first, you see,

I lost all credit after that event  
With those who recollect how sure I was  
Wentworth would outdo Eliot on our side.  
Forgive me: Savile, old Vane, Holland

here,  
Eschew plain-speaking: 'tis a trick I keep.  
*Went.* How, when, where, Savile, Vane,  
and Holland speak,  
Plainly or otherwise, would have my scorn,  
All of my scorn, sir . . .

*Pym.* . . . Did not my poor thoughts  
Claim somewhat?

*Went.* Keep your thoughts!  
believe the King  
Mistrusts me for their prattle, all these  
Vanes  
And Saviles! make your mind up, o'  
God's love,

That I am discontented with the King!

*Pym.* Why, you may be: I should be,  
that I know,

Were I like you.

*Went.* Like me?

*Pym.* I care not much  
For titles: our friend Eliot died no lord,  
Hampden's no lord, and Savile is a  
lord;

But you care, since you sold your soul for  
one.

I can't think, therefore, your soul's pur-  
chaser

Did well to laugh you to such utter scorn  
When you twice prayed so humbly for its  
price,

The thirty silver pieces . . . I should say,  
The Earldom you expected, still expect,  
And may. Your letters were the movingest!  
Console yourself: I've borne him prayers  
just now

From Scotland not to be oppressed by  
Laud,

Words moving in their way: he'll pay, be  
sure,

As much attention as to those you sent.

*Went.* False, sir! Who showed them  
you? Suppose it so,

The King did very well . . . nay, I was glad  
When it was shown me: I refused, the  
first!

John Pym, you were my friend—forbear  
me once!

*Pym.* Oh, Wentworth, ancient brother  
of my soul,

That all should come to this!

*Went.* Leave me!

*Pym.* My friend,  
Why should I leave you?

*Went.* To tell Rudyard this,  
And Hampden this!

*Pym.* Whose faces once were bright  
At my approach, now sad with doubt and  
fear,

Because I hope in you—yes, Wentworth,  
you

Who never mean to ruin England—you  
Whoshake off, with God's help, an obscene  
dream

In this Ezekiel chamber, where it crept  
Upon you first, and wafe, yourself, your  
true

And proper self, our Leader, England's  
Chief,

And Hampden's friend!

This is the proudest day!  
Come, Wentworth! Do not even see the  
King!

The rough old room will seem itself again!  
We'll both go in together: you've not seen

Hampden so long: come: and there's  
Fiennes: you'll have

To know young Vane. This is the proudest  
day!

[*The KING enters.* WENTWORTH lets fall  
PYM's hand.

*Cha.* Arrived, my lord?—This gentle-  
man, we know

Was your old friend.

The Scots shall be informed  
What we determine for their happiness.

[*PYM goes out.*

You have made haste, my lord.

*Went.* Sir, I am come . . .

*Cha.* To see an old familiar—nay 'tis  
well;

Aid us with his experience: this Scots'  
League

And Covenant spreads too far, and we  
have proofs

That they intrigue with France: the Fac-  
tion too,

Whereof your friend there is the head and  
front,

Abets them,—as he boasted, very like.

*Went.* Sir, trust me! but for this once,  
trust me, sir!

*Cha.* What can you mean?

*Went.* That you should trust me,  
sir!

Oh—not for my sake! but 'tis sad, so sad  
That for distrusting me, you suffer—you

Whom I would die to serve: sir, do you  
think

That I would die to serve you?

*Cha.* But rise, Wentworth!

*Went.* What shall convince you? What  
does Savile do

To prove him . . . Ah, one can't tear out  
one's heart

And show it, how sincere a thing it is!

*Cha.* Have I not trusted you?

*Went.* Say aught but that!  
There is my comfort, mark you; all will be

So different when you trust me—as you  
shall!

It has not been your fault,—I was away,

Mistook, maigned, how was the King to know?

I am here, now—he means to trust me, now—

All will go on so well!

*Cha.* Be sure I do—

I've heard that I should trust you: as you came,

Your friend, the Countess, told me . . .

*Went.* No,—hear nothing—Be told nothing about me!—you're not told

Your right-hand serves you, or your children love you!

*Cha.* You love me, Wentworth: rise!

*Went.* I can speak now.

I have no right to hide the truth. 'Tis I Can save you: only I. Sir, what must be?

*Cha.* Since Laud's assured (the minutes are within)

—Loath as I am to spill my subjects' blood . . .

*Went.* That is, he'll have a war: what's done is done!

*Cha.* They have intrigued with France; that's clear to Laud.

*Went.* Has Laud suggested any way to meet

The war's expense?

*Cha.* He'd not decide so far Until you joined us.

*Went.* Most considerate! He's certain they intrigue with France, these Scots?

The People would be with us.

*Cha.* Pym should know.

*Went.* The People for us—we're the People for us!

Sir, a great thought comes to reward your trust:

Summon a Parliament! in Ireland first, Then, here.

*Cha.* In truth?

*Went.* That saves us! that puts off The war, gives time to right their grievances—

To talk with Pym. I know the Faction,—Laud

So styles it,—tutors Scotland: all their plans

Suppose no Parliament: in calling one You take them by surprise. Produce the

proofs Of Scotland's treason; then bid England

help: Even Pym will not refuse.

*Cha.* You would begin With Ireland?

*Went.* Take no care for that: that's sure

To prosper.

*Cha.* You shall rule me. You were best

Return at once: but take this ere you go!

Now, do I trust you? You're an Earl: my Friend

Of Friends: yes, while . . . You hear me not!

*Went.* Say it all o'er again—but once again:

The first was for the music: once again!

*Cha.* Strafford, my friend, there may have been reports,

Vain rumours. Henceforth touching Strafford is

To touch the apple of my sight: why gaze So earnestly?

*Went.* I am grown young again, And foolish. What was it we spoke of?

*Cha.* Ireland, The Parliament,—

*Went.* I may go when I will? —Now?

*Cha.* Are you tired so soon of us? *Went.* My King!

But you will not so utterly abhor A Parliament? I'd serve you any way.

*Cha.* You said just now this was the only way.

*Went.* Sir, I will serve you.

*Cha.* Strafford, spare yourself: You are so sick, they tell me.

*Went.* 'Tis my soul That's well and prospers now.

This Parliament— We'll summon it, the English one—I'll

care For everything. You shall not need them much.

*Cha.* If they prove restive . . . *Went.* I shall be with you.

*Cha.* Ere they assemble? *Went.* I will come, or else

Deposit this infirm humanity I' the dust. My whole heart stays with you,

my King! [*As WENTWORTH goes out, the QUEEN enters.*]

*Cha.* That man must love me. *Queen.* 'Tis over then?

Why, he looks yellower than ever! Well, At least we shall not hear eternally

Of services—services: he's paid at least.

*Cha.* Not done with: he engages to surpass

All yet performed in Ireland. *Queen.* I had thought

Nothing beyond was ever to be done.

The war, Charles—will he raise supplies enough?

*Cha.* We've hit on an expedient; he . . . that is,

I have advised . . . we have decided on The calling—in Ireland—of a Parliament.

*Queen.* O truly! You agree to that? Is that

The first fruit of his counsel? But I guessed As much.

*Cha.* This is too idle, Henriette!



## STRAFFORD

[ACT II]

I should know best. He will strain every nerve,  
And once a precedent established . . .

*Queen.* Notice  
How sure he is of a long term of favour!  
He'll see the next, and the next after that;  
No end to Parliaments!

*Cha.* Well, it is done.  
He talks it smoothly, doubtless. If, indeed,  
The Commons here . . .

*Queen.* Here! you will summon them  
Here? Would I were in France again to see  
A King!

*Cha.* But, Henriette . . .

*Queen.* Oh, the Scots see clear!  
Why should they bear your rule?

*Cha.* But listen, sweet!

*Queen.* Let Wentworth listen—you con-  
fide in him!

*Cha.* I do not, love,—I do not so con-  
fide!

The Parliament shall never trouble us  
. . . Nay, hear me! I have schemes, such  
schemes: we'll buy

The leaders off: without that, Wentworth's  
counsel

Had ne'er prevailed on me. Perhaps I  
call it

To have excuse for breaking it for ever,  
And whose will then the blame be? See  
you no'?

Come, dearest!—look, the little fairy, now,  
That cannot reach my shoulder! Dearest,  
come!

## ACT II

SCENE I.—(As in Act I. Scene I.)

*The same Party enters.*

*Rud.* Twelve subsidies!

*Vane.* Oh, Rudyard, do not laugh  
At least!

*Rud.* True! Strafford called the Par-  
liament—

'Tis he should laugh!

*A Puritan.* Out of the serpent's root  
Comes forth a cockatrice.

*Fien.* —A stinging one,  
If that's the Parliament: twelve subsidies!  
A stinging one! but, brother, where's your  
word

For Strafford's other nest-egg, the Scots'  
war?

*The Puritan.* His fruit shall be a fiery  
flying serpent.

*Fien.* Shall be? It chips the shell, man;  
peeps abroad.

Twelve subsidies!—Why, how now, Vane?

*Rud.* Peace, Fiennes!

*Fien.* Ah?—But he was not more a dupe  
than I,

Or you, or any here, the day that Pym

Returned with the good news. Look up,  
friend Vane!

We all believed that Strafford meant us  
well

In summoning the Parliament.

*HAMPDEN enters.*

*Vane.* Now, Hampden,  
Clear me! I would have leave to sleep  
again:

I'd look the People in the face again:  
Clear me from having, from the first,

hoped, dreamed  
Better of Strafford!

*Hamp.* You may grow one day  
A steadfast light to England, Henry Vane!

*Rud.* Meantime, by flashes I make shift  
to see

Strafford revived our Parliaments; before,  
War was but talked of; there's an army,

now:  
Still, we've a Parliament! Poor Ireland

bears  
Another wrench (she dies the hardest

death!)

Why, speak of it in Parliament! and lo,  
'Tis spoken, so console yourselves!

*Fien.* The jest!  
We clamoured, I suppose, thus long, to

win  
The privilege of laying on our backs

A sorer burden than the King dares lay!

*Rud.* Mark now: we meet at length,  
complaints pour in

From every county, all the land cries out  
On loans and levies, curses ship-money,

Calls vengeance on the Star Chamber; we  
lend

An ear. 'Ay, lend them all the ears you  
have!'

Puts in the King; 'my subjects, as you find,  
'Are fretful, and conceive great things of

you.  
'Just listen to them, friends; you'll sanc-  
tion me

'The measures they most wince at, make  
them yours,

'Instead of mine, I know: and, to begin,  
'They say my levies pinch them,—raise

me straight  
'Twelve subsidies!'

*Fien.* All England cannot furnish  
Twelve subsidies!

*Hol.* But Strafford, just returned  
From Ireland—what has he to do with

that?  
How could he speak his mind? He left

before  
The Parliament assembled. Pym, who

knows  
Strafford . . .

*Rud.* Would I were sure we know  
ourselves!

What is for good, what, bad—who friend,  
who foe!

*Hol.* Do you count Parliaments no gain?

*Rud.* A gain?

While the King's creatures overbalance  
us?

—There's going on, beside, among our-  
selves

A quiet, slow, but most effectual course  
Of buying over, sapping, leavening  
The lump till all is leaven. Glanville's  
gone.

I'll put a case; had not the Court declared  
That no sum short of just twelve subsidies  
Will be accepted by the King—our House,  
I say, would have consented to that offer  
To let us buy off ship-money!

*Hol.* Most like,  
If, say, six subsidies will buy it off,  
The House . . .

*Rud.* Will grant them! Hampden,  
do you hear?

Congratulate with me! the King's the king,  
And gains his point at last—our own asset  
To that detested tax? All's over, then!  
There's no more taking refuge in this room,  
Protesting, 'Let the King do what he will,  
'We, England, are no party to our shame:  
'Our day will come!' Congratulate with  
me!

*PYM enters.*

*Vane.* Pym, Strafford called this Parlia-  
ment, you say,  
But we'll not have our Parliaments like  
those

In Ireland, Pym!  
*Rud.* Let him stand forth, your  
friend!

One doubtful act hides far too many sins;  
It can be stretched no more, and, to my  
mind,

Begins to drop from those it covered.

*Other Voices.* Good!  
Let him avow himself! No fitter time!

We wait thus long for you.  
*Rud.* Perhaps, too long!  
Since nothing but the madness of the  
Court,

In thus unmasking its designs at once,  
Has saved us from betraying England.  
Stay—

This Parliament is Strafford's: let us vote  
Our list of grievances too black by far  
To suffer talk of subsidies: or best,  
That ship-money's disposed of long ago  
By England: any vote that's broad enough:  
And then let Strafford, for the love of it,  
Support his Parliament!

*Vane.* And vote as well  
No war to be with Scotland! Hear you,  
Pym?

We'll vote, no war! No part nor lot in it  
For England!

*Many Voices.* Vote, no war! Stop  
the new levies!

No Bishops' war! At once! When next  
'we meet!

*Pym.* Much more when next we meet!  
Friends, which of you

Since first the course of Strafford was in  
doubt,

Has fallen the most away in soul from me?  
*Vane.* I sat apart, even now under God's  
eye,

Pondering the words that should denounce  
you, Pym,

In presence of us all, as one at league  
With England's enemy.

*Pym.* You are a good  
And gallant spirit, Henry. Take my hand  
And say you pardon me for all the pain  
Till now! Strafford is wholly ours.

*Many Voices.* Sure? sure?  
*Pym.* Most sure: for Charles dissolves  
the Parliament

While I speak here.  
—And I must speak, friends, now!  
Strafford is ours. The King detects the  
change,

Casts Strafford off for ever, and resumes  
His ancient path: no Parliament for us,  
No Strafford for the King!

Come, all of you,  
To bid the King farewell, predict success  
To his Scots' expedition, and receive  
Strafford, our comrade now. The next will  
be

Indeed a Parliament!

*Vane.* Forgive me, Pym!  
*Voices.* This looks like truth: Strafford  
can have, indeed,

No choice.  
*Pym.* Friends, follow me! He's with  
the King.

Come, Hampden, and come, Rudyard, and  
come, Vane!

This is no sullen day for England, sirs!  
Strafford shall tell you!

*Voices.* To Whitehall then! Come!

SCENE II.—Whitehall.

CHARLES and STRAFFORD.

*Cha.* Strafford!

*Straf.* Is it a dream? my papers,  
here—

Thus, as I left them, all the plans you found  
So happy—(look! the track you pressed  
my hand

For pointing out)—and in this very room,  
Over these very plans, you tell me, sir,

With the same face, too—tell me just one  
thing

That ruins them! How's this? What may  
this mean?

Sir, who has done this?

*Cha.*               Strafford, who but I?  
You bade me put the rest away: indeed  
You are alone.

*Straf.*           Alone, and like to be!  
No fear, when some unworthy scheme  
grows ripe,  
Of those, who hatched it, leaving me to  
loose  
The mischief on the world! Laud hatches  
war,  
Falls to his prayers, and leaves the rest to  
me,  
And I'm alone.

*Cha.*               At least, you knew as much  
When first you undertook the war.

*Straf.*           My liege,  
Was this the way? I said, since Laud would  
lap

A little blood, 'twere best to hurry over  
The loathsome business, not to be whole  
months

At slaughter—one blow, only one, then,  
peace,

Save for the dreams. I said, to please you  
both

I'd lead an Irish army to the West,  
While in the South an English . . . but you  
look

As though you had not told me fifty times  
'Twas a brave plan! My army is all raised,  
I am prepared to join it . . .

*Cha.*               Hear me, Strafford!  
*Straf.* . . . When, for some little thing,  
my whole design

Is set aside—(where is the wretched paper?)  
I am to lead—(ay, here it is)—to lead  
The English army: why? Northumberland

That I appointed, chooses to be sick—  
Is frightened: and, meanwhile, who an-  
swers for

The Irish Parliament? or army, either?  
Is this my plan?

*Cha.*               So disrespectful, sir?

*Straf.* My liege, do not believe it! I am  
yours,

Yours ever: 'tis too late to think about:  
To the death, yours. Elsewhere, this un-  
toward step

Shall pass for mine; the world shall think it  
mine.

But here! But here! I am so seldom here,  
Seldom with you, my King! I, soon to  
rush

Alone upon a giant in the dark!

*Cha.* My Strafford!

*Straf.* [*examines papers awhile*]. 'Seize  
the passes of the Tyne!'

But, sir, you see—see all I say is true?  
My plan was sure to prosper, so, no cause  
To ask the Parliament for help; whereas  
We need them rightfully.

*Cha.*               Need the Parliament?

*Straf.* Now, for God's sake, sir, not  
one error more!

We can afford no error; we draw, now,  
Upon our last resource: the Parliament  
Must help us!

*Cha.*               I've one—*one* you, Strafford!

*Straf.*           Nay—  
Nay—why despond, sir, 'tis not come to  
that!

I have not hurt you? Sir, what have I said  
To hurt you? I unsay it! Don't despond!  
Sir, do you turn from me?

*Cha.*               My friend of friends!

*Straf.* We'll make a shift. Leave me  
the Parliament!

Help they us ne'er so little and I'll make  
Sufficient out of it. We'll speak them fair.

They're sitting, that's one great thing; that  
half gives

Their sanction to us; that's much: don't  
despond!

Why, let them keep their money, at the  
worst!

The reputation of the People's help  
Is all we want: we'll make shift yet!

*Cha.*               Good Strafford!

*Straf.* But meantime, let the sum be  
ne'er so small

They offer, we'll accept it: any sum—  
For the look of it: the least grant tells the

Scots  
The Parliament is ours—their staunch ally  
Turned ours: that told, there's half the

blow to strike!

What will the grant be? What does Glan-  
ville think?

*Cha.* Alas!

*Straf.*           My liege?

*Cha.*               Strafford!

*Straf.*           But answer me!  
Have they . . . O surely not refused us

half?

Half the twelve subsidies? We never  
looked

For all of them. How many do they give?  
*Cha.* You have not heard . . .

*Straf.* (What has he done?)—  
Heard what?

But speak at once, sir, this grows terrible!  
[*The KING continuing silent.*]

You have dissolved them!—I'll not leave  
this man.

*Cha.* 'Twas old Vane's ill-judged ve-  
hemence.

*Straf.*           Old Vane?  
*Cha.* He told them, just about to vote

the half,  
That nothing short of all twelve subsidies  
Would serve our turn, or be accepted.

*Straf.*           Vane!  
*Chaf.* Who, sir, promised me, that very

Vane . . .

O God, to have it gone, quite gone from  
me,

The one last hope—I that despair, my  
hope—

That I should reach his heart one day, and cure  
All bitterness one day, be proud again  
And young again, dare for the sunshine too,  
And never think of Elbow any more,—  
God, and to toil for this, go far for this,  
Get nearer, and still hearer, reach this heart  
And find Vane there!

*[Suddenly taking up a paper, and continuing with a forced calmness.]*

Northumberland is sick:  
Well, then, I take the army: Wilmot leads  
The horse, and he, with Conway, must secure  
The passes of the Tyne: Ormond supplies  
My place in Ireland. Here, we'll try the City:  
If they refuse a loan—debase the coin  
And seize the bullion! we've no other choice.

Herbert . . .

And this while I am here! with you!  
And there are hosts such, hosts like Vane!

I go,  
And, I once gone, they'll close around you,  
sir,  
When the least pique, pettiest mistrust, is sure

To ruin me—and you along with me!  
Do you see that? And you along with me!  
—Sir, you'll not ever listen to these men,  
And I away, fighting your battle? Sir,  
If they—if She—charge me, no matter how—

Say you, 'At any time when he returns  
'His head is mine!' Don't stop me there!  
You know

My head is yours, but never stop me there!  
Cha, Too shameful, Strafford! You  
advised the war,

And . . .

*Straf.* I! I! that was never spoken with  
Till it was entered on! That loathe the war!

That say it is the maddest, wickedest . . .  
Do you know, sir, I think within my heart,  
That you would say I did advise the war;  
And if, through your own weakness, or  
what's worse,

These Scots, with God to help them, drive  
me back,

You will not step between the raging  
People

And me, to say . . .

I knew it! from the first  
I knew it! Never was so cold a heart!  
Remember that I said it—that I never  
Believed you for a moment!

—And, you loved me?  
You thought your perfidy profoundly hid  
Because I could not share the whisperings  
With Vane, with Savile? What, the face  
was masked?

I had the heart to see, sir! Face of flesh,  
But heart of stone—of smooth cold fright-  
ful stone!

Ay, call them! Shall I call for you? The  
Scots

Goaded to madness? Or the English—  
Pym—

Shall I call Pym, your subject? Oh, you  
think

I'll leave them in the dark about it all?  
They shall not know you? Hampden, Pym  
shall not?

PYM, HAMPDEN, VANE, etc., enter.

*[Dropping on his knee.]* Thus favoured with  
your gracious countenance  
What shall a rebel League avail against  
Your servant, utterly and ever yours?  
So, gentlemen, the King's not even left  
The privilege of bidding me farewell  
Who haste to save the People—that you  
style

Your People—from the mercies of the  
Scots

And France their friend?

*[To CHARLES.]* Pym's grave grey  
eyes are fixed

Upon you, sir!

Your pleasure, gentlemen?  
*Hamp.* The King dissolved us—'tis the  
King we seek

And not Lord Strafford.

*Straf.* —Strafford, guilty too  
Of counselling the measure. *[To CHARLES.]*  
(Hush . . . you know—

You have forgotten—sir, I counselled it)  
A heinous matter, truly! But the King  
Will yet see cause to thank me for a  
course

Which now, perchance . . . (Sir, tell them  
so!)—he blames.

Well, choose some fitter time to make your  
charge:

I shall be with the Scots, you under-  
stand?

Then yelp at me!

Meanwhile, your Majesty  
Binds me, by this fresh token of your  
trust . . .

*[Under the pretence of an earnest fare-  
well, STRAFFORD conducts CHARLES to  
the door, in such a manner as to hide his  
agitation from the rest: as the KING  
disappears, they turn as by one impulse  
to PYM, who has not changed his original  
posture of surprise.]*

*Hamp.* Leave we this arrogant strong  
wicked man!

*Vane and others.* Hence, Pym! Come  
out of this unworthy place

To our old room again! He's gone.  
*[STRAFFORD, just about to follow the  
KING, looks back.]*

Pym. Not gone:

## STRAFFORD

[ACT II]

[To STRAFFORD.] Keep tryst! the old appointment's made anew:

Forget not we shall meet again!

*Straf.* So be it!

And if an army follows me?

*Vane.* His friends

Will entertain your army!

*Pym.* I'll not say  
You have misreckoned, Strafford; time shows.

*Perish*

Body and spirit! Fool to feign a doubt,  
Pretend the scrupulous and nice reserve  
Of one whose prowess shall achieve the feat!

What share have I in it? Do I affect  
To see no dismal sign above your head  
When God suspends his ruinous thunder there?

Strafford is doomed. Touch him no one  
of you! [*PYM, HAMPDEN, etc., go out.*]

*Straf.* Pym, we shall meet again!

*Lady CARLISLE enters.*

You here, child?

*Lady Car.* Hush—  
I know it all: hush, Strafford!

*Straf.* Ah? you know?  
Well. I shall make a sorry soldier, Lucy!  
All knights begin their enterprise, we read,  
Under the best of auspices; 'tis morn,  
The Lady girds his sword upon the Youth  
(He's always very young)—the trumpets  
sound,

Cups pledge him, and, why, the King  
blesses him—

You need not turn a page of the romance  
To learn the Dreadful Giant's fate. Indeed,  
We've the fair Lady here; but she apart,—  
A poor man, rarely having handled lance,  
And rather old, weary, and far from sure  
His Squires are not the Giant's friends.  
All's one:

Let us go forth!

*Lady Car.* Go forth?  
*Straf.* What matters it?

We shall die gloriously—as the book says.

*Lady Car.* To Scotland? Not to Scotland?

*Straf.* Am I sick  
Like your good brother, brave Northumberland?

Beside, these walls seem falling on me.

*Lady Car.* Strafford,  
The wind that saps these walls can undermine

Your camp in Scotland, too. Whence  
creeps the wind?

Have you no eyes except for Pym? Look  
here!

A breed of silken creatures lurk and thrive  
In your contempt. You'll vanquish Pym?  
Old Vane

Can vanquish you. And Vane you think  
to fly?

Rush on the Scots! Do nobly! Vane's  
slight sneer

Shall test success, adjust the praise, suggest  
The faint result: Vane's sneer shall reach  
you there.

—You do not listen!

*Straf.* Oh,—I give that up!  
There's fate in it: I give all here quite up.  
Care not what old Vane does or Holland  
does

Against me! 'Tis so idle to withstand!

In no case tell me what they do!

*Lady Car.* But, Strafford . . .

*Straf.* I want a little strife, beside; real  
strife;

This petty palace-warfare does me harm:  
I shall feel better, fairly out of it.

*Lady Car.* Why do you smile?

*Straf.* I got to fear them, child!  
I could have torn his throat at first, old  
Vane's,

As he leered at me on his stealthy way  
To the Queen's closet. Lord, one loses  
heart!

I often found it on my lips to say

'Do not traduce me to her!'

*Lady Car.* But the King . . .

*Straf.* The King stood there, 'tis not so  
long ago,

—There; and the whisper, Lucy, 'Be my  
friend

'Of friends!'—My King! I would have . . .

*Lady Car.* . . . Died for him?

*Straf.* Sworn him true, Lucy: I can die  
for him.

*Lady Car.* But go not, Strafford! But  
you must renounce

This project on the Scots! Die, wherefore  
die?

Charles never loved you.

*Straf.* And he never will.  
He's not of those who care the more for  
men

That they're unfortunate.

*Lady Car.* Then wherefore die  
For such a master?

*Straf.* You that told me first  
How good he was—when I must leave true  
friends

To find a truer friend!—that drew me  
here

From Ireland,—'I had but to show myself  
'And Charles would spurn Vane, Savile,

'and the rest!'

You, child, to ask me this?

*Lady Car.* (If he have set  
His heart abidingly on Charles!)

Then, friend,  
I shall not see you any more.

*Straf.* Yes, Lucy.  
There's one man here I have to meet.

*Lady Car.* (The King!)

What way to save him from the King?

My soul—  
That lent from its own store the charmed  
disguise

Which clothes the King—he shall behold  
my soul!)

Strafford,—I shall speak best if you'll not  
gaze

Upon me: I had never thought, indeed,  
To speak, but you would perish too, so  
sure!

Could you but know what 'tis to bear, my  
friend,

One image stamped within you, turning  
blank

The else imperial brilliance of your  
mind,—

A weakness, but most precious,—like a  
flaw

I' the diamond, which should shape forth  
some sweet face

Yet to create, and meanwhile treasured  
there

Lest nature lose her gracious thought for  
ever!

*Straf.* When could it be? no! Yet . . .  
was it the day

We waited in the anteroom, till Holland  
Should leave the presence-chamber?

*Lady Car.* What?  
*Straf.* —That I

Described to you my love for Charles?  
*Lady Car.* (Ah, no—

One must not lure him from a love like  
that!

Oh, let him love the King and die! 'Tis  
past.

I shall not serve him worse for that one  
brief

And passionate hope, silent for ever now!)  
And you are really bound for Scotland  
then?

I wish you well: you must be very sure  
Of the King's faith, for Pym and all his  
crew

Will not be idle—setting Vane aside!  
*Straf.* If Pym is busy,—you may write  
of Pym.

*Lady Car.* What need, since there's  
your King to take your part?

He may endure Vane's counsel; but for  
Pym—

Think you he'll suffer Pym to . . .  
*Straf.* Child, your hair

Is glossier than the Queen's!  
*Lady Car.* Is that to ask

A curl of me?  
*Straf.* Scotland—the weary way!

*Lady Car.* Stay, let me fasten it.  
—A rival's, Strafford?

*Straf.* [showing the George]. He hung  
it there: twine yours around it, child!

*Lady Car.* No—no—another time—I  
trifle so!

And there's a masque on foot. Farewell.

The Court  
Is dull; do something to enliven us

In Scotland: we expect it at your hands.  
*Straf.* I shall not fail in Scotland.

*Lady Car.* Prosper—if  
You'll think of me sometimes!

*Straf.* How think of him  
And not of you? of you, the lingering streak  
(A golden one) in my good fortune's eve.

*Lady Car.* Strafford . . . Well, when the  
eve has its last streak

The night has its first star. [*She goes out.*  
*Straf.* That voice of hers—

You'd think she had a heart sometimes!  
His voice

Is soft too.  
Only God can save him now.

Be Thou about his bed, about his path!  
His path! Where's England's path? Di-

verging wide,  
And not to join again the track my foot

Must follow—whither? All that forlorn  
way

Among the tombs! Far—far—till . . .  
What, they do

Then join again, these paths? For, huge  
in the dusk,

There's—Pym to face!  
Why then, I have a foe

To close with, and a fight to fight at last  
Worthy my soul! What, do they beard the

King,  
And shall the King want Strafford at his

need?  
Am I not here?

Not in the market-place,  
Pressed on by the rough artisans, so

proud  
To catch a glance from Wentworth! They

lie down  
Hungry yet smile 'Why, it must end some

day:  
'Is he not watching for our sake?' Not

there!  
But in Whitehall, the whited sepulchre,

The . . . Curse nothing to-night! Only  
one name

They'll curse in all those streets to-night.  
Whose fault?

Did I make kings? set up, the first, a man  
To represent the multitude, receive

All love in right of them—supplant them  
so,

Until you love the man and not the king—  
The man with the mild voice and mourn-

ful eyes  
Which send me forth.

—To breast the bloody sea  
That sweeps before me: with one star for

guide.  
Night has its first, supreme, forsaken

star.

## ACT III

SCENE I.—*Opposite Westminster Hall.*SIR HENRY VANE, LORD SAVILE, LORD  
HOLLAND and others of the Court.Sir H. Vane. The Commons thrust you  
out?Sav. And what kept you  
From sharing their civility?Sir H. Vane. Kept me?  
Fresh news from Scotland, sir! worse than  
the last,If that may be. All's up with Strafford  
there:Nothing to bar the mad Scots marching  
hitherNext Lord's-day morning. That detained  
me, sir!Well now, before they thrust you out,—go  
on,—Their Speaker—did the fellow Lenthall say  
All we set down for him?Holland. Not a word missed.  
Ere he began, we entered, Savile, I  
And Bristol and some more, with hope to  
breedA wholesome awe in the new Parliament.  
But such a gang of graceless ruffians, Vane,  
As glared at us!

Vane. So many?

Sav. Not a bench  
Without its complement of burly knaves;  
Your hopeful son among them: Hampden  
leant

Upon his shoulder—think of that!

Vane. I'd think  
On Lenthall's speech, if I could get at it.  
Urged he, I ask, how grateful they should  
proveFor this unlooked-for summons from the  
King?

Holland. Just as we drilled him.

Vane. That the Scots will march  
On London?Holland. All, and made so much of it,  
A dozen subsidies at least seemed sure  
To follow, when . . .

Vane. Well?

Holland. 'Tis a strange thing, now!  
I've a vague memory of a sort of sound,  
A voice, a kind of vast unnatural voice—  
Pym, sir, was speaking! Savile, help me  
out:

What was it all?

Sav. Something about 'a matter'—  
No,—'work for England.'Holland. 'England's great revenge'  
He talked of.Sav. How should I get used to Pym  
More than yourselves?Holland. However that be,  
'Twas something with which we had  
nought to do,For we were 'strangers' and 'twas 'Eng-  
land's work'—(All this while looking us straight in the  
face)In other words, our presence might be  
spared.So, in the twinkling of an eye, before  
I settled to my mind what ugly brute  
Was likest Pym just then, they yelled us  
out,Locked the doors after us, and here are we.  
Vane. Eliot's old method . . .Sav. Prithee, Vane, a truce  
To Eliot and his times; and the great  
Duke,And how to manage Parliaments! 'Twas  
youAdvised the Queen to summon this: why,  
Strafford(To do him justice) would not hear of it.  
Vane. Say rather, you have done the  
best of turnsTo Strafford: he's at York, we all know  
why.I would you had not set the Scots on Straf-  
fordTill Strafford put down Pym for us, my  
lord!Sav. Was it I altered Strafford's plans?  
did I . . .

A Messenger enters.

Mes. The Queen, my lords—she sends  
me: follow meAt once; 'tis very urgent! she requires  
Your counsel: something perilous and  
strange

Occasions her command.

Sav. We follow, friend!  
Now, Vane;—your Parliament will plague  
us all!

Vane. No Strafford here beside!

Sav. If you dare hint  
I had a hand in his betrayal, sir . . .Holland. Nay, find a fitter time for quar-  
rels—PymWill overmatch the best of you; and, think,  
The Queen!Vane. Come on, then: understand,  
I loatheStrafford as much as any—but his use!  
To keep off Pym, to screen a friend or two,  
I would we had reserved him yet awhile.SCENE II.—*Whitehall.*

The QUEEN and Lady CARLISLE.

Queen. It cannot be.

Lady Car. It is so.

Queen. Why, the House

Have hardly met.

Lady Car. They met for that.

*Queen.* No, no!  
Meet to impeach Lord Strafford? 'Tis a  
jest.

*Lady Car.* A bitter one.

*Queen.* Consider! 'Tis the House  
We summoned so reluctantly, which no-  
thing  
But the disastrous issue of the war  
Persuaded us to summon. They'll wreak  
all

Their spite on us, no doubt; but the old way  
Is to begin by talk of grievances:  
They have their grievances to busy them.

*Lady Car.* Pym has begun his speech.

*Queen.* Where's Vane?—That is,  
Pym will impeach Lord Strafford if he  
leaves  
His Presidency; he's at York, we know,  
Since the Scots beat him: why should he  
leave York?

*Lady Car.* Because the King sent for  
him.

*Queen.* Ah—but if  
The King did send for him, he let him know  
We had been forced to call a Parliament—  
A step which Strafford, now I come to think,  
Was vehement against.

*Lady Car.* The policy  
Escaped him, of first striking Parliaments  
To earth, then setting them upon their feet  
And giving them a sword: but this is idle.  
Did the King send for Strafford? He will  
come.

*Queen.* And what am I to do?

*Lady Car.* What do? Fail, madam!  
Be ruined for his sake! what matters how,  
So it but stand on record that you made  
An effort, only one?

*Queen.* The King away  
At Theobald's!

*Lady Car.* Send for him at once: he  
must  
Dissolve the House.

*Queen.* Wait till Vane finds the truth  
Of the report: then . . .

*Lady Car.* —It will matter little  
What the King does. Strafford that lends  
his arm  
And breaks his heart for you!

Sir H. VANE enters.

*Vane.* The Commons, madam,  
Are sitting with closed doors. A huge de-  
bate,  
No lack of noise; but nothing, I should  
guess,  
Concerning Strafford: Pym has certainly  
Not spoken yet.

*Queen* [to Lady CARLISLE]. You hear?

*Lady Car.* I do not hear  
That the King's sent for!

*Vane.* Savile will be able  
To tell you more.

HOLLAND enters.

*Queen.* The last news, Holland?

*Holland.* Pym  
Is raging like a fire. The whole House  
means

To follow him together to Whitehall  
And force the King to give up Strafford.

*Queen.* Strafford?

*Holland.* If they content themselves with  
Strafford! Laud  
Is talked of, Cottington and Windebank  
too.

Pym has not left out one of them—I would  
You heard Pym raging!

*Queen.* Vane, go find the King!  
Tell the King, Vane, the People follow Pym  
To brave us at Whitehall!

SAVILE enters.

*Sav.* Not to Whitehall—  
'Tis to the Lords they go: they seek redress  
On Strafford from his peers—the legal way,  
They call it.

*Queen.* (Wait, Vane!)

*Sav.* But the adage gives  
Long life to threatened men. Strafford can  
save

Himself so readily: at York, remember,  
In his own county: what has he to fear?  
The Commons only mean to frighten him  
From leaving York. Surely, he will not  
come.

*Queen.* Lucy, he will not come!

*Lady Car.* Once more, the King  
Has sent for Strafford. He will come.

*Vane.* Oh doubtless!  
And bring destruction with him: that's his  
way.

What but his coming spoilt all Conway's  
plan?

The King must take his counsel, choose his  
friends,

Be wholly ruled by him! What's the result?  
The North that was to rise, Ireland to  
help—

What came of it? In my poor mind, a  
fright

Is no prodigious punishment.

*Lady Car.* A fright?

Pym will fail worse than Strafford if he  
thinks  
To frighten him. [To the QUEEN.] You  
will not save him then?

*Sav.* When something like a charge is  
made, the King  
Will best know how to save him: and 'tis  
clear,

While Strafford suffers nothing by the  
matter,

The King may reap advantage: this in  
question,

No dinning you with ship-money com-  
plaints!



*Queen* [to Lady CARLISLE]. If we dissolve them, who will pay the army?  
Protect us from the insolent Scots?

*Lady Car.* In truth,  
I know not, madam. Strafford's fate concerns

Me little: you desired to learn what course  
Would save him: I obey you.

*Vane.* Notice, too,  
There can't be fairer ground for taking full  
Revenge—(Strafford's revengeful)—than  
he'll have

Against his old friend Pym.

*Queen.* Why, he shall claim  
Vengeance on Pym!

*Vane.* And Strafford, who is he  
To 'scape unscathed amid the accidents  
That harass all beside? I, for my part,  
Should look for something of discomfiture  
Had the King trusted me so thoroughly  
And been so paid for it.

*Holland.* He'll keep at York:  
All will blow over: he'll return no worse,  
Humbled a little, thankful for a place  
Under as good a man. Oh, we'll dispense  
With seeing Strafford for a month or two!

STRAFFORD enters.

*Queen.* You here!

*Straf.* The King sends for me,  
madam.

*Queen.* Sir,  
The King . . .

*Straf.* An urgent matter that  
imports the King!  
[To Lady CARLISLE.] Why, Lucy, what's  
in agitation now,  
That all this muttering and shrugging, see,  
Begins at me? They do not speak!

*Lady Car.* 'Tis welcome!  
For we are proud of you—happy and proud  
To have you with us, S'trafford! You  
were staunch

At Durham: you did well there! Had you  
not

Been stayed, you might have . . . we said,  
even now,

Our hope's in you!

*Vane* [to Lady CARLISLE]. The Queen  
would speak with you.

*Straf.* Will one of you, his servants here,  
vouchsafe

To signify my presence to the King?

*Sav.* An urgent matter?

*Straf.* None that touches you,  
Lord Savile! Say, it were some treacherous  
Sly pitiful intriguing with the Scots—  
You would go free, at least! (They half  
divine

My purpose!) Madam, shall I see the  
King?

The service I would render, much concerns  
His welfare.

*Queen.* But his Majesty, my lord,

May not be here, may . . .

*Straf.* Its importance, then,  
Must plead excuse for this withdrawal,  
madam,

And for the grief it gives Lord Savile here.

*Queen* [who has been conversing with  
VANE and HOLLAND.]. The King will  
see you, sir!

[To Lady CARLISLE.] Mark me:  
Pym's worst

Is done by now: he has impeached the Earl,  
Or found the Earl too strong for him, by  
now.

Let us not seem instructed! We should  
work

No good to Strafford, but deform ourselves  
With shame in the world's eye. [To STRAF-  
FORD.] His Majesty

Has much to say with you.

*Straf.* Time fleeting, too!  
[To Lady CARLISLE.] No means of getting  
them away? And she—

What does she whisper? Does she know  
my purpose?

What does she think of it? Get them  
away!

*Queen* [to Lady CARLISLE]. He comes  
to baffle Pym—he thinks the danger  
Far off: tell him no word of it! a time  
For help will come; we'll not be wanting  
then.

Keep him in play, Lucy—you, self-pos-  
sessed

And calm! [To STRAFFORD.] To spare  
your lordship some delay

I will myself acquaint the King. [To Lady  
CARLISLE.] Beware!

[The QUEEN, VANE, HOLLAND, and  
SAVILE go out.]

*Straf.* She knows it?

*Lady Car.* Tell me, Strafford!

*Straf.* Afterward!  
This moment's the great moment of all  
time.

She knows my purpose?

*Lady Car.* Thoroughly: just now  
She bade me hide it from you.

*Straf.* Quick, dear child,  
The whole o' the scheme?

*Lady Car.* (Ah, he would learn if they  
Connive at Pym's procedure! Could they  
but

Have once apprised the King! But there's  
no time

For falsehood, now.) Strafford, the whole  
is known.

*Straf.* Known and approved?

*Lady Car.* Hardly discountenanced.

*Straf.* And the King—say, the King  
consents as well?

*Lady Car.* The King's not yet informed,  
but will not dare

To interpose.

*Straf.* What need to wait him, then?

He'll sanction it! I stayed, child, tell him,  
long!

It vexed me to the soul—this waiting here.  
You know him, there's no counting on the  
King.

Tell him I waited long!

*Lady Car.* (What can he mean?  
Rejoice at the King's hollowness?)

*Straf.* I knew  
They would be glad of it,—all over once,  
I knew they would be glad: but he'd contrive,

The Queen and he, to mar, by helping it,  
An angel's making.

*Lady Car.* (Is he mad?) Dear  
Strafford,

You were not wont to look so happy.

*Straf.* Sweet,  
I tried obedience thoroughly. I took  
The King's wild plan! of course, ere I  
could reach

My army, Conway ruined it. I drew  
The wrecks together, raised all heaven and  
earth,

And would have fought the Scots: the King  
at once

Made truce with them. Then, Lucy, then,  
dear child,

God put it in my mind to love, serve, die  
For Charles, but never to obey him more!  
While he endured their insolence at Ripon  
I fell on them at Durham. But you'll tell  
The King I waited? All the anteroom  
Is filled with my adherents.

*Lady Car.* Strafford—Strafford,  
What daring act is this you hint?

*Straf.* No, no!  
'Tis here, not daring if you knew? all here!

(Drawing papers from his breast.  
Full proof, see, ample proof—does the  
Queen know

I have such damning proof? Bedford and  
Essex,

Brooke, Warwick, Savile (did you notice  
Savile?

The simper that I spoilt?), Saye, Mandeville—

Sold to the Scots, body and soul, by Pym!

*Lady Car.* Great heaven!  
*Straf.* From Savile

and his lords, to Pym  
And his losels, crushed!—Pym shall not  
ward the blow

Nor Savile creep aside from it! The Crew  
And the Cabal—I crush them!

*Lady Car.* And you, go—  
Strafford,—and now you go?—

*Straf.* —About no work  
In the background, I promise you! I go  
Straight to the House of Lords to claim  
these knaves.

Mainwaring!

*Lady Car.* Stay—stay, Strafford!  
*Straf.* She'll return,

The Queen—some little project of her own!  
No time to lose: the King takes fright per-  
haps.

*Lady Car.* Pym's strong, remember!  
*Straf.* Very strong, as fits

The Faction's head—with no offence to  
Hampden,

Vane, Ruyard and my loving Hollis: one  
And all they lodge within the Tower to-  
night

In just equality, Bryan! Mainwaring!  
(Many of his Adherents enter.)

The Peers debate just now (a lucky chance).  
On the Scots' war; my visit's opportune.

When all is over, Bryan, you proceed  
To Ireland: these dispatches, mark me,

Bryan,  
Are for the Deputy, and these for Ormond:

We want the army here—my army, raised  
At such a cost, that should have done such

good,  
And was inactive all the time! no matter,

We'll find a use for it. Willis . . . or, no—  
you!

You, friend, make haste to York: bear  
this at once . . .

Or,—better stay for form's sake, see  
yourself

The news you carry. You remain with me  
To execute the Parliament's command,

Mainwaring! Help to seize these lesser  
knaves,

Take care there's no escaping at back-  
doors;

I'll not have one escape, mind me—not  
one!

I seem revengeful, Lucy? Did you know  
What these men dare!

*Lady Car.* It is so much they dare!  
*Straf.* I proved that long ago; my turn  
is now.

Keep sharp watch, Goring, on the citizens!  
Observe who harbours any of the brood

That scramble off: be sure they smart for it!  
Our coffers are but lean.

And you, child, too,  
Shall have your task; deliver this to Laud.

Laud will not be the slowest in my praise:  
'Thorough' he'll cry!—Foolish, to be so

glad!  
This life is gay and glowing, after all:

'Tis worth while, Lucy, having foes like  
mine

Just for the bliss of crushing them. To-day  
Is worth the living for.

*Lady Car.* That reddening brow!  
You seem . . .

*Straf.* Well—do I not? I would  
be well—

I could not but be well on such a day!  
And, this day ended, 'tis of slight import

How long the ravaged frame subjects the  
soul

In Strafford.

*Lady Car.* Noble Strafford!  
*Straf.* No farewell!  
 I'll see you anon, to-morrow—the first thing.  
 —If She should come to stay me!  
*Lady Car.* Go—'tis nothing—  
 Only my heart that swells: it has been thus  
 Ere now: go, Strafford.  
*Straf.* To-night, then, let it be.  
 I must see Him: you, the next after Him.  
 I'll tell you how Pym looked. Follow me,  
 friends!  
 You, gentlemen, shall see a sight this hour  
 To talk of all your lives. Close after me!  
 'My friend of friends!'

[STRAFFORD and the rest go out.  
*Lady Car.* The King—ever the King!  
 No thought of one beside, whose little word  
 Unveils the King to him—one word from  
 me,  
 Which yet I do not breathe!

Ah, have I spared  
 Strafford a pang, and shall I seek reward  
 Beyond that memory? Surely too, some  
 way  
 He is the better for my love. No, no—  
 He would not look so joyous—I'll believe  
 His very eye would never sparkle thus,  
 Had I not prayed for him this long, long  
 while.

SCENE III.—*The Antechamber of  
 the House of Lords.*

*Many of the Presbyterian Party. The  
 Adherents of STRAFFORD, etc.*

*A Group of Presbyterians.*—1. I tell you  
 he struck Maxwell: Maxwell sought  
 To stay the Earl: he struck him and passed  
 on.

2. Fear as you may, keep a good counte-  
 nance  
 Before these rufflers.

3. Strafford here the first,  
 With the great army at his back!

4. No doubt.  
 I would Pym had made haste: that's Bryan,  
 hush—

The gallant pointing.  
*Strafford's Followers.*—1. Mark these  
 worthies, now!

2. A goodly gathering! 'Where the  
 carcass is

'There shall the eagles'—what's the rest?  
 3. For eagles

Say crows.  
*A Presbyterian.* Stand back, sirs!

*One of Strafford's Followers.* Are we  
 in Geneva?

*A Presbyterian.* No, nor in Ireland; we  
 have leave to breathe.

*One of Strafford's Followers.* Truly?  
 Behold how privileged we be

That serve 'King Pym'! There's Some-  
 one at Whitehall

Who skulks obscure; but Pym struts . . .  
*The Presbyterian.* Nearer.

*A Follower of Strafford.* Higher,  
 We look to see him. [To his Companions.]

I'm to have St. John  
 In charge; was he among the knaves just  
 now

That followed Pym within there?  
*Another.* The gaunt man

Talking with Rudyard. Did the Earl expect  
 Pym at his heels so fast? I like it not.

MAXWELL enters.

*Another.* Why, man, they rush into the  
 net! Here's Maxwell—

Ha, Maxwell? How the brethren flock  
 around

The fellow! Do you feel the Earl's hand yet  
 Upon your shoulder, Maxwell?

*Max.* Gentlemen,  
 Stand back! a great thing passes here.

*A Follower of Strafford.* [To another.] The  
 Earl

Is at his work! [To M.] Say, Maxwell, what  
 great thing!

Speak out! [To a Presbyterian.] Friend,  
 I've a kindness for you! Friend,

I've seen you with St. John: O stockish-  
 ness!

Wear such a ruff, and never call to mind  
 St. John's head in a charger? How, the  
 plague,

Not laugh?  
*Another.* Say, Maxwell, what great  
 thing!

*Another.* Nay, wait:  
 The jest will be to wait.

*First.* And who's to bear  
 These demure hypocrites? You'd swear  
 they came . . .

Came . . . just as we come!  
 [A Puritan enters hastily and without  
 observing STRAFFORD'S Followers.

*The Puritan.* How goes on the work?  
 Has Pym . . .

*A Follower of Strafford.* The secret's out  
 at last. Aha,

The carrion's scented! Welcome, crow the  
 first!

Gorge merrily, you with the blinking eye!  
 'King Pym has fallen!'

*The Puritan.* Pym?  
*A Strafford.* Pym!

*A Presbyterian.* Only Pym?  
*Many of Strafford's Followers.* No, bro-  
 ther, not Pym only; Vane as well,

Rudyard as well, Hampden, St. John as  
 well!

*A Presbyterian.* My mind misgives: can  
 it be true?

*Another.* Lost! Lost!  
*A Strafford.* Say we true, Maxwell?

*The Puritan.* Pride before destruction,  
A haughty spirit goeth before a fall.

*Many of Strafford's Followers.* Ah now!

The very thing! A word in season!

A golden apple in a silver picture,  
To greet Pym as he passes!

*[The doors at the back begin to open,  
noise and light issuing.]*

*Max.* Stand back, all!

*Many of the Presbyterians.* I hold with  
Pym! And I!

*Strafford's Followers.* Now for the text!  
He comes! Quick!

*The Puritan.* How hath the oppressor  
ceased!

The Lord hath broken the staff of the  
wicked!

The sceptre of the rulers, he who smote  
The people in wrath with a continual  
stroke,

That ruled the nations in his anger—he  
Is persecuted and none hindereth!

*[The doors open, and STRAFFORD issues  
in the greatest disorder, and amid cries  
from within of 'Void the House!']*

*Straf.* Impeach me! Pym! I never  
struck, I think,

The felon on that calm insulting mouth  
When it proclaimed—Pym's mouth pro-  
claimed me . . . God!

Was it a word, only a word that held  
The outrageous blood back on my heart—  
which beats!

Which beats! Some one word—'Traitor,'  
did he say,

Bending that eye, brimful of bitter fire,  
Upon me?

*Max.* In the Commons' name, their  
servant

Demands Lord Strafford's sword.

*Straf.* What did you say?

*Max.* The Commons bid me ask your  
lordship's sword.

*Straf.* Let us go forth: follow me, gentle-  
men!

Draw your swords too: cut any down that  
bar us.

On the King's service! Maxwell, clear the  
way! *[The Presbyterians prepare  
to dispute his passage.]*

*Straf.* I stay: the King himself shall see  
me here.

Your tablets, fellow!  
*[To MAINWARING.]* Give that to the  
King!

Yes, Maxwell, for the next half-hour; let  
be!

Nay, you shall take my sword!  
*[MAXWELL advances to take it.]*

Or, no—not that!

Their blood, perhaps, may wipe out all thus  
far,

All up to that—not that! Why, friend, you  
see

When the King lays your head beneath my  
foot

It will not pay for that. Go, all of you!  
*Max.* I dare, my lord, to disobey: none  
stir!

*Straf.* This gentle Maxwell!—Do not  
touch him, Bryan!

*[To the Presbyterians.]* Whichever cur of  
you will carry this

Escapes his fellow's fate. None saves his  
life?

None?  
*[Cries from within of 'STRAFFORD!']*

Slingsby, I've loved you at least:  
make haste!

Stab me! I have not time to tell you why.  
You then, my Bryan! Mainwaring, you  
then!

Is it because I spoke so hastily  
At Allerton? The King had vexed me.

*[To the Presbyterians.]* You!  
—Not even you? If I live over this,

The King is sure to have your heads, you  
know!

But what if I can't live this minute  
through?

Pym, who is there with his pursuing smile!  
*[Louder cries of 'STRAFFORD!']*

The King! I troubled him, stood in the  
way

Of his negotiations, was the one  
Great obstacle to peace, the Enemy

Of Scotland: and he sent for me, from  
York,

My safety guaranteed—having prepared  
A Parliament—I see! And at Whitehall

The Queen was whispering with Vane—I  
see

The trap! *[Tearing off the George.]*

I tread a gewgaw underfoot,  
And cast a memory from me. One stroke,  
now!

*[His own Adherents disarm him. Re-  
newed cries of 'STRAFFORD!']*

England! I see thy arm in this and yield.

Pray you now—Pym awaits me—pray you  
now!

*[STRAFFORD reaches the doors: they open  
wide. HAMPDEN and a crowd dis-  
covered, and, at the bar, Pym standing  
apart. As STRAFFORD kneels, the scene  
shuts.]*

## ACT IV

### SCENE I.—Whitehall.

*The KING, the QUEEN, HOLLIS, Lady CAR-  
LISLE. (VANE, HOLLAND, SAVILE, in  
the background.)*

*Lady Car.* Answer them, Hollis, for his  
sake! One word!

*Cha. [To HOLLIS.]* You stand, silent  
and cold, as though I were

# STRAFFORD

[ACT IV

Deceiving you—my friend, my playfellow  
Of other times. What wonder after all?  
Just so, I dreamed my People loved me.

*Hol.* Sir,  
It is yourself that you deceive, not me.  
You'll quit me comforted, your mind  
made up

That, since you've talked thus much and  
grieved thus much,

All you can do for Strafford has been  
done.

*Queen.* If you kill Strafford—(come, we  
grant you leave,  
Suppose)—

*Hol.* I may withdraw, sir?  
*Lady Car.* Hear them out!

'Tis the last chance for Strafford! Hear  
them out!

*Hol.* 'If we kill Strafford'—on the eigh-  
teenth day

Of Strafford's trial—'We!'  
*Cha.* Pym, my good Hollis—

Pym, I should say!  
*Hol.* Ah, true—sir, pardon me!

You witness our proceedings every day;  
But the screened gallery, I might have  
guessed,

Admits of such a partial glimpse at us,  
Pym takes up all the room, shuts out the  
view.

Still, on my honour, sir, the rest of the  
place

Is not unoccupied. The Commons sit  
—That's England; Ireland sends, and  
Scotland too,

Their representatives; the Peers that judge  
Are easily distinguished; one remarks  
The People here and there: but the close  
curtain

Must hide so much!  
*Queen.* Acquaint your insolent crew,

This day the curtain shall be dashed aside!  
It served a purpose.

*Hol.* Think! This very day?  
Ere Strafford rises to defend himself?

*Cha.* I will defend him, sir!—sanction  
the past

This day: it ever was my purpose. Rage  
At me, not Strafford!

*Lady Car.* Nobly!—will he not  
Do nobly?

*Hol.* Sir, you will do honestly;  
And, for that deed, I too would be a king.

*Cha.* Only, to do this now!—'deaf' (in  
your style)

'To subjects' prayers,'—I must oppose  
them now!

It seems their will the trial should pro-  
ceed,—

So palpably their will!

*Hol.* You peril much,  
But it were no bright moment save for that.

Strafford, your prime support, the sole  
roof-tree

Which props this quaking House of Privi-  
lege,

(Floods come, winds beat, and see—the  
treacherous sand!)

Doubtless, if the mere putting forth an arm  
Could save him, you'd save Strafford.

*Cha.* And they dare  
Consummate calmly this great wrong! No  
hope?

This ineffaceable wrong! No pity then?

*Hol.* No plague in store for perfidy?—  
Farewell!

You called me, sir—[To Lady CARLISLE.]  
you, lady, bade me come

To save the Earl: I came, thank God for it,  
To learn how far such perfidy can go!

You, sir, concert with me on saving him  
Who have just ruined Strafford!

*Cha.* I?—and how?  
*Hol.* Eighteen days long he throws, one  
after one,

Pym's charges back: a blind moth-eaten  
law!

—He'll break from it at last: and whom to  
thank?

The mouse that gnawed the lion's net for  
him

Got a good friend,—but he, the other  
mouse,

That looked on while the lion freed him-  
self—

Fared he so well, does any fable say?  
*Cha.* What can you mean?

*Hol.* Pym never  
could have proved

Strafford's design of bringing up the troops  
To force this kingdom to obedience:

Vane—  
Your servant, not our friend, has proved it.

*Cha.* Vane?  
*Hol.* This day. Did Vane deliver up or  
no

Those notes which, furnished by his son  
to Pym,

Seal Strafford's fate?  
*Cha.* Sir, as I live, I know

Nothing that Vane has done! What trea-  
son next?

I wash my hands of it. Vane, speak the  
truth!

Ask Vane himself!

*Hol.* I will not speak to Vane,  
Who speak to Pym and Hampden every  
day.

*Queen.* Speak to Vane's master then!  
What gain to him

Were Strafford's death?  
*Hol.* Ha? Strafford cannot turn

As you, sir, sit there—bid you forth, de-  
mand

If every hateful act were not set down  
In his commission?—whether you con-  
trived

Or no, that all the violence should seem

His work, the gentle ways—your own,—  
his part,  
To counteract the King's kind impulses—  
While . . . but you know what he could  
say! And then  
He might produce,—mark, sir!—a certain  
charge  
To set the King's express command aside,  
If need were, and be blameless. He might  
add . . .

*Cha.* Enough!

*Hol.* —Who bade him break  
the Parliament,  
Find some pretence for setting up sword-  
law!

*Queen.* Retire!

*Cha.* Once more, whatever Vane  
dared do,  
I know not: he is rash, a fool—I know  
Nothing of Vane!

*Hol.* Well—I believe you, Sir,  
Believe me, in return, that . . .  
[Turning to Lady CARLISLE.] Gentle lady,  
The few words I would say, the stone  
might hear

Sooner than these,—I rather speak to  
you,

You, with the heart! The question, trust  
me, takes

Another shape, to-day: not, if the King  
Or England shall succumb,—but, who  
shall pay

The forfeit, Strafford or his master. Sir,  
You loved me once: think on my warning  
now! [Goes out.]

*Cha.* On you and on your warning both!  
—Carlisle!

That paper!

*Queen.* But consider!

*Cha.* Give it me!  
There, signed—will that content you? Do  
not speak!

You have betrayed me, Vane! See! any  
day,

According to the tenor of that paper,  
He bids your brother bring the army up,  
Strafford shall head it and take full re-  
venge.

Seek Strafford! Let him have the same,  
before

He rises to defend himself!

*Queen.* In truth?  
That your shrewd Hollis should have  
worked a change

Like this! You, late reluctant . . .

*Cha.* Say, Carlisle,  
Your brother Percy brings the army up,  
Falls on the Parliament—(I'll think of you,  
My Hollis!) say, we plotted long—'tis  
mine,

The scheme is mine, remember! Say, I  
cursed

Vane's folly in your hearing! If the Earl  
Does rise to do us shame, the fault shall lie

With you, Carlisle!

*Lady Car.* Nay, fear not me! but  
still  
That's a bright moment, sir, you throw  
away.

Tear down the veil and save him!

*Queen.* Go, Carlisle!

*Lady Car.* (I shall see Strafford—speak  
to him: my heart

Must never beat so, then! And if I tell  
The truth? What's gained by falsehood?

There they stand  
Whose trade it is, whose life it is! How  
vain

To gild such rottenness! Strafford shall  
know,

Thoroughly know them!

*Queen.* Trust to me! [To

CARLISLE.] Carlisle,  
You seem inclined, alone of all the Court,

To serve poor Strafford: this bold plan of  
yours

Merits much praise, and yet . . .

*Lady Car.* Time presses, madam.

*Queen.* Yet—may it not be something  
premature?

Strafford defends himself to-day—reserves  
Some wondrous effort, one may well  
suppose!

*Lady Car.* Ay, Hollis hints as much.

*Cha.* Why linger then?  
Haste with the scheme—my scheme: I  
shall be there

To watch his look. Tell him I watch his  
look!

*Queen.* Stay, we'll precede you!

*Lady Car.* At your pleasure.

*Cha.* Say—

Say, Vane is hardly ever at Whitehall!

I shall be there, remember!

*Lady Car.* Doubt me not.

*Cha.* On our return, Carlisle, we wait  
you here!

*Lady Car.* I'll bring his answer. Sir, I  
follow you.

(Prove the King faithless, and I take away  
All Strafford cares to live for: let it be—  
'Tis the King's scheme!

My Strafford, I can save,  
Nay, I have saved you, yet am scarce con-  
tent,

Because my poor name will not cross your  
mind.

Strafford, how much I am unworthy you!)

SCENE II.—A Passage adjoining  
Westminster Hall.

Many Groups of Spectators of the Trial.  
Officers of the Court, etc.

1st Spec. More crowd than ever! Not  
know Hampden, man?

That's he, by Pym, Pym that is speaking  
now.

# STRAFFORD

[ACT IV

No, truly, if you look so high you'll see  
Little enough of either!

*2nd Spec.* Stay: Pym's arm  
Points like a prophet's rod.

*3rd Spec.* Ay, ay, we've heard  
Some pretty speaking: yet the Earl escapes.

*4th Spec.* I fear it: just a foolish word  
or two

About his children—and we see, forsooth,  
Not England's foe in Strafford, but the  
man

Who, sick, half-blind . . .

*2nd Spec.* What's that Pym's  
saying now

Which makes the curtains flutter? look!  
A hand

Clutches them. Ah! The King's hand!

*5th Spec.* I had thought  
Pym was not near so tall. What said he,  
friend?

*2nd Spec.* 'Nor is this way a novel way  
of blood,'

And the Earl turns as if to . . . look!  
look!

*Many Spectators.* There!  
What ails him? no—he rallies, see—goes  
on,

And Strafford smiles. Strange!

*An Officer.* Haselrig!

*Many Spectators.* Friend? Friend?

*The Officer.* Lost, utterly lost: just when  
we looked for Pym

To make a stand against the ill effects  
Of the Earl's speech! Is Haselrig with-  
out?

Pym's message is to him.

*3rd Spec.* Now, said I true?  
Will the Earl leave them yet at fault or no?

*1st Spec.* Never believe it, man! These  
notes of Vane's

Ruin the Earl.

*5th Spec.* A brave end: not a whit  
Less firm, less Pym all over! Then, the trial  
Is closed. No—Strafford means to speak  
again?

*An Officer.* Stand back, there!

*5th Spec.* Why, the  
Earl is coming hither!

Before the court breaks up! His brother,  
look,—

You'd say he'd deprecated some fierce act  
In Strafford's mind just now.

*An Officer.* Stand back, I say!

*2nd Spec.* Who's the veiled woman that  
he talks with?

*Many Spectators.* Hush—  
The Earl! the Earl!

[Enter STRAFFORD, SLINGSBY, and other  
Secretaries, HOLLIS, Lady CARLISLE,  
MAXWELL, BALFOUR, etc. STRAFFORD  
converses with Lady CARLISLE.

*Hol.* So near the end! Be patient—  
Return!

*Straf.* [to his Secretaries]. Here—any-  
where—or, 'tis freshest here!

To spend one's April here, the blossom-  
month:

Set it down here!

[They arrange a table, papers, etc.

So, Pym cat, quail, can cower  
Because I glance at him, yet more's to do?

What's to be answered, Slingsby? Let us  
end!

[To Lady CARLISLE.] Child, I refuse his  
offer; whatsoe'er

It be! Too late! Tell me no word of him!  
'Tis something, Hollis, I assure you that—

To stand, sick as you art, some eighteen  
days

Fighting for life and fame against a pack  
Of very curs, that lie through thick and  
thin,

Eat flesh and bread by wholesale, and can't  
say

'Strafford' if it would take my life!

*Lady Car.* Be moved!  
Glance at the paper!

*Straf.* Already at my heels!  
Pym's faulting bloodhounds scent the  
track again.

Peace, child! Now, Slingsby!

[Messengers from LANE and other of  
STRAFFORD'S Counsel within the Hall  
are coming and going during the Scene.

*Straf.* [setting himself to write and dic-  
tate]. I shall beat you, Hollis!

Do you know that? In spite of St. John's  
tricks,

In spite of Pym—your Pym who shrank  
from me!

Eliot would have contrived it otherwise.  
[To a Messenger.] In truth? This slip, tell

Lane, contains as much

As I can call to mind about the matter.  
Eliot would have disdained . . .

[Calling after the Messenger.] And Rad-  
cliffe, say,

The only person who could answer Pym,  
Is safe in prison, just for that.

Well, well!

It had not been recorded in that case,  
I baffled you.

[To Lady CARLISLE.] Nay, child, why look  
so grieved?

All's gained without the King! You saw  
Pym quail?

What shall I do when they acquit me, think  
you,

But tranquilly resume my task as though  
Nothing had intervened since I proposed

To call that traitor to account! Such tricks,  
Trust me, shall not be played a second  
time,

Not even against Laud, with his grey  
hair—

Your good work, Hollis! Peace! To make  
amends,

You, Lucy, shall be here when I impeach Pym and his fellows.

*Hol.* Wherefore not protest Against our whole proceeding, long ago? Why feel indignant now? Why stand this while

Enduring patient's?

*Straf.* Child, I'll tell you— You, and not Pym—you, the slight graceful girl

Tall for a flowering lily, and not Hollis— Why I stood patient! I was fool enough To see the will of England in Pym's will; To fear, myself had wronged her, and to wait

Her judgment: when, behold, in place of it . . .

[*To a Messenger who whispers.*] Tell Lane to answer no such question! Law,— I grapple with their law! I'm here to try My actions by their standard, not my own!

Their law allowed that levy: what's the rest

To Pym, or Lane, any but God and me?

*Lady Car.* The King's so weak! Secure this chance! 'Twas Vane, Never forget, who furnished Pym the notes . . .

*Straf.* Fit,—very fit, those precious notes of Vane,

To close the Trial worthily! I feared Some spice of nobleness might linger yet And spoil the character of all the past.

Vane eased me . . . and I will go back and say

As much—to Pym, to England! Follow me!

I have a word to say! There, my defence Is done!

Stay! why be proud? Why care to own

My gladness, my surprise?—Nay, not surprise!

Wherefore insist upon the little pride Of doing all myself, and sparing him

The pain? Child, say the triumph is my King's!

When Pym grew pale, and trembled, and sank down,

One image was before me: could I fail? Child, care not for the past, so indistinct,

Obscure—there's nothing to forgive in it 'Tis so forgotten! From this day begins

A new life, founded on a new belief In Charles.

*Hol.* In Charles? Rather believe in Pym!

And here he comes in proof! Appeal to Pym!

Say how unfair . . . *Straf.* To Pym? I would say nothing!

I would not look upon Pym's face again.

*Lady Car.* Stay, let me have to think I pressed your hand!

[*STRAFFORD and his friends go out.*]

*Enter HAMPDEN and VANE.*

*Vane.* O Hampden, save the great misguided man!

Plead Strafford's cause with Pym! I have remarked

He moved no muscle when we all de- claimed

Against him: you had but to breathe—he turned

Those kind calm eyes upon you.

[*Enter PYM, the Solicitor-General ST. JOHN, the Managers of the Trial, FIENNES, RUDYARD, etc.*]

*Rud.* Horrible! Till now all hearts were with you: I with- draw

For one. Too horrible! But we mistake Your purpose, Pym: you cannot snatch

away The last spar from the drowning man.

*Fien.* He talks With St. John of it—see, how quietly!

[*To other Presbyterians.*] You'll join us? Strafford may deserve the worst:

But this new course is monstrous. Vane, take heart!

This Bill of his Attainder shall not have One true man's hand to it.

*Vane.* Consider, Pym! Confront your Bill, your own Bill: what is it?

You cannot catch the Earl on any charge,—

No man will say the law has hold of him On any charge; and therefore you resolve

To take the general sense on his desert, As though no law existed, and we met

To found one. You refer to Parliament To speak its thought upon the abortive

mass Of half-borne-out assertions, dubious hints Hereafter to be cleared, distortions—ay,

And wild inventions. Every man is saved The task of fixing any single charge

On Strafford: he has but to see in him The enemy of England.

*Pym.* A right scruple! I have heard some called England's enemy

With less consideration.

*Vane.* Pity me! Indeed you made me think I was your

friend! I who have murdered Strafford, how re- move

That memory from me? *Pym.* I absolve you, Vane.

Take you no care for aught that you have done!



STRAFFORD

[ACT IV

*Vane.* John Hampden, not this Bill!  
Reject this Bill!

He staggers through the ordeal: let him go,  
Strew no fresh fire before him! Plead for us!

When Strafford spoke, your eyes were thick with tears!

*Hamp.* England speaks louder: who are we, to play

The generous pardoner at her expense,  
Magnanimously waive advantages,  
And, if he conquer us, applaud his skill?

*Vane.* He was your friend.

*Pym.* I have heard that before.

*Fien.* And England trusts you.

*Hamp.* Shame be his, who turns  
The opportunity of serving her  
She trusts him with, to his own mean account—

Who would look nobly frank at her expense!

*Fien.* I never thought it could have come to this.

*Pym.* But I have made myself familiar,  
Fiennes,

With this one thought—have walked, and sat, and slept,

This thought before me. I have done such things,

Being the chosen man that should destroy  
The traitor. You have taken up this thought

To play with, for a gentle stimulant,  
To give a dignity to idler life  
By the dim prospect of emprise to come,  
But ever with the softening, sure belief,  
That all would end some strange way right at last.

*Fien.* Had we made out some weightier charge!

*Pym.* You say  
That these are petty charges: can we come  
To the real charge at all? There he is safe  
In tyranny's stronghold. Apostasy  
Is not a crime, treachery not a crime:  
The cheek burns, the blood tingles, when  
you speak

The words, but where's the power to take  
revenge

Upon them? We must make occasion  
serve,—

The oversight shall pay for the main sin  
That mocks us.

*Rud.* But this unexampled course,  
This Bill!

*Pym.* By this, we roll the clouds away  
Of precedent and custom, and at once  
Bid the great beacon-light God sets in all,  
The conscience of each bosom, shine upon  
The guilt of Strafford: each man lay his  
hand

Upon his breast, and judge!

*Vane.* I only see

Strafford, nor pass his corpse for all beyond!

*Rud. and others.* Forgive him! He would join us, now he finds

What the King counts reward! The pardon, too,

Should be your own. Yourself should bear to Strafford

The pardon of the Commons.

*Pym.* Meet him? Strafford? Have we to meet once more, then? Be it so!

And yet—the prophecy seemed half fulfilled

When, at the Trial, as he gazed, my youth,  
Our friendship, divers thoughts came back at once

And left me, for a time . . . 'Tis very sad!  
To-morrow we discuss the points of law  
With Lane—to-morrow?

*Vane.* Not before to-morrow—  
So, time enough! I knew you would relent!

*Pym.* The next day, Haselrig, you introduce

The Bill of his Attainder. Pray for me!

SCENE III.—Whitehall.

The KING.

*Cha.* My loyal servant! To defend himself

Thus irresistibly,—withholding aught  
That seemed to implicate us!

We have done  
Less gallantly by Strafford. Well, the future  
Must recompense the past.

She tarries long.  
I understand you, Strafford, now!

The scheme—  
Carlisle's mad scheme—he'll sanction it,  
I fear,

For love of me. 'Twas too precipitate:  
Before the army's fairly on its march,  
He'll be a large: no matter.

Well, Carlisle?

Enter PYM.

*Pym.* Fear me not, sir:—my mission is  
to save,

This time.  
*Cha.* To break thus on me! Unannounced!

*Pym.* It is of Strafford I would speak.  
*Cha.* No more

Of Strafford! I have heard too much from  
you.

*Pym.* I spoke, sir, for the People; will  
you hear

A word upon my own account?  
*Cha.* Of Strafford?

(So turns the tide already? Have we  
tamed

The insolent brawler?—Strafford's eloquence

Is swift in its effect.) Lord Strafford, sir,  
Has spoken for himself.

*Pym.* Sufficiently.  
I would apprise you of the novel course  
The People take: the Trial fails.

*Cha.* Yes, yes:  
We are aware, sir; for your part in it  
Means shall be found to thank you.

*Pym.* Pray you, read  
This schedule! I would learn from your  
own mouth

—(It is a matter much concerning me)—  
Whether, if two Estates of us concede  
The death of Strafford, on the grounds set  
forth

Within that parchment, you, sir, can re-  
solve

To grant your own consent to it. This Bill  
Is framed by me. If you determine, sir,  
That England's manifested will should  
guide

Your judgment, else another week such will  
Shall manifest itself. If not,—I cast  
Aside the measure.

*Cha.* You can hinder, then,  
The introduction of this Bill?

*Pym.* I can.  
*Cha.* He is my friend, sir: I have wronged  
him; mark you,

Had I not wronged him, this might be.  
You think

Because you hate the Earl . . . (turn not  
away,

We know you hate him)—no one else  
could love

Strafford: but he has saved me, some  
affirm.

Think of his pride! And do you know one  
strange,

One frightful thing? We all have used the  
man

As though a drudge of ours, with not a  
source

Of happy thoughts except in us; and yet  
Strafford has wife and children, household

cares,  
Just as if we had never been. Ah sir,

You are moved, even you, a solitary man  
Wed to your cause—to England if you

will!

*Pym.* Yes—think, my soul—to Eng-  
land! Draw not back!

*Cha.* Prevent that Bill, sir! All your  
course seems fair

Till now. Why, in the end, 'tis I should  
sign

The warrant for his death! You have said  
much

I ponder on; I never meant, indeed!  
Strafford should serve me any more. I

take  
The Commons' counsel; but this Bill is  
yours—

Not worthy of its leader: care not, sir,

For that, however! I will quite forget  
You named it to me. You are satisfied?

*Pym.* Listen to me, sir! Eliot laid his  
hand,

Wasted and white, upon my forehead  
once;

Wentworth—he's gone now!—has talked  
on, whole nights,

And I beside him; Hampden loves me: sir,  
How can I breathe and not wish England

well,  
And her King well?

*Cha.* I thank you, sir, who leave  
That King his servant. Thanks, sir!

*Pym.* Let me speak!  
—Who may not speak again; whose spirit

yearns  
For a cool night after this weary day:

—Who would not have my soul turn sicker  
yet

In a new task, more fatal, more august,  
More full of England's utter weal or woe.

I thought, sir, could I find myself with  
you,

After this trial, alone, as man to man—  
I might say something, warn you, pray

you, save—  
Mark me, King Charles, save—you!

But God must do it. Yet I warn you, sir—  
(With Strafford's faded eyes yet full on me)

As you would have no deeper question  
moved

—'How long the Many must endure the  
One,'

Assure me, sir, if England give assent  
To Strafford's death, you will not interfere!

Or—  
*Cha.* God forsakes me. I am in a net

And cannot move. Let all be as you say!

*Enter Lady CARLISLE.*

*Lady Car.* He loves you—looking beau-  
tiful with joy

Because you sent me! he would spare you  
all

The pain! he never dreamed you would  
forsake

Your servant in the evil day—nay, see  
Your scheme returned! That generous

heart of his!  
He needs it not—or, needing it, disdains

A course that might endanger you—you,  
sir,

Whom Strafford from his inmost soul . . .  
[Seeing *PYM.*] Well met!

No fear for Strafford! All that's true and  
brave

On your own side shall help us: we are now  
Stronger than ever.

Ha—what, sir, is this?  
All is not well! What parchment have you

there?  
*Pym.* Sir, much is saved us both.

*Lady Car.* This Bill! Your lip

## STRAFFORD

[ACT V

Whitens—you could not read one line to me  
Your voice would falter so!  
*Pym.* No recreant yet!  
The great word went from England to my soul,  
And I arose. The end is very near.  
*Lady Car.* I am to save him! All have shrunk beside;  
'Tis only I am left. Heaven will make strong  
The hand now as the heart. Then let both die!

### ACT V

#### SCENE I.—Whitehall.

HOLLIS, Lady CARLISLE.

*Hol.* Tell the King then! Come in with me!  
*Lady Car.* Not so!  
He must not hear till it succeeds.  
*Hol.* Succeed?  
No dream was half so vain—you'd rescue  
Strafford  
And outwit Pym! I cannot tell you... lady,  
The block pursues me, and the hideous show.  
To-day... is it to-day? And all the while  
He's sure of the King's pardon. Think, I have  
To tell this man he is to die. The King  
May rend his hair, for me! I'll not see  
Strafford!  
*Lady Car.* Only, if I succeed, remember  
—Charles  
Has saved him. He would hardly value  
life  
Unless his gift. My staunch friends wait.  
Go in—  
You must go in to Charles!  
*Hol.* And all beside  
Left Strafford long ago. The King has  
signed  
The warrant for his death! the Queen was  
sick  
Of the eternal subject. For the Court,—  
The Trial was amusing in its way,  
Only too much of it: the Earl withdrew  
In time. But you, fragile, alone, so young  
Amid rude mercenaries—you devise  
A plan to save him! Even though it fails,  
What shall reward you?  
*Lady Car.* I may go, you think,  
To France with him? And you reward me,  
friend,  
Who lived with Strafford even from his youth  
Before he set his heart on state-affairs  
And they bent down that noble brow of  
his.  
I have learned somewhat of his latter life,  
And all the future I shall know: but, Hollis,

I ought to make his youth my own as well.  
Tell me,—when he is saved!

*Hol.* My gentle friend,  
He should know all and love you, but 'tis  
vain!

*Lady Car.* Love? no—too late now!  
Let him love the King!

'Tis the King's scheme! I have your word,  
remember!

We'll keep the old delusion up. But, quick!  
Quick! Each of us has work to do, beside!  
Go to the King! I hope—Hollis—I hope!  
Say nothing of my scheme! Hush, while  
we speak

Think where he is! Now for my gallant  
friends!

*Hol.* Where he is? Calling wildly upon  
Charles,  
Guessing his fate, pacing the prison-floor.  
Let the King tell him! I'll not look on  
Strafford.

#### SCENE II.—The Tower.

STRAFFORD sitting with his Children.  
*They sing.*

*O bell' andare  
Per barca in mare,  
Verso la sera  
Di Primavera!*

*William.* The boat's in the broad moon-  
light all this while—

*Verso la sera  
Di Primavera!*

And the boat shoots from underneath the  
moon

Into the shadowy distance; only still  
You hear the dipping oar—

*Verso la sera,*

And faint, and fainter, and then all's quite  
gone,

Music and light and all, like a lost star.

*Anne.* But you should sleep, father: you  
were to sleep.

*Straf.* I do sleep, Anne; or if not—you  
must know

There's such a thing as...  
*Wil.* You're too tired to sleep?

*Straf.* It will come by-and-by and all  
day long,

In that old quiet house I told you of:

We sleep safe there.

*Anne.* Why not in Ireland?  
*Straf.* No!

Too many dreams!—That song's for  
Venice, William!

You know how Venice looks upon the  
map—

Isles that the mainland hardly can let go?

*Wil.* You've been to Venice, father?  
*Straf.* I was young, then.

*Wil.* A city with no King; that's why I like

Even a song that comes from Venice.

*Straf.* William!

*Wil.* Oh, I know why! Anne, do you love the King?

But I'll see Venice for myself one day.

*Straf.* See many lands, boy—England last of all,—

That way you'll love her best.

*Wil.* Why do men say

You sought to ruin her then?

*Straf.* Ah,—they say that.

*Wil.* Why?

*Straf.* I suppose they must have words to say,

As you to sing.

*Anne.* But they make songs beside:

Last night I heard one, in the street beneath,

That called you . . . Oh, the names!

*Wil.* Don't mind her, father!

They soon left off when I cried out to them.

*Straf.* We shall so soon be out of it, my boy!

'Tis not worth while: who heeds a foolish song?

*Wil.* Why, not the King.

*Straf.* Well: it has been the fate Of better; and yet,—wherefore not feel sure

That Time, who in the twilight comes to mend

All the fantastic day's caprice, consign To the low ground once more the ignoble

Term,

And raise the Genius on his orb again,— That Time will do me right?

*Anne.* (Shall we sing, William?)

He does not look thus when we sing.)

*Straf.* For Ireland,

Something is done: too little, but enough To show what might have been.

*Wil.* (I have no heart

To sing now! Anne, how very sad he looks!

Oh, I so hate the King for all he says!

*Straf.* Forsook them! What, the common songs will run

That I forsook the People? Nothing more?

Ay, Fame, the busy scribe, will pause, no doubt,

Turning a deaf ear to her thousand slaves Noisy to be enrolled,—will register

The curious glosses, subtle notices, Ingenious clearings-up one fain would see

Beside that plain inscription of The Name—

The Patriot Pym, or the Apostate Strafford!

[The Children resume their song timidly, but break off.

*Enter HOLLIS and an Attendant.*

*Straf.* No,—Hollis? in good time!— Who is he?

*Hol.* One

That must be present.

*Straf.* Ah—I understand.

They will not let me see poor Laud alone.

How politic! They'd use me by degrees

To solitude: and, just as you came in,

I was solicitous what life to lead

When Strafford's 'not so much as Con- stable

'In the King's service.' Is there any means To keep oneself awake? What would you do

After this bustle, Hollis, in my place?

*Hol.* Strafford!

*Straf.* Observe, not but that

Pym and you

Will find me news enough—news I shall hear

Under a quince-tree by a fish-pond side

At Wentworth. Garrard must be re-en- gaged

My newsman. Or, a better project now— What if when all's consummated, and the

Saints

Reign, and the Senate's work goes swim- mingly,—

What if I venture up, some day, unseen, To saunter through the Town, notice how

Pym,

Your Tribune, likes Whitehall, drop quietly Into a tavern, hear a point discussed,

As, whether Strafford's name were John or James—

And be myself appealed to—I, who shall Myself have near forgotten!

*Hol.* I would speak . . .

*Straf.* Then you shall speak,—not now.

I want, just now,

To hear the sound of my own tongue. This place

Is full of ghosts.

*Hol.* Nay, you must hear me,

Strafford!

*Straf.* Oh, readily! Only, one rare thing more,—

The minister! Who will advise the King, Turn his Sejanus, Richelieu and what not,

And yet have health—children, for aught I know—

My patient pair of traitors! Ah,—but, William—

Does not his cheek grow thin?

*Wil.* 'Tis you look thin,

Father!

*Straf.* A scamper o'er the breezy wolds Sets all to-rights.

*Hol.* You cannot sure forget

A prison-roof is o'er you, Strafford? No,

# STRAFFORD

[ACT V

Why, no. I would not touch on that, the first.

I left you that. Well, Hollis? Say at once, The King can find no time to set me free! A mask at Theobald's?

*Hol.* Hold: no such affair Detains him.

*Straf.* True: what needs so great a matter?

The Queen's lip may be sore. Well: when he pleases,—

Only, I want the air: it vexes flesh To be pent up so long.

*Hol.* The King—I bear His message, Strafford: pray you, let me speak!

*Straf.* Go, William! Anne, try o'er your song again!

[*The Children retire.* They shall be loyal, friend, at all events. I know your message: you have nothing new

To tell me: from the first I guessed as much. I know, instead of coming here himself, Leading me forth in public by the hand, The King prefers to leave the door ajar As though I were escaping—bids me trudge While the mob gapes upon some show prepared

On the other side of the river! Give at once His order of release! I've heard, as well Of certain poor manœuvres to avoid The granting pardon at his proper risk; First, he must prattle somewhat to the Lords,

Must talk a trifle with the Commons first, Be grieved I should abuse his confidence, And far from blaming them, and . . . Where's the order?

*Hol.* Spare me!

*Straf.* Why, he'd not have me steal away?

With an old doublet and a steeple hat Like Prynne's? Be smuggled into France, perhaps?

Hollis, 'tis for my children! 'Twas for them I first consented to stand day by day And give your Puritans the best of words, Be patient, speak when called upon, observe Their rules, and not return them prompt their lie!

What's in that boy of mine that he should prove

Son to a prison-breaker? I shall stay And he'll stay with me. Charles should know as much, He too has children!

[*Turning to HOLLIS's Companion.*] Sir, you feel for me!

No need to hide that face! Though it have looked

Upon me from the judgment-seat . . . I know

<sup>1</sup> A house near Cheshunt in Herts.

Strangely, that somewhere it has looked on me . . .

Your coming has my pardon, nay, my thanks:

For there is one who comes not.

*Hol.* Whom forgive, As one to die!

*Straf.* True: all die, and all need Forgiveness: I forgive him from my soul.

*Hol.* 'Tis a world's wonder: Strafford, you must die!

*Straf.* Sir, if your errand is to set me free This heartless jest mars much. Ha! Tears in truth?

We'll end this! See this paper, warm—feel—warm

With lying next my heart! Whose hand is there?

Whose promise? Read, and loud for God to hear!

'Strafford shall take no hurt'—read it, I say!

'In person, honour, nor estate'—

*Hol.* The King . . . *Straf.* I could unking him by a breath! You sit

Where Loudon sat, who came to prophesy The certain end, and offer me Pym's grace If I'd renounce the King: and I stood firm On the King's faith. The King who lives . . .

*Hol.* To sign The warrant for your death.

*Straf.* 'Put not your trust 'In princes, neither in the sons of men, 'In whom is no salvation!'

*Hol.* Trust in God! The scaffold is prepared: they wait for you: He has consented. Cast the earth behind!

*Charles.* You would not see me, Strafford, at your foot!

It was wrung from me! Only, curse me not!

*Hol.* [*to STRAFFORD*]. As you hope grace and pardon in your need,

Be merciful to this most wretched man.

[*Voices from within.*

*Verso la sera*

*Di Primavera.*

*Straf.* You'll be good to those children, sir? I know

You'll not believe her, even should the Queen

Think they take after one they rarely saw. I had intended that my son should live A stranger to these matters: but you are So utterly deprived of friends! He too Must serve you—will you not be good to him?

Or, stay, sir, do not promise—do not swear!

You, Hollis—do the best you can for me! I've not a soul to trust to: Wandesford's<sup>1</sup> dead,

And you've got Radcliffe safe, Laud's turn comes next:

I've found small time of late for my affairs,  
But I trust any of you, Pym himself—  
No one could hurt them: there's an infant,  
too.

These tedious car's! Your Majesty could spare them.

Nay—pardon me, my King! I had forgotten

Your education, trials, much temptation,  
Some weakness: there escaped a peevish word—

'Tis gone: I bless you at the last. You know  
All's between you and me: what has the world

To do with it? Farewell!

*Cha. [at the door].* Balfour! Balfour!

*Enter BALFOUR.*

The Parliament!—go to them: I grant all  
Demands. Their sittings shall be permanent:

Tell them to keep their money if they will.  
I'll come to them for every coat I wear  
And every crust I eat: only I choose  
To pardon Strafford. As the Queen shall choose!

—You never heard the People howl for blood,

Beside!

*Bal.* Your Majesty may hear them now:  
The walls can hardly keep their murmurs out:

Please you retire!

*Cha.* Take all the troops, Balfour!

*Bal.* There are some hundred thousand  
of the crowd.

*Cha.* Come with me, Strafford! You'll  
not fear, at least!

*Straf.* Balfour, say nothing to the world  
of this!

I charge you, as a dying man, forget  
You gazed upon this agony of one . . .  
Of one . . . or if . . . why you may say,

Balfour,

The King was sorry: 'tis no shame in him:  
Yes, you may say he even wept, Balfour,  
And that I walked the lighter to the block  
Because of it. I shall walk lightly, sir!  
Earth fades, heaven breaks on me: I shall  
stand next

Before God's throne: the moment's close  
at hand

When man the first, last time, has leave  
to lay

His whole heart bare before its Maker,  
leave

To clear up the long error of a life  
And choose one happiness for evermore.  
With all mortality about me, Charles,  
The sudden wreck, the dregs of violent  
death—

What if, despite the opening angel-song,

There penetrate one prayer for you? Be  
saved

Through me! Bear witness, no one could  
prevent

My death! Lead on! ere he awake—best,  
now!

All must be ready: did you say, Balfour,  
The crowd began 'o murmur? They'll be  
kept

Too late for sermon at St. Antholin's!  
Now! But tread softly—children are at  
play

In the next room. Precede! I follow—

*Enter Lady CARLISLE, with many  
Attendants.*

*Lady Car.*

*Me!*

Follow me, Strafford, and be saved! The  
King?

[*To the KING.*] Well—as you ordered, they  
are ranged without,

The convoy . . . [*seeing the KING's state.*]  
[*To STRAFFORD.*] You know all, then!

Why, I thought

It looked best that the King should save  
you,—Charles

Alone; 'tis a shame that you should owe  
me aught.

Or no, not shame! Strafford, you'll not  
feel shame

At being saved by me?

*Hol.*

All true! Oh Strafford,  
She saves you! all her deed! this lady's  
deed!

And is the boat in readiness? You, friend,  
Are Billingsley, no doubt. Speak to her,  
Strafford!

See how she trembles, waiting for your  
voice!

The world's to learn its bravest story yet.

*Lady Car.* Talk afterward! Long nights  
in France enough,

To sit beneath the vines and talk of home.

*Straf.* You love me, child? Ah, Strafford  
can be loved

As well as Vane! I could escape, then?

*Lady Car.*

*Haste!*

Advance the torches, Bryan!

*Straf.*

*I will die.*

They call me proud: but England had no  
right,

When she encountered me—her strength  
to mine—

To find the chosen foe a craven. Girl,  
I fought her to the utterance, I fell,  
I am hers now, and I will die. Beside,  
The lookers-on! Eliot is all about  
This place, with his most uncomplaining  
brow.

*Lady Car.* Strafford!

*Straf.*

*I think if you*

*could know how much*

*I love you, you would be repaid, my friend!*

*Lady Car.* Then, for my sake!

*Straf.* Even for your sweet sake,  
I stay.

*Hol.* For their sake!

*Straf.* To bequeath a stain?  
Leave me! Girl, humour me and let me  
die!

*Lady Car.* Bid him escape—wake,  
King! Bid him escape!

*Straf.* True, I will go! Die, and forsake  
the King?

I'll not draw back from the last service.

*Lady Car.* Strafford!

*Straf.* And, after all, what is disgrace  
to me?

Let us come, child! That it should end this  
way!

Lead then! but I feel strangely: it was not  
To end this way.

*Lady Car.* Lean—lean on me!

*Straf.* My King!  
Oh, had he trusted me—his friend of  
friends!

*Lady Car.* I can support him, Hollis!

*Straf.* Not this way!

This gate—I dreamed of it, this very gate.

*Lady Car.* It opens on the river: our  
good boat

Is moored below, our friends are there.

*Straf.* The same:  
Only with something ominous and dark,  
Fatal, inevitable.

*Lady Car.* Strafford! Strafford!

*Straf.* Not by this gate! I feel what will  
be there!

I dreamed of it, I tell you: touch it not!

*Lady Car.* To save the King,—Straf-  
ford, to save the King!

[As STRAFFORD opens the door, PYM is  
discovered with HAMPDEN, VANE, etc.

STRAFFORD falls back; PYM follows  
slowly and confronts him.

*Pym.* Have I done well? Speak, Eng-  
land! Whose sole sake

I still have laboured for, with disregard  
To my own heart,—for whom my youth  
was made

Barren, my manhood waste, to offer up  
Her sacrifice—this friend, this Wentworth  
here—

Who walked in youth with me, loved me,  
it may be,

And whom, for his forsaking England's  
cause,

I hunted by all means (trusting that she  
Would sanctify all means) even to the  
block

Which waits for him. And saying this, I feel  
No bitterer pang than first I felt, the hour  
I swore that Wentworth might leave us,  
but I

Would never leave him: I do leave him  
now.

I render up my charge (be witness, God!)  
To England who imposed it. I have done

Her bidding—poorly, wrongly,—it may  
be,

With ill effects—for I am weak, a man:  
Still, I have done my best, my human best,  
Not faltering for a moment. It is done.

And this said, if I say . . . yes, I will say  
I never loved but one man—David not  
More Jonathan! Even thus, I love him  
now:

And look for my chief portion in that  
world

Where great hearts led astray are turned  
again,

(Soon it may be, and, certes, will be soon:  
My mission over, I shall not live long.)—  
Ay, here I know I talk—I dare and must,  
Of England, and her great reward, as all  
I look for there; but in my inmost heart,  
Believe, I think of stealing quite away  
To walk once more with Wentworth—my  
youth's friend

Purged from all error, gloriously renewed,  
And Eliot shall not blame us. Then in-  
deed . . .

This is no meeting, Wentworth! Tears  
increase

Too hot. A thin mist—is it blood?—en-  
wraps

The face I loved once. Then, the meeting  
be!

*Straf.* I have loved England too; we'll  
meet, then, Pym.

As well die now! Youth is the only time  
To think and to decide on a great course:  
Manhood with action follows; but 'tis  
dreary,

To have to alter our whole life in age—  
The time past, the strength gone! As well  
die now.

When we meet, Pym, I'd be set right—not  
now!

Best die. Then if there's any fault, fault too  
Dies, smothered up. Poor grey old little  
Laud

May dream his dream out, of a perfect  
Church,

In some blind corner. And there's no one  
left.

I trust the King now wholly to you, Pym!  
And yet, I know not: I shall not be there:  
Friends fail—if he have any. And he's  
weak,

And loves the Queen, and . . . Oh, my fate  
is nothing—

Nothing! But not that awful head—not  
that!

*Pym.* If England shall declare such will  
to me . . .

*Straf.* Pym, you help England! I, that  
am to die,

What I must see! 'tis here—all here! My  
God,

Let me but gasp out, in one word of fire,  
How thou wilt plague him, satiating hell!

What? England, that you help, become  
 through you  
 A green and putrefying charnel, left  
 Our children . . . some of us have children,  
 Pym—  
 Some who, without that, still must ever  
 wear  
 A darkened brow, an over-serious look,  
 And never properly be young! No word?  
 What if I curse you? Send a strong curse  
 forth  
 Clothed from my heart, lapped round with  
 horror till  
 She's fit with her white face to walk the  
 world  
 Scaring kind natures from your cause and  
 you—  
 Then to sit down with you at the board-  
 head,  
 The gathering for prayer: . . . O speak, but  
 speak!  
 . . . Creep up, and quietly follow each one  
 home,

You, you, you, be a nestling care for each  
 To sleep with,—hardly moaning in his  
 dreams,  
 She gnaws so quietly,—till, lo he starts,  
 Gets off with half a heart eaten away!  
 Oh, shall you 'scape with less if she's my  
 child?  
 You will not say 'a word—to me—to  
 Him?  
 Pym. If England shall declare such will  
 to me . . .  
 Straff. No, not for England now, not  
 for Heaven now,—  
 See, Pym, for my sake, mine who kneel to  
 you!  
 There, I will thank you for the death, my  
 friend!  
 This is the meeting: let me love you well!  
 Pym. England,—I am thine own! Dost  
 thou exact  
 That service? I obey thee to the end.  
 Straff. O God, I shall die first—I shall  
 die first!

## SORDELLO

1840

TO J. MILSAND, OF DIJON

DEAR FRIEND,—Let the next poem be introduced by your name, therefore remembered along with one of the deepest of my affections, and so repay all trouble it ever cost me. I wrote it twenty-five years ago for only a few, counting even in these on somewhat more care about its subject than they really had. My own faults of expression were many; but with care for a man or book such would be surmounted, and without it what avails the faultlessness of either? I blame nobody, least of all myself, who did my best then and since; for I lately gave time and pains to turn my work into what the many might,—instead of what the few must,—like: but after all, I imagined another thing at first, and therefore leave as I find it. The historical decoration was purposely of no more importance than a background requires; and my stress lay on the incidents in the development of a soul: little else is worth study. I, at least, always thought so—you, with many known and unknown to me, think so—others may one day think so; and whether my attempt remain for them or not, I trust, though away and past it, to continue ever yours,

R. B.

LONDON: June 9, 1863.

### BOOK THE FIRST

WHO will, may hear Sordello's story told:  
 His story? Who believes me shall behold  
 The man, pursue his fortunes to the end,  
 Like me: for as the friendless-people's  
 friend  
 Spied from his hill-top once, despite the  
 din  
 And dust of multitudes, Pentapoli  
 Named o' the Naked Arm,<sup>1</sup> I single out  
 Sordello, compassed murkily about  
 With ravage of six long sad hundred years.  
 Only believe me. Ye believe?

Verona . . . Never,—I should warn you  
 first,—  
 Of my own choice had this, if not the worst

Yet not the best expedient, served to tell  
 A story I could body forth so well  
 By making speak, myself kept out of view,  
 The very man as he was wont to do,  
 And leaving you to say the rest for him.  
 Since, though I might be proud to see the  
 dim  
 Abysmal past divide its hateful surge,  
 Letting of all men this one man emerge  
 Because it pleased me, yet, that moment  
 past,  
 I should delight in watching first to last  
 His progress as you watch it, not a whit  
 More in the secret than yourselves who sit  
 Fresh-chapleted to listen. But it seems  
 Your setters-forth of unexampled themes,  
 Makers of quite new men, producing them,  
 Would best chalk broadly on each vesture's  
 hem

<sup>1</sup> See *Don Quixote*, Part I, ch. 18.



The wearer's quality; or take their stand,  
Motley on back and pointing-pole in  
hand,

Beside him. So, for once I face ye, friends,  
Summoned together from the world's four  
ends,

Dropped down from heaven or cast up  
from hell,

To hear the story I propose to tell.

Confess now, poets know the dragnet's  
trick,

Catching the dead, if fate denies the quick,  
And shaming her; 'tis not for fate to choose  
Silence or song because she can refuse  
Real eyes to glisten more, real hearts to  
ache

Less oft, real brows turn smoother for our  
sake:

I have experienced something of her spite;  
But there's a realm wherein she has no right  
And I have many lovers. Say, but few  
Friends fate accords me? Here they are:  
now view

The host I muster! Many a lighted face  
Foul with no vestige of the grave's dis-  
grace;

What else should tempt them back to taste  
our air

Except to see how their successors fare?  
My audience! and they sit, each ghostly  
man

Striving to look as living as he can,  
Brother by breathing brother; thou art set,  
Clear-witted critic, by . . . but I'll not fret  
A wondrous soul of them, nor move  
death's spleen

Who loves not to unlock them. Friends! I  
mean

The living in good earnest—ye elect  
Chiefly for love—suppose not I reject  
Judicious praise, who contrary shall peep,  
Some fit occasion, forth, for fear ye sleep,  
To glean your bland approvals. Then,  
appear,

Verona! stay—thou, spirit, come not near  
Now—not this time desert thy cloudy place  
To scare me, thus employed, with that pure  
face!

I need not fear this audience, I make free  
With them, but then this is no place for  
thee!

The thunder-phrasé of the Athenian,<sup>1</sup>  
grown

Up out of memories of Marathon,  
Would echo like his own sword's griding  
screech

Braying a Persian shield,—the silver  
speech

Of Sidney's self, the starry paladin,  
Turn intense as a trumpet sounding in  
The knights to tilt,—wert thou to hear!  
What heart

Have I to play my puppets, bear my part

<sup>1</sup> Æschylus.

Before these worthies?

Lo, the past is hurled  
In twain: up-thrust, out-staggering on the  
world.

Subsiding into shape, a darkness rears  
Its outline, kindles at the core, appears  
Verona. 'Tis six hundred years and more  
Since an event. The Second Friedrich

wore  
The purple, and the Third Honorius filled  
The holy chair. That autumn eve was  
stilled:

A last remains of sunset dimly burned  
O'er the far forests, like a torch-flame  
turned

By the wind back upon its bearer's hand  
In one long flare of crimson; as a brand,  
The woods beneath lay black. A single  
eye

From all Verona cared for the soft sky.  
But, gathering in its ancient market-place,  
Talked group with restless group; and not  
a face

But wrath made livid, for among them  
were

Death's staunch purveyors, such as have  
in care

To feast him. Fear had long since taken  
root

In every breast, and now these crushed its  
fruit,

The ripe hate, like a wine: to note the  
way

It worked while each grew drunk! Men  
grave and grey

Stood, with shut eyelids, rocking to and  
fro,

Letting the silent luxury trickle slow  
About the hollows where a heart should  
be;

But the young gulped with a delirious glee  
Some foretaste of their first debauch in  
blood

At the fierce news: for, be it understood,  
Envoys apprised Verona that her prince  
Count Richard of Saint Boniface, joined  
since

A year with Azzo, Este's Lord, to thrust  
Taurello Salinguerra, prime in trust  
With Ecelin Romano, from his seat  
Ferrara,—over zealous in the feat  
And stumbling on a peril unaware,  
Was captive, trammelled in his proper  
snare,

They phrase it; taken by his own intrigue.  
Immediate succour from the Lombard  
League

Of fifteen cities that affect the Pope,  
For Azzo, therefore, and his fellow-hope  
Of the Guelf cause, a glory overcast!  
Men's faces, late agape, are now aghast.

'Prone is the purple pavis;'<sup>1</sup> Este makes  
'Mirth for the devil when he undertakes'

<sup>1</sup> Shield.

'To play the Ecelin; as if it cost  
 'Merely your pushing-by to gain a post  
 'Like his! The patrol tells ye, once for all,  
 'There be sound reasons that preferment  
     fall  
 'On our beloved'  
     'Duke of the Rood, why not?'  
 Shouted an Estian, "grudge ye such a lot?"  
 'The hill-cat boasts some cunning of her  
     own,  
 'Some stealthy trick to better beasts un-  
     known,  
 'That quick with prey enough her hunger  
     blunts,  
 'And feeds her fat while gaunt the lion  
     hunts.'  
 'Taurello,' quoth an envoy, 'as in wane  
 'Dwelt at Ferrara. Like an osprey fain  
 'To fly but forced the earth his couch to  
     make  
 'Far inland, till his friend therein pest  
     wake,  
 'Waits he the Kaiser's coming; and as  
     yet  
 'That fast friend sleeps, and he too sleeps:  
     but let  
 'Only the billow freshen, and he snuffs  
 'The aroused hurricane ere it enrougns  
 'The sea it means to cross because of him.  
 'Sinketh the breeze? His hope-sick eye  
     grows dim;  
 'Creep closer on the creature! Every day  
 'Strengthens the Pontiff; Ecelin, they say,  
 'Dozes now at Olierio, with dry lips  
 'Telling upon his perished finger-tips  
 'How many ancestors are to depose,  
 'Ere he be Satan's Viceroy when the doze  
 'Deposits him in hell. So, Guelfs rebuilt  
 'Their houses; not a drop of blood was  
     spilt  
 'When Cino Bocchimpane chanced to  
     meet  
 'Buccio Virtù—God's wafer, and the street  
 'Is narrow! Tutti Santi, think, a-swarm  
 'With Ghibellins, and yet he took no  
     harm!  
 'This could not last. Off Salinguerra  
     went  
 'To Padua, Podestà, "with pure intent,"  
 'Said he, "my presence, judged the single  
     bar  
 "'To permanent tranquillity, may jar  
 "'No longer"—so! his back is fairly  
     turned?  
 'The pair of godly palaces are burned,  
 'The gardens ravaged, and our Guelfs  
     laugh, drunk  
 'A week with joy. The next, their laughter  
     sunk  
 'In sobs of blood, for they found, some  
     strange way,  
 'Old Salinguerra back again—I say,  
 'Old Salinguerra in the town once more  
 'Uprooting, overturning, flame before,  
 'Blood fetlock-high beneath him. Azzo  
     fled;  
 'Who 'scaped the carnage followed; then  
     the dead  
 'Were pushed aside from Salinguerra's  
     throne,  
 'He ruled once more Ferrara, all alone,  
 'Till Azzo, stunned awhile, revived, would  
     pounce  
 'Coupled with Boniface, like lynx and  
     ounce,  
 'On the gorged bird. The burghers ground  
     their teeth  
 'To see troop after troop encamp beneath  
 'I' the standing corn thick o'er the scanty  
     patch  
 'It took so many patient months to snatch  
 'Out of the marsh; while just within their  
     walls  
 'Men fed on men. At length Taurello  
     calls  
 'A parley: "let the Count wind up the  
     war!"  
 'Richard, light-hearted as a plunging star,  
 'Agrees to enter for the kindest ends  
 'Ferrara, flanked with fifty chosen friends,  
 'No horse-boy more, for fear your timid  
     sort  
 'Should fly Ferrara at the bare report.  
 'Quietly through the town they rode, jog-  
     jog;  
 "'Ten, twenty, thirty,—curse the cata-  
     logue  
 "'Of burnt Guelf houses! Strange,  
     Taurello shows  
 "'Not the least sign of life"—whereat  
     arose  
 'A general growl: "How? With his victors  
     by?  
 "'I and my Veronese? My troops and I?  
 "'Receive us, was your word?" So jogged  
     they on,  
 'Nor laughed their host too openly: once  
     gone  
 'Into the trap!—'  
     Six hundred years ago!  
 Such the time's aspect and peculiar woe  
 (Yourselves may spell it yet in chronicles,  
 Albeit the worm, our busy brother, drills  
 His sprawling path through letters an-  
     ciently  
 Made fine and large to suit some abbot's  
     eye)  
 When the new Hohenstauffen dropped the  
     mask,  
 Flung John of Brienne's favour from his  
     casque,  
 Forswore crusading, had no mind to  
     leave  
 Saint Peter's proxy leisure to retrieve  
 Losses to Otho and to Barbaross,  
 Or make the Alps less easy to recross;  
 And, thus confirming Pope Honorius' fear,  
 Was excommunicate that very year.

'The triple-bearded Teuton come to life!'  
Groaned the Great League; and, arming  
for the strife,  
Wide Lombardy, on tiptoe to begin,  
Took up, as it was Guelph or Ghibellin,  
Its cry: what cry?

'The Emperor to come!'  
His crowd of feudatories, all and some,  
That leapt down with a crash of swords,  
spears, shields,  
One fighter on his fellow to our fields,  
Scattered anon, took station here and  
there,

And carried it, till now, with little care—  
Cannot but cry for him; how else rebut  
Us longer?—cliffs, an earthquake suffered  
jut

In the mid-sea, each domineering crest  
Which nought save such another throe can  
wrest

From out (conceive) a certain chokeweed  
grown

Since o'er the waters, twine and tangle  
thrown

Too thick, too fast accumulating round,  
Too sure to over-riot and confound  
Ere long each brilliant islet with itself,  
Unless a second shock save shoal and shelf,  
Whirling the sea-drift wide: alas, the  
bruised

And sullen wreck! Sunlight to be diffused  
For that!—sunlight, 'neath which, a scum  
at first,

The million fibres of our chokeweed nurst  
Dispread themselves, mantling the  
troubled main,

And, shattered by those rocks, took hold  
again,

So kindly blazed it—that same blaze to  
brood

O'er every cluster of the multitude  
Still hazarding new clasps, ties, filaments,  
An emulous exchange of pulses, vents  
Of nature into nature; till some growth  
Unfancied yet, exuberantly clothe  
A surface solid now, continuous, one:

'The Pope, for us the People, who begun  
'The People, carries on the People thus,  
'To keep that Kaiser off and dwell with  
us!'

See you?

Or say, Two Principles that live  
Each fitly by its Representative.

'Hill-cat'—who called him so?—the  
gracefullest

Adventurer, the ambiguous stranger-guest  
Of Lombardy (sleek: but that ruffling fur,  
Those talons to their sheath!) whose velvet  
purr

Soothes jealous neighbours when a Saxon  
scout

—Arpo or Yoland, is it?—one without  
A country or a name, presumes to couch  
Beside their nobles; until men avouch

That, of all Houses in the Trevisan,  
Conrad describes no fitter, rear or van,  
Than Ecelo! They laughed as they en-  
rolled

That name at Milan on the page of gold,  
Godego's lord,—Ramòn, Marostica,  
Cartiglion, Bassano, Lõria,  
And every sheep-cote on the Suabian's  
fit!

No laughter when his son, 'the Lombard  
Chief'

Forsooth, as Barbarossa's path was bent  
To Italy along the Vale of Trent,  
Welcomed him at Roncaglia! Sadness  
now—

The hamlets nested on the Tyrol's brow,  
The Asolan and Euganean hills,  
The Rhetian and the Julian, sadness fills  
Them all, for Ecelin vouchsafes to stay  
Among and care about them; day by day  
Chookain this pinnacle, the other spot,  
A castle building to defend a cot,  
A cot built for a castle to defend,

Nothing but castles, castles, nor an end  
To boasts how mountain ridge may join  
with ridge

By sunken gallery and soaring bridge,  
He takes, in brief, a figure that beseems  
The griesliest nightmare of the Church's  
dreams,

—A Signory firm-rooted, unestranged  
From its old interests, and nowise changed  
By its new neighbourhood: perchance the  
vaunt

Of Otho, 'my own Este shall supplant  
'Your Este,' come to pass. The sire led in  
A son as cruel; and this Ecelin  
Had sons, in turn, and daughters sly and  
tall

And curling and compliant; but for all  
Romano (so they styled him) throve, that  
neck

Of his so pinched and white, that hungry  
cheek

Proved 'twas some fiend, not him, the  
man's-flesh went

To feed: whereas Romano's instrument,  
Famous Taurello Salinguerra, sole  
I' the world, a tree whose boughs were slipt  
the bole

Successively, why should not he shed blood  
To further a design? Men understood  
Living was pleasant to him as he wore  
His careless surcoat, glanced some mis-  
sive o'er,

Propped on his truncheon in the public  
way,

While his lord lifted written hands to pray,  
Lost at Ollero's convent.

Hill-cats, face  
Our Azzo, our Guelph Lion! Why dis-  
grace

A worthiness conspicuous near and far  
(Atil at Rome while free and consular,

Este at Padua who repulsed the Hun)  
By trumpeting the Church's princely son?  
—Styled Patron of Rovigo's Polesine,  
Ancona's march, Ferrara's . . . ask, in fine,  
Our chronicles, commenced when some  
old monk

Found it intolerable to be sunk  
(Vexed to the quick by his revolting cell)  
Quite out of summer while alive and well:  
Ended when by his mat the Prior stood,  
'Mid busy promptings of the brother-  
hood,

Striving to coax from his decrepit brains  
The reason Father Porphyry took pains  
To blot those ten lines out which used to  
stand

First on their charter drawn by Hilde-  
brand.

The same night wears. Verona's rule of  
yore

Was vested in a certain Twenty-four;  
And while within his palace these debate  
Concerning Richard and Ferrara's fate,  
Glide we by clapping doors, with sudden  
glare

Of cressets vented on the dark, nor care  
For aught that's seen or heard until we  
shut

The smother in, the lights, all noises but  
The carroch's booming: safe at last! Why  
strange

Such a recess should lurk behind a range  
Of banquet rooms? Your finger—thus—  
you push

A spring, and the wall opens, would you  
rush

Upon the banqueters, select your prey,  
Waiting (the slaughter-weapons in the way  
Strewing this very bench) with sharpened  
ear

A preconcerted signal to appear;  
Or if you simply crouch with beating heart,  
Bearing in some voluptuous pageant part  
To startle them. Nor mutes nor masquers  
now;

Nor any . . . does that one man sleep whose  
brow

The dying lamp-flame sinks and rises o'er?  
What woman stood beside him? not the  
more

Is he unfastened from the earnest eyes  
Because that arras fell between! Her wise  
And lulling words are yet about the  
room,

Her presence wholly poured upon the  
gloom

Down even to her vesture's creeping stir.  
And so reclines he, saturate with her,  
Until an outcry from the square beneath  
Pierces the charm: he springs up, glad to  
breathe,

Above the cunning element, and shakes  
The stupor off as (look you) morning  
breaks

On the gay dress, and, near concealed by it,  
The lean frame like a half-burnt taper, lit  
Erst at some marriage-feast, then laid  
'away  
Till the Armenian bridegroom's dying day,  
In his wool wedding-robe.

For he—for he,  
Gate-vein of this hearts' blood of Lom-  
bardy,

(If I should falter now)—for he is thine!  
Sordello, thy forerunner, Florentine!

A herald-star I know thou didst absorb  
Relentless into the consummate orb  
That scared it from its right to roll along  
A sempiternal path with dance and song  
Fulfilling its allotted period,

Serenest of the progeny of God—  
Who yet resigns it not! His darling stoops  
With no quenched lights, desponds with  
no blank troops

Of disenfranchised brilliances, for, blent  
Utterly with thee, its shy element  
Like thine upburneth prosperous and  
clear.

Still, what if I approach the august sphere  
Named now with only one name, disen-  
twine

That under-current soft and argentine  
From its fierce mate in the majestic mass  
Leavened as the sea whose fire was mixt  
with glass

In John's transcendent vision,—launch  
once more

That lustre? Dante, pacer of the shore  
Where glutted hell disgorgeth filthiest  
gloom,

Unbitten by its whirring sulphur-spume—  
Or whence the grieved and obscure waters  
slope

Into a darkness quieted by hope;  
Plucker of amaranths grown beneath  
God's eye

In gracious twilights where his chosen  
lie,—

I would do this! If I should falter now!  
In Mantua territory half is slough,

Half pine-tree forest; maples, scarlet oaks  
Breed o'er the river-beds; even Mincio  
chokes

With sand the summer through: but 'tis  
morass

In winter up to Mantua walls. There was,  
Some thirty years before this evening's coil,  
One spot reclaimed from the surrounding  
spoil,

Goito; just a castle built amid  
A few low mountains; firs and larches hid  
Their main defiles, and rings of vineyard  
bound

The rest. Some captured creature in a  
pound,

Whose artless wonder quite precludes dis-  
tress,

Secure beside in its own loveliness,

## SORDELLO

[BOOK I

So peered with airy head, below, above,  
The castle at its toils, the lapwings love  
To glean among at grape-time. Pass  
within.

A maze of corridors contrived for sin,  
Dusk winding-stairs, dim galleries got  
past,

You gain the inmost chambers, gain at last  
A maple-panelled room: that haze which  
seems

Floating about the panel, if there gleams  
A sunbeam over it, will turn to gold  
And in light-graven characters unfold  
The Arab's wisdom everywhere; what  
shade

Marred them a moment, those slim pillars  
made,

Cut like a company of palms to prop  
The roof, each kissing top entwined with  
top,

Leaning together; in the carver's mind  
Some knot of bacchanals, flushed cheek  
combined

With straining forehead, shoulders  
purpled, hair

Diffused between, who in a goat-skin bear  
A vintage; graceful sister-palms! But  
quick

To the main wonder, now. A vault, see;  
thick

Black shade about the ceiling, though fine  
slits

Across the buttress suffer light by fits  
Upon a marvel in the midst. Nay, stoop—  
A dullish grey-streaked cumbrous font, a  
group

Round it,—each side of it, where'er one  
sees,—

Upholds it; shrinking Caryatides  
Of just-tinged marble like Eve's lilled flesh  
Beneath her maker's finger when the fresh  
First pulse of life shot brightening the  
snow.

The font's edge burthens every shoulder,  
so

They muse upon the ground, eyelids half  
closed;

Some, with meek arms behind their backs  
disposed,

Some, crossed above their bosoms, some,  
to veil

Their eyes, some, propping chin and cheek  
so pale,

Some, hanging slack an utter helpless  
length

Dead as a buried vestal whose whole  
strength

Goes when the grate above shuts heavily.  
So dwell these noiseless girls, patient to see,

Like priestesses because of sin impure  
Penanced for ever, who resigned endure,

Having that once drunk sweetness to the  
dregs.

And every eve, Sordello's visit begs

Pardon for them: constant as eve he came  
To sit beside each in her turn, the same  
As one of them, a certain space: and awe  
Made a great indistinctness till he saw  
Sunset slant cheerful through the buttress-  
chinks,

Gold seven times glowed; surely our  
maiden shrinks

And a smile stirs her as if one faint grain  
Her load were lightened, one shade less the  
stain

Obscured her forehead, yet one more bead  
slipt

From off the rosary whereby the crypt  
Keeps count of the contritions of its  
charge?

Then with a step more light, a heart more  
large,

He may depart, leave her and every one  
To linger out the penance in mute stone.

Ah, but Sordello? 'Tis the tale I mean  
To tell you.

In this castle may be seen,  
On the hill-tops, or underneath the vines,  
Or eastward by the mound of firs and pines  
That shuts out Mantua, still in loneliness,  
A slender boy in a loose page's dress,  
Sordello: do but look on him awhile  
Watching ('tis autumn) with an earnest  
smile

The noisy flock of thievish birds at work  
Among the yellowing vineyards; see him  
lurk

('Tis winter with its sullenest of storms)  
Beside that arras length of broidered  
forms,

On tiptoe, lifting in both hands a light  
Which makes yon warrior's visage flutter  
bright

—Ecelo, dismal father of the brood,  
And Ecelin, close to the girl he wooed,  
Auria, and their Child, with all his wives  
From Agnes to the Tuscan that survives,  
Lady of the castle, Adelaide. His face  
—Look, now he turns away! Yourselves  
shall trace

(The delicate nostril swerving wide and  
fine,

A sharp and restless lip, so well combine  
With that calm brow) a soul fit to receive  
Delight at every sense; you can believe

Sordello foremost in the regal class  
Nature has broadly severed from her  
mass

Of men, and framed for pleasure, as she  
frames

Some happy lands, that have luxurious  
names,

For loose fertility; a footfall there  
Suffices to upturn to the warm air

Half-germinating spices; mere decay  
Produces richer life; and day by day

New pollen on the lily-petal grows,  
And still more labyrinthine buds the rose.

You recognize at once the finer dress  
Of flesh that amply lets in loveliness  
At eye and ear, while round the rest is  
furled

(As though she would not trust them with  
her world)

A veil that shows a sky not near so blue,  
And lets but half the sun look fervid  
through.

How can such love?—like souls on each  
full-fraught

Discovery brooding, blind at first to aught  
Beyond its beauty, till exceeding love  
Becomes an aching weight; and, to re-  
move

A curse that haunts such natures—to pre-  
clude

Their finding out themselves can work no  
good

To what they love nor make it very blest  
By their endeavour,—they are fain in-  
vest

The lifeless thing with life from their own  
soul,

Availing it to purpose, to control,  
To dwell distinct and have peculiar joy  
And separate interests that may employ  
That beauty fitly, for its proper sake.

Nor rest they here; fresh births of beauty  
wake

Fresh homage, every grade of love is past,  
With every mode of loveliness: then cast  
Inferior idols off their borrowed crown  
Before a coming glory. Up and down  
Runs arrowy fire, while earthly forms com-  
bine

To throb the secret forth; a touch divine—  
And the scaled eyeball owns the mystic  
rod;

Visibly through his garden walketh God.  
So fare they. Now revert. One charac-  
ter

Denotes them through the progress and  
the stir,—

A need to blend with each external charm,  
Bury themselves, the whole heart wide and  
warm,—

In something not themselves; they would  
belong

To what they worship—stronger and more  
strong

Thus prodigally fed—which gathers shape  
And feature, soon imprisons past escape  
The votary framed to love and to submit  
Nor ask, as passionate he kneels to it,  
Whence grew the idol's empery. So runs  
A legend; light had birth ere moons and  
suns,

Flowing through space a river and alone,  
Till chaos burst and blank the spheres were  
strown

Hither and thither, foundering and blind:  
When into each of them rushed light—to  
find

Itself no place, foiled of its radiant  
chance.

Let such forego their just inheritance!  
For there's a class that eagerly looks,  
too,

On beauty, but, unlike the gentler crew,  
Proclaims each new revelation born a  
twin

With a distinctest consciousness within,  
Referring still the quality, now first  
Revealed, to their own soul—their instinct  
nursed

In silence, now remembered better, shown  
More thoroughly, but not the less their  
own;

A dream come true; the special exercise  
Of any special function that implies  
The being fair, or good, or wise, or strong,  
Dormant within their nature all along—  
Whose fault? So, homage, other souls  
direct

Without, turns inward. 'How should this  
deject

'Thee, soul?' they murmur; 'wherefore  
strength be quelled

'Because, its trivial accidents withheld,  
'Organs are missed that clog the world,  
inert,

'Wanting a will, to quicken and exert,  
'Like thine—existence cannot satiate,  
'Cannot surprise? Laugh thou at envious  
fate,

'Who, from earth's simplest combination  
stamp

'With individuality—uncrampt  
'By living its faint elemental life,  
'Dost soar to heaven's completest essence,  
rife

'With grandeurs, unaffronted to the last,  
'Equal to being all!'

In truth? Thou hast  
Life, then—wilt challenge life for us: our  
race

Is vindicated so, obtains its place  
In thy ascent, the first of us; whom we  
May follow, to the meanest, finally,  
With our more bounded wills?

Ah, but to find  
A certain mood enervate such a mind,  
Counsel it slumber in the solitude  
Thus reached nor, stooping, task for man-  
kind's good

Its nature just as life and time accord  
—Too narrow an arena to reward  
Emprise—the world's occasion worthless  
since

'Not absolutely fitted to evince  
'Its mastery!' Or if yet worse befall,  
'And a desire possess it to put all  
That nature forth, forcing our straitened  
sphere

Contain it,—to display completely here  
The mastery another life should learn,  
Thrusting in time eternity's concern,—

So that Sordello . . .

Fool, who spied the mark  
Of leprosy upon him, violet-dark  
Already as he loiters? Born just now,  
With the new century, beside the glow  
And efflorescence out of barbarism;  
Witness a Greek or two from the abyss  
That stray through Florence-town with  
studious air,  
Calming the chisel of that Pisan pair:  
If Nicolo should carve a Christus yet!  
While at Siena is Guidone set,  
Forehead on hand; a painful birth must be  
Matured ere Saint Eufemia's sacristy  
Or transept gather fruits of one great gaze  
At the moon: look you! The same orange  
haze,—  
The same blue stripe round that—and, in  
the midst,  
Thy spectral whiteness, Mother-maid, who  
didst  
Pursue the dizzy painter!

Woe, then, worth  
Any officious babble letting forth  
The leprosy confirmed and ruinous  
To spirit lodged in a contracted house!  
Go back to the beginning, rather; blend  
It gently with Sordello's life; the end  
Is piteous, you may see, but much between  
Pleasant enough. Meantime, some pyx to  
screen

The full-grown pest, some lid to shut upon  
The goblin! So they found at Babylon,  
(Colleagues, mad Lucius and sage Anto-  
nine)

Sacking the city, by Apollo's shrine,  
In rummaging among the rarities,  
A certain coffer; he who made the prize  
Opened it greedily; and out there curled  
Just such another plague, for half the  
world

Was stung. Crawl in then, hag, and couch  
asquat,

Keeping that blotchy bosom thick in spot  
Until your ume is ripe! The coffer-lid  
Is fastened, and the coffer safely hid  
Under the Loxian's<sup>1</sup> choicest gifts of gold.

Who will may hear Sordello's story told,  
And how he never could remember when  
He dwelt not at Goito. Calmly, then,  
About this secret lodge of Adelaide's  
Glided his youth away; beyond the glades  
On the fir-forest border, and the rim  
Of the low range of mountain, was for him  
No other world: but this appeared his own  
To wander through at pleasure and alone.  
The castle too seemed empty; far and wide  
Might he disport; only the northern side  
Lay under a mysterious interdict—  
Slight, just enough remembered to restrict  
His roaming to the corridors, the vault  
Where those font-bearers expiate their  
fault,

<sup>1</sup> Apollo (the bowman).

The maple-chamber, and the little nooks  
And nests, and breezy parapet that looks  
Over the woods to Mantua: there he  
strolled.

Some foreign women-servants, very old,  
Tended and crept about him—all his clue  
To the world's business and embroiled  
ado

Distant a dozen hill-tops at the most.  
And first a simple sense of life engrossed  
Sordello in his drowsy Paradise;  
The day's adventures for the day suffice—  
Its constant tribute of perceptions strange,  
With sleep and stir in healthy interchange,  
Suffice, and leave him for the next at ease  
Like the great palmer-worm that strips the  
trees,

Eats the life out of every luscious plant,  
And, when September finds them sere or  
scant,

Puts forth two wondrous winglets, alters  
quite,

And hies him after unforeseen delight.  
So fed Sordello, not a shard dissheathed;  
As ever, round each new discovery,  
wreathed

Luxuriantly the fancies infantine  
His admiration, bent on making fine  
Its novel friend at any risk, would fling  
In gay profusion forth: a fickliest king,  
Confessed those minions!—eager to dis-  
pense

So much from his own stock of thought  
and sense

As might enable each to stand alone  
And serve him for a fellow; with his own,  
Joining the qualities that just before  
Had graced some older favourite. Thus  
they wore

A fluctuating halo, yesterday  
Set flicker and to-morrow filched away,—  
Those upland objects each of separate  
name,

Each with an aspect never twice the same,  
Waxing and waning as the new-born host  
Of fancies, like a single night's hoar-frost,  
Gave to familiar things a face grotesque;  
Only, preserving through the mad bur-  
lesque

A grave regard. Conceive! the orpine patch  
Blossoming earliest on the log-house  
thatch

The day those archers wound along the  
vines—

Related to the Chief that left their lines  
To climb with clinking step the northern  
stair

Up to the solitary chambers where  
Sordello never came. Thus thrall reached  
thrall:

He o'er-festooning every interval,  
As the adventurous spider, making light  
Of distance, shoots her threads from depth  
to height,

From barbican to battlement: so flung  
 Fantasies forth and in their centre swung  
 Our architect,—the breezy morning fresh  
 Above, and merry,—all his waving mesh  
 Laughing with lucid dew-drops rainbow-  
 edged.

This world of ours by tacit pact is  
 pledged

To laying such a spangled fabric low  
 Whether by gradual brush or gallant blow.  
 But its abundant will was baulked here:  
 doubt

Rose tardily in one so fenced about  
 From most that nurtures judgment,—care  
 and pain:

Judgment, that dull expedient we are fain,  
 Less favoured, to adopt betimes and force  
 Stead us, diverted from our natural course  
 Of joys—contrive some yet amid the  
 dearth,

Vary and render them, it may be, worth  
 Most we forego. Suppose Sordello hence  
 Selfish enough, without a moral sense  
 However feeble; what informed the boy,  
 Others desired a portion in his joy?

Or say a ruthless chance broke woof and  
 warp—

A heron's nest beat down by March winds  
 sharp,

A fawn breathless beneath the precipice,  
 A bird with unsoiled breast and unfilmed  
 eyes

Warm in the brake—could these undo the  
 trance

Lapping Sordello? Not a circumstance  
 That makes for you, friend Naddo! Eat  
 fern-seed

And peer beside us and report indeed  
 If (your word) 'genius' dawned with throes  
 and stings

And the whole fiery catalogue, while  
 springs,

Summers, and winters quietly came and  
 went.

Time put at length that period to con-  
 tent,

By right the world should have imposed:  
 bereft

Of its good offices, Sordello, left  
 To study his companions, managed rip

Their fringe off, learn the true relation-  
 ship,

Core with its crust, their nature with his  
 own;

Amid his wild-wood sights he lived alone.  
 As if the poppy felt with him! Though he

Partook the poppy's red effrontery  
 Till Autumn spoiled their fleering quite

with rain,  
 And, turbanless, a coarse brown rattling  
 crane

Lay bare. That's gone: yet why renounce,  
 for that,

His disenchanted tributaries—flat

Perhaps, but scarce so utterly forlorn,  
 Their simple presence might not well be  
 borne

Whose parley was a transport once: recall  
 The poppy's gifts, it flaunts you, after all,

A poppy:—why distrust the evidence  
 Of each soon satisfied and healthy sense?

The new-born judgment answered, 'little  
 boots

'Beholding other creatures' attributes  
 'And having none!' or, say that it sufficed,

'Yet, could one but possess, oneself,' (en-  
 ticed

Judgment) 'some special office!' Nought  
 beside

Serves you? 'Well then, be somehow justi-  
 fied

'For this ignoble wish to circumscribe  
 'And concentrate, rather than swell, the  
 tribe

'Of actual pleasures: what, now, from  
 without

'Effects it?—proves, despite a lurking  
 doubt,

'Mere sympathy sufficient, trouble  
 spared?

'That, tasting joys by proxy thus, you fared  
 'The better for them?' Thus much craved  
 his soul.

Alas, from the beginning love is whole  
 And true; if sure of nought beside, most  
 sure

Of its own truth at least; nor may endure  
 A crowd to see its face, that cannot know

How hot the pulses throb its heart below:  
 While its own helplessness and utter want

Of means to worthily be ministrant  
 To what it worships, do but fan the more

Its flame, exalt the idol far before  
 Itself as it would have it ever be.

Souls like Sordello, on the contrary,  
 Coerced and put to shame, retaining will,

Care little, take mysterious comfort still,  
 But look forth tremblingly to ascertain

If others judge their claims not urged in  
 vain,

And say for them their stifled thoughts  
 aloud.

So, they must ever live before a crowd:  
 —'Vanity,' Naddo tells you.

Whence contrive  
 A crowd, now? From these women just

alive,  
 That archer-troop? Forth glided—not

alone  
 Each painted warrior, every girl of stone,

Nor Adelaide (bent double o'er a scroll,  
 One maiden at her knees, that eve, his soul

Shook as he stumbled through the arras'd  
 glooms

On them, for, 'mid quaint robes and weird  
 perfumes,

Started the meagre Tuscan up,—her eyes,  
 The maiden's, also, bluer with surprise)



—But the entire out-world: whatever,  
 scraps  
 And snatches, song and story, dreams  
 perhaps,  
 Conceited the world's offices, and he  
 Had hitherto transferred to flower or tree,  
 Not counted a befitting heritage  
 Each, of its own right, singly to engage  
 Some man, no other,—such now dared to  
 stand  
 Alone. Strength, wisdom, grace on every  
 hand  
 Soon disengaged themselves, and he discerned  
 A sort of human life: at least, was turned  
 A stream of lifelike figures through his  
 brain.  
 Lord, liegeman, valvassor and suzerain,  
 Ere he could choose, surrounded him; a  
 stuff  
 To work his pleasure on; there, sure  
 enough:  
 But as for gazing, what shall fix that gaze?  
 Are they to simply testify the ways  
 He who convoked them sends his soul  
 along  
 With the cloud's thunder or a dove's brood-  
 song?  
 —While they live each his life, boast each  
 his own  
 Peculiar dower of bliss, stand each alone  
 In some one point where something dearest  
 loved  
 Is easiest gained—far worthier to be  
 proved  
 Than aught he envies in the forest-wights!  
 No simple and self-evident delights,  
 But mixed desires of unimagined range,  
 Contrasts or combinations, new and  
 strange.  
 Irksome perhaps, yet plainly recognized  
 By this, the sudden company—loves prized  
 By those who are to prize his own amount  
 Of loves. Once care because such make  
 account,  
 Allow that foreign recognitions stamp  
 The current value, and his crowd shall  
 vamp  
 Him counterfeits enough; and so their  
 print  
 Be on the piece, 'tis gold, attests the mint,  
 And 'good,' pronounce they whom his  
 new appeal  
 Is made to: if their casual print conceal—  
 This arbitrary good of theirs o'ergloss  
 What he has lived without, nor felt the  
 loss—  
 Qualities strange, ungainly, wearisome,  
 —What matter? So must speech expand  
 the dumb  
 Part-sigh, part-smile with which Sordello,  
 late  
 Whom no poor woodland-sights could  
 satiate,

Betakes himself to study hungrily  
 Just what the puppets his crude phantasy  
 Supposes notablest,—popes, kings, priests,  
 knights,—  
 May please to promulgate for appetites;  
 Accepting all their artificial joys  
 Not as he views them, but as he employs  
 Each shape to estimate the other's stock  
 Of attributes, whereon—a marshalled  
 flock  
 Of authorized enjoyments—he may spend  
 Himself, be men, now, as he used to blend  
 With tree and flower—nay more entirely,  
 else  
 'Twere mockery: for instance, 'How excels  
 'My life that chieftain's?' (who apprised  
 the youth  
 Ecelin, here, becomes this month, in truth,  
 Imperial Vicar?) 'Turns he in his tent  
 'Remissly? Be it so—my head is bent  
 'Deliciously amid my girls to sleep.  
 'What if he stalks the Trontine-pass? Yon  
 steep  
 'I climbed an hour ago with little toil:  
 'We are alike there. But can I, too, foil  
 'The Guelf's paid stabber, carelessly afford  
 'Saint Mark's a spectacle, the sleight o'  
 the sword  
 'Baffling the treason in a moment?' Here  
 No rescue! Poppy he is none, but peer  
 To Ecelin, assuredly: his hand,  
 Fashioned: no otherwise, should wield a  
 brand  
 With Ecelin's success—try, now! He soon  
 Was satisfied, returned as to the moon  
 From earth; left each abortive boy's-  
 attempt  
 For feats, from failure happily exempt,  
 In fancy at his beck. 'One day I will  
 'Accomplish it! Are they not older still  
 '—Not grown-up men and women? 'Tis  
 beside  
 'Only a dream; and though I must abide  
 'With dreams now, I may find a thorough  
 vent  
 'For all myself, acquire an instrument  
 'For acting what these people act; my soul  
 'Hunting a body out may gain its whole  
 'Desire some day!' How else express  
 chagrin  
 And resignation, show the hope steal in  
 With which he let sink from an aching  
 wrist  
 The rough-hewn ash-bow? Straight, a  
 gold shaft missed  
 Into the Syrian air, struck Malek down  
 Superbly! 'Crosses to the brach! God's  
 Town  
 'Is gained him back!' Why bend rough  
 ash-bows more?  
 Thus lives he: if not careless as before,  
 Comforted: for one may anticipate,  
 Rehearse the future, be prepared when  
 fate

Shall have prepared in turn real men  
whose names

Startle, real places of enormous fames,  
Este abroad and Ecclm at home  
To worship him.—Mantua, Verona, Rome  
To witness it. Who grudges time so spent?  
Rather test qualitics to heart's content—  
Summon them, thrice selected, near and  
far—

Compress the starriest into one star,  
And grasp the whole at once!

The pageant thinned  
Accordingly; from rank to rank, like wind  
His spirit passed to winnow and divide;  
Back fell the simpler phantasms; every side  
The strong clave to the wise; with either  
classed

The beauteous; so, till two or three  
amassed

Mankind's beseeemingnesses, and reduced  
Themselves eventually,—graces loos'd,  
Strengths lavished,—all to heighten up  
One Shape

Whose potency no creature should escape.  
Can it be Friedrich of the bowmen's talk?  
Surely that grape-juice, bubbling at the  
stalk,

Is some grey scorching Saracenic wine  
The Kaiser quaffs with the Miramoline!—  
Those swarthy hazel-clusters, seamed and  
chapped,

Or filberts russet-sheathed and velvet-  
capped,

Are dates plucked from the bough John  
Brienne sent

To keep in mind his sluggish armament  
Of Canaan:—Friedrich's, all the pomp  
and fierce

Demeanour! But harsh sounds and sights  
transpierce

So rarely the serene cloud where he dwells  
Whose looks enjoin, whose lightest words  
are spells

On the obdurate! That right arm indeed  
Has thunder for its slave; but where's the  
need

Of thunder if the stricken multitude  
Hearkens, arrested in its angriest mood.  
While songs go up exulting, then disspread,  
Dispart, disperse, lingering overhead  
Like an escape of angels? 'Tis the tune,  
Nor much unlike the words his women  
croon

Smilingly, colourless and faint-designed  
Each, as a worn-out queen's face some re-  
mind

Of her extreme youth's love-tales. 'Egla-  
mor

'Made that!' Half minstrel and half  
emperor,

What but ill objects vexed him? Such he  
slew.

The kinder sort were easy to subdue

<sup>1</sup> *Emir al Maromenim*, Prince of the Faithful.

By those ambrosial glances, dulcet tones;  
And these a gracious hand advanced to  
thrones

Beneath him. Wherefore twist and torture  
this,

Striving to name afresh the antique bliss,  
Instead of saying, neither less nor more,  
He had discovered, as our world before,  
Apollo? That shall be the name; nor bid  
Me rag by rag expose how patchwork hid  
The youth—what thefts of every clime  
and day

Contributed to purfle the array  
He climbed with (June at deep) some close  
ravine

Mid clatter of its million pebbles sheen,  
Over which, singing soft, the runnel slipped  
Elate with rains: into whose streamlet  
dipped

He foot, yet trod, you thought, with unwet  
sock—

Though really on the stubs of living rock  
Ages ago it crenelled; vines for roof,

Lindens for wall; before him, aye aloof,  
Flittered in the cool some azure damsel-  
fly,

Born of the simmering quiet, there to die.  
Emerging whence, Apollo still, he spied  
Mighty descents of forest; multiplied  
Tuft on tuft, here, the frolic myrtle-trees,  
There gendered the grave maple stocks at  
ease.

And, proud of its observer, straight the  
wood

Tried old surprises on him; black it stood  
A sudden barrier ('twas a cloud passed  
o'er)

So dead and dense, the tiniest brute no  
more

Must pass; yet presently (the cloud dis-  
patched)

Each clump, behold, was glistening de-  
tached

A shrub, oak-boles shrunk into ilex-stems!  
Yet could not he denounce the stratagems  
He saw thro', till, hours thence, aloft  
would hang

White summer-lightnings; as it sank and  
sprang

To measure, that whole palpitating breast  
Of heaven, 'twas Apollo, nature prest  
At eve to worship.

Time stole: by degrees  
The Pythons perish off; his votaries

Sink to respectful distance; songs redeem  
Their pains, but briefer; their dismissals  
seem

Emphatic; only girls are very slow  
To disappear—his Delians! Some that  
glow

O' the instant, more with earlier loves to  
wrench

Away, reserves to quell, disdains to  
quench;

Alike in one material circumstance—  
All soon or late adore Apollo! Glance  
The bevy through, divine Apollo's choice,  
His Daphne! 'We secure Count Richard's  
voice

'In Este's counsels, good for Este's ends  
'As our Taurello,' say his faded friends,  
'By granting him our: Palma!'—the sole  
child

They mean, of Agnes Este who beguiled  
Ecelin, years before this Adelaide  
Wedded and turned him wicked: 'but the  
maid

'Rejects his suit,' those sleepy women  
boast.

She, scorning all beside, deserves the most  
Sordello: so, conspicuous in his world  
Of dreams sat Palma. How the tresses  
curled

Into a sumptuous swell of gold and wound  
About her like a glory! even the ground  
Was bright as with spilt sunbeams; breathe  
not, breathe

Not!—poised, see, one leg doubled under-  
neath,

Its small foot buried in the dimpling snow,  
Rests, but the other, listlessly below,  
O'er the couch-side swings feeling for cool  
air,

The vein-streaks swollen a richer violet  
where

The languid blood lies heavily; yet calm  
On her slight prop, each flat and outspread  
palm,

As but suspended in the act to rise  
By consciousness of beauty, whence her  
eyes

Turn with so frank a triumph, for she  
meets

Apollo's gaze in the pine glooms.

Time fleets:  
That's worst! Because the pre-appointed  
age

Approaches. Fate is tardy with the stage  
And crowd she promised. Lean he grows  
and pale.

Though restlessly at rest. Hardly avail  
Fancies to soothe him. Time steals, yet  
alone

He carries here! The earnest smile is gone.  
How long this might continue matters not;  
—For ever, possibly; since to the spot  
None come: our lingering Taurello quits

Mantua at last, and light our lady flits  
Back to her place disburthened of a care.  
Strange—to be constant here if he is there?  
Is it distrust? Oh, never! for they both

Goad Ecelin alike, Romano's growth  
Is daily manifest, with Azzo dumb  
And Richard wavering: let but Friedrich  
come,

Find matter for the minstrelsy's report  
—Lured from the Isle and its young

Kaiser's court

To sing us a Messina morning up,  
And, double rillet of a drinking cup,  
Sparkle along to ease the land of drouth,  
Northward to Provence that, and thus far  
south

The other! What a method to apprise  
Neighbours of births, espousals, obse-  
quies,

Which in their very tongue the Troubadour  
Records! and his performance makes a  
tour,

For Trouveres bear the miracle about,  
Explain its cunning to the vulgar rout,  
Until the Formidable House is famed  
Over the country—as Taurello aimed,

Who introduced, although the rest adopt,  
The novelty. Such games, her absence  
stopped,

Begin afresh now Adelaide, recluse  
No longer, in the light of day pursues  
Her plans at Mantua: whence an accident  
Which, breaking on Sordello's mixed con-  
tent

Opened, like any flash that cures the blind,  
The veritable business of mankind.

## BOOK THE SECOND

THE woods were long austere with snow:  
at last

Pink leaflets budded on the beech, and fast  
Larches, scattered through pine-tree soli-  
tudes,

Brightened, 'as in the slumbrous heart o'  
the woods

'Our buried year, a witch, grew young  
again

'To placid incantations, and that stain  
'About were from her cauldron, green  
smoke blent

'With those black pines'—so Eglamor  
gave vent

To a chance fancy. Whence a just rebuke  
From his companion; brother Naddo  
shook

The solemnest of brows: 'Beware,' he said,  
'Of setting up conceits in nature's stead!'  
Forth wandered our Sordello. Nought so  
sure

As that to-day's adventure will secure  
Palma, the visioned lady—only pass  
O'er yon damp mound and its exhausted  
grass,

Under that brake where sundawn feeds the  
stalks

Of withered fern with gold, into those  
walks

Of pine and take her! Buoyantly he went.  
Again his stooping forehead was besprent  
With dew-drops from the skirting ferns.

Then wide  
Opened the great morass, shot every side

With flashing water through and through;

Thick-steaming, all-alive. Whose shape  
divine,

Quivered i<sup>1</sup> the farthest rainbow-vapour,  
glanced

Athwart the flying herons? He advanced,  
But warily; though Mincio leaped no  
more,

Each foot-fall burst up in the marish-floor  
A diamond jet: and if he stopped to pick  
Rose-lichen, or molest the leeches quick,  
And circling blood-worms, minnow, newt  
or loach,

A sudden pond would silently encroach  
This way and that. On Palma passed. The  
verge

Of a new wood was gained. She will  
emerge

Flushed, now, and panting,—crowds to  
see,—will own

She loves him—Boniface to hear, to groan,  
To leave his suit! One screen of pine-trees  
still

Opposes; but—the startling spectacle—  
Mantua, this time! Under the walls—a  
crowd

Indeed, real men and women, gay and loud  
Round a pavilion. How he stood!

In truth  
No prophecy had come to pass: his youth  
In its prime now—and where was homage  
poured

Upon Sordello?—born to be adored,  
And suddenly discovered weak, scarce  
made

To cope with any, cast into the shade  
By this and this. Yet something seemed to  
prick

And tingle in his blood; a sleight—a  
trick—

And much would be explained. It went for  
nought—

The best of their endowments were ill  
bought

With his identity: nay, the conceit,  
That this day's roving led to Palma's feet  
Was not so vain—list! The word,  
'Palma!' Steal

Aside, and die, Sordello; this is real,  
And this—abjure!

What next? The curtains see  
Dividing! She is there; and presently  
He will be there—the proper You, at  
length—

In your own cherished dress of grace and  
strength!

Most like, the very Boniface!

It was a showy man advanced; but though  
A glad cry welcomed him, then every  
sound

\* Sank and the crowd disposed themselves  
around,

—'This is not he,' Sordello felt; while,  
'Place

'For the best Troubadour of Boniface!'  
Hollaed the Jongleurs,—'Eglamor, whose  
lay

'Concludes his patron's Court of Love to-  
day!'

Obsequious Naddo strung the master's  
lute

With the new lute-string, 'Elys,' named to  
suit

The song: he stealthily at watch, the while,  
Biting his lip to keep down a great smile  
Of pride: then up he struck. Sordello's  
brain

Swam; for he knew a sometime deed again;  
So, could supply each foolish gap and  
chasm

The minstrel left in his enthusiasm,  
Mistaking its true version—was the tale  
Not of Apollo? Only, what avail  
Luring her down, that Elys an he pleased,  
If the man dared no further? Has he  
ceased?

And, lo, the people's frank applause half  
done,

Sordello was beside him, had begun  
(Spite of indignant twitchings from his  
friend

The Trouvere) the true lay with the true  
end,

Taking the other's names and time and  
place

For his. On flew the song, a giddy race,  
After the flying story; word made leap  
Out word, rhyme—rhyme; the lay could  
barely keep

Pace with the action visibly rushing past:  
Both ended. Back fell Naddo more aghast  
Than some Egyptian from the harassed  
bull

That wheeled abrupt and, bellowing,  
fronted full

His plague, who spied a scarab 'neath the  
tongue,

And found 'twas Apis' flank his hasty  
prong

Insulted. But the people—but the cries,  
The crowding round, and proffering the  
prize!

—For he had gained some prize. He  
seemed to shrink

Into a sleepy cloud, just at whose brink  
One sight withheld him. There sat Ade-  
laide,

Silent; but at her knees the very maid  
Of the North Chamber, her red lips as  
rich,

The same pure fleecy hair; one weft of  
which,

Golden and great, quite touched his cheek  
as o'er

She leant, speaking some six words and no  
more.

He answered something, anything; and  
she

Unbound a scarf and laid it heavily  
Upon him, her neck's warmth and all.  
Again

Moved the arrested magic; in his brain  
Noises grew, and a light that turned to  
glare,

And greater glare, until the intense flare  
Engulfed him, shut the whole scene from  
his sense.

And when he woke 'twas many a furlong  
thence,

At home; the sun shining his ruddy  
wont;

The customary birds' chirp; but his front  
Was crowned—was crowned! Her scented  
scarf around

His neck! Whose gorgeous vesture heaps  
the ground?

A prize? He turned, and peeringly on him  
Brooded the women-faces, kind and dim,  
Ready to talk—"The Jongleurs in a troop

'Had brought him back, Naddo and  
Squarcialupe

'And Tagliafer; how strange! a childhood  
spent

'In taking, well for him, so brave a bent!  
'Since Eglamor,' they heard, 'was dead

with spite,  
'And Palma chose him for her minstrel.'

Light  
Sordello rose—to think, now; hitherto  
He had perceived. Sure, a discovery

grew  
Out of it all! Best live from first to last  
The transport o'er again. A week he

passed,  
Sucking the sweet out of each circum-  
stance,

From the bard's outbreak to the luscious  
trance

Bounding his own achievement. Strange!  
A man

Recounted an adventure, but began  
Imperfectly; his own task was to fill

The frame-work up, sing well what he sung  
ill,

Supply the necessary points, set loose  
As many incidents of little use

—More imbecile the other, not to see  
Their relative importance clear as he!

But, for a special pleasure in the act  
Of singing—had he ever turned, in fact,

From Elys, to sing Elys?—from each fit  
Of rapture to contrive a song of it?

True, this snatch or the other seemed to  
wind

Into a treasure, helped himself to find  
A beauty in himself; for, see, he soared

By means of that mere snatch, to many a  
hoard

Of fancies; as some falling cone bears soft  
The eye along the fir-tree-spire, aloft

To a dove's nest. Then, how divine the  
cause

Why such performance should exact ap-  
plause

From men, if they had fancies too? Did  
fate

Decree they found a beauty separate  
In the poor snatch itself?—"Take Elys,

there,  
'—"Her head that's sharp and perfect like  
a pear,

"So close and smooth are laid the few  
fine locks

"Coloured like honey oozed from top-  
most rocks

"Sun-blanch'd the livelong summer"—  
if they heard

'Just those two rhymes, assented at my  
word,

'And loved them as I love them who have  
run

'These fingers through those pale locks, let  
the sun

Into the white cool skin—who first could  
clutch,

'Then praise—I needs must be a god to  
such.

'Or what if some, above themselves, and  
yet

'Beneath me, like their Eglamor, have set  
'An impress on our gift? So, men believe

'And worship what they know not, nor  
receive

'Delight from. Have they fancies—slow,  
perchance,

'Not at their beck, which indistinctly  
glance

'Until, by song, each floating part be  
linked

'To each, and all grow palpable, distinct!'  
He pondered this.

Meanwhile, sounds low and drear  
Stole on him, and a noise of footsteps,

near  
And nearer, while the underwood was  
pushed

Aside, the larches grazed, the dead leaves  
crushed

At the approach of men. The wind seemed  
laid;

Only, the trees shrunk slightly and a shade  
Came o'er the sky although 'twas midday

yet:  
You saw each half-shut downcast floweret  
Flutter—"a Roman bride, when they'd

dispart  
'Her unbound tresses with the Sabine  
dart,

'Holding that famous rape in memory  
still,

'Felt creep into her curls the iron chill,  
'And looked thus,' Eglamor would say—  
indeed

'Tis Eglamor, no other, these precede

Home hither in the woods. 'Twere surely  
sweet.

'Far from the scene of one's forlorn defeat  
'To sleep!' judged Naddo, who in person  
led

Jongleurs and Trouveres, chanting at their  
head,

A scanty company; for, sooth to say,  
Our beaten Troubadour had seen his day.  
Old worshippers were something shamed,  
old friends

Nigh weary; still the death proposed  
amends.

'Let us but get them safely through my  
song

'And home again!' quoth Naddo.

All along,  
This man (they rest the bier upon the sand)  
—This calm corpse with the loose flowers  
in his hand,

Eglamor, lived Sordello's opposite.  
For him indeed was Naddo's notion right,  
And verse a temple-worship vague and  
vast,

A ceremony that withdrew the last  
Opposing bolt, looped back the lingering  
veil

Which hid the holy place: should one so  
frail

Stand there without such effort? or repine  
If much was blank, uncertain at the shrine  
He knelt before, till, soothed by many a  
rite,

The power responded, and some sound or  
sight

Grew up, his own forever, to be fixed,  
In rhyme, the beautiful, forever!—mixed  
With his own life, unloosed when he  
should please,

Having it safe at hand, ready to ease  
All pain, remove all trouble; every time  
He loosed that fancy from its bonds of  
rhyme,

(Like Perseus when he loosed his naked  
love)

Faltering; so distinct and far above  
Himself, these fancies! He, no genius rare,  
Transfiguring in fire or wave or air  
At will, but a poor gnome that, cloistered  
up

In some rock-chamber with his agate cup,  
His topaz rod, his seed-pearl, in these  
few

And their arrangement finds enough to do  
For his best art. Then, how he loved that  
art!

The calling marking him a man apart  
From men—one not to care, take counsel  
for

Cold hearts, comfortless faces—(Eglamor  
was neediest of his tribe)—since verse, the  
gift,

Was his, and men, the whole of them,  
must shift

Without it, e'en content themselves with  
wealth

And pomp and power, snatching a life by  
stealth.

So, Eglamor was not without his pride!  
The sorriest bat which cowers throughout  
noontide

While other birds are jocund, has one time  
When moon and stars are blinded, and the  
prime

Of earth is his to claim, nor find a peer;  
And Eglamor was noblest poet here—  
He well knew, 'mid those April woods he  
cast

Conceits upon in plenty as he passed,  
That Naddo might suppose him not to  
think

Entirely on the coming triumph: wink  
At the one weakness! 'Twas a fervid child,  
That song of his; no brother of the guild  
Had e'er conceived its like. The rest you  
know,

The exaltation and the overthrow:  
Our poet lost his purpose, lost his rank,  
His life—to that it came. Yet envy sank  
Within him, as he heard Sordello out,  
And, for the first time, shouted—tried to  
shout

Like others, not from any zeal to show  
Pleasure that way: the common sort did so,  
What else was Eglamor? who, bending  
down

As they, placed his beneath Sordello's  
crown,

Printed a kiss on his successor's hand,  
Left one great tear on it, then joined his  
band

—In time; for some were watching at the  
door:

Who knows what envy may effect? 'Give  
o'er,

'Nor charm his lips, nor craze him!' (here  
one spied

And disengaged the withered crown)—  
'Beside

'His crown? How prompt and clear those  
verses rang

'To answer yours! nay, sing them!' And  
he sang

Them calmly. Home he went; friends used  
to wait

His coming, zealous to congratulate;  
But, to a man—so quickly runs report—

Could do no less than leave him, and escort  
His rival. That eve, then, bred many a  
thought:

What must his future life be? was he  
brought

So low, who stood so lofty this Spring  
morn?

At length he said, 'Best sleep now with my  
scorn,

'And by to-morrow I devise some plain  
'Expedient!' So, he slept, nor woke again.

They found as much, those friends, when  
they returned  
O'erflowing with the marvels they had  
learned

About Sordello's paradise, his roves  
Among the hills and vales and plains and  
groves,

Wherein, no doubt, this lay was roughly  
cast,

Polished by slow degrees, completed last  
To Eglamor's discomfiture and death.

Such form the chanter now, and, out of  
breath,

They lay the beaten man in his abode,  
Naddo reciting that same luckless ode,  
Doleful to hear. Sordello could explore  
By means of it, however, one step more  
In joy; and, mastering the round at length,  
Learnt how to live in weakness as in  
strength,

When from his covert forth he stood,  
addressed

Eglamor, bade the tender ferns invest,  
Primæval pines o'er canopy his couch,  
And, most of all, his fame—(shall I avouch  
Eglamor heard it, dead though he might  
look,

And laughed as from his brow Sordello  
took

The crown, and laid on the bard's breast,  
and said

It was a crown, now, fit for poet's head?)  
—Continue. Nor the prayer quite fruitless  
fell.

A plant they have, yielding a three-leaved  
bell<sup>1</sup>

Which whitens at the heart ere noon, and  
ails

Till evening; evening gives it to her gales  
To clear away with such forgotten things  
As are an eyesore to the morn: this brings  
Him to their mind, and bears his very  
name.

So much for Eglamor. My own month  
came;

'Twas a sunrise of blossoming and May.  
Beneath a flowering laurel thicket lay  
Sordello; each new sprinkle of white stars  
That smell fainter of wine than Massic jars  
Dug up at Baïæ, when the south wind shed  
The ripest, made him happier; filleted  
And robbed the same, only a lute beside  
Lay on the turf. Before him far and wide  
The country stretched: Goito slept behind  
—The castle and its covert, which con-  
fined

Him with his hopes and fears; so fain of old  
To leave the story of his birth untold.

At intervals, 'spite the fantastic glow  
Of his Apollo-life, a certain low  
And wretched whisper, winding through  
the bliss,

Admonished, no such fortune could be his,

<sup>1</sup> St. Bruno's lily, the *Anthericum Liliastrium*.

All was quite false and sure to fade one  
day:

The closelier drew he round him his array  
Of brilliance to expel the truth. But when  
A reason for his difference from men  
Surprised him at the grave, he took no rest  
While aught of that old life, superbly  
dressed

Down to its meanest incident, remained  
A mystery: alas, they soon explained  
Away Apollo! and the tale amounts  
To this: when at Vicenza both her counts  
Banished the Vivaresi kith and kin,  
Those Maltraversi hung on Ecelin,  
Reviled him as he followed; he for spite  
Must fire their quarter, though that self-  
same night

Among the flames young Ecelin was born  
Of Adelaide, there too, and barely torn  
From the roused populace hard on the rear,  
By a poor archer when his chieftain's fear  
Grew high; into the thick Elcorte leapt,  
Saved her, and died; no creature left ex-  
cept

His child to thank. And when the full  
escape

Was known—how men impaled from  
chine to nape

Unlucky Prata, all to pieces spurned  
Bishop Pistore's concubines, and burned  
Taurello's entire household, flesh and fell,  
Missing the sweeter prey—such courage  
well

Might claim reward. The orphan, ever  
since,

Sordello, had been nurtured by his prince  
Within a blind retreat where Adelaide—  
(For, once this notable discovery made,  
The past at every point was understood)  
—Might harbour easily when times were  
rude,

When Azzo schemed for Palma, to retrieve  
That pledge of Agnes Este—loth to leave  
Mantua unguarded with a vigilant eye,  
While there Taurello bode ambiguously—  
He who could have no motive now to moil  
For his own fortunes since their utter  
spoil—

As it were worth while yet (went the report)  
To disengage himself from her. In short,  
Apollo vanished; a mean youth, just  
named

His lady's minstrel, was to be proclaimed  
—How shall I phrase it?—Monarch of the  
World!

For, on the day when that array was furled  
Forever, and in place of one a slave  
To longings, wild indeed, but longings save  
In dreams as wild, suppressed—one daring  
not

Assume the mastery such dreams allot,  
Until a magical equipment, strength,  
Grace, wisdom, decked him too,—he  
chose at length,

Content with unproved wits and failing  
frame,

In virtue of his simple will, to claim  
That mastery, no less—to do his best  
With means so limited, and let the rest  
Go by,—the seal was set: never again  
Sordello could in his own sight remain  
One of the many, one with hopes and  
cares

And interests nowise distinct from theirs,  
Only peculiar in a thriveless store  
Of fancies, which were fancies and no  
more;

Never again for him and for the crowd  
A common law was challenged and al-  
lowed

If calmly reasoned of, howe'er denied  
By a mad impulse nothing justified  
Short of Apollo's presence. The divorce  
Is clear: why needs Sordello square his  
course

By any known example? Men no more  
Compete with him than tree and flower  
before.

Himself, inactive, yet is greater far  
Than such as act, each stooping to his star,  
Acquiring thence his function; he has  
gained

The same result with meaner mortals  
trained

To strength or beauty, moulded to express  
Each the idea that rules him; since no less  
He comprehends that function, but can  
still

Embrace the others, take of might his fill  
With Richard as of grace with Palma, mix  
Their qualities, or for a moment fix  
On one; abiding free meantime, un-  
cramped

By any partial organ, never stamped  
Strong, and to strength turning all ener-  
gies—

Wise, and restricted to becoming wise—  
That is, he loves not, nor possesses One  
Idea that, star-like over, lures him on  
To its exclusive purpose. 'Fortunate!

'This flesh of mine ne'er strove to emulate  
'A soul so various—took no casual mould  
'Of the first fancy and, contracted, cold,  
'Clogged her forever—soul averse to  
change

'As flesh: whereas flesh leaves soul free to  
range,

'Remains itself a blank, cast into shade,  
'Encumbers little, if it cannot aid.

'So, range, free soul!—who, by self-con-  
sciousness,

'The last drop of all beauty dost express—  
'The grace of seeing grace, a quintessence

'For thee: while for the world, that can  
dispense

'Wonder on men who, themselves, wonder  
—make

'A shift to love at second-hand, and take

'For idols those who do but idolize,  
'Themselves,—the world that counts men  
strong or wise,

'Who, themselves, court strength, wisdom,  
—it shall bow

'Surely in unexampled worship now,  
'Discerning me!'

(Dear monarch, I beseech,  
Notice how lamentably wide a breach  
Is here: discovering this, discover too  
What our poor world has possibly to do  
With it! As pigmy natures as you please—  
So much the better for you; take your ease,  
Look on, and laugh; style yourself God  
alone;

Strangle some day with a cross olive-stone!  
All that is right enough: but why want us  
To know that you yourself know thus and  
thus?)

'The world shall bow to me conceiving all  
'Man's life, who see its blisses, great and  
small,

'Afar—not tasting any; no machine  
'To exercise my utmost will is mine:  
'Be mine mere consciousness! Let men  
perceive

'What I could do, a mastery believe,  
'Asserted and established to the throng  
'By their selected evidence of song  
'Which now shall prove, whate'er they are,  
or seek

'To be, I am—whose words, not actions  
speak,

'Who change no standards of perfection,  
vex

'With no strange forms created to perplex  
'But just perform their bidding and no  
more,

'At their own satiating-point give o'er,  
'While each shall love in me the love that  
leads

'His soul to power's perfection.' Song, not  
deeds,

(For we get tired) was chosen, Fate would  
brook

Mankind no other organ; he would look  
For not another channel to dispense  
His own volition by, receive men's sense  
Of its supremacy—would live content,  
Obstructed else, with merely verse for  
vent.

Nor should, for instance, strength an out-  
let seek

And, striving, be admired: nor grace be-  
speak

Wonder, displayed in gracious attitudes:  
Nor wisdom, poured forth, change un-  
seemly moods;

But he would give and take on song's one  
point.

Like some huge throbbing stone that,  
poised a-joint,

Sounds, to affect on its basaltic bed,  
Must sue in just one accent; tempests shed



Thunder, and raves the windstorm: only  
let

That key by any little noise be set—  
The far benighted hunter's halloo pitch  
On that, the hungry curlew chance to  
scritch

Or serpent hiss it, rustling through the rift,  
However loud, however low—all lift  
The groaning monster, stricken to the  
heart.

Lo ye, the world's concernment, for its  
part,

And this, for his, will hardly interfere!  
Its businesses in blood and blaze this year  
But wile the hour away—a pastime slight  
Till he shall step upon the platform: right!  
And, now thus much is settled, cast in  
rough,

Proved feasible, he counselled! thought  
enough,—

Slumber, Sordello! any day will serve:  
Were it a less digested plan! how swerve  
To-morrow? Meanwhile eat these sun-  
dried grapes,

And watch the soaring hawk there! Life  
escapes

Merrily thus.

He thoroughly read o'er  
His truchman Naddo's missive six times  
more,

Praying him visit Mantua and supply  
A famished world.

The evening star was high  
When he reached Mantua, but his fame  
arrived

Before him: friends applauded, foes con-  
vined,

And Naddo looked an angel, and the rest  
Angels, and all these angels would be blest  
Supremely by a song—the thrice-renowned  
Goito-manufacture. Then he found  
(Casting about to satisfy the crowd)

That happy vehicle, so late allowed,  
A sore annoyance; 'twas the song's effect  
He cared for, scarce the song itself: re-  
flect!

In the past life, what might be singing's  
use?

Just to delight his Delians, whose profuse  
Praise, not the toilsome process which  
procured

That praise, enticed Apollo: dreams ab-  
jured,

No overleaping means for ends—take  
both

For granted or take neither! I am loth  
To say the rhymes at last were Eglamor's;  
But Naddo, chuckling, bade competitors  
Go pine; 'the master certes meant to waste  
'No effort, cautiously had probed the  
taste

'He'd please anon: true bard, in short,—  
disturb

'His title if they could; nor spur nor curb,

'Fancy nor reason, wanting in him;  
whence

'The staple of his verses, common sense:  
'He built on man's broad nature—gift of  
gifts,

'That power to build. The world con-  
tented shifts

'With counterfeits enough, a dreary sort  
'Of warriors, statesmen, ere it can extort  
'Its poet-soul—that's, after all, a freak  
'(The having eyes to see and tongue to  
speak)

'With our herd's stupid sterling happiness  
'So plainly incompatible, that—yes—

'Yes—should a son, of his improve the  
breed

'And turn out poet, he were cursed in-  
deed!'

'Well, there's Goito and its woods anon,  
'If the worst happen; best go stoutly on  
'Now!' thought Sordello.

Ay, and goes on yet!  
You pother with your glossaries to get

A notion of the Troubadour's intent

In rondel, tenzon, virlai or sirvent—  
Much as you study arras how to twirl

His angelot, plaything of page and girl  
Once; but you surely reach, at last,—or,  
no!

Never quite reach what struck the people  
so,

As from the welter of their time he drew  
Its elements successively to view,

Followed all actions backward on their  
course,

And catching up, unmingled at the source,  
Such a strength, such a weakness, added  
then

A touch or two, and turned them into  
men.

Virtue took form, nor vice refused a shape;  
Here heaven opened, there was hell agape,

As Saint this simpered past in sanctity,  
Sinner the other flared portentous by

A greedy people. Then why stop, surprised  
At his success? The scheme was realized

Too suddenly in one respect: a crowd  
Praising, eyes quick to see, and lips as loud

To speak, delicious homage to receive,  
The woman's breath to feel upon his  
sleeve,

Who said, 'But Anafest—why asks he less  
'Than Lucio, in your verses? how confess,

'It seemed too much but yester eve!'—the  
youth,

Who bade him earnestly, 'Avow the truth!  
'You love Bianca, surely, from a your song;

'I knew I was unworthy!'—soft or strong,  
In poured such tributes ere he had ar-  
ranged

Ethereal ways to take them, sorted,  
changed,

Digested. Courted thus at unawares,  
In spite of his pretensions and his cares,

He caught himself shamefully hankering  
After the obvious petty joys that spring  
From true life, fain, relinquish pedestal  
And condescend with pleasures—one and  
all

To be renounced! no doubt; for, thus to  
chain

Himself to single joys and so refrain  
From tasting their quintessence, frus-  
trates, sure,  
His prime design; each joy must he abjure  
Even for love of it.

He laughed: what sage  
But perishes if from his magic page  
He look because, at the first line, a proof  
'Twas heard salutes him from the cavern  
roof?

'On! Give yourself, excluding aught be-  
side,

'To the day's task; compel your slave  
provide

'Its utmost at the soonest; turn the leaf  
'Thoroughly conned. These lays of yours,  
in brief—

'Cannot men bear, now, something better?  
—fly

'A pitch beyond this unreal pageantry  
'Of essences? the period sure has ceased

'For such: present us with ourselves, at  
least,

'Not portions of ourselves, mere loves and  
hates

'Made flesh: wait not!'

Awhile the poet waits  
However. The first trial was enough:

He left imagining, to try the stuff  
That held the imaged thing, and, let it  
writhe

Never so fiercely, scarce allowed a tithe  
To reach the light—his Language. How  
he sought

The cause, conceived a cure, and slow re-  
wrought

That Language,—welding words into the  
crude

Mass from the new speech round him, till  
a rude

Armour was hammered out, in time to be  
Approved beyond the Roman panoply

Melted to make it,—boots not. This ob-  
tained

With some ado, no obstacle remained  
To using it; accordingly he took

An action with its actors, quite forsook  
Himself to live in each, returned anon

With the result—a creature, and, by one  
And one, proceeded leisurely to equip

Its limbs in harness of his workmanship.  
'Accomplished! Listen, Mantuans!

Fond essay!

Piece after piece that armour broke away,  
Because perceptions whole, like that he  
sought

To clothe, reject so pure a work of thought

As language: thought may take percep-  
tion's place

But hardly co-exist in any case,  
Being its mere presentment—of the whole

By parts, the simultaneous and the sole  
By the successive and the many. Lacks

The crowd perception? painfully it tacks  
Thought to thought, which Sordello,

needing such,  
Has rent perception into: it's to clutch

And reconstruct—his office to diffuse,  
Destroy: as hard, then, to obtain a Muse

As to become Apollo. For the rest,  
'E'en if some wondrous vehicle expressed

'The whole dream, what impertinence in  
me

'So to express it, who myself can be  
'The dream! nor, on the other hand, are

those  
'I sing to, over-likely to suppose

'A higher than the highest I present  
'Now, which they praise already: be con-  
tent

'Both parties, rather—they with the old  
verse,

'And I with the old praise—far go, far  
worse!'

A few adhering rivets loosed, upsprings  
The angel, sparkles off his mail, which  
rings

Whirled from each delicatest limb it  
warps;

So might Apollo from the sudden corpse  
Of Hyacinth have cast his luckless quoits.

He set to celebrating the exploits  
Of Montfort o'er the Mountaineers.

Then came  
The world's revenge: their pleasure, now  
his aim

Merely,—what was it? 'Not to play the  
fool

'So much as learn our lesson in your  
school!'

Replied the world. He found that, every  
time

He gained applause by any ballad-rhyme,  
His auditory recognized no jot

As he intended, and, mistaking not  
Him for his meanest hero, ne'er was dunce

Sufficient to believe him—all, at once.  
His will . . . conceive it caring for his

will!  
—Mantuans, the main of them, admiring  
still

How a mere singer, ugly, stunted, weak,  
Had Montfort at completely (so to speak)

His fingers' ends; while past the praise-  
tide swept

To Montfort, either's share distinctly kept:  
The true meed for true merit!—his abates

Into a sort he most repudiates,  
And on them angrily he turns. Who were

The Mantuans, after all, that he should  
care

About their recognition, ay or no?  
 In spite of the convention months ago,  
 (Why blink the truth?) was not he forced  
 to help  
 This same ungrateful audience, every  
 whelp  
 Of Naddo's litter, make them pass for  
 peers  
 With the bright band of old Goito years,  
 As erst he toiled for flower or tree? Why,  
 there  
 Sat Palma! Adelaide's funereal hair  
 Ennobled the next corner. Ay, he strewed  
 A fairy dust upon that multitude,  
 Although he feigned to take them by them-  
 selves;  
 His giants dignified those puny elves,  
 Sublimed their faint applause. In short,  
 he found  
 Himself still footing a delusive round,  
 Remote as ever from the self-display  
 He meant to compass, hampered every  
 way  
 By what he hoped assistance. Wherefore  
 then  
 Continue, make believe to find in men  
 A use he found not?  
 Weeks, months, years went by,  
 And lo, Sordello vanished utterly,  
 Sundered in twain; each spectral part at  
 strife  
 With each; one jarred against another  
 life;  
 The Poet thwarting hopelessly the Man—  
 Who, fooled no longer, free in fancy ran  
 Here, there: let slip no opportunities  
 As pitiful, forsooth, beside the prize  
 To drop on him some no-time and acquit  
 His constant faith (the Poet-half's to wit—  
 That waiving any compromise between  
 No joy and all joy kept the hunger keen  
 Beyond most methods)—of incurring scoff  
 From the Man-portion—not to be put off  
 With self-reflectings by the Poet's scheme,  
 Though ne'er so bright. Who sauntered  
 forth in dream,  
 Dressed any how, nor waited mystic  
 frames,  
 Immeasurable gifts, astounding claims,  
 But just his sorry self?—who yet might be  
 Sorrier for aught he in reality  
 Achieved, so pinioned Man's the Poet-  
 part,  
 Fondling, in turn of fancy, verse; the Art  
 Developing his soul a thousand ways—  
 Potent, by its assistance, to amaze  
 The multitude with majesties, convince  
 Each sort of nature that the nature's prince  
 Accosted it. Language, the makeshift,  
 grew  
 Into a bravest of expedients, too;  
 Apollo, seemed it now, perverse had  
 thrown  
 Quiver and bow away, the lyre alone

Sufficed. While, out of dream, his day's  
 work went  
 To tune a crazy *tenzon*<sup>1</sup> or *sirvent*<sup>2</sup>—  
 So hampered him the Man-part, thrust to  
 judge  
 Between the bard and the bard's audience,  
 grudge  
 A minute's toil that missed its due reward!  
 But the complete Sordello, Man and Bard,  
 John's cloud-girt angel, this foot on the  
 land,  
 That on the sea, with, open in his hand,  
 A bitter-sweetling of a book—was gone.  
 Then, if internal struggles to be one,  
 Which frittered him incessantly piecemeal,  
 Referred, ne'er so obliquely, to the real  
 Intruding Mantuans! ever with some call  
 To action while he pondered, once for all,  
 Which looked the easier effort—to pursue  
 This course, still leap o'er paltry joys, yearn  
 through  
 The present ill-appreciated stage  
 Of self-revelation, and compel the age  
 Know him—or else, forswearing bard-  
 craft, wake  
 From out his lethargy and nobly shake  
 Off timid habits of denial, mix  
 With men, enjoy like men. Ere he could fix  
 On aught, in rushed the Mantuans; much  
 they cared  
 For his perplexity! Thus unprepared,  
 The obvious if not only shelter lay  
 In deeds, the dull conventions of his day  
 Prescribed the like of him: why not be glad  
 'Tis settled Palma's minstrel, good or bad,  
 Submits to this and that established rule?  
 Let Vidal change, or any other fool,  
 His murrey-coloured robe for filamot,  
 And crop his hair; too skin-deep, is it not,  
 Such vigour? Then, a sorrow to the heart,  
 His talk! Whatever topics they might start  
 Had to be groped for in his consciousness  
 Straight, and as straight delivered them  
 by guess.  
 Only obliged to ask himself, 'What was,'  
 A speedy answer followed; but, alas,  
 One of God's large ones, tardy to condense  
 Itself into a period; answers whence  
 A tangle of conclusions must be stripped  
 At any risk ere, trim to pattern clipped,  
 They matched rare specimens the Man-  
 tuan flock  
 Regaled him with, each talker from his  
 stock  
 Of sorted-o'er opinions, every stage,  
 Juicy in youth or desiccate with age,  
 Fruits like the fig-tree's, rather-ripe, rotten-  
 rich,  
 Sweet-sour, all tastes to take: a practice  
 which

<sup>1</sup> *Tenzon*. A dramatic skirmish in verse before the Court of Love.

<sup>2</sup> *Sirvent*. Martial, political, and satirical songs. Both Provençal terms.

He too had not impossibly attained,  
Once either of those fancy-flights re-  
strained;

(For, at conjecture how might words  
appear

To others, playing there what happened  
here,

And occupied abroad by what he spurned  
At home, 'twas slipped, the occasion he re-  
turned

To seize:) he'd strike that lyre adroitly—  
speech,

Would but a twenty-cubit plectre reach;  
A clever hand, consummate instrument,  
Were both brought close; each excellency  
went

For nothing, else. The question Naddo  
asked,

Had just a lifetime moderately tasked  
To answer, Naddo's fashion. More dis-  
gust

And more: why move his soul, since move  
it must

At minute's notice or as good it failed  
To move at all? The end was, he retained  
Some ready-made opinion, put to use  
This quip, that maxim, ventured reproduce  
Gestures and tones—at any folly caught  
Serving to finish with, nor too much sought  
If false or true 'twas spoken; praise and  
blame

Of what he said grew pretty nigh the same  
—Meantime awards to meantime acts: his  
soul,

Unequal to the compassing a whole,  
Saw, in a tenth part, less and less to strive  
About. And as for men in turn . . . con-  
trive

Who could to take eternal interest  
In them, so hate the worst, so love the best!  
Though, in pursuance of his passive plan,  
He hailed, decried, the proper way.

As Man  
So figured he; and how as Poet? Verse  
Came only not to a stand-still. The worse,  
That his poor piece of daily work to do  
Was—not sink under any rivals; who  
Loudly and long enough, without these  
qualms,

Turned, from Bocafoli's stark-naked  
psalms,

To Plara's sonnets spoilt by toying with,  
'As knops that stud some almag to the pith  
'Pricked for gum, wry thence, and crinkled  
worse

'Than pursed eyelids of a river-horse  
'Sunning himself o' the slime when whirrs  
the breeze'—

Gad-fly, that is. He might compete with  
these!

But—but—  
'Observe a pompion-twined afloat;

'Pluck me one cup from off the castle-  
moat!

'Along with cup you raise leaf, stalk and  
root,

'The entire surface of the pool to boot.  
'So could I pluck a cup, put in one song

'A single sight, did not my hand, too  
strong,

'Twitch in the least the root-strings of the  
whole.

'How should externals satisfy my soul?'

'Why that's precise the error Squarcia-  
lupe'

(Hazard Naddo) 'finds; "the man can't  
stoop

"To sing us out," quoth he, "a mere  
romance;

"He'd fain do better than the best, en-  
hance

"The subjects' rarity, work problems out  
"Therewith." Now, you're a bard, a bard

past doubt,  
'And no philosopher; why introduce

'Crotchets like these? fine, surely, but no  
use

'In poetry—which still must be, to strike,  
'Based upon common sense; there's

nothing like  
'Appealing to our nature! what beside

'Was your first poetry? No tricks were  
tried

'In that, no hollow thrills, affected throes!

"The man," said we, "tells his own joys  
and woes:

"We'll trust him." Would you have your  
songs endure?

'Build on the human heart!—why, to be  
sure

'Yours is one sort of heart—but I mean  
theirs,

'Ours, every one's, the healthy heart one  
cares

'To build on! Central peace, mother of  
strength,

'That's fath' of . . . nay, go yourself that  
length,

'Ask those calm-hearted doers what they  
do

'When they have got their calm! And is  
it true,

'Fire rankles at the heart of every globe?

'Perhaps. But these are matters one may  
probe

'Too deeply for poetic purposes:  
'Rather select a theory that . . . yes,

'Laugh! what does that prove?—stations  
you midway

'And saves some little o'er-refining. Nay,  
'That's rank injustice done me! I restrict

'The poet? Don't I hold the poet picked  
'Out of a host of warriors, statesmen . . .

did  
'I tell you? Very like! As well you hid

'That sense of power, you have! True  
bards believe

'All able to achieve what they achieve—

'That is, just nothing—in one point abide  
'Profounder simpletons than all beside.

'Oh, ay! The knowledge that you are a  
bard

'Must constitute your prime, nay sole, re-  
ward!

So prattled Naddo, busiest of the tribe  
Of genius-haunters—how shall I describe  
What grubs or nips or rubs or rips—your  
louse

For love, your flea for hate, magnanimous,  
Malignant, Pappacoda, Tagliafer,  
Picking a sustenance from wear and tear  
By implements it sedulous employs  
To undertake, lay down, mete out, o'er-  
toise

Sordello? Fifty creepers to elude  
At once! They settled staunchly; shame  
ensued:

Behold the monarch of mankind succumb  
To the last fool who turned him round his  
thumb,

As Naddo styled it! 'Twas not worth  
oppose

The matter of a moment, gainsay those  
He aimed at getting rid of; better think  
Their thoughts and speak their speech,  
secure to slink

Back expeditiously to his safe place,  
And chew the cud—what he and what his  
race

Were really, each of them. Yet even  
this

Conformity was partial. He would miss  
Some point, brought into contact with  
them ere

Assured in what small segment of the  
sphere

Of his existence they attended him;  
Whence blunders, falsehoods rectified—a  
grim

List—slur it over! How? If dreams were  
tried,

His will swayed sickly from side to side,  
Nor merely neutralized his waking act  
But tended e'en in fancy to distract  
The intermediate will, the choice of means.  
He lost the art of dreaming: Mantuan  
scenes

Supplied a baron, say, he sang before,  
Handsomely reckless, full to running-  
o'er

Of gallantries; 'abjure the soul, content  
'With body, therefore!' Scarcely had he  
bent

Himself in dream thus low, when matter  
fast

Cried out, he found, for spirit to con-  
trast

And task it duly; by advances slight,  
The simple stuff becoming composite,  
Count Lori grew Apollo: best recall  
His fancy! Then would some rough  
peasant-Paul,

Like those old Ecelin confers with, glance  
His gay apparel o'er; that countenance  
Gathered his shattered fancies into one,  
And, body clean abolished, soul alone  
Sufficed the grey Paulician; by and by,  
To balance the eth'ral reality,  
Passions were needed; foiled he sank  
again.

Meanwhile the world rejoiced ('tis time  
explain)

Because a sudden sickness set it free  
From Adelaide. Missing the mother-bee,  
Her mountain-hive Romano swarmed; at  
once

A rustle-forth of daughters<sup>4</sup> and of sons  
Blackened the valley. 'I am sick too, old,  
'Half-crazed I think; what good's the  
Kaiser's gold

'To such an one? God help me! for I catch  
'My children's greedy sparkling eyes at  
watch—

“He bears that double breastplate on,”  
they say,

“So many minutes less than yesterday!”  
'Beside, Monk Hilary is on his knees

'Now, sworn to kneel and pray till God  
shall please

'Exact a punishment for many things  
'You know, and some you never knew;  
which brings

'To memory, Azzo's sister Beatrix  
'And Richard's Giglia are my Alberic's  
'And Ecelin's betrothed; the Count him-  
self

'Must get my Palma: Ghibellin and Guef  
'Mean to embrace each other.' So began  
Romano's missive to his fighting man  
Taurello—on the Tuscan's death, away  
With Friedrich sworn to sail from Naples'  
bay

Next month for Syria. Never thunder-  
clap

Out of Vesuvius' throat, like this mishap  
Startled him. 'That accursed Vicenza! I  
'Absent, and she selects this time to die!  
'Ho, fellows, for Vicenza!' Half a score  
Of horses ridden dead, he stood before  
Romano in his reeking spurs: too late—  
'Boniface urged me, Este could not wait,'  
The chieftain stammered; 'let me die in  
peace—

'Forget me! Was it I who craved increase  
'Of rule? Do you and Friedrich plot your  
worst

'Against the Father: as you found me first  
'So leave me now. Forgive me! Palma,  
sure,

'Is at Goito still. Retain that lure—  
'Only be pacified!'

The country rung  
With such a piece of news: on every tongue,  
How Ecelin's great servant, congeed off,  
Had done a long day's service, so, might  
doff

The green and yellow, and recover breath  
At Mantua, whither,—since Retrude's  
death,

(The girlish slip of a Sicilian bride  
From Otho's house, he carried to reside  
At Mantua till the Ferares should pile  
A structure worthy her imperial style,  
The gardens raise, the statues there en-  
shrine,

She never lived to see)—although his line  
Was ancient in her archives and she took  
A pride in him, that city, nor forsook  
Her child when he forsook himself and  
spent

A prowess on Romano surely meant  
For his own growth—whither he ne'er  
resorts

If wholly satisfied (to trust reports)  
With Ecelin. So, forward in a trice  
Were shows to greet him. 'Take a friend's  
advice,

Quoth Naddo to Sordello, 'nor be rash  
'Because your rivals (nothing can abash  
'Some folks) demur that we pronounce'  
you best

'To sound the great man's welcome; 'tis a  
test,

'Remember! Strojavacca looks asquint,  
'The rough fat sloven; and there's plenty  
hint

'Your pinions have received of late a  
shock—

'Outsoar them, cobsman of the silver flock!  
'Sing well! A signal wonder, song's no  
whit

facilitated.

Fast the minutes flit;

Another day, Sordello finds, will bring  
The soldier, and he cannot choose but  
sing;

So, a last shift, quits Mantua—slow,  
alone:

Out of that aching brain, a very stone,  
Song must be struck. What occupies that  
front?

Just how he was more awkward than his  
wont

The night before, when Naddo, who had  
seen

Taurello on his progress, praised the mien  
For dignity no crosses could affect—

Such was a joy, and might not he detect  
A satisfaction if established joys

Were proved imposture? Poetry annoys  
Its utmost: wherefore fret? Verses may  
come

Or keep away! And thus he wandered,  
dumb

Till evening, when he paused, thoroughly  
spent,

On a blind hill-top: down the gorge he  
went,

Yielding himself up as to an embrace.  
The moon came out; like features of a face,

A querulous fraternity of pines,  
Sad blackthorn clumps, leafless and gro-  
velling vines

Also came out, made gradually up  
The picture; 'twas Goito's mountain-cup  
And castle. He had dropped through one  
defile

He never dared explore, the Chief erewhile  
Had vanished by. Back rushed the dream,  
chwhrapped

Him wholly. 'Twas Apollo now they  
lapped,

Those mountains, not a pettish minstrel  
meant

To wear his soul away in discontent,  
Brooding on fortune's malice. Heart and  
brain

Swelled; he expanded to himself again,  
As some thin seedling spice-tree starved  
and frail,

Pushing between cat's head and ibis' tail  
Crusted into the porphyry pavement  
smooth,

—Suffered remain just as it sprung, to  
soothe

The Soldan's pining daughter, never yet  
Well in her chilly green-glazed minaret,—  
When rooted up, the sunny day she died,  
And flung into the common court beside  
Its parent tree. Come home, Sordello!

Soon  
Was he low muttering, beneath the moon,

Of sorrow saved, of quiet evermore,—  
Since from the purpose, he maintained  
before,

Only facilitated wailing and hot tears.  
Ah, the slim castle! dwindled of late years,

But more mysterious; gone to ruin—  
trails

Of vine through every loop-hole. Nought  
avails

The night as, torch in hand, he must ex-  
plore

The maple chamber: did I say, its floor  
Was made of intersecting cedar beams?

Worn now with gaps so large, there blew  
cold streams

Of air quite from the dungeon; lay your  
ear

Close and 'tis like, one after one, you hear  
In the blind darkness water drop. The  
nests

And nooks retain their long ranged vesture-  
chests

Empty and smelling of the iris root  
The Tuscan grated o'er them to recruit

Her wasted wits. Palma was gone that  
day,

Said the remaining women. Last, he lay  
Beside the Carian group reserved and still.

The Body, the Machine for Acting Will,  
Had been at the commencement proved  
unfit;

That for Demonstrating, Reflecting it,

Mankind—no fitter: was the Will Itself  
In fault?

His forehead pressed the moonlit shelf  
Beside the youngest marble maid awhile;  
Then, raising it, he thought, with a long  
smile,  
'I shall be king again!' as he withdrew  
The envied scarf; into 'he font he threw  
His crown.

Next day, no poet! 'Where-  
fore?' asked  
Taurello, when the dance of Jongleurs,  
masked  
As devils, ended; 'don't a song come  
next?'  
The master of the pageant looked per-  
plexed  
Till Naddo's whisper came to his relief.  
'His Highness knew what poets were: in  
brief,  
'Had not the tetchy race prescriptive right  
'To peevishness, caprice? or, call it spite,  
'One must receive their nature in its length  
'And breadth, expect the weakness with  
the strength!'  
—So phrasing, till, his stock of phrases  
spent,  
The easy-natured soldier smiled assent,  
Settled his portly person, smoothed his  
chin,  
And nodded that the bull-bait might begin.

### BOOK THE THIRD

And the font took them: let our laurels lie!  
Braid moonfern now with mystic trifoly  
Because once more Goito gets, once more,  
Sordello to itself! A dream is o'er,  
And the suspended life begins anew;  
Quiet those throbbing temples, then, sub-  
due  
That cheek's distortion! Nature's strict  
embrace,  
Putting aside the past, shall soon efface  
Its print as well—factitious humours  
grown  
Over the true—loves, hatreds not his  
own—  
And turn him pure as some forgotten vest  
Woven of painted byssus, silkiest  
Tufting the Tyrrhene wheel's pearl-sheeted  
lip,  
Left welter where a trireme let it slip  
I' the sea, and vexed a satrap; so the stain  
O' the world forsakes Sordello, with its  
pain,  
Its pleasure: how the tinct loosening es-  
capes,  
Cloud after cloud! Mantua's familiar  
shapes  
Die, fair and foul die, fading as they flit,  
Men, women, and the pathos and the wit,

Wise speech and foolish, deeds to smile or  
sigh

For, good, bad, seemly or ignoble, die.  
The last face glance, through the eglan-  
tines,  
The last voice murmurs, 'twixt the blos-  
somed vines,  
Of Men, of that machine supplied by  
thought  
To compass self-perception with, he  
sought  
By forcing half himself—an insane pulse  
Of a god's blood, on clay it could con-  
vulse,  
Never transmute—on human sights and  
sounds,  
To watch the other half with; irksome  
bounds  
It ebbs from to its source, a fountain sealed  
Forever. Better sure be unrevealed  
Than part revealed: Sordello well or ill  
Is finished: then what further use of Will,  
Point in the prime idea not realized,  
An oversight? inordinately prized,  
No less, and pampered with enough of  
each

Delight to prove the whole above its reach.  
'To need become all natures, yet retain  
'The law of my own nature—to remain  
'Myself, yet yearn . . . as if that chestnut,  
think,  
'Should yearn for this first larch-bloom  
crisp and pink,  
'Or those pale fragrant tears where zephyrs  
stanch  
'March wounds along the fretted pine-tree  
branch!  
'Will and the means to show will, great  
and small,  
'Material, spiritual,—abjure them all  
'Save any so distinct, they may be left  
'To amuse, not tempt become! and, thus  
bereft,  
'Just as I first was fashioned would I be!  
'Nor, moon, is it Apollo now, but me  
'Thou visitest to comfort and befriend!  
'Swim thou into my heart, and there an  
end,  
'Since I possess thee!—nay, thus shut mine  
eyes  
'And know, quite know, by this heart's fall  
and rise,  
'When thou dost bury thee in clouds, and  
when  
'Out-standest: wherefore practise upon  
men  
'To make that plainer to myself?'  
Slide here

Over a sweet and solitary year  
Wasted; or simply notice change in him—  
How eyes, once with exploring bright,  
grew dim  
And satiate with receiving. Some distress  
Was caused, too, by a sort of consciousness

Under the imbecility,—nought kept  
That down; he slept, but was aware he  
slept,

So, frustrated: as wilo brainsick made pact  
Erst with the overhanging cataract  
To deafen him, yet still distinguished  
plain

His own blood's measured clicking at his  
brain.

To finish. One declining Autumn day—  
Few birds about the heaven chill and

grey,  
No wind that cared trouble the tacit  
woods—

He sauntered home complacently, their  
moods

According, his and nature's. Every spark  
Of Mantua life was trodden out; so dark  
The embers, that the Troubadour, who  
sung

Hundreds of songs, forgot, its tick his  
tongue,

Its craft his brain, how either brought to  
pass

Singing at all; that faculty might class  
With any of Apollo's now. The year  
Began to find its early promise sere

As well. Thus beauty vanishes; thus stone  
Outlingers flesh: nature's and his youth  
gone,

They left the world to you, and wished you  
joy.

When, stopping his benevolent employ,  
A presage shuddered through the welkin;  
harsh

The earth's remonstrance followed. 'Twas  
the marsh

Gone of a sudden. Mincio, in its place,  
Laughed, a broad water, in next morning's  
face,

And, where the mists broke up immense  
and white

I' the steady wind, burned like a spilth of  
light

Out of the crashing of a myriad stars.  
And here was nature, bound by the same  
bars

Of fate with him!

'No! youth once gone is gone:

'Deeds, let escape, are never to be done.

'Leaf-fall and grass-spring for the year;  
for us—

'Oh forfeit I unalterably thus

'My chance? nor two lives wait me, thus to  
spend,

'Learning save that? Nature has time, may  
mend.

'Mistake, she knows occasion will recur;  
'Landslip or seabreach, how affects it her

'With her magnificent resources?—I

'Must perish once and perish utterly.

'Not any strollings now at even-close

'Down the field-path, Sordello! by thorn-  
rows

'Alive with lamp-flies, swimming spots of  
fire

'And dew, outlining the black cypress'  
spire

'She waits you at, Elys, who heard you  
first

'Woo her, the snow-month through, but  
ere she durst

'Answer 'twas April. Linden-flower-time-  
iong

'Her eyes were on the ground; 'tis July,  
strong

'Now; and because white dust-clouds  
overwhelm

'The woodside, here or by the village elm  
'That holds the moon, she meets you,

somewhat pale,

'But letting you lift up her coarse flax veil  
'And whisper (the damp little hand in  
yours)

'Of love, heart's love, your heart's love  
that endures

'Till death. Tush! No mad mixing with  
the rout

'Of haggard ribalds wandering about  
'The hot torchlit wine-scented island-  
house

'Where Friedrich holds his wickedest  
carouse,

'Parading,—to the gay Palermitans,  
'Soft Messinese, dusk Saracenic clans

'Nuocera holds,—those tall grave daz-  
zling Norse,

'High-cheeked, lank-haired, toothed  
whiter than the morse,

'Queens of the caves of jet stalactites,  
'He sent his barks to fetch through icy seas,

'The blind night seas without a saving star,  
'And here in snowy birdskin robes they  
are,

'Sordello!—here, mollitious alcoves gilt  
'Superb as Byzant domes that devils built!

'—Ah, Byzant, there again! no chance to  
go

'Ever like august cheery Dandolo,  
'Worshipping hearts about him for a wall,

'Conducted, blind eyes, hundred years and  
all,

'Through vanquished Byzant where friends  
note for him

'What pillar, marble massive, sardius slim,  
'Twere fittest he transport to Venice'

Square—

'Flattered and promised life to touch them  
there

'Soon, by those fervid sons of senators!  
'No more lifes, deaths, loves, hatreds,  
peaces, wars!

'Ah, fragments of a whole ordained to be,  
'Points in the life I waited! what are ye

'But roundels of a ladder which appeared  
'Awhile the very platform it was reared

'To lift me on?—that happiness I find  
'Proofs of my faith in, even in the blind



'Instinct which bade forego you all unless  
'Yelled me past yourselves. Ay, happiness  
'Awaited me; the way life should be used  
'Was to acquire, and deeds like you con-  
    duced  
'To teach it by a self-revelment, deemed  
'Life's very use, so long! Whatever seemed  
'Progress to that, was pleasure; aught that  
    stayed  
'My reaching it—no pleasure. I have laid  
'The ladder down; I climb not; still, aloft  
'The platform stretches! 'Blisses strong  
    and soft,  
'I dared not entertain, elude me; yet  
'Never of what they promised could I get  
'A glimpse till now! The common sort,  
    the crowd,  
'Exist, perceive; with Being are endowed,  
'However slight, distinct from what they  
    See,  
'However bounded; Happiness must be,  
'To feed the first by gleanings from the  
    last,  
'Attain its qualities, and slow or fast  
'Become what they behold; such peace-  
    in-strife,  
'By transmutation, is the Use of Life,  
'The Alien turning Native to the soul  
'Or body—which instructs me; I am whole  
'There and demand a Palma; had the  
    world  
'Been from my soul to a like distance  
    hurled,  
'Twere Happiness to make it one with  
    me:  
'Whereas I must, ere I begin to Be,  
'Include a world, in flesh, I comprehend  
'In spirit now; and this done, what's to  
    blend  
'With? Nought is Alien in the world—  
    my Will  
'Owns all already; yet can turn it—still  
'Less—Native, since my Means to corre-  
    spond  
'With Will and so unworthy, 'twas my  
    bond  
'To tread the very joys that tantalize  
'Most now, into a grave, never to rise.  
'I die then! Will the rest agree to die?  
'Next Age or no? Shall its Sordello try  
'Clue after clue, and catch at last the clue  
'I miss?—that's underneath my finger too,  
'Twice, thrice a day, perhaps,—some  
    yearning traced  
'Deeper, some petty consequence em-  
    braced  
'Closer! Why fled I Mantua, then?—  
    complained  
'So much my Will was fettered, yet re-  
    mained  
'Content within a tether half the range  
'I could assign it?—able to exchange  
'My ignorance (I felt) for knowledge, and  
'Idle because I could thus understand—  
'Could e'en have penetrated to its core  
'Our mortal mystery, yet—fool—forbore,  
'Preferred elaborating in the dark  
'My casual stuff, by any wretched spark  
'Born of my predecessors, though one  
    stroke  
'Of mine had brought the flame forth!  
    Mantua's yoke,  
'My minstrel's-trade, was to behold man-  
    kind,—  
'My own concern was just to bring my  
    mind  
'Behold, just extricate, for my acquit,  
'Each object suffered stifle in the mist  
'Which hazard, custom, blindness inter-  
    pose  
'Betwixt things and myself.'      Whereat he rose.  
The level wind carried above the firs  
Clouds, the irrevocable travellers,  
Onward.  
    'Pushed thus into a drowsy copse,  
'Arms twine about my neck, each eyelid  
    drops  
'Under a humid finger; while there fleets,  
'Outside the screen, a pageant time repeats  
'Never again! To be deposed, immured  
'Clandestinely—still petted, still assured  
'To govern were fatiguing work—the Sight  
'Fleeting meanwhile! 'Tis noontide: wreak  
    ere night  
'Somehow my will upon it, rather! Slake  
'This thirst somehow, the poorest impress  
    take  
'That serves! A blasted bud displays you,  
    torn,  
'Faint rudiments of the full flower unborn;  
'But who divines what glory coats o'er-  
    clasp  
'Of the bulb dormant in the mummy's  
    grasp  
'Taurello sent?' . . .  
'Taurello? Palma sent  
'Your Trouvere,' (Naddo interposing  
    leant  
Over the lost bard's shoulder)—'and, be-  
lieve,  
'You cannot more reluctantly receive  
'Than I pronounce her message: we de-  
    part  
'Together. What avail a poet's heart  
'Verona's pomps and gauds? five blades of  
    grass  
'Suifice him. News? Why, where your  
    marish was,  
'On its mud-banks smoke rises after  
    smoke  
'T' the valley, like a spout of hell new-  
    broke.  
'Oh, the world's tidings! small your thanks,  
    I guess,  
'For them. The father of our Patroness,  
'Has played Taurello an astounding trick,  
'Parts between Ecelin and Alberic

'His wealth and goes into a convent: both  
'Wed Guelfs: the Count and Palma  
plighted troth

'A week since at Verona: and they want  
'You doubtless to contrive the marriage-  
chant

'Ere Richard storms Ferrara.' Then was  
told

The tale from the beginning—how, made  
bold

By Salinguerra's absence, Guelfs had  
burned

And pillaged till he unawares returned  
To take revenge: how Azzo and his friend  
Were doing their endeavour, how the end  
O' the siege was nigh, and how the Count,  
released

From further care, would with his mar-  
riage-feast

Inaugurate a new and better rule,  
Absorbing thus Romano.

'Shall I school  
'My master,' added Naddo, 'and suggest  
'How you may clothe in a poetic vest

'These doings, at Verona? Your response  
'To Palma! Wherefore jest? "Depart at  
once?"

'A good resolve! In truth, I hardly hoped  
'So prompt an acquiescence. Have you  
groped

'Out wisdom in the wilds here?—thoughts  
may be

'Over-poetical for poetry.

'Pearl-white, you poets liken Palma's  
neck;

'And yet what spoils an orient like some  
speck

'Of genuine white, turning its own white  
grey?

'You take me? Curse the cicala!'

One more day,  
One eve—appears Verona! Many a group,  
(You mind) instructed of the osprey's  
swoop

On lynx and ounce, was gathering—Chris-  
tendom

Sure to receive, whate'er the end was, from  
The evening's purpose cheer or detriment,  
Since Friedrich only waited some event  
Like this, of Ghibellins establishing  
Themselves within Ferrara, ere, as King  
'Of Lombardy, he'd glad descend there,  
wage

Old warfare with the Pontiff, disengage  
His barons from the burghers, and restore  
The rule of Charlemagne, broken of yore  
By Hildebraud.

I the palace, each by each,  
Sordello sat and Palma: little speech.

At first in that dim closet, face with face  
(Despite the tumult in the market-place)  
Exchanging quick low laughter: now  
would rush

Word upon word to meet a sudden flush,

A look left o'er, a shifting lips' surmise—  
But for the most part their two histories  
Ran best thro' the locked fingers and  
linked arms.

And so the night flew on with its alarms  
Till in burst one of Palma's retinue;  
'Now, Lady!' gasped he. Then arose the  
two

And leaned into Verona's air, dead-still.  
A balcony lay black beneath until  
Out, 'mid a gush of torchfire, grey-haired  
men

Came on it and harangued the people: then  
Sea-like that people surging to and fro  
Shouted, 'Hale forth the carroch—trum-  
pets, ho,

'A flourish! Run it in the ancient grooves!  
'Back from the bell! Hammer—that whom  
behoves

'May hear the League is up! Peal—learn  
who list,

'Verona means not first of towns break  
tryst

'To-morrow with the League!'

Enough. Now turn—  
Over the eastern cypresses: discern!  
Is any beacon set a-glimmer?

Rang  
The air with shouts that overpowered the  
clang

Of the incessant carroch, even: 'Haste—  
'The candle's at the gateway! ere it  
waste,

'Each soldier stand beside it, armed to  
march

'With Tiso Sampier through the eastern  
arch!'

Ferrara's succoured, Palma!

Once again  
They sat together; some strange thing in  
train

To say, so difficult was Palma's place  
In taking, with a coy fastidious grace  
Like the bird's flutter ere it fix and feed.  
But when she felt she held her friend in-  
deed

Safe, she threw back her curls, began im-  
plant

Her lessons; telling of another want  
Goito's quiet nourished than his own;  
Palma—to serve him—to be served, alone  
Importing; Agnes' milk so neutralized  
The blood of Ecelin. Nor be surprised  
If, while Sordello fain had captive led  
Nature, in dream was Palma subjected  
To some out-soul, which dawned not  
though she pined

Delaying, till its advent, heart and mind  
Their life. 'How dared I let expand the  
force

'Within me, till some out-soul, whose re-  
source

'It grew for, should direct it? Every law  
'Of life, its every fitness, every flaw,

- 'Must One determine whose corporeal shape  
'Would be no other than the prime escape  
'And revelation to me of a Will  
'Orb-like o'ershrouded and inscrutable  
'Above, save at the point which, I should know,  
'Shone that myself, my powers, might overflow  
'So far, so much; as now it signified  
'Which earthly shape it henceforth chose my guide,  
'Whose mortal lip selected to declare  
'Its oracles, what fleshly garb would wear  
'—The first of intimations, whom to love;  
'The next, how love him. Seemed that orb, above  
'The castle-covert and the mountain-close,  
'Slow in appearing?—if beneath it rose  
'Cravings, aversions,—did our green precinct  
'Take pride in me, at unawares distinct  
'With this or that endowment,—how, repressed  
'At once, such jetting power shrank to the rest!  
'Was I to have a chance touch spoil me, leave  
'My spirit thence unfitted to receive  
'The consummating spell?—that spell so near  
'Moreover! "Waits he not the waking year?"  
'"His almond-blossoms must be honey-ripe  
'"By this; to welcome him, fresh runnels stripe  
'"The thawed ravines; because of him, the wind  
'"Walks like a herald. I shall surely find  
'"Him now!"  
'And chief, that earnest April morn  
'Of Richard's Love-court, was it time, so worn  
'And white my cheek, so idly my blood beat,  
'Sitting that morn beside the Lady's feet  
'And saying as she prompted; till outburst  
'One face from all the faces. Not then first  
'I knew it; where in maple chamber glooms,  
'Crowned with what sanguine-heart pomegranate blooms,  
'Advanced it ever? Men's acknowledgment  
'Sanctioned my own: 'twas taken, Palma's bent,—  
'Sordello,—recognized, accepted. 'Dumb  
'Sat she still scheming. Ecelin would come  
'Gaunt, scared, "Cesano baffles me," he'd say:  
'"Better I fought it out, my father's way!
- "Strangle Ferrara in its drowning flats,  
"And you and your Taurello yonder!—what's  
"Romano's business there?" An hour's concern  
"To cure the forward Chief!—induce return  
"As heartened from those overmeaning eyes,  
"Wound up to persevere,—his enterprise  
"Marked out anew, its exigent of wit  
"Apportioned,—she at liberty to sit  
"And scheme against the next emergence, I—  
"To covet her Taurello-sprite, made fly  
"Or fold the wing—to con your horoscope  
"For leave command those steely shafts shoot ope,  
"Or straight assuage their blinding eagerness  
"In blank smooth snow. What semblance of success  
"To any of my plans for making you  
"Mine and Romano's? Break the first wall through,  
"Tread o'er the ruins of the Chief, supplant  
"His sons beside, still, vainest were the vaunt:  
"There, Salinguerra would obstruct me sheer,  
"And the insuperable Tuscan, here,  
"Stay me! But one wild eve that Lady died  
"In her lone chamber: only I beside:  
"Taurello far at Naples, and my sire  
"At Padua, Ecelin away in ire  
"With Alberic. She held me thus—a clutch  
"To make our spirits as our bodies touch—  
"And so began flinging the past up, heaps  
"Of uncouth treasure from their sunless sleeps  
"Within her soul; deeds rose along with dreams,  
"Fragments of many miserable schemes,  
"Secrets, more secrets, then—no, not the last—  
"Mongst others, like a casual trick o' the past,  
"How . . . ay, she told me, gathering up her face,  
"All left of it, into one arch-grimace  
"To die with . . .  
"Friend, 'tis gone! but not the fear  
"Of that fell laughing, heard as now I hear,  
"Nor faltered voice, nor seemed her heart grow weak  
"When i' the midst abrupt she ceased to speak  
"—Dead, as to serve a purpose, mark!—  
"for in  
"Rushed o' the very instant Ecelin  
"(How summoned, who divines?)—looking as if  
"He understood why Adelaide lay stiff

'Already in my arms; for "Girl, how must  
 "'I manage Este in the matter thrust  
 "'Upon me, how unravel your bad coil?—  
 "'Since" (he declared) "'tis on your brow  
 —a soil  
 "'Like hers ther'!" then in the same  
 breath, "he lacked  
 "'No counsel after all, had signed no pact  
 "'With devils, nor was treason here or  
 there,  
 "'Goito or Vicenza, his affair:  
 "'He buried it in Adelaide's deep grave,  
 "'Would begin life afresh, now,—would  
 not slave  
 "'For any Friedrich's nor Taurello's sake!  
 "'What booted him to meddle or to  
 make  
 "'In Lombardy?" And afterward I knew  
 'The meaning of his promise to undo  
 'All she had done—why marriages were  
 made,  
 'New friendships entered on, old followers  
 paid  
 'With curses for their pains,—new friends  
 amaze  
 'At height, when, passing out by Gate  
 Saint Blaise,  
 'He stopped short in Vicenza, bent his head  
 'Over a friar's neck,—“had vowed,” he  
 said,  
 "'Long since, nigh thirty years, because  
 his wife  
 "'And child were saved there, to bestow  
 his life  
 "'On God, his gettings on the Church.”  
 'Exiled  
 'Within Goito, still one dream beguiled  
 'My days and nights; 'twas found, the orb  
 I sought  
 'To serve, those glimpses came of Fomal-  
 haut,  
 'No other: but how serve it?—authorize  
 'You and Romano mingle destinies?  
 'And straight Romano's angel stood be-  
 side  
 'Me who had else been Boniface's bride,  
 'For Salinguerra 'twas, with neck low  
 bent,  
 'And voice lightened to music, (as he meant  
 'To learn, not teach me,) who withdrew  
 the pall  
 'From the dead past and straight revived  
 it all,  
 'Making me see how first Romano waxed,  
 'Wherefore he waned now, why, if I re-  
 laxed  
 'My grasp (even I!) would drop a thing  
 effete,  
 'Frayed by itself, unequal to complete  
 'Its course, and counting every step astray  
 'A gain so much. Romano, every way  
 'Stable, a Lombard House now—why  
 start back  
 'Into the very outset of its track?  
 'This patching principle which late allied  
 'Our House with other Houses—what be-  
 side  
 'Concerned the apparition, the first Knight  
 'Who followed Conrad hither in such  
 plight  
 'His utmost wealth was summed in his one  
 steed?  
 'For Ecelo, that prowler, was decreed  
 'A task, in the beginning hazardous  
 'To him as ever task can be to us;  
 'But did the weather-beaten thief despair  
 'When first our crystal circlet of warm air  
 'That binds the Trevisan,—as its spice-belt  
 ' (Crusaders say) the tract where Jesus  
 dwelt,—  
 'Furtive he pierced, and Este was to face—  
 'Despaired Saponian strength of Lom-  
 bard grace?  
 'Tried he at making surer aught made sure,  
 'Maturing what already was mature?  
 'No; his heart prompted Ecelo, "Confront  
 "'Este, inspect yourself. What's nature?  
 Wont.  
 "'Discard three-parts your nature, and  
 adopt  
 "'The rest as an advantage!" Old strength  
 propped  
 'The man who first grew Podestà among  
 'The Vicentines, no less than, while there  
 sprung  
 'His palace up in Padua like a threat,  
 'Their noblest spied a grace, unnoticed yet  
 'In Conrad's crew. Thus far the object  
 gained,  
 'Romano was established—has re-  
 mained—  
 "'For are you not Italian, truly peers  
 "'With Este? Azzo better soothes our ears  
 "'Than Alberic? or is this lion's-crine  
 "'From over-mounts" (this yellow hair  
 of mine)  
 "'So weak a graft on Agnes Este's stock?"  
 ' (Thus went he on with something of a  
 mock)  
 "'Wherefore recoil, then, from the very  
 fate  
 "'Conceded you, refuse to imitate  
 "'Your model farther? Este long since left  
 "'Being mere Este: as a blade its left,  
 "'Este required the Pope to further him:  
 "'And you, the Kaiser — whom your  
 father's whim  
 "'Foregoes or, better, never shall forego  
 "'If Palma dare pursue what Ecelo  
 "'Commenced, but Ecelin desists from:  
 just  
 "'As Adelaide of Susa could intrust  
 "'Her donative,—her Piedmont given the  
 Pope,  
 "'Her Alpine-pass for him to shut or ope  
 "'Twixt France and Italy,—to the superb  
 "'Matilda's perfecting,—so, lest aught  
 curb

"Our Adelaide's great counter-project  
 for  
 "Giving her Trentine to the Emperor  
 "With passage here from Germany,—  
 shall you  
 "Take it,—my slender plodding talent,  
 too!"  
 "—Urged me Taurello with his half-smile.  
 'He  
 'As Patron of the scattered family  
 'Conveyed me to his Mantua, kept in bruit  
 'Azzo's alliances and Richard's suit  
 'Until, the Kaiser excommunicate,  
 "Nothing remains," Taurello said, "but  
 wait  
 "Some rash procedure: Palma was the  
 link,  
 "As Agnes' child, between us, and they  
 shrink  
 "From losing Palma: judge if we ad-  
 vance,  
 "Your father's method, your inheri-  
 tance!"  
 'The day I was betrothed to Boniface  
 'At Padua by Taurello's self, took place  
 'The outrage of the Ferrarese: again,  
 'The day I sought Verona with the train  
 'Agreed for,—by Taurello's policy  
 'Convicting Richard of the fault, since we  
 'Were present to annul or to confirm,—  
 'Richard, whose patience had outstayed  
 its term,  
 'Quitted Verona for the siege.  
 'And now  
 'What glory may engird Sordello's brow  
 'Through this? A month since at Oliero  
 slunk  
 'All that was Ecelin into a monk;  
 'But how could Salinguerra so forget  
 'His liege of thirty years as grudge even yet  
 'One effort to recover him? He sent  
 'Forthwith the tidings of this last event  
 'To Ecelin—declared that he, despite  
 'The recent folly, recognized his right  
 'To order Salinguerra: "Should he wring  
 'Its uttermost advantage out, or fling  
 "This chance away? Or were his sons  
 now Head  
 "'O' the House?" Through me Taurello's  
 missive sped;  
 'My father's answer will by me return.  
 'Behold! "For him," he writes, "no more  
 concern  
 "'With strife than, for his children, with  
 fresh plots  
 "'Of Friedrich. Old engagements out he  
 blots  
 "'For aye: Taurello shall no more sub-  
 serve,  
 "'Nor Ecelin impose." Lest this unnerve  
 'Taurello at this juncture, slack his grip  
 'Of Richard, suffer the occasion slip,—  
 'I, in his sons' default (who, mating with  
 'Este, forsake Romano as the frith  
 'Its mainsea for that firmland, sea makes  
 head  
 'Against) I stand, Romano,—in their stead  
 'Assume the station they desert, and give  
 'Still, as the Kaiser's representative,  
 'Taurello licence he der ands. Midnight—  
 'Morning—by noon to-morrow, making  
 light  
 'Of the League's issue, we, in some gay  
 weed  
 'Like yours, disguised together, may pre-  
 cede  
 'The arbitrators to Ferrara: reach  
 'Him, let Taurello's nobly accents teach  
 'The rest! Then say if I have misconceived  
 'Your destiny, too readily believed  
 'The Kaiser's cause your own!"  
 And Palma's fled.  
 Though no affirmative disturbs the head,  
 A dying lamp-flame sinks and rises o'er,  
 Like the alighted planet Pollux wore,  
 Until, morn breaking, he resolves to be  
 Gate-vein of this heart's blood of Lom-  
 bardy,  
 Soul of this body—to wield this aggregate  
 Of souls and bodies, and so conquer fate  
 Though he should live—a centre of disgust  
 Even—apart, core of the outward crust  
 He vivifies, assimilates. For thus  
 I bring Sordello to the rapturous  
 Exclaim at the crowd's cry, because one  
 round  
 Of life was quite accomplished; and he  
 found  
 Not only that a soul, whate'er its might,  
 Is insufficient to its own delight,  
 Both in corporeal organs and in skill  
 By means of such to body forth its Will—  
 And, after, insufficient to apprise  
 Men of that Will, oblige them recognize  
 The Hid by the Revealed—but that,—the  
 last  
 Nor lightest of the struggles overpast,—  
 Will, he bade abdicate, which would not  
 void  
 The throne, might sit there, suffer be en-  
 joyed  
 Mankind, a varied and divine array  
 Incapable of homage, the first way,  
 Nor fit to render incidentally  
 Tribute connived at, taken by the by,  
 In joys. If thus with warrant to rescind  
 The ignominious exile of mankind—  
 Whose proper service, ascertained intact  
 As yet, (to be by him themselves made  
 act,  
 Not watch Sordello acting each of them)  
 Was to secure—if the true diadem  
 Seemed imminent while our Sordello  
 drank  
 The wisdom of that golden Palma,—thank  
 Verona's Lady in her citadel  
 Founded by Gaulish Brennus, legends  
 tell:

And truly when she left him, the sun reared  
A head like the first clamberer's who  
peered

A-top the Capitol, his face on flame  
With triumph, triumphing till Manlius  
came.

Nor slight too much my rhymes—that  
spring, dispread,

Dispart, disperse, lingering overhead  
Like an escape of angels! Rather say,  
My transcendental platan! mounting gay  
(An archimage so courts a novice-queen)  
With tremulous silvered trunk, whence  
branches shewn

Laugh out, thick-foliaged next, a-shiver  
soon

With coloured buds, then glowing like the  
moon

One mild flame,—last a pause, a burst, and  
all

Her ivory limbs are smothered by a fall,  
Bloom-flinders and fruit-sparkles and leaf-  
dust,

Ending the weird work prosecuted just  
For her amusement; he decrepit, stark,  
Dozes; her uncontrolled delight may mark  
Apart—

Yet not so, surely never so  
Only, as good my soul were suffered go  
O'er the lagune: forth fare thee, put aside—  
Entrance thy synod, as a god may glide  
Out of the world he fills, and leave it mute  
For myriad ages as we men compute,  
Returning into it without a break  
O' the consciousness! They sleep, and I  
awake

O'er the lagune, being at Venice.

Note,  
In just such songs as Eglamor (say) wrote  
With heart and soul and strength, for he  
believed

Himself achieving all to be achieved  
By singer—in such songs you find alone  
Completeness, judge the song and singer  
one,

And either purpose answered, his in it  
Or its in him: while from true works (to wit  
Sordello's dream-performances that will  
Never be more than dreamed) escapes there  
still

Some proof, the singer's proper life was  
'neath

The life his song exhibits, this a sheath  
To that; a passion and a knowledge far  
Transcending these, majestic as they are,  
Smouldered; his lay was but an episode  
In the bard's life: which evidence you  
owed

To some slight weariness, some looking-  
off

Or start-away. The childish skit or scoff  
In 'Charlemagne,' (his poem, dreamed  
divine

In every point except one silly line

About the vestiff daughters)—what may  
lurk

In that? 'My life commenced before this  
work.'

(So I interpret the significance  
Of the bard's start aside and look askance)

'My life continues after: on I fare

'With no more stopping, possibly, no care

'To note the undercurrent, the why and  
how,

'Where, when, o' the deeper life, as thus  
just now.

'But, silent, shall I cease to live? Alas

'For you! who sigh, "When shall it come  
to pass

"We read that story? How will he com-  
press

"The future gains, his life's true business,

"Into the better lay which—that one  
flout,

"Howe'er inopportune it be, lets out—

"Engrosses him already, though pro-  
fessed

"To meditate with us eternal rest,

"And partnership in all his life has  
found?"

'Tis but a sailor's promise, weather-bound:

'Strike sail, slip cable, here the bark be  
moored

'For once, the awning stretched, the poles  
assured!

'Noontide above; except the wave's crisp  
dash,

'Or buzz of colibri, or tortoise' splash,

'The margin's silent: out with every spoil

'Made in our tracking, coil by mighty coil,

'This serpent of a river to his head

'I' the midst! Admire each treasure, as  
we spread

'The bank, to help us tell our history

'Aright: give ear, endeavour to descry

'The groves of giant rushes, how they grew

'Like demons' endlong tresses we sailed  
through,

'What mountains yawned, forests to give  
us vent

'Opened, each doleful side, yet on we went

'Till . . . may that beetle (shake your cap)  
attest

'The springing of a land-wind from the  
West!

—Wherefore? Ah yes, you frolic it to-  
day!

To-morrow, and, the pageant moved away  
Down to the poorest tent-pole, we and you

Part company: no other may pursue  
Eastward your voyage, be informed what  
fate

Intends, if triumph or decline await

The tempter of the everlasting steppe.

I muse this on a ruined palace-step

At Venice: why should I break off, nor  
sit

Longer upon my step, exhaust the fit

England gave birth to? Who's adorable  
Enough reclaim a — no Sordello's Will  
Alack!—be queen to me? That Bassanese  
Busied among her smoking fruit-boats?

These  
Perhaps from our delicious Asolo  
Who twinkle, pigeons o'er the portico  
Not prettier, bind June-lilies into sheaves  
To deck the bridge-side chapel, dropping  
leaves

Soiled by their own loose gold-meal? Ah,  
beneath  
The cool arch stoops she, brownest cheek!  
Her wreath

Endures a month—a half-month—if I  
make

A queen of her, continue for her sake  
Sordello's story? Nay, that Paduan girl  
Splashes with barer legs where a live  
whirl

In the dead black Giudecca proves sea-  
weed

Drifting has sucked down three, four, all  
indeed

Save one pale-red striped, pale-blue tur-  
baned post

For gondolas.

You sad dishevelled ghost  
That pluck at me and point, are you ad-  
vised

I breathe? Let stay those girls (e'en her  
disguised

—Jewels i' the locks that love no crownet  
like

Their native field-buds and the green wheat-  
spike,

So fair!—who left this end of June's tur-  
moil,

Shook off, as might a lily its gold soil,  
Pomp, save a foolish gem or two, and  
free

In dream, came join the peasants o'er the  
sea.)

Look they too happy, too tricked out?  
Confess

There is such niggard stock of happiness  
To share, that, do one's uttermost, dear  
wretch,

One labours ineffectually to stretch  
It o'er you so that mother and children,  
both

May equitably flaunt the sumpter-cloth!  
Divide the robe yet farther: be content

With seeing just a score pre-eminent  
Through shreds of it, acknowledged happy  
wights,

Engrossing what should furnish all, by  
rights!

For, these in evidence, you clearer claim  
A like garb for the rest,—grace all, the same

As these my peasants. I ask youth and  
strength

And health for each of you, not more—at  
length

Grown wise, who asked at home that the  
whole race

Might add the spirit's to the body's grace,  
And all be dizen'd out as chiefs and bards.

But in this magic weather one discards  
Much old requirement! Venice seems a  
type

Of Life—'twixt blue and blue extends, a  
stripe,

As Life, the somewhat, hangs 'twixt nought  
and nought:

'Tis Venice, and 'tis Life—as good you  
sought

To spare me the Piazza's slippery stone  
Or keep me to the unchoked canals alone,

As hinder Life the evil with the good  
Which make up Living, rightly under-  
stood.

Only, do finish something! Peasants,  
queens,

Take them, made happy by whatever  
means,

Parade them for the common credit, vouch  
That a luckless residue, we sent to crouch

In corners out of sight, was just as framed  
For happiness, its portion might have  
claimed

As well, and so, obtaining joy, had stalked  
Fastuous as any!—such my project,  
balked

Already; I hardly venture to adjust  
The first rags, when you find me. To mis-  
trust

Me!—nor unreasonably. You, no doubt,  
Have the true knack of tiring suitors out

With those thin lips on tremble, lashless  
eyes

Inveterately tear-shot: there, be wise,  
Mistress of mine, there, there, as if I meant

You insult!—shall your friend (not slave)  
be shent

For speaking home? Beside, care-bit  
erased

Broken-up beauties ever took my taste  
Supremely; and I love you more, far more

Than her I looked should foot Life's  
temple-floor.

Years ago, leagues at distance, when and  
where

A whisper came, 'Let others seek!—thy  
care

'Is found, thy life's provision; if thy race  
'Should be thy mistress, and into one face

'The many faces crowd?' Ah, had I, judge,  
Or no, your secret? Rough apparel—  
grudge

All ornaments save tag or tassel worn  
To hint we are not thoroughly forlorn—

Slouch bonnet, unloop mantle, careless  
go

Alone (that's saddest, but it must be so)  
Through Venice, sing now and now glance  
aside,

Aught desultory or undignified,—

Then, ravishingest lady, will you pass  
 Or not each formidable group, the mass  
 Before the Basilic (that feast gone by,  
 God's great day of the Corpus Domini)  
 And, wistfully foregoing proper men,  
 Come timid up to me for alms? And then  
 The luxury to hesitate, feign do  
 Some unexampled grace!—when, whom  
 but you  
 Dare I bestow your own upon? And hear  
 Further before you say, it is to sneer  
 I call you ravishing; for I regret  
 Little that she, whose early foot was set  
 Forth as she'd plant it on a pedestal,  
 Now, i' the silent city, seems to fall  
 Toward me—no wreath, only a lip's unrest  
 To quiet, surcharged eyelids to be pressed  
 Dry of their tears upon my bosom. Strange  
 Such sad chance should produce in thee  
 such change,  
 My love! Warped souls and bodies! yet  
 God spoke  
 Of right-hand, foot and eye—selects our  
 yoke,  
 Sordello, as your poetship may find!  
 So, sleep upon my shoulder, child, nor  
 mind  
 Their foolish talk; we'll manage reinstate  
 Your old worth; ask moreover, when they  
 prate  
 Of evil men past hope, 'Don't each con-  
 trive,  
 'Despite the evil you abuse, to live?—  
 'Keeping, each losel, through a maze of  
 lies,  
 'His own conceit of truth? to which he lies  
 'By obscure windings, tortuous, if you will,  
 'But to himself not inaccessible;  
 'He sees truth, and his lies are for the crowd  
 'Who cannot see; some fancied right al-  
 lowed  
 'His vilest wrong empowered the losel  
 clutch  
 'One pleasure from a multitude of such  
 'Denied him.' Then assert, 'All men appear  
 'To think all better than themselves, by  
 here  
 'Trusting a crowd they wrong; but really,'  
 say,  
 'All men think all men stupider than they,  
 'Since, save themselves, no other compre-  
 hends  
 'The complicated scheme to make amends  
 '—Evil, the scheme by which, thro' Ignorance,  
 'Good labours to exist.' A slight ad-  
 vance,  
 Merely to find the sickness you die through,  
 And nought beside! but if one can't eschew  
 One's portion in the common lot, at least  
 One can avoid an ignorance increased  
 Tenfold by dealing out hint after hint  
 •How nought were like dispensing without  
 stint

The water of life—so easy to dispense  
 Beside, when one has probed the centre  
 whence  
 Commotion's born—could tell you of it  
 all!  
 '—Meantime, just meditate my madrigal  
 'O' the mugwort that conceals a dewdrop  
 safe!  
 What, dullard? we and you in smothery  
 chafe,  
 Babes, baldheads, stumbled thus far into  
 Zin  
 The Horrid,<sup>1</sup> getting neither out nor in,  
 A hungry sun above us, sands that bung  
 Our throats,—each dromedary lolls a  
 tongue,  
 Each camel churns a sick and frothy chap,  
 And you, 'twixt tales of Potiphar's mishap,  
 And sonnets on the earliest ass that spoke,  
 —Remark, you wonder any one needs  
 choke  
 With founts about! Potsherd him, Gib-  
 eonites!  
 While awkwardly enough your Moses  
 smites  
 The rock, though he forego his Promised  
 Land  
 Thereby, have Satan claim his carcass, and  
 Figure as Metaphysic Poet . . . ah,  
 Mark ye the dim first ooings? Meribah!<sup>2</sup>  
 Then, quaffing at the fount my courage  
 gained,  
 Recall—not that I prompt ye—who ex-  
 plained . . .  
 'Presumptuous!' interrupts one. You,  
 not I  
 'Tis, brother, marvel at and magnify  
 Such office: 'office,' quotha? can we get  
 To the beginning of the office yet?  
 What do we here? simply experiment  
 Each on the other's power and its intent  
 When elsewhere tasked,—if this of mine  
 were trucked  
 For yours to either's good,—we watch  
 construct,  
 In short, an engine: with a finished one,  
 What it can do, is all,—nought, how 'tis  
 done.  
 But this of ours yet in probation, dusk  
 A kernel of strange wheelwork through its  
 husk  
 Grows into shape by quarters and by  
 halves;  
 Remark this tooth's spring, wonder what  
 that valve's  
 Fall bodes, presume each faculty's device,  
 Make out each other more or less precise—  
 The scope of the whole engine's to be  
 proved;  
 We die: which means to say, the whole's  
 removed,

<sup>1</sup> Isaiah xlii. 21, 22.<sup>2</sup> Waters of Meribah, that is, of Strife. See Exodus xvii. 7.



Dismounted wheel by wheel, this complex  
gin,—

To be set up anew elsewhere, begin  
A task indeed, but with a clearer clime  
Than the murky lodgment of our building-  
time.

And then, I grant you, it behoves forget  
How 'tis done—all that must amuse us yet  
So long; and, while you turn upon your  
heel,

Pray that I be not busy slitting steel  
Or shredding brass, camped on some vir-  
gin shore

Under a cluster of fresh stars, before  
I name a tithe o' the wheels I trust to do!

So occupied, then, are we: hitherto,  
At present, and a weary while to come,  
The office of ourselves,—nor blind nor  
dumb,

And seeing somewhat of man's state,—has  
been,

For the worst of us, to say they so have  
seen;

For the better, what it was they saw; the  
best

Impart the gift of seeing to the rest:  
'So that I glance,' says such an one,  
'around,

'And there's no face but I can read pro-  
found

'Disclosures in; this stands for hope, that  
—fear,

'And for a speech, a deed in proof, look  
here!

""Stoop, else the strings of blossom, where  
the nuts

""O'erarch, will blind thee! Said I not?  
She shuts

""Both eyes this time, so close the hazels  
meet!

""Thus, prisoned in the Piombi, I repeat  
""Events one rove occasioned, o'er and  
o'er,

""Putting 'twixt me and madness ever-  
more

""Thy sweet shape, Zanze! Therefore  
stoop!"

""That's truth!"

'(Adjudge you) "the incarcerated youth  
""Would say that!"

'Youth? Plara the bard? Set down  
'That Plara spent his youth in a grim town

'Those cramped ill-featured streets  
huddled about

'The minster for protection, never out  
'Of its black belfry's shade and its bells'  
roar.

'The brighter shone the suburb,—all the  
more

'Ugly and absolute that shade's reproof  
'Of any chance escape of joy,—some roof,

'Taller than they, allowed the rest detect,—  
'Before the sole permitted laugh (sus-  
pect

'Who could, 'twas meant for laughter,  
that ploughed cheek's

'Repulsive gleam!) when the sun stopped  
both peaks

'Of the cleft belfry like a fiery wedge,  
'Then sank, a huge flame on its socket  
edge.

'With leavings on the grey glass oriel-pane  
'Ghastly some minutes more. No fear of  
rain—

'The minster minded that! in heaps the  
dust

'Lay everywhere. This town, the minster's  
trust,

'Held Plara; who, its denizen, bade hail  
'In twice twelve sonnets, Tempe's dewy  
vale.'

""Exact the town, the minster and the  
street!"

'As all mirth triumphs, sadness means  
defeat:

'Lust triumphs and is gay, Love's  
triumphed o'er

'And sad: but Lucio's sad. I said before,  
'Love's sad, not Lucio; one who loves may  
be

'As gay his love has leave to hope, as he  
'Downcast that lusts' desire escapes the  
springe:

'Tis of the mood itself I speak, what tinge  
'Determines it, else colourless,—or mirth,  
'Or melancholy, as from heaven or earth.'

""Ay, that's the variation's gist!"

'Indeed?

'Thus far advanced in safety then, pro-  
ceed!

'And having seen too what I saw, be bold  
'And next encounter what I do behold  
'(That's sure) but bid you take on trust!"

Attack

The use and purpose of such sights! Alack,  
Not so unwisely does the crowd dispense  
On Salinguerras praise in preference

To the Sordellos: men of action, these!  
Who, seeing just as little as you please,  
Yet turn that little to account,—engage  
With, do not gaze at,—carry on, a stage,  
The work o' the world, not merely make  
report

The work existed ere their day! In short,  
When at some future no-time a brave band  
Sees, using what it sees, then shake my  
hand

In heaven, my brother! Meanwhile  
where's the hurt

Of keeping the Makers-see on the alert,  
At whose defection mortals stare aghast  
As though heaven's bounteous windows  
were slammed fast

'Incontinent? Whereas all you, beneath,  
Should scowl at, bruise their lips and break  
their teeth

Who ply the pullies, for neglecting you:  
And therefore have I moulded, made anew

- A Man, and give him to be turned and tried,  
Be angry with or pleased at. On your side,  
Have ye times, places, actors of your own?  
Try them upon Sordello when full-grown,  
And then—ah t'en! If Hercules first parched  
His foot in Egypt only to be marched  
A sacrifice for Jove with pomp to suit,  
What chance have I? The demigod was mute  
Till, at the altar, where time out of mind  
Such guests became oblations, chaplets twined  
His forehead long enough, and he began  
Slaying the slayers, nor escaped a man.  
Take not affront, my gentle audience! whom  
No Hercules shall make his hecatomb,  
Believe, nor from his brows your chaplet rend—  
That's your kind suffrage, yours, my patron-friend,  
Whose great verse blares unintermitter on  
Like your own trumpeter at Marathon,—  
You who, Plataea and Salamis being scant,  
Put up with Ætna for a stimulant—  
And did well, I acknowledged, as he loomed  
Over the midland sea last month, presumed  
Long, lay demolished in the blazing West  
At eve, while towards him tilting cloudlets pressed  
Like Persian ships at Salamis. Friend, wear  
A crest proud as desert while I declare  
Had I a flawless ruby fit to wring  
Tears of its colour from that painted king!  
Who lost it, I would, for that smile which went  
To my heart, fling it in the sea, content,  
Wearing your verse in place, an amulet  
Sovereign against all passion, wear and fret!  
My English Eyebright, if you are not glad  
That, as I stopped my task awhile, the sad  
Dishevelled form, wherein I put mankind  
To come at times and keep my pact in mind,  
Renewed me,—hear no crickets in the hedge,  
Nor let a glowworm spot the river's edge  
At home, and may the summer showers gush  
Without a warning from the missel thrush!  
So, to our business, now—the fate of such  
As find our common nature—overmuch  
Despised because restricted and unfit  
To bear the burthen they impose on it—  
Cling when they would discard it; craving strength  
• To leap from the allotted world, at length
- They do leap,—flounder on without a term,  
Each a god's germ, doomed to remain a germ  
In unexpanded infancy, unless . . .  
But that's the story—dull enough, confess!  
There might be fitter subjects to allure;  
Still, neither misperceive my portraiture  
Nor undervalue its adornments quaint:  
What serves a fiend perchance may prove a saint.  
Ponder a story ancient pens transmit,  
Then say if you condemn me or acquit.  
John the Beloved, banished Antioch  
For Patmos, bade collectively his flock  
Farewell, but set apart the closing eve  
To comfort those his exile most would grieve,  
He knew: a touching spectacle, that house  
In motion to receive him! Xanthus' spouse  
You missed, made panther's meat a month since; but  
Xanthus himself (his nephew 'twas, they shut  
'Twixt boards and sawed asunder) Polycarp,  
Soft Charicle, next year no wheel could warp  
To swear by Cæsar's fortune, with the rest  
Were ranged; thro' whom the grey disciple pressed,  
Busily blessing right and left, just stopped  
To pat one infant's curls, the hangman cropped  
Soon after, reached the portal. On its hinge  
The door turns and he enters: what quick twinge  
Ruins the smiling mouth, those wide eyes fix  
Whereon, why like some spectral candlestick's  
Branch the disciple's arms? Dead swooned he, woke  
Anon, heaved sigh, made snift to gasp, heart-broke,  
'Get thee behind me, Satan! Have I toiled  
'To no more purpose? Is the gospel foiled  
'Here too, and o'er my son's, my Xanthus' hearth,  
'Portrayed with sooty garb and features swarth—  
'Ah, Xanthus, am I to thy roof beguiled  
'To see thee—the—the Devil domiciled?'  
Whereto sobbed Xanthus, 'Father, 'tis yourself  
'Installed, a limning which our utmost self  
'Went to procure against to-morrow's loss;  
'And that's no twy-prong, but a pastoral cross,  
'You're painted with!'  
His puckered brows unfold—  
And you shall hear Sordello's story told.

<sup>1</sup> Polycrates of Samos.

## BOOK THE FOURTH

MEANTIME Ferrara lay in rueful case;  
The lady-city, for whose sole embrace  
Her pair of suitors struggled, felt their  
arms

A brawny mischief to the fragile charms  
They tugged for—one discovering that to  
twist

Her tresses twice or thrice about his wrist  
Secured a point of vantage—one, how best  
He'd parry that by planting in her breast  
His elbow spike—each party too intent  
For noticing, howe'er the battle went,  
The conqueror would but have a corpse to  
kiss.

'May Boniface be duly damned for this!'  
—Howled some old Ghibellin, as up he  
turned,

From the wet heap of rubbish where they  
burned

His house, a little skull with dazzling teeth:  
'A boon, sweet Christ—let Salinguerra  
seethe

'In hell for ever, Christ, and let myself  
'Be there to laugh at him!'—moaned some  
young Guelf

Stumbling upon a shrivelled hand nailed  
fast

To the charred lintel of the doorway, last  
His father stood within to bid him speed.  
The thoroughfares were overrun with weed  
—Docks, quitchgrass, loathly mallows no  
man plants.

The stranger, none of its inhabitants  
Crept out of doors to taste fresh air again,  
And ask the purpose of a splendid train  
Admitted on a morning; every town  
Of the East League was come by envoy  
down

To treat for Richard's ransom: here you  
saw

The Vicentine, here snowy oxen draw  
The Paduan carroch, its vermilion cross  
On its white field. A-tiptoe o'er the fosse  
Looked Legate Montelungo wistfully  
After the flock of steeples he might spy  
In Este's time, gone (doubts he) long ago  
To mend the ramparts: sure the laggards  
know

The Pope's as good as here! They paced  
the streets

More soberly. At least, 'Taurello greets  
'The League,' announced a pursuivant,—  
'will match

'Its courtesy, and labours to dispatch  
'At earliest Tito, Friedrich's Pretor, sent  
'On pressing matters from his post at Trent,  
'With Mainard Count of Tyrol,—simply  
waits

'Their going to receive the delegates.'  
'Tito!' Our delegates exchanged a glance,  
And, keeping the main way, admired as-  
kance

The lazy engines of outlandish birth,  
Couched like a king each on its bank of  
earth—

Arbalist, mangonel and catapult;  
While stationed by, as waiting a result,  
Lean silent gangs of mercenaries ceased  
Working to watch the strangers. 'This, at  
least,

'Were better spared; he scarce presumes  
gainsay

'The League's decision! Get our friend  
away

'And profit for the future: how else teach  
'Fools 'tis not safe to stray within claw's  
reach

'Ere Salinguerra's final gasp be blown?  
'Those mere convulsive scratches find the  
bone.

'Who bade him bloody the spent osprey's  
nare?'

The carrochs halted in the public square.  
Pennons of every blazon—once a-flaunt,  
Men prattled, freelier that the crested  
gaunt

White ostrich with a horse-shoe in her beak  
Was missing, and whoever chose might  
speak

'Ecelin' boldly out: so,—'Ecelin  
'Needed his wife to swallow half the sin

'And sickens by himself: the devil's whelp,  
'He styles his son, dwindles away, no help  
'From preserves, your fine triple-curved  
froth

'Of virgin's blood, your Venice viper-  
broth—

'Eh? Jubilate!'—'Peace! no little word  
'You utter here that's not distinctly heard

'Up at Oliero: he was absent sick  
'When we besieged Bassano—who, i' the  
thick

'O' the work, perceived the progress Azzo  
made,

'Like Ecelin, through his witch Adelaide?  
'She managed it so well that, night by night

'At their bed-foot stood up a soldier-sprite,  
'First fresh, pale by-and-by without a  
wound,

'And, when it came with eyes filmed as in  
sweat,

'They knew the place was taken.'—'Omi-  
nous

'That Ghibellins should get what caute-  
lous

'Old Redbeard sought from Azzo's sire  
to wrench

'Vainly; Saint George contrived his town  
a trench

'O' the marshes, an impermeable bar.'  
'—Young Ecelin is meant the tutelar

'Of Padua, rather; veins embrace upon  
'His hand like Brenta and Bacchiglione.'

What now?—'The founts! God's bread,  
touch not a plank!

'A crawling hell of carrion—every tank

'Choke-full!—found out just now to Cino's cost—

'The same who gave Taurello up for lost,  
'And, making no account of fortune's freaks,

'Refused to budg. from Padua then, but sneaks

'Back now with Concorezzi: 'faith! they drag

'Their carroch to San Vitale, plant the flag  
'On his own palace, so adroitly razed

'He knew it not; a sort of Guelf folk gazed

'And laughed & part; Cino disliked their air—

'Must pluck up spirit, show he does not care—

'Seats himself on the tank's edge—will begin

'To hum, *za, za, Cavalier Ecelin—*

'A silence; he gets warmer, clicks to chime,  
'Now both feet plough the ground, deeper

each time,

'At last, *za, za* and up with a fierce kick  
'Comes his own mother's face caught by

the thick  
'Grey hair about his spur!'

Which means, they lift  
The covering, Salinguerra made a shift  
To stretch upon the truth; as well avoid  
Further disclosures; leave them thus employed.

Our dropping Autumn morning clears  
apace,

And poor Ferrara puts a softened face  
On her misfortunes. Let us scale this tall  
Huge foursquare line of red brick garden-  
wall

Bastioned within by trees of every sort  
On three sides, slender, spreading, long  
and short;

Each grew as it contrived, the poplar  
ramped,

The fig-tree reared itself,—but stark and  
cramped,

Made fools of, like tamed lions: whence,  
on the edge,

Running 'twixt trunk and trunk to smooth  
one ledge

Of shade, were shrubs inserted, warp and  
woof,

Which smothered up that variance. Scale  
the roof

Of solid tops, and o'er the slope you slide  
Down to a grassy space level and wide,

Here and there dotted with a tree, but trees  
Of rarer leaf, each foreigner at ease,

Set by itself: and in the centre spreads,  
Borne upon three uneasy leopards' leads,

A laver, broad and shallow, one bright  
spirt

Of water bubbles in. The walls begirt  
With trees leave off on either hand; pursue

Your path along a wondrous avenue

Those walls about on, heaped of gleamy  
stone,

With aloes leering everywhere, grey-grown  
From many a Moorish summer: how they  
wind

Out of the fissures! likelier to bind  
The building than those rusted cramps

which drop  
Already in the eating sunshine. Stop,

You fleeting shapes above there! Ah, the  
pride

Or else despair of the whole country-  
side!

A range of statues, swarming o'er with  
wasps,

God, goddess, woman, man, the Greek  
rough-rasps

In crumbling Naples marble—meant to  
look

Like those Messina marbles Constance  
took

Delight in, or Taurello's self conveyed  
To Mantua for his mistress, Adelaide,—

A certain font with caryatides  
Since cloistered at Goito; only, these

Are up and doing, not abashed, a troop  
Able to right themselves—who see you,

stoop  
Their arms o' the instant after you! Un-  
plucked

By this or that, you pass; for they conduct  
To terrace raised on terrace, and, between,

Creatures of brighter mould and braver  
mien

Than any yet, the choicest of the Isle  
No doubt. Here, left a sullen breathing-  
while,

Up-gathered on himself the Fighter stood  
For his last fight, and, wiping treacherous  
blood

Out of the eyelids just held ope beneath  
Those shading fingers in their iron sheath,

Steadied his strengths amid the buzz and  
stir

Of the dusk hideous amphitheatre  
At the announcement of his over-match

To wind the day's diversion up, dispatch  
The pertinacious Gaul: while, limbs one  
heap,

The Slave, no breath in her round mouth,  
watched leap

Dart after dart forth, as her hero's car  
Clove dizzily the solid of the war

—Let coil about his knees for pride in  
him.

We reach the farthest terrace, and the grim  
San Pietro Palace stops us.

Such the state  
Of Salinguerra's plan to emulate

Sicilian marvels, that his girlish wife  
Retrude still might lead her ancient life

In her new home: whereat enlarged so  
much

Neighbours upon the novel princely touch

He took,—who here imprisons Boniface.  
Here must the Envoys come to sue for  
grace;

And here, emerging from the labyrinth  
Below, Sordello paused beside the plinth  
Of the door-pillar.

He had really left  
Verona for the cornfields (a poor theft  
From the morass) where Este's camp was  
made;

The Envoys' march, the Legate's caval-  
cade—

All had been seen by him, but scarce as  
when,—

Eager for cause to stand aloof from men  
At every point save the fantastic tie  
Acknowledged in his boyish sophistry,—  
He made account of such. A crowd,—he  
meant

To task the whole of it; each part's intent  
Concerned him therefore: and, the more  
he pried,

The less became Sordello satisfied  
With his own figure at the moment. Sought  
He respite from his task? Descried he  
aught

Novel in the anticipated sight  
Of all these livers upon all delight?

This phalanx, as of myriad points com-  
bined,

Whereby he still had imaged the mankind  
His youth was passed in dreams of rival-  
ling,

His age—in plans to prove at least such  
thing

Had been so dreamed,—which now he  
must impress

With his own will, effect a happiness  
By theirs,—supply a body to his soul  
Thence, and become eventually whole  
With them as he had hoped to be without—  
Made these the mankind' he once raved  
about?

Because a few of them were notable,  
Should all be figured worthy note? As well  
Expect to find Taurello's triple line  
Of trees a single and prodigious pine.

Real pines rose here and there; but, close  
among,

Thrust into and mixed up with pines, a  
throng

Of shrubs, he saw—a nameless common  
sort

O'erpast in dreams, left out of the report  
And hurried into corners, or at best  
Admitted to be fancied like the rest.  
Reckon that morning's proper chiefs—  
how few!

And yet the people grew, the people grew,  
Grew ever, as if the many there indeed,  
More left behind and most who should  
succeed,—

Simply in virtue of their mouths and eyes,  
Petty enjoyments and huge miseries,—

Mingled with, and made veritably great  
Those chiefs: he overlooked not Main-  
ard's state

Nor Concorezzi's station, but instead  
Of stopping there, each dwindled to be  
head

Of infinite and absent Tyrolese  
Or Paduans; startling all the more, that  
these

Seemed passive and disposed of, uncared  
for,

Yet doubtless on the whole (like Eglamor)  
Smiling; for if a wealthy man decays  
And out of store of robes must wear, all  
days,

One tattered suit, alike in sun and shade,  
'Tis commonly some tarnished gay bro-  
cade

Fit for a feast-night's flourish and no more:  
Nor otherwise poor Misery from her store  
Of looks is fain upgather, keep unfurled  
For common wear as she goes through the  
world,

The faint remainder of some worn-out  
smile

Meant for a feast-night's service merely.  
While

Crowd upon crowd rose on Sordello  
thus,—

(Crowds no way interfering to discuss,  
Much less dispute, life's joys with one em-  
ployed)

In enjoying them,—or, if they aught en-  
joyed,

Where lingered something undefinable  
In every look and tone, the mirth as well  
As woe, that fixed at once his estimate  
Of the result, their good or bad estate)—  
Old memories returned with new effect:  
And the new body, ere he could suspect,  
Cohered, mankind and he were really  
fused,

The new self seemed impatient to be used  
By him, but utterly another way

Than that anticipated: strange to say,  
They were too much below him, more in  
thrall

Than he, the adjunct than the principal.  
What booted scattered units?—here a  
mind

And there, which might repay his own to  
find,

And stamp, and use?—a few, howe'er  
august,

If all the rest were grovelling in the dust?  
No: first a mighty equilibrium, sure,  
Should he establish, privilege procure

For all, the few had long possessed! He  
felt

An error, an exceeding error melt:  
While he was occupied with Mantuan  
chants,

Behoved him think of men, and take their  
wants,

Such as he now distinguished every side,  
As his own want which might be satisfied,—  
And, after that, think of rare qualities  
Of his own soul demanding exercise.

It followed naturally, through no claim  
On their part, which made virtue of the aim  
At serving them, on his,—that, past re-  
trieve,

He felt now in their toils, theirs—nor could  
leave

Wonder how, in the eagerness to rule,  
Impress his will on mankind, he (the fool!)  
Had never even entertained the thought  
That this his last arrangement might be  
fraught

With incidental good to them as well,  
And that mankind's delight would help to  
swell

His own. So, if he sighed, as formerly  
Because the merry time of life must fleet,  
'Twas deeper now,—for could the crowds  
repeat

Their poor experiences? His hand that  
shook

Was twice to be deplored. 'The Legate,  
look!

'With eyes, like fresh-blown thrush-eggs  
on a thread,

'Faint-blue and loosely floating in his head,  
'Large tongue, moist open mouth; and  
this long while

'That owner of the idiotic smile

'Serves them!'

He fortunately saw in time  
His fault, however, and since the office  
prime

Includes the secondary—best accept  
Both offices; Taurello, its adept,  
Could teach him the preparatory one,  
And how to do what he had fancied done  
Long previously, ere take the greater task.  
How render first these people happy? Ask  
The people's friends: for there must be one  
good,

One way to it—the Cause! He understood  
The meaning now of Palma; why the jar  
Else, the ado, the trouble wide and far  
Of Guefs and Ghibellins, the Lombard  
hope

And Rome's despair?—'twixt Emperor  
and Pope

The confused shifting sort of Eden tale—  
Hardihood still recurring, still to fail—,  
That foreign interloping fiend, this free  
And native overbrooding teity:

Yet a dire fascination o'er the palms  
The Kaiser ruined, troubling even the  
calms

Of paradise; or, on the other hand,  
The Pontiff, as the Kaisers understand,  
One snake-like cursed of God to love the  
ground,

\*Whose heavy length breaks in the noon  
profound

Some saving tree—which needs the Kaiser,  
dressed

As the dislodging angel of that pest:  
Yet flames that pest bedropped, flat head,  
full fold,

With coruscating dower of dyes. 'Behold  
'The secret, so to speak, and master-  
spring

'O' the contest!—which of the two Powers  
shall bring

'Men good, perchance the most good: ay,  
it may

'Be that!—the question, which best knows  
the way.'

And hereupon Count Mainard strutted  
past

Out of San Pietro; never seemed the last  
Of archers, slingers: and our friend began  
To recollect strange modes of serving  
man—

Arbalist, catapult, brake, mangel,  
And more. 'This way of theirs may,—who  
can tell?—

'Need perfecting,' said he: 'let all be solved  
'At once! Taurello 'tis, the task devolved  
'On late: confront Taurello!'

And at last  
He did confront him. Scarce an hour had  
past

When forth Sordello came, older by years  
Than at his entry. Unexampled fears  
Oppressed him, and he staggered off, blind,  
mute

And deaf, like some fresh-mutilated brute,  
Into Ferrara—not the empty town  
That morning witnessed: he went up and  
down

Streets whence the veil had been stript  
shred by shred,

So that, in place of huddling with their  
dead

Indoors, to answer Salinguerra's ends,  
Townfolk make shift to crawl forth, sit  
like friends

With any one. A woman gave him choice  
Of her two daughters, the infantile voice  
Or the dimpled knee, for half a chain, his  
throat

Was clasped with; but an archer knew the  
coat—

Its blue cross and eight lilies,—bade be-  
ware

One dogging him in concert with the pair  
Though thrumming on the sleeve that hid  
his knife.

Night set in early, autumn dews were  
rife,

They kindled great fires while the Leaguers'  
mass

Began at every carroch: he must pass  
Between the kneeling people. Presently  
The carroch of Verona caught his eye  
With purple trappings; silently he bent  
Over its fire, when voices violent

Began, 'Affirm not whom the youth was  
like

'That struck me from the porch: I did not  
strike

'Again: I too have chestnut hair; my kin  
'Hate Azzo and stand up for Ecelin.

'Here, minstrel, drive bad thoughts away!  
Sing! Take

'My glove for guerdon!' And for that  
man's sake

He turned: 'A song of Eglamor's!'—  
scarce named,

When, 'Our Sordello's rather!'—all ex-  
claimed;

'Is not Sordello famous for rhyme?'  
He had been happy to deny, this time,—

Profess as heretofore the aching head  
And failing heart,—suspect that in his  
stead

Some true Apollo had the charge of them,  
Was champion to reward or to condemn,  
So his intolerable risk might shift

Or share itself; but Naddo's precious gift  
Of gifts, he owned, be certain! At the  
close—

'I made that,' said he to a youth who rose  
As if to hear: 'twas Palma through the band  
Conducted him in silence by her hand.

Back now for Salinguerra. Tito of Trent  
Gave place to Palma and her friend, who  
went

In turn at Montelungo's visit: one  
After the other were they come and gone,—

These spokesmen for the Kaiser and the  
Pope,

This incarnation of the People's hope,  
Sordello,—all the say of each was said;

And Salinguerra sat,—himself instead  
Of these to talk with, lingered musing yet.

'Twas a drear vast presence-chamber  
roughly set

In order for the morning's use; full face,  
The Kaiser's ominous sign-mark had first

place,  
The crowned grim twy-necked eagle,

coarsely-blacked  
With ochre on the naked wall; nor lacked

Romano's green and yellow either side;  
But the new token Tito brought had tried

The Legate's patience—nay, if Palma knew  
What Salinguerra almost meant to do

Until the sight of her restored his lip  
A certain half-smile, three months' chief-

tainship  
Had banished! Afterward, the Legate

found  
No change in him, nor asked what badge

he wound  
And unwound carelessly. Now sat the

Chief  
Silent as when our couple left, whose brief

Encounter wrought so opportune effect  
In thoughts he summoned not, nor would

reject,

Though time 'twas now if ever, to pause—  
fix

On any sort of ending: wiles and tricks  
Exhausted, judge! his charge, the crazy

town,  
Just managed to be hindered crashing

down—  
His last sound troops ranged—care ob-

served to post  
His best of the maimed soldiers inner-

most—  
So much was plain enough, but somehow

struck  
Him not before. And now with this strange

luck  
Of Tito's news, rewarding his address

So well, what thought he of?—how the  
success

With Friedrich's rescript there, would  
either hush

Old Ecelin's scruples, bring the manly  
flush

To his young son's white cheek, or, last,  
exempt

Himself from telling what there was to  
tempt?

No: that this minstrel was Romano's last  
Servant—himself the first! Could he con-

trast  
The whole!—that minstrel's thirty years

just spent  
In doing ought, their notablest event

This morning's journey hither, as I told—  
Who yet was lean, outworn and really old,

A stammering awkward man that scarce  
dared raise

His eye before the magisterial gaze—  
And Salinguerra with his fears and hopes

Of sixty years, his Emperors and Popes,  
Cares and contrivances, yet, you would say,

'Twas a youth nonchalantly looked away  
Through the embrasure northward o'er

the sick  
Expostulating trees—so agile, quick

And graceful turned the head on the broad  
chest

Encased in pliant steel, his constant vest,  
Whence split the sun off in a spray of fire

Across the room; and, loosened of its tire  
Of steel, that head let breathe the comely

brown  
Large massive locks discoloured as if a

crown  
Encircled them, so frayed the basnet where

A sharp white line divided clean the hair;  
Glossy above, glossy below, it swept

Curling and fine about a brow thus kept  
Calm, laid coat upon coat, marble and

sound:  
This was the mystic mark the Tuscan

found,  
Mused of, turned over books about,

Square-faced,  
No lion more; two vivid eyes, enched

In hollows filled with many a shade and  
streak

Settling from the bold nose and bearded  
cheek.

Nor might the half-smile reach them that  
deformed

A lip supremely perfect else—unwarmed,  
Unwidened, less or more; indifferent

Whether on trees or men his thoughts were  
bent,

Thoughts rarely, after all, in trim and train  
As now a period was fulfilled again:

Of such, a series made his life, compressed  
In each, one story serving for the rest—

How his life-streams, rolling arrived at last  
At the barrier, whence, were it once over-

past,  
They would emerge, a river to the end,—

Gathered themselves up, paused, bade fate  
befriend,

Took the leap, hung a minute at the height,  
Then fell back to oblivion infinite:

Therefore he smiled. Beyond stretched  
garden-grounds

Where the late adversary, breaking  
bounds,

Had gained him an occasion. That above,  
That eagle, testified he could improve

Effectually. The Kaiser's symbol lay  
Beside his rescript, a new badge by way

Of baldric; while,—another thing that  
marred

Alike emprise, achievement and reward,—  
Ecelin's missive was conspicuous too.

What past life did those flying thoughts  
pursue?

As his, few names in Mantua half so old;  
But at Ferrara, where his sires enrolled

It latterly, the Adelardi spared  
No pains to rival them: both factions

shared  
Ferrara, so that, counted out, 'twould

yield  
A product very like the city's shield,  
Half black and white, or Ghibellin and

Guelf

As after Salinguerra styled himself  
And Este who, till Marchesalla died,

(Last of the Adelardi)—never tried  
His fortune there: with Marchesalla's child

Would pass,—could Blacks and Whites  
be reconciled

And young Taurello wed Linguetta, —  
wealth

And sway to a sole grasp. 'Each treats by  
stealth

Already: when the Guelfs, the Ravennese  
Arrive, assault the Pietro quarter, seize

Linguetta, and are gone! Men's first dis-

may  
Abated somewhat, hurries down, to lay

The after indignation, Boniface,  
This Richard's father. 'Learn the full dis-

grace

'Averted, ere you blame us Guelfs, who rate  
'Your Salinguerra, your sole potentate

'That might have been, 'mongst Este's  
valvassors—

'Ay, Azzo's—who, not privy to, abhors  
'Our step; but we were zealous.' Azzo then

To do with! Straight a meeting of old men:  
'Old Salinguerra dead, his heir a boy,

'What, if we change our ruler and decoy  
'The Lombard Eagle of the azure sphere

'With Italy to build in, fix him here,  
'Settle the city's troubles in a trice?

'For private wrong, let public good suf-  
fice!'

In fine, young Salinguerra's staunchest  
friends

Talked of the townsmen making him  
amends,

Gave him a goshawk, and affirmed there  
was

Rare sport, one morning, over the green  
grass

A mile or so. He sauntered through the  
plain,

Was restless, fell to thinking, turned again  
In time for Azzo's entry with the bride;

Count Boniface rode smirking at their side;  
'She brings him half Ferrara,' whispers

flew,  
'And all Ancona! If the stripling knew!'

Anon the stripling was in Sicily  
Where Heinrich ruled in right of Con-

stance; he  
Was gracious nor his guest incapable;

Each understood the other. So it fell,  
One Spring, when Azzo, thoroughly at

ease,  
Had near forgotten by what precise degrees

He crept at first to such a downy seat,  
The Count trudged over in a special heat

To bid him of God's love dislodge from  
each

Of Salinguerra's palaces,—a breach  
Might yawn else, not so readily to shut,

For who was just arrived at Mantua but  
The youngster, sword on thigh and tuft on

chin,  
With tokens for Celano, Ecelin,

Pistore, and the like! Next news,—no whit  
Do any of Ferrara's domes befit

His wife of Heinrich's very blood: a band  
Of foreigners assemble, understand

Garden-constructing, level and surround,  
Build up and bury in. A last news crowned

The consternation: since his infant's birth,  
He only waits they end his wondrous girth

Of trees that link San Pietro with Tomà,  
To visit Mantua. When the Podestà

Ecelin, at Vicenza, called his friend  
Taurello thither, what could be their end

But to restore the Ghibellins' late Head,  
The Kaiser helping? He with most to dread

From vengeance and reprisal, Azzo, there  
With Boniface beforehand, as aware



Of plots in progress, gave alarm, expelled  
Both plotters: but the Guefts in triumph  
yelled

Too hastily. The burning and the flight,  
And how Taurello, occupied that night  
With Ecelin, lost wife and son, I told:

—Not how he bore the blow, retained his  
hold,

Got friends safe through, left enemies the  
worst

O' the fray, and hardly seemed to care at  
first:

But afterward men heard not constantly  
Of Salinguerra's House so sure to be!

Though Azzo simply gained by the event  
A shifting of his plagues—the first, content

To fall behind the second and estrange  
So far his nature, suffer such a change

That in Romano sought he wife and child,  
And for Romano's sake seemed reconciled

To losing individual life, which shrunk  
As the other prospered—mortised in his

trunk;  
Like a dwarf palm which wanton Arabs foil

Of bearing its own proper wine and oil,  
By grafting into it the stranger-vine,

Which sucks its heart out, sly and serpentine,  
Till forth one vine-palm feathers to the

root,  
And red drops moisten the insipid fruit.

Once Adelaide set on,—the subtle mate  
Of the weak soldier, urged to emulate

The Church's valiant women deed for  
deed,

And paragon her namesake, win the meed  
O' the great Matilda,—soon they overbore

The rest of Lombardy,—not as before  
By an instinctive truculence, but patched

The Kaiser's strategy until it matched  
The Pontiff's, sought old ends by novel

means.  
'Only, why is it Salinguerra screens

'Himself behind Romano?—him we bade  
'Enjoy our shine i' the front, not seek the

shade!'  
—Asked Heinrich, somewhat of the tardiest

To comprehend. Nor Philip acquiesced  
At once in the arrangement; reasoned,

plied  
His friend with offers of another bride,

A statelier function—fruitlessly: 'twas  
plain

Taurello through some weakness must  
remain

Obscure. And Otho, free to judge of both  
—Ecelin the unread, harsh and loth,

And this more plausible and facile wight  
With every point a-sparkle—chose the

right,  
Admiring how his predecessors harped

On the wrong man: 'thus,' quoth he, 'wits  
are warped

'By outsiders!' Carelessly, meanwhile, his  
life

Suffered its many turns of peace and strife  
In many lands—you hardly could surprise

The man; who named Sordello (recognize!)

In this as much beside, that, unconcerned  
What qualities were natural or earned,

With no ideal of graces, as they came  
He took them, singularly well the same—

Speaking the Greek's own language, just  
because

Your Greek eludes you, leave the least of  
flaws

In contracts with him; while, since Arab  
lore

Holds the stars' secret—take one trouble  
more

And master it! 'Tis done, and now deter  
Who may the Tuscan, once Jove trined for

her,  
From Friedrich's path!—Friedrich, whose

pilgrimage  
The same man puts aside, whom he'll

engage  
To leave next year John Brienne in the

lurch,  
Come to Bassano, see Saint Francis' church

And judge of Guido the Bolognian's piece  
Which,—lend Taurello credit,—rivals

Greece—  
Angels, with aureoles like golden quoits

Pitched home, applauding Ecelin's exploits.

For elegance, he strung the angelot,  
Made rhymes thereto; for prowess, clove

he not  
Tiso, last siege, from crest to crupper?

Why  
Detail you thus a varied mastery

But to show how Taurello, on the watch  
For men, to read their hearts and thereby

catch  
Their capabilities and purposes,

Displayed himself so far as displayed these:  
While our Sordello only cared to know

About men as a means whereby he'd show  
Himself, and men had much or little worth

According as they kept in or drew forth  
That self; the other's choicest instruments

Surmised him shallow.  
Meantime, malcontents

Dropped off, town after town grew wiser.  
'How

'Change the world's face?' asked people;  
'as 'tis now

'It has been, will be ever: very fine  
'Subjecting things profane to things divine,

'In talk! This contumacy will fatigue  
'The vigilance of Este and the League!

'The Ghibellins gain on us!'—as it happened.  
Old Azzo and old Boniface, entrapped

By Ponte Alto, both in one month's space  
Slept at Verona: either left a brace

Of sons—but, three years after, either's pair  
 Lost Guglielm and Aldobrand its heir:  
 Azzo remained and Richard—all the stay  
 Of Este and Saint Boniface, at bay  
 As 'twere. Then, either Ecelin grew old  
 Or his brain altered—not o' the proper  
 mould

For new appliances—his old palm-stock  
 Endured no influx of strange strengths.

He'd rock

As in a drunkenness, or chuckle low  
 As proud of the completeness of his woe,  
 Then weep real tears;—now make some  
 mad onslaught

On Este, heedless of the lesson taught  
 So painfully,—now cringe for peace, sue  
 peace

At price of past gain, bar of fresh increase  
 To the fortunes of Romano. Up at last  
 Rose Este, down Romano sank as fast.  
 And men remarked these freaks of peace  
 and war

Happened while Salinguerra was afar;  
 Whence every friend besought him, all in  
 vain,

To use his old adherent's wits again.  
 Not he!—'who had advisers in his sons,  
 'Could plot himself, nor needed any one's  
 'Advice.' 'Twas Adelaide's remaining  
 staunch

Prevented his destruction root and branch  
 Forthwith; but when she died, doom fell,  
 for gay

He made alliances, gave lands away  
 To whom it pleased accept them, and with-  
 drew

For ever from the world. Taurello, who  
 Was summoned to the convent, then re-  
 fused

A word at the wicket, patience thus abused,  
 Promptly threw off alike his imbecile  
 Ally's yoke, and his own frank, foolish  
 smile.

Soon a few movements of the happier sort  
 Changed matters, put himself in men's  
 report

As heretofore; he had to fight, beside,  
 And that became him ever. So, in pride  
 And flushing of this kind of second youth,  
 He dealt a good-will blow. Este in truth  
 Lay prone—and men remembered, some-  
 what late,

A laughing old outrageous stifled hate  
 He bore to Este—how it would outbreak  
 At times spite of disguise, like an earth-  
 quake

In sunny weather—as that noted day  
 When with his hundred friends he tried to  
 slay

Azzo before the Kaiser's face: and how,  
 On Azzo's calm refusal to allow  
 A liegeman's challenge, straight he too was  
 calmed:

As if his hate could bear to lie embalmed,

Bricked up, the moody Pharaoh, and sur-  
 vive

All intermediate crumbings, to arrive  
 At earth's catastrophe—'twas Este's crash  
 Not Azzo's he demanded, so, no rash  
 Procedure! Este's true antagonist  
 Rose out of Ecelin; all voices whist,  
 All eyes were sharpened, wits predicted.

He

'Twas, leaned in the embrasure absently,  
 Amused with his own efforts, now, to trace  
 With his steel-sheathed forefinger Fried-  
 rich's face

I' the dust: but as the trees waved sere, his  
 smile

Deepened, and words expressed its thought  
 erewhile.

'Ay, fairly housed at last, my old com-  
 peer?

'That we should stick together, all the year  
 'I kept Vicenza!—How old Boniface,  
 'Old Azzo caught us in its market-place,

'He by that pillar, I at this,—caught each  
 'In mid swing, more than fury of his  
 speech,

'Egging the rabble on to disavow  
 'Allegiance to their Marquis—Bacchus,  
 how

'They boasted! Ecelin must turn their  
 drudge,

'Nor, if released, will Salinguerra grudge  
 'Paying arrears of tribute due long since—  
 'Bacchus! My man could promise then,  
 nor wince:

'The bones-and-muscles! Sound of wind  
 and limb,

'Spoke he the set excuse I framed for him:  
 'And now he sits me, slaving and mute,  
 'Intent on chafing each starved purple  
 foot

'Benumbed past aching with the altar slab:  
 'Will no vein thro' there when some monk  
 shall blab

'Spitefully to the circle of bald scalps,  
 "'Friedrich's affirmed to be our side the  
 Alps"

'—Eh, brother Lactance, brother Anaclet?  
 'Sworn to abjure the world, its fume and  
 fret,

'God's own now? Drop the dormitory bar,  
 'Enfold the scanty grey serge scapular  
 'Twice o'er the cowl to muffle memories  
 out!

'So! But the midnight whisper turns a  
 shout,

'Eyes wink, mouths open, pulses circulate  
 'In the stone walls: the past, the world  
 you hate

'Is with you, ambush, open field—or see  
 'The surging flame—we fire Vicenza—  
 glee!

'Follow, let Pilio and Bernardo chafe!  
 'Bring up the Mantuans—through San  
 Biagio—safe!

'Ah, the mad people wakeu? Ah, they  
writhe  
'And reach us? If they block the gate? No  
tithe  
'Can pass—keep back, you Bassanese!  
The edge,  
'Use the edge—shear, thrust, hew, melt  
down the wedge,  
'Let out the black of those black upturned  
eyes!  
'Hell—are they sprinkling fire too? The  
blood fries  
'And hisses on your brass gloves as they  
tear  
'Those upturned faces choking with de-  
spair.  
'Brave! Slidder through the reeking gate!  
"How now?  
"“You six had charge of her?” And then  
the vow  
'Comes, and the foamspirts, hair's plucked,  
till one shriek  
'(I hear it) and you fling—you cannot  
speak—  
'Your gold-flowered basnet to a man who  
haled  
'The Adelaide he dared scarce view un-  
veiled  
'This morn, naked across the fire: how  
crown  
'The archer that exhausted lays you down  
'Your infant, smiling at the flame, and  
dies?  
'While one, while mine . . .  
'Bacchus! I think there lies  
'More than one corpse there' (and he  
paced the room)  
'—Another cinder somewhere: 'twas my  
doom  
'Beside, my doom! If Adelaide is dead,  
'I live the same, this Azzo lives instead  
'Of that to me, and we pull, any how,  
'Este into a heap: the matter's now  
'At the true juncture slipping us so oft.  
'Ay, Heinrich died and Otho, please you,  
doffed  
'His crown at such a juncture! Still, if  
holds  
'Our Friedrich's purpose, if this chain en-  
folds  
'The neck of . . . who but this same Ecelin  
'That must recoil when the best days  
begin!  
'Recoil? that's nought; if the recoiler  
leaves  
'His name for me to fight with, no one  
grieves:  
'But he must interfere, forsooth, unlock  
'His cloister to become my stumbling-  
block  
'Just as of old! Ay, ay, there 'tis again—  
'The land's inevitable Head—explain  
'The reverences that subject us! Count  
'These Ecelins now! Not to say as fount,  
'Originating power of thought,—from  
twelve  
'That drop i' the trenches they joined  
hands to delve,  
'Six shall surpass him, but . . . why men  
must twine  
'Somehow with something! Ecelin's a  
fine  
'Clear name! 'Twere simpler, doubtless,  
twine with me  
'At once: our cloistered friend's capacity  
'Was of a sort! I had to share myself  
'In fifty portions, like an o'ertasked elf  
'That's forced illume in fifty points the vast  
'Rare vapour he's enviroined by. At last  
'My strengths, though sorely frittered,  
e'en converge  
'And crown . . . no, Bacchus, they have  
yet to urge  
'The man be crowned!  
'That aloe, an he durst,  
'Would climb! Just such a bloated  
sprawler first  
'I noted in Messina's castle-court  
'The day I came, when Heinrich asked in  
sport  
'If I would pledge my faith to win him  
back  
'His right in Lombardy: "for, once bid  
pack  
'"Marauders," he continued, "in my stead  
'"You rule, Taurello!" and upon this head  
'Laid the silk glove of Constance—I see  
her  
'Too, mantled head to foot in miniver,  
'Retrude following!  
'I am absolved  
'From further toil: the empery devolved  
'On me, 'twas Tito's word: I have to lay  
'For once my plan, pursue my plan my  
way,  
'Prompt nobody, and render an account  
'Taurello to Taurello! Nay, I mount  
'To Friedrich: he conceives the post I kept,  
'—Who did true service, able or inept,  
'Who's worthy guerdon, Ecelin or I.  
'Me guerdoned, counsel follows: would  
he vie  
'With the Pope really? Azzo, Boniface  
'Compose a right-arm Hohenstauffen's  
race  
'Must break ere govern Lombardy. I  
point  
'How easy 'twere to twist, once out of  
joint,  
'The socket from the bone: my Azzo's  
stare  
'Meanwhile! for I, this idle strap to wear,  
'Shall—fret myself abundantly, what end  
'To serve? There's left me twenty years  
to spend  
'—How better than my old way? Had I one  
'Who laboured to o'erthrow my work—a  
son

'Hatching with Azzo superb treachery,  
 'To root my pines up and then poison me,  
 'Suppose—'twere worth while frustrate  
 that! Beside  
 'Another life's ordain'd me: the world's  
 tide  
 'Rolls, and what hope of parting from the  
 press  
 'Of waves, a single wave through weariness  
 'Gently lifted aside, laid upon shore?  
 'My life must be lived out in foam and roar,  
 'No question. Fifty years the province  
 held  
 'Taurello; troubles raised, and troubles  
 quelled,  
 'He in the midst—who leaves this quaint  
 stone place,  
 'These trees a year or two, then not a trace  
 'Of him! How obtain hold, fetter men's  
 tongues  
 'Like this poor minstrel with the foolish  
 songs—  
 'To which, despite our bustle, he is linked?  
 '—Flowers one may tease, that never grow  
 extinct.  
 'Ay, that patch, surely, green as ever, where  
 'I set Her Moorish lentisk, by the stair,  
 'To overawe the aloes; and we trod  
 'Those flowers, how call you such?—into  
 the sod;  
 'A stately foreigner—a world of pain  
 'To make it thrive, arrest rough winds—  
 all vain!  
 'It would decline; these would not be  
 destroyed:  
 'And now, where is it? where can you avoid  
 'The flowers? I frighten children twenty  
 years  
 'Longer!—which way, too, Ecelin appears  
 'To thwart me, for his son's besotted youth  
 'Gives promise of the proper tiger-tooth:  
 'They feel it at Vicenza! Fate, fate, fate,  
 'My fine Taurello! Go you, promulgate  
 'Friedrich's decree, and here's shall ag-  
 grandize  
 'Young Ecelin—your Prefect's badge! a  
 prize  
 'Too precious, certainly.  
 'How now? Compete  
 'With my old comrade? shuffle from their  
 seat  
 'His children? Paltry dealing! Don't I  
 know  
 'Ecelin? now, I think, and years ago!  
 'What's changed—the weakness? did not  
 I compound  
 'For that, and undertake to keep him  
 sound  
 'Despite it? Here's Taurello hankering  
 'After a boy's preferment—this plaything  
 'To carry, Bacchus!' And he laughed.  
 Remark  
 'Why schemes wherein cold-blooded men  
 embark

Prosper, when your enthusiastic sort  
 Fail: while these last are ever stopping  
 short—  
 (So much they should—so little they can  
 do!)  
 The careless tribe see nothing to pursue  
 If they desist; meantime their scheme suc-  
 ceeds.  
 Thoughts were caprices in the course of  
 deeds  
 Methodic with Taurello; so, he turned,—  
 Enough amused by fancies fairly earned  
 Of Este's horror-struck submitted neck,  
 And Richard, the cowed braggart, at his  
 beck,—  
 To his own petty but immediate doubt  
 If he could pacify the League without  
 Conceding Richard; just to this was  
 brought  
 That interval of vain discursive thought!  
 As, shall I say, some Ethiop, past pursuit  
 Of all enslavers, dips a shackled foot  
 Burnt to the blood, into the drowsy black  
 Enormous watercourse which guides him  
 back  
 To his own tribe again, where he is king;  
 And laughs because he guesses, numbering  
 The yellow poison-wattles on the pouch  
 Of the first lizard wrested from its couch  
 Under the slime (whose skin, the while, he  
 strips  
 To cure his nostril with, and festered lips,  
 And eyeballs bloodshot through the  
 desert-blast)  
 That he has reached its boundary, at last  
 May breathe;—thinks o'er enchantments  
 of the South  
 Sovereign to plague his enemies, their  
 mouth,  
 Eyes, nails, and hair; but, these enchant-  
 ments tried  
 In fancy, puts them soberly aside  
 For truth, projects a cool return with  
 friends,  
 The likelihood of winning mere amends  
 Ere long; thinks that, takes comfort  
 silently,  
 Then, from the river's brink, his wrongs  
 and he,  
 Hugging revenge close to their hearts, are  
 soon  
 Off-striding for the Mountains of the  
 Moon.  
 Midnight: the watcher nodded on his  
 spear,  
 Since clouds dispersing left a passage clear  
 For any meagre and discoloured moon  
 To venture forth; and such was peering  
 soon  
 Above the harassed city—her close lanes  
 Closer, not half so tapering her fanes,  
 As though she shrunk into herself to keep  
 What little life was saved, more safely.  
 Heap

By heap the watch-fires mouldered, and  
beside  
The blackest spoke Sordello and replied  
Palma with none to listen. 'Tis your cause:  
'What makes a Ghibellin? There should  
be laws—

'(Remember how my youth escaped! I  
trust

'To you for manhood, Palma! tell me just  
'As any child)—there must be laws at  
work

'Explaining this. Assufe me, good may  
lurk

'Under the bad,—my multitude has part  
'In your designs, their welfare is at heart

'With Salinguerra, to their interest

'Refer the deeds he dwelt on,—so divest  
'Our conference of much that scared me.

Why

'Affect that heartless tone to Tito? I

'Esteemed myself, yes, in my inmost mind

'This morn, a recreant to my race—man-  
kind

'O'erlooked till now: why boast my spirit's  
force,

'—Such force denied its object? why  
divorce

'These, then admire my spirit's flight the  
same

'As though it bore up, helped some half-  
orbed flame

'Else quenched in the dead void, to living  
space?

'That orb cast off to chaos and disgrace,

'Why vaunt so much my unencumbered  
dance,

'Making a feat's facilities enhance

'Its marvel? But I front Taurello, one

'Of happier fate, and all I should have  
done,

'He does; the people's good being para-  
mount

'With him, their progress may perhaps  
account

'For his abiding still; whereas you heard

'The talk with Tito—the excuse preferred

'For burning those five hostages,—and  
broached

'By way of blind, as you and I approached,  
'I do believe.'

She spoke: then he, 'My thought  
'Plainlier expressed! All to your profit—  
nought

'Meantime of these, of conquests to  
achieve

'For them, of wretchedness he might re-  
lieve

'While profiting your party. Azzo, too,  
'Supports a cause: what cause? Do Guelfs  
pursue

'Their ends by means like yours, or better?'

When  
The Guelfs were proved alike, men weighed  
with men,

And deed with deed, blaze, blood, with  
blood and blaze,

Morn broke: 'Once more, Sordello, meet  
its gaze

'Proudly—the people's charge against thee  
fails

'In every point, while either party quails!  
'These are the busy ones: be silent thou!

'Two parties take the world up, and allow

'No third, yet have one principle, subsist

'By the same injustice; whoso shall enlist

'With either, ranks with man's inveterate  
foes.

'So there is one less quarrel to compose:

'The Gueff, the Ghibellin may be to  
curse—

'I have done nothing, but both sides do  
worse

'Than nothing. Nay, to me, forgotten, reft

'Of insight, lapped by trees and flowers,  
was left

'The notion of a service—ha? What lured

'Me here, what mighty aim was I assured

'Must move Taurello? What if there re-  
mained

'A cause, intact, distinct from these, or-  
dained

'For me, its true discoverer?'

Some one pressed  
Before them here, a watcher, to suggest

The subject for a ballad: 'They must know

'The tale of the dead worthy, long ago

'Consul of Rome—that's long ago for us,

'Minstrels and bowmen, idly squabbling  
thus

'In the world's corner—but too late no  
doubt,

'For the brave time he sought to bring  
about.

'—Not know Crescentius Nomentanus?'

Then  
He cast about for terms to tell him, when

Sordello disavowed it, how they used

Whenever their Superior introduced

A novice to the Brotherhood—('for I

'Was just a brown-sleeve brother, merrily

'Appointed too,' quoth he, 'till Innocent

'Bade me relinquish, to my small content,  
'My wife or my brown sleeves')—some  
brother spoke

Ere nocturns of Crescentius, to revoke

The edict issued, after his demise,

Which blotted fame alike and effigies,  
All out except a floating power, a name  
Including, tending to produce the same  
Great act. Rome, dead, forgotten, lived  
at least

Within that brain, though to a vulgar priest  
And a vile stranger,—two not worth a slave  
'Of Rome's, Pope John, King Otho,—fortune  
gave

The rule there: so, Crescentius, haply  
dressed

In white, called Roman Consul for a jest,

Taking the people at their word, forth stepped  
 As upon Brutus' heel, nor ever kept  
 Rome waiting,—stood erect, and from his brain  
 Gave Rome out on its ancient place again,  
 Ay, bade proceed with Brutus' Rome, Kings styled  
 Themselves mere citizens of, and, beguiled  
 Into great thoughts thereby, would choose the gem  
 Out of a lapfull, spoil their diadem  
 —The Senate's cypher was so hard to scratch!  
 He flashes like a phanal, all men catch  
 The flame, Rome's just accomplished! when returned  
 Otho, with John, the Consul's step had spurned,  
 And Hugo Lord of Este, to redress  
 The wrongs of each. Crescentius in the stress  
 Of adverse fortune bent. 'They crucified'  
 'Their Consul in the Forum; and abide  
 'E'er since such slaves at Rome, that I—  
 (for I  
 'Was once a brown-sleeve brother, merrily  
 'Appointed)—I had option to keep wife  
 'Or keep brown sleeves, and managed in the strife  
 'Lose both. A song of Rome!'  
 And Rome, indeed,  
 Robed at Goito in fantastic weed,  
 The Mother-City of his Mantuan days,  
 Looked an established point of light whence rays  
 Traversed the world; for, all the clustered homes  
 Beside of men, seemed bent on being  
 Romes  
 In their degree; the question was, how each  
 Should most resemble Rome, clean out of reach.  
 Nor, of the Two, did either principle  
 Struggle to change, but to possess Rome,  
 —still  
 Guelf Rome or Ghibellin Rome.  
 Let Rome advance!  
 Rome, as she struck Sordello's ignorance—  
 How could he doubt one moment? Rome's the Cause!  
 Rome of the Pandects, all the world's new laws—  
 Of the Capitol, of Castle Angelo;  
 New structures, that inordinately glow,  
 Subdued, brought back to harmony, made ripe  
 By many a relic of the archetype  
 Extant for wonder; every upstart church  
 That hoped to leave old temples in the lurch,

Corrected by the Theatre forlorn  
 That,—as a mundane shell, its world late born,—  
 Lay and o'ershadowed it. These hints combined  
 Rome typifies the scheme to put mankind  
 Once more in full possession of their rights.  
 'Let us have Rome again! On me it lights  
 'To build up Rome—on me, the first and last:  
 'For such a future was endured the past!' And thus, in the grey twilight, forth he sprung  
 To give his thought consistency among  
 The very People—let their facts avail  
 Finish the dream grown from the archer's tale.

## BOOK THE FIFTH

Is it the same Sordello in the dusk  
 As at the dawn?—merely a perished husk  
 Now, that arose a power fit to build  
 Up Rome again? The proud conception chilled  
 So soon? Ay, watch that latest dream of thine  
 —A Rome indebted to no Palatine—  
 Drop arch by arch, Sordello! Art possessed  
 Of thy wish now, rewarded for thy quest  
 To-day among Ferrara's squalid sons?  
 Are this and this and this the shining ones  
 Meet for the Shining City? Sooth to say,  
 Your favoured tenantry pursue their way  
 After a fashion! This companion slips  
 On the smooth causey, t'other blinkard trips  
 At his mooned sandal. 'Leave to lead the brawls  
 'Here i' the atria?' No, friend! He that sprawls  
 On aught but a stibadium... what his dues  
 Who puts the lustral vase to such an use?  
 Oh, huddle up the day's disasters! March,  
 Ye runagates, and drop thou, arch by arch,  
 Rome!  
 Yet before they quite disband—a whim—  
 Study mere shelter, now, for him, and him,  
 Nay, even the worst,—just house them!  
 Any cave  
 Suffices: throw out earth! A loophole? Brave!  
 They ask to feel the sun shine, see the grass  
 Grow, hear the larks sing? Dead art thou,  
 alas,  
 And I am dead! But here's our son excels  
 At hurdle-weaving any Scythian, fells  
 Oak and devises rafters, dreams and shapes  
 His dream into a door-post, just escapes  
 The mystery of hinges. Lie we both  
 Perdue another age. The goodly growth

Of brick and stone! Our buikling-pelt was rough,  
But that descendant's garb suits well enough

A portico-contriver. Speed the years—  
What's time to us? At last, a city rears  
Itself! nay, enter—what's the grave to us?  
Lo, our forlorn acquaintance carry thus  
The head! Successively sewer, forum,  
cirque—

Last age, an aqueduct was counted work,  
But now they tire the artificer upon  
Blank alabaster, black obsidian,  
—Careful, Jove's face be duly fulgurant,  
And mother Venus' kiss-creased nipples  
pant

Back into pristine pulpiness, ere fixed  
Above the baths. What difference betwixt  
This Rome and ours—resemblance what,  
between

That scurvy dumb-show and this pageant  
sheen—

These Romans and our rabble? Use thy  
wit!

The work marched: step by step,—a work-  
man fit

Took each, nor too fit,—to one task, one  
time,—

No leaping o'er the petty to the prime,  
When just the substituting osier lithe  
For brittle bulrush, sound wood for soft  
withe,

To further loam-and-roughcast-work a  
stage,—

Exacts an architect, exacts an age:  
No tables of the Mauritanian tree  
For men whose maple log's their luxury!  
That way was Rome built. 'Better' (say  
you) 'merge

'At once all workmen in the demiurge,  
'All epochs in a lifetime, every task  
'In one!' So should the sudden city bask  
I' the day—while those we'd feast there,  
want the knack

Of keeping<sup>6</sup> fresh-chalked gowns from  
speck and brack,

Distinguish not rare peacock from vile  
swan,

Nor Mareotic juice from Cæcuban.

'Enough of Rome! 'Twas happy to con-  
ceive

'Rome on a sudden, nor shall fate be-  
reave

'Me of that credit: for the rest, her spite  
'Is an old story—serves my folly right

'By adding yet another to the dull  
'List of abortions—things proved beauti-  
ful

'Could they be done, Sordello cannot do.'

He sat upon the terrace, plucked and  
threw

The powdery aloë-cusps away, saw shift  
Rome's walls, and drop arch after arch,  
and drift

Mist-like afar those pillars of all stripe,  
Mounds of all majesty. 'Thou archetype,  
'Last of my dreams and loveliest, depart!

And then a low voice wound into his  
heart:

'Sordello!' (low <sup>as</sup> some old Pythoness  
Conceding to a Lydian King's distress  
The cause of his long error—one mistake  
Of her past oracle) 'Sordello, wake!

'God has conceded two sights to a man—  
'One, of men's whole work, time's com-  
pleted plan,

'The other, of the minute's work, man's  
first

'Step to the plan's completeness: what's  
dispersed

'Save hope of that supreme step which,  
descried

'Earliest, was meant still to remain untried  
'Only to give your heart to take your own

'Step, and there stay, leaving the rest  
alone?

'Where is the vanity? Why count as one  
The first step, with the last step? What is  
gone

'Except Rome's æry magnificence,  
'That last step you'd take first?—an evi-  
dence

'You were God: be man now! Let those  
glances fall!

'The basis, the beginning step of all,  
'Which proves you just a man—is that  
gone too?

'Pity to discontent one versed as you  
'In fate's ill-nature! but its full extent

'Eludes Sordello, even: the veil rent,  
'Read the black writing—that collective  
man

'Outstrips the individual. Who began  
'The acknowledged greatnesses? Ay, your  
own art

'Shall serve us: put the poet's mimes apart—  
'Close with the poet's self, and lo, a dim

'Yet too plain form divides itself from him!  
'Alcamos's song enmeshes the lulled Isle,

'Woven into the echoes left erewhile  
'By Nina, one soft web of song: no more

'Turning his name, then, flower-like o'er  
and o'er!

'An elder poet in the younger's place;  
'Nina's the strength, but Alcamos's the  
grace:

'Each neutralizes each then! Search your  
fill;

'You get no whole and perfect Poet—still  
'New Ninas, Alcamos, till time's mid-  
night

'Shrouds all—or better say, the shutting  
light

'Of a forgotten yesterday. Dissect  
'Every ideal workman—(to reject

'In favour of your fearful ignorance  
'The thousand phantasms eager to ad-  
vance,

- 'And point you but to those within your reach)—  
 'Were you the first who brought—in modern speech)  
 'The Multitude to be materialized?  
 'That loose eternal untest—who devised  
 'An apparition i' the midst? The rout  
 'Was checked, a breathless ring was formed about  
 'That sudden flower: get round at any risk  
 'The gold-rough pointel, silver-blazing disk  
 'O' the lily! Swords across it! Reign thy reign  
 'And serve thy frolic service, Charlemagne!  
 '—The very child of over-joyousness,  
 'Unfeeling thence, strong therefore: Strength by stress  
 'Of Strength comes of that forehead confident,  
 'Those widened eyes expecting heart's content,  
 'A calm as out of just-quieted noise; nor swerves  
 'For doubt, the ample cheek in gracious curves  
 'Abutting on the upthrust nether lip:  
 'He wills, how should he doubt then? Ages slip:  
 'Was it Sordello pried into the work  
 'So far accomplished, and discovered lurk  
 'A company amid the other clans,  
 'Only distinct in priests for castellans  
 'And popes for suzerains (their rule confessed  
 'Its rule, their interest its interest,  
 'Living for sake of living—there an end—  
 'Wrapt in itself, no energy to spend  
 'In making adversaries or allies)—  
 'Dived you into its capabilities  
 'And dared create, out of that sect, a soul  
 'Should turn a multitude, already whole,  
 'Into its body? Speak plainer! Is't so sure  
 'God's church lives by a King's investiture?  
 'Look to last step! A staggering—a shock—  
 'What's mere sand is demolished, while the rock  
 Endures: a column of black fiery dust  
 Blots heaven—that help was prematurely thrust  
 'Aside, perchance!—but air clears, enough's erased  
 'Of the true outline. Thus much being firm based,  
 'The other was a scaffold. See him stand  
 'Buttressed upon his mattock, Hildebrand  
 'Of the huge brain-mask welded ply o'er ply  
 'As in a forge; it buries either eye  
 'White and extinct, that stupid brow; teeth clenched,  
 'The neck tight-corded, too, the chin deep-trenched,  
 'As if a cloud enveloped him while fought  
 'Under its shade, grim prizers, thought with thought  
 'At dead-lock, agonizing he, until  
 'The victor thought leap radiant up, and Will,  
 'The slave with folded arms and drooping lids  
 'They fought for, lean forth flame-like as it bids.  
 'Call him no flower—a mandrake of the earth,  
 'Thwarted and dwarfed and blasted in its birth,  
 'Rather,—a fruit of suffering's excess,  
 'Thence feeling, therefore stronger: still by stress  
 'Of Strength, work Knowledge! Full three hundred years  
 'Have men to wear away in smiles and tears  
 'Between the two that nearly seemed to touch,  
 'Observe you! quit one workman and you clutch  
 'Another, letting both their trains go by—  
 'The actors-out of either's policy,  
 'Heinrich, on this hand, Otho, Barbaross,  
 'Carry the three Imperial crowns across,  
 'Aix' Iron, Milan's Silver, and Rome's Gold—  
 'While Alexander, Innocent uphold  
 'On that, each Papal key—but, link on link,  
 'Why is it neither chain betrays a chink?  
 'How coalesce the small and great? Alack,  
 'For one thrust forward, fifty such fall back!  
 'Do the popes coupled there help Gregory  
 'Alone? Hark—from the hermit Peter's cry  
 'At Claremont, down to the first serf that says  
 'Friedrich's no liege of his while he delays  
 'Getting the Pope's curse off him! The Crusade—  
 'Or trick of breeding Strength by other aid  
 'Than Strength, is safe. Hark—from the wild harangue  
 'Of Vimmercato, to the carroch's clang  
 'Yonder! The League—or trick of turning Strength  
 'Against Pernicious Strength, is safe at length.  
 'Yet hark—from Mantuan Albert making cease  
 'The fierce ones, to Saint Francis preaching peace  
 'Yonder! God's Truce—or trick to super-seede  
 'The very Use of Strength, is safe. Indeed



- 'We trench upon the future. Who is found  
'To take next step, next age—trail o'er the ground—  
'Shall I say, gourd-like?—not the flower's display  
'Nor the root's prowess, but the plenteous way  
'O' the plant—produced by joy and sorrow, whence  
'Unfeeling and yet feeling, strongest thence?  
'Knowledge by stress of merely Knowledge? No—  
'E'en were Sordello ready to forego  
'His life for this, 'twere overleaping work  
'Some one has first to do, howe'er it irk,  
'Nor stray a foot's breadth from the beaten road.  
'Who means to help must still support the load  
'Hildebrand lifted—"why hast Thou," he groaned,  
'"Imposed on me a burthen, Paul had moaned,  
'"And Moses dropped beneath?" Much done—and yet  
'Doubtless that grandest task God ever set  
'One man, left much to do: at his arm's wrench,  
'Charlemagne's scaffold fell; but pillars blench  
'Merely, start back again—perchance have been  
'Taken for buttresses: crash every screen,  
'Hammer the tenons better, and engage  
'A gang about your work, for the next age  
'Or two, of Knowledge, part by Strength and part  
'By Knowledge! Then, indeed, perchance may start  
'Sordello on his race—would time divulge  
'Such secrets! If one step's awry, one bulge  
'Calls for correction by a step we thought  
'Got over long since, why, till that is wrought,  
'No progress! And the scaffold in its turn  
'Becomes, its service o'er, a thing to spurn.  
'Meanwhile, if your half-dozen years of life  
'In store dispose you to forego the strife,  
'Who takes exception? Only bear in mind  
'Ferrara's reached, Goito's left behind:  
'As you then were, as half yourself, desist!  
'—The warrior-part of you may, an it list,  
'Finding real faulchions difficult to poise,  
'Fling them afar and taste the cream of joys  
'By wielding such in fancy,—what is bard  
'Of you may spurn the vehicle that married  
'Elys so much, and in free fancy glut  
'His sense, yet write no verses—you have but  
'To please yourself for law, and once could please  
'What once appeared yourself, by dreaming these  
'Rather than doing these, in days gone by.  
'But all is changed the moment you descry  
'Mankind as half yourself,—then, fancy's trade  
'Ends once and always: how may half evade  
'The other half? men are found half of you.  
'Out of a thousand helps, just one or two  
'Can be accomplished presently: but flinch  
'From these (as from the faulchion, raised an inch,  
'Elys, described a couplet) and make proof  
'Of fancy,—then, while one half lolls aloof  
'T' the vines, completing Rome to the tip-top—  
'See if, for that, your other half will stop  
'A tear, begin a smile! Tis rabble's woes,  
'Ludicrous in their patience as they chose  
'To sit about their town and quietly  
'Be slaughtered,—the poor reckless soldiery,  
'With their ignoble rhymes on Richard, how  
'"Polt-foot," sang they, "was in a pitfall now,"  
'Cheering each other from the engine-mounts,—  
'That crippled spawling idiot who recounts  
'How, lopped of limbs, he lay, stupid as stone,  
'Till the pains crept from out him one by one,  
'And wriggles round the archers on his head  
'To earn a morsel of their chestnut bread,—  
'And Cino, always in the self-same place  
'Weeping; beside that other wretch's case,  
'Eyepits to ear, one gangrene since he plied  
'The engine in his coat of raw sheep's hide  
'A double watch in the noon sun; and see  
'Lucchino, beauty, with the favours free,  
'Trim hacqueton, spruce beard and scented hair,  
'Campaigning it for the first time—cut there  
'In two already, boy enough to crawl  
'For latter orpine round the southern wall,  
'Tòma, where Richard's kept, because that whore  
'Marfisa, the fool never saw before,  
'Sickened for flowers this wearisomest siege:  
'And Tiso's wife—men liked their pretty liege,  
'Cared for her least of whims once,—Berta, wed  
'A twelvemonth gone, and, now poor Tiso's dead,

'Delivering herself of his first child  
'On that chance heap of wet filth, reconciled

'To fifty gazers!'—(Here a wind below  
Made moody music a rural of woe  
From the pine barrier)—'What if, now the scene

'Draws to a close, yourself have really been  
'—You, plucking purples in Goito's moss  
'Like edges of a trabeca (not to cross  
'Your consul-humour) or dry aloe-shafts  
'For fasces, at Ferrara—he, fate wafts,  
'This very age, her whole inheritance  
'Of opportunities? Yet you advance  
'Upon the last! Since talking is your trade,  
'There's Salinguerra left you to persuade:  
'Fail! then!—

'No—no—which latest chance  
secure!'

Leaped up and cried Sordello: 'this made  
sure,

'The past were yet redeemable; its work  
'Was—help the Guelfs, whom I, however  
it irk,

'Thus help!' He shook the foolish aloe-  
haulm

Out of his doublet, paused, proceeded calm  
To the appointed presence. The large head  
Turned on its socket; 'And your spokes-  
man,' said

The large voice, 'is Elcorte's happy sprout?  
'Few such'—(so finishing a speech no  
doubt

Addressed to Palma, silent at his side)  
'—My sober counsils have diversified.

'Elcorte's son! good: forward as you may,  
'Our lady's minstrel with so much to say!  
The hesitating sunset floated back,

Rosily traversed in the wonted track  
The chamber, from the lattice o'er the girth  
Of pines, to the huge eagle blacked in earth  
Opposite,—outlined sudden, spur to crest,  
That solid Salinguerra, and caressed  
Palma's contour; 'twas day looped back  
night's pall;

Sordello had a chance left spite of all.

And much he made of the convincing  
speech

Meant to compensate for the past and  
reach

Through his youth's daybreak of unprofit,  
quite

To his noon's labour, so proceed till night  
Leisurely! The great argument to bind

Taurello with the Guelf Cause, body and  
mind,

—Came the consummate rhetoric to that?  
Yet most Sordello's argument dropped flat

Through his accustomed fault of breaking  
yoke,

Disjoining him who felt from him who  
spoke.

Was't not a touching incident—so prompt  
A rendering the world its just accompt,

Once proved its debtor? Who'd suppose,  
before

This proof, that he, Goito's god of yore,  
At duty's instance could demean himself  
So memorably, dwindle to a Guelf?

Be sure, in such delicious flattery steeped,  
His inmost self at the out-portion peeped,  
Thus occupied; then stole a glance at those  
Appealed to, curious if her colour rose  
Or his lip moved, while he discreetly urged  
The need of Lombardy becoming purged  
At soonest of her barons; the poor part  
Abandoned thus, missing the blood at  
heart

And spirit in brain, unseasonably off  
Elsewhere! But, though his speech was  
worthy scoff,

Good-humoured Salinguerra, famed for  
tact

And tongue, who, careless of his phrase,  
ne'er lacked

The right phrase, and harangued Honorius  
dumb

At his accession,—looked as all fell plumb  
To purpose and himself found interest

In every point his new instructor pressed  
—Left playing with the rescript's white  
wax seal

To scrutinize Sordello head and heel.  
He means to yield assent sure? No, alas!

All he replied was, 'What, it comes to pass  
'That poesy, sooner than politics,  
'Makes fade young hair?' To think such  
speech could fix

Taurello!

Then a flash of bitter truth:  
So fantasies could break and fritter youth

That he had long ago lost earnestness,  
Lost will to work, lost power to even ex-  
press

The need of working! Earth was turned a  
grave:

No more occasions now, though he should  
crave

Just one, in right of superhuman toil,  
To do what was undone, repair such spoil,

Alter the past—nothing would give the  
chance!

Not that he was to die; he saw askance  
Protract the ignominious years beyond

To dream in—time to hope and time de-  
spond,

Remember and forget, be sad, rejoice  
As saved a trouble; he might, at his choice,

One way or other, idle life out, drop  
No few smooth verses by the way—for

prop,  
A thyrsus, these sad people, all the same,

Should pick up, and set store by,—far from  
blame,

Plant o'er his hearse, convinced his better  
part

Survived him. 'Rather tear men out the  
heart

'O the truth!'—Sordello muttered, and renewed

His propositions for the Multitude.

But Salinguerra, who at this attack Had thrown great breast and ruffling corslet back

To hear the better, smilingly resumed His task; beneath, the carroch's warning boomed;

He must decide with Tito; courteously He turned then, even seeming to agree With his admonisher—'Assist the Pope, 'Extend Guelf domination, fill the scope 'O the Church, thus based on All, by All, for All—

'Change Secular to Evangelical'— Echoing his very sentence: all seemed lost, When suddenly he looked up, laughingly almost,

To Palma: 'This opinion of your friend's— 'For instance, would it answer Palma's ends?

'Best, were it not, turn Guelf, submit our Strength'—

(Here he drew out his baldric to its length) —'To the Pope's Knowledge—let our captive slip,

'Wide to the walls throw ope our gates, equip

'Azzo with . . . what I hold here! Who'll subscribe

'To a trite censure of the minstrel tribe 'Henceforward? or pronounce, as Heinrich used,

""Spear-heads for battle, burr-heads for the joust!"

'—When Constance, for his couplets, would promote

'Alcamo, from a parti-coloured coat, 'To holding her lord's stirrup in the wars.

'Not that I see where couplet-making jars 'With common sense: at Mantua I had borne

'This chanted, better than their most forlorn

'Of bull-baits,—that's indisputable!' Brave!

Whom vanity nigh slew, contempt shall save!

All's at an end: a Troubadour suppose Mankind will class him with their friends or foes?

A puny uncouth ailing vassal think The world and him bound in some special link?

Abrupt the visionary tether burst. What were rewarded here, or what amerced

If a poor drudge, solicitous to dream Deservingly, got tangled by his theme So far as to conceit the knack or gift Or whatso'er it be, of verse, might lift The globe, a lever like the hand and head Of—'Men of Action,' as the Jongleurs said,

—'The Great Men,' in the people's dialect?

And not a moment did this scorn affect Sordello: scorn the poet? They, for once, Asking 'what was,' obtained a full response.

Bid Naddo think at Mantua—he had but To look into his promptuary, put Finger on a set thought in a set speech: But was Sordello fitted thus for each Conjecture? Nowise; since within his soul, Perception brooded unexpressed and whole.

A healthy spirit like a healthy frame Craves aliment in plenty—all the same, Changes, assimilates its aliment. Perceived Sordello, on a truth intent? Next day no formularies more you saw Than figs or olives in a sated maw.

'Tis Knowledge, whither such perceptions tend;

They lose themselves in that, means to an end,

The many old producing some one new, A last unlike the first. If lies are true, The Caliph's wheel-work man of brass receives

A meal, munched millet grains and lettuce leaves

Together in his stomach rattle loose; You find them perfect next day to produce: But ne'er expect the man, on strength of that,

Can roll an iron camel-collar flat Like Haroun's self! I tell you, what was stored

Bit by bit through Sordello's life, out-poured

That eve, was, for that age, a novel thing: And round those three the People formed

a ring, Of visionary judges whose award

He recognized in full—faces that barred Henceforth return to the old careless life, In whose great presence, therefore, his first strife

For their sake must not be ignobly fought; All these, for once, approved of him, he thought,

Suspended their own vengeance, chose await

The issue of this strife to reinstate Them in the right of taking it—in fact He must be proved king ere they could exact

Vengeance for such king's defalcation. Last,

A reason why the phrases flowed so fast Was in his quite forgetting for a time Himself in his amazement that the rhyme Disguised the royalty so much: he there— And Salinguerra yet all-unaware Who was the lord, who liegeman!

'Thus I lay 'On thine my spirit and compel obey

'His lord,—my liegeman,—impotent to build  
 'Another Rome, but hardly so unskilled  
 'In what such builder should have been, as brook  
 'One shame beyond the charge that I forsook  
 'His function! Free me from that shame, I bend  
 'A brow before, suppose new years to spend,—  
 'Allow each chance, nor fruitlessly, recur—  
 'Measure thee with the Minstrel, then, demur  
 'At any crown he claims! That I must cede  
 'Shamed now, my right to my especial meed—  
 'Confess thee fitter help the world than I  
 'Ordained its champion from eternity,  
 'Is much: but to behold thee scorn the post  
 'I quit in thy behalf—to hear thee boast  
 'What makes my own despair!' And while he rung  
 The changes on this theme, the roof up-  
 sprung,  
 The sad walls of the presence-chamber died  
 Into the distance, or embowering vied  
 With far-away Goito's vine-frontier;  
 And crowds of faces—(only keeping clear  
 The rose-light in the midst, his vantage-ground  
 To fight their battle from)—deep clustered round  
 Sordello, with good wishes no mere breath,  
 Kind prayers for him no vapour, since, come death,  
 Come life, he was fresh-sinewed every joint,  
 Each bone new-marrowed as whom gods anoint  
 Though mortal to their rescue. Now let sprawl  
 The snaky volumes hither! Is Typhon all  
 For Hercules to trample—good report  
 From Salinqueria only to extort?  
 'So was I' (closed he his inculcating  
 A poet must be earth's essential king)  
 'So was I, royal so, and if I fail,  
 'Tis not the royalty, ye witness quail,  
 'But one deposed who, caring not exert  
 'Its proper essence, trifled malapert  
 'With accidents instead—good things, as signed  
 'As heralds of a better thing behind—  
 'And, worthy through display of these, put forth  
 'Never the inmost all-surpassing worth  
 'That constitutes him king precisely since  
 'As yet no other spirit may evince  
 'Its like: the power he took most pride to test,  
 'Whereby all forms of life had been professed  
 'At pleasure, forms already on the earth,  
 'Was but a means to power beyond, whose birth  
 'Should, in its novelty, be kingship's proof.  
 'Now, whether he came near or kept aloof  
 'The several forms he longed to imitate,  
 'Not there the kingship lay, he sees too late.  
 'Those forms, unalterable first as last,  
 'Proved him her copier, not the protoplast  
 'Of nature: what would come of being free,  
 'By action to exhibit tree for tree,  
 'Bird, beast, for beast and bird, or prove earth bore  
 'One veritable man or woman more?  
 'Means to an end, such proofs are: what the end?  
 'Let essence, whatso'er it be, extend—  
 'Never contract. Already you include  
 'The multitude; then let the multitude  
 'Include yourself; and the result were new:  
 'Themselves before, the multitude turn you.  
 'This were to live and move and have, in them,  
 'Your being, and secure a diadem  
 'You should transmit (because no cycle yearns  
 'Beyond itself, but on itself returns)  
 'When, the full sphere in wane, the world o'erlaid  
 'Long since with you, shall have in turn obeyed  
 'Some orb still prouder, some displayer, still  
 'More potent than the last, of human will,  
 'And some new king depose the old. Of such  
 'Am I—whom pride of this elates too much?  
 'Safe, rather say, 'mid troops of peers again;  
 'I, with my words, hailed brother of the train  
 'Deeds once sufficed: for, let the world roll back,  
 'Who fails, through deeds howe'er diverse, retrack  
 'My purpose still, my task? A teeming crust—  
 'Air, flame, earth, wave at conflict! Then, needs must  
 'Emerge some Calm embodied, these refer  
 'The brawl to—yellow-bearded Jupiter?  
 'No! Saturn; some existence like a pact  
 'And protest against Chaos, some first fact  
 'I' the faint of time. My deep of life, I know,  
 'Is unavailing e'en to poorly show' . . .  
 (For here the Chief immeasurably yawned)  
 . . . 'Deeds in their due gradation till Song dawned—  
 'The fullest effluence of the finest mind,  
 'All in degree, no way diverse in kind

- 'From minds about it, minds which, more  
or less,  
'Lofty or low, move seeking to impress  
'Themselves on somewhat; but one mind  
has climbed  
'Step after step, by just ascent sublimed.  
'Thought is the soul of act, and, stage by  
stage,  
'Soul is from body still to disengage  
'As tending to a freedom which rejects  
'Such help and incorporeally affects  
'The world, producing deeds but not by  
deeds,  
'Swaying, in others, frames itself exceeds,  
'Assigning them the simpler tasks it used  
'To patiently perform till Song produced  
'Acts, by thoughts only, for the mind:  
divest  
'Mind of e'en Thought, and, lo, God's un-  
expressed  
'Will draws above us! All then is to win  
'Save that. How much for me, then?  
where begin  
'My work? About me, faces! and they  
flock,  
'The earnest faces. What shall I unlock  
'By song? behold me prompt, whate'er  
it be,  
'To minister: how much can mortals see  
'Of Life? No more than so? I take the  
task  
'And marshal you Life's elemental masque,  
'Show Men, on evil or on good lay  
stress,  
'This light, this shade make prominent,  
suppress  
'All ordinary hues that softening blend  
'Such natures with the level. Apprehend  
'Which sinner is, which saint, if I allot  
'Hell, Purgatory, Heaven, a blaze or blot,  
'To those you doubt concerning! I en-  
womb  
'Some wretched Friedrich with his red-  
hot tomb;  
'Some dubious spirit, Lombard Agilulph  
'With the black chastening river I engulph!  
'Some unapproached Matilda I enshrine  
'With languors of the planet of decline—  
'These, fail to recognize, to arbitrate  
'Between henceforth, to rightly estimate  
'Thus marshalled in the masque! Myself,  
the while,  
'As one of you, am witness, shrink or smile  
'At my own showing! Next age—what's  
to do?  
'The men and women stationed hitherto  
'Will I unstation, good and bad, conduct  
'Each nature to its farthest, or obstruct  
'At soonest, in the world: light, thwarted,  
breaks  
'A limpid purity to rainbow flakes,  
'Or shadow, massed, freezes to gloom:  
behold  
'How such, with fit assistance to unfold,  
'Or obstacles to crush them, disengage  
'Their forms, love, hate, hope, fear, peace  
make, war wage,  
'In presence of you all! Myself, implied  
'Superior now, a, by the platform's  
side,  
'I bade them do and suffer,—would last  
content  
'The world . . . no—that's too far! I  
circumvent  
'A few, my masque contented, and to these  
'Offer unveil the last of mysteries—  
'Man's inmost life shall have yet freer  
play:  
'Once more I cast external things away,  
'And natures composite, so decompose  
'That' . . . Why, he writes *Sordello*!  
'How I rose,  
'And how have you advanced! since ever-  
more  
'Yourselves effect what I was fain before  
'Effect, what I supplied yourselves suggest,  
'What I leave bare yourselves can now in-  
vest.  
'How we attain to talk as brothers talk,  
'In half-words, call things by half-names,  
no balk  
'From discontinuing old aids. To-day  
'Takes in account the work of Yesterday:  
'Has not the world a Past now, its adept  
'Consults ere he dispense with or accept  
'New aids: a single touch more may en-  
hance,  
'A touch less turn to insignificance  
'Those structures' symmetry the past has  
strewed  
'The world with, once so bare. Leave the  
mere rude  
'Explicit details! 'tis but brother's speech  
'We need, speech where an accent's charge  
gives each  
'The other's soul—no speech to under-  
stand  
'By former audience: need was then to  
expand,  
'Expatriate—hardly were we brothers!  
true—  
'Nor I lament my small remove from you,  
'Nor reconstruct what stands already.  
Ends  
'Accomplished turn to means: my art in-  
tends  
'New structure from the ancient: as they  
changed  
'The spoils of every clime at Venice,  
ranged  
'The horned and snouted Libyan god,  
upright  
'As in his desert, by some simple bright  
'Clay cinerary pitcher—Thebes as Rome,  
'Athens as Byzant rifled, till their Dome  
'From earth's reputed consummations  
razed  
'A seal, the all-transmuting Triad blazed

'Above. Ah, whose that fortune? Ne'er-  
theless'

'E'en he must stoop contented to express  
'No title of what's to say—the vehicle  
'Never sufficient; but his work is still  
'For faces like the faces that select  
'The single service I am bound effect,—  
'That bid me cast aside such fancies, bow  
'Taurello to the Guelf cause, disallow  
'The Kaiser's coming—which with heart,  
soul, strength,

'I labour for, this eve, who feel at length  
'My past career's outrageous vanity,  
'And would, as it amends, die, even die  
'Now I first estimate the boon of life,  
'If death might win compliance—sure, this  
strife

'Is right for once—the People my support.'  
My poor Sordello! what may we extort  
By this, I wonder? Palma's lighted eyes  
Turned to Taurello who, long past surprise,  
Began, 'You love him—what you'd say  
at large

'Let me say briefly. First, your father's  
charge

'To me, his friend, peruse: I guessed indeed  
'You were no stranger to the course de-  
creed.

'He bids me leave his children to the saints:  
'As for a certain project, he acquaints

'The Pope with that, and offers him the  
best

'Of your possessions to permit the rest  
'Go peaceably—to Ecelin, a stripe

'Of soil the cursed Vicentines will gripe,  
'—To Alberic, a patch the Trevisan

'Clutches already; extricate, who can,  
'Treville, Villarazzi, Puissolo,

'Loria and Cartiglione!—all must go,  
'And with them go my hopes. 'Tis lost,  
then! Lost

'This eve, our crisis, and some pains it cost  
'Procuring; thirty years—as good I'd spent

'Like our admonisher! But each his bent  
'Pursues: no question, one might live  
absurd

'Oneself this while, by deed as he by word  
'Persisting to obtrude an influence where

'Tis made account of, much as . . . nay,  
you fare

'With twice the fortune, youngster!—I  
submit,

'Happy to parallel my waste of wit  
'With the renowned Sordello's: you decide

'A course for me. Romano may abide  
'Romano,—Bacchus! After all, what  
dearth'

'Of Ecelins and Alberics on earth?  
'Say there's a prize in prospect, must dis-  
grace

'Betide competitors, unless they style  
'Themselves Romano? Were it worth my  
while

'To try my own luck! But an obscure place

'Suits me—there wants a youth to bustle,  
stalk

'And attitudinize—some fight, more talk,  
'Most flaunting badges—how, I might  
make clear

'Since Friedrich's very purposes lie here  
'—Here, pity they are like to lie! For me,

'With station fixed uncereemoniously  
'Long since, small use contesting; I am but

'The liegeman—you are born the lieges:  
shut

'That gentle mouth now! or resume your  
kin

'In your sweet self; were Palma Ecelin  
'For me to work with! Could that neck  
endure

'This bauble for a cumbrous garniture,  
'She should . . . or might one bear it for  
her? Stay—

'I have not been so flattered many a day  
'As by your pale friend—Bacchus! The  
least help

'Would lick the hind's fawn to a lion's  
whelp:

'His neck is broad enough—a ready tongue  
'Beside: too writhled—but, the main thing,  
young—

'I could . . . why, look ye!'  
And the badge was thrown

Across Sordello's neck: 'This badge alone  
'Makes you Romano's Head—becomes  
superb

'On your bare neck, which would, on mine,  
disturb

'The pauldron,' said Taurello. A mad act,  
Nor dreamed about before—in fact,

Not when his sportive arm rose for the  
nonce—

But he had dallied overmuch, this once,  
With power: the thing was done, and he,  
aware

The thing was done, proceeded to declare—  
(So like a nature made to serve, excel  
In serving, only feel by service well!)

—That he would make Sordello that and  
more.

'As good a scheme as any. What's to pore  
'At in my face?' he asked—'ponder in-  
stead

'This piece of news; you are Romano's  
Head!

'One cannot slacken pace so near the  
goal,

'Suffer my Azzo to escape heart-whole  
'This time! For you there's Palma to  
espouse—

'For me, one crowning trouble ere I house  
'Like my compeer.'

On which ensued a strange  
And solemn visitation; there came change  
O'er every one of them; each looked on  
each:

Up in the midst a truth grew, without  
speech.

And when the giddiness sank and the haze  
 Subsided, they were sitting, no amaze,  
 Sordello with the baldrick on, his sire  
 Silent, though his proportions seemed  
 aspire  
 Momently; and, interpreting the thrill,—  
 Night at its ebb,—Palma was found there  
 still  
 Relating somewhat Adelaide confessed  
 A year ago, while dying on her breast,—  
 Of a contrivance, that Vicenza night  
 When Ecelin had birth. 'Their convoy's  
 flight,  
 'Cut off a moment, coiled inside the flame  
 'That wallowed like a dragon at his game  
 'The toppling city through—San Biagio  
 rocks!  
 'And wounded lies in her delicious locks  
 'Retrude, the frail mother, on her face,  
 'None of her wasted, just in one em-  
 brace  
 'Covering her child: when, as they lifted  
 her,  
 'Cleaving the tumult, mighty, mightier  
 'And mightiest Taurello's cry outbroke,  
 'Leapt like a tongue of fire that cleaves the  
 smoke,  
 'Midmost to cheer his Mantuans on-  
 ward—drown  
 'His colleague Ecelin's clamour, up and  
 down  
 'The disarray: failed Adelaide see then  
 'Who was the natural chief, the man of  
 men?  
 'Outstripping time, her infant there burst  
 swathe,  
 'Stood up with eyes haggard beyond the  
 scathe  
 'From wandering after his heritage  
 'Lost once and lost for aye: and why that  
 rage,  
 'That deprecating glance? A new shape  
 leant  
 'On a familiar shape—gloatingly bent  
 'O'er his discomfiture; 'mid wreaths it  
 wore,  
 'Still one outflamed the rest—her child's  
 before  
 "'Twas Salinguerra's for his child: scorn,  
 hate,  
 'Rage now might startle her when all too  
 late!  
 'Then was the moment!—rival's foot had  
 spurned  
 'Never that House to earth else! Sense  
 returned—  
 'The act conceived, adventured and com-  
 plete,  
 'They bore away to an obscure retreat  
 'Mother and child—Retrude's self not  
 slain'  
 (Nor even here Taurello moved) 'though  
 pain

'Was fled; and what assured them most  
 'twas fled,  
 'All pain, was, if they raised the pale  
 hushed head  
 'Twould turn this way and that, waver  
 awhile,  
 'And only settle into its old smile—  
 'Graceful as the disquieted water-flag  
 'Steadying itself, remarked they, in the  
 quag  
 'On either side their path)—when suffered  
 look  
 'Down on her child. They marched: no  
 sign once shook  
 'The company's close litter of crossed  
 spears  
 'Till, as they reached Goito, a few tears  
 'Slipped in the sunset from her long black  
 lash,  
 'And she was gone. So far the action raged;  
 'No crime. They laid Retrude in the font,  
 'Taurello's very gift, her child was wont  
 'To sit beneath—constant as eve he came  
 'To sit by its attendant girls the same  
 'As one of them. For Palma, she would  
 blend  
 'With this magnific spirit to the end,  
 'That ruled her first; but scarcely had she  
 dared  
 'To disobey the Adelaide who scared  
 'Her into vowing never to disclose  
 'A secret to her husband, which so froze  
 'His blood at half-recital, she contrived  
 'To hide from him Taurello's infant lived,  
 'Lest, by revealing that, himself should  
 mar  
 'Romano's fortunes. And, a crime so  
 far,  
 'Palma received that action: she was told  
 'Of Salinguerra's nature, of his cold  
 'Calm acquiescence in his lot! But free  
 'To impart the secret to Romano, she  
 'Engaged to repossess Sordello of  
 'His heritage, and hers, and that way doff  
 'Their mask, but after years, long years:  
 while now,  
 'Was not Romano's sign-mark on that  
 brow?  
 Across Taurello's heart his arms were  
 locked:  
 And when he did speak 'twas as if he  
 mocked  
 The minstrel, 'who had not to move,' he  
 said,  
 'Nor stir—should fate defraud him of a  
 shred  
 'Of his son's infancy? much less his  
 youth!  
 (Laughingly all this)—'which to aid, in  
 truth,  
 'Himself, reserved on purpose, had not  
 grown  
 'Old, not too old—'twas best they kept  
 alone

'Till now, and never idly met till now:'  
—Then, in the same breath, told Sordello  
how

All intimations of this eve's event  
Were lies, for Friedrich must advance to  
Trent,

Thence to Verona, then to Rome, there  
stop,

Tumble the Church down, institute a-top  
The Alps a Prefecture of Lombardy:

—'That's now!—no prophesying what  
may be

'Anon, with a new monarch of the clime,  
'Native of Gesl, passing his youth's prime

'At Naples. Tito bids my choice decide  
'On whom . . .

'Embrace him, madman!' Palma cried,  
Who through the laugh saw sweat-drops  
burst apace,

And his lips blanching: he did not embrace  
Sordello, but he laid Sordello's hand  
On his own eye, mouth, forehead.

Understand,  
This while Sordello was becoming flush  
Out of his whiteness; thoughts rushed,  
fancies rushed;

He pressed his hand upon his head and  
signed

Both should forbear him. 'Nay, the best's  
behind!'

Taurello laughed—not quite with the same  
laugh:

'The truth is, thus we scatter, ay, like chaff  
'These Guelfs, a despicable monk recoils

'From: nor expect a fickle Kaiser spoils  
'Our triumph!—Friedrich? Think you,

I intend  
'Friedrich shall reap the fruits of blood I  
spend

'And brain I waste? Think you, the people  
clap

'Their hands at my out-hewing this wild  
gap

'For any Friedrich to fill up? 'Tis mine—  
'That's yours: I tell you, towards some  
such design

'Have I worked blindly, yes, and idly, yes,  
'And for another, yes—but worked no less

'With instinct at my heart; I else had  
swerved,

'While now—look round! My cunning  
has preserved

'Samminiato—that's a central place  
'Secures us Florence, boy,—in Pisa's case.

'By land as she by sea; with Pisa ours,  
'And Florence, and Pistoia, one devours

'The land at leisure! Gloriously dis-  
persed—

'Brescia, observe, Milan, Piacenza first  
'That flanked us (ah, you know not!) in the  
March;

'On these we pile, as keystone of our arch,  
'Romagna and Bologna, whose first span

'Covered the Trentine and the Valsugan;

'Sofia's Egnà by Bolgiano's sure!' . . .

So he proceeded: half of all this, pure  
Delusion, doubtless, nor the rest too true,

But what was undone he felt sure to do,  
As ring by ring he wrung off, flung away

The pauldron-rings to give his sword-arm  
play—

Need of the sword now! That would soon  
adjust

Aught wrong at present; to the sword in-  
trust

Sordello's whiteness, undersize: 'twas  
plain

He hardly rendered right to his own brain—  
Like a brave hound, men educate to pride

Himself on speed or scent nor aught beside,  
As though he could not, gift by gift, match  
men!

Palma had listened patiently: but when  
'Twas time expostulate, attempt withdraw

Taurello from his child, she, without awe  
Took off his iron arms from, one by one,

Sordello's shrinking shoulders, and, that  
done,

Made him avert his visage and relieve  
Sordello (you might see his corslet heave

The while) who, loose, rose—tried to speak,  
then sank:

They left him in the chamber. All was  
blank.

And even reeling down the narrow stair  
Taurello kept up, as though unaware

Palma was by to guide him, the old device  
—Something of Milan—'how we muster  
thrice

'The Torriani's strength there; all along  
'Our own Visconti cowed them'—thus  
the song

Continued even while she bade him stoop,  
Thrid somehow, by some glimpse of  
arrow-loop,

The turnings to the gallery below,  
Where he stopped short as Palma let him  
go.

When he had sat in silence long enough  
Splintering the stone bench, braving a re-  
buff

She stopped the truncheon; only to com-  
mence

One of Sordello's poems, a pretence  
For speaking, some poor rhyme of 'Elys'  
hair

'And head that's sharp and perfect like a  
pear,

'So smooth and close are laid the few fine  
locks

'Stained like pale honey oozed from top-  
most rocks

'Sun-blached the livelong summer'—  
from his worst

Performance, the Goito, as his first:  
And that at end, conceiving from the brow

And open mouth no silence would serve  
now,



Went on to say the whole world loved that  
man

And, for that matter, thought his face, tho'  
wan,

Eclipsed the Count's—he sucking in each  
phrase

As if an angel spoke. The foolish praise  
Ended, he drew her on his mailed knees,

made  
Her face a framework with his hands, a  
shade,

A crown, an aureole: there must she remain  
(Her little mouth compressed with smiling

pain  
As in his gloves she felt her tresses twitch)

To get the best look at, in fittest niche  
Dispose his saint. That done, he kissed her

brow,  
—'Lauded her father for his treason  
now,'

He told her, 'only, how could one suspect  
'The wit in him?—whose clansman, re-

collect,  
'Was ever Salinguerra—she, the same,

'Romano and his lady—so, might claim  
'To know all, as she should'—and thus

begun  
Schemes with a vengeance, schemes on  
schemes, 'not one

'Fit to be told that foolish boy,' he said,  
'But only let Sordello Palma wed,

'—Then!'  
'Twas a dim long narrow place at best:

Midway a sole grate showed the fiery West,  
As shows its corpse the world's end some

split tomb—  
A gloom, a rift of fire, another gloom,

Faced Palma—but at length Taurello set  
Her free; the grating held one ragged jet

Of fierce gold fire: he lifted her within  
The hollow underneath—how else begin

Fate's second marvellous cycle, else renew  
The ages than with Palma plain in view?

Then paced the passage, hands clenched,  
head erect,

Pursuing his discourse; a grand unchecked  
Monotony made out from his quick talk

And the recurring noises of his walk;  
—Somewhat too much like the o'er-

charged assent  
Of two resolved friends in one danger blent,

Who hearten each the other against heart;  
Boasting there's nought to care for, when,

apart  
The boaster, all's to care for. He, beside

Some shape not visible, in power and pride  
Approached, out of the dark, ginglyling

near,  
Nearer, passed close in the broad light, his

ear  
Crimson, eyeballs suffused, temples full-

fraught,  
Just a snatch of the rapid speech you

caught,  
And on he strode into the opposite dark,

Till presently the harsh heel's turn, a spark  
I' the stone, and whirl of some loose em-

bosomed thong  
That crashed against the angle eye so long

After the last, punctual to an amount  
Of mailed great paces you could not but

count,—  
Prepared you for the pacing back again.

And by the snatches you might ascertain  
That, Friedrich's Prefecture surmounted,

left  
By this alone in Italy, they cleft

Asunder, crushed together, at command  
Of none, were free to break up Hildebrand,

Rebuild, he and Sordello, Charlemagne—  
But garnished, Strength with Knowledge,

'if we deign  
'Accept that compromise and stoop to give

'Rome law, the Caesar's Representative.'  
Enough, that the illimitable flood

Of triumphs after triumphs, understood  
In its faint reflux (you shall hear) sufficed

Young Ecelin for appanage, enticed  
Him on till, these long quiet in their graves,

He found 'twas looked for that a whole  
life's braves

Should somehow be made good; so, weak  
and worn,

Must stagger up at Milan, one grey morn  
Of the to-come, and fight his latest fight.

But, Salinguerra's prophecy at height—  
He voluble with a raised arm and stiff,

A blaring voice, a blazing eye, as if  
He had our very Italy to keep

Or cast away, or gather in a heap  
To garrison the better—ay, his word

Was, 'run the cucumber into a gourd,  
'Drive Trent upon Apulia'—at their pitch

Who spied the continents and islands  
which

Grew mulberry leaves and sickles, in the  
map—

(Strange that three such confessions so  
should hap

To Palma, Dante spoke with in the clear  
Amorous silence of the Swooning-

sphere,—  
Cunizza, as he called her! Never ask

Of Palma more! She sat, knowing her task  
Was done, the labour of it,—for, success

Concerned not Palma, passion's votaress.)  
Triumph at height, and thus Sordello

crowned—  
Above the passage suddenly a sound

Stops speech, stops walk: back shrinks  
Taurello, bids

With large involuntary asking lids,  
Palma interpret. 'Tis his own foot-

stamp—  
'Your hand! His summons! Nay, this

idle damp  
'Befits not!' Out they two reeled dizzily.

'Visconti's strong at Milan,' resumed he,

In the old, somewhat insignificant way—  
(Was Palma wont, years afterward, to say)  
As though the spirit's light, sustained thus  
far,

Dropped at that very instant.

Gone they are—  
Palma, Taurello; Eglamor anon,  
Ecelin,—only Naddo's never gone!  
—Labours, this moonrise, what the Master  
meant:

'Is Squarcialupo speckled?—purulent,  
'I'd say, but, when was Providence put out?  
'He carries somehow handily about  
'His spite nor fouls himself!' Goito's  
vines

Stand like a cheat detected—stark rough  
lines,

The moon breaks through, a grey mean  
scale against

The vault where, this eve's Maiden, thou  
remain'st

Like some fresh martyr, eyes fixed—who  
can tell?

As Heaven, now all's at end, did not so  
well,

Spite of the faith and victory, to leave  
Its virgin quite to death in the lone eve.  
While the persisting hermit-bee... ha! wait  
No longer: these in compass, forward fate!

### BOOK THE SIXTH

THE thought of Eglamor's least like a  
thought,

And yet a false one, was, 'Man shrinks to  
nought'

'If matched with symbols of immensity;  
'Must quail, forsooth, before a quiet sky  
'Or sea, too little for their quietude:'

And, truly, somewhat in Sordello's mood  
Confirmed its speciousness, while eve slow  
sank

Down the near terrace to the farther bank,  
And only one spot left from out the night  
Glimmered upon the river opposite—

A breadth of watery heaven like a bay,  
A sky-like space of water, ray for ray,  
And star for star, one richness where they  
mixed

As this and that wing of an angel, fixed,  
Tumultuary splendours folded in

To die. Nor turned he till Ferrara's dike  
(Say, the monotonous speech from a man's  
lip

Who lets some first and eager purpose slip  
In a new fancy's birth—the speech keeps  
on

Though elsewhere its informing soul be  
gone)

—Aroused him, surely offered succour.  
Fate

Paused with this eve; ere she precipitate

Herself,—best put off new strange thoughts  
awhile,

That voice, those large hands, that por-  
tentous smile,—

What help to pierce the future as the past  
Lay in the plaining city?

And at last  
The main discovery and prime concern,  
All that just now imported him to learn,  
Truth's self, like yonder slow moon to  
complete

Heaven, rose again, and, naked at his feet,  
Lighted his old life's every shift and  
change,

Effort with counter-effort; nor the range  
Of each looked wrong except wherein it  
checked,

Some other—which of these could he sus-  
pect,

Prying into them by the sudden blaze?  
The real way seemed made up of all the  
ways—

Mood after mood of the one mind in him;  
Tokens of the existence, bright or dim,  
Of a transcendent all-embracing sense

Demanding only outward influence,  
A soul, in Palma's phrase, above his soul,  
Power to uplift his power,—such moon's  
control

Over such sea-depths,—and their mass had  
swept

Onward from the beginning and still kept  
Its course: but years and years the sky  
above

Held none, and so, untasked of any love,  
His sensitiveness idled, now amorphous,  
Alive now, and, to sullenness or sport

Given wholly up, disposed itself anew  
At every passing instigation, grew  
And dwindled at caprice, in foam-showers  
spilt,

Wedge-like insistent, quivered now a gilt  
Shield in the sunshine, now a blinding race  
Of whitest ripples o'er the reef—found  
place

For much display; not gathered up and,  
hurled

Right from its heart, encompassing the  
world.

So had Sordello been, by consequence,  
Without a function: others made pretence  
To strength not half his own, yet had some  
core

Within, submitted to some moon, before  
Them still, superior still whate'er their  
force,—

Were able therefore to fulfil a course,  
Nor missed life's crown, authentic attri-  
bute.

To each who lives must be a certain fruit  
Of having lived in his degree,—a stage,  
Earlier or later in men's pilgrimage,  
To stop at; and to this the spirits tend  
Who, still discovering beauty without end,

Amass the scintillations, make one star  
—Something unlike them, self-sustained,  
afar,—

And meanwhile nurse the dream of being  
blest

By winning it to notice and invest  
Their souls with alien glory, some one day  
Whene'er the nucleus, gathering shape  
always,

Round to the perfect circle—soon or late,  
According as themselves are formed to  
wait,

Whether mere human beauty will suffice  
—The yellow hair and the luxurious eyes,  
Or human intellect seem best, or each  
Combine in some ideal form past reach  
On earth, or else some shade of these, some  
aim,

Some love, hate even, take their place, the  
same,

So to be served—all this they do not lose,  
Waiting for death to live, nor idly choose  
What must be Hell—a progress thus pur-  
sued

Through all existence, still above the food  
That's offered them, still fain to reach  
beyond

The widened range, in virtue of their bond  
Of sovereignty. Not that a Palma's Love,  
A Salinguerra's Hate, would equal prove  
To swaying all Sordello: but why doubt  
Some love meet for such strength, some  
moon without

Would match his sea?—or fear, Good  
manifest,

Only the Best breaks faith?—Ah but the  
Best

Somehow eludes us ever, still might be  
And is not! Crave we gems? No penury  
Of their material round us! Pliant earth  
And plastic flame—what balks the mage  
his birth

—Jacinth in balls or lodestone by the  
block?

Flinders enrich the strand, veins swell the  
rock;

Nought more! Seek creatures? Life's i'  
the tempest, thought

Clothes the keen hill-top, mid-day woods  
are fraught

With fervours: human forms are well  
enough!

But we had hoped, encouraged by the stuff  
Profuse at nature's pleasure, men beyond  
These actual men!—and thus are over-  
fond

In arguing, from Good—the Best, from  
force

Divided—force combined, an ocean's  
course

From this our sea whose mere intestine  
pants

Might seem at times sufficient to our  
wants.

External power! If none be adequate,  
And he stand forth ordained (a prouder  
fate)

Himself a law to his own sphere? 'Remove  
'All incompleteness!' for that law, that  
love?

Nay, if all other laws be feints,—truth  
veiled

Helpfully to weak vision that had failed  
To grasp aught but its special want,—for  
lure,

Embodied? Stronger vision could endure  
The unbodied want: no part—the whole of  
truth!

The People were himself; nor, by the ruth  
At their condition, was he less impelled  
To alter the discrepancy beheld,  
Than if, from the sound whole, a sickly part  
Subtracted were transformed, decked out  
with art,

Then palmed on him as alien woe—the  
Gulf

To succour, proud that he forsook himself.  
All is himself; all service, therefore, rates  
Alike, nor serving one part, immolates  
The rest: but all in time! 'That lance of  
yours

'Makes havoc soon with Malek and his  
Moors,

'That buckler's lined with many a giant's  
beard

'Ere long, our champion, be the lance up-  
reared,

'The buckler wielded handsomely as now!  
'But view your escort, bear in mind your  
vow,

'Count the pale tracts of sand to pass ere  
that,

'And, if you hope we struggle through the  
flat,

'Put lance and buckler by! Next half-  
month lacks

'Mere sturdy exercise of mace and axe  
'To cleave this dismal brake of prickly-  
pear

'Which bristling holds Cydippe by the hair,  
'Lames barefoot Agathon: this felled, we'll  
try

'The picturesque achievements by and  
by—

'Next life!'

Ay, rally, mock, O People, urge  
Your claims!—for thus he ventured, to the  
verge,

Push a vain mummery which perchance  
distrust

Of his fast-slipping resolution thrust  
Likewise: accordingly the Crowd—(as yet  
He had unconsciously contrived forget  
I' the whole, to dwell o' the points . . . one  
might assuage

The signal horrors easier than engage  
With a dim vulgar vast unobvious grief  
Not to be fancied off, nor gained relief

In brilliant fits, cured by a happy quirk,  
But by dim vulgar vast unobvious work  
To correspond . . . ) this Crowd then, forth  
they stood.

'And now content thy stronger vision,  
brood

'On thy bare want; uncovered, turf by turf,  
'Study the corpse-face thro' the taint-  
worms' scurf!'

Down sank the People's Then; uprose  
their Now.

These sad ones render service to! And how  
Piteously little must that service prove  
—Had surely proved in any case! for, move  
Each other obstacle away, let youth  
Become aware it had surprised a truth  
'Twere service to impart—can truth be  
seized,

Settled forthwith, and, of the captive  
eased,

Its captor find fresh prey, since this alit  
So happily, no posture luring it,  
The earnest of a flock to follow? Vain,  
Most vain! a life to spend ere this he chair,  
To the poor crowd's complacence: ere the  
crowd

Pronounce it captured, he describes a cloud  
Its kin of twice the plume; which he, in turn,  
If he shall live as many lives, may learn  
How to secure: not else. Then Mantua  
called

Back to his mind how certain hards were  
thrall'd

—Buds blasted, but of breath more like  
perfume

Than Naddo's staring nosegay's carrion  
bloom;

Some insane rose that burnt heart out in  
sweets,

A spendthrift in the spring, no summer  
greet;

Some Dularete, drunk with truths and  
wine,

Grown bestial, dreaming how become  
divine.

Yet to surmount this obstacle, commence  
With the commencement, merits crown-  
ing! Hence

Must truth be casual truth, elicited  
In sparks so mean, at intervals dispread

So rarely, that 'tis like at no one time  
Of the world's story has not truth, the  
prime

Of truth, the very truth which, loosed, had  
hurled

The world's course right, been really in the  
world

—Content the while with some mean spark  
by dint

Of some chance-blow, the solitary hint  
Of buried fire, which, rip earth's breast,

would stream  
\*Sky-ward!

Sordello's miserable gleam

Was looked for at the moment: he would  
dash

This badge, and all it brought, to earth,—  
abash

Taurello thus, perhaps persuade him wrest  
The Kaiser from his purpose,—would at-  
test

His own belief, in any case. Before  
He dashes it however, think once more!

For, were that little, truly service? 'Ay,  
'I' the end, no doubt; but meantime?

Plain you spy

'Its ultimate effect, but many flaws  
'Of vision blur each intervening cause.

'Were the day's fraction clear as the life's  
sum

'Of service, Now as filled as teems To-come  
'With evidence of good—nor too minute

'A share to vie with evil! No dispute,  
'Twere fittest maintain the Guelfs in rule:

'That makes your life's work: but you  
have to school

'Your day's work on these natures circum-  
stanced

'Thus variously, which yet, as each ad-  
vanced

'Or might impede the Guelf rule, must be  
moved

'Now, for the Then's sake,—hating what  
you loved,

'Loving old hatreds! Nor if one man bore  
'Brand upon temples while his fellow wore

'The aureole, would it task you to decide:  
'But, portioned duly out, the future vied

'Never with the unparcelled present!  
Smite

'Or spare so much on warrant all so slight?  
'The present's complete sympathies to  
break,

'Aversions bear with, for a future's sake  
'So feeble? Tito ruined through one  
speck,

'The Legate saved by his sole lightish fleck?  
'This were work, true, but work performed  
at cost

'Of other work; aught gained here, else-  
where lost.

'For a new segment spoil an orb half-done?  
'Rise with the People one step, and sink—  
one?

'Were it but one step, less than the whole  
face

'Of things, your novel duty bids erase!  
'Harms to abolish! What, the prophet  
saith,

'The minstrel singeth vainly then? Old  
faith,

'Old courage, only born because of harms,  
'Were not, from highest to the lowest,  
charms?

'Flame may persist; but is not glare as  
staunch?

'Where the salt marshes stagnate, crystals  
branch:

'Blood dries to crimson; Evil's beautified  
 'In every shape. Thrust Beauty then aside  
 'And banish Evil! Wherefore? After all,  
 'Is Evil a result less natural  
 'Than Good? For overlook the seasons'  
     strife  
 'With tree and flower,—the hideous ani-  
     mal life,  
 '(Of which who seeks shall find a grinning  
     taunt  
 'For his solution, and endure the vaunt  
 'Of nature's angel, as a child that knows  
 'Himself befooled, unable to propose  
 'Aught better than the fooling)—and but  
     care  
 'For men, for the mere People then and  
     there,—  
 'In these, could you but see that Good and  
     Ill  
 'Claimed you alike! Whence rose their  
     claim but still  
 'From Ill, as fruit of Ill? What else could  
     knit  
 'You theirs but Sorrow? Any free from it  
 'Were also free from you! Whose happi-  
     ness  
 'Could be distinguished in this morning's  
     press  
 'Of miseries?—the fool's who passed a  
     gibe  
 "'On thee," jeered he, "so wedded to thy  
     tribe,  
 "'Thou carriest green and yellow tokens  
     in  
 "'Thy very face that thou art Ghibellin!"  
 'Much hold on you that fool obtained!  
     Nay mount  
 'Yet higher—and upon men's own account  
 'Must Evil stay: for, what is joy?—to heave  
 'Up one obstruction more, and common  
     leave  
 'What was peculiar, by such act destroy  
 'Itself; a partial death is every joy;  
 'The sensible escape, enfranchisement  
 'Of a sphere's essence: once the vexed—  
     content,  
 'The cramped—at large, the growing circle  
     —round,  
 'All's to begin again—some novel bound  
 'To break, some new enlargement to en-  
     treat;  
 'The sphere though larger is not more  
     complete.  
 'Now for Mankind's experience: who  
     alone  
 'Might style the unobstructed world his  
     own?  
 'Whom palled Goito with its perfect  
     things?  
 'Sordello's self: whereas for Mankind  
     springs  
 'Salvation by each hindrance interposed.  
 'They climb; life's view is not at once dis-  
     closed

'To creatures caught up, on the summit  
     left,  
 'Heaven plain above them, yet of wings  
     bereft;  
 'But lower laid, as at the mountain's foot.  
 'So, range on range, the girdling forests  
     shoot  
 "'Twixt your plain prospect and the throngs  
     who scale  
 'Height after height, and pierce mists, veil  
     by veil,  
 'Heartened with each discovery; in their  
     soul,  
 'The Whole they seek by Parts—but, found  
     that Whole,  
 'Could they revert, enjoy past gains? The  
     space  
 'Of time you judge so meagre to embrace  
 'The Parts were more than plenty, once  
     attained  
 'The Whole, to quite exhaust it: nought  
     were gained  
 'But leave to look—not leave to do: Be-  
     neath  
 'Soon sates the looker—look Above, and  
     Death  
 'Tempts ere a tithe of Life be tasted. Live  
 'First, and die soon enough, Sordello!  
     Give  
 'Body and spirit the first right they claim,  
 'And pasture soul on a voluptuous shame  
 'That you, a pageant-city's denizen,  
 'Are neither vilely lodged midst Lombard  
     men—  
 'Can force joy out of sorrow, seem to truck  
 'Bright attributes away for sordid muck,  
 'Yet manage from that very muck educe  
 'Gold; then subject, nor scruple, to your  
     cruce  
 'The world's discardings! Though real  
     ingots pay  
 'Your pains, the clods that yielded them  
     are clay  
 'To all beside,—would clay remain, though  
     quenched  
 'Your purging-fire; who's robbed then?  
     Had you wrenched  
 'An ampler treasure forth!—As 'tis, they  
     crave  
 'A share that ruins you and will not save  
 'Them. Why should sympathy command  
     you quit  
 'The course that makes your joy, nor will  
     remit  
 'Their woe? Would all arrive at joy?  
     Reverse  
 'The order (time instructs you) nor coerce  
 'Each unit till, some predetermined mode,  
 'The total be emancipate; men's road  
 'Is one, men's times of travel many; thwart  
 'No enterprising soul's precocious start  
 'Before the general march! If slow or fast  
 'All straggle up to the same point at  
     last,

- 'Why grudge your having gained, a month ago,  
'The brakes' at balm-shed, asphodels in blow,  
'While they were landlocked? Speed their Then, but how  
'This badge would suffer you improve your Now!'  
His time of action for, against, or with  
Our world (I labour to extract the pith  
Of this his problem) grew, that even-tide,  
Gigantic with its power of joy, beside  
The world's eternity of impotence  
To profit though at his whole joy's expense.  
'Make nothing of my day because so brief?  
'Rather make more: instead of joy, use grief  
'Before its novelty have time subside!  
'Wait not for the late savour, leave untried  
'Virtue, the creaming honey-wine, quick squeeze  
'Vice like a biting spirit from the lees  
'Of life! Together let wrath, hatred, lust,  
'All tyrannies in every shape, be thrust,  
'Upon this Now, which time may reason out  
'As mischiefs, far from benefits, no doubt;  
'But long ere then Sordello will have slept  
'Away; you teach him at Goito's crypt,  
'There's a blank issue to that fiery thrill.  
'Stirring, the few cope with the many, still:  
'So much of sand as, quiet, makes a mass  
'Unable to produce three tufts of grass,  
'Shall, troubled by the whirlwind, render void  
'The whole calm glebe's endeavour: be employed!  
'And e'en though somewhat smart the Crowd for this,  
'Contribute each his pang to make your bliss,  
'Tis but one pang—one blood-drop to the bowl  
'Which brimful tempts the sluggish asp uncowl  
'At last, stains ruddily the dull red cape,  
'And, kindling orbs grey as the unripe grape  
'Before, avails forthwith to disentrance  
'The portent, soon to lead a mystic dance  
'Among you! For, who sits alone in Rome?  
'Have those great hands indeed hewn out a home,  
'And set me there to live? Oh life, life-breath,  
'Life-blood,—ere sleep, come travail, life ere death!  
'This life stream on my soul, direct, oblique,  
'But always streaming! Hindrances? They pique:
- 'Helps? such . . . but why repeat, my soul o'ertops  
'Each height, then every depth profound-lier drops?  
'Enough that I can live, and would live! Wait  
'For some transcendent life reserved by Fate  
'To follow this? Oh, never! Fate, I trust  
'The same, my soul to; for, as who flings dust,  
'Perchance (so facile was the deed) she chequed  
'The void with these materials to affect  
'My soul diversely: these consigned anew  
'To nought by death, what marvel if she threw  
'A second and superber spectacle  
'Before me? What may serve for sun, what still  
'Wander a moon above me? What else wind  
'About me like the pleasures left behind,  
'And how shall some new flesh that is not flesh  
'Cling to me? What's new laughter? Soothes the fresh  
'Sleep like sleep? Fate's exhaustless for my sake  
'In brave resource: but whether bids she slake  
'My thirst at this first rivulet, or count  
'No draught worth lip save from some rocky fount  
'Above i' the clouds, while here she's provident  
'Of pure loquacious pearl, the soft tree-tent  
'Guards, with its face of reate and sedge, nor fail  
'The silver globules and gold-sparkling grail  
'At bottom? Oh, 'twere too absurd to slight  
'For the hereafter the to-day's delight!  
'Quench thirst at this, then seek next well-spring: wear  
'Home-lilies ere strange lotus in my hair!  
'Here is the Crowd, whom I with freest heart  
'Offer to serve, contented for my part  
'To give life up in service,—only grant  
'That I do serve; if otherwise, why want  
'Aught further of me? If men cannot choose  
'But set aside life, why should I refuse  
'The gift? I take it—I, for one, engage  
'Never to falter through my pilgrimage—  
'Nor end it howling that the stock or stone  
'Were enviable, truly: I, for one,  
'Will praise the world, you style mere ante-room  
'To palace—be it so! shall I assume

'—My foot the courtly gait, my tongue the trope,  
'My mouth the smirk, before the doors fly ope  
'One moment? What? with guarders row on row,  
'Gay swarms of varletry that come and go,  
'Pages to dice with, waiting-girls unlace  
'The plackets of, pert claimants help displace,  
'Heart-heavy suitors get a rank for,—laugh  
'At yon sleek parasite, break his own staff  
'Cross Beetle-brows the Usher's shoulder,—why  
'Admitted to the presence by and by,  
'Should thought of having lost these make me grieve  
'Among new joys I reach, for joys I leave?  
'Cool citrine-crystals, fierce pyropus-stone,  
'Are floor-work there! But do I let alone  
'That black-eyed peasant in the vestibule  
'One and for ever?—Floor-work? No such fool!  
'Rather, were heaven to forestall earth, I'd say  
'I, is it, must be blest? Then, my own way  
'Bless me! Give firmer arm and fleet foot,  
'I'll thank you: but to no mad wings transmute  
'These limbs of mine—our greensward was so soft!  
'Nor camp I on the thunder-cloud aloft:  
'We feel the bliss distinctlier, having thus  
'Engines subservient, not mixed up with us.  
'Better move palpably through heaven: nor, freed  
'Of flesh forsooth, from space to space proceed  
'Mid flying synods of worlds! No: in heaven's marge  
'Show Titan still, recumbent o'er his targe  
'Solid with stars—the Centaur at his game,  
'Made tremulously out in hoary flame!  
'Life! Yet the very cup whose extreme dull  
'Dregs, even, I would quaff, was dashed, at full,  
'Aside so oft; the death I fly, revealed  
'So oft a better life this life concealed,  
'And which sage, champion, martyr, through each path  
'Have hunted fearlessly—the horrid bath,  
'The crippling-irons and the fiery chair.  
'Twas well for them; let me become aware  
'As they, and I relinquish life, too! Let  
'What masters life disclose itself! Forget  
'Vain ordinances, I have one appeal—  
'I feel, am what I feel, know what I feel;  
'So much is truth to me. What Is, then? Since  
'One object, viewed diversely, may evince

'Beauty and ugliness—this way attract,  
'That way repel,—why glose upon the fact?  
'Why must a single of the sides be right?  
'What bids choose this and leave the opposite?  
'Where's abstract Right for me?—in youth ended  
'With Right still present, still to be pursued,  
'Thro' all the interchange of circles, life  
'Each with its proper law and mode of life,  
'Each to be dwelt at ease in: where, to sway  
'Absolute with the Kaiser, or obey  
'Implicit with his serf of fluttering heart,  
'Or, like a sudden thought of God's, to start  
'Up, Brutus in the presence, then go shout  
'That some should pick the unstrung jewels out—  
'Each, well!'  
And, as in moments when the past  
Gave partially enfranchisement, he cast  
Himself quite through mere secondary states  
Of his soul's essence, little loves and hates,  
Into the mid deep yearnings overlaid  
By these; as who should pierce hill, plain,  
grove, glade,  
And on into the very nucleus probe  
That first determined there exist a globe.  
As that were easiest, half the globe dissolve!  
So seemed Sordello's closing-truth evolved  
By his flesh-half's break-up; the sudden swell  
Of his expanding soul showed Ill and Well,  
Sorrow and Joy, Beauty and Ugliness,  
Virtue and Vice, the Larger and the Less,  
All qualities, in fine, recorded here,  
Might be but modes of Time and this one sphere,  
Urgent on these, but not of force to bind  
Eternity, as Time—as Matter—Mind,  
If Mind, Eternity, should choose assert  
Their attributes within a Life: thus girt  
With circumstance, next change beholds them cinct  
Quite otherwise—with Good and Ill distinct,  
Joys, sorrows, tending to a like result—  
Contrived to render easy, difficult,  
This or the other course of . . . what new bond  
In place of flesh may stop their flight beyond  
Its new sphere,—as that course does harm or good  
To its arrangements. Once this understood,  
As suddenly he felt himself alone,  
'Quite out of Time and this world: all was known.  
What made the secret of his past despair?  
—Most imminent when he seemed most aware

Of his own self-sufficiency: made mad  
By craving to expand the power he had,  
And not new power to be expanded?—just  
This made it; Soul on Matter being thrust,  
Joy comes when so much Soul is wrecked in  
Time

On Matter: let the Soul's attempt sublime  
Matter beyond the scheme and so prevent  
By more or less that deed's accomplish-  
ment,

And Sorrow follows: Sorrow how avoid?  
Let the employer match the thing em-  
ployed,

Fit to the finite his infinity,  
And thus proceed for ever, in degree  
Changed but in kind the same, still limited  
To the appointed circumstance and dead  
To all beyond. A sphere is but a sphere;  
Small, Great, are merely terms we bandy  
here;

Since to the spirit's absoluteness all  
Are like. Now, of the present sphere we  
call

Life, are conditions; take but this among  
Many; the body was to be so long  
Youthful, no longer: but, since no control  
Tied to that body's purposes his soul,  
She chose to understand the body's trade  
More than the body's self—had fain con-  
veyed

Her boundless to the body's bounded lot.  
Hence, the soul permanent, the body  
not,—

Scarcely its minute for enjoying here,—  
The soul must needs instruct her weak  
compeer,

Run o'er its capabilities and wring  
A joy thence, she held worth experiencing:  
Which, far from half discovered even,—  
lo,

The minute gone, the body's power let go  
Apportioned to that joy's acquirement!  
Broke

Morning o'er earth, he yearned for all it  
woke—

From the volcano's vapour-flag, winds  
hoist

Black o'er the spread of sea,—down to the  
moist

Dale's silken barley-spikes sullied with  
rain,

Swayed earthwards, heavily to rise again—  
The Small, a sphere as perfect as the Great  
To the soul's absoluteness. Meditate  
Too long on such a morning's cluster-  
chord

And the whole music it was framed  
afford,—

The chord's might half discovered, what  
should pluck

One string, his finger, was found palsy-  
struck.

And then no marvel if the spirit, shown  
A saddest sight—the body lost alone

Through her officious proffered help, de-  
prived

Of this and that enjoyment Fate con-  
trived,—

Virtue, Good, Beauty, each allowed slip  
hence,—

Vain-gloriously were fain, for recompense,  
To stem the ruin even yet, protract  
The body's term, supply the power it lacked  
From her infinity, compel it learn

These qualities were only Time's concern,  
And body may, with spirit helping,  
barred—

Advance the same, vanquished—obtain  
reward,

Reap joy where sorrow was intended  
grow,

Of Wrong make Right, and turn Ill Good  
below.

And the result is, the poor body soon  
Sinks under what was meant a wondrous  
boon,

Leaving its bright accomplice all aghast.  
So much was plain then, proper in the  
past;

To be complete for, satisfy the whole  
Series of spheres—Eternity, his soul  
Needs must exceed, prove incomplete for,  
each

Single sphere—Time. But does our know-  
ledge reach

No farther? Is the cloud of hindrance  
broke

But by the failing of the fleshly yoke,  
Its loves and hates, as now when death lets  
soar

Sordello, self-sufficient as before,  
Though during the mere space that shall  
elapse

'Twixt his enthrallment in new bonds per-  
haps?

Must life be ever just escaped, which  
should

Have been enjoyed?—nay, might have  
been and would,

Each purpose ordered right—the soul's  
no whit

Beyond the body's purpose under it.  
Like yonder breadth of watery heaven, a  
bay,

And that sky-space of water, ray for ray  
And star for star, one richness where they  
mixed

As this and that wing of an angel, fixed,  
Tumultuary splendours folded in

To die—would soul, proportioned thus,  
begin

Exciting discontent, or surelier quell  
The body if, aspiring, it rebel?

But how so order life? Still brutalize  
The soul, the sad world's way, with muffled  
eyes

To all that was before, all that shall be  
After this sphere—all and each quality



Save some sole and immutable Great,  
Good

And Beauteous whither fate has loosed its  
hood

To follow? Never may some soul see All  
—The Great Before and After, and the  
Small

Now, yet be saved by this the simplest lore,  
And take the single course prescribed be-  
fore,

As the king-bird with ages on his plumes  
Travels to die in his ancestral glooms?  
But where descry the Love that shall select  
That course? Here is a soul whom, to  
affect,

Nature has plied with all her means, from  
trees

And flowers e'en to the Multitude!—and  
these,

Decides he save or no? One word to end!  
Ah my Sordello, I this once befriend  
And speak for you. Of a Power above you  
still

Which, utterly incomprehensible,  
Is out of rivalry, which thus you can  
Love, tho' unloving all conceived by man—  
What need! And of—none the minutest  
duct

To that out-nature, nought that would in-  
struct

And so let rivalry begin to live—  
But of a Power its representative  
Who, being for authority the same,  
Communication different, should claim  
A course, the first chose but this last re-  
vealed—

This Human clear, as that Divine con-  
cealed—

What utter need!

What has Sordello found?  
Or can his spirit go the mighty round,  
End where poor Eglamor begun? So, says  
Old fable, the two eagles went two ways  
About the world: where, in the midst, they  
met,

Though on a shifting waste of sand, men set  
Jove's temple. Quick, what has Sordello  
found?

For they approach—approach—that  
foot's rebound . . .

Palma? No, Salinguerra though in mail;  
They mount, have reached the threshold,  
dash the veil

Aside—and you divine who sat there dead,  
Under his foot the badge: still, Palma said,  
A triumph lingering in the wide eyes,  
Wider than some spent swimmer's if he  
spies

Help from above in his extreme despair,  
And, head far back on shoulder thrust,  
turns there

With short quick passionate cry: as Palma  
pressed

In one great kiss, her lips upon his breast,

It beat.

By this, the hermit-bee has stopped  
His day's toil at Goito: the new-cropped  
Dead vine-leaf answers, now 'tis eve, he  
bit,

Twirled so, and filed all day: the man-  
sion's fit,

God counselled for. As easy guess the  
word

That passed betwixt them, and become the  
third

To the soft small unfrighted bee, as tax  
Him with one fault—so, no remembrance  
racks

Of the stone maidens and the font of stone  
He, creeping through the crevice, leaves  
alone.

Alas, my friend, alas Sordello, whom  
Anon they laid within that old font-tomb,  
And, yet again, alas!

And now is't worth  
Our while bring back to mind, much less set  
forth

How Salinguerra extricates himself  
Without Sordello? Ghibellin and Guelf  
May fight their fiercest out? If Richard  
sulked

In durance or the Marquis paid his mulct,  
Who cares, Sordello gone? The upshot,  
sure,

Was peace; our chief made some frank  
overture

That prospered; compliment fell thick and  
fast

On its disposer, and Taurello passed  
With foe and friend for an outstripping  
soul,

Nine days at least. Then,—fairly reached  
the goal,—

He, by one effort, blotted the great hope  
Out of his mind, nor further tried to cope  
With Este, that mad evening's style, but  
sent

Away the Legate and the League, content  
No blame at least the brothers had in-  
curred,

—Dispatched a message to the Monk, he  
heard

Patiently first to last, scarce shivered at,  
Then curled his limbs up on his wolfskin  
mat

And ne'er spoke more,—informed the  
Ferrarese

He but retained their rule so long as  
these

Lingered in pupillage,—and last, no mode  
Apparent else of keeping safe the road  
From Germany direct to Lombardy  
For Friedrich,—none, that is, to guarantee  
The faith and promptitude of who should  
next

Obtain Sofia's dowry,—sore perplexed—  
(Sofia being youngest of the tribe  
Of daughters, Ecelin was wont to bribe

The envious magnates with—nor, since he sent

Henry of Egna this fair child, had Trent  
Once failed the Kaiser's purposes—'we lost

'Egna last year, and who takes Egna's post—

'Opens the Lombard gate if Friedrich knock?')

Himself espoused the Lady of the Rock  
In pure necessity, and, so destroyed

His slender last of chances, quite made void  
Old prophecy, and spite of all the schemes

Overt and covert, youth's deeds, age's dreams,

Was sucked into Romano. And so hushed  
He up this evening's work that, when 'twas brushed

Somehow against by a blind chronicle  
Which, chronicling whatever woe befell

Ferrara, noted this the obscure woe  
Of 'Salinguerra's sole son Giacomo

'Deceased, fatuous and doting, ere his sire,'  
The townsfolk rubbed their eyes, could but admire

Which of Sofia's five was meant.

The chaps  
Of earth's dead hope were tardy to collapse,

Obliterated not the beautiful  
Distinctive features at a crash: but dull

And duller these, next year, as Gueffs withdrew

Each to his stronghold. Then (securely too  
Ecelin at Campese slept; close by,

Who likes may see him in Solagna lie,  
With cushioned head and gloved hand to denote

The cavalier he was)—then his heart smote  
Young Ecelin at last; long since adult.

And, save Vicenza's business, what result  
In blood and blaze? (So hard to intercept

Sordello till his plain withdrawal!) Stepped  
Then its new lord on Lombardy. I' the nick

Of time when Ecelin and Alberic  
Closed with Taurello, come precisely news

That in Verona half the souls refuse  
Allegiance to the Marquis and the Count—

Have cast them from a throne they bid him mount,

'Their Podestà, thro' his ancestral worth.  
Ecelin flew there, and the town henceforth

Was wholly his—Taurello sinking back'  
From temporary station to a track

That suited. News received of this acquit,  
Friedrich did come to Lombardy: who missed

Taurello then? Another year: they took  
Vicenza, left the Marquis scarce a nook

For refuge, and, when hundreds two or three  
Of Gueffs conspired to call themselves

'The Free,'

Opposing Alberic,—vile Bassanese,—  
(Without Sordello!)—Ecelin at ease

Slaughtered them so observably, that oft  
A little Salinguerra looked with soft

Blue eyes up, asked his sire the proper age  
To get appointed his proud uncle's page.

More years passed, and that sire had  
dwindled down

To a mere showy turbulent soldier, grown  
Better through age, his parts still in repute,

Subtle—how else?—but hardly so astute  
As his contemporaneous friends professed;

Undoubtedly a brawler: for the rest,  
Known by each neighbour, and allowed

for, let  
Keep his incorrigible ways, nor fret

Men who would miss their boyhood's bug-bear: 'trap

'The ostrich, suffer our bald osprey flap  
'A battered pinion!'—was the word. In fine,

One flap too much and Venice's marine  
Was meddled with; no overlooking that!

She captured him in his Ferrara, fat  
And florid at a banquet, more by fraud

Than force, to speak the truth; there's slender laud

Ascribed you for assisting eighty years  
To pull his death on such a man; fates shears

The life-cord prompt enough whose last  
fine thread

You fritter: so, presiding his board-head,  
The old smile, your assurance all went well

With Friedrich (as if he were like to tell!)  
In rushed (a plan contrived before) our friends,

Made some pretence at fighting, some  
amends

For the shame done his eighty years—  
(apart

The principle, none found it in his heart  
To be much angry with Taurello)—gained

Their galleys with the prize, and what remained

But carry him to Venice for a show?  
—Set him, as 'twere, down gently—free to go

His gait, inspect our square, pretend observe

The swallows soaring their eternal curve  
'Twixt Theodore and Mark, if citizens

Gathered importunately, fives and tens,  
To point their children the Magnifico,

All but a monarch once in firm-land, go  
His gait among them now—'it took, indeed,

'Fully this Ecelin to supersede  
'That man,' remarked the seniors. Singular!

Sordello's inability to bar  
Rivals the stage, that evening, mainly brought

About his strange disbelief that aught

Was ever to be done,—this thrust the  
Twain

Under Taurello's tutelage,—whom, brain  
And heart and hand, he forthwith in one  
rod

Indissolubly bound to baffle God  
Who loves the world—and thus allowed  
the thin

Grey wizened dwarfish devil Ecelin,  
And massy-muscled big-boned Alberic  
(Mere man, alas!) to put his problem quick  
To demonstration—prove wherever's will  
To do, there's plenty to be done, or ill  
Or good. Anointed, then, to rend and rip—  
Kings of the gag and flesh-hook, screw and  
whip,

They plagued the world: a touch of Hilde-  
brand  
(So far from obsolete!) made Lombards  
band

Together, cross their coats as for Christ's  
cause,  
And saving Milan win the world's ap-  
plause.

Ecelin perished: and I think grass grew  
Never so pleasant as in Valley Rù  
By San Zenon where Alberic in turn  
Saw his exasperated captors burn  
Seven children and their mother; then, re-  
galed

So far, tied on to a wild horse, was traile'd  
To death through raunce and bramble-  
bush. I take

God's part and testify that 'mid the brake  
Wild o'er his castle on the pleasant knoll,  
You hear its one tower left, a belfry, toll—  
The earthquake spared it last year, laying  
flat

The modern church beneath,—no harm in  
that!

Chirrup the contumacious grasshopper,  
Rustles the lizard and the cushats chirre  
Above the ravage: there, at deep of day  
A week since, heard I the old Canon say  
He saw with his own eyes a barrow burst  
And Alberic's huge skeleton unheard  
Only five years ago. He added, 'June's  
'The month for carding off our first  
cocoons

'The silkworms fabricate'—a double  
news,

Nor he nor I could tell the worthier.  
Choose!

And Naddo gone, all's gone; not  
Eglamor!

Believe, I knew the face I waited for,  
A guest my spirit of the golden courts!  
Oh strange to see how, despite ill-reports,  
Disuse, some wear of years, that face re-  
tained

Its joyous look of love! Suns waxed and  
waned,

And still my spirit held an upward flight,  
Spiral on spiral, gyres of life and light

More and more gorgeous—ever that face  
there

The last admitted! crossed, too, with some  
care

As perfect triumph were not sure for all,  
But, on a few, enduring damp must fall,  
—A transient struggle, haply a painful  
sense

Of the inferior nature's clinging—whence  
Slight starting tears easily wiped away,  
Fine jealousies soon stifled in the play  
Of irrepressible admiration—not  
Aspiring, all considered, to their lot  
Who ever, just as they prepare ascend  
Spiral on spiral, wish thee well, impend  
Thy frank delight at their exclusive track,  
That upturned fervid face and hair put  
back!

Is there no more to say? He of the  
rhymes—

Many a tale, of this retreat betimes,  
Was born: Sordello died at once for men?  
The Chroniclers of Mantua tired their pen  
Telling how *Sordello Prince Visconti* saved  
Mantua, and elsewhere notably behaved—  
Who thus, by fortune ordering events,  
Passed with posterity, to all intents,  
For just the god he never could become.  
As Knight, Bard, Gallant, men were never  
dumb

In praise of him: while what he should have  
been,

Could be, and was not—the one step too  
mean

For him to take,—we suffer at this day  
Because of: Ecelin had pushed away  
Its chance ere Dante could arrive and take  
That step Sordello spurned, for the world's  
sake:

He did much—but Sordello's chance was  
gone.

Thus, had Sordello dared that step alone,  
Apollo had been compassed: 'twas a fit  
He wished should go to him, not he to it  
—As one content to merely be supposed  
Singing or fighting elsewhere, while he  
dozed

Really at home—one who was chiefly glad  
To have achieved the few real deeds he had,  
Because that way assured they were not  
worth

Doing, so spared from doing them hence-  
forth—

A tree that covets fruitage and yet tastes  
Never itself, itself. Had he embraced  
Their cause then, men had plucked Hes-  
perian fruit

And, praising that, just thrown him in to  
boot

All he was anxious to appear, but scarce  
Solicitous to be. A sorry farce  
Such life is, after all! Cannot I say  
He lived for some one better thing? this  
way.—

Lo, on a heathy brown and nameless hill  
 By sparkling Asolo, in mist and chill,  
 Morning just up, higher and higher runs  
 A child barefoot and rosy. See! the sun's  
 On the square castle's inner-court's low  
 wall  
 Like the chine of some extinct animal  
 Half turned to earth and flowers; and  
 through the haze  
 (Save where some slender patches of grey  
 maize  
 Are to be overleaped) that boy has crossed  
 The whole hill-side of dew and powder-  
 frost  
 Matting the balm and mountain camo-  
 mile.  
 Up and up goes he, singing all the while  
 Some unintelligible words to beat  
 The lark, God's poet, swooning at his feet,  
 So worsted is he at the few fine locks  
 'Stained like pale honey oozed from top-  
 most rocks'

'Sun-blanch'd the livelong summer,'—all  
 that's left  
 Of the Goito lay! And thus bereft,  
 Sleep and forget, Sordello! In effect  
 He sleeps, the feverish poet—I suspect  
 Not utterly companionless; but, friends,  
 Wake up! The ghost's gone, and the story  
 ends  
 I'd fain hope, sweetly; seeing, peri or  
 ghoul,  
 That spirits are conjectured fair or foul,  
 Evil or good, judicious authors think,  
 According as they vanish in a stink  
 Or in a perfume. Friends, be frank! yes snuff  
 Civet, I warrant. Really? Like enough!  
 Merely the savour's rareness; any nose  
 May ravage with impunity a rose:  
 Rifle a musk-pod and 'twill ache like yours!  
 I'd tell you that some pungency ensures  
 An after-gust, but that were overbold.  
 Who would has heard Sordello's story  
 told.

## PIPPA PASSES

A DRAMA

1841

I DEDICATE MY BEST INTENTIONS, IN THIS POEM,  
 ADMIRINGLY TO THE AUTHOR OF 'ION,'  
 AFFECTIONATELY TO MR. SERGEANT TALFOURD

R. B.

LONDON: 1841

### PERSONS

PIPPA,  
 OTTIMA,  
 SEBALD,  
*Foreign Students.*

GOTTLIEB,  
 SCHRAMM,  
 JULES,  
 PHENE,  
*Austrian Police.*

BLUPHOCKS,  
 LUIGI and his Mother,  
*Poor Girls.*  
 MONSIGNOR and his Attendants.

### INTRODUCTION

NEW YEAR'S DAY AT ASOLO IN THE  
 TREVISAN

SCENE.—*A large mean airy chamber. A  
 girl, PIPPA, from the Silk-mills, spring-  
 ing out of bed.*

DAY!

Faster and more fast,  
 O'er night's brim, day boils at last:  
 Boils, pure gold, o'er the cloud-cup's brim  
 Where spurting and suppressed it lay,  
 For not a froth-flake touched the rim  
 Of yonder gap in the solid gray  
 Of the eastern cloud, an hour away;  
 But forth one wavelet, then another,  
 curled,  
 Till the whole sunrise, not to be suppressed,  
 Rose, reddened, and its seething breast  
 Flickered in bounds, grew gold, then over-  
 flowed the world.

Oh, Day, if I squander a wavelet of thee,  
 A mite of my twelve hours' treasure,  
 The least of thy gazes or glances,  
 (Be they grants thou art bound to or gifts  
 above measure)  
 One of thy choices or one of thy chances,  
 (Be they tasks God imposed thee or freaks  
 at thy pleasure)  
 —My Day, if I squander such labour or  
 leisure,  
 Then shame fall on Asolo, mischief on  
 me!  
 Thy long blue solemn hours serenely flow-  
 ing,  
 Whence earth, we feel, gets steady help and  
 good—  
 Thy fitful sunshine-minutes, coming, go-  
 ing,  
 As if earth turned from work in gamesome  
 mood—

## PIPPA PASSES

All shall be mine! But thou must treat me  
not

As prosperous ones are treated, those who  
live

At hand here, and enjoy the higher lot,  
In readiness to take what thou wilt give,  
And free to let alone what thou refusest;  
For, Day, my holiday, if thou ill-usest  
Me, who am only Pippa,—old-year's  
sorrow,

Cast off last night, will come again to-  
morrow:

Whereas, if thou prove gentle, I shall  
borrow

Sufficient strength of thee for new-year's  
sorrow.

All other men and women that this earth  
Belongs to, who all days alike possess,  
Make general plenty cure particular  
dearth,

Get more joy one way, if another, less:  
Thou art my single day, God lends to  
leaven

What were all earth else, with a feel of  
heaven,—

Sole light that helps me through the year,  
thy sun's!

Try now! Take Asolo's Four Happiest  
Ones—

And let thy morning rain on that superb  
Great haughty Ottima; can rain disturb  
Her Sebald's homage? All the while thy  
rain

Beats fiercest on her shrub-house window-  
pane,

He will but press the closer, breathe more  
warm

Against her cheek; how should she mind  
the storm?

And, morning past, if mid-day shed a  
gloom

O'er Jules and Phene,—what care bride  
and groom

Save for their dear selves? 'Tis their  
marriage-day;

And while they leave church and go home  
their way,

Hand clasping hand, within each breast  
would be

Sunbeams and pleasant weather spite of  
thee.

Then, for another trial, obscure thy eve  
With mist,—will Luigi and his mother  
grieve—

The lady and her child, unmatched, for-  
sooth,

She in her age, as Luigi in his youth,  
For true content? The cheerful town,  
warm, close

And safe, the sooner that thou art morose,  
Receives them. And yet once again, out-  
break

In storm at night on Monsignor, they  
make

Such stir about,—whom they expect from  
Rome

To visit Asolo, his brother's home,  
And say here masses proper to release  
A soul from pain,—what storm dares hurt  
his peace?

Calm would he pray, with his own thoughts  
to ward

Thy thunder off, nor want the angels'  
guard.

But Pippa—just one such mischance  
would spoil

Her day that lightens the next twelve-  
month's toil

At wearisome silk-winding, coil on coil!  
And here I let time slip for nought!

Aha, you foolhardy sunbeam, caught  
With a single splash from my ewer!

You that would mock the best pursuer,  
Was my basin over-deep?

One splash of water ruins you asleep,  
And up, up, fleet your brilliant bits

Wheeling and counterwheeling,  
Reeling, broken beyond healing:

Now grow together on the ceiling!  
That will task your wits.

Whoever it was quenched fire first, hoped  
to see

Morsel after morsel flee  
As merrily, as giddily . . .

Meantime, what lights my sunbeam on,  
Where settles by degrees the radiant  
cripple?

Oh, is it surely blown, my martagon?  
New-blown and ruddy as St. Agnes' nipple,

Plump as the flesh-bunch on some Turk  
bird's poll!

Be sure if corals, branching 'neath the  
ripple

Of ocean, bud there,—fairies watch unroll  
Such turban-flowers; I say, such lamps

disperse  
Thick red flame through that dusk green  
universe!

I am queen of thee, floweret!  
And each fleshy blossom

Preserve I not—(safer  
Than leaves that embower it,

Or shells that embosom)  
—From weevil and chafer?

Laugh through my pane then; solicit the  
bee;

Gibe him, be sure; and, in midst of thy  
glee

Love thy queen, worship me!

—Worship whom else? For am I not, this  
day,

Whate'er I please? What shall I please to-  
day?

My morn, noon, eve and night—how  
spend my day?

To-morrow I must be Pippa who winds  
silk,

The whole year round, to earn just bread  
and milk:

But, this one day, I have leave to go,  
And play out my fancy's fullest games;  
I may fancy all day—and it shall be so—  
That I taste of the pleasures, am called by  
the names  
Of the Happiest Four in our Asolo!

See! Up the hill-side yonder, through the  
morning,  
Some one shall love me, as the world calls  
love:

I am no less than Ottima, take warning!  
The gardens, and the great stone house  
above,  
And other house for shrubs, all glass in  
front,  
Are mine; where Sebald steals, as he is  
wont,

To court me, while old Luca yet reposes:  
And therefore, "all the shrub-house door  
uncloses,

I... what now?—give abundant cause for  
prate

About me—Ottima, I mean—of late,  
Too bold, too confident she'll still face  
down

The spitefullest of talkers in our town.  
How we talk in the little town below!

But love, love, love—there's better love,  
I know!

This foolish love was only day's first offer;  
I choose my next love to defy the scoffer:  
For do not our Bride and Bridegroom sally  
Out of Possagno church at noon?

Their house looks over Orcana valley:  
Why should not I be the bride as soon  
As Ottima? For I saw, beside,  
Arrive last night that little bride—

Saw, if you call it seeing her, one flash  
Of the pale snow-pure cheek and black  
bright tresses,

Blacker than all except the black eyelash;  
I wonder she contrives those lids no  
dresses!

—So strict was she, the veil  
Should cover close her pale

Pure cheeks—a bride to look at and scarce  
touch,

Scarce touch, remember, Jules! For are  
not such

Used to be tended, flower-like, every  
feature,

As if one's breath would fray the lily of a  
creature?

A soft and easy life these ladies lead:  
Whiteness in us were wonderful indeed.

Oh, save that brow its virgin dimness,  
Keep that foot its lady primness,

Let those ankles never swerve  
From their exquisite reserve,

Yet have to trip along the streets like me,  
All but naked to the knee!

How will she ever grant her Jules a bliss  
So startling as her real first infant kiss?  
Oh, no—not envy, this!

—Not envy, sure!—for if you gave me  
Leave to take or to refuse,  
In earnest, do you think I'd choose  
That sort of new love to enslave me?  
Mine should have lapped me round from  
the beginning;

As little fear of losing it as winning:  
Lovers grow cold, men learn to hate their  
wives,

And only parents' love can last our lives.  
At eve the Son and Mother, gentle pair,  
Commune inside our turret: what prevents  
My being Luigi? While that mossy lair  
Of lizards through the winter-time is  
stirred

With each to each imparting sweet intents  
For this new-year, as brooding bird to  
bird—

(For I observe of late, the evening walk  
Of Luigi and his mother, always ends  
Inside our ruined turret, where they talk,  
Calmer than lovers, yet more kind than  
friends)

—Let me be cared about, kept out of harm,  
And schemed for, safe in love as with a  
charm;

Let me be Luigi! If I only knew  
What was my mother's face—my father,  
too!

Nay, if you come to that, best love of all  
Is God's; then why not have God's love  
befall

Myself as, in the palace by the Dome,  
Monsignor?—who to-night will bless the  
home

Of his dead brother; and God bless in turn  
That heart which beats, those eyes which  
mildly burn

With love for all men! I, to-night at least,  
Would be that holy and beloved priest.

Now wait!—even I already seem to share  
In God's love: what does New-year's hymn  
declare?

What other meaning do these verses bear?

*All service ranks the same with God:  
If now, as formerly he trod  
Paradise, his presence fills  
Our earth, each only as God wills  
Can work—God's puppets, best and worst,  
Are we; there is no last nor first.*

*Say not 'a small event!' Why 'small'?  
Costs it more pain that this, ye call  
A 'great event,' should come to pass,  
Than that? Untwine me from the mass  
Of deeds which make up life, one deed  
Power shall fall short in or exceed!*

And more of it, and more of it!—oh yes—  
I will pass each, and see their happiness,

# PIPPA PASSES

[1

And envy none—being just<sup>as</sup> great, no doubt,  
Useful to men, and dear to God, as they!  
A pretty thing to care about  
So mightily, this single holiday!  
But let the sun shine! Wherefore repine?  
—With thee to lead me, O Day of mine,  
Down the grass path grey with dew,  
Under the pine-wood, blind with boughs,  
Where the swallow never flew  
Nor yet cicala dared carouse—  
No, dared carouse! [*She enters the street.*]

## I.—MORNING

SCENE.—*Up the Hill-side, inside the Shrub-house. LUCA's wife, OTTIMA, and her paramour, the German SEBALD.*

*Seb. [sings].*

*Let the watching lids wink!  
Day's a-blaze with eyes, think!  
Deep into the night, drink!*

*Otti.* Night? Such may be your Rhine-land nights perhaps;  
But this blood-red beam through the shutter's chink  
—We call such light, the morning: let us see!

Mind how you grope your way, though!  
How these tall  
Naked geraniums straggle! Push the lattice  
Behind that frame!—Nay, do I bid you?—

*Sebald,*  
It shakes the dust down on me! Why, of course  
The slide-bolt catches. Well, are you content.

Or must I find you something else to spoil?  
Kiss and be friends, my *Sebald*! Is't full morning?

Oh, don't speak then!

*Seb.* Ay, thus it used to be.  
Ever your house was, I remember, shut  
Till mid-day; I observed that, as I strolled  
On mornings through the vale here; country girls

Were noisy, washing garments in the brook,  
Hinds drove the slow white oxen up the hills:

But no, your house was mute, would ope no eye.

And wisely: you were plotting one thing there,

Nature, another outside. I looked up—  
Rough whitewood shutters, rusty iron bars,  
Silent as death, blind in a flood of light.  
Oh, I remember!—and the peasants laughed

And said, 'The old man sleeps with the young wife.'

This house was his, this chair, this window—his.

*Otti.* Ah, the clear morning! I can see St. Mark's;

That black streak is the belfry. Stop: Vicenza

Should lie... there's Padua, plain enough, that blue!

Look o'er my shoulder, follow my finger! *Seb.* Morning?

It seems to me a night with a sun added. Where's dew, where's freshness? That bruised plant, I bruised

In getting through the lattice yestereve, Droops as it did. See, here's my elbow's mark

I' the dust o' the sill.

*Otti.* Oh, shut the lattice, pray!

*Seb.* Let me lean out. I cannot scent blood here,

Foul as the morn may be.

There, shut the world out! How do you feel now, *Ottima*? There,

curse The world and all outside! Let us throw

off This mask: how do you bear yourself?

Let's out

With all of it.

*Otti.* Best never speak of it.

*Seb.* Best speak again and yet again of it. Till words cease to be more than words.

'His blood,'

For instance—let those two words mean

'His blood'

And nothing more. Notice, I'll say them now,

'His blood.'

*Otti.* Assuredly if I repented

The deed—

*Seb.* Repent? Who should repent, or why?

What puts that in your head? Did I once say

That I repented?

*Otti.* No, I said the deed...

*Seb.* 'The deed' and 'the event'—just now it was

'Our passion's fruit'—the devil take such cant!

Say, once and always, Luca was a wittol, I am his cut-throat, you are...

*Otti.* Here's the wine; I brought it when we left the house above, And glasses too—wine of both sorts.

Black? White then?

*Seb.* But am not I his cut-throat? What are you?

*Otti.* There trudges on his business from the Duomo

Benet the Capuchin, with his brown hood And bare feet; always in one place at church,

Close under the stone wall by the south entry

I take to take him for a brown cold piece

Of the wall's self, as out of it he rose  
To let me pass—at first, I say, I used:  
Now, so has that dumb figure fastened on  
me,

I rather should account the plastered wall  
A piece of him, so chilly does it strike.  
This, Sebald?

*Seb.* No, the white wine—the  
white wine!

Well, Ottima, I promised no new year  
Should rise on us the ancient shameful  
way;

Nor does it rise. Pour on! To your black  
eyes!

Do you remember last damned New  
Year's day?

*Otti.* You brought those foreign prints.  
We looked at them

Over the wine and fruit. I had to scheme  
To get him from the fire. Nothing but saying

His own set wants the proof-mark, roused  
him up

To hunt them out.

*Seb.* 'Faith, he is not alive  
To fondle you before my face.

*Otti.* Do you  
Fondle me then! Who means to take your  
life

For that, my Sebald?

*Seb.* Hark you, Ottima!  
One thing to guard against. We'll not  
make much

One of the other—that is, not make more  
Parade of warmth, childish officious coil,  
Than yesterday: as if, sweet, I supposed  
Proof upon proof were needed now, now

first,  
To show I love you—yes, still love you—  
love you

In spite of Luca and what's come to him  
—Sure sign we had him ever in our  
thoughts,

White sneering old reproachful face and  
all!

We'll even quarrel, love, at times, as if  
We still could lose each other, were not tied  
By this: conceive you?

*Otti.* Love!

*Seb.* Not tied so sure.  
Because though I was wrought upon, have  
struck

His insolence back into him—am I  
So surely yours?—therefore forever yours?

*Otti.* Love, to be wise, (one counsel  
pays another)

Should we have—months ago, when first  
we loved,

For instance that May morning we, two  
stole

Under the green ascent of sycamores—  
If we had come upon a thing like that

Suddenly . . .

*Seb.* 'A thing'—there again—'a thing!'

*Otti.* Then, 'Venus' body, had we come  
upon

My husband Luca Gaddi's murdered  
corpse

Within there, at his couch-foot, covered  
close—

Would you have pored upon it? Why per-  
sist

In poring now upon it? For 'tis here  
As much as there in the deserted house:

You cannot rid your eyes of it. For me,  
Now he is dead I hate him worse: I hate . . .

Dare you stay here? I would go back and  
hold

His two dead hands, and say, 'I hate you  
worse,

'Luca, than . . .'  
*Seb.* Off, off—take your hands

off mine,  
'Tis the hot evening—off! oh, morning is it?

*Otti.* There's one thing must be done;  
you know what thing.

Come in and help to carry. We may sleep  
Anywhere in the whole wide house to-  
night.

*Seb.* What would come, think you, if  
we let him lie

Just as he is? Let him lie there until  
The angels take him! He is turned by this

Off from his face beside, as you will see.

*Otti.* This dusty pane might serve for  
looking glass.

Three, four—four grey hairs! Is it so you  
said

Aplait of hair should wave across my neck?  
No—this way.

*Seb.* Ottima, I would give your neck,  
Each splendid shoulder, both those breasts

of yours,  
That this were undone! Killing! Kill the

world  
So Luca lives again!—ay, lives to sputter

His fulsome dotage on you—yes, and feign  
Surprise that I return at eve to sup,

When all the morning I was loitering here—  
Bid me despatch my business and begone.

I would . . .

*Otti.* See!

*Seb.* No, I'll finish. Do you think  
I fear to speak the bare truth once for all?

All we have talked of, is, at bottom, fine  
To suffer; there's a recompense in guilt;

One must be venturesome and fortunate:  
What is one young for, else? In age we'll

sigh  
O'er the wild reckless wicked days flown  
over;

Still, we have lived: the vice was in its  
place.

But to have eaten Luca's bread, have worn  
His clothes, have felt his money swell my

purse—  
Do lovers in romances sin that way?

Why, I was starving when I used to call



# PIPPA PASSES

[1

And teach you music, starving while you  
plucked me  
These flowers to smell!

*Otti.* My poor lost friend!  
*Seb.* He gave me

Life, nothing less: what if he did reproach  
My perfidy, and threaten, and do more—  
Had he no right? What was to wonder at?  
He sat by us at table quietly:  
Why must you lean across till our cheeks  
touched?

Could he do less than make pretence to  
strike?

'Tis not the crime's sake—I'd commit ten  
crimes

Greater, to have this crime wiped out, un-  
done!

And you—O how feel you? Feel you for  
me?

*Otti.* Well then, I love you better now  
than ever,

And best (look at me while I speak to  
you)—

Best for the crime; nor do I grieve, in  
truth,

This mask, this simulated ignorance,  
This affectation of simplicity,

Falls off our crime; this naked crime of  
ours

May not now be looked over: look it  
down!

Great? let it be great; but the joys it  
brought,

Pay they or no its price? Come: they or it!  
Speak not! The past, would you give up

the past

Such as it is, pleasure and crime together?  
Give up that noon I owned my love for you?

The garden's silence: even the single bee  
Persisting in his toil, suddenly stopped,

And where he hid you only could surmise  
By some campanula chalice set a-swing.

Who stammered—'Yes, I love you'?

*Seb.* And I drew  
Back; put far back your face with both my

hands

Lest you should grow too full of me—your  
face

So seemed athirst for my whole soul and  
body!

*Otti.* And when I ventured to receive  
you here,

Made you steal hither in the mornings—  
*Seb.* When

I used to look up 'neath the shrub-house  
here,

Till the red fire on its glazed windows  
spread

To a yellow haze?  
*Otti.* Ah—my sign was, the sun

Inflamed the sere side of yon chestnut-tree  
Nipped by the first frost.

*Seb.* You would always laugh  
At my wet boots: I had to stride thro' grass

Over my ankles.

*Otti.* Then our crowning night!

*Seb.* The July night?

*Otti.* The day of it too, Sebald!

When heaven's pillars seemed o'erbowed  
with heat,

Its black-blue canopy suffered descend  
Close on us both, to weigh down each to

each,

And smother up all life except our life.

So lay we till the storm came.

*Seb.* How it came!  
*Otti.* Buried in woods we lay, you re-

collect;

Swift ran the searching tempest overhead;  
And ever and anon some bright white

shaft

Burned thro' the pine-tree roof, here  
burned and there.

As if God's messenger thro' the close wood  
screen

Plunged and replunged his weapon at a  
venture,

Feeling for guilty thee and me: then broke  
The thunder like a whole sea overhead—

*Seb.* Yes!

*Otti.* —While I stretched myself  
upon you, hands

To hands, my mouth to your hot mouth,  
and shook

All my locks loose, and covered you with  
them—

You, Sebald, the same you!

*Seb.* Slower, Ottima!

*Otti.* And as we lay—

*Seb.* Less vehemently! Love me!

Forgive me! Take not words, mere words,  
to heart!

Your breath is worse than wine! Breathe  
slow, speak slow!

Do not lean on me!

*Otti.* Sebald, as we lay,

Rising and falling only with our pants,  
Who said, 'Let death come now! 'Tis

right to die!

'Right to be punished! Nought completes  
such bliss

'But woe!' Who said that?

*Seb.* How did we ever rise?

Was't that we slept? Why did it end?

*Otti.* I felt you

Taper into a point the ruffled ends

Of my loose locks 'twixt both your humid  
lips.

My hair is fallen now: knot it again!

*Seb.* I kiss you now, dear Ottima, now  
and now!

This way? Will you forgive me—be once  
more

My great queen?

*Otti.* Bind it thrice about my brow;

Crown me your queen, your spirit's arbi-  
tress,

Magnificent in sin. Say that!

*Seb.* I crown you  
My great white queen, my spirit's arbitress,  
Magnificent . . .  
[From without is heard the voice of PIPPA,  
singing—

*The year's at the spring  
And day's at the morn;  
Morning's at seven;  
The hill-side's dew-pearled;  
The lark's on the wing;  
The snail's on the thorn;  
God's in his heaven—  
All's right with the world!*

[PIPPA passes.

*Seb.* God's in his heaven! Do you hear  
that? Who spoke?  
You, you spoke!

*Otti.* Oh—that little ragged girl!  
She must have rested on the step; we give  
them

But this one holiday the whole year round.  
Did you ever see our silk-mills—their in-  
side?

There are ten silk-mills now belong to you.  
She stoops to pick my double heartsease  
. . . Sh!

She does not hear: call you out louder!

*Seb.* Leave me!  
Go, get your clothes on—dress those  
shoulders!

*Otti.* Sebald?

*Seb.* Wipe off that paint! I hate you.

*Otti.* Miserable!

*Seb.* My God, and she is emptied of it  
now!

Outright now!—how miraculously gone  
All of the grace—had she not strange grace  
once?

Why, the blank cheek hangs listless as it  
likes,

No purpose holds the features up together,  
Only the cloven brow and puckered chin  
Stay in their places: and the very hair,  
That seemed to have a sort of life in it,  
Drops, a dead web!

*Otti.* Speak to me—not of me!

*Seb.*—That round great full-orbed face,  
where not an angle

Broke the delicious indolence—all  
broken!

*Otti.* To me—not of me! Ungrateful,  
perjured cheat!

A coward too: but ingrate's worse than all.  
Begger—my slave—a fawning, cringing  
lie!

Leave me! Betray me! I can see your  
drift!

A lie that walks and eats and drinks!

*Seb.* My God!

Those morbid olive faultless shoulder-  
blades—

I should have known there was no blood  
beneath!

*Otti.* You hate me then? You hate me  
then?

*Seb.* To think

She would succeed in her absurd attempt,  
And fascinate by sinning, show herself  
Superior—guilt from its excess superior  
To innocence! That little peasant's voice  
Has righted all again. Though I be lost,  
I know which is the better, never fear,  
Of vice or virtue, purity or lust,  
Nature or trick! I see what I have done,  
Entirely now! Oh I am proud to feel  
Such torments—let the world take credit  
thence—

I, having done my deed, pay too its price!  
I hate, hate—curse you! God's in his  
heaven!

*Otti.* —Me!

Me! no, no, Sebald, not yourself—kill  
me!

Mine is the whole crime. Do but kill me—  
then

Yourself—then—presently—first hear me  
speak!

I always meant to kill myself—wait, you!  
Lean on my breast—not as a breast; don't  
love me

The more because you lean on me, my  
own

Hear's Sebald! There, there, both deaths  
presently!

*Seb.* My brain is drowned now—quite  
drowned: all I feel

Is . . . is, at swift-recurring intervals,  
A hurry-down within me, as of waters  
Loosened to smother up some ghastly  
pit:

There they go—whirls from a black fiery  
sea!

*Otti.* Not me—to him, O God, be merci-  
ful!

*Talk by the way, while PIPPA is passing  
from the hill-side to Orcana. Foreign  
Students of painting and sculpture,  
from Venice, assembled opposite the  
house of JULES, a young French statu-  
ary, at Possagno.*

*1st Stud.* Attention! My own post is  
beneath this window, but the pomegranate  
clump yonder will hide three or four of you  
with a little squeezing, and Schramm and  
his pipe must lie flat in the balcony. Four,  
five—who's a defaulter? We want every-  
body, for Jules must not be suffered to hurt  
his bride when the jest's found out.

*2nd Stud.* All here! Only our poet's  
away—never having much meant to be  
present, moonstrike him! The airs of that  
fellow, that Giovacchino! He was in vio-  
lent love with himself, and had a fair pros-  
pect of thriving in his suit, so unmolested  
was it,—when suddenly a woman falls in  
love with him, too; and out of pure jealousy

he takes himself off to Trieste, immortal poem and all: whereto is this prophetic epigraph appended already, as Bluphocks assures me,—‘*Here a mammoth-poem lies, Fouled to death by butterflies.*’ His own fault, the simpleton! Instead of cramp couplets, each like a knife in your entrails, he should write, says Bluphocks, both classically and intelligibly.—*Esculapius, an Epic. Catalogue of the drugs: Hebe’s plaister—One strip Cools your lip. Phæbus’ emulsion—One bottle Clears your throatle. Mercury’s bolus—One box Cures . . .*

3rd Stud. Subside, my fine fellow! If the marriage was over by ten o’clock, Jules will certainly be here in a minute with his bride.

2nd Stud. Good!—only, so should the poet’s muse have been universally acceptable, says Bluphocks, *et canibus nostris* . . . and Delia not better known to our literary dogs than the boy Giovacchino!

1st Stud. To the point, now. Where’s Gottlieb, the new-comer? Oh,—listen, Gottlieb, to what has called down this piece of friendly vengeance on Jules, of which we now assemble to witness the winding-up. We are all agreed, all in a tale, observe, when Jules shall burst out on us in a fury by and by: I am spokesman—the verses that are to undeceive Jules bear my name of Lutwyche—but each professes himself alike insulted by this strutting stone-squarer, who came alone from Paris to Munich, and thence with a crowd of us to Venice and Possagno here, but proceeds in a day or two alone again—oh, alone indubitably!—to Rome and Florence. He, forsooth, take up his portion with these dissolute, brutalized, heartless bunglers!—so he was heard to call us all: now, is Schramm brutalized, I should like to know? Am I heartless?

Gott. Why, somewhat heartless; for, suppose Jules a coxcomb as much as you choose, still, for this mere coxcombry, you will have brushed off—what do folks style it?—the bloom of his life. Is it too late to alter? These love-letters now, you call his—I can’t laugh at them.

4th Stud. Because you never read the sham letters of our inditing which drew forth these.

Gott. His discovery of the truth will be fruitful.

4th Stud. That’s the joke. But you should have joined us at the beginning: there’s no doubt he loves the girl—loves a model he might hire by the hour!

Gott. See here! ‘He has been accused,’ he writes, ‘to have Canova’s women about him, in stone, and the world’s women beside him, in flesh; these being as much below, as those above, his

‘soul’s aspiration: but now he is to have ‘the reality.’ There you laugh again! I say, you wipe off the very dew of his youth.

1st Stud. Schramm! (Take the pipe out of his mouth, somebody!) Will Jules lose the bloom of his youth?

Schramm. Nothing worth keeping is ever lost in this world: look at a blossom—it drops presently, having done its service and lasted its time; but fruits succeed, and where would be the blossom’s place could it continue? As well affirm that your eye is no longer in your body, because its earliest favourite, whatever it may have first loved to look on, is dead and done with—as that any affection is lost to the soul when its first object, whatever happened first to satisfy it, is superseded in due course. Keep but ever looking, whether with the body’s eye or the mind’s, and you will soon find something to look on! Has a man done wondering at women?—there follow men, dead and alive, to wonder at. Has he done wondering at men?—there’s God to wonder at: and the faculty of wonder may be, at the same time, old and tired enough with respect to its first object, and yet young and fresh sufficiently, so far as concerns its novel one. Thus . . .

1st Stud. Put Schramm’s pipe into his mouth again! There, you see! Well, this Jules . . . a wretched fribble—oh, I watched his disportings at Possagno, the other day! Canova’s gallery—you know: there he marches first resolutely past great works by the dozen without vouchsafing an eye: all at once he stops full at the *Psiche-fanciulla*—cannot pass that old acquaintance without a nod of encouragement—‘In your new place, beauty? Then behave yourself as well here as at Munich—I see you!’ Next he posts himself deliberately before the unfinished *Pietà* for half an hour without moving, till up he starts of a sudden, and thrusts his very nose into—I say, into—the group; by which gesture you are informed that precisely the sole point he had not fully mastered in Canova’s practice was a certain method of using the drill in the articulation of the knee-joint—and that, likewise, has he mastered at length! Good-bye, therefore, to poor Canova—whose gallery no longer needs detain his successor Jules, the predestinated novel thinker in marble!

5th Stud. Tell him about the women: go on to the women!

1st Stud. Why, on that matter he could never be supercilious enough. How should we be other (he said) than the poor devils you see, with those debasing habits we cherish? He was not to wallow in that mire, at least: he would wait, and love only at the proper time, and meanwhile put up

with the *Psiche-fanciulla*. Now, I happened to hear of a young Greek—real Greek girl at Malantocco; a true Islander, do you see, with Alciphron's 'hair like sea-moss'—Schrämm knows!—white and quiet as an apparition, and fourteen years old at farthest,—a daughter of Natalia, so she swears—that hāg Natalia, who helps us to models at three *lire* an hour. We selected this girl for the heroine of our jest. So first, Jules received a scented letter—somebody had seen his Tydeus at the Academy, and my picture was nothing to it: a profound Admirer bade him persevere—would make herself known to him ere long. (Paolina, my little friend of the *Fenice*, transcribes divinely.) And in due time, the mysterious correspondent gave certain hints of her peculiar charms—the pale cheeks, the black hair—whatever, in short, had struck us in our Malamocco model: We retained her name, too—Phene, which is, by interpretation, sea-eagle. Now, think of Jules finding himself distinguished from the herd of us by such a creature! In his very first answer he proposed marrying his monitress: and fancy us over these letters, two, three times a day, to receive and despatch! I concocted the main of it: relations were in the way—secrecy must be observed—in fine, would he wed her on trust, and only speak to her when they were indissolubly united? St—st—Here they come!

6th Stud. Both of them! Heaven's love, speak softly, speak within yourselves!

5th Stud. Look at the bridegroom! Half his hair in storm and half in calm,—patted down over the left temple,—like a frothy cup one blows on to cool it: and the same old blouse that he murders the marble in.

2nd Stud. Not a rich vest like yours, Hannibal Scratchy!—rich, that your face may the better set it off.

6th Stud. And the bride! Yes, sure enough, our Phene! Should you have known her in her clothes? How magnificently pale!

Gott. She does not also take it for earnest, I hope?

1st Stud. Oh, Natalia's concern, that is! We settle with Natalia.

6th Stud. She does not speak—has evidently let out no word. The only thing is, will she equally remember the rest of her lesson, and repeat correctly all those verses which are to break the secret to Jules?

Gott. How he gazes on her! Pity—pity!

1st Stud. They go in: now, silence! You three,—not nearer the window, mind, than that pomegranate: just where the little girl, who a few minutes ago passed us singing, is seated!

## II.—NOON

SCENE.—*Over Orcana. The house of JULES, who crosses its threshold with PHENE: she is silent, on which JULES begins—*

Do not die, Phene! I am yours now, you Are mine now; let fate reach me how she likes,

If you'll not die: so, never die! Sit here—My work-room's single seat. I over-lean This length of hair and lustrous front; they turn

Like an entire flower upward: eyes, lips, last Your chin—no, last your throat turns: 'tis their scent

Pulls down my face upon you. Nay, look ever

This one way till I change, grow you—I could

Change into you, beloved!

You by me, And I by you; this is your hand in mine, And side by side we sit: all's true. Thank God!

I have spoken: speak you!

O my life to come! My Tydeus must be carved that's there in clay;

Yet how be carved, with you about the room?

Where must I place you? When I think that once

This room-full of rough block-work seemed my heaven

Without you! Shall I ever work again, Get fairly into my old ways again,

Bid each conception stand while, trait by trait,

My hand transfers its lineaments to stone? Will my mere fancies live near you, their truth—

The live truth, passing and repassing me, Sitting beside me?

Now speak!

Only first, See, all your letters! Was't not well contrived?

Their hiding-place is Psyche's robe; she keeps

Your letters next her skin: which drops out foremost?

Ah,—this that swam down like a first moonbeam

Into my world!

Again those eyes complete Their melancholy survey, sweet and slow, Of all my room holds; to return and rest On me, with pity, yet some wonder too:

As if God bade some spirit plague a world, And this were the one moment of surprise

And sorrow while she took her station, pausing

O'er what she sees, finds good, and must destroy!

What gaze you at? Those? Books, I told  
you of;

Let your first word to me rejoice them, too:  
This minion, a Coluthus, writ in red  
Bistre and azure by Bessarion's scribe—  
Read this line . . . no, shame—Homer's be  
the Greek

First breathed me from the lips of my  
Greek girl!

This Odyssey in coarse black vivid type  
With faded yellow blossoms 'twixt page  
and page,

To mark great places with due gratitude;  
*'He said, and on Antinous directed*

*'A bitter shaft' . . . a flower blots out the rest*  
Again upon your search? Mystatues, then!  
—Ah, do not mind that—better that will  
look

When cast in bronze—an Almain Kaiser,  
that,

Swart-green and gold, with truncheon  
based on hip.

This, rather, turn to! What, unrecognized?  
I thought you would have seen that here  
you sit

As I imagined you,—Hippolyta,  
Naked upon her bright Numidian horse.  
Recall you this then? 'Carve in bold re-  
lief'—

So you commanded—'carve, against I  
come,

'A Greek, in Athens, as our fashion was,  
'Feasting, bay-filled and thunder-free,  
'Who rises 'neath the lifted myrtle-branch.  
"Praise those who slew Hipparchus!" cry  
the guests,

"While o'er thy head the singer's myrtle  
waves

"As erst above our champion: stand up,  
all!"

See, I have laboured to express your  
thought.

Quite round, a cluster of mere hands and  
arms,

(Thrust in all senses, all ways, from all  
sides,

Only consenting at the branch's end  
They strain toward) serves for frame to a  
sole face,

The Praiser's, in the centre: who with eyes  
Sightless, so bend they back to light inside  
His brain where visionary forms throng up,  
Sings, minding not that palpitating arch  
Of hands and arms, nor the quick drip of  
wine

From the drenched leaves o'erhead, nor  
crowns cast off,

Violet and parsley crowns to trample on—  
Sings, pausing as the patron-ghosts ap-  
prove,

Devoutly their unconquerable hymn.  
But you must say a 'well' to that—say  
'well!'

Because you gaze—am I fantastic, sweet?

Gaze like my very life's-stuff, marble—  
marbly

Even to the silence! Why, before I found  
The real flesh Phene, I injured myself  
To see, throughout: all nature, varied stuff  
For better nature's birth by means of art:  
With me, each substance tended to one  
form

Of beauty—to the human archetype.  
On every side occurred suggestive germs  
Of that—the tree, the flower—or take the  
fruit,—

Some rosy shape, continuing the peach,  
Curved beewise o'er its bough; as rosy  
limbs,

Depending, nestled in the leaves; and just  
From a cleft rose-peach the whole Dryad  
sprang.

But of the stuffs one can be master of,  
How I divined their capabilities!

From the soft-rinded smoothening facile  
chalk

That yields your outline to the air's em-  
brace,

Half-softened by a halo's pearly gloom;  
Down to the crisp imperious steel, so sure  
To cut its one confided thought clean out  
Of all the world. But marble!—'neath my  
tools

More pliable than jelly—as it were  
Some clear primordial creature dug from  
depths

In the earth's heart, where itself breeds  
itself,

And whence all baser substance may be  
worked;

Refine it off to air, you may,—condense it  
Down to the diamond;—is not metal there,  
When o'er the sudden speck my chisel trips?

—Not flesh, as flake off flake I scale, ap-  
proach,

Lay bare those bluish veins of blood asleep?  
Lurks flame in no strange windings where,  
surprised

By the swift implement sent home at once,  
Flushes and glowings radiate and hover  
About its track?

Phene? what—why is this?  
That whitening cheek, those still dilating  
eyes!

Ah, you will die—I knew that you would  
die!

'Phene begins, on his having long  
remained silent.

Now the end's coming; to be sure, it must  
Have ended sometime! Tush, why need I  
speak

Their foolish speech? I cannot bring to  
mind

One half of it, beside; and do not care  
For old Natalia now, nor any of them.  
Oh, you—what are you?—if I do not try  
To say the words Natalia made me learn,

To please your friends,—it is to keep myself  
Where your voice lifted me, by letting that  
Proceed: but can it? Even you, perhaps,  
Cannot take up, now you have once let fall,  
The music's life, and me along with that—  
No, or you would! We'll stay, then, as we  
are:

Above the world.

You creature with the eyes!  
If I could look for ever up to them,  
As now you let me,—I believe, all sin,  
All memory of wrong done, suffering  
borne,

Would drop down, low and lower, to the  
earth

Whence all that's low comes, and there  
touch and stay

—Never to overtake the rest of me,  
All that, unspotted, reaches up to you,  
Drawn by those eyes! What rises is myself,  
Not me the shame and suffering; but they  
sink,

Are left, I rise above them. Keep me so,  
Above the world!

But you sink, for your eyes  
Are altering—altered! Stay—'I love you,  
love' . . .

I could prevent it if I understood:  
More of your words to me: was't in the tone  
Or the words, your power?

Or stay—I will repeat  
Their speech, if that contents you! Only  
change

No more, and I shall find it presently  
Far back here, in the brain yourself filled up.  
Natalia threatened me that harm should  
follow

Unless I spoke their lesson to the end,  
But harm to me, I thought she meant, not  
you.

Your friends,—Natalia said they were  
your friends

And meant you well,—because, I doubted  
it,

Observing (what was very strange to see)  
On every face, so different in all else,  
The same smile girls like me are used to  
bear,

But never men, men cannot stoop so low;  
Yet your friends, speaking of you, used  
that smile,

That hateful smirk of boundless self-con-  
ceit

Which seems to take possession of the  
world

And make of God a tame confederate,  
Purveyor to their appetites . . . you know!  
But still Natalia said they were your friends,  
And they assented though they smiled the  
more,

And all came round me,—that thin Eng-  
lishman

\*With light lank hair seemed leader of the  
rest;

He held a paper—'What we want,' said he,  
Ending some explanation to his friends—  
'Is something slow, involved and mystical,  
'To hold Jules long in doubt, yet take his  
taste

'And lure him on until, at innermost  
'Where he seeks sweetness' soul, he may  
find—this!

'—As in the apple's core, the noisome fly:  
'For insects on the rind are seen at once,  
'And brushed aside as soon, but this is  
found

'Only when on the lips or bathing tongue.'  
And so he read what I have got by heart:  
I'll speak it,—'Do not die, love! I am  
yours.'

No—is not that, or like that, part of words  
Yourself began by speaking? Strange to  
lose

What cost such pains to learn! Is this more  
right?

*I am a painter who cannot paint;  
In my life, a devil rather than saint;  
In my brain, as poor a creature too:  
No end to all I cannot do!*

*Yet do one thing at least I can—  
Love a man or hate a man*

*Supremely: thus my lore began.  
Through the Valley of Love I went,*

*In the loveliest spot to abide,  
And just on the verge where I pitched my  
tent,*

*I found Hate dwelling beside.  
(Let the Bridegroom ask what the painter  
meant,*

*Of his Bride, of the peerless Bride!)  
And further, I traversed Hate's grove,  
In the hatefullest nook to dwell;*

*But lo, where I flung myself prone,  
couch'd Love*

*Where the shadow threefold fell.  
(The meaning—those black bride's-eyes  
above,*

*Not a painter's lip should tell.)*

'And here,' said he, 'Jules probably will  
ask,

“You have black eyes, Love,—you are,  
sure enough,

“My peerless bride,—then do you tell  
indeed

“What needs some explanation! What  
means this?”

—And I am to go on, without a word—

*So, I grew wise in Love and Hate,  
From simple that I was of late.*

*Once, when I loved, I would enlase  
Breast, eyelids, hands, feet, form and face*

*Of her I loved, in one embrace—  
As if by mere love I could love immensely!*

*Once, when I hated, I would plunge  
My sword, and wipe with the first lunge*

*My foe's whole life out like a sponge—  
As if by mere hate I could hate intensely!*

*But now I am wiser, know better the fashion  
How passion seeks aid from its opposite  
passion:*

*And if I see cause to love more, hate more  
Than ever man loved, ever hated before—  
And seek in the Valley of Love,  
The nest, or the nook in Hate's Grove,  
Where my soul may surely reach  
The essence, nought less, of each,  
The Hate of all Hates, the Love  
Of all Loves, in the Valley or Grove,—  
I find them the very warders  
Each of the other's borders.*

*When I love most, Love is disguised  
In Hate; and when Hate is surprised  
In Love, then I hate most: ask  
How Love smiles through Hate's iron  
casque,  
Hate grins through Love's rose-braided  
mask,—*

*And how, having hated thee,  
I sought long and painfully  
To reach thy heart, nor prick  
The skin but pierce to the quick—  
Ask this, my Jules, and be answered  
straight*

*By thy bride—how the painter Lutwyche  
can hate!*

JULES interposes.

Lutwyche! Who else? But all of them, no  
doubt,

Hated me: they at Venice—presently  
Their turn, however! You I shall not meet:  
If I dreamed, saying this would wake me.

Keep

What's here, the gold—we cannot meet  
again,

Consider! and the money was but meant  
For two years' travel, which is over now,  
All chance or hope or care or need of it.  
This—and what comes from selling these,  
my casts

And books and medals, except . . . let them  
go

Together, so the produce keeps you safe  
Out of Natalia's clutches! If by chance  
(For all's chance here) I should survive the  
gang

At Venice, root out all fifteen of them,  
We might meet somewhere, since the world  
is wide.

[From without is heard the voice of PIPPA,  
singing—

*Give her but a least excuse to love me!*

*When—where—*

*How—can this arm establish her above me,*

*If fortune fixed her as my lady there,*

*There already, to eternally reprove me?*

*('Hist!')—said Kate the Queen;*

*But 'Oh!'—cried the maiden, binding  
her tresses,*

*'Tis only a page that carols unseen,*

*'Crumbling your hounds their messes!')*

*Is she wronged?—To the rescue of her  
honour,*

*My heart!*

*Is she poor?—What costs it to be styled  
a donor?*

*Merely an earth to cleave, a sea to part.  
But that fortune should have thrust all  
this upon her!*

*('Nay, list!')—bade Kate the Queen;  
And still cried the maiden, binding her  
tresses,*

*'Tis only a page that carols unseen,*

*'Fitting your hawks their jesses!')*

[PIPPA passes.

JULES resumes.

What name was that the little girl sang  
forth?

Kate? The Cornaro, doubtless, who re-  
nounced

The crown of Cyprus to be lady here  
At Asolo, where still her memory stays,  
And peasants sing how once a certain page  
Pined for the grace of her so far above  
His power of doing good to, 'Kate the  
Queen—

'She never could be wronged, be poor,' he  
sighed,

'Need him to help her!'

Yes, a bitter thing

To see our lady above all need of us;  
Yet so we look ere we will love; not I,  
But the world looks so. If whoever loves  
Must be, in some sort, god or worshipper,  
The blessing or the blest one, queen or page,  
Why should we always choose the page's  
part?

Here is a woman with utter need of me,—  
I find myself queen here, it seems!

How strange!

Look at the woman here with the new soul,  
Like my own Psyche,—fresh upon her lips  
Alit, the visionary butterfly,  
Waiting my word to enter and make bright,  
Or flutter off and leave all blank as first.  
This body had no soul before, but slept  
Or stirred, was beauteous or ungainly, free  
From taint or foul with stain, as outward  
things

Fastened their image on its passiveness:  
Now, it will wake, feel, live—or die again!  
Shall to produce form out of unshaped stuff  
Be Art—and further, to evoke a soul  
From form be nothing? This new soul is  
mine!

Now, to kill Lutwyche, what would that  
do?—save

A wretched dauber, men will hoot to death  
Without me, from their hooting. Oh, to  
hear

God's voice plain as I heard it first, before  
They broke in with their laughter! I heard,  
them

Henceforth, not God.

To Ancona—Greece—some isle!  
I wanted silence only; there is clay  
Everywhere. One may do whate'er one  
likes

In Art: the only thing is, to make sure  
That one does like it—which takes pains  
to know.

Scatter all this, 'my Phene—this mad  
dream!

Who, what is Lutwyche, what Natalia's  
friends,

What the whole world except our love—  
my own,

Own Phene? But I told you, did I not,  
Ere night we travel for your land—some  
isle

With the sea's silence on it? Stand aside—  
I do but break these paltry models up  
To begin Art afresh. Meet Lutwyche, I—  
And save him from my statue meeting him?  
Some unsuspected isle in the far seas!  
Like a god going through his world, there  
stands

One mountain for a moment in the dusk,  
Whole brotherhoods of cedars on its brow:  
And you are ever by me while I gaze  
—Are in my arms as now—as now—as now!  
Some unsuspected isle in the far seas!  
Some unsuspected isle in far-off seas!

*Talk by the way, while PIPPA is passing from  
Orcana to the Turret. Two or three of  
the Austrian Police loitering with BLU-  
PHOCKS, an English vagabond, just in  
view of the Turret.*

*Bluph.*<sup>1</sup> So, that is your Pippa, the little  
girl who passed us singing? Well, your  
Bishop's Intendant's money shall be hon-  
estly earned:—now, don't make me that  
sour face because I bring the Bishop's name  
into the business; we know he can have  
nothing to do with such horrors: we know  
that he is a saint and all that a bishop should  
be, who is a great man beside. *Oh were  
but every worm a maggot, Every fly a grig,  
Every bough a Christmas faggot, Every  
tune a jig!* In fact, I have abjured all reli-  
gions; but the last I inclined to, was the  
Armenian: for I have travelled, do you see,  
and at Koenigsberg, Prussia Improper (so  
styled because there's a sort of bleak  
hungry sun there), you might remark over  
a venerable house-porch, a certain Chaldee  
inscription; and brief as it is, a mere glance  
at it used absolutely to change the mood  
of every bearded passenger. In they turned,  
one and all; the young and lightsome, with  
no irreverent pause, the aged and decrepit,  
with a sensible alacrity: 'twas the Grand  
Rabbi's abode, in short. Struck with  
curiosity, I lost no time in learning Syriac  
—(these are vowels, you dogs,—follow my

<sup>1</sup> 'He maketh his sun to rise on the evil and on the good,  
and sendeth rain on the just and on the unjust.'

stick's end in the mud—*Celarent, Darii,  
Ferio!*) and one morning presented myself,  
spelling-book in hand, a, b, c,—I picked  
it out letter by letter, and what was the  
purport of this miraculous posy? Some  
cherished legend of the past, you'll say—  
'*How Moses hocus-pocussed Egypt's land  
with fly and locust,*'—or, '*How to Jonah  
sounded harshish, Get thee up and go to  
Tarshish,*'—or, '*How the angel meeting  
Balaam, Straight his ass returned a salaam.*'  
In no wise! '*Shackabrack—Boach—some-  
body or other—Isaach, Re-cei-ver, Pur-cha-  
ser and Ex-change of—Stolen Goods!*'  
So, talk to me of the religion of a bishop!  
I have renounced all bishops save Bishop  
Beveridge—mean to live so—and die—*As  
some Greek dog-sage, dead and merry,  
Hellward bound in Charon's wherry, With  
food for both worlds, under and upper, Lu-  
pine-seed and Hecate's supper, And never  
an obolus . . .* (Though thanks to you, or  
this Intendant through you, or this Bishop  
through his Intendant—I possess a burn-  
ing pocketful of zwanzigers) . . . *To pay the  
Stygian Ferry!*

*1st Pol.* There is the girl, then; go and  
deserve them the moment you have pointed  
out to us Signor Luigi and his mother.  
[*To the rest.*] I have been noticing a house  
yonder, this long while: not a shutter un-  
closed since morning!

*2nd Pol.* Old Luca Gaddi's, that owns  
the silk-mills here: he dozes by the hour,  
wakes up, sighs deeply, says he should  
like to be Prince Metternich, and then  
dozes again, after having bidden young  
Sebald, the foreigner, set his wife to play-  
ing draughts. Never molest such a house-  
hold, they mean well.

*Bluph.* Only, cannot you tell me some-  
thing of this little Pippa, I must have to  
do with? One could make something of  
that name. Pippa—that is, short for Fe-  
lipa—rhyming to *Panurge consults Her-  
trippa—Believest thou, King Agrippa?*  
Something might be done with that name.

*2nd Pol.* Put into rhyme that your head  
and a ripe musk-melon would not be dear  
at half a zwanziger! Leave this fooling,  
and look out; the afternoon's over or  
nearly so.

*3rd Pol.* Where in this passport of Signor  
Luigi does our Principal instruct you to  
watch him so narrowly? There? What's  
there beside a simple signature? (That  
English fool's busy watching.)

*2nd Pol.* Flourish all round—'Put all  
possible obstacles in his way;' oblong dot  
at the end—'Detain him till further ad-  
vices reach you;' scratch at bottom—  
'Send him back on pretence of some in-  
formality in the above;' ink-spirit on right-  
hand side (which is the case here)—'Arrest



him at once.' Why and wherefore, I don't concern myself, but my instructions amount to this: if Signor Luigi leaves home to-night for Vienna—well and good, the passport deposed with us for our *visa* is really for his own use, they have misinformed the Office, and he means well; but let him stay over to-night—there has been the pretence we suspect, the accounts of his corresponding and holding intelligence with the Carbonari are correct, we arrest him at once, to-morrow comes Venice, and presently Spielberg. Bluphocks makes the signal, sure enough! That is he, entering the turret with his mother, no doubt.

### III.—EVENING

SCENE.—*Inside the Turret on the Hill above Asolo. LUIGI and his Mother entering.*

*Mother.* If there blew wind, you'd hear a long sigh, easing

The utmost heaviness of music's heart.

*Luigi.* Here in the archway?

*Mother.* Oh no, no—in farther, Where the echo is made, on the ridge.

*Luigi.* Here surely, then. How plain the tap of my heel as I leaped up! Hark—"Lucius Junius!" The very ghost of a voice

Whose body is caught and kept by... what are those?

Mere withered wallflowers, waving overhead?

They seem an elvish group with thin bleached hair

That lean out of their topmost fortress—look

And listen, mountain men, to what we say, Hand under chin of each grave earthy face. Up and show faces all of you!—"All of you!"

That's the king dwarf with the scarlet comb; old Franz,

Come down and meet your fate? Hark—"Meet your fate!"

*Mother.* Let him not meet it, my Luigi—do not

Go to his City! Putting crime aside, Half of these ills of Italy are feigned: Your Pellicos and writers for effect, Write for effect.

*Luigi.* Hush! Say A. writes, and B.

*Mother.* These A.s and B.s write for effect, I say.

Then, evil is in its nature loud, while good Is silent; you hear each petty injury, None of his virtues; he is old beside. Quiet and kind, and densely stupid. Why Do A. and B. not kill him themselves?

*Luigi.* They teach

Others to kill him—me—and, if I fail, Others to succeed; now, if A. tried and failed,

I could not teach that: mine's the lesser task.

*Mother.* They visit night by night...

*Mother.* —You, Luigi?

Ah, will you let me tell you what you are?

*Luigi.* Why not? Oh, the one thing you fear to hint,

You may assure yourself I say and say Ever to myself! At times—nay, even as now We sit—I think my mind is touched, suspect All is not sound: but is not knowing that, What constitutes one sane or otherwise? I know I am thus—so, all is right again.

I laugh at myself as through the town I walk,

And see men merry as if no Italy Were suffering; then I ponder—"I am rich,

'Young, healthy; why should this fact trouble me,

'More than it troubles these?' But it does trouble.

No, trouble's a bad word: for as I walk There's springing and melody and giddiness,

And old quaint turns and passages of my youth,

Dreams long forgotten, little in themselves, Return to me—whatever may amuse me:

And earth seems in a truce with me, and heaven

Accords with me, all things suspend their strife,

The very cicala laughs 'There goes he, and there!

'Feast him, the time is short; he is on his way

'For the world's sake: feast him this once, our friend!'

And in return for all this, I can trip Cheerfully up the scaffold-steps. I go

This evening, mother!

*Mother.* But mistrust yourself—Mistrust the judgment you pronounce on him!

*Luigi.* Oh, there I feel—am sure that I am right!

*Mother.* Mistrust your judgment then, of the mere means

To this wild enterprise. Say, you are right,—

How should one in your state e'er bring to pass

What would require a cool head, a cold heart,

And a calm hand? You never will escape.

*Luigi.* Escape? To even wish that, would spoil all.

The dying is best part of it. Too much Have I enjoyed these fifteen years of mine,

To leave myself excuse for longer life: Was not life pressed down, running o'er with joy,

That I might finish with it ere my fellows Who, sparerlier feasted, make a longer stay?

I was put at the board-head, helped to all  
At first; I rise up happy and content.  
God must be glad one loves his world so  
much.

I can give news of earth to all the dead  
Who ask me:—last year's sunsets, and  
great stars

Which had a right to come first and see  
ebb

The crimson wave that drifts the sun  
away—

Those crescent moons with notched and  
burning rims

That strengthened into sharp fire, and  
there stood,

Impatient of the azure—and that day  
In March, a double rainbow stopped the  
storm—

May's warm slow yellow moonlit summer  
nights—

Gone are they, but I have them in my soul!  
*Mother.* (He will not go!)

*Luigi.* You smile at me?

'Tis true,—  
Voluptuousness, grotesqueness, ghastli-  
ness,

Environ my devotedness as quaintly  
As round about some antique altar wreath

The rose festoons, goats' horns, and oxen's  
skulls.

*Mother.* See now: you reach the city,  
you must cross

His threshold—how?

*Luigi.* Oh, that's if we conspired!  
Then would come pains in plenty, as you  
guess—

But guess not how the qualities most fit  
For such an office, qualities I have,

Would little stead me, otherwise employed,  
Yet prove of rarest merit only here.

Every one knows for what his excellence  
Will serve, but no one ever will consider

For what his worst defect might serve: and  
yet

Have you not seen me range our coppice  
yonder

In search of a distorted ash?—I find  
The wry spoilt branch a natural perfect  
bow.

Fancy the thrice-sage, thrice-precautioned  
man

Arriving at the palace on my errand!  
No, no! I have a handsome dress packed  
up—

White satin here, to set off my black hair;  
In I shall march—for you may watch your  
life out

Behind thick walls, make friends there to  
betray you;

More than one man spoils everything.  
March straight—

Only, no clumsy knife to fumble for.  
Take the great gate and walk (not saunter)

on

Thro' guards and guards—I have re-  
hearsed it all

Inside the turret here a hundred times.  
Don't ask the way of whom you meet,  
observe!

But where they cluster thickest is the door  
Of doors; they'll let you pass—they'll  
never blab

Each to the other, he knows not the favour-  
ite,

Whence he is bound and what's his busi-  
ness now.

Walk in—straight up to him; you have no  
knife:

Be prompt, how should he scream? Then,  
out with you!

Italy, Italy, my Italy!

You're free, you're free! Oh mother, I  
could dream

They got about me—Andrea from his exile,  
Pier from his dungeon, Gualtier from his  
grave!

*Mother.* Well, you shall go. Yet seems  
this patriotism

The easiest virtue for a selfish man  
To acquire: he loves himself—and next,  
the world—

If he must love beyond,—but nought  
between:

As a short-sighted man sees nought mid-  
way

His body and the sun above. But you  
Are my adored Luigi, ever obedient

To my least wish, and running o'er with  
love:

I could not call you cruel or unkind.  
Once more, your ground for killing him!

—then go!

*Luigi.* Now do you try me, or make  
sport of me?

How first the Austrians got these pro-  
vinces . . .

(If that is all, I'll satisfy you soon)  
—Never by conquest but by cunning, for

That treaty whereby . . .

*Mother.* Well?

*Luigi.* (Sure, he's  
arrived,

The tell-tale cuckoo: spring's his confi-  
dant,

And he lets out her April purposes!)

Or . . . better go at once to modern time,  
He has . . . they have . . . in fact, I under-  
stand

But can't restate the matter; that's my  
boast:

Others could reason it out to you, and  
prove

Things they have made me feel.

*Mother.* Why go to-night?  
Morn's for adventure. Jupiter is now

A morning-star. I cannot hear you, Luigi!

*Luigi.* 'I am the bright and morning-  
star,' saith God—

And, 'to such an one I give the morning-star.'

The gift of the morning-star! Have I God's gift

Of the morning-star?

*Mother.* Chiara will love to see That Jupiter an evening-star next June.

*Luigi.* True, mother. Well for those who live through June!

Great noontides, thunder-storms, all glaring pomps

That triumph at the heels of June the god Leading his revel through our leafy world. Yes, Chiara will be here.

*Mother.* In June: remember, Yourself appointed that month for her coming.

*Luigi.* Was that low noise the echo?

*Mother.* The night-wind. She must be grown—with her blue eyes upturned

As if life were one long and sweet surprise: In June she comes.

*Luigi.* We were to see together The Titian at Treviso. There, again!

[From without is heard the voice of PIPPA, singing—

*A king lived long ago,  
In the morning of the world,  
When earth was nigher heaven than now:  
And the king's locks curled,  
Disparting o'er a forehead full  
As the milk-white space 'twixt horn and horn*

*Of some sacrificial bull—  
Only calm as a babe new-born:  
For he was got to a sleepy mood,  
So safe from all decrepitude,  
Age with its bane, so sure gone by,  
(The gods so loved him while he dreamed)  
That, having lived thus long, there seemed  
No need the king should ever die.*

*Luigi.* No need that sort of king should ever die!

*Among the rocks his city was:  
Before his palace, in the sun,  
He sat to see his people pass,  
And judge them every one  
From its threshold of smooth stone.  
They haled him many a valley-thief  
Caught in the sheep-pens, robber-chief  
Swarthy and shameless, beggar-cheat,  
Spy-prowler, or rough pirate found  
On the sea-sand left aground;  
And sometimes clung about his feet,  
With bleeding lip and burning cheek,  
A woman, bitterest wrong to speak  
Of one with sullen thickset brows:  
And sometimes from the prison-house  
The angry priests a pale wretch brought,  
Who through some chink had pushed and pressed*

*On knees and elbows, belly and breast,  
Worm-like into the temple,—caught  
He was by the very god,  
Who ever in the dark ass strode  
Backward and forward, keeping watch  
O'er his brazen bowls, such rogues to catch!  
These, all and every one,  
The king judged, sitting in the sun.*

*Luigi.* That king should still judge sitting in the sun!

*His councillors, on left and right,  
Looked anxious up,—but no surprise  
Disturbed the king's old smiling eyes  
Where the very blue had turned to white.  
'Tis said, a Python scared one day  
The breathless city, till he came,  
With forked tongue and eyes on flame,  
Where the old king sat to judge away;  
But when he saw the sweepy hair  
Girt with a crown of berries rare  
Which the god will hardly give to wear  
To the maiden who singeth, dancing bare  
In the altar-smoke by the pine-torch lights,  
At his wondrous forest rites,—  
Seeing this, he did not dare  
Approach that threshold in the sun,  
Assault the old king smiling there.  
Such grace had kings when the world  
began!* [PIPPA passes.

*Luigi.* And such grace have they, now that the world ends!

The Python at the city, on the throne, And brave men, God would crown for slaying him,

Lurk in bye-corners lest they fall his prey. Are crowns yet to be won in this late time, Which weakness makes me hesitate to reach?

'Tis God's voice calls: how could I stay? Farewell!

*Talk by the way, while PIPPA is passing from the Turret to the Bishop's Brother's House, close to the Duomo S. Maria. Poor Girls sitting on the steps.*

*1st Girl.* There goes a swallow to Venice —the stout seafarer!

Seeing those birds fly, makes one wish for wings.

Let us all wish; you wish first!

*2nd Girl.* I? This sunset To finish.

*3rd Girl.* That old—somebody I know, Greyer and older than my grandfather, To give me the same treat he gave last week—

Feeding me on his knee with fig-peckers, Lampreys and red Breganze-wine, and mumbling

The while some folly about how well I fare, Let sit and eat my supper quietly: Since had he not himself been late this morning

Detained at—never mind where,—had he not . . .

'Eh, baggage, had I not!'

*2nd Girl.* How she can lie!

*3rd Girl.* Look there—by the nails!

*2nd Girl.* What

makes your fingers red!

*3rd Girl.* Dipping them into wine to write bad words with

On the bright table: how he laughed!

*1st Girl.* My turn.

Spring's come and summer's coming. I would wear

A long loose gown, down to the feet and hands,

With plaits here, close about the throat, all day;

And all night lie, the cool long nights, in bed;

And have new milk to drink, apples to eat, Deuzans and junetings, leather-coats . . .

ah, I should say,

This is away in the fields—miles!

*3rd Girl.* Say at once!

You'd be at home: she'd always be at home!

Now comes the story of the farm among

The cherry orchards, and how April snowed

White blossoms on her as she ran. Why, fool,

They've rubbed the chalk-mark out, how tall you were,

Twisted your starling's neck, broken his cage,

Made a dung-hill of your garden!

*1st Girl.* They, destroy

My garden since I left them well?—perhaps!

I would have done so: so I hope they have!

A fig-tree curled out of our cottage wall;

They called it mine, I have forgotten why,

It must have been there long ere I was born:

*Cric—cric*—I think I hear the wasps o'er-head

Pricking the papers strung to flutter there And keep off birds in fruit-time—coarse

long papers,

And the wasps eat them, prick them through and through.

*3rd Girl.* How her mouth twitches!

Where was I?—before

She broke in with her wishes and long gowns

And wasps—would I be such a fool!—Oh, here!

This is my way: I answer every one

Who asks me why I make so much of him—

(If you say, 'you love him'—straight 'he'll not be gulled!')

'He that seduced me when I was a girl, Thus high—had eyes like yours, or hair

like yours,

'Brown, red, white,'—as the case may be: that pleases!

See how that beetle burnishes in the path!

There sparkles he along the dust: and, there—

Your journey to that maize-tuft spoiled at least!

*1st Girl.* When I was young, they said if you killed one

Of those sunshiny beetles, that his friend Up there, would shine no more that day nor next.

*2nd Girl.* When you were young? Nor are you young, that's true.

How your plump arms, that were, have dropped away!

Why, I can span them. Cecco beats you still?

No matter, so you keep your curious hair. I wish they'd find a way to dye our hair

Your colour—any lighter tint, indeed, Than black: the men say they are sick of

black,

Black eyes, black hair!

*4th Girl.* Sick of yours, like enough.

Do you pretend you ever tasted lampreys And ortolans? Giovita, of the palace,

Engaged (but there's no trusting him) to slice me

Polenta with a knife that had cut up

An ortolan.

*2nd Girl.* Why, there! Is not that Pippa We are to talk to, under the window,—

quick,—

Where the lights are?

*1st Girl.* That she? No, or she would sing,

For the Intendant said . . .

*3rd Girl.* Oh, you sing first!

Then, if she listens and comes close . . .

I'll tell you,—

Sing that song the young English noble made,

Who took you for the purest of the pure, And meant to leave the world for you—

what fun!

*2nd Girl [sings].*

*You'll love me yet!—and I can tarry*

*Your love's protracted growing:*

*June reared that bunch of flowers you carry,*

*From seeds of April's sowing.*

*I plant a heartfelt now: some seed*

*At least is sure to strike,*

*And yield—what you'll not pluck indeed,*

*Not love, but, may be, like.*

*You'll look at least on love's remains,*

*A grave's one violet:*

*Your look?—that pays a thousand pains.*

*What's death? You'll love me yet!*

*3rd Girl [to PIPPA who approaches].* Oh, you may come closer—we shall not eat you!

Why, you seem the very person that the great rich handsome Englishman has

fallen so violently in love with. I'll tell you all about it.

IV.—NIGHT

SCENE.—*Inside the Palace by the Duomo.*  
MONSIGNOR, dismissing his Attendants.

Mon. Thanks, friends, many thanks! I chiefly desire life now, that I may recompense every one of you. Most I know something of already. What, a repast prepared? *Benedicto benedicatur*. . . ugh, ugh! Wherewas I? Oh, as you were remarking, Ugo, the weather is mild, very unlike winter-weather: but I am a Sicilian, you know, and shiver in your Julys here. To be sure, when 'twas full summer at Messina, as we priests used to cross in procession the great square on Assumption Day, you might see our thickest yellow tapers twist suddenly in two, each like a falling star, or sink down on themselves in a gore of wax. But go, my friends, but go! [*To the Intendant.*] Not you, Ugo! [*The others leave the apartment.*] I have long wanted to converse with you, Ugo.

Inten. Uguccio—

Mon. . . . guccio Stefani, man! of Ascoli, Fermo and Fossombruno;—what I do need instructing about, are these accounts of your administration of my poor brother's affairs. Ugh! I shall never get through a third part of your accounts: take some of these dainties before we attempt it, however. Are you bashful to that degree? For me, a crust and water suffice.

Inten. Do you choose this especial night to question me?

Mon. This night, Ugo. You have managed my late brother's affairs since the death of our elder brother: fourteen years and a month, all but three days. On the Third of December, I find him . . .

Inten. If you have so intimate an acquaintance with your brother's affairs, you will be tender of turning so far back: they will hardly bear looking into, so far back.

Mon. Ay, ay, ugh, ugh,—nothing but disappointments here below! I remark a considerable payment made to yourself on this Third of December. Talk of disappointments! There was a young fellow here, Jules, a foreign sculptor I did my utmost to advance, that the Church might be a gainer by us both: he was going on hopefully enough, and of a sudden he notifies to me some marvellous change that has happened in his notions of Art. Here's his letter,—'He never had a clearly conceived Ideal within his brain till to-day. Yet since his hand could manage a chisel, he has practised expressing other men's Ideals; and, in the very perfection he has attained to, he foresees an ultimate failure: his unconscious hand will pursue its prescribed

course of old years, and will reproduce with a fatal expertness the ancient types, let the novel one appear never so palpably to his spirit. There is but one method of escape: confiding the 'virgin type to as chaste a hand, he will turn painter instead of sculptor, and paint, not carve, its characteristics,'—strike out, I dare say, a school like Correggio: how think you, Ugo?

Inten. Is Correggio a painter?

Mon. Foolish Jules! and yet, after all, why foolish? He may—probably will—fail egregiously; but if there should arise a new painter, will it not be in some such way, by a poet now, or a musician (spirits who have conceived and perfected an Ideal through some other channel), transferring it to this, and escaping our conventional roads by pure ignorance of them; eh, Ugo? If you have no appetite, talk at least, Ugo!

Inten. Sir, I can submit no longer to this course of yours. First, you select the group of which I formed one,—next you thin it gradually,—always retaining me with your smile,—and so do you proceed till you have fairly got me alone with you between four stone walls. And now then? Let this farce, this chatter end now: what is it you want with me?

Mon. Ugo!

Inten. From the instant you arrived, I felt your smile on me as you questioned me about this and the other article in those papers—why your brother should have given me this villa, that *podere*,—and your nod at the end meant,—what?

Mon. Possibly that I wished for no loud talk here. If once you set me coughing, Ugo!—

Inten. I have your brother's hand and seal to all I possess: now ask me what for! what service I did him—ask me!

Mon. I would better not: I should rip up old disgraces, let out my poor brother's weaknesses. By the way, Maffeo of Forlì (which, I forgot to observe, is your true name), was the interdict ever taken off you, for robbing that church at Cesena?

Inten. No, nor needs be: for when I murdered your brother's friend, Pasquale, for him . . .

Mon. Ah, he employed you in that business, did he? Well, I must let you keep, as you say, this villa and that *podere*, for fear the world should find out my relations were of so indifferent a stamp? Maffeo, my family is the oldest in Messina; and century after century have my progenitors gone on polluting themselves with every wickedness under heaven: my own father . . . rest his soul!—I have, I know, a chapel to support that it may rest: my dear two dead brothers were,—what you know tolerably well; I, the youngest, might have rivalled

them in vice, if not in wealth: but from my boyhood I came out from among them, and so am not partaker of their plagues. My glory springs from another source; or if from this, by contrast only,—for I, the bishop, am the brother of your employers, Ugo. I hope to repair some of their wrong, however; so far as my brother's ill-gotten treasure reverts to me, I can stop the consequences of his crime: and not one *soldo* shall escape me. Maffeo, the sword we quiet men spurn away, you shrewd knaves pick up and commit murders with; what opportunities the virtuous forego, the villainous seize. Because, to pleasure myself apart from other considerations, my food would be millet-cake, my dress sackcloth, and my couch straw,—am I therefore to let you, the offscouring of the earth, seduce the poor and ignorant by appropriating a pomp these will be sure to think lessens the abominations so unaccountably and exclusively associated with it? Must, I let villas and *poderi* go to you, a murderer and thief, that you may beget by means of them other murderers and thieves? No—if my cough would but allow me to speak!

*Inten.* What am I to expect? You are going to punish me?

*Mon.* —Must punish you, Maffeo. I cannot afford to cast away a chance. I have whole centuries of sin to redeem, and only a month or two of life to do it in. How should I dare to say . . .

*Inten.* 'Forgive us our trespasses'?

*Mon.* My friend, it is because I avow myself a very worm, sinful beyond measure, that I reject a line of conduct you would applaud perhaps. Shall I proceed, as it were, a-pardoning?—I?—who have no symptom of reason to assume that aught less than my strenuous efforts will keep myself out of mortal sin, much less keep others out. No: I do trespass, but will not double that by allowing you to trespass.

*Inten.* And suppose the villas are not your brother's to give, nor yours to take? Oh, you are hasty enough just now!

*Mon.* 1, 2—No 3!—ay, can you read the substance of a letter, N° 3, I have received from Rome? It is precisely on the ground there mentioned, of the suspicion I have that a certain child of my late elder brother, who would have succeeded to his estates, was murdered in infancy by you, Maffeo, at the instigation of my late younger brother—that the Pontiff enjoins on me not merely the bringing that Maffeo to condign punishment, but the taking all pains, as guardian of the infant's heritage for the Church, to recover it parcel by parcel, howsoever, whensoever, and wheresoever. While you are now gnawing those

fingers, the police are engaged in sealing up your papers, Maffeo, and the mere raising my voice brings my people from the next room to dispose of yourself. But I want you to confess quietly, and save me raising my voice. Why, man, do I not know the old story? The heir between the succeeding heir, and this heir's ruffianly instrument, and their complot's effect, and the life of fear and bribes and ominous smiling silence? Did you throttle or stab my brother's infant? Come now!

*Inten.* So old a story, and tell it no better? When did such an instrument ever produce such an effect? Either the child smiles in his face; or, most likely, he is not fool enough to put himself in the employer's power so thoroughly: the child is always ready to produce—as you say—howsoever, wheresoever, and whensoever.

*Mon.* Liar!

*Inten.* Strike me? Ah, so might a father chastise! I shall sleep soundly to-night at least, though the gallows await me to-morrow; for what a life did I lead! Carlo of Cesena reminds me of his connivance, every time I pay his annuity; which happens commonly thrice a year. If I remonstrate, he will confess all to the good bishop—you!

*Mon.* I see through the trick, caitiff! I would you spoke truth for once. All shall be sifted, however—seven times sifted.

*Inten.* And how my absurd riches encumbered me! I dared not lay claim to above half my possessions. Let me but once unbosom myself, glorify Heaven, and die!

Sir, you are no brutal dastardly idiot like your brother I frightened to death: let us understand one another. Sir, I will make away with her for you—the girl—here close at hand; not the stupid obvious kind of killing; do not speak—know nothing of her nor of me! I see her every day—saw her this morning: of course there is to be no killing; but at Rome the courtesans perish off every three years, and I can entice her thither—have indeed begun operations already. There's a certain lusty blue-eyed florid-complexioned English knave, I and the Police employ occasionally. You assent, I perceive—no, that's not it—assent I do not say—but you will let me convert my present havings and holdings into cash, and give me time to cross the Alps? 'Tis but a little black-eyed pretty singing Felippa, gay silk-winding girl. I have kept her out of harm's way up to this present; for I always intended to make your life a plague to you with her. 'Tis as well settled once and for ever. Some women I have procured will pass Bluphocks, my handsome scoundrel, off

## PIPPA PASSES

[iv

for somebody; and once Pippa<sup>1</sup> entangled!  
—you conceive? Through her singing?  
Is it a bargain?

[From without is heard the voice of PIPPA,  
singing—

*Overhead the tree-tops meet,  
Flowers and grass spring 'neath one's feet;  
There was nought above me, nought below,  
My childhood had not learned to know:  
For, what are the voices of birds  
—Ay, and of beasts,—but words, our  
words,*

*Only so much more sweet?  
The knowledge of that with my life begun.  
But I had so near made out the sun,  
And counted your stars, the seven and one,  
Like the fingers of my hand:  
Nay, I could all but understand  
Wherefore through heaven the white  
moon ranges;  
And just when out of her soft fifty changes  
No unfamiliar face might overlook me—  
Suddenly God took me.*

[PIPPA passes.

*Mon.* [springing up]. My people—one  
and all—all—within there! Gag this villain  
—tie him hand and foot! He dares . . . I  
know not half he dares—but remove him  
—quick! *Miserere mei, Domine!* Quick,  
I say!

SCENE.—PIPPA'S chamber again. *She  
enters it.*

The bee with his comb,  
The mouse at her dray,  
The grub in his tomb,  
Wile winter away;  
But the fire-fly and hedge-shrew and lob-  
worm, I pray,  
How fare they?  
Ha, ha, thanks for your counsel, my  
Zanze!

'Feast upon lampreys, quaff Breganze'—  
The summer of life so easy to spend,  
And care for to-morrow so soon put  
away!  
But winter hastens at summer's end,  
And fire-fly, hedge-shrew, lob-worm, pray,  
How fare they?  
No bidding me then to . . . what did Zanze  
say?

'Pare your nails pearlwise, get your small  
feet shoes  
'More like' . . . (what said she?)—'and  
less like canoes!'  
How pert that girl was!—would I be those  
pert  
Impudent staring women! It had done me,  
However, surely no such mighty hurt  
To learn his name who passed that jest  
upon me:

No foreigner, that I can recollect,  
Came, as she says, a month since, to inspect

Our silk-mills—none with blue eyes and  
thick rings

Of raw-silk-coloured hair, at all events.  
Well, if old Luca keep his good intents,  
We shall do better, see<sup>2</sup> what next year  
brings.

I may buy shoes, my Zanze, not appear  
More destitute than you perhaps next year!  
Bluph . . . something! I had caught the  
uncouth name

But for Monsignor's people's sudden clat-  
ter

Above us—bound to spoil such idle chatter  
As ours: it were indeed a serious matter  
If silly talk like ours should put to shame  
The pious man, the man devoid of blame,  
The . . . ah but—ah but, all the same,  
No mere mortal has a right

To carry that exalted air;  
Best people are not angels quite:  
While—not the worst of people's doings  
scare

The devil; so there's that proud look to  
spare!

Which is mere counsel to myself, mind!  
for

I have just been the holy Monsignor:  
And I was you too, Luigi's gentle mother,  
And you too, Luigi!—how that Luigi  
started

Out of the turret—doubtlessly departed  
On some good errand or another,  
For he passed just now in a traveller's trim,  
And the sullen company that prowled  
About his path, I noticed, scowled  
As if they had lost a prey in him.  
And I was Jules the sculptor's bride,  
And I was Ottima beside,  
And now what am I?—tired of fooling.  
Day for folly, night for schooling!  
New Year's day is over and spent,  
Ill or well, I must be content.

Even my lily's asleep, I vow:  
Wake up—here's a friend I've plucked  
you:

Call this flower a heart's-ease now!  
Something rare, let me instruct you,  
Is this, with petals triply swollen,  
Three times spotted, thrice the pollen;  
While the leaves and parts that witness  
Old proportions and their fitness,  
Here remain unchanged, unmoved now;  
Call this pampered thing improved now!  
Suppose there's a king of the flowers  
And a girl-show held in his bowers—  
'Look ye, buds, this growth of ours,'  
Says he, 'Zanze from the Breita,  
'I have made her gorge polenta  
'Till both cheeks are near as bouncing  
'As her . . . name there's no pronouncing!  
'See this heightened colour too,  
'For she swilled Breganze wine  
'Till her nose turned deep carmine;  
'Twas but white when wild she grew.

'And only by this Zanze's eyes  
'Of which we could not change the size,  
'The magnitude of all achieved  
'Otherwise, may be perceived.'

Oh what a drear dark close to my poor day!  
How could that red sun drop in that black  
cloud?

Ah Pippa, morning's rule is moved away,  
Dispensed with, never more to be allowed!  
Day's turn is over, now arrives the night's.

Oh lark, be day's apostle  
To mavis, merle and throistle,  
Bid them their betters jostle  
From day and its delights!

But at night, brother howlet, over the  
woods,

Toll the world to thy chantry;  
Sing to the bats' sleek sisterhoods  
Full complines with gallantry:

Then, owls and bats,  
Cows and twas,  
Monks and nuns, in a cloister's moods,  
Adjourn to the oak-stump pantry!

[After she has begun to undress herself.

Now, one thing I should like to really know:  
How near I ever might approach all these  
I only fancied being, this long day:

—Approach, I mean, so as to touch them,  
so

As to . . . in some way . . . move them—  
if you please,

Do good or evil to them some slight way.

For instance, if I wind

Silk to-morrow, my silk may bind

And border Ottima's cloak's hem.

Ah me, and my important part with them,

This morning's hymn half promised when

I rose!

True in some sense or other, I suppose.

[As she lies down.

God bless me! I can pray no more to-night.

No doubt, some way or other, hymns say

right.

*All service ranks the same with God—*

*With God, whose puppets, best and worst,*

*Are we: there is no last nor first.*

[She sleeps.

# KING VICTOR AND KING CHARLES

## A TRAGEDY

1842

### NOTE

So far as I know, this Tragedy is the first artistic consequence of what Voltaire termed 'a terrible event without consequences;' and although it professes to be historical, I have taken more pains to arrive at the history than most readers would thank me for particularizing: since acquainted, as I will hope them to be, with the chief circumstances of Victor's remarkable European career—not quite ignorant of the sad and surprising facts I am about to reproduce (a tolerable account of which is to be found, for instance, in Abbé Roman's *Récit*, or even the fifth of Lord Orrery's Letters from Italy)—I cannot expect them to be versed, nor desirous of becoming so, in all the detail of the memoirs, correspondence, and relations of the time. From these only may be obtained a knowledge of the fiery and audacious temper, unscrupulous selfishness, profound dissimulation, and singular fertility in resources, of Victor—the extreme and painful sensibility, prolonged immaturity of powers, earnest good purpose and vacillating will of Charles—the noble and right woman's manliness of his wife—and the ill-considered rascality and subsequent better-advised rectitude of D'Ormea. When I say, therefore, that I cannot but believe my statement (combining as it does what appears correct in Voltaire and plausible in Condorcet) more true to person and thing than any it has hitherto been my fortune to meet with, no doubt my word will be taken, and my evidence spared as readily.

R. B.

LONDON: 1842.

### PERSONS

VICTOR AMADEUS, first King of Sardinia.

CHARLES EMMANUEL, his son, Prince of Piedmont.

POLYXENA, wife of Charles.

D'ORMEA, minister.

SCENE.—*The Council Chambers of Rivoli Palace, near Turin, communicating with a Hall at the back, an Apartment to the left, and another to the right of the stage.*

TIME, 1730–1731.

FIRST YEAR, 1730.—KING VICTOR

PART I

CHARLES, POLYXENA.

*Cha.* You think so? Well, I do not.

*Pol.* My beloved,

All must clear up; we shall be happy yet:

This cannot last for ever—oh, may change  
To-day or any day!

*Cha.* —May change? Ah yes—

May change!

*Pol.* Endure it, then.

*Cha.* No doubt, a life

Like this drags on, now better and now  
worse.



My father may . . . may take to loving me;  
And he may take D'Ormea closer yet  
To counsel him;—may even cast off her  
—That bad Sebastian; but he also may  
. . . Or no, Polyxena, my only friend,  
He may not force you from me?

*Pol.* Now, force me  
From you!—me, close by you as if there  
gloomed

No Sebastians, no D'Ormeas on our  
path—

At Rivoli or Turin, still at hand,  
Arch-counsellor, prime confidant . . . force  
me!

*Cha.* Because I felt as sure, as I feel sure  
We clasp hands now, of being happy once.  
Young was I, quite neglected, nor con-  
cerned

By the world's business that engrossed so  
much

My father and my brother: if I peered  
From out my privacy,—amid the crash  
And blaze of nations, domineered those  
two.

'Twas war, peace—France our foe, now—  
England, friend—

In love with Spain—at feud with Austria!  
Well—

I wondered, laughed a moment's laugh for  
pride

In the chivalrous couple, then let drop  
My curtain—'I am out of it,' I said—

When . . .

*Pol.* You have told me, Charles.  
*Cha.* Polyxena—

When suddenly,—a warm March day, just  
that!

Just so much sunshine as the cottage child  
Basks in delighted, while the cottager  
Takes off his bonnet, as he ceases work,  
To catch the more of it—and it must fall  
Heavily on my brother! Had you seen  
Philip—the lion-featured! not like me!

*Pol.* I know—  
*Cha.* And Philip's mouth yet  
fast to mine,

His dead cheek on my cheek, his arm still  
round

My neck,—they bade me rise, 'for I was heir  
'To the Duke,' they said, 'the right hand  
of the Duke.'

Till then he was my father, not the Duke.  
So . . . let me finish . . . the whole intricate  
World's-business their dead boy was born  
to, I

Must conquer,—ay, the brilliant thing he  
was,

I, of a sudden must be: my faults, my follies,  
—All bitter truths were told me, all at once,  
To end the sooner. What I simply styled  
Their overlooking me, had been contempt:  
How should the Duke employ himself, for-  
sooth,

With such an one, while lordly Philip rode

By him their Turin through? But he was  
punished,

And must put up with—me! 'Twas sad  
enough

To learn my future position and submit.  
And then the wear and worry, blame on  
blame!

For, 'spring-sounds in my ears, spring-  
smells about,

How could I but grow dizzy in their pent  
Dim palace-rooms at first? My mother's  
look

As they discussed my insignificance,  
She and my father, and I sitting by,—

I bore; I knew how brave a son they missed:  
Philip had gaily run state-papers through,  
While Charles was spelling at them pain-  
fully!

But Victor was my father spite of that.  
'Duke Victor's entire life has been,' I said,

'Innumerable efforts to one end;  
'And on the point now of that end's suc-  
cess,

'Our Ducal turning to a Kingly crown,  
'Where's time to be reminded 'tis his child

'He spurns?' And so I suffered—scarcely  
suffered,

Since I had you at length!

*Pol.* —To serve in place  
Of monarch, minister, and mistress,  
Charles.

*Cha.* But, once that crown obtained,  
then was't not like

Our lot would alter? 'When he rests, takes  
breath,

'Glances around, sees who there's left to  
love—

'Now that my mother's dead, sees I am  
left—

'Is it not like he'll love me at the last?'  
Well, Savoy turns Sardinia; the Duke's

King:

Could I—precisely then—could you expect  
His harshness to redouble? These few  
months

Have been . . . have been . . . Polyxena, do  
you

And God conduct me, or I lose myself!

What would he have? What is't they want  
with me?

Him with this mistress and this minister,  
—You see me and you hear him; judge us  
both!

Re-announce what I should do, Polyxena!

*Pol.* Endure, endure, beloved! Say you  
not

He is your father? All's so incident  
To novel way! Beside, our life must  
change:

'Or you'll acquire his kingcraft, or he'll  
find

Harshness a sorry way of teaching it.  
I bear this—not that there's so much to  
bear.

*Cha.* You bear? Do not I know that you, tho' bound  
To silence for my sake, are perishing  
Piecemeal beside me? And how otherwise  
When every creephole from the hideous  
Court

Is stopped: the Minister to dog me, here—  
The Mistress posted to entrap you, there!  
And thus shall we grow old in such a life;  
Not careless, never estranged,—but old  
to alter

Our life, there is so much to alter!

*Pol.* Come—  
Is it agreed that we forego complaint  
Even at Turin, yet, complain we here  
At Rivoli? 'Twere wiser you announced  
Our presence to the King. What's now  
afoot,

I wonder? Not that any more's to dread  
Than every day's embarrassment: but  
guess

For me, why train so fast succeeded train  
On the high-road, each gayer still than each!  
I noticed your Archbishop's pursuivant,  
The sable cloak and silver cross; such  
pomp

Bodes . . . what now, Charles? Can you  
conceive?

*Cha.* Not I.

*Pol.* A matter of some moment.

*Cha.* There's our life!  
Which of the group of loiterers that stare  
From the lime-avenue, divines that I—  
About to figure presently, he thinks,  
In face of all assembled—am the one  
Who knows precisely least about it?

*Pol.* Tush!  
D'Ormea's contrivance!

*Cha.* Ay, how otherwise  
Should the young Prince serve for the old  
King's foil?

—So that the simplest courtier may remark  
'Twere idle raising parties for a Prince  
Content to linger the Court's laughing-  
stock.

Something, 'tis like, about that weary busi-  
ness

[*Pointing to papers he has laid down, and  
which POLYXENA examines.*]

—Not that I comprehend three words, of  
course,

After all last night's study.

*Pol.* The faint heart!  
Why, as we rode and you rehearsed just  
now

Its substance . . . (that's the folded speech  
I mean,

Concerning the Reduction of the Fiefs)  
—What would you have?—I fancied while  
you spoke,

Some tones were just your father's.

*Cha.* Flattery!

*Pol.* I fancied so:—and here lurks, sure  
enough,

My note upon the Spanish Claims! You've  
mastered

The fief-speech thoroughly: this other,  
mind,

Is an opinion you deliver,—stay,  
Best read it slowly over once to me;

Read—there's bare time; you read it firmly  
—loud

—Rather loud, looking in his face,—don't  
sink

Your eye once—ay, thus! 'If Spain claims  
. . . ' begin

—Just as you look at me!

*Cha.* At you! Oh truly,  
You have I seen, say, marshalling your  
troops,

Dismissing councils, or, through doors  
ajar,

Head sunk on hand, devoured by slow  
chagrins

—Then radiant, for a crown had all at once  
Seemed possible again! I can behold

Him, whose least whisper ties my spirit  
fast,

In this sweet brow, nought could divert me  
from

Save objects like Sebastian's shameless lip,  
Or worse, the clipped grey hair and dead

white face  
And dwindling eye as if it ached with guile,  
D'Ormea wears . . .

[*As he kisses her, enter from the KING'S  
apartment D'ORMEA.*]

I said he would divert  
My kisses from your brow!

*D'O.* [aside]. Here! So, King  
Victor

Spoke truth for once: and who's ordained,  
but I

To make that memorable? Both in call,  
As he declared. Were't better gnash the

teeth,  
Or laugh outright now?

*Cha.* [to POLYXENA]. What's his visit  
for?

*D'O.* [aside]. I question if they even  
speak to me.

*Pol.* [to CHARLES]. Face the man! He'll  
suppose you fear him, else.

[Aloud.] The Marquis bears the King's  
command, no doubt?

*D'O.* [aside]. Precisely!—If I threatened  
him, perhaps?

Well, this at least is punishment enough!  
Men used to promise punishment would

come.

*Cha.* Deliver the King's message, Mar-  
quis!

*D'O.* [aside]. Ah—  
So anxious for his fate? [Aloud.] A word,

my Prince,  
Before you see your father—just one word  
Of counsel!

*Cha.* Oh, your counsel certainly!

Polyxena, the Marquis counsels us!  
Well, sir? Be brief, however!

*D'O.* What? You know  
As much as I?—preceded me, most like,  
In knowledge! So! ('Tis in his eye, be-  
side—

His voice: he knows it, and his heart's on  
flame

Already.) You surmise why you, myself,  
Del Borgo, Spava, fifty nobles more,  
Are summoned thus?

*Cha.* Is the Prince used to know,  
At any time, the pleasure of the King,  
Before his minister?—Polyxena,  
Stay here till I conclude my task: I feel  
Your presence (smile not) through the  
walls, and take  
Fresh heart. The King's within that  
chamber?

*D'O.* [passing the table whereon a paper  
lies, exclaims, as he glances at it].

'Spain!'

*Pol.* [aside to CHARLES]. Tarry awhile:  
what ails the minister?

*D'O.* Madam, I do not often trouble  
you.

The Prince loathes, and you scorn me—let  
that pass!

But since it touches him and you, not me,  
Bid the Prince listen!

*Pol.* [to CHARLES]. Surely you will listen!  
—Deceit?—those fingers crumpling up his  
vest?

*Cha.* Deceitful to the very fingers' ends!

*D'O.* [who has approached them, over-  
looks the other paper CHARLES con-  
tinues to hold]. My project for the  
Fiefs! As I supposed!

Sir, I must give you light upon those  
measures

—For this is mine, and that I spied of Spain,  
Mine too!

*Cha.* Release me! Do you gloze on me  
Who bear in the world's face (that is, the  
world

You make for me at Turin) your contempt?  
—Your measures?—When was not a hate-  
ful task

D'Ormea's imposition? Leave my robe!  
What post can I bestow, what grant con-  
cede?

Or do you take me for the King?

*D'O.* Not I! Not I!  
Not yet for King,—not for, as yet, thank  
God,

One who in . . . shall I say a year, a month?  
Ay!—shall be wretcheder than e'er was  
slave

In his Sardinia.—Europe's spectacle  
And the world's bye-word! What? The  
Prince aggrieved

That I excluded him our counsels? Here  
[Touching the paper in CHARLES's hand.  
Accept a method of extorting gold

From Savoy's nobles, who must wring its  
worth

In silver first from tillers of the soil,  
Whose hinds again have to contribute brass  
To make up the amount: there's counsel,  
sir,

My counsel, one year old; and the fruit,  
this—

Savoy's become a mass of misery  
And wrath, which one man has to meet—  
the King:

You're not the King! Another counsel, sir!  
Spain entertains a project (here it lies)

Which, guessed, makes Austria offer that  
same King

Thus much to baffle Spain; he promises;  
Then comes Spain, breathless lest she be  
forestalled,

Her offer follows; and he promises . . .

*Cha.* —Promises, sir, when he has just  
agreed

To Austria's offer?

*D'O.* That's a counsel, Prince!  
But past our foresight, Spain and Austria  
(choosing

To make their quarrel up between them-  
selves

Without the intervention of a friend)  
Produce both treaties, and both promises...

*Cha.* How?

*D'O.* Prince, a counsel! And the  
fruit of that?

Both parties covenant afresh, to fall  
Together on their friend, blot out his name,  
Abolish him from Europe. So, take note,  
Here's Austria and here's Spain to fight  
against:

And what sustains the King but Savoy  
here,

A miserable people mad with wrongs?  
You're not the King!

*Cha.* Polyxena, you said  
All would clear up: all does clear up to me.

*D'O.* Clear up! 'Tis no such thing to  
envy, then?

You see the King's state in its length and  
breadth?

You blame me now for keeping you aloof  
From counsels and the fruit of counsels?

Wait

Till I explain this morning's business!

*Cha.* [aside]. No—  
Stoop to my father, yes,—D'Ormea, no:

—The King's son, not to the King's coun-  
sellor!

I will do something, but at least retain  
The credit of my deed. [Aloud.] Then it is  
this

You now expressly come to tell me?  
*D'O.* This

To tell! You apprehend me? Perfectly.

*Cha.* Further, D'Ormea, you have shown your-  
self,

For the first time these many weeks and months,  
Disposed to do my bidding?

*D'O.* From the heart!

*Cha.* Acquain<sup>d</sup> my father, first, I wait his pleasure:

Next . . . or, I'll tell you at a fitter time.

Acquaint the King!

*D'O.* [*aside*]. If I 'scape Victor yet!

First, to prevent this stroke at me; if not,—

Then, to avenge it! [*To CHARLES.*] Gracious sir, I go. [*Goes.*]

*Cha.* God, I forbore! Which more offends, that man

Or that man's master? Is it come to this? Have they supposed (the sharpest insult yet)

I needed e'en his intervention? No!

No—dull am I, conceded,—but so dull, Scarcely! Their step decides me.

*Pol.* How decides?

*Cha.* You would be freed D'Ormea's eye and hers?

—Could fly the court with me and live content?

So, this it is for which the knights assemble!

The whispers and the closeting of late,

The savageness and insolence of old,

—For this!

*Pol.* What mean you?

*Cha.* How? You fail to catch

Their clever plot? I missed it, but could you?

These last two months of care to inculcate

How dull I am,—D'Ormea's present visit

To prove that, being dull, I might be worse

Were I a King—as wretched as now dull—

You recognize in it no winding up

Of a long plot?

*Pol.* Why should there be a plot?

*Cha.* The crown's secure now; I should shame the crown—

An old complaint; the point is, how to gain

My place for one, more fit in Victor's eyes,

His mistress the Sebastian's child.

*Pol.* In truth?

*Cha.* They dare not quite dethrone Sardinia's Prince:

But they may descant on my dulness till

They sting me into even praying them

Grant leave to hide my head, resign my state,

And end the coil. Not see now? In a word, They'd have me tender them myself my rights

As one incapable;—some cause for that,

Since I delayed thus long to see their drift!

I shall apprise the King he may resume

My rights this moment.

*Pol.* Pause! I dare not think

So ill of Victor.

*Cha.* Think no ill of him!

*Pol.* —Nor think him, then, so shallow as to suffer

His purpose be divined thus easily.

And yet—you are the last of a great line;

There's a great heritage at stake; new days

Seemed to await this newest of the realms

Of Europe:—Charles, you must withstand

this!

*Cha.* Ah—

You dare not then renounce the splendid

Court

For one whom all the world despises?

Speak!

*Pol.* My gentle husband, speak I will,

and truth.

Were this as you believe, and I once sure

Your duty lay in so renouncing rule,

I could . . . could? Oh what happiness it were—

To live, my Charles, and die, alone with you!

*Cha.* I grieve I asked you. To the presence, then!

By this, D'Ormea acquaints the King, no doubt,

He fears I am too simple for mere hints,

And that no less will serve than Victor's

mouth

Demonstrating in council what I am.

I have not breathed, I think, these many years!

*Pol.* Why, it may be!—if he desire to wed

The woman, call legitimate her child.

*Cha.* You see as much? Oh, let his will have way!

You'll not repent confiding in me, love?

There's many a brighter spot in Piedmont, far,

Than Rivoli. I'll seek him: or, suppose

You hear first how I mean to speak my mind?

—Loudly and firmly both, this time, be sure!

I yet may see your Rhine-land, who can tell? Once away, even then away! I breathe.

*Pol.* And I too breathe.

*Cha.* Come, my Polyxena!

## KING VICTOR

### PART II

*Enter KING VICTOR, bearing the Regalia on a cushion, from his apartment. He calls loudly.*

*Vic.* D'Ormea!—for patience fails me, treading thus

Among the obscure trains I have laid,—my knights .

Safe in the hall here—in that anteroom,

My son,—D'Ormea, where? Of this, one touch— [*Laying down the crown.*]

This fireball to these mute black cold trains—then

Outbreak enough!  
*[Contemplating it.]* To lose all, after all!  
 This, glancing o'er my house for ages—  
 shaped,

Brave meteor, like the crown of Cyprus  
 now,  
 Jerusalem, Spain, England, every change  
 The braver,—and when I have clutched a  
 prize

My ancestry died wan with watching for,  
 To lose it!—by a slip, a fault, a trick  
 Learnt to advantage once and not un-  
 learned

When past the use,—‘just this once more’  
 (I thought)

‘Use it with Spain and Austria happily,  
 ‘And then away with trick!’ An oversight  
 I’d have repaired thrice over, any time  
 These fifty years, must happen now!  
 There’s peace

At length; and I, to make the most of peace,  
 Ventured my project on our people here,  
 As needing not their help: which Europe  
 knows,  
 And means, cold-blooded, to dispose her-  
 self

(Apart from plausibilities of war)  
 To crush the new-made King—who ne’er  
 till now

Feared her. As Duke, I lost each foot of  
 earth

And laughed at her: my name was left, my  
 sword

Left, all was left! But she can take, she  
 knows,

This crown, herself conceded . . . That’s  
 to try,

Kind Europe! My career’s not closed as  
 yet!

This boy was ever subject to my will,  
 Timid and tame—the fitter! D’Ormea,  
 too—

What if the sovereign also rid himself  
 Of thee, his prime of parasites?—I delay!  
 D’Ormea! *[As D’ORMEA enters, the*

*KING seats himself.*  
 My son, the Prince—attends he?

D’O. Sir,  
 He does attend. The crown prepared!—it  
 seems

That you persist in your resolve.  
 Vic. Who’s come?

The chancellor and the chamberlain? My  
 knights?

D’O. The whole Annunziata. If, my  
 liege,  
 Your fortune had not tottered worse than  
 now . . .

Vic. Del Borgo has drawn up the  
 schedules? mine—

My son’s, too? Excellent! Only, beware  
 Of the least blunder, or we look but fools.  
 First, you read the Annulment of the  
 Oaths;

Del Borgo follows . . . no, the Prince shall  
 sign;

Then let Del Borgo read the Instrument:  
 On which, I enter.

D’O. *[Sir, this may be truth;*  
 You, sir, may do as you affect—may break  
 Your engine, me, to pieces: try at least  
 If not a spring remain worth saving! Take  
 My counsel as I’ve counselled many times!  
 What if the Spaniard and the Austrian  
 threat?

There’s England, Holland, Venice—which  
 ally

Select you?  
 Vic. Aha! Come, D’Ormea,—

‘truth’  
 Was on your lip a minute since. Allies?  
 I’ve broken faith with Venice, Holland,  
 England

—As who knows it not you?  
 D’O. But why with me

Break faith—with one ally, your best,  
 break faith?

Vic. When first I stumbled on you,  
 Marquis—’twas

At Mondovi—a little lawyer’s clerk . . .  
 D’O. Therefore your soul’s ally—who

brought you through  
 Your quarrel with the Pope, at pains  
 enough—

Who simply echoed you in these affairs—  
 On whom you cannot therefore visit these

Alfairs’ ill-fortune—whom you trust to  
 guide

You safe (yes, on my soul) through these  
 affairs!

Vic. I was about to notice, had you not  
 Prevented me, that since that great town

kept  
 With its chicane D’Ormea’s satchel  
 stuffed

And D’Ormea’s self sufficiently recluse,  
 He missed a sight,—my naval armament

When I burned Toulon. How the skiff  
 exults

Upon the galliot’s wave!—rises its height,  
 O’ertops it even; but the great wave bursts,

And hell-deep in the horrible profound  
 Buries itself the galliot: shall the skiff

Think to escape the sea’s black trough in  
 turn?

Apply this: you have been my minister  
 —Next me, above me possibly;—sad post,

How care, abundant lack of peace of  
 mind;

Who would desiderate the eminence?  
 Who gave your soul to get it; you’d yet

give  
 Your soul to keep it, as I mean you shall,  
 D’Ormea! What if the wave ebbed with

me?

Whereas it cants you to another crest;  
 I toss you to my son; ride out your ride!

D’O. Ah, you so much despise me?

*Vic.* You, D'Ormea? Nowise: and, I'll inform you why. A king Must in his time have many ministers, And I've been rash enough to part with mine  
When I thought proper. Of the tribe, not one  
(... Or wait, did Pianezze?—ah, just the same!)  
Not one of them, ere his remonstrance reached  
The length of yours, but has assured me  
(commonly  
Standing much as you stand,—or nearer, say,  
The door to make his exit on his speech)  
—I should repent of what I did. D'Ormea,  
Be candid, you approached it when I bade you  
Prepare the schedules! But you stopped in time,  
You have not so assured me: how should I  
Despise you then?

*Enter CHARLES.*

*Vic.* [*changing his tone*]. Are you instructed? Do  
My order, point by point! About it, sir!  
*D'O.* You so despise me! [*Aside.*] One last stay remains—  
The boy's discretion there.  
[*To CHARLES.*] For your sake, Prince, I pleaded, wholly in your interest,  
To save you from this fate!  
*Cha.* [*aside*]. Must I be told  
The Prince was supplicated for—by him?  
*Vic.* [*to D'ORMEA*]. Apprise Del Borgo, Spava, and the rest,  
Our son attends them; then return.  
*D'O.* One word!  
*Cha.* [*aside*]. A moment's pause and they would drive me hence,  
I do believe!  
*D'O.* [*aside*]. Let but the boy be firm!  
*Vic.* You disobey?  
*Cha.* [*to D'ORMEA*]. You do not disobey  
Me, at least? Did you promise that or no?  
*D'O.* Sir, I am yours: what would you?  
Yours am I!  
*Cha.* When I have said what I shall say,  
'tis like  
Your face will ne'er again disgust me. Go!  
Through you, as through a breast of glass,  
I see.  
And for your conduct, from my youth till now,  
Take my contempt! You might have spared me much,  
Secured me somewhat, nor so harmed yourself:  
That's over now. Go, ne'er to come again!  
*D'O.* As son, the father—father as, the son!

My wits! My wits! [*Goes.*  
*Vic.* [*seated*]. And you, what meant you, pray,  
Speaking thus to D'Ormea?  
*Cha.* Let us not waste words upon D'Ormea! Those I spent  
Have half unsettled what I came to say.  
His presence vexes to my very soul.  
*Vic.* One called to manage a kingdom,  
Charles, needs heart  
To bear up under worse annoyances  
Than seems D'Ormea—to me, at least.  
*Cha.* [*aside*]. Ah, good!  
He keeps me to the point. Then be it so.  
[*Aloud.*] Last night, sir, brought me certain papers—these—  
To be reported on,—your way of late.  
Is it last night's result that you demand?  
*Vic.* For God's sake, what has night brought forth? Pronounce  
The... what's your word?—result!  
*Cha.* Sir, that had proved  
Quite worthy of your sneer, no doubt:—a few  
Lame thoughts, regard for you alone could wring,  
Lame as they are, from brains like mine, believe!  
As 'tis, sir, I am spared both toil and sneer.  
These are the papers.  
*Vic.* Well, sir? I suppose  
You hardly burned them. Now for your result!  
*Cha.* I never should have done great things of course,  
But... oh my father, had you loved me more!  
*Vic.* Loved? [*Aside.*] Has D'Ormea played me false, I wonder?  
[*Aloud.*] Why, Charles, a king's love is diffused—yourself  
May overlook, perchance, your part in it.  
Our monarchy is absolute now  
In Europe, or my trouble's thrown away.  
I love, my mode, that subjects each and all  
May have the power of loving, all and each,  
Their mode: I doubt not, many have their sons  
To trifle with, talk soft to, all day long:  
I have that crown, this chair, D'Ormea, Charles!  
*Cha.* 'Tis well I am a subject then, not you.  
*Vic.* [*aside*]. D'Ormea has told him everything.  
[*Aloud.*] Aha!  
I apprehend you: when all's said, you take  
Your private station to be prized beyond  
My own, for instance?  
*Cha.* —Do and ever did  
So take it: 'tis the method you pursue  
That grieves...

*Vic.* These words! Let me express, my friend, Your thoughts. You penetrate what I supposed

Secret. D'Ormea plies his trade betimes! I purpose to resign my crown to you.

*Cha.* To me?

*Vic.* Now,—in that chamber.

*Cha.* You resign The crown to me?

*Vic.* And time enough, Charles, sure?

Confess with me, at four-and-sixty years A crown's a load. I covet quiet once Before I die, and summoned you for that.

*Cha.* 'Tis I will speak: you ever hated me.

I bore it,—have insulted me, borne too— Now you insult yourself; and I remember What I believed you, what you really are, And cannot bear it. What! My life has passed

Under your eye, tormented as you know,— Your whole sagacities, one after one, At leisure brought to play on me—to prove me

A fool, I thought and I submitted; now You'd prove... what would you prove me?

*Vic.* This to me?

I hardly know you!

*Cha.* Know me? Oh indeed

You do not! Wait till I complain next time Of my simplicity!—for here's a sage Knows the world well, is not to be deceived, And his experience and his Macchiavels, D'Ormeas, teach him—what?—that I this while

Have envied him his crown! He has not smiled,

I warrant,—has not eaten, drunk, nor slept, For I was plotting with my Princess yonder!

Who knows what we might do or might not do?

Go now, be politic, astound the world! That sentry in the antechamber—nay, The varlet who disposed this precious trap

[*Pointing to the crown.* That was to take me—ask them if they think Their own sons envy them their posts!—

Know me!

*Vic.* But you know me, it seems: so, learn in brief, My pleasure. This assembly is convened...

*Cha.* Tell me, that woman put it in your head!

You were not sole contriver of the scheme, My father!

*Vic.* Now observe me, sir! I jest Seldom—on these points, never. Here, I say,

The knights assemble to see me concede, And you accept, Sardinia's crown.

*Cha.* Farewell!

'Twere vain to hope to change this: I can end it.

Not that I cease from being yours, when sunk

Into obscurity: 'I'll die for you, But not annoy you with my presence. Sir, Farewell! Farewell!

*Enter D'ORMEA.*

*D'O. [aside].* Ha, sure he's changed again—

Means not to fall into the cunning trap! Then Victor, I shall yet escape you, Victor!

*Vic. [suddenly placing the crown upon the head of CHARLES].* D'Ormea, your King!

[*To CHARLES.*] My son, obey me!

Charles,

Your father, clearer-sighted than yourself, Decides it must be so. 'Faith, this looks real!

My reasons after; reason upon reason After: but now, obey me! Trust in me! Be this, you save Sardinia, you save me! Why, the boy swoons! [*To D'ORMEA.*]

Come this side!

*D'O. [as CHARLES turns from him to VICTOR].* You persist?

*Vic.* Yes, I conceive the gesture's meaning. 'Faith,

He almost seems to hate you: how is that? Be re-assured, my Charles! Is't over now?

Then, Marquis, tell the new King what remains

To do! A moment's work. Del Borgo reads

The Act of Abdication out, you sign it, Then I sign; after that, come back to me.

*D'O.* Sir, for the last time, pause!

*Vic.* Five minutes longer

I am your sovereign, Marquis. Hesitate— And I'll so turn those minutes to account

That . . . Ay, you recollect me! [*Aside.*]

Could I bring

My foolish mind to undergo the reading That Act of Abdication!

[*As CHARLES motions D'ORMEA to precede him.*

Thanks, dear Charles!

[*CHARLES and D'ORMEA retire.*

*Vic.* A novel feature in the boy,—indeed Just what I feared he wanted most. Quite right,

His earnest tone: your truth, now, for effect!

It answers every purpose: with that look, That voice,—I hear him: 'I began no

treaty,

(He speaks to Spain), 'nor ever dreamed of this

'You show me; this I from my soul regret; 'But if my father signed it, bid not me

'Dishonour him—who gave me all, be side:'

And, 'True,' says Spain, 'twere harsh to visit that  
'Upon the Prince.' Then come the nobles trooping:

'I grieve at these exacti<sup>o</sup>ns—I had cut  
'This hand off ere impose them; but shall I  
'Undo my father's deed?'—and they confer:

'Doubtless he was no party, after all;  
'Give the Prince time!'

Ay, give us time, but time!  
Only, he must not, when the dark day comes,

Refer our friends to me and frustrate all.  
We'll have no child's play, no desponding fits,

No Charles at each cross turn entreating  
Victor

To take his crown again. Guard against that!

*Enter D'ORMEA.*

Long live King Charles!

No—Charles's counsellor!  
Well, is it over, Marquis? Did I jest?

D'O. 'King Charles!' What then may you be?

Vic. Anything!  
A country gentleman that, cured of bustle,  
Now beats a quick retreat toward Chambery,

Would hunt and hawk and leave you noisy folk

To drive your trade without him. I'm Count Remont—

Count Tende—any little place's Count!

D'O. Then Victor, Captain against Catinat

At Staffarde, where the French beat you; and Duke

At Turin, where you beat the French; King late

Of Savoy, Piedmont, Montferrat, Sardinia,  
—Now, 'any little place's Count'—

Vic. Proceed!

D'O. Breaker of vows to God, who crowned you first;

Breaker of vows to man, who kept you since;

Most profligate to me who outraged God  
And man to serve you, and am made pay crimes

I was but privy to, by passing thus  
To your imbecile son—who, well you know,

Must—(when the people here, and nations there,

Clamour for you the main delinquent, slipped

From King to—'Count of any little place')  
Must needs surrender me, all in his reach,—

¶, sir, forgive you: for I see the end—  
See you on your return—(you will return)—

To him you trust, a moment . . .  
Vic. Trust him? How?

My poor man, merely a prime-minister,  
Make me know where my trust errs!

D'O. In his fear,  
His love, his— but discover for yourself  
What you are weakest, trusting in!

Vic. Aha,  
D'Ormea, not a shrewder scheme than this  
In your repertory? You know old Victor—

Vain, choleric, inconstant, rash—(I've heard

Talkers who little thought the King so close)

Felicitous now, were't not, to provoke him  
To clean forget, one minute afterward,

His solemn act, and call the nobles back  
And pray them give again the very power

He has abjured?—for the dear sake of what?

Vengeance on you, D'Ormea! No: such am I,

Count Tende or Count anything you please,

—Only, the same that did the things you say,

And, among other things you say not, used  
Your finest fibre, meanest muscle,—you

I used, and now, since you will have it so,  
Leave to your fate—mere lumber in the midst,

You and your works. Why, what on earth beside

Are you made for, you sort of ministers?  
D'O. Not left, though, to my fate!

Your witless son  
Has more wit than to load himself with lumber:

He foils you that way, and I follow you.  
Vic. Stay with my son—protect the weaker side!

D'O. Ay, to be tossed the people like a rag,

And flung by them for Spain and Austria's sport,

Abolishing the record of your part  
In all this perfidy!

Vic. Prevent, beside,  
My own return!

D'O. That's half prevented now!  
'Twill go hard but you find a wondrous charm

In exile, to discredit me. The Alps,  
Silk-mills to watch, vines asking vigilance—

Hounds open for the stag, your hawk's a-wing—

Brave days that wait the Louis of the South,  
Italy's Janus!

Vic. So, the lawyer's clerk  
Won't tell me that I shall repent!

D'O. You give me  
Full leave to ask if you repent?

Vic. Whene'er



Sufficient time's elapsed for that, you judge!

[*Shouts inside 'King CHARLES!'*]

*D'O.* Do you repent?

*Vic.* [*after a slight pause*]. . . I've kept them waiting? Yes!

Come in, complete the Abdication, sir!  
[*They go out.*]

*Enter POLYXENA.*

*Pol.* A shout! The sycophants are free of Charles!

Oh is not this like Italy? No fruit  
Of his or my distempered fancy, this,  
But just an ordinary fact! Beside,  
Here they've set forms for such proceed-  
ings; Victor

Imprisoned his own mother: he should know,

If any, how a son's to be deprived  
Of a son's right. Our duty's palpable.  
Ne'er was my husband for the wily king  
And the unworthy subjects: be it so!

Come you safe out of them, my Charles!  
Our life

Grows not the broad and dazzling life, I  
dreamed

Might prove your lot; for strength was shut  
in you

None guessed but I—strength which, un-  
trammelled once,

Had little shamed your vaunted ancestry—  
Patience and self-devotion, fortitude,  
Simplicity and utter truthfulness

—All which, they shout to lose!

So, now my work  
Begins—to save him from regret. Save  
Charles

Regret?—thenoble nature! He's not made  
Like these Italians: 'tis a German soul.

*CHARLES enters crowned.*

Oh, where's the King's heir? Gone!—the  
Crown Prince? Gone!—

Where's Savoy? Gone!—Sardinia? Gone!  
But Charles

Is left! And when my Rhine-land bowers  
arrive,

If he looked almost handsome yester-  
twilight

As his grey eyes seemed widening into  
black

Because I praised him, then how will he  
look?

Farewell, you stripped and whited mul-  
berry-trees

Bound each to each by lazy ropes of vine!  
Now I'll teach you my language: I'm not  
forced

To speak Italian now, Charles?

[*She sees the crown.*] What is this?  
Answer me—who has done this? Answer!

*Cha.* He!  
I am King now.

*Pol.* Oh worst, worst, worst of all!  
Tell me! What, Victor? He has made  
you King?

What's he then? What's to follow this?  
You, King?

*Cha.* Have I done wrong? Yes, for you  
were not by!

*Pol.* Tell me from first to last.  
*Cha.* Hush—a new world

Brightens before me; he is moved away  
—The dark form that eclipsed it, he sub-  
sides

Into a shape supporting me like you,  
And I, alone, tend upward, more and more

Tend upward: I am grown Sardinia's King.  
*Pol.* Now stop: was not this Victor,

Duke of Savoy  
At ten years old?

*Cha.* He was.  
*Pol.* And the Duke spent

Since then, just four-and-fifty years in toil  
To be—what?

*Cha.* King.  
*Pol.* Then why unking himself?

*Cha.* Those years are cause enough.  
*Pol.* The only cause?

*Cha.* Some new perplexities.  
*Pol.* Which you can solve

Although he cannot?

*Cha.* He assures me so.  
*Pol.* And this he means shall last—how  
long?

*Cha.* How long?  
Think you I fear the perils I confront?

He's praising me before the people's face—  
My people!

*Pol.* Then he's changed—grown kind,  
the King?

Where can the trap be?  
*Cha.* Heart and soul I pledge!

My father, could I guard the crown you  
gained,

Transmit as I received it,—all good else  
Would I surrender!

*Pol.* Ah, it opens then  
Before you, all you dreaded formerly?

You are rejoiced to be a king, my Charles?

*Cha.* So much to dare? The better;  
—much to dread?

The better. I'll adventure though alone.  
Triumph or die, there's Victor still to wit-  
ness

Who dies or triumphs—either way, alone!  
*Pol.* Once I had found my share in  
triumph, Charles,

Or death.  
*Cha.* But you are I! But you I call

To take, Heaven's proxy, vows I tendered  
Heaven

A moment since. I will deserve the crown!  
*Pol.* You will. [*Aside.*] No doubt it were

a glorious thing  
For any people, if a heart like his

Ruled over it. I would I saw the trap.

*Enter VICTOR.*

'Tis he must show me.

*Vic.* So, the mask falls off  
An old man's foolish move at last. Spare  
thanks!

I know you, and Polyxena I know.  
Here's Charles—I am his guest now—does  
he bid me

Be seated? And my light-haired blue-eyed  
child

Must not forget the old man far away  
At Chambéry, who dozes while she reigns.

*Pol.* Most grateful shall we now be,  
talking least

Of gratitude—indeed of anything  
That hinders what yourself must need to  
say

To Charles.

*Cha.* Pray speak, sir!

*Vic.* 'Faith, not much to say:  
Only what shows itself, you once i' the  
point

Of sight. You're now the King: you'll  
comprehend

Much you may oft have wondered at—the  
shifts,

Dissimulation, wiliness I showed.

For what's our post? Here's Savoy and  
here's Piedmont,

Here's Montferrat—a breadth here, a  
space there—

To o'ersweep all these, what's one weapon  
worth?

I often think of how they fought in Greece:  
(Or Rome, which was it? You're the  
scholar, Charles!)

You made a front-thrust? But if your  
shield too

Were not adroitly planted, some shrewd  
knave

Reached you behind; and him foiled,  
straight if thong

And handle of that shield were not cast  
loose,

And you enabled to outstrip the wind,  
Fresh foes assailed you, either side; 'scape  
these,

And reach your place of refuge—e'en then,  
odds

If the gate opened unless breath enough  
Were left in you to make its lord a speech.

Oh, you will see!

*Cha.* No: straight on shall I go,  
Truth helping; win with it or die with it.

*Vic.* 'Faith, Charles, you're not made  
Europe's fighting-man!

The barrier-guarder, if you please. You  
clutch

Hold and consolidate, with envious France  
This side, with Austria that the territory

I held—ay, and will hold . . . which you  
shall hold

Despite the couple! But I've surely earned

Exemption from these weary politics,  
—The privilege to prattle with my son  
And daughter here, though Europe wait  
the while.

*Pol.* Nay, sir,—at Chambéry, away for  
ever,

As soon you will be, 'tis farewell we bid  
you:

Turn these few fleeting moments to ac-  
count!

'Tis just as though it were a death.

*Vic.* Indeed!

*Pol.* [aside]. Is the trap there?

*Cha.* Ay, call this parting—death!  
The sadder your memory becomes.

If I misrule Sardinia, how bring back

My father?

*Vic.* I mean . . .

*Pol.* [who watches VICTOR narrowly this  
while]. Your father does not mean

You should be ruling for your father's  
sake:

It is your people must concern you wholly  
Instead of him. You mean this, sir? (He  
drops

My hand!)

*Cha.* That people is now part of me.

*Vic.* About the people! I took certain  
measures

Some short time since . . . Oh, I know well,  
you know

But little of my measures! These affect  
The nobles; we've resumed some grants,  
imposed

A tax or two: prepare yourself, in short,  
For clamour on that score. Mark me: you  
yield

No jot of aught entrusted you!

*Pol.* No jot

You yield!

*Cha.* My father, when I took the oath,  
Although my eye might stray in search of  
yours,

I heard it, understood it, promised God  
What you require. Till from this eminence

He move me, here I keep, nor shall concede  
The meanest of my rights.

*Vic.* [aside]. The boy's a fool!  
—Or rather, I'm a fool: for, what's wrong  
here?

To-day the sweets of reigning: let to-  
morrow

Be ready with its bitters.

*Enter D'ORMEA.*

There's beside

Somewhat to press upon your notice first.

*Cha.* Then why delay it for an instant,  
sir?

That Spanish claim perchance? And, now  
you speak,

—This morning, my opinion was mature,  
Which, boy-like, I was bashful in pro-  
ducing

To one I ne'er am like to fear in future!  
My thought is formed upon that Spanish claim.

*Vic.* Betimes indeed. Not now, Charles!

You require  
A host of papers on it.

*D'O.* [coming forward]. Here they are.  
[To CHARLES.] I, sir, was minister and much beside

Of the late monarch; to say little, him  
I served: on you I have, to say e'en less,  
No claim. This case contains those papers:  
with them

I tender you my office.

*Vic.* [hastily]. Keep him, Charles!  
There's reason for it—many reasons: you  
Distrust him, nor are so far wrong there,  
—but

He's mixed up in this matter—he'll desire  
To quit you, for occasions known to me:  
Do not accept those reasons: have him  
stay!

*Pol.* [aside]. His minister thrust on us!

*Cha.* [to D'ORMEA]. Sir, believe,  
In justice to myself, you do not need  
E'en this commending: howsoever might  
seem

My feelings toward you, as a private man,  
They quit me in the vast and untried  
field

Of action. Though I shall myself (as late  
In your own hearing I engaged to do)  
Preside o'er my Sardinia, yet your help  
Is necessary. Think the past forgotten  
And serve me now!

*D'O.* I did not offer you  
My service—would that I could serve you,  
sir!

As for the Spanish matter . . .

*Vic.* But despatch  
At least the dead, in my good daughter's  
phrase,

Before the living! Help to house me safe  
Ere with D'Ormea you set the world a-  
gape!

Here is a paper—will you overlook  
What I propose reserving for my needs?  
I get as far from you as possible:

Here's what I reckon my expenditure.

*Cha.* [reading]. A miserable fifty thou-  
sand crowns—

*Vic.* Oh, quite enough for country  
gentlemen!

Beside the exchequer happens . . . but find  
out

All that, yourself!

*Cha.* [still reading]. 'Count Tende'—  
what means this?

*Vic.* Me: you were but an infant when  
I burst

Through the defile of Tende upon France.  
Had only my allies kept true to me!

No matter. Tende's, then, a name I take  
Just as . . .

*D'O.* —The Marchioness Sebastian  
takes

The name of Spigno.

*Cha.* How, sir?

*Vic.* [to D'ORMEA]. Fool! All that  
Was for my own detailing. [To CHARLES.]

That anon!

*Cha.* [to D'ORMEA]. Explain what you  
have said, sir!

*D'O.*

I supposed  
The marriage of the King to her I named,  
Profoundly kept a secret these few weeks,  
Was not to be one, now he's Count.

*Pol.* [aside]. With us

The minister—with him the mistress!

*Cha.* [to VICTOR]. No—

Tell me you have not taken her—that  
woman

To live with, past recall!

*Vic.* And where's the crime . . .

*Pol.* [to CHARLES]. True, sir, this is a  
matter past recall

And past your cognizance. A day before,  
And you had been compelled to note this:  
now,—

Why note it? The King saved his House  
from shame:

What the Count did, is no concern of  
yours.

*Cha.* [after a pause]. The Spanish claim,  
D'Ormea!

*Vic.*

Why, my son,  
I took some ill-advised . . . one's age, in  
fact,

Spoils everything: though I was over-  
reached,

A younger brain, we'll trust, may extri-  
cate

Sardinia readily. To-morrow, D'Ormea,  
Inform the King!

*D'O.* [without regarding VICTOR, and  
leisurely]. Thus stands the case with  
Spain:

When first the Infant Carlos claimed his  
proper

Succession to the throne of Tuscany . . .

*Vic.* I tell you, that stands over! Let  
that rest!

There is the policy!

*Cha.* [to D'ORMEA]. Thus much I know,  
And more—too much: the remedy?

*D'O.* Of course!

No glimpse of one.

*Vic.* No remedy at all!

It makes the remedy itself—time makes it.

*D'O.* [to CHARLES]. But if . . .

*Vic.* [still more hastily]. In fine, I  
shall take care of that:

And, with another project that I have . . .

*D'O.* [turning on him.] Oh, since Count  
Tende means to take again

King Victor's crown!—

*Pol.* [throwing herself at VICTOR's feet].  
E'en now retake it, sir!

Oh speak! We are your subjects both,  
once more!  
Say it—a word effects it! You meant not,  
Nor do mean now, to take it: but you  
must!

'Tis in you—in your nature—and the  
shame's  
Not half the shame 'twould grow to after-  
wards!

*Cha.* Polyxena!

*Pol.* A word recalls the knights—  
Say it! What's promising and what's the  
past?

Say you are still King Victor!

*D'O.* Better say  
The Count repents, in brief! [*VICTOR rises.*]

*Cha.* With such a crime

I have not charged you, sir!

*Pol.* (Charles turns from me!)

## SECOND YEAR, 1731.—KING CHARLES

### PART I

*Enter Queen POLYXENA and D'ORMEA.—  
A pause.*

*Pol.* And now, sir, what have you to  
say?

*D'O.* Count Tende...

*Pol.* Affirm not I betrayed you; you  
resolve  
On uttering this strange intelligence  
—Nay, post yourself to find me ere I reach  
The capital, because you knew, King  
Charles

Tarries a day or two at Evian baths  
Behind me:—but take warning,—here and  
thus

[*Seating herself in the royal seat.*  
I listen, if I listen—not your friend.  
Explicitly the statement, if you still  
Persist to urge it on me, must proceed:  
I am not made for aught else.

*D'O.* Good! Count Tende...

*Pol.* I, who mistrust you, shall acquaint  
King Charles  
Who even more mistrusts you.

*D'O.* Does he so?

*Pol.* Why should he not?

*D'O.* Ay, why not?

Motives, seek  
You virtuous people, motives! Say, I see  
God at the devil's bidding—will that do?  
I'm proud: our people have been pacified,  
Really I know not how—

*Pol.* By truthfulness.

*D'O.* Exactly; that shows I had ought  
to do

With pacifying them. Our foreign perils  
Also exceed my means to stay: but here  
'Tis otherwise, and my pride's piqued.  
Count Tende

Completes a full year's absence: would  
you, madam,

Have the old monarch back, his mistress  
back,

His measures back? I pray you, act upon  
My counsel, or they will be.

*Pol.* When?

*D'O.* Let's think.

Home-matters settled—Victor's coming  
now;

Let foreign matters settle—Victor's here  
Unless I stop him; as I will, this way.

*Pol.* [*reading the papers he presents.*] If  
this should prove a plot 'twixt you  
and Victor?

You seek annoyances to give the pretext  
For what you say you fear.

*D'O.* Oh, possibly!

I go for nothing. Only show King Charles  
That thus Count Tende purposes return,  
And style me his inviter, if you please!

*Pol.* Half of your tale is true; most like,  
the Count

Seeks to return: but why stay you with us?  
To aid in such emergencies.

*D'O.* Keep safe

Those papers: or, to serve me, leave no  
proof

I thus have counselled! When the Count  
returns,

And the King abdicates, 'twill stead me  
little

To have thus counselled.

*Pol.* The King abdicate!

*D'O.* He's good, we knew long since—  
wise, we discover—

Firm, let us hope:—but I'd have gone to  
work

With him away. Well!

[*CHARLES without.*] In the Council  
Chamber?

*D'O.* All's lost!

*Pol.* Oh, surely not King

Charles! He's changed—  
That's not this year's care-burthened voice  
and step:

'Tis last year's step, the Prince's voice!

*D'O.* I know.

[*Enter CHARLES:—D'ORMEA retiring a  
little.*]

*Cha.* Now wish me joy, Polyxena! Wish  
it me

The old way! [*She embraces him.*]

There was too much cause for that!  
But I have found myself again. What news  
At Turin? Oh, if you but felt the load

I'm free of—free! I said this year would  
end

Or it, or me—but I am free, thank God!

*Pol.* How, Charles?

*Cha.* You do not guess?

The day I found  
Sardinia's hideous coil, at home, abroad,

And how my father was involved in it,—  
Of course, I vowed to rest and smile no  
more

Until I cleared his name from obloquy.  
We did the people right—'twas much to  
gain

That point, redress our nobles' grievance,  
too—

But that took place here, was no crying  
shame:

All must be done abroad,—if I abroad  
Appeased the justly-angered Powers, de-  
stroyed

The scandal, took down Victor's name at  
last

From a bad eminence, I then might breathe  
And rest! No moment was to lose. Be-  
hold

The proud result—a Treaty, Austria, Spain  
Agree to—

*D'O.* [*aside*]. I shall merely stipulate  
For an experienced headsmen.

*Cha.* Not a soul  
Is compromised: the blotted past's a blank:  
Even *D'Ormea* escapes unquestioned.  
See!

It reached me from Vienna; I remained  
At Evian to despatch the Count his news;  
'Tis gone to Chambery a week ago—  
And here am I: do I deserve to feel  
Your warm white arms around me?

*D'O.* [*coming forward*]. He knows  
that?

*Cha.* What, in Heaven's name, means  
this?

*D'O.* He knows that matters  
Are settled at Vienna? Not too late!  
Plainly, unless you post this very hour  
Some man you trust (say, me) to Chambery  
And take precautions I acquaint you with,  
Your father will return here.

*Cha.* Are you crazed,  
*D'Ormea*? Here? For what? As well re-  
turn

To take his crown!

*D'O.* He will return for that.

*Cha.* [*to POLYXENA*]. You have not  
listened to this man?

*Pol.* He spoke  
About your safety—and I listened.

[*He disengages himself from her arms.*

*Cha.* [*to D'ORMEA*]. What  
Apprised you of the Count's intentions?

*D'O.* Me?  
His heart, sir; you may not be used to read  
Such evidence however; therefore read

[*Pointing to POLYXENA's papers.*  
My evidence.

*Cha.* [*to POLYXENA*]. Oh, worthy this of  
you!

And of your speech I never have forgotten,  
Though I professed forgetfulness; which  
haunts me

As if I did not know how false it was;

Which made me toil unconsciously thus  
long

That there might be no least occasion left  
For aught of its prediction coming true!  
And now, when there is left no least occa-  
sion

To instigate my father to such crime—  
When I might venture to forget (I hoped)

That speech and recognize *Polyxena*—  
Oh worthy, to revive, and tenfold worse,  
That plague! *D'Ormea* at your ear, his  
slanders

Still in your hand! Silent?

*Pol.* As the wronged are.

*Cha.* And you, *D'Ormea*, since when  
have you presumed

To spy upon my father? I conceive  
What that wise paper shows, and easily.  
Since when?

*D'O.* The when and where and  
how belong

To me. 'Tis sad work, but I deal in such.  
You oftimes serve yourself; I'd serve you  
here:

Use makes me not so squeamish. In a word,  
Since the first hour he went to Chambery,  
Of his seven servants, five have I suborned.

*Cha.* You hate my father?  
*D'O.* Oh, just as you will!

[*Looking at POLYXENA.*

A minute since, I loved him—hate him,  
now!

What matter?—if you ponder just one  
thing:

Has he that treaty?—he is setting forward  
Already. Are your guards here?

*Cha.* Well for you

They are not! [*To POLYXENA*]. Him I  
knew of old, but you—

To hear that pickthank, further his de-  
signs! [*To D'ORMEA*.

Guards?—were they here, I'd bid them,  
for your trouble,

Arrest you.

*D'O.* Guards you shall not want.

I lived

The servant of your choice, not of your  
need.

You never greatly needed me till now  
That you discard me. This is my arrest.

Again I tender you my charge—its duty  
Would bid me press you read those docu-  
ments.

Here, sir! [*Offering his badge of office.*

*Cha.* [*taking it*]. The papers also! Do  
you think

I dare not read them?

*Pol.* Read them, sir!

*Cha.* They prove,

My father, still a month within the year  
Since he so solemnly consigned it me,

Means to resume his crown? They shall  
prove that,

Or my best dungeon . . .

D'O. Even say, Chambery!  
'Tis vacant, I surmise, by this.

Cha. You prove  
Your words or pay their forfeit, sir. Go  
there!

Polyxena, one chance to rend the veil  
Thickening and blackening 'twixt us two!

Do say,  
You'll see the falsehood of the charges  
proved!

Do say, at least, you wish to see them  
proved,

False charges—my heart's love of other  
times!

Pol. Ah, Charles!

Cha. [to D'ORMEA]. Precede me, sir!

D'O. And I'm at length  
A martyr for the truth! No end, they say,  
Of miracles. My conscious innocence!

[As they go out, enter—by the middle  
door, at which he pauses—VICTOR.

Vic. Sure I heard voices? No. Well, I  
do best

To make at once for this, the heart o' the  
place.

The old room! Nothing changed! So near  
my seat,

D'Ormea? [Pushing away the stool which  
is by the KING'S chair.

I want that meeting over first,  
I know not why. Tush, he, D'Ormea,  
slow

To hearten me, the supple knave? That  
burst

Of spite so eased him! He'll inform me . . .  
What?

Why come I hither? All's in rough: let all  
Remain rough. There's full time to draw  
back—nay,

There's nought to draw back from, as yet;  
whereas,

If reason should be, to arrest a course  
Of error—reason good, to interpose

And save, as I have saved so many times,  
Our House, admonish my son's giddy  
youth,

Relieve him of a weight that proves too  
much—

Now is the time,—or now, or never.

'Faith,  
This kind of step is pitiful, not due

To Charles, this stealing back—hither,  
because

He's from his capital! Oh Victor! Victor!  
But thus it is. The age of crafty men

Is loathsome; youth contrives to carry off  
Dissimulation; we may intersperse

Extenuating passages of strength,  
Arour, vivacity, and wit—may turn

E'en guile into a voluntary grace:  
But one's old age, when graces drop away

And leave guile the pure staple of our  
lives—

Ah, loathsome!

Not so—or why pause I? Turin  
Is mine to have, were I so minded, for

The asking; all the army's mine—I've  
witnessed

Each private fight beneath me; all the  
Court's

Mine too; and, best of all, D'Ormea's still  
D'Ormea and mine. There's some grace

clinging yet.  
Had I decided on this step, ere midnight

I'd take the crown.

No. Just this step to rise  
Exhausts me. Here am I arrived: the rest

Must be done for me. Would I could sit  
here

And let things right themselves, the masque  
unmasque

Of the old King, crownless, grey hair and  
hot blood,—

The young King, crowned, but calm before  
his time,

They say,—the eager mistress with her  
taunts,—

And the sad earnest wife who motions me  
Away—ay, there she knelt to me! E'en

yet  
I can return and sleep at Chambery  
A dream out.

Rather shake it off at Turin,  
King Victor! Say: to Turin—yes, or no?

'Tis this relentless noonday-lighted  
chamber,

Lighted like life but silent as the grave,  
That disconcerts me. That's the change

must strike.  
No silence last year! Some one flung doors  
wide

(Those two great doors which scrutinize  
me now)

And out I went 'mid crowds of men—men  
talking,

Men watching if my lip fell or brow knit,  
Men saw me safe forth, put me on my

road:  
That makes the misery of this return.

Oh had a battle done it! Had I dropped,  
Haling some battle, three entire days old,

Hither and thither by the forehead—  
dropped

In Spain, in Austria, best of all, in France—  
Spurned on its horns or underneath its

hooves,  
When the spent monster went upon its

knees  
To pad and pash the prostrate wretch—I,

Victor,  
Sole to have stood up against France, beat

down  
By inches, brayed to pieces finally

In some vast unimaginable charge,  
A flying hell of horse and foot and guns

Over me, and all's lost, for ever lost,  
There's no more Victor when the world

wakes up!

Then silence, as of a raw battle-field,  
Throughout the world. Then after (as  
whole days  
After, you catch at intervals faint noise  
Through the stiff crust of frozen blood)—  
there creeps  
A rumour forth, so faint, no noise at all,  
That a strange old man, with face outworn  
for wounds,  
Is stumbling on from frontier town to  
town,  
Begging a pittance that may help him find  
His Turin out; what scorn and laughter  
follow  
The coin you fling into his cap! And last,  
Some bright morn, how men crowd about  
the midst  
O' the market-place, where takes the old  
king breath  
Ere with his crutch he strike the palace-  
gate  
Wide ope!

To Turin, yes or no—or no?

*Re-enter CHARLES with papers.*

*Cha.* Just as I thought! A miserable  
falsehood  
Of hirelings discontented with their pay  
And longing for enfranchisement! A few  
Testy expressions of old age that thinks  
To keep alive its dignity o'er slaves  
By means that suit their natures!  
[*Tearing them.*] Thus they shake  
My faith in Victor!

[*Turning, he discovers VICTOR.*

*Vic.* [after a pause]. Not at Evian,  
Charles?

What's this? Why do you run to close the  
doors?

No welcome for your father?

*Cha.* [aside]. Not his voice!  
What would I give for one imperious tone  
Of the old sort! That's gone for ever.

*Vic.* Must  
I ask once more . . .

*Cha.* No—I concede it, sir!  
You are returned for . . . true, your health  
declines;

True, Chambery's a bleak unkindly spot;  
You'd choose one fitter for your final  
lodge—

Veneria, or Moncagliè—ay, that's close  
And I concede it.

*Vic.* I received advices  
Of the conclusion of the Spanish matter,  
Dated from Evian Baths . . .

*Cha.* And you forbore  
To visit me at Evian, satisfied  
The work I had to do would fully task  
The little wit I have, and that your presence  
Would only disconcert me—

*Vic.* Charles?  
*Cha.* —Me, set  
For ever in a foreign course to yours,

And . . .

Sir, this way of wile were good to catch,  
But I have not the sleight of it. The truth!  
Though I sink under it! What brings you  
here?

*Vic.* Not hope of this reception, cer-  
tainly,  
From one who'd scarce assume a stranger  
mode

Of speech, did I return to bring about  
Some awfullest calamity!

*Cha.* —You mean,  
Did you require your crown again! Oh  
yes,  
I should speak otherwise! But turn not  
that

To jesting! Sir, the truth! Your health  
declines?

Is aught deficient in your equipage?  
Wisely you seek myself to make complaint,  
And foil the malice of the world which  
laughs

At petty discontents; but I shall care  
That not a soul knows of this visit. Speak!

*Vic.* [aside]. Here is the grateful much-  
professing son  
Prepared to worship me, for whose sole  
sake

I think to waive my plans of public good!  
[*Aloud.*] Nay, Charles, if I did seek to take  
once more

My crown, were so disposed to plague  
myself,

What would be warrant for this bitterness?  
I gave it—grant I would resume it—well?

*Cha.* I should say simply—leaving out  
the why

And how—you made me swear to keep  
that crown:

And as you then intended . . .

*Vic.* Fool! What way  
Could I intend or not intend? As man,  
With a man's will, when I say 'I intend,'  
I can intend up to a certain point,

No farther. I intended to preserve  
The crown of Savoy and Sardinia whole:  
And if events arise demonstrating  
The way, I hoped should guard it, rather  
like

To lose it . . .

*Cha.* Keep within your sphere  
and mine!

It is God's province we usurp on, else.  
Here, blindfold through the maze of things  
we walk

By a slight clue of false, true, right and  
wrong;

All else is rambling and presumption. I  
Have sworn to keep this kingdom: there's  
my truth.

*Vic.* Truth, boy, is here, within my  
breast; and in

Your recognition of it, truth is, too;  
And in the effect of all this tortuous dealing

With falsehood, used to carry out the truth,

—In its success, this falsehood turns, again,  
Truth for the world. But you are right:  
these themes

Are over-subtle. I should rather say  
In such a case, frankly,—it fails, my  
scheme:

I hoped to see you bring about, yourself,  
What I must bring about. I interpose  
On your behalf—with my son's good in  
sight—

To hold what he is nearly letting go,  
Confirm his title, add a grace perhaps.

There's Sicily, for instance,—granted me  
And taken back, some years since: till I  
give

That island with the rest, my work's half  
done.

For his sake, therefore, as of those he  
rules . . .

*Cha.* Our sakes are one; and that, you  
could not say,

Because my answer would present itself  
Forthwith:—a year has wrought an age's  
change.

This people's not the people now, you once  
Could benefit; nor is my policy

Your policy.

*Vic.* [with an outburst]. I know it! You  
undo

All I have done—my life of toil and care!

I left you this the absolute rule

In Europe; do you think I sit and smile,

Bid you throw power to the populace—

See my Sardinia, that has kept apart,

Join in the mad and democratic whirl

Whereto I see all Europe haste full tide?

England casts off her kings; France mimics

England:

This realm I hoped was safe. Yet here I  
talk,

When I can save it, not by force alone,

But bidding plagues, which follow sons  
like you,

Fasten upon my disobedient . . .

[*Recollecting himself.*] Surely  
I could say this—if minded so—my son?

*Cha.* You could not. Bitter curses  
than your curse

Have I long since denounced upon myself

If I misused my power. In fear of these

I entered on those measures—will abide

By them: so, I should say, Count Tende . . .

*Vic.*

No!

But no! But if, my Charles, your—more  
than old—

Half-foolish father urged these arguments,  
And then confessed them futile, but said,

plainly

That he forgot his promise, found his  
strength

\*Fail him, had thought at savage Cham-  
bery

Too much of brilliant Turin, Rivoli  
here,

And Susa, and Veneria, and Superga—  
Pined for the pleasant places he had  
built

When he was fortunate and young—

*Cha.* My father!

*Vic.* Stay yet!—and if he said he could  
not die

Deprived of baubles he had put aside,

He deemed, for ever—of the Crown that  
binds

Your brain up, whole, sound and impreg-  
nable,

Creating kingliness—the Sceptre too,

Whose mere wind, should you wave it,  
back would beat

Invaders—and the golden Ball which  
throbs

As if you grasped the palpitating heart

Indeed o' the realm, to mould as choose  
you may!

—If I must totter up and down the streets

My sires built, where myself have intro-  
duced

And fostered laws and letters, sciences,

The civil and the military arts!

Stay, Charles. I see you letting me pretend

To live my former self once more—King  
Victor,

The venturesome yet politic: they style me

Again, the Father of the Prince: friends  
wink

Good-humouredly at the delusion you

So sedulously guard from all rough truths

That else would break upon my dotage!—  
You—

Whom now I see preventing my old  
shame—

I tell not, point by cruel point, my tale—

For is't not in your breast my brow is  
hid?

Is not your hand extended? Say you not . . .

*Enter D'ORMEA, leading in POLYXENA.*

*Pol.* [advancing and withdrawing CHARLES  
—to VICTOR]. In this conjuncture

even, he would say

(Though with a moistened eye and quiver-  
ing lip)

The suppliant is my father. I must save

A great man from himself, nor see him  
fling

His well-earned fame away: there must  
not follow

Ruin so utter, a break-down of worth

So absolute: no enemy shall learn,

He thrust his child 'twixt danger and him-  
self,

And, when that child somehow stood  
danger out,

Stole back with serpent wiles to ruin  
Charles



—Body, that's much,—and soul, that's more—and realm,

That's most of all! No enemy shall say . . .

*D'O.* Do you repent, sir?

*Vic.* [resuming himself]. *D'Ormea?*

This is well!

Worthily done, King Charles, craftily done!

Judiciously you post these, to o'erhear  
The little your importunate father thrusts  
Himself on you to say!—Ah, they'll correct  
The amiable blind facility

You show in answering his peevish suit.  
What can he need to sue for? Thanks,  
*D'Ormea!*

You have fulfilled your office: but for you,  
The old Count might have drawn some few  
more lives

To swell his income! Had you, lady,  
missed

The moment, a permission might be  
granted

To buttress up my ruinous old pile!  
But you remember properly the list  
Of wise precautions I took when I gave  
Nearly as much away—to reap the fruits  
I should have looked for!

*Cha.* Thanks, sir: degrade me,  
So you remain yourself! Adieu!

*Vic.* I'll not

Forget it for the future, nor presume

Next time to slight such mediators!

*Nay—*  
Had I first moved them both to intercede,  
I might secure a chamber in Moncaglièr  
—Who knows?

*Cha.* Adieu!

*Vic.* You bid me this adieu  
With the old spirit?

*Cha.* Adieu!

*Vic.* Charles—Charles!

*Cha.* Adieu!

[*VICTOR goes.*]

*Cha.* You were mistaken, Marquis, as  
you hear.

'Twas for another purpose the Count  
came.

The Count desires Moncaglièr. Give the  
order!

*D'O.* [leisurely]. Your minister has lost  
your confidence,

Asserting late, for his own purposes,  
Count Tende would . . .

*Cha.* [flinging his badge back]. Be still  
the minister!

And give a loose to your insulting joy;  
It irks me more thus stifled than expressed:  
Loose it!

*D'O.* There's none to loose, alas! I  
see

I never am to die a martyr.

*Pol.* Charles!

*Cha.* No praise, at least, Polyxena—no  
praise!

## KING CHARLES

## PART II

*D'ORMEA, seated, folding papers he has  
been examining.*

This at the last effects it: now, King Charles  
Or else King Victor—that's a balance: but  
now,

*D'Ormea* the arch-culprit, either turn  
O' the scale,—that's sure enough. A point  
to solve,

My masters, moralists, whate'er your style!  
When you discover why I rush myself  
Into a pitfall you'd pass safely by,  
Impart to me among the res! No matter.  
Prompt are the righteous ever with their  
rede

To us the wrongful; lesson them this once!  
For safe among the wicked are you set,  
*D'Ormea!* We lament life's brevity,  
Yet quarter e'en the threescore years and  
ten,

Not stick to call the quarter roundly 'life.'  
*D'Ormea* was wicked, say, some twenty  
years;

A tree so long was stunted; afterward,  
What if it grew, continued growing, till  
No fellow of the forest equalled it?  
'Twas a stump then; a stump it still must  
be:

While forward saplings, at the outset  
checked,

In virtue of that first sprout keep their style  
Amid the forest's green fraternity.

Thus I shoot up to surely get lopped down  
And bound up for the burning. Now for  
it!

*Enter CHARLES and POLYXENA with  
Attendants.*

*D'O.* [rises]. Sir, in the due discharge  
of this my office—

This enforced summons of yourself from  
Turin,

And the disclosure I am bound to make  
To-night,—there must already be, I feel,  
So much that wounds . . .

*Cha.* Well, sir?

*D'O.* —That I, perchance,  
May utter also what, another time,  
Would irk much,—it may prove less irk-  
some now.

*Cha.* What would you utter?

*D'O.* That I from my soul  
Grieve at to-night's event: for you I grieve,  
E'en grieve for . . .

*Cha.* Tush, another time for talk!  
My kingdom is in imminent danger?

*D'O.* Let  
The Count communicate with France—its  
King,

His grandson, will have Fleury's aid for,  
this,

Though for no other war.

*Cha.* First for the levies:  
What forces can I muster presently?

[*D'ORMEA delivers papers which*

*CHARLES inspects.*

*Cha.* Good—very good. Montorio . . .  
how is this?

—Equips me double the old complement  
Of soldiers?

*D'O.* Since his land has been relieved  
From double imposts, this he manages:  
But under the late monarch . . .

*Cha.* Peace! I know.  
Count Spava has omitted mentioning  
What proxy is to head these troops of his.  
*D'O.* Count Spava means to head his  
troops himself.

Something to fight for now; 'Whereas,'  
says he,

'Under the sovereign's father' . . .

*Cha.* It would seem  
That all my people love me.

*D'O.* Yes.

[*To POLYXENA while CHARLES con-  
tinues to inspect the papers.*

*A temper*

Like Victor's may avail to keep a state;  
He terrifies men and they fall not off;  
Good to restrain: best, if restraint were all.  
But, with the silent circle round him, ends  
Such sway: our King's begins precisely  
there.

For to suggest, impel and set at work,  
Is quite another function. Men may slight,  
In time of peace, the King who brought  
them peace:

In war,—his voice, his eyes, help more than  
fear.

They love you, sir!

*Cha.* [*to Attendants*]. Bring the regalia  
forth!

Quit the room! And now, Marquis,  
answer me!

Why should the King of France invade my  
realm?

*D'O.* Why? Did I not acquaint your  
Majesty

An hour ago?

*Cha.* I choose to hear again

What then I heard.

*D'O.* Because, sir, as I said,

Your father is resolved to have his crown  
At any risk; and, as I judge, calls in  
The foreigner to aid him.

*Cha.* And your reason?

For saying this?

*D'O.* [*aside*]. Ay, just his father's way!

[*To CHARLES.*] The Count wrote yester-  
day to your forces' Chief,

Rhebinder—made demand of help—

*Cha.* To try

Rhebinder—he's of alien blood: aught

else?

*D'O.* Receiving a refusal,—some hours

after,

The Count called on Del Borgo to deliver  
The Act of Abdication: he refusing,  
Or hesitating, rather—

*Cha.* What ensued?

*D'O.* At midnight, only two hours  
since, at Turin,

He rode in person to the citadel  
With one attendant, to Soccorso gate,  
And bade the governor, San Remi, open—  
Admit him.

*Cha.* For a purpose I divine.

These three were faithful, then?

*D'O.* They told it me.

And I—

*Cha.* Most faithful—

*D'O.* Tell it you—with this  
Moreover of my own: if, an hour hence,  
You have not interposed, the Count will be  
O' the road to France for succour.

*Cha.* Very good!

You do your duty now to me your monarch  
Fully, I warrant?—have, that is, your  
project

\*For saving both of us disgrace, no doubt?

*D'O.* I give my counsel,—and the only  
one.

A month since, I besought you to employ  
Restraints which had prevented many a  
pang:

But now the harsher course must be pur-  
sued.

These papers, made for the emergency,  
Will pain you to subscribe: this is a list  
Of those suspected merely—men to watch;  
This—of the few of the Count's very house-  
hold

You must, however reluctantly, arrest;  
While here's a method of remonstrance—  
sure

Not stronger than the case demands—to  
take

With the Count's self.

*Cha.* Deliver those three papers.

*Pol.* [*while CHARLES inspects them—to*  
*D'ORMEA*]. Your measures are not  
over-harsh, sir: France

Will hardly be deterred from her intents

By these.

*D'O.* If who proposes might dispose,  
I could soon satisfy you. Even these!  
Hear what he'll say at my presenting!

*Cha.* [*who has signed them*]. There!  
About the warrants! You've my signature.  
What turns you pale? I do my duty by you  
In acting boldly thus on your advice.

*D'O.* [*reading them separately*]. Arrest  
the people I suspected merely?

*Cha.* Did you suspect them?

*D'O.* Doubtless: but—but—sir,

This Forquiere's governor of Turin,  
And Rivarol and he have influence over  
Half of the capital! Rabella, too?

Why, sir—

*Cha.* Oh, leave the fear to me!

*D'O.* [still reading]. You bid me  
Incarcerate the people on this list?  
Sir—

*Cha.* But you never bade arrest those  
men,  
So close related to my father too,  
On trifling grounds?

*D'O.* Oh, as for that, St. George,  
President of Chambery's senators,  
Is hatching treason! still—

[More troubled.] Sir, Count Cumiane  
Is brother to your father's wife! What's  
here?

Arrest the wife herself?

*Cha.* You seem to think  
A venial crime this plot against me. Well?

*D'O.* [who has read the last paper].  
Wherefore am I thus ruined? Why  
not take

My life at once? This poor formality  
Is, let me say, unworthy you! Prevent it  
You, madam! I have served you, am pre-  
pared

For all disgraces: only, let disgrace  
Be plain, be proper—proper for the world  
To pass its judgment on 'twixt you and me!  
Take back your warrant, I will none of it!

*Cha.* Here is a man to talk of fickleness!  
He stakes his life upon my father's false-  
hood;

I bid him . . .

*D'O.* Not you! Were he trebly  
false,

You do not bid me . . .

*Cha.* Is't not written there?  
I thought so: give—I'll set it right.

*D'O.* Is it there?  
Oh yes, and plain—arrest him now—drag  
here

Your father! And were all six times as  
plain,

Do you suppose I trust it?

*Cha.* Just one word!  
You bring him, taken in the act of flight,  
Or else your life is forfeit.

*D'O.* Ay, to Turin  
I bring him, and to-morrow?

*Cha.* Here and now!  
The whole thing is a lie, a hateful lie,  
As I believed and as my father said.

I knew it from the first, but was compelled  
To circumvent you; and the great  
*D'Ormea,*

That baffled Alberoni and tricked Coscia,  
The miserable sower of such discord  
'Twixt sire and son, is in the toils at last.

Oh I see! you arrive—this plan of yours,  
Weak as it is, torments sufficiently  
A sick old peevish man—wings hasty  
speech,

An ill-considered threat from him; that's  
noted;  
Then out you ferret papers, his amusement  
In lonely hours of lassitude—examine

The day-by-day report of your paid spies—  
And back you come: all was not ripe, you  
find,

And, as you hope, may keep from ripening  
yet,

But you were in bare time! Only, 'twere  
best

I never saw my father—these old men  
Are potent in excuses: and meanwhile,  
*D'Ormea's* the man I cannot do without!

*Pol.* Charles—

*Cha.* Ah, no question! You  
against me too!

You'd have me eat and drink and sleep,  
live, die

With this lie coiled about me, choking me!  
No, no, *D'Ormea!* You venture life, you  
say,

Upon my father's perfidy: and I  
Have, on the whole, no right to disregard

The chains of testimony you thus wind  
About me; though I do—do from my soul

Discredit them; still I must authorize  
These measures, and I will. *Perugia!*

[Many Officers enter.] *Count—*  
You and Solar, with all the force you have,

Stand at the Marquis' orders: what he bids  
Implicitly perform! You are to bring

A traitor here; the man that's likeliest one  
At present, fronts me; you are at his beck

For a full hour! he undertakes to show  
A fouler than himself,—but, failing that,

Return with him, and, as my father lives,  
He dies this night! The clemency you  
blame

So oft, shall be revoked—rights exercised,  
Too long abjured.

[To *D'ORMEA.*] Now sir, about the  
work!

To save your king and country! Take the  
warrant!

*D'O.* You hear the sovereign's man-  
date, Count *Perugia?*

Obey me! As your diligence, expect  
Reward! All follow to *Moncagliè!*

*Cha.* [in great anguish]. *D'Ormea!*  
[*D'ORMEA goes.*]

He goes, lit up with that appalling smile!  
[To *POLYXENA,* after a pause.

At least you understand all this?  
*Pol.* These means

Of our defence—these measures of pre-  
caution?

*Cha.* It must be the best way; I should  
have else

Withered beneath his scorn.  
*Pol.* What would you say?

*Cha.* Why, do you think I mean to keep  
the crown,

*Polyxena?*  
*Pol.* You then believe the story

In spite of all—that Victor comes?  
*Cha.* Believe it?

I know that he is coming—feel the strength

That has upheld me leave me at his coming!  
'Twas mine, and now he takes his own again.

Some kinds of strength are well enough to have;

But who's to have that strength? Let my crown go!

I meant to keep it; but I cannot—canpot! Only, he shall not taunt me—he, the first . . .

See if he would not be the first to taunt me With having left his kingdom at a word. With letting it be conquered without stroke,

With . . . no—no—'tis no worse than when he left!

I've just to bid him take it, and, that over, We'll fly away—fly, for I loathe this Turin, This Rivoli, all titles loathe, all state. We'd best go to your country—unless God Send I die now!

*Pol.* Charles, hear me!

*Cha.* And again Shall you be my Polyxena—you'll take me Out of this woe! Yes, do speak, and keep speaking!

I would not let you speak just now, for fear

You'd counsel me against him: but talk, now,

As we two used to talk in blessed times: Bid me endure all his caprices; take me From this mad post above him!

*Pol.* I believe We are undone, but from a different cause. All your resources, down to the least guard, Are at D'Ormea's beck. What if, the while, He act in concert with your father? We Indeed were lost. This lonely Rivoli—Where find a better place for them?

*Cha.* [*pacing the room*]. And why Does Victor come? To undo all that's done,

Restore the past, prevent the future! Seat His mistress in your seat, and place in mine . . . Oh, my own people, whom will you find there,

To ask of, to consult with, to care for. To hold up with your hands? Whom? One that's false—

False—from the head's crown to the foot's sole, false!

The best is, that I knew it in my heart From the beginning, and expected this, And hated you, Polyxena, because You saw thro' him, though I too saw thro' him,

Saw that he meant this while he crowned me, while

He prayed for me,—nay, while he kissed my brow,

I saw—

• *Pol.* But if your measures take effect, D'Ormea true to you?

*Cha.*

Then worst of all!

I shall have loosed that callous wretch on him!

Well may the woman taunt him with his child—

I, eating here his bread, clothed in his clothes,

Seated upon his seat, let slip D'Ormea To outrage him! We talk—perchance he tears

My father from his bed; the old hands feel

For one who is not, but who should be there,

He finds D'Ormea! D'Ormea too finds him!

The crowded chamber when the lights go out—

Closed doors—the horrid scuffle in the dark—

The accursed prompting of the minute! My guards!

To horse—and after, with me—and prevent!

• *Pol.* [*seizing his hand*]. King Charles! Pause here upon this strip of time Allotted you out of eternity!

Crowns are from God: you in his name hold yours.

Your life's no least thing, were it fit your life

Should be abjured along with rule; but now,

Keep both! Your duty is to live and rule—

You, who would vulgarly look fine enough In the world's eye, deserting your soul's charge,—

Ay, you would have men's praise, this Rivoli

Would be illumined! While, as 'tis, no doubt,

Something of staid will ever rest on you; No one will rightly know why you refused To abdicate; they'll talk of deed; you could Have done, no doubt,—nor do I much expect

Future achievement will blot out the past, Envelope it in haze—nor shall we two

Live happy any more. 'Twill be, I feel, Only in moments that the duty's seen

As palpably as now: the months, the years Of painful indistinctness are to come,

While daily must we tread these palace-rooms

Pregnant with memories of the past: your eye

May turn to mine and find no comfort there,

Through fancies that beset me, as yourself, Of other courses, with far other issues,

We might have taken this great night: such bear,

As I will bear! What matters happiness?

Duty! There's man's one moment: this is yours!

*[Putting the crown on his head, and the sceptre in his hand, she places him on his seat: a long pause and silence.]*

Enter D'ORMEA and VICTOR, with Guards.

Vic. At last I speak; but once—that once, to you!

'Tis you I ask, not these your varletry, Who's King of us?

Cha. *[from his seat]*. Count Tende . . . Vic. What your spies

Assert I ponder in my soul, I say— Here to your face, amid your guards! I choose

To take again the crown whose shadow I gave—

For still its potency surrounds the weak White locks their felon hands have discomposed.

Or I'll not ask who's King, but simply, who Withholds the crown I claim? Deliver it! I have no friend in the wide world: nor France

Nor England cares for me: you see the sum Of what I can avail. Deliver it!

Cha. Take it, my father!

And now say in turn, Was it done well, my father—sure not well, To try me thus! I might have seen much cause

For keeping it—too easily seen cause! But, from that moment, e'en more woe-fully

My life had pined away, than pine it will. Already you have much to answer for. My life to pine is nothing,—her sunk eyes Were happy once! No doubt, my people think

I am their King still . . . but I cannot strive! Take it!

Vic. *[one hand on the crown CHARLES offers, the other on his neck]*. So few years give it quietly,

My son! It will drop from me. See you not? A crown's unlike a sword to give away— That, let a strong hand to a weak hand give! But crowns should slip from palsied brows to heads

Young as this head: yet mine is weak enough,

E'en weaker than I knew. I seek for phrases To vindicate my right. 'Tis of a piece! All is alike gone by with me—who beat Once D'Orleans in his lines—his very lines! To have been Eugene's comrade, Louis's rival,

And now . . .

Cha. *[putting the crown on him, to the rest]*. The King speaks, yet none kneels, I think!

Vic. I am then King! As I became a King

Despite the nations, kept myself a King, So I die King, with Kingship dying too Around me. I have lasted Europe's time. What wants my story of completion?

Where

Must needs the damning break show?

Who mistrusts

My children here—tell they of any break 'Twixt my day's sunrise and its fiery fall?

And who were by me when I died but they? D'Ormea there!

Cha. What means he?

Vic. Ever there!

Charles—how to save your story! Mine must go.

Say—say that you refused the crown to me! Charles, yours shall be my story! You immured

Me, say, at Rivoli. A single year I spend without a sight of you, then die. That will serve every purpose—tell that tale

The world!

Cha. Mistrust me? Help!

Vic. Past help, past reach!

'Tis in the heart—you cannot reach the heart:

This broke mine, that I did believe, you, Charles,

Would have denied me and disgraced me. Pol. Charles

Has never ceased to be your subject, sir! He reigned at first through setting up yourself

As pattern: if he e'er seemed harsh to you,

'Twas from a too intense appreciation Of your own character: he acted you— Ne'er for an instant did I think it real, Nor look for any other than this end.

I hold him worlds the worse on that account;

But so it was.

Cha. *[to POLYXENA]*. I love you now indeed.

*[To VICTOR.]* You never knew me.

Vic. Hardly till this moment,

When I seem learning many other things Because the time for using them is past. If 'twere to do again! That's idly wished. Truthfulness might prove policy as good As guile. Is this my daughter's forehead?

Yes:

I've made it fitter now to be a queen's Than formerly: I've ploughed the deep lines there

Which keep too well a crown from slipping off.

No matter. Guile has made me King again. Louis—'twas in King Victor's time:—long since,

When Louis reigned and, also, Victor reigned.

How the world talks already of us D'Ormea! Nearer to your King! Now  
 two! stand!  
 God of eclipse and each discoloured [Collecting his strength as D'ORMEA ap-  
 star, proaches.  
 Why do I linger then? You lied, D'Ormea! I do not repent.  
 Ha! Where lurks he? [Dies.

## DRAMATIC LYRICS

184- 185-

### CAVALIER TUNES

#### I

##### MARCHING ALONG

#### I

KENTISH Sir Byng stood for his King,  
 Bidding the crop-headed Parliament swing:  
 And, pressing a troop unable to stoop  
 And see the rogues flourish and honest folk  
 droop,  
 Marched them along, fifty-score strong,  
 Great-hearted gentlemen, singing this song.

#### II

God for King Charles! Pym and such  
 carles  
 To the Devil that prompts 'em their trea-  
 sonous parles!  
 Cavaliers, up! Lips from the cup,  
 Hands from the pasty, nor bite take nor sup  
 Till you're—

CHORUS.—*Marching along, fifty-score  
 strong,  
 Great-hearted gentlemen,  
 singing this song.*

#### III

Hampden to hell, and his obsequies' knell  
 Serve Hazelrig, Fiennes, and young Harry  
 as well!  
 England, good cheer! Rupert is near!  
 Kentish and loyalists, keep we not here

CHORUS.—*Marching along, fifty-score  
 strong,  
 Great-hearted gentlemen,  
 singing this song?*

#### IV

Then, God for King Charles! Pym and  
 his snarls  
 To the Devil that pricks on such pestilent  
 carles!  
 Hold by the right, you double your might;  
 So, onward to Nottingham, fresh for the  
 fight,

CHORUS.—*March we along, fifty-score  
 strong,  
 Great-hearted gentlemen,  
 singing this song!*

#### II

##### GIVE A ROUSE

#### I

King Charles, and who'll do him right  
 now?  
 King Charles, and who's ripe for fight  
 now?  
 Give a rouse: here's, in hell's despite now,  
 King Charles!

#### II

Who gave me the goods that went since?  
 Who raised me the house that sank once?  
 Who helped me to gold I spent since?  
 Who found me in wine you drank once?

CHORUS.—*King Charles, and who'll do  
 him right now?  
 King Charles, and who's ripe  
 for fight now?  
 Give a rouse: here's, in hell's  
 King Charles!*

#### III

To whom used my boy George quaff else,  
 By the old fool's side that begot him?  
 For whom did he cheer and laugh else,  
 While Noll's damned troopers shot him?

CHORUS.—*King Charles, and who'll do  
 him right now?  
 King Charles, and who's ripe  
 for fight now?  
 Give a rouse: here's, in hell's  
 despite now,  
 King Charles!*

#### III

##### BOOT AND SADDLE

#### I

Boot, saddle, to horse, and away!  
 Rescue my castle before the hot day  
 Brightens to blue from its silvery grey,  
 CHORUS.—*Boot, saddle, to horse, and  
 away!*

#### II

Ride past the suburbs, asleep as you'd say;  
 Many's the friend there, will listen and  
 pray  
 'God's luck to gallants that strike up the  
 lay—

CHORUS.—*'Boot, saddle, to horse, and  
 away!'*

## CAVALIER TUNES

### III

Forty miles off, like a roebuck at bay,  
Flouts Castle Brancepeth the Round-  
heads' array:

Who laughs, 'Good fellows ere this, by  
my fay,

CHORUS.—'Boot, saddle, to horse, and  
away!'

### IV

Who? My wife Gertrude; that, honest and  
gay,  
Laughs when you talk of surrendering,  
'Nay!

'I've better counsellors; what counsel they?

CHORUS.—'Boot, saddle, to horse, and  
away!'

## THE LOST LEADER

### I

Just for a handful of silver he left us,  
Just for a riband to stick in his coat—  
Found the one gift of which fortune bereft  
us,

Lost all the others she lets us devote;  
They, with the gold to give, doled him out  
silver,

So much was theirs who so little allowed:  
How all our copper had gone for his service!

Rags—were they purple, his heart had  
been proud!

We that had loved him so, followed him,  
honoured him,

Lived in his mild and magnificent eye,  
Learned his great language, caught his  
clear accents,

Made him our pattern to live and to die!  
Shakespeare was of us, Milton was for us,  
Burns, Shelley, were with us,—they  
watch from their graves!

He alone breaks from the van and the free-  
men,

—He alone sinks to the rear and the  
slaves!

### II

We shall march prospering,—not thro' his  
presence;

Songs may inspirit us,—not from his  
lyre;

Deeds will be done,—while he boasts his  
quiescence,

Still bidding crouch whom the rest bade  
aspire:

Blot out his name, then, record one lost  
soul more,

One task more declined, one more foot-  
path untrod,

One more devils'-triumph and sorrow for  
angels,

One wrong more to man, one more in-  
sult to God!

Life's night begins: let him never come  
back to us!

There would be doubt, hesitation and  
pain,

Forced praise on our part—the glimmer of  
twilight,

Never glad confident morning again!

Best fight on well, for we taught him—  
strike gallantly,

Menace our heart ere we master his own;

Then let him receive the new knowledge  
and wait us,

Pardoned in heaven, the first by the  
throne!

## 'HOW THEY BROUGHT THE GOOD NEWS FROM GHENT TO AIX'

[16—]

### I

I SPRANG to the stirrup, and Joris, and he;  
I galloped, Dirck galloped, we galloped all  
three;

'Good speed!' cried the watch, as the gate-  
bolts undrew;

'Speed!' echoed the wall to us galloping  
through;

Behind shut the postern, the lights sank to  
rest,

And into the midnight we galloped abreast.

### II

Not a word to each other; we kept the great  
pace

Neck by neck, stride by stride, never chang-  
ing our place;

I turned in my saddle and made its girths  
tight,

Then shortened each stirrup, and set the  
pique right,

Rebuckled the cheek-strap, chained slacker  
the bit,

Nor galloped less steadily Roland a whit.

### III

'Twas moonset at starting; but while we  
drew near

Lokeren, the cocks crew and twilight  
dawned clear;

At Boom, a great yellow star came out to  
see;

At Duffeld, 'twas morning as plain as  
could be;

And from Mecheln church-steeple we  
heard the half-chime,

So, Joris broke silence with, 'Yet there is  
time!'

### IV

At Aershot, up leaped of a sudden the sun,  
And against him the cattle stood black  
every one,

## HOW THEY BROUGHT THE GOOD NEWS

To stare thro' the mist at us galloping past,  
And I saw my stout galloper Roland at last,  
With resolute shoulders, each butting away  
The haze, as some bluff river headland its  
spray:

v

And his low head and crest, just one sharp  
ear bent back

For my voice, and the other pricked out on  
his track;

And one eye's black intelligence,—ever  
that glance

O'er its white edge at me, his own master,  
askance!

And the thick heavy spume-flakes which  
aye and anon

His fierce lips shook upwards in galloping  
on.

vi

By Hasselt, Dirck groaned; and cried Joris,  
'Stay spur!

'Your Roos galloped bravely, the fault's  
not in her,

'We'll remember at Aix'—for one heard  
the quick wheeze

Of her chest, saw the stretched neck and  
staggering knees,

And sunk tail, and horrible heave of the  
flank,

As down on her haunches she shuddered  
and sank.

vii

So, we were left galloping, Joris and I,  
Past Looz and past Tongres, no cloud in  
the sky;

The broad sun above laughed a pitiless  
laugh,

'Neath our feet broke the brittle bright  
stubble like chaff;

Till over by Dalhem a dome-spire sprang  
white,

And 'Gallop,' gasped Joris, 'for Aix is in  
sight!'

viii

'How they'll greet us!'—and all in a  
moment his roan

Rolled neck and croup over, lay dead as a  
stone;

And there was my Roland to bear the  
whole weight

Of the news which alone could save Aix  
from her fate,

With his nostrils like pits full of blood to  
the brim,

And with circles of red for his eye-sockets'  
rim.

ix

Then I cast loose my buffcoat, each I polster  
let fall,

\* Shook off both my jack-boots, let go belt  
and all,

Stood up in the stirrup, leaned, patted his  
ear,

Called my Roland his pet-name, my horse  
without peer;

Clapped my hands, laughed and sang, any  
noise, bad or good,

Till at length into Aix Roland galloped  
and stood.

x

And all I remember is—friends flocking  
round

As I sat with his head 'twixt my knees on  
the ground;

And no voice but was praising this Roland  
of mine,

As I poured down his throat our last mea-  
sure of wine,

Which (the burgesses voted by common  
consent)

Was no more than his due who brought  
good news from Ghent.

## THROUGH THE METIDJA TO ABD-EL-KADR

i

As I ride, as I ride,  
With a full heart for my guide,  
So its tide rocks my side,  
As I ride, as I ride,  
That, as I were double-eyed,  
He, in whom our Tribes confide,  
Is descried, ways untried  
As I ride, as I ride.

ii

As I ride, as I ride  
To our Chief and his Allied,  
Who dares chide my heart's pride  
As I ride, as I ride?  
Or are witnesses denied—  
Through the desert waste and wide  
Do I glide unespied  
As I ride, as I ride?

iii

As I ride, as I ride,  
When an inner voice has cried,  
The sands slide, nor abide  
(As I ride, as I ride)  
O'er each visioned homicide  
That came vaunting (has he lied?)  
To reside—where he died,  
As I ride, as I ride.

iv

As I ride, as I ride,  
Ne'er has spur my swift horse plied,  
Yet his hide, streaked and pied,  
As I ride, as I ride,



## THROUGH THE METIDJA TO ABD-EL-KADR

Shows where sweat has 'sprung and dried,  
—Zebra-footed, ostrich-thighed—  
How has vied stride with stride  
As I ride, as I ride!

v

As I ride, as I ride,  
Could I loose what Fate has tied,  
Ere I pried, she should hide  
(As I ride, as I ride)  
All that's meant me—satisfied  
When the Prophet and the Bride  
Stops veins I'd have subside  
As I ride, as I ride!

### NATIONALITY IN DRINKS

I

My heart sank with our Claret-flask,  
Just now, beneath the heavy sedges  
That serve this pond's black face for mask;  
And still at yonder broken edges  
O' the hole, where up the bubbles glisten,  
After my heart I look and listen.

II

Our laughing little flask, compelled  
Thro' depth to depth more bleak and  
shady;  
As when, both arms beside her held,  
Feet straightened out, some gay French  
lady  
Is caught up from life's light and motion,  
And dropped into death's silent ocean!

Up jumped Tokay on our table,  
Like a pygmy castle-warder,  
Dwarfish to see, but stout and able,  
Arms and accoutrements all in order;  
And fierce he looked North, then, wheel-  
ing South,  
Blew with his bugle a challenge to Drouth,  
Cocked his flap-hat with the tosspot-  
feather,

Twisted his thumb in his red moustache,  
Jingled his huge brass spurs together,  
Tightened his waist with its Buda sash,  
And then, with an impudence nought  
could abash,  
Shrugged his hump-shoulder, to tell the  
beholder,  
For twenty such knaves he should laugh  
but the bolder:  
And so, with his sword-hilt gallantly jut-  
ting,

And dexter-hand on his haunch abutting,  
Went the little man, Sir Ausbruch, strut-  
ting!

Here's to Nelson's memory!  
'Tis the second time that I, at sea,  
Right off Cape Trafalgar here,  
Have drunk it deep in British Beer.  
Nelson for ever—any time

Am I his to command in prose or rhyme!  
Give me of Nelson only a touch,  
And I save it, be it little or much:  
Here's one our Captain gives, and so  
Down at the word, by George, shall it go!  
He says that at Greenwich they point the  
beholder  
To Nelson's coat, 'still with tar on the  
shoulder:  
'For he used to lean with one shoulder  
digging,  
'Jigging, as it were, and zig-zag-zigging  
'Up against the mizen-rigging!

### GARDEN FANCIES

I

#### THE FLOWER'S NAME

I

HERE's the garden she walked across,  
Arm in my arm, such a short while since:  
Hark, now I push its wicket, the moss  
Hinders the hinges and makes them  
'wince!  
She must have reached this shrub ere she  
turned,  
As back with that murmur the wicket  
swung;  
For she laid the poor snail, my chance foot  
spurred,  
To feed and forget it the leaves among.

II

Down this side of the gravel-walk  
She went while her robe's edge brushed  
the box:  
And here she paused in her gracious talk  
To point me a moth on the milk-white  
phlox.  
Roses, ranged in valiant row,  
I will never think that she passed you by!  
She loves you noble roses, I know;  
But yonder, see, where the rock-plants  
lie!

III

This flower she stopped at, finger on lip,  
Stooped over, in doubt, as settling its  
claim;  
Till she gave me, with pride to make no slip,  
Its soft meandering Spanish name:  
What a name! Was it love or praise?  
Speech half-asleep or song half-awake?  
I must learn Spanish, one of these days,  
'Only for that slow sweet name's sake.

IV

Roses, if I live and do well,  
I may bring her, one of these days,  
To fix you fast with as fine a spell,  
Fit for you each with his Spanish phrase;  
But do not detain me now; for she lingers  
There, like sunshine over the ground,  
And ever I see her soft white fingers  
Searching after the bud she found.

## GARDEN FANCIES

### V

Flower, you Spaniard, look that you grow  
not,  
Stay as you are and be loved for ever!  
Bud, if I kiss you 'tis that you blow not:  
Mind, the shut pink mouth opens never!  
For while it pouts, her fingers wrestle,  
Twinkling the audacious leaves between,  
Till round they turn and down they nestle—  
Is not the dear mark still to be seen?

### VI

Where I find her not, beauties vanish;  
Whither I follow her, beauties flee;  
Is there no method to tell her in Spanish  
June's twice June since she breathed it  
with me?  
Come, bud, show me the least of her traces,  
Treasure my lady's lightest footfall!  
—Ah, you may flout and turn up your  
faces—  
Roses, you are not so fair after all!

### II

SIBRANDUS SCHAFNABURGENSIS

### I

Plague take all your pedants, say I!  
He who wrote what I hold in my hand,  
Centuries back was so good as to die,  
Leaving this rubbish to cumber the land;  
This, that was a book in its time,  
Printed on paper and bound in leather,  
Last month in the white of a matin-prime  
Just when the birds sang all together.

### II

Into the garden I brought it to read,  
And under the arbut and laurustine  
Read it, so help me grace in my need,  
From title-page to closing line.  
Chapter on chapter did I count,  
As a curious traveller counts Stone-  
henge;  
Added up the mortal amount;  
And then proceeded to my revenge.

### III

Yonder's a plum-tree with a crevice  
An owl would build in, were he but sage;  
For a lap of moss, like a fine pont-levis  
In a castle of the Middle Age,  
Joins to a lip of gum, pure amber;  
When he'd be private, there might he  
spend  
Hours alone in his lady's chamber:  
Into this crevice I dropped our friend.

### IV

Splash, went he, as under he ducked,  
—At the bottom, I knew, rain-droppings  
stagnate:  
Next, a handful of blossoms I plucked  
To bury him with, my bookshelf's mag-  
nate;

Then I went in-doors, brought out a loaf,  
Half a cheese, and a bottle of Chablis;  
Lay on the grass and forgot the oaf  
Over a jolly chapter of Rabelais.

### V

Now, this morning, betwixt the moss  
And gum that locked our friend in limbo,  
A spider had spun his web across,  
And sat in the midst with arms akimbo.  
So, I took pity, for learning's sake,  
And, *de profundis, accentibus lætis*,  
*Cantate!* quoth I, as I got a rake;  
And up I fished his delectable treatise.

### VI

Here you have it, dry in the sun,  
With all the binding all of a blister,  
And great blue spots where the ink has run,  
And reddish streaks that wink and glisten  
O'er the page so beautifully yellow:  
Oh, well have the droppings played their  
tricks!  
Did he guess how toadstools grow, this  
fellow?  
Here's one stuck in his chapter six!

### VII

How did he like it when the live creatures  
Tickled and toused and browsed him all  
over,  
And worm, slug, eft, with serious features,  
Came in, each one, for his right of trove?  
—When the water-beetle with great blind  
deaf face  
Made of her eggs the stately deposit,  
And the newt borrowed just so much of  
the preface  
As tiled in the top of his black wife's  
closet?

### VIII

All that life and fun and romping,  
All that frisking and twisting and coup-  
ling,  
While slowly our poor friend's leaves were  
swamping  
And clasps were cracking and covers  
suppling!  
As if you had carried sour John Knox  
To the play-house at Paris, Vienna or  
Munich,  
Fastened him into a front-row box,  
And danced off the ballet with trousers  
and tunic.

### IX

Come, old martyr! What, torment enough  
is it?  
Back to my room shall you take your  
sweet self.  
Good-bye, mother-beetle; husband-eft,  
*sufficit!*  
See the snug niche I have made on my  
shelf!

## GARDEN FANCIES

A.'s book shall prop you up, B.'s shall  
cover you,  
Here's C. to be grave with, or D. to be  
gay,  
And with E. on each side, and F. right over  
you,  
Dry-rot at ease till the Judgment-day!

## SOLILOQUY OF THE SPANISH CLOISTER

### I

GR-R-R—there go, my heart's abhorrence!  
Water your damned flower-pots, do!  
If hate killed men, Brother Lawrence,  
God's blood, would not mine kill you!  
What? your myrtle-bush wants trimming?  
Oh, that rose has prior claims—  
Needs its leaden vase filled brimming?  
Hell dry you up with its flames!

### II

At the meal we sit together:  
*Salve tibi!* I must hear  
Wise talk of the kind of weather,  
Sort of season, time of year:  
*Not a plenteous cork-crop: scarcely*  
*Dare we hope oak-galls, I doubt:*  
*What's the Latin name for 'parsley'?*  
What's the Greek name for Swine's  
Snout?

### III

Whew! We'll have our platter burnished,  
Laid with care on our own shelf!  
With a fire-new spoon we're furnished,  
And a goblet for ourself,  
Rinsed like something sacrificial  
Ere 'tis fit to touch our chaps—  
Marked with L. for our initial!  
(He-he! There his lily flaps!)

### IV

*Saint, forsooth!* While brown Dolores  
Squats outside the Convent bank  
With Sanchicha, telling stories,  
Steeping tresses in the tank,  
Blue-black, lustrous, thick like horsehairs,  
—Can't I see his dead eye glow,  
Bright as 'twere a Barbary corsair's?  
(That is, if he'd let it show!)

### V

When he finishes refection,  
Knife and fork he never lays  
Cross-wise, to my recollection,  
As do I, in Jesu's praise.  
I the Trinity illustrate,  
Drinking watered orange-pulp—  
In three sips the Arjan frustrate;  
While he drains his at one gulp.

### VI

Oh, those melons? If he's able  
We're to have a feast!! so nice!  
One goes to the Abbot's table,  
All of us get each a slice.  
How go on your flowers? None double?  
Not one fruit-sort can you spy?  
Strange!—And I, too, at such trouble,  
Keep them close-nipped on the sly!

### VII

There's a great text in Galatians,  
Once you trip on it, entails  
Twenty-nine distinct damnations,  
One sure, if another fails:  
If I trip him just a-dying,  
Sure of heaven as sure can be,  
Spin him round and send him flying  
Off to hell, a Manichee?

### VIII

Or, my scrofulous French novel  
On grey paper with blunt type!  
Simply glance at it, you grovel  
Hand and foot in Belial's gripe:  
If I double down its pages  
At the woeful sixteenth print,  
When he gathers his greengages,  
Ope a sieve and slip it in't?

### IX

Or, there's Satan!—one might venture  
Pledge one's soul to him, yet leave  
Such a flaw in the indenture  
As he'd miss till, past retrieve,  
Blasted lay that rose-acacia  
We're so proud of! *Hy, Zy, Hine . . .*  
'St, there's Vespers! *Plena gratia*  
*Ave, Virgo!* Gr-r-r—you swine!

## THE LABORATORY

### ANCIEN RÉGIME

#### I

Now that I, tying thy glass mask tightly,  
May gaze thro' these faint smokes curling  
whitely,  
As thou pliest thy trade in this devil's-  
smithy—  
Which is the poison to poison her, prithee?

#### II

He is with her, and they know that I know  
Where they are, what they do: they believe  
my tears flow  
While they laugh, laugh at me, at me fled  
to the dear  
Empty church, to pray God in, for them!  
—I am here.

#### III

Grind away, moisten and mash up thy  
paste,  
Pound at thy powder,—I am not in haste!

## THE LABORATORY

Better sit thus, and observe thy strange  
things,  
Than go where men wait me and dance at  
the King's!

### IV

That in the mortar—you call it a gum?  
Ah, the brave tree—whence such gold ooz-  
ings come!  
And yonder soft phial, the exquisite blue,  
Sure to taste sweetly,—is that poison too?

### V

Had I but all of them, thee and thy trea-  
sures,  
What a wild crowd of invisible pleasures!  
To carry pure death in an earring, a casket,  
A signet, a fan-mount, a filigree basket!

### VI

Soon, at the King's, a mere lozenge to give,  
And Pauline should have just thirty minutes  
to live!  
But to light a pastile, and Elise, with her  
head  
And her breast and her arms and her hands,  
should drop dead!

### VII

Quick—is it finished? The colour's too  
grim!  
Why not soft like the phial's, enticing and  
dim?  
Let it brighten her drink, let her turn it and  
stir,  
And try it and taste, ere she fix and prefer!

### VIII

What a drop! She's not little, no minion  
like me!  
That's why she ensnared him: this never  
will free  
The soul from those masculine eyes,—say,  
'no!'  
To that pulse's magnificent come-and-go.

### IX

For only last night, as they whispered, I  
brought  
My own eyes to bear on her so, that I  
thought  
Could I keep them one half minute fixed,  
she would fall  
Shrivelled; she fell not; yet this does it all!

### X

Not that I bid you spare her the pain;  
Let death be felt and the proof remain:  
Brand, burn up, bite into its grace—  
He is sure to remember her dying face!

### XI

Is it done? Take my mask off! Nay, be  
not morose;  
It kills her, and this prevents seeing it close:

The delicate droplet, my whole fortune's  
fee!  
If it hurts her, beside, can it ever hurt me?

### XII

Now, take all my jewels, gorge gold to your  
fill,  
You may kiss me, old man, on my mouth  
'if you will!  
But brush this dust off me, lest horror it  
brings  
Ere I know it—next moment I dance at  
the King's!

## THE CONFESSIONAL

[SPAIN]

### I

It is a lie—their Priests, their Pope,  
Their Saints, their . . . all they fear or hope  
Are lies, and lies—there! through my door  
And ceiling, there! and walls and floor,  
There, lies, they lie—shall still be hurled  
Till spite of them I reach the world!

### II

You think Priests just and holy men!  
Before they put me in this den  
I was a human creature too,  
With flesh and blood like one of you,  
A girl that laughed in beauty's pride  
Like lilies in your world outside.

### III

I had a lover—shame avault!  
This poor wretched body, grim and gaunt,  
Was kissed all over till it burned,  
By lips the truest, love e'er turned  
His heart's own tint: one night they kissed  
My soul out in a burning mist.

### IV

So, next day when the accustomed train  
Of things grew round my sense again,  
'That is a sin,' I said: and slow  
With downcast eyes to church I go,  
And pass to the confession-chair,  
And tell the old mild father there.

### V

But when I falter Beltran's name,  
'Ha?' quoth the father: 'much I blame  
'The sin; yet wherefore idly grieve?  
'Despair not—strenuously retrieve!  
'Nay, I will turn this love of thine  
'To lawful love, almost divine;

### VI

'For he is young, and led astray,  
'This Beltran, and he schemes, men say,  
'To change the laws of church and state;  
'So, thine shall be an angel's fate,  
'Who, ere the thunder breaks, should roll  
'Its cloud away and save his soul.

## THE CONFESSIONAL

### VII

'For, when he lies upon thy breast,  
'Thou mayst demand and be possessed  
'Of all his plans, and next day steal  
'To me, and all those plans reveal,  
'That I and every priest, to purge  
'His soul, may fast and use the scourge.'

### VIII

That father's beard was long and white,  
With love and truth his brow seemed  
bright;  
I went back, all on fire with joy,  
And, that same evening, bade the boy  
Tell me, as lovers should, heart-free,  
Something to prove his love of me.

### IX

He told me what he would not tell  
For hope of heaven or fear of hell;  
And I lay listening in such pride!  
And, soon as he had left my side,  
Tripped to the church by morning-light  
To save his soul in his despite.

### X

I told the father all his schemes,  
Who were his comrades, what their dreams;  
'And now make haste,' I said, 'to pray  
'The one spot from his soul away;  
'To-night he comes, but not the same  
'Will look!' At night he never came.

### XI

Nor next night: on the after-morn,  
I went forth with a strength new-born.  
The church was empty; something drew  
My steps into the street; I knew  
It led me to the market-place:  
Where, lo, on high, the father's face!

### XII

That horrible black scaffold dressed,  
That stapled block . . . God sink the rest!  
That head stepped back, that blinding  
vest,  
Those knotted hands and naked breast,  
Till near one busy hangman pressed,  
And, on the neck these arms caressed . . .

### XIII

No part in aught they hope or fear!  
No heaven with them, no hell!—and here,  
No earth, not so much space as pens  
My body in their worst of dens  
But shall bear God and man my cry,  
Lies—lies, again—and still, they lie!

## CRISTINA

### I

SHE should never have looked at me  
If she meant I should not love her!  
There are plenty . . . men, you call such,  
I suppose . . . she may discover

All her soul to, if she pleases,  
And yet leave much as she found them:  
But I'm not so, and she knew it  
When she fixed me, glancing round  
them.

### II

What? To fix me thus meant nothing?  
But I can't tell (there's my weakness)  
What her look said!—no vile cant, sure,  
About 'need to strew the bleakness  
'Of some lone shore with its pearl-seed.  
'That the sea feels'—no 'strange yearn-  
ing  
'That such souls have, most to lavish  
'Where there's chance of least return-  
ing.'

### III

Oh, we're sunk enough here, God knows!  
But not quite so sunk that moments,  
Sure tho' seldom, are denied us,  
When the spirit's true endowments  
Stand out plainly from its false ones,  
And apprise it if pursuing  
Or the right way or the wrong way,  
To its triumph or undoing.

### IV

There are flashes struck from midnights,  
There are fire-flames noondays kindle,  
Whereby piled-up honours perish,  
Whereby swollen ambitions dwindle,  
While just this or that poor impulse,  
Which for once had play unstified,  
Seems the sole work of a life-time  
That away the rest have trifled.

### V

Doubt you if, in some such moment,  
As she fixed me, she felt clearly,  
Ages past the soul existed,  
Here an age 'tis resting merely,  
And hence fleets again for ages,  
While the true end, sole and single,  
It stops here for is, this love-way,  
With some other soul to mingle?

### VI

Else it loses what it lived for,  
And eternally must lose it;  
Better ends may be in prospect,  
Deeper blisses (if you choose it),  
But this life's end and this love-bliss  
Have been lost here. Doubt you whether  
This she felt as, looking at me,  
Mine and her souls rushed together?

### VII

Oh, observe! Of course, next moment,  
The world's honours, in derision,  
Trampled out the light for ever:  
Never fear but there's provision

Of the devil's to quench knowledge  
 Lest we walk the earth in rapture!  
 —Making those who catch God's secret  
 Just so much more prize their capture!

## VIII

Such am I: the secret's mine now!  
 She has lost me, I have gained her;  
 Her soul's mine: and thus, grown perfect,  
 I shall pass my life's remainder.  
 Life will just hold out the proving  
 Both our powers, alone and blended:  
 And then, come next life quickly!  
 This world's use will have been ended.

## THE LOST MISTRESS

## I

ALL's over, then: does truth sound bitter  
 As one at first believes?  
 Hark, 'tis the sparrows' good-night twitter  
 About your cottage eaves!

## II

And the leaf-buds on the vine are woolly,  
 I noticed that, to-day;  
 One day more bursts them open fully  
 —You know the red turns grey.

## III

To-morrow we meet the same then, dear-  
 est?  
 May I take your hand in mine?  
 Mere friends are we,—well, friends the  
 merest  
 Keep much that I resign:

## IV

For each glance of the eye so bright and  
 black,  
 Though I keep with heart's endeavour,—  
 Your voice, when you wish the snowdrops  
 back,  
 Though it stay in my soul for ever!—

## V

Yet I will but say what mere friends say,  
 Or only a thought stronger;  
 I will hold your hand but as long as all  
 may,  
 Or so very little longer!

## EARTH'S IMMORTALITIES

## FAME

SEE, as the prettiest graves will do in time,  
 Our poet's wants the freshness of its prime;  
 Spite of the sexton's browsing horse, the  
 sods  
 Have struggled through its binding osier  
 rods;

Headstone and half-sunk footstone lean  
 awry,  
 Wanting the brick-work promised by-  
 and-by;  
 How the minute grey lichens, plate o'er  
 plate,  
 Have softened down the crisp-cut name  
 and date!

## LOVE

So, the year's done with!  
 (*Love me for ever!*)  
 All March begun with,  
 April's endeavour;  
 May-wreaths that bound me  
 June needs must sever;  
 Now snows fall round me,  
 Quenching June's fever—  
 (*Love me for ever!*)

## MEETING AT NIGHT

## I

THE grey sea and the long black land;  
 And the yellow half-moon large and low;  
 And the startled little waves that leap  
 In fiery ringlets from their sleep,  
 As I gain the cove with pushing prow,  
 And quench its speed i' the slushy sand.

## II

Then a mile of warm sea-scented beach;  
 Three fields to cross till a farm appears;  
 A tap at the pane, the quick sharp scratch  
 And blue spurt of a lighted match,  
 And a voice less loud, thro' its joys and  
 fears,  
 Than the two hearts beating each to each!

## PARTING AT MORNING

ROUND the cape of a sudden came the sea,  
 And the sun looked over the mountain's  
 rim:  
 And straight was a path of gold for him,  
 And the need of a world of men for me.

## SONG

## I

NAY but you, who do not love her,  
 Is she not pure gold, my mistress?  
 Holds earth aught—speak truth—above  
 her?  
 Aught like this tress, see, and this tress,  
 And this last fairest tress of all,  
 So fair, see, ere I let it fall?

## II

Because, you spend your lives in praising;  
 To praise, you search the wide world  
 over:  
 Then why not witness, calmly gazing,  
 If earth holds aught—speak truth—  
 above her?  
 Above this tress, and this, I touch  
 But cannot praise, I love so much!

## A WOMAN'S LAST WORD

### A WOMAN'S LAST WORD

I  
LET's contend no more, Love,  
Strive nor weep:  
All be as before, Love,  
—Only sleep!

II  
What so wild as words are?  
I and thou  
In debate, as birds are,  
Hawk on bough!

III  
See the creature stalking  
While we speak!  
Hush and hide the talking,  
Cheek on cheek!

IV  
What so false as truth is,  
False to thee?  
Where the serpent's tooth is  
Shun the tree—

V  
Where the apple reddens  
Never pry—  
Lest we lose our Edens,  
Eve and I.

VI  
Be a god and hold me  
With a charm!  
Be a man and fold me  
With thine arm!

VII  
Teach me, only teach, Love!  
As I ought  
I will speak thy speech, Love,  
Think thy thought—

VIII  
Meet, if thou require it,  
Both demands,  
Laying flesh and spirit  
In thy hands.

IX  
That shall be to-morrow  
Not to-night:  
I must bury sorrow  
Out of sight:

X  
—Must a little weep, Love,  
(Foolish me!)  
And so fall asleep, Love,  
Loved by thee.

## EVELYN HOPE

I  
BEAUTIFUL Evelyn Hope is dead!  
Sit and watch by her side an hour.  
That is her book-shelf, this her bed;  
She plucked that piece of geranium-  
flower,  
Beginning to die too, in the glass;  
Little has yet been changed, I think:  
The shutters are shut, no light may pass  
Save two long rays thro' the hinge's  
chink.

II  
Sixteen years old when she died!  
Perhaps she had scarcely heard my  
name;  
It was not her time to love; beside,  
Her life had many a hope and aim,  
Duties enough and little cares,  
And now was quiet, now astir,  
Till God's hand beckoned unawares,—  
And the sweet white brow is all of her.

III  
Is it too late then, Evelyn Hope?  
What, your soul was pure and true,  
The good stars met in your horoscope,  
Made you of spirit, fire and dew—  
And, just because I was thrice as old  
And our paths in the world diverged so  
wide,  
Each was nought to each, must I be told?  
We were fellow mortals, nought beside?

IV  
No, indeed! for God above  
Is great to grant, as mighty to make,  
And creates the love to reward the love:  
I claim you still, for my own love's sake!  
Delayed it may be for more lives yet,  
Through worlds I shall traverse, not a  
few:  
Much is to learn, much to forget  
Ere the time be come for taking you.

V  
But the time will come,—at last it will,  
When, Evelyn Hope, what meant (I  
shall say)  
In the lower earth, in the years long still,  
That body and soul so pure and gay?  
Why your hair was amber, I shall divine,  
And your mouth of your own gera-  
nium's red—  
And what you would do with me, in fine,  
In the new life come in the old one's  
stead.

VI  
I have lived (I shall say) so much since then,  
Given up myself so many times,  
Gained me the gains of various men,  
Ransacked the ages, spoiled the climes;

Yet one thing, one, in my soul's full scope,  
 Either I missed or itself missed me:  
 And I want and find you, Evelyn Hope!  
 What is the issue? let us see!

VII

I loved you, Evelyn, all the while.  
 My heart seemed full as it could hold?  
 There was place and to spare for the frank  
 young smile,  
 And the red young mouth, and the hair's  
 young gold.  
 So, hush,—I will give you this leaf to keep:  
 See, I shut it inside the sweet cold hand!  
 There, that is our secret: go to sleep!  
 You will wake, and remember, and under-  
 stand.

LOVE AMONG THE RUINS

I

WHERE the quiet-coloured end of evening  
 smiles,  
 Miles and miles  
 On the solitary pastures where our sheep  
 Half-asleep  
 Tinkle homeward thro' the twilight, stray  
 or stop  
 As they crop—  
 Was the site of a city great and gay,  
 (So they say)  
 Of our country's very capital, its prince  
 Ages since  
 Held his court in, gathered councils, wield-  
 ing far  
 Peace or war.

II

Now,—the country does not even boast  
 a tree,  
 As you see,  
 To distinguish slopes of verdure, certain  
 rills  
 From the hills  
 Intersect and give a name to, (else they run  
 Into one)  
 Where the domed and daring palace shot  
 its spires  
 Up like fires  
 O'er the hundred-gated circuit of a wall  
 Bounding all,  
 Made of marble, men might march on nor  
 be pressed,  
 Twelve abreast.

III

And such plenty and perfection, see, of  
 grass  
 Never was!  
 Such a carpet as, this summer-time, o'er-  
 spreads  
 And embeds  
 Every vestige of the city, guessed alone,  
 Stock or stone—

Where a multitude of men breathed joy  
 and woe

Long ago;  
 Lust of glory pricked their hearts up,  
 dread of shame  
 Struck them tame;  
 And that glory and that shame alike, the  
 gold  
 Bought and sold.

IV

Now,—the single little turret that remains  
 On the plains,  
 By the caper overrooted, by the gourd  
 Overscored,  
 While the patching houseleek's head of  
 blossom winks  
 Through the chinks—  
 Marks the basement whence a tower in  
 ancient time  
 Sprang sublime,  
 And a burning ring, all round, the chariots  
 traced  
 As they raced,  
 And the monarch and his minions and his  
 dames  
 Viewed the games.

V

And I know, while thus the quiet-coloured  
 eve  
 Smiles to leave  
 To their folding, all our many-tinkling  
 fleece  
 In such peace,  
 And the slopes and rills in undistinguished  
 grey  
 Melt away—  
 That a girl with eager eyes and yellow hair  
 Waits me there  
 In the turret whence the charioteers caught  
 soul  
 For the goal,  
 When the king looked, where she looks  
 now, breathless, dumb  
 Till I come.

VI

But he looked upon the city, every side,  
 Far and wide,  
 All the mountains topped with temples,  
 all the glades'  
 Colonnades,  
 All the causeys, bridges, aqueducts,—and  
 then,  
 All the men!  
 When I do come, she will speak not, she  
 will stand,  
 Either hand  
 On my shoulder, give her eyes the first  
 embrace  
 Of my face,  
 Ere we rush, ere we extinguish sight and  
 speech  
 Each on each.



## LOVE AMONG THE RUINS

### VII

In one year they sent a million fighters  
forth South and North,  
And they built their gods a brazen pillar  
high As the sky,  
Yet reserved a thousand chariots in full  
force— Gold, of course.  
Oh heart! oh blood that freezes, blood that  
burns! Earth's returns  
For whole centuries of folly, noise and sin!  
Shut them in,  
With their triumphs and their glories and  
the rest!  
Love is best.

### A LOVERS' QUARREL

#### I

Oh, what a dawn of day!  
How the March sun feels like May!  
All is blue again  
After last night's rain,  
And the South dries the hawthorn-spray.  
Only, my Love's away!  
I'd as lief that the blue were grey.

#### II

Runnels, which rilletts swell,  
Must be darning down the dell,  
With a foaming head  
On the beryl bed  
Paven smooth as a hermit's cell;  
Each with a tale to tell,  
Could my Love but attend as well.

#### III

Dearest, three months ago!  
When we lived blocked-up with snow,  
When the wind would edge  
In and in his wedge,  
In, as far as the point could go—  
Not to our ingle, though,  
Where we loved each the other so!

#### IV

Laughs with so little cause!  
We devised games out of straws.  
We would try and trace  
One another's face  
In the ash, as an artist draws;  
Free on each other's flaws,  
How we chattered like two church daws!

#### V

What's in the 'Times'?—a scold  
At the Emperor deep and cold;  
He has taken a bride  
To his gruesome side,  
That's as fair as himself is bold:  
There they sit ermine-stoled,  
And she powders her hair with gold.

### VI

Fancy the Pampas' sheen!  
Miles and miles of gold and green  
Where the sunflowers blow  
In a solid glow,  
And—to break now and then the screen—  
Black neck and eyeballs keen,  
Up a wild horse leaps between!

### VII

Try, will our table turn?  
Lay your hands there light, and yearn  
Till the yearning slips.  
Thro' the finger-tips  
In a fire which a few discern,  
And a very few feel burn,  
And the rest, they may live and learn!

### VIII

Then we would up and pace,  
For a change, about the place,  
Each with arm o'er neck:  
'Tis our quarter-deck,  
We are seamen in woeful case.  
Help in the ocean-space!  
Or, if no help, we'll embrace.

### IX

See, how she looks now, dressed  
In a slogging-cap and vest!  
'Tis a huge fur cloak—  
Like a reindeer's yoke  
Falls the lappet along the breast:  
Sleeves for her arms to rest,  
Or to hang, as my Love likes best.

### X

Teach me to flirt a fan  
As the Spanish ladies can,  
Or I tint your lip  
With a burnt stick's tip  
And you turn into such a man!  
Just the two spots that span  
Half the bill of the young male swan.

### XI

Dearest, three months ago  
When the mesmerizer Snow  
With his hand's first sweep  
Put the earth to sleep:  
'Twas a time when the heart could show  
All—how was earth to know,  
'Neath the mute hand's to-and-fro?

### XII

Dearest, three months ago  
When we loved each other so,  
Lived and loved the same  
Till an evening came  
When a shaft from the devil's bow  
Pierced to our ingle-glow,  
And the friends were friend and foe!

## A LOVERS' QUARREL

### XIII

Not from the heart beneath—  
'Twas a bubble ~~born~~ of breath,  
Neither sneer nor vaunt,  
Nor reproach nor taunt.  
See a word, how it severeth!  
Oh, power of life and death  
In the tongue, as the Preacher saith!

### XIV

Woman, and will you cast  
For a word, quite off at last  
Me, your own, your You,—  
Since, as truth is true,  
I was You all the happy past—  
Me do you leave aghast  
With the memories We amassed?

### XV

Love, if you knew the light  
That your soul casts in my sight,  
How I look to you  
For the pure and true  
And the beautiful and the right,—  
Bear with a moment's spite  
When a mere mote threatens the white!

### XVI

What of a hasty word?  
Is the fleshly heart not stirred  
By a worm's pin-prick  
Where its roots are quick?  
See the eye, by a fly's foot blurred—  
Ear, when a straw is heard  
Scratch the brain's coat of curd!

### XVII

Foul be the world or fair  
More or less, how can I care?  
'Tis the world the same  
For my praise or blame,  
And endurance is easy there.  
Wrong in the one thing rare—  
Oh, it is hard to bear!

### XVIII

Here's the spring back or close,  
When the almond-blossom blows:  
We shall have the word  
In a minor third  
There is none but the cuckoo knows:  
Heaps of the guelder-rose!  
I must bear with it, I suppose.

### XIX

Could but November come,  
Were the noisy birds struck dumb  
At the warning slash  
Of his driver's lash—  
I would laugh like the valiant Thumb  
Facing the castle glum  
And the giant's fee-faw-fum!

### XX

Then, were the world well stripped  
Of the gear wherein equipped  
We can stand apart,  
Heart dispense with heart  
In the sun, with the flowers unripped,—  
Oh, the world's hangings ripped,  
We were both in a bare-walled crypt!

### XXI

Each in the crypt would cry  
'But one freezes here! and why?  
'When a heart, as chill,  
'At my own would thrill  
'Back to life, and its fires out-fly?  
'Heart, shall we live or die?  
'The rest, . . . settle by-and-by!'

### XXII

So, she'd efface the score,  
And forgive me as before.  
It is twelve o'clock:  
I shall hear her knock  
In the worst of a storm's uproar,  
I shall pull her through the door,  
I shall have her for evermore!

## UP AT A VILLA—DOWN IN THE CITY

(AS DISTINGUISHED BY AN ITALIAN  
PERSON OF QUALITY)

### I

HAD I but plenty of money, money enough  
and to spare,  
The house for me, no doubt, were a house  
in the city-square;  
Ah, such a life, such a life, as one leads at  
the window there!

### II

Something to see, by Bacchus, something  
to hear, at least!  
There, the whole day long, one's life is a  
perfect feast;  
While up at a villa one lives, I maintain it,  
no more than a beast.

### III

Well now, look at our villa! stuck like the  
horn of a bull  
Just on a mountain-edge as bare as the  
creature's skull,  
Save a mere shag of a bush with hardly a  
leaf to pull!  
—I scratch my own, sometimes, to see if  
the hair's turned wool.

### IV

But the city, oh the city—the square with  
the houses! Why?  
They are stone-faced, white as a curd,  
there's something to take the eye!

## UP AT A VILLA—DOWN IN THE CITY

Houses in four straight lines, not a single front awry;  
You watch who crosses and gossips, who saunters, who hurries by;  
Green blinds, as a matter of course, to draw when the sun gets high;  
And the shops with fanciful signs which are painted properly.

### V

What of a villa? Though winter be over in March by rights,  
'Tis May perhaps ere the snow shall have withered well off the heights:  
You've the brown ploughed land before, where the oxen steam and wheeze,  
And the hills over-smoked behind by the faint grey olive-trees.

### VI

Is it better in May, I ask you? You've summer all at once;  
In a day he leaps complete with a few strong April suns.  
'Mid the sharp short emerald wheat, scarce risen three fingers well,  
The wild tulip, at end of its tube, blows out its great red bell  
Like a thin clear bubble of blood, for the children to pick and sell.

### VII

Is it ever hot in the square? There's a fountain to spout and splash!  
In the shade it sings and springs; in the shine such foam-bows flash  
On the horses with curling fish-tails, that prance and paddle and pash  
Round the lady atop in her conch—fifty gazers do not abash,  
Though all that she wears is some weeds round her waist in a sort of sash.

### VIII

All the year long at the villa, nothing to see though you linger,  
Except yon cypress that points like death's lean lifted forefinger.  
Some think fireflies pretty, when they mix i' the corn and mingle,  
Or thrud the stinking hemp till the stalks of it seem a-tingle.  
Late August or early September, the stunning cicala is shrill,  
And the bees keep their tiresome whine round the resinous firs on the hill.  
Enough of the seasons,—I spare you the months of the fever and chill.

### IX

Ere you open your eyes in the city, the, blessed church-bells begin:  
No sooner the bells leave off than the diligence rattles in:  
You get the pick of the news, and it costs you never a pin.

By-and-by there's the travelling doctor gives pills, lets blood, draws teeth;  
Or the Pulcinello-trumpet breaks up the market beneath.

At the post-office such a scene-picture—the new play, piping hot!

And a notice how, only this morning, three liberal thieves were shot.

Above it, behold the Archbishop's most fatherly of rebukes,

And beneath, with his crown and his lion, some little new law of the Duke's!

Or a sonnet with flower-marge, to the Reverend Don So-and-so

Who is Dante, Boccaccio, Petrarca, Saint Jerome and Cicero,

'And moreover,' (the sonnet goes rhyming,) 'the skirts of Saint Paul has reached,

'Having preached us those six Lent-lectures more unctuous than ever he preached.'

Neon strikes,—here sweeps the procession! our Lady borne smiling and smart

With a pink gauze gown all spangles, and seven swords stuck in her heart!

*Bang-whang-whang* goes the drum, *tootle-te-tootle* the fife;

No keeping one's haunches still: it's the greatest pleasure in life.

### X

But bless you, it's dear—it's dear! fowls, wine, at double the rate.

They have clapped a new tax upon salt, and what oil pays passing the gate

It's a horror to think of. And so, the villa for me, not the city!

Beggars can scarcely be choosers: but still —ah, the pity, the pity!

Look, two and two go the priests, then the monks with cowls and sandals,

And the penitents dressed in white shirts, a-holding the yellow candles;

One, he carries a flag up straight, and another a cross with handles,

And the Duke's guard brings up the rear, for the better prevention of scandals:

*Bang-whang-whang* goes the drum, *tootle-te-tootle* the fife.

Oh, a day in the city-square, there is no such pleasure in life!

## A TOCCATA OF GALUPPI'S

### I

OH Galuppi, Baldassaro, this is very sad 'to find!

I can hardly misconceive you; it would prove me deaf and blind;

But although I take your meaning, 'tis with such a heavy mind!

## A TOCCATA OF GALUPPI'S

### II

Here you come with your old music, and  
here's all the good it brings.  
What, they lived on together at Venice where  
the merchants were the kings,  
Where Saint Mark's is, where the Doges  
used to wed the sea with rings?

### III

Ay, because the sea's the street there; and  
'tis arched by . . . what you call  
. . . Shylock's bridge with houses on it,  
where they kept the carnival:  
I was never out of England—it's as if I saw  
it all.

### IV

Did young people take their pleasure when  
the sea was warm in May?  
Balls and masks begun at midnight, burn-  
ing ever to mid-day,  
When they made up fresh adventures for  
the morrow, do you say?

### V

Was a lady such a lady, cheeks so round  
and lips so red,—  
On her neck the small face buoyant, like  
a bell-flower on its bed,  
O'er the breast's superb abundance where  
a man might base his head?

### VI

Well, and it was graceful of them—they'd  
break talk off and afford  
—She, to bite her mask's black velvet—  
he, to finger on his sword,  
While you sat and played Toccatas, stately  
at the clavichord?

### VII

What? Those lesser thirds so plaintive,  
sixths diminished, sigh on sigh,  
Told them something? Those suspensions,  
those solutions—'Must we die?'  
Those commiserating sevenths—'Life  
might last! we can but try!'

### VIII

'Were you happy?'—'Yes.'—'And are  
you still as happy?'—'Yes. And  
you?'  
—'Then, more kisses!'—'Did I stop them,  
when a million seemed so few?'  
Hark, the dominant's persistence till it  
must be answered to!

### IX

So, an octave struck the answer. Oh, they  
praised you, I dare say!  
'Brave Galuppi! that was music! good  
alike at grave and gay!  
'I can always leave off talking when I hear  
a master play!'

### X

Then they left you for their pleasure: till  
in due time, one by one,  
Some with lives that came to nothing,  
some with deeds as well undone,  
Death stepped tacitly and took them where  
they never see the sun.

### XI

But when I sit down to reason, think to  
take my stand nor swerve,  
While I triumph o'er a secret wrung from  
nature's close reserve,  
In you come with your cold music till I  
creep thro' every nerve.

### XII

Yes, you, like a ghostly cricket, creaking  
where a house was burned:  
'Dust and ashes, dead and done with,  
Venice spent what Venice earned.  
'The soul, doubtless, is immortal—where  
a soul can be discerned.

### XIII

'Yours for instance: you know physics,  
something of geology,  
'Mathematics are your pastime; souls  
shall rise in their degree;  
'Butterflies may dread extinction,—you'll  
not die, it cannot be!

### XIV

'As for Venice and her people, merely born  
to bloom and drop,  
'Here on earth they bore their fruitage,  
mirth and folly were the crop:  
'What of soul was left, I wonder, when the  
kissing had to stop?

### XV

'Dust and ashes!' So you creak it, and I  
want the heart to scold.  
Dear dead women, with such hair, too—  
what's become of all the gold  
Used to hang and brush their bosoms? I  
feel chilly and grown old.

## OLD PICTURES IN FLORENCE

### I

THE morn when first it thunders in March,  
The eel in the pond gives a leap, they say:  
As I leaned and looked over the aloed arch  
Of the villa-gate this warm March day,  
No flash snapped, no dumb thunder rolled  
In the valley beneath where, white and  
wide  
And washed by the morning water-gold,  
Florence lay out on the mountain-side.

## OLD PICTURES IN FLORENCE

### II

River and bridge and street and square  
Lay mine, as much at my beck and call,  
Through the live translucent bath of air,  
As the sights in a magic crystal ball.  
And of all I saw and of all I praised,  
The most to praise and the best to see  
Was the startling bell-tower Giotto raised:  
But why did it more than startle me?

### III

Giotto, how, with that soul of yours,  
Could you play me false who loved you  
so?  
Some slights if a certain heart endures  
Yet it feels, I would have your fellows  
know!  
I' faith, I perceive not why I should care  
To break a silence that suits them best,  
But the thing grows somewhat hard to bear  
When I find a Giotto join the rest.

### IV

On the arch where olives overhead  
Print the blue sky with twig and leaf,  
(That sharp-curved leaf which they never  
shed)  
Twixt the aloes, I used to lean in chief,  
And mark through the winter afternoons,  
By a gift God grants me now and then,  
In the mild decline of those suns like  
moons,  
Who walked in Florence, besides her  
men.

### V

They might chirp and chaffer, come and go  
For pleasure or profit, her men alive—  
My business was hardly with them, I trow,  
But with empty cells of the human hive;  
—With the chapter-room, the cloister-  
porch,  
The church's apsis, aisle or nave,  
Its crypt, one fingers along with a torch,  
Its face set full for the sun to shave.

### VI

Wherever a fresco peels and drops,  
Wherever an outline weakens and wanes  
Till the latest life in the painting stops,  
Stands One whom each fainter pulse-  
tick pains:  
One, wishful each scrap should clutch the  
brick,  
Each tinge not wholly escape the plaster,  
—A lion who dies of an ass's kick,  
The wronged great soul of an ancient  
Master.

### VII

For oh, this world and the wrong it does!  
They are safe in heaven with their backs  
to it,  
The Michaels and Rafaels, you hum and  
buzz  
Round the works of, you of the little wit!

Do their eyes contract to the earth's old  
scope,  
Now that they see God face to face,  
And have all attain'd to be poets, I  
hope?  
'Tis their holiday now, in any case.

### VIII

Much they reckon of your praise and you!  
But the wronged great souls—can they  
be quit  
Of a world where their work is all to do,  
Where you style them, you of little  
wit,  
Old Master This and Early the Other,  
Not dreaming that Old and New are  
fellows:  
A younger succeeds to an elder brother,  
Da Vincis derive in good time from  
Dellos.

### IX

And here where your praise might yield  
returns,  
And a handsome word or two give  
help,  
Here, after your kind, the mastiff girns  
And the puppy pack of poodles yelp.  
What, not a word for Stefano there,  
Of brow once prominent and starry,  
Called Nature's Ape and the world's  
despair  
For his peerless painting? (See Vasari.)

### X

There stands the Master. Study, my  
friends,  
What a man's work comes to! So he  
plans it,  
Performs it, perfects it, makes amends  
For the toiling and moiling, and then,  
*sic transit!*  
Happier the thrifty blind-folk labour,  
With upturned eye while the hand is  
busy,  
Not sidling a glance at the coin of their  
neighbour!  
'Tis looking downward that makes one  
dizzy.

### XI

'If you knew their work you would deal  
your dole.'  
May I take upon me to instruct you?  
When Greek Art ran and reached the goal,  
Thus much had the world to boast in  
*fructu*—  
The Truth of Man, as by God first spoken,  
Which the actual generations garble,  
Was re-uttered, and Soul (which Limbs  
betoken)  
And Limbs (Soul informs) made new in  
marble.

## OLD PICTURES IN FLORENCE

### XII

So, you saw yourself as you wished you were,  
As you might have been, as you cannot be;  
Earth here, rebuked by Olympus there:  
And grew content in your poor degree  
With your little power, by those statues' godhead,  
And your little scope, by their eyes' full sway,  
And your little grace, by their grace embodied,  
And your little date, by their forms that stay.

### XIII

You would fain be kinglier, say, than I am?  
Even so, you will not sit like Theseus.  
You would prove a model? The Son of Priam  
Has yet the advantage in arms' and knees' use.  
You're wroth—can you slay your snake like Apollo?  
You're grieved—still Niobe's the grander!  
You live—there's the Racers' frieze to follow:  
You die—there's the dying Alexander.

### XIV

So, testing your weakness by their strength,  
Your meagre charms by their rounded beauty,  
Measured by Art in your breadth and length,  
You learned—to submit is a mortal's duty.  
—When I say 'you' 'tis the common soul,  
The collective, I mean: the race of Man  
That receives life in parts to live in a whole,  
And grow here according to God's clear plan.

### XV

Growth came when, looking your last on them all,  
You turned your eyes inwardly one fire day  
And cried with a start—What if we so small  
Be greater and grander the while than they?  
Are they perfect of lineament, perfect of stature?  
In both, of such lower types are we  
Precisely because of our wider nature;  
For time, theirs—ours, for eternity.

### XVI

To-day's brief passion limits their range;  
It seethes with the morrow for us and more.  
They are perfect—how else? they shall never change:  
We are faulty—why not? we have time in store.  
The Artificer's hand is not arrested  
With us; we are rough-hewn, nowise polished:  
They stand for our copy, and, once invested  
With all they can teach, we shall see them abolished.

### XVII

'Tis a life-long toil till our lump be leaven—  
The better! What's come to perfection perishes.  
Things learned on earth, we shall practise in heaven:  
Works done least rapidly, Art most cherishes.  
Thyself shalt afford the example, Giotto!  
Thy one work, not to decrease or diminish,  
Done at a stroke, was just (was it not?)  
'O!'  
Thy great Campanile is still to finish.

### XVIII

Is it true that we are now, and shall be hereafter,  
But what and where depend on life's minute?  
Hails heavenly cheer or infernal laughter  
Our first step out of the gulf or in it?  
Shall Man, such, keep within his endeavour,  
Man's face, have no more play and action  
Than joy which is crystallized for ever,  
Or grief, an eternal petrification?

### XIX

On which I conclude, that the early painters,  
To cries of 'Greek Art and what more wish you?'—  
Replied, 'To become now self-acquainters,  
'And paint man man, whatever the issue!  
'Make new hopes shine through the flesh they fray,  
'New fears aggrandize the rags and tatters:  
'To bring the invisible full into play!  
'Let the visible go to the dogs—what matters?'

## OLD PICTURES IN FLORENCE

### XX

Give these, I exhort you, their guerdon and glory  
For daring so much, before they well did it.

The first of the new, in our race's story,  
Beats the last of the old; 'tis no idle quiddit.

The worthies began a revolution,  
Which if on earth you intend to acknowledge,

Why, honour them now! (ends my allocution)

Nor confer your degree when the folk leave college.

### XXI

There's a fancy some lean to and others hate—

That, when this life is ended, begins  
New work for the soul in another state,  
Where it strives and gets weary, loses and wins:

Where the strong and the weak, this world's congeries,

Repeat in large what they practised in small,

Through life after life in unlimited series;  
Only the scale's to be changed, that's all.

### XXII

Yet I hardly know. When a soul has seen  
By the means of Evil that Good is best,  
And, through earth and its noise, what is heaven's serene,—

When our faith in the same has stood the test—

Why, the child grown man, you burn the rod,

The uses of labour are surely done;

There remaineth a rest for the people of God:

And I have had troubles enough, for one.

### XXIII

But at any rate I have loved the season  
Of Art's spring-birth so dim and dewy;

My sculptor is Nicolo the Pisan,  
My painter—who but Cimabue?

Nor ever was man of them all indeed,  
From these to Ghiberti and Ghirlandajo,

Could say that he missed my critic-meed.  
So, now to my special grievance—heigh ho!

### XXIV

Their ghosts still stand, as I said before,  
Watching each fresco flaked and rasped,  
Blocked up, knocked out, or whitewashed o'er:

—No getting again what the church has grasped!

The works on the wall must take their chance;

'Works never concealed to England's thick clime!'

(I hope they prefer their inheritance  
Of a bucketful of Italian quick-lime.)

### XXV

When they go at length, with such a shaking

Of heads o'er the old delusion, sadly  
Each master his way through the black streets taking,

Where many a lost work beathes though badly—

Why don't they bethink them of who has merited?

Why not reveal, while their pictures dree  
Such doom, how a captive might be out-ferreted?

Why is it they never remember me?

### XXVI

Not that I expect the great Bigordi,  
Nor Sandro to hear me, chivalric, bellicose;

Nor the wronged Lippino; and not a word I

Say of a scrap of Frà Angelico's:  
But are you too fine, Taddeo Gaddi,

To grant me a taste of your intonaco,  
Some Jerome that seeks the heaven with a sad eye?

Not a churlish saint, Lorenzo Monaco?

### XXVII

Could not the ghost with the close red cap,  
M<sup>y</sup> Pollajolo, the twice a craftsman,

Save me a sample, give me the hap  
Of a muscular Christ that shows the draughtsman?

No Virgin by him the somewhat petty,  
Offinical touch and tempera crumbly—

Could not Alesso Baldovinetti  
Contribute so much, I ask him humbly?

### XXVIII

Margheritone of Arezzo,  
With the grave-clothes garb and swaddling barret

(Why purse up mouth and beak in a pet so,  
You bald old saturnine poll-clawed parrot?)

Not a poor glimmering Crucifixion,  
Where in the foreground kneels the donor?

If such remain, as is my conviction,  
The hoarding it does you but little honour.

### XXIX

They pass; for them the panels may thrill,  
The tempera grow alive and tingly;

Their pictures are left to the mercies still  
Of dealers and stealers, Jews and the English,

## OLD PICTURES IN FLORENCE

Who, seeing mere money's worth in their  
prize,  
Will sell it to some body calm as Zeno  
At naked High Art, and in ecstasies  
Before some clay-cold vile Carlino!

xxx

No matter for these! But Giotto, you,  
Have you allowed, as the town-tongues  
babble it,—  
Oh, never! it shall not be counted true—  
That a certain precious little tablet  
Which Buonarroti eyed like a lover,—  
Was buried so long in oblivion's womb  
And, left for another than I to discover,  
Turns up at last! and to whom?—to  
whom?

xxxix

I, that have haunted the dim San Spirito,  
(Or was it rather the Ognissanti?)  
Patient on altar-step planting a weary toe!  
Nay, I shall have it yet! *Detur amanti!*  
My Koh-i-noor—or (if that's a platitude)  
Jewel of Giamschid, the Persian Sofi's  
eye;  
So, in anticipative gratitude,  
What if I take up my hope and prophesy?

xxxix

When the hour grows ripe, and a certain  
dotard  
Is pitched, no parcel that needs invoic-  
ing,  
To the worse side of the Mont Saint  
Gothard,  
We shall begin by way of rejoicing;  
None of that shooting the sky (blank car-  
tridge),  
Nor a civic guard, all plumes and lac-  
quer,  
Hunting Radetzky's soul like a partridge  
Over Morello with squib and cracker.

xxxix

This time we'll shoot better game and bag  
'em hot—  
No mere display at the stone of Dante,  
But a kind of sober Witanagemot  
(Ex: 'Casa Guidi,' *quod videas ante*)  
Shall ponder, once Freedom restored to  
Florence,  
How Art may return that departed with  
her.  
Go, hated house, go each trace of the  
Lorraine's,  
And bring us the days of Orgagna hither!

xxxix

How we shall prologize, how we shall  
perorate,  
Utter fit things upon art and history,  
Feel truth at blood-heat and falsehood at  
zero rate,  
Make of the want of the age no mystery;

Contrast the fructuous and sterile eras,  
Show—monarchy ever its uncouth cub  
licks  
Out of the bear's shape into Chimæra's,  
While Pure Art's birth is still the re-  
public's.

xxxix

Then one shall propose in a speech (curt  
Tuscan,  
Expurgate and sober, with scarcely an  
'*issimo*,')  
To end now our half-told tale of Cambus-  
can,  
And turn the bell-tower's *alt* to *altissimo*:  
And fine as the beak of a young beccaccia  
The Campanile, the Duomo's fit ally,  
Shall soar up in gold full fifty braccia,  
Completing Florence, as Florence Italy.

xxxix

Shall I be alive that morning the scaffold  
Is broken away, and the long-pent fire,  
Like the golden hope of the world, un-  
baffled  
Springs from its sleep, and up goes the  
spire  
While 'God and the People' plain for its  
motto,  
Thence the new tricolour flaps at the  
sky?  
At least to foresee that glory of Giotto  
And Florence together, the first am I!

### 'DE GUSTIBUS—'

I

YOUR ghost will walk, you lover of trees,  
(If our loves remain)  
In an English lane,  
By a cornfield-side a-flutter with poppies.  
Hark, those two in the hazel coppice—  
A boy and a girl, if the good fates please,  
Making love, say,—  
The happier they!  
Draw yourself up from the light of the  
moon,  
And let them pass, as they will too soon,  
With the bean-flowers' boon,  
And the blackbird's tune,  
And May, and June!

II

What I love best in all the world  
Is a castle, precipice-encurled,  
In a gash of the wind-grieved Apennine.  
Or look for me, old fellow of mine,  
(If I get my head from out the mouth  
O' the grave, and loose my spirit's bands,  
'And come again to the land of lands)—  
In a sea-side house to the farther South,  
Where the baked cicala dies of drouth,  
And one sharp tree—'tis a cypress—  
stands,



## ‘DE GUSTIBUS—’

By the many hundred years red-rusted,  
Rough iron-spiked, ripe fruit-o’ercrusted,  
My sentinel to guard the sands  
To the water’s edge. For, what expands  
Before the house, but the great opaque  
Blue-breadth of sea without a break?  
While, in the house, for ever crumbles  
Some fragment of the frescoed walls,  
From blisters where a scorpion sprawls.  
A girl bare-footed brings, and tumbles  
Down on the pavement, green-flesh melons,  
And says there’s news to-day—the king  
Was shot at, touched in the liver-wing,  
Goes with his Bourbon arm in a sling:  
—She hopes they have not caught the  
felons.

Italy, my Italy!

Queen Mary’s saying serves for me—  
(When fortune’s malice  
Lost her—Calais)—

Open my heart and you will see  
Graved inside of it, ‘Italy.’  
Such lovers old are I and she:  
So it always was, so shall ever be!

## HOME-THOUGHTS, FROM ABROAD

### I

Oh, to be in England  
Now that April’s there,  
And whoever wakes in England  
Sees, some morning, unaware,  
That the lowest boughs and the brush-  
wood sheaf  
Round the elm-tree bole are in tiny leaf,  
While the chaffinch sings on the orchard  
bough  
In England—now!

### II

And after April, when May follows,  
And the whitethroat builds, and all the  
swallows!  
Hark, where my blossomed pear-tree in  
the hedge  
Leans to the field and scatters on the clover  
Blossoms and dewdrops—at the bent  
spray’s edge—  
That’s the wise thrush; he sings each song  
twice over,  
Lest you should think he never could re-  
capture  
The first fine careless rapture!  
And though the fields look rough with  
hoary dew,  
All will be gay when noontide wakes  
anew  
The buttercups, the little children’s dower  
—Far brighter than this gaudy melon-  
flower!

## HOME-THOUGHTS, FROM THE SEA

NOBLY, nobly Came Saint Vincent to the  
North-west died away;  
Sunset ran, one glorious blood-red, reek-  
ing into Cadiz Bay;  
Bluish ‘mid the burning water, full in face  
Trafalgar lay;  
In the dimmest North-east distanced dawned  
Gibraltar grand and gray;  
‘Here and here did England help me: how  
can I help England?’—say,  
Whoso turns as I, this evening, turn to  
God to praise and pray,  
While Jove’s planet rises yonder, silent  
over Africa.

## SAUL

### I

SAM<sup>U</sup>EL Abner, ‘At last thou art come! Ere  
I tell, ere thou speak,  
‘Kiss my cheek, wish me well!’ Then I  
wished it, and did kiss his cheek.  
And he, ‘Since the King, O my friend, for  
thy countenance sent,  
‘Neither drunken nor eaten have we; nor  
until from his tent  
‘Thou return with the joyful assurance  
the King liveth yet,  
‘Shall our lip with the honey be bright,  
with the water be wet.  
‘For out of the black mid-tent’s silence,  
a space of three days,  
‘Not a sound hath escaped to thy ser-  
vants, of prayer nor of praise,  
‘To betoken that Saul and the Spirit have  
ended their strife,  
‘And that, faint in his triumph, the mon-  
arch sinks back upon life.

### II

‘Yet now my heart leaps, O beloved!  
God’s child with his dew  
‘On thy gracious gold hair, and those lilies  
still living and blue  
‘Just broken to twine round thy harp-  
strings, as if no wild heat  
‘Were now raging to torture the desert!’

### III

Then I, as was meet,  
Knelt down to the God of my fathers, and  
rose on my feet,  
And ran o’er the sand burnt to powder.  
The tent was unlooped;  
I pulled up the spear that obstructed, and  
under I stooped;  
Hands and knees on the slippery grass-  
patch, all withered and gone,  
That extends to the second enclosure, I  
groped my way on

Till I felt where the foldskirts fly open.

Then once more I prayed,  
And opened the foldskirts and entered,  
and was not afraid.  
But spoke, 'Here is David, thy servant!'  
And no voice replied.  
At the first I saw nought but the black-  
ness; but soon I descried  
A something more black than the black-  
ness—the vast, the upright  
Main prop which sustains the pavilion:  
and slow into sight  
Grew a figure against it, gigantic and  
blackest of all.  
Then a sunbeam, that burst thro' the tent-  
roof, showed Saul.

## IV

He stood as erect as that tent-prop, both  
arms stretched out wide  
On the great cross-support in the centre,  
that goes to each side;  
He relaxed not a muscle, but hung there  
as, caught in his pangs  
And waiting his change, the king-serpent  
all heavily hangs,  
Far away from his kind, in the pine, till  
deliverance come  
With the spring-time,—so agonized Saul,  
drear and stark, blind and dumb.

## V

Then I tuned my harp,—took off the lilies  
we twine round its chords  
Lest they snap 'neath the stress of the noon-  
tide—those sunbeams like swords!  
And I first played the tune all our sheep  
know, as, one after one,  
So docile they come to the pen-door till  
folding be done.  
They are white and untorn by the bushes,  
for lo, they have fed  
Where the long grasses stifle the water  
within the stream's bed;  
And now one after one seeks its lodging,  
as star follows star  
Into eve and the blue far above us,—so  
blue and so far!

## VI

—Then the tune, for which quails on the  
cornland will each leave his mate  
To fly after the player; then, what makes  
the crickets elate  
Till for boldness they fight one another!  
and then, what has weight  
To set the quick jerboa a-musing outside  
his sand house—  
There are none such as he for a wonder,  
half bird and half mouse!  
God made all the creatures and gave them  
our love and our fear,  
To give sign, we and they are his children,  
one family here.

## VII

Then I played the help-tune of our reapers,  
their wine-song, when hand  
Grasps at hand, eye lights eye in good  
friendship, and great hearts expand  
And grow one in the sense of this world's  
life.—And then, the last song  
When the dead man is praised on his  
journey—'Bear, bear him along  
'With his few faults shut up like dead  
flowerets! Are balm-seeds not here  
'To console us? The land has none left  
such as he on the bier.  
'Oh, would we might keep thee, my bro-  
ther!'—And then, the glad chaunt  
Of the marriage,—first go the young  
maidens, next, she whom we vaunt  
As the beauty, the pride of our dwelling.—  
And then, the great march  
Wherein man runs to man to assist him  
and buttress an arch  
Nought can break; who shall harm them,  
our friends?—Then, the chorus in-  
toned  
As the Levites go up to the altar in glory  
enthroned.  
But I stopped here: for here in the dark-  
ness Saul groaned.

## VIII

And I paused, held my breath in such  
silence, and listened apart;  
And the tent shook, for mighty Saul shud-  
dered: and sparkles 'gan dart  
From the jewels that woke in his turban,  
at once with a start,  
All its lordly male-sapphires, and rubies  
courageous at heart.  
So the head: but the body still moved not,  
still hung there erect.  
And I bent once again to my playing, pur-  
sued it unchecked,  
As I sang,—

## IX

'Oh, our manhood's prime vigour!  
No spirit feels waste,  
'Not a muscle is stopped in its playing nor  
sinew unbraced.  
'Oh, the wild joys of living! the leaping  
from rock up to rock,  
'The strong rending of boughs from the  
fir-tree, the cool silver shock  
'Of the plunge in a pool's living water, the  
hunt of the bear,  
'And the sultriness showing the lion is  
couched in his lair.  
'And the meal, the rich dates yellowed  
over with gold dust divine,  
'And the locust-flesh steeped in the pitcher,  
the full draught of wine,  
'And the sleep in the dried river-channel  
where bulrushes tell  
'That the water was wont to go warbling  
so softly and well.

## SAUL

'How good is man's life, the mere living!  
 how fit to employ  
 'All the heart and the soul and the senses  
 for ever in joy!  
 'Hast thou loved the white locks of thy  
 father, whose sword thou didst guard  
 'When he trusted thee forth with the  
 armies, for glorious reward?  
 'Didst thou see the thin hands of thy  
 mother, held up as men sung  
 'The low song of the nearly-departed, and  
 hear her faint tongue  
 'Joining in while it could to the witness,  
 "Let one more attest,  
 "'I have lived, seen God's hand thro' a  
 lifetime, and all was for best"?  
 'Then they sung thro' their tears in strong  
 triumph, not much, but the rest.  
 'And thy brothers, the help and the con-  
 test, the working whence grew  
 'Such result as, from seething grape-  
 bundles, the spirit strained true:  
 'And the friends of thy boyhood—that  
 boyhood of wonder and hope,  
 'Present promise and wealth of the future  
 beyond the eye's scope,—  
 'Till lo, thou art grown to a monarch; a  
 people is thine;  
 'And all gifts, which the world offers  
 singly, on one head combine!  
 'On one head, all the beauty and strength,  
 love and rage (like the throe  
 'That, a-work in the rock, helps its labour  
 and lets the gold go)  
 'High ambition and deeds which surpass  
 it, fame crowning them,—all  
 'Brought to blaze on the head of one  
 creature—King Saul!'

### X

And lo, with that leap of my spirit,—  
 heart, hand, harp and voice,  
 Each lifting Saul's name out of sorrow,  
 each bidding rejoice  
 Saul's fame in the light it was made for—  
 as when, dare I say,  
 The Lord's army, in rapture of service,  
 strains through its array,  
 And upsoareth the cherubim-chariot—  
 'Saul!' cried I, and stopped,  
 And waited the thing that should follow.  
 Then Saul, who hung propped  
 By the tent's cross-support in the centre,  
 was struck by his name.  
 Have ye seen when Spring's arrowy sum-  
 mers goes right to the aim,  
 And some mountain, the last to withstand  
 her, that held (he alone,  
 While the vale laughed in freedom and  
 flowers) on a broad bust of stone  
 A year's snow bound about for a breast-  
 plate,—leaves grasp of the sheet?  
 Fold on fold all at once it crowds thunder-  
 ously down to his feet,

And there fronts you, stark, black, but  
 alive yet, your mountain of old,  
 With his rents, the successive bequeath-  
 ings of ages untold—  
 Yea, each harm got in fighting your battles,  
 each furrow and scar  
 Of his head thrust 'twixt you and the tem-  
 pest—all hail, there they are!  
 —Now again to be softened with verdure,  
 again hold the nest  
 Of the dove, tempt the goat and its young  
 to the green on his crest.  
 For their food in the ardours of summer.  
 One long shudder thrilled  
 All the tent till the very air tingled, then  
 sank and was stilled  
 At the King's self left standing before me,  
 released and aware.  
 What was gone, what remained? All to  
 traverse, 'twixt hope and despair;  
 Death was past, life not come: so he  
 waited. Awhile his right hand  
 Held the brow, helped the eyes left too  
 vacant forthwith to remand  
 To their place what new objects should  
 enter: 'twas Saul as before.  
 I looked up and dared gaze at those eyes,  
 nor was hurt any more  
 Than by slow pallid sunsets in autumn, ye  
 watch from the shore,  
 At their sad level gaze o'er the ocean—a  
 sun's slow decline  
 Over hills which, resolved in stern silence,  
 o'erlap and entwine  
 Base with base to knit strength more in-  
 tensely: so, arm folded arm  
 O'er the chest whose slow heavings sub-  
 sided.

### XI

What spell or what charm,  
 (For, awhile there was trouble within me)  
 what next should I urge  
 To sustain him where song had restored  
 him?—Song filled to the verge  
 His cup with the wine of this life, pressing  
 all that it yields  
 Of mere fruitage, the strength and the  
 beauty: beyond, on what fields,  
 Glean a vintage more potent and perfect  
 to brighten the eye  
 And bring blood to the lip, and commend  
 them the cup they put by?  
 He saith, 'It is good; ' still he drinks not:  
 he lets me praise life,  
 Gives assent, yet would die for his own  
 part.

### XII

Then fancies grew rife  
 Which had come long ago on the pasture,  
 when round me the sheep  
 Fed in silence—above, the one eagle  
 wheeled slow as in sleep;

And I lay in my hollow and mused on the  
 world that might lie  
 'Neath his ken, though I saw but the strip  
 'twixt the hill and the sky:  
 And I laughed—'Since my days are or-  
 dained to be passed with my flocks,  
 'Let me people at least, with my fancies,  
 the plains and the rocks,  
 'Dream the life I am never to mix with,  
 and image the show  
 'Of mankind as they live in those fashions  
 I hardly shall know!  
 'Schemes of life, its best rules and right  
 uses, the courage that gains,  
 'And the prudence that keeps what men  
 strive for.' And now these old trains  
 Of vague thought came again; I grew  
 surer; so, once more the string  
 Of my harp made response to my spirit, as  
 thus—

## XIII

'Yea, my King.'

I began—'thou dost well in rejecting mere  
 comforts that spring  
 'From the mere mortal life held in com-  
 mon by man and by brute:  
 'In our flesh grows the branch of this life,  
 in our soul it bears fruit.  
 'Thou hast marked the slow rise of the  
 tree,—how its stem trembled first  
 'Till it passed the kid's lip, the stag's  
 antler; then safely outburst  
 'The fan-branches all round; and thou  
 mindest when these too, in turn  
 'Broke a-bloom and the palm-tree seemed  
 perfect: yet more was to learn,  
 'E'en the good that comes in with the  
 palm-fruit. Our dates shall we slight,  
 'When their juice brings a cure for all sor-  
 row? or care for the plight  
 'Of the palm's self whose slow growth  
 produced them? Not so! stem and  
 branch  
 'Shall decay, nor be known in their place,  
 while the palm-wine shall staunch  
 'Every wound of man's spirit in winter. I  
 pour thee such wine.  
 'Leave the flesh to the fate it was fit for!  
 the spirit be thine!  
 'By the spirit, when age shall o'ercome  
 thee, thou still shalt enjoy  
 'More indeed, than at first when incor-  
 scious, the life of a boy.  
 'Crush that life, and behold its wine run-  
 ning! Each deed thou hast done  
 'Dies, revives, goes to work in the world;  
 until e'en as the sun  
 'Looking down on the earth, though  
 clouds spoil him, though tempests  
 efface,  
 'Can find nothing his own deed produced  
 not, must everywhere trace

'The results of his past summer-prime,—  
 so, each ray of thy will,  
 'Every flash of thy passion and prowess,  
 long over, shall thrill  
 'Thy whole people, the countless, with  
 ardour, till they too give forth  
 'A like cheer to their sons, who in turn,  
 fill the South and the North  
 'With the radiance thy deed was the germ  
 of. Carouse in the past!  
 'But the license of age has its limit; thou  
 diest at last:  
 'As the lion when age dims his eyeball,  
 the rose at her height,  
 'So with man—so his power and his beauty  
 for ever take flight.  
 'No! Again a long draught of my soul-  
 wine! Look forth o'er the years!  
 'Thou hast done now with eyes for the  
 actual; begin with the seer's!  
 'Is Saul dead? In the depth of the vale  
 make his tomb—bid arise  
 'A grey mountain of marble heaped four-  
 square, till, built to the skies,  
 'Let it mark where the great First King  
 slumbers: whose fame would ye  
 know?  
 'Up above see the rock's naked face,  
 where the record shall go  
 'In great characters cut by the scribe,—  
 Such was Saul, so he did;  
 'With the sages directing the work, by the  
 populace chid,—  
 'For not half, they'll affirm, is comprised  
 there! Which fault to amend,  
 'In the grove with his kind grows the cedar,  
 whereon they shall spend  
 ' (See, in tablets 'tis level before them) their  
 praise, and record  
 'With the gold of the graver, Saul's story,  
 —the statesman's great word  
 'Side by side with the poet's sweet com-  
 ment. The river's a-wave  
 'With smooth paper-reeds gazing each  
 other when prophet-winds rave:  
 'So the pen gives unborn generations their  
 due and their part  
 'In thy being! Then, first of the mighty,  
 thank God that thou art!

## XIV

And behold while I sang . . . but O Thou  
 who didst grant me that day,  
 And before it not seldom hast granted thy  
 help to essay,  
 Carry on and complete an adventure,—  
 my shield and my sword  
 'In that act where my soul was thy servant,  
 thy word was my word,—  
 Still be with me, who then at the summit  
 of human endeavour  
 And scaling the highest, man's thought  
 could, gazed hopeless as ever

## SAUL

On the new stretch of heaven above me—  
till, mighty to save,  
Just one lift of thy hand cleared that distance—  
God's throne from man's grave!  
Let me tell out my tale to its ending—my  
voice to my heart  
Which can scarce dare believe in what  
marvels last night I took part;  
As this morning I gather the fragments,  
alone with my sheep,  
And still fear lest the terrible glory vanish  
like sleep!  
For I wake in the grey dewy covert, while  
Hebron upheaves  
The dawn struggling with night on his  
shoulder, and Kidron retrieves  
Slow the damage of yesterday's sunshine.

### XV

I say then,—my song  
While I sang thus, assuring the monarch,  
and ever more strong  
Made a proffer of good to console him—  
he slowly resumed  
His old motions and habitudes kingly. The  
right-hand replumed  
His black locks to their wonted com-  
posure, adjusted the swathes  
Of his turban, and see—the huge sweat  
that his countenance bathes,  
He wipes off with the robe; and he girds  
now his loins as of yore,  
And feels slow for the armlets of price,  
with the clasp set before.  
He is Saul, ye remember in glory,—ere  
error had bent  
The broad brow from the daily com-  
munion; and still, though much spent  
Be the life and the bearing that front you,  
the same, God did choose,  
To receive what a man may waste, desec-  
rate, never quite lose.  
So sank he along by the tent-prop till,  
stayed by the pile  
Of his armour and war-cloak and gar-  
ments, he leaned there awhile,  
And sat out my singing,—one arm round  
the tent-prop, to raise  
His bent head, and the other hung slack—  
till I touched on the praise  
I foresaw from all men in all time, to the  
man patient there;  
And thus ended, the harp falling forward.  
Then first I was 'ware  
That he sat, as I say, with my head just  
above his vast knees  
Which were thrust out on each side around  
me, like oak-roots which please  
To encircle a lamb when it slumbers. I  
looked up to know  
If the best I could do had brought solace:  
he spoke not, but slow

Lifted up the hand slack at his side, till he  
laid it with care  
Soft and grave, but in mild settled will, on  
my brow: thence my hair  
The large fingers were pushed, and he  
bent back my head, with kind  
power—  
All my face back, intent to peruse it, as  
men do a flower.  
Thus held he me there with his great eyes  
that scrutinized mine—  
And oh, all my heart how it loved him!  
but where was the sign?  
I yearned—'Could I help thee, my father,  
inventing a bliss,  
'I would add, to that life of the past, both  
the future and this;  
'I would give thee new life altogether, as  
good, ages hence,  
'As this moment,—had love but the war-  
rant, love's heart to dispense!'

### XVI

Then the truth came upon me. No harp  
more—no song more! outbreak—

### XVII

'I have gone the whole round of creation:  
I saw and I spoke:  
'I, a work of God's hand for that purpose,  
received in my brain  
'And pronounced on the rest of his hand-  
work—returned him again  
'His creation's approval or censure: I  
spoke as I saw:  
'I report, as a man may of God's work—  
all's love, yet all's law.  
'Now I lay down the judgeship he lent  
me. Each faculty tasked  
'To perceive him, has gained an abyss,  
where a dewdrop was asked.  
'Have I knowledge? confounded it shrivels  
at Wisdom laid bare.  
'Have I forethought? how purblind, how  
blank, to the Infinite Care!  
'Do I task any faculty highest, to image  
success?  
'I but open my eyes,—and perfection, no  
more and no less,  
'In the kind I imagined, full-fronts me,  
and God is seen God  
'In the star, in the stone, in the flesh, in  
the soul and the clod.  
'And thus looking within and around me,  
I ever renew  
'(With that stoop of the soul which in  
bending upraises it too)  
'The submission of man's nothing-perfect  
to God's all-complete,  
'As by each new obeisance in spirit, I  
climb to his feet.

## xviii

'Yet with all this abounding experience,  
 this deity known,  
 'I shall dare to discover some province,  
 some gift of my own.  
 'There's a faculty pleasant to exercise,  
 hard to hoodwink,  
 'I am fain to keep still in abeyance, (I  
 laugh as I think)  
 'Lest, insisting to claim and parade in it,  
 wot ye, I worst  
 'E'en the Giver in one gift.—Behold, I  
 could love if I durst!  
 'But I sink the pretension as fearing a man  
 may o'ertake  
 'God's own speed in the one way of love:  
 I abstain for love's sake.  
 '—What, my soul? see thou far and no  
 farther? when doors great and small,  
 'Nine-and-ninety flew ope at our touch,  
 should the hundredth appal?  
 'In the least things have faith, yet distrust  
 in the greatest of all?  
 'Do I find love so full in my nature, God's  
 ultimate gift,  
 'That I doubt his own love can compete  
 with it? Here, the parts shift?  
 'Here, the creature surpass the Creator,—  
 the end, what Began?  
 'Would I fain in my impotent yearning  
 do all for this man,  
 'And dare doubt he alone shall not help  
 him, who yet alone can?  
 'Would it ever have entered my mind, the  
 bare will, much less power,  
 'To bestow on this Saul what I sang of,  
 the marvellous dower  
 'Of the life he was gifted and filled with?  
 to make such a soul,  
 'Such a body, and then such an earth for  
 insphering the whole?  
 'And doth it not enter my mind (as my  
 warm tears attest)  
 'These good things being given, to go on,  
 and give one more, the best?  
 'Ay, to save and redeem and restore him,  
 maintain at the height  
 'This perfection,—succeed with life's day-  
 spring, death's minute of night?  
 'Interpose at the difficult minute, snatch  
 Saul the mistake,  
 'Saul the failure, the ruin he seems now,  
 —and bid him awake  
 'From the dream, the probation, the pre-  
 lude, to find himself set  
 'Clear and safe in new light and new life,  
 —a new harmony yet  
 'To be run, and continued, and ended—  
 who knows?—or endure!  
 'The man taught enough, by life's dream,  
 of the rest to make sure;  
 'By the pain-throb, triumphantly winning  
 intensified bliss,  
 'And the next world's reward and repose,  
 by the struggles in this.

'I believe it! 'Tis thou, God, that givest,  
 'tis I who receive:  
 'In the first is the last, in thy will is my  
 power to believe.  
 'All's one gift: thou canst grant it more-  
 over, as prompt to my prayer  
 'As I breathe out this breath, as I open  
 these arms to the air.  
 'From thy will, stream the worlds, life  
 and nature, thy dread Sabaoth:  
 'I will?—the mere atoms despise me! Why  
 am I not loth  
 'To look that, even that in the face too?  
 Why is it I dare  
 'Think but lightly of such impuissance?  
 What stops my despair?  
 'This;—'tis not what man Does which  
 exalts him, but what man Would do!  
 'See the King—I would help him but can-  
 not, the wishes fall through.  
 'Could I wrestle to raise him from sor-  
 row, grow poor to enrich,  
 'To fill up his life, starve my own out, I  
 would—knowing which,  
 'I know that my service is perfect. Oh,  
 speak through me now!  
 'Would I suffer for him that I love? So  
 wouldst thou—so wilt thou!  
 'So shall crown thee the topmost, ineffa-  
 blest, uttermost crown—  
 'And thy love fill infinitude wholly, nor  
 leave up nor down  
 'One spot for the creature to stand in! It  
 is by no breath,  
 'Turn of eye, wave of hand, that salvation  
 joins issue with death!  
 'As thy Love is discovered almighty, al-  
 mighty be proved  
 'Thy power, that exists with and for it, of  
 being Beloved!  
 'He who did most, shall bear most; the  
 strongest shall stand the most weak.  
 'Tis the weakness in strength, that I cry  
 for! my flesh, that I seek  
 'In the Godhead! I seek and I find it. O  
 Saul, it shall be  
 'A Face like my face that receives thee; a  
 Man like to me,  
 'Thou shalt love and be loved by, for  
 ever: a Hand like this hand  
 'Shall throw open the gates of new life to  
 thee! See the Christ stand!'

## xix

I know not too well how I found my way  
 home in the night.  
 There were witnesses, cohorts about me,  
 to left and to right,  
 Angels, powers, the unuttered, unseen, the  
 alive, the aware:  
 I repressed, I got through them as hardly,  
 as strugglingly there,

## SAUL

As a runner beset by the populace  
famished for news—  
Life or death. The whole earth was  
awakened, hell loosed with her  
crews;  
And the stars of night beat with emotion,  
and tingled and shot  
Out in fire the strong pain of pent know-  
ledge: but I fainted not,  
For the Hand still impelled me at once and  
supported, suppressed  
All the tumult, and quenched it with quiet,  
and holy behest,  
Till the rapture was shut in itself, and the  
earth sank to rest.  
Anon at the dawn, all that trouble had  
withered from earth—  
Not so much, but I saw it die out in the  
day's tender birth;  
In the gathered intensity brought to the  
grey of the hills;  
In the shuddering forests' held breath; in  
the sudden wind-thrills;  
In the startled wild beasts that bore off,  
each with eye sidling still  
Though averted with wonder and dread;  
in the birds stiff and chill  
That rose heavily, as I approached them,  
made stupid with awe:  
E'en the serpent that slid away silent,—  
he felt the new law.  
The same stared in the white humid faces  
upturned by the flowers;  
The same worked in the heart of the cedar  
and moved the vine-bowers:  
And the little brooks witnessing mur-  
mured, persistent and low,  
With their obstinate, all but hushed voices  
—'E'en so, it is so!'

## MY STAR

ALL that I know  
Of a certain star  
Is, it can throw  
(Like the angled spar)  
Now a dart of red,  
Now a dart of blue;  
Till my friends have said  
They would fain see, too,  
My star that dartles the red and the  
blue!  
Then it stops like a bird; like a flower,  
hangs furl'd:  
They must solace themselves with the  
Saturn above it.  
What matter to me if their star is a  
world?  
Mine has opened its soul to me; there-  
fore I love it.

## BY THE FIRE-SIDE

How well I know what I mean to do  
When the long dark autumn-evenings  
come:  
And where, my soul, is thy pleasant hue?  
With the music of all thy voices, dumb  
In life's November too!

### II

I shall be found by the fire. suppose,  
O'er a great wise book as beseemeth  
age,  
While the shutters flap as the cross-wind  
blows  
And I turn the page, and I turn the page,  
Not verse now, only prose!

### III

Till the young ones whisper, finger on lip,  
'There he is at it, deep in Greek:  
'Now then, or never, out we slip  
'To cut from the hazels by the creek  
'A mainmast for our ship!'

### IV

I shall be at it indeed, my friends:  
Greek puts already on either side  
Such a branch-work forth as soon extends  
To a vista opening far and wide,  
And I pass out where it ends.

### V

The outside-frame, like your hazel-trees:  
But the inside-archway widens fast,  
And a rarer sort succeeds to these,  
And we slope to Italy at last  
And youth, by green degrees.

### VI

I follow wherever I am led,  
Knowing so well the leader's hand:  
Oh woman-country, wooed not wed,  
Loved all the more by earth's male-  
lands,  
Laid to their hearts instead!

### VII

Look at the ruined chapel again  
Half-way up in the Alpine gorge!  
Is that a tower, I point you plain,  
Or is it a mill, or an iron-forge  
Breaks solitude in vain?

### VIII

A turn, and we stand in the heart of things;  
The woods are round us, heaped and  
dim;  
From slab to slab how it slips and springs,  
The thread of water single and slim,  
Through the ravage some torrent brings!

## BY THE FIRE-SIDE

### IX

Does it feed the little lake below?  
That speck of white just on its marge  
Is Pella; see, in the evening-glow,  
How sharp the silver spear-heads charge  
When Alp meets heaven in snow!

### X

On our other side is the straight-up rock;  
And a path is kept 'twixt the gorge and it  
By boulder-stones where lichens mock  
The marks on a moth, and small ferns  
fit  
Their teeth to the polished block.

### XI

Oh the sense of the yellow mountain-  
flowers,  
And thorny balls, each three in one,  
The chestnuts throw on our path in  
showers!  
For the drop of the woodland fruit's  
begun,  
These early November hours,

### XII

That crimson the creeper's leaf across  
Like a splash of blood, intense, abrupt,  
O'er a shield else gold from rim to boss,  
And lay it for show on the fairy-cupped  
Elf-needed mat of moss,

### XIII

By the rose-flesh mushrooms, undivulged  
Last evening—nay, in to-day's first, dew  
Yon sudden coral nipple bulged,  
Where a freaked fawn-coloured flaky  
crew  
Of toadstools peep indulged.

### XIV

And yonder, at foot of the fronting ridge  
That takes the turn to a range beyond,  
Is the chapel reached by the one-arched  
bridge  
Where the water is stopped in a stagnant  
pond  
Danced over by the midge.

### XV

The chapel and bridge are of stone alike,  
Blackish-grey and mostly wet;  
Cut hemp-stalks steep in the narrow dyke  
See here again, how the lichens fret  
And the roots of the ivy strike!

### XVI

Poor little place, where its one priest comes,  
On a festa-day, if he comes at all,  
To the dozen folk from their scattered  
homes,  
Gathered within that precinct small  
By the dozen ways one roams—

### XVII

To drop from the charcoal-burners' huts,  
Or climb from the hemp-dressers' low  
shed,  
Leave the grange where the woodman  
stores his nuts,  
Or the wattled cote where the fowlers  
spread  
Their gear on the rock's bare juts.

### XVIII

It has some pretension too, this front,  
With its bit of fresco half-moon-wise  
Set over the porch, Art's early wont:  
'Tis John in the Desert, I surmise,  
But has borne the weather's brunt—

### XIX

Not from the fault of the builder, though,  
For a pent-house properly projects  
Where three carved beams make a certain  
show,  
Dating—good thought of our archi-  
tect's—  
'Five, six, nine, he lets you know.

### XX

And all day long a bird sings there,  
And a stray sheep drinks at the pond  
at times;  
The place is silent and aware;  
It has had its scenes, its joys and crimes,  
But that is its own affair.

### XXI

My perfect wife, my Leonor,  
Oh heart, my own, oh eyes, mine too,  
Whom else could I dare look backward  
for,  
With whom beside should I dare pursue  
The path grey heads abhor?

### XXII

For it leads to a crag's sheer edge with  
them;  
Youth, flowery all the way, there  
stops—  
Not they; age threatens and they contemn,  
Till they reach the gulf wherein youth  
drops,  
One inch from life's safe hem!

### XXIII

With me, youth led . . . I will speak now,  
No longer watch you as you sit  
Reading by fire-light, that great brow  
And the spirit-small hand propping it,  
Mutely, my heart knows how—



## BY THE FIRE-SIDE

XXIV

When, if I think but deep enough,  
You are wont to answer, prompt as  
rhyme;  
And you, too, find without rebuff  
Response your soul seeks many a time  
Piercing its fine flesh-stuff.

XXV

My own, confirm me! If I tread  
This path back, is it not in pride  
To think how little I dreamed it led  
To an age so blest that, by its side,  
Youth seems the waste instead?

XXVI

My own, see where the years conduct!  
At first, 'twas something our two souls  
Should mix as mists do; each is sucked  
In each now: on, the new stream rolls,  
Whatever rocks obstruct.

XXVII

Think, when our one soul understands  
The great Word which makes all things  
new,  
When earth breaks up and heaven ex-  
pands,  
How will the change strike me and you  
In the house not made with hands?

XXVIII

Oh I must feel your brain prompt mine,  
Your heart anticipate my heart,  
You must be just before, in fine,  
See and make me see, for your part,  
New depths of the divine!

XXIX

But who could have expected this  
When we two drew together first  
Just for the obvious human bliss,  
To satisfy life's daily thirst  
With a thing men seldom miss?

XXX

Come back with me to the first of all,  
Let us lean and love it over again,  
Let us now forget and now recall,  
Break the rosary in a pearly rain,  
And gather what we let fall!

XXXI

What did I say?—that a small bird sings  
All day long, save when a brown pair  
Of hawks from the wood float with wide  
wings  
Strained to a bell: 'gainst noon-day  
glare  
You count the streaks and rings.

XXXII

But at afternoon or almost eve  
'Tis better; there the silence grows  
To that degree, you half believe  
It must get rid of what it knows,  
Its bosom does so heave.

XXXIII

Hither we walked then, side by side,  
Arm in arm and cheek to cheek,  
And still I questioned or replied,  
While my heart, convulsed to really  
speak,  
Lay choking in its pride.

XXXIV

Silent the crumbling bridge we cross,  
And pity and praise the chapel sweet,  
And care about the fresco's loss,  
And wish for our souls a like retreat,  
And wonder at the moss.

XXXV

Stoop and kneel on the settle under,  
Look through the window's grated  
square:  
Nothing to see! For fear of plunder,  
The cross is down and the altar bare,  
As if thieves don't fear thunder.

XXXVI

We stoop and look in through the grate,  
See the little porch and rustic door,  
Read duly the dead builder's date;  
Then cross the bridge that we crossed  
before,  
Take the path again—but wait!

XXXVII

Oh moment, one and infinite!  
The water slips o'er stock and stone;  
The West is tender, hardly bright:  
How grey at once is the evening grown—  
One star, its chrysolite!

XXXVIII

We two stood there with never a third,  
But each by each, as each knew well:  
The sights we saw and the sounds we  
heard,  
The lights and the shades made up a  
spell  
Till the trouble grew and stirred.

XXXIX

Oh, the little more, and how much it is!  
And the little less, and what worlds  
away!  
How a sound shall quicken content to  
bliss,  
Or a breath suspend the blood's best  
play,  
And life be a proof of this!

## BY THE FIRE-SIDE

XL

Had she willed it, still had stood the screen  
So slight, so sure, 'twixt my love and  
her:  
I could fix her face with a guard between,  
And find her soul as when friends  
confer,  
Friends—lovers that might have been.

XLI

For my heart had a touch of the woodland-  
time,  
Wanting to sleep now over its best.  
Shake the whole tree in the summer-prime,  
But bring to the last leaf no such test!  
'Hold the last fast!' runs the rhyme.

XLII

For a chance to make your little much,  
To gain a lover and lose a friend,  
Venture the tree and a myriad year,  
When nothing you mar but the year can  
mend:  
But a last leaf—fear to touch!

XLIII

Yet should it unfasten itself and fall  
Eddying down till it find your face  
At some slight wind—best chance of all!  
Be your heart henceforth its dwelling-  
place  
You trembled to forestall!

XLIV

Worth how well, those dark grey eyes,  
That hair so dark and dear, how worth  
That a man should strive and agonize,  
And taste a veriest hell on earth  
For the hope of such a prize!

XLV

You might have turned and tried a man,  
Set him a space to weary and wear,  
And prove which suited more your plan,  
His best of hope or his worst despair,  
Yet end as he began.

XLVI

But you spared me this, like the heart you  
are,  
And filled my empty heart at a word.  
If two lives join, there is oft a scar,  
They are one and one, with a shadow,  
third;  
One near one is too far.

XLVII

A moment after, and hands unseen  
Were hanging the night around us fast;  
But we knew that a bar was broken be-  
tween  
Life and life: we were mixed at last  
In spite of the mortal screen.

XLVIII

The forests had done it; there they stood;  
We caught for a moment the powers at  
play:  
They had mingled us so, for once and  
good,  
Their work was done—we might go or  
stay,  
They relapsed to their ancient mood.

XLIX

How the world is made for each of us!  
How all we perceive and know in it  
Tends to some moment's product thus,  
When a soul declares itself—to wit,  
By its fruit, the thing it does!

L

Be hate that fruit or love that fruit,  
It forwards the general deed of man,  
And each of the Many helps to recruit  
The life of the race by a general plan;  
Each living his own, to boot.

LI

I am named and known by that moment's  
feat;  
There took my station and degree;  
So grew my own small life complete,  
As nature obtained her best of me—  
One born to love you, sweet!

LII

And to watch you sink by the fire-side  
now  
Back again, as you mutely sit  
Musing by fire-light, that great brow  
And the spirit-small hand propping it,  
Yonder, my heart knows how!

LIII

So, earth has gained by one man the more,  
And the gain of earth must be heaven's  
gain too;  
And the whole is well worth thinking o'er  
When autumn comes: which I mean to  
do  
One day, as I said before.

## ANY WIFE TO ANY HUSBAND

I

My love, this is the bitterest, that thou  
Who art all truth, and who dost love me  
now  
As thine eyes say, as thy voice breaks to  
say—  
Shouldst love so truly, and couldst love  
me still  
A whole long life through, had but love its  
will,  
Would death that leads me from thee  
brook delay.

## ANY WIFE TO ANY HUSBAND

### II

I have but to be by thee, and thy hand  
Will never let mine go, nor heart withstand  
The beating of my heart to reach its  
place.  
When shall I look for thee and feel thee  
gone?  
When cry for the old comfort and find  
none?  
Never, I know! Thy soul is in thy face.

### III

Oh, I should fade—'tis willed so! Might  
I save,  
Gladly I would, whatever beauty gave  
Joy to thy sense, for that was precious  
too.  
It is not to be granted. But the soul  
Whence the love comes, all ravage leaves  
that whole;  
Vainly the flesh fades; soul makes all  
things new.

### IV

It would not be because my eye grew dim  
Thou couldst not find the love there,  
thanks to Him  
Who never is dishonoured in the spark  
He gave us from his fire of fires, and bade  
Remember whence it sprang, nor be afraid  
While that burns on, though all the rest  
grow dark.

### V

So, how thou wouldst be perfect, white  
and clean  
Outside as inside, soul and soul's demesne  
Alike, this body given to show it by!  
Oh, three-parts through the worst of life's  
abyss,  
What plaudits from the next world after  
this,  
Couldst thou repeat a stroke and gain  
the sky!

### VI

And is it not the bitterer to think  
That, disengage our hands and thou wilt  
sink  
Although thy love was love in very  
deed?  
I know that nature! Pass a festive day,  
Thou dost not throw its relic-flower away  
Nor bid its music's loitering echo speed.

### VII

Thou let'st the stranger's glove lie where  
it fell;  
If old things remain old things all is well,  
For thou art grateful as becomes man  
best:  
And hadst thou only heard me play one  
tune,  
Or viewed me from a window, not so soon  
With thee would such things fade as  
with the rest.

### VIII

I seem to see! We meet and part; 'tis brief;  
The book I open keeps a folded leaf;  
The very chair I sat on, breaks the rank;  
That is a portrait of me on the wall—  
Three lines, my face comes at so slight a  
call:  
And for all this, one little hour to thank!

### IX

But now, because the hour through years  
was fixed,  
Because our inmost beings met and mixed,  
Because thou once hast loved me—wilt  
thou dare  
Say to thy soul and Who may list beside,  
'Therefore she is immortally my bride;  
'Chance cannot change my love, nor  
time impair.

### X

'So, what if in the dusk of life that's left,  
'I, a tired traveller of my sun bereft,  
'Look from my path when, mimicking  
the same,  
'The fire-fly glimpses past me, come and  
gone?  
'—Where was it till the sunset? where  
anon  
'It will be at the sunrise! What's to  
blame?'

### XI

Is it so helpful to thee? Canst thou take  
The mimic up, nor, for the true thing's  
sake,  
Put gently by such efforts at a beam?  
Is the remainder of the way so long,  
Thou need'st the little solace, thou the  
strong?  
Watch out thy watch, let weak ones  
doze and dream!

### XII

—Ah, but the fresher faces! 'Is it true.'  
Thou'lt ask, 'some eyes are beautiful and  
new?  
'Some hair,—how can one choose but  
grasp such wealth?  
'And if a man would press his lips to lips  
'Fresh as the wilding hedge-rose-cup there  
slips  
'The dew-drop out of, must it be by  
stealth?'

### XIII

'It cannot change the love still kept for  
Her,  
'More than if such a picture I prefer  
'Passing a day with, to a room's bare  
side:  
The painted form takes nothing she pos-  
sessed,  
Yet, while the Titian's Venus lies at rest,  
A man looks. Once more, what is there  
to chide?'

## ANY WIFE TO ANY HUSBAND

### XIV

So must I see, from where I sit and watch,  
My own self sell myself, my hand attach  
Its warrant to the very thefts from me—  
Thy singleness of soul that made me  
proud,  
Thy purity of heart I loved aloud,  
Thy man's-truth I was bold to bid God  
see!

### XV

Love so, then, if thou wilt! Give all thou  
canst .  
Away to the new faces—disentranced,  
(Say it and think it) obdurate no more:  
Re-issue looks and words from the old  
mint,  
Pass them afresh, no matter whose the  
print  
Image and superscription once they  
bore!

### XVI

Re-coin thyself and give it them, to  
spend,—  
It all comes to the same thing at the end,  
Since mine thou wast, mine art and mine  
shalt be,  
Faithful or faithless, sealing up the sum  
Or lavish of my treasure, thou must come  
Back to the heart's place here I keep  
for thee!

### XVII

Only, why should it be with stain at all?  
Why must I, 'twixt the leaves of coronal,  
Put any kiss of pardon on thy brow?  
Why need the other women know so  
much,  
And talk together, 'Such the look and  
such  
'The smile he used to love with, then  
as now!'

### XVIII

Might I die last and show thee! Should I  
find  
Such hardship in the few years left be-  
hind,  
If free to take and light my lamp, and  
go  
Into thy tomb, and shut the door and sit,  
Seeing thy face on those four sides of it  
The better that they are so blank, I  
know!

### XIX

Why, time was what I wanted, to turn o'er  
Within my mind each look, get more and  
more  
By heart each word, too much to learn  
at first;  
And join thee all the fitter for the pause  
'Neath the low doorway's lintel. That  
were cause  
For lingering, though thou calledst, if  
I durst!

### XX

And yet thou art the nobler of us two:  
What dare I dream of, that thou canst  
not do,  
Outstripping my ten small steps with  
one stride?  
I'll say then, here's a trial and a task—  
Is it to bear?—if easy, I'll not ask:  
Though love fail, I can trust on in thy  
pride.

### XXI

Pride?—when those eyes forestall the life  
behind  
The death I have to go through!—when  
I find,  
Now that I want thy help most, all of  
thee!  
What did I fear? Thy love shall hold me  
fast  
Until the little minute's sleep is past  
And I wake saved.—And yet it will not  
be!

## TWO IN THE CAMPAGNA

### I

I WONDER do you feel to-day  
As I have felt since, hand in hand,  
We sat down on the grass, to stray  
In spirit better through the land,  
This morn of Rome and May?

### II

For me, I touched a thought, I know,  
Has tantalized me many times,  
(Like turns of thread the spiders throw  
Mocking across our path) for rhymes  
To catch at and let go.

### III

Help me to hold it! First it left  
The yellowing fennel, run to seed  
There, branching from the brickwork's  
cleft,  
Some old tomb's ruin: yonder weed  
Took up the floating weft,

### IV

Where one small orange cup amassed  
Five beetles,—blind and green they  
grobe  
Among the honey-meal: and last,  
Everywhere on the grassy slope  
I traced it. Hold it fast!

### V

The champaign with its endless fleece  
Of feathery grasses everywhere!  
Silence and passion, joy and peace,  
An everlasting wash of air—  
Rome's ghost since her decease.

## TWO IN THE CAMPAGNA

### VI

Such life here, through such lengths of hours,  
Such miracles performed in play,  
Such primal naked forms of flowers,  
Such letting nature have her way  
While heaven looks from its towers!

### VII

How say you? Let us, O my dove,  
Let us be unashamed of soul,  
As earth lies bare to heaven above!  
How is it under our control  
To love or not to love?

### VIII

I would that you were all to me,  
You that are just so much, no more.  
Nor yours nor mine, nor slave nor free!  
Where does the fault lie? What the core  
O' the wound, since wound must be?

### IX

I would I could adopt your will,  
See with your eyes, and set my heart  
Beating by yours, and drink my fill  
At your soul's springs,—your part my part  
In life, for good and ill.

### X

No. I yearn upward, touch you close,  
Then stand away. I kiss your cheek,  
Catch your soul's warmth,—I pluck the rose  
And love it more than tongue can speak—  
Then the good minute goes.

### XI

Already how am I so far  
Out of that minute? Must I go  
Still like the thistle-ball, no bar,  
Onward, whenever light winds blow,  
Fixed by no friendly star?

### XII

Just when I seemed about to learn!  
Where is the thread now? Off again!  
The old trick! Only I discern—  
Infinite passion, and the pain  
Of finite hearts that yearn.

## MISCONCEPTIONS

### I

This is a spray the Bird clung to,  
Making it blossom with pleasure,  
Ere the high tree-top she sprung to,  
Fit for her nest and her treasure.  
Oh, what a hope beyond measure  
Was the poor spray's, which the flying  
feet hung to,—  
So to be singled out, built in, and sung to!

### II

This is a heart the Queen leant on,  
Thrilled in a minute erratic,  
Ere the true bosom she bent on,  
Meet for love's regal dalmatic.  
Oh, what a fancy ecstatic  
Was the poor heart's, ere the wanderer  
went on—  
Love to be saved for it, proffered to, spent  
on!

## A SERENADE AT THE VILLA

### I

THAT was I, you heard last night,  
When there rose no moon at all,  
Nor, to pierce the strained and tight  
Tent of heaven, a planet small:  
Life was dead and so was light.

### II

Not a twinkle from the fly,  
Not a glimmer from the worm;  
When the crickets stopped their cry,  
When the owls forbore a term,  
You heard music; that was I.

### III

Earth turned in her sleep with pain,  
Sultrily suspired for proof:  
In at heaven and out again,  
Lightning!—where it broke the roof,  
Bloodlike, some few drops of rain.

### IV

What they could my words expressed,  
O my love, my all, my one!  
Singing helped the verses best,  
And when singing's best was done,  
To my lute I left the rest.

### V

So wore the night; the East was gray,  
White the broad-faced hemlock-  
flowers:  
There would be another day;  
Ere its first of heavy hours  
Found me, I had passed away.

### VI

What became of all the hopes,  
Words and song and lute as well?  
Say, this struck you—'When life gropes  
Feebly for the path where fell  
'Light last on the evening slopes,

### VII

'One friend in that path shall be,  
'To secure my step from wrong;  
'One to count night day for me,  
'Patient through the watches long,  
'Serving most with none to see.'

## A SERENADE AT THE VILLA ANOTHER WAY OF LOVE

VIII

Never say—as something bodes—  
 'So, the worst has yet a worse!  
 'When life halts 'neath double loads,  
 'Better the taskmaster's curse  
 'Than such music on the roads!

IX

'When no moon succeeds the sun,  
 'Nor can pierce the midnight's tent  
 'Any star, the smallest one,  
 'While some drops, where lightning  
 rent,  
 'Show the final storm begun—

X

'When the fire-fly hides its spot,  
 'When the garden-voices fail  
 'In the darkness thick and hot,—  
 'Shall another voice avail,  
 'That shape be where these are not?

XI

'Has some plague a longer lease,  
 'Proffering its help uncouth?  
 'Can't one even die in peace?  
 'As one shuts one's eyes on youth,  
 'Is that face the last one sees?'

XII

Oh how dark your villa was,  
 Windows fast and obdurate!  
 How the garden grudged me grass  
 Where I stood—the iron gate  
 Ground its teeth to let me pass!

### ONE WAY OF LOVE

I

ALL June I bound the rose in sheaves.  
 Now, rose by rose, I strip the leaves  
 And strew them where Pauline may pass.  
 She will not turn aside? Alas!  
 Let them lie. Suppose they die?  
 The chance was they might take her eye.

II

How many a month I strove to suit  
 These stubborn fingers to the lute!  
 To-day I venture all I know.  
 She will not hear my music? So!  
 Break the string; fold music's wing:  
 Suppose Pauline had bade me sing!

III

My whole life long I learned to love.  
 This hour my utmost art I prove  
 And speak my passion—heaven or hell?  
 She will not give me heaven? 'Tis well!  
 Lose who may—I still can say,  
 Those who win heaven, blest are they!

I

JUNE was not over  
 Though past the full,  
 And the best of her roses  
 Had yet to blow,  
 When a man I know  
 (But shall not discover,  
 Since ears are dull,  
 And time discloses)  
 Turned him and said with a man's true  
 air,  
 Half sighing a smile in a yawn, as 'twere,—  
 'If I tire of your June, will she greatly  
 care?'

II

Well, dear, in-doors with you!  
 True! serene deadness  
 Tries a man's temper.  
 What's in the blossom  
 June wears on her bosom?  
 Can it clear scores with you?  
 Sweetness and redness.  
*Eadem semper!*  
 Go, let me care for it greatly or slightly!  
 If June mend her bower now, your hand  
 left unsightly  
 By plucking the roses,—my June will do  
 rightly.

III

And after, for pastime,  
 If June be refulgent  
 With flowers in completeness,  
 All petals, no prickles,  
 Delicious as trickles  
 Of wine poured at mass-time,—  
 And choose One indulgent  
 To redness and sweetness:  
 Or if, with experience of man and of  
 spider,  
 June use my June-lightning, the strong  
 insect-ridder,  
 And stop the fresh film-work,—why, June  
 will consider.

### A PRETTY WOMAN

I

THAT fawn-skin-dappled hair of hers,  
 And the blue eye  
 Dear and dewy,  
 And that infantine fresh air of hers!

II

To think men cannot take you, Sweet,  
 And enfold you,  
 Ay, and hold you,  
 And so keep you what they make you,  
 Sweet!

## A PRETTY WOMAN

III

You like us for a glance, you know—  
For a word's sake  
Or a sword's sake,  
All's the same, whate'er the chance, you  
know.

IV

And in turn we make you ours, we say—  
You and youth too,  
Eyes and mouth too,  
All the face composed of flowers, we say.

V

All's our own, to make the most of,  
Sweet—  
Sing and say for,  
Watch and pray for,  
Keep a secret or go boast of, Sweet!

VI

But for loving, why, you would not, Sweet,  
Though we prayed you,  
Paid you, brayed you  
In a mortar—for you could not, Sweet!

VII

So, we leave the sweet face fondly there:  
Be its beauty  
Its sole duty!  
Let all hope of grace beyond, lie there!

VIII

And while the face lies quiet there,  
Who shall wonder  
That I ponder  
A conclusion? I will try it there.

IX

As,—why must one, for the love foregone,  
Scout mere liking?  
Thunder-striking  
Earth,—the heaven, we looked above for,  
gone!

X

Why, with beauty, needs there money be,  
Love with liking?  
Crush the fly-king  
In his gauze, because no honey-bee?

XI

May not liking be so simple-sweet,  
If love grew there  
'Twould undo there  
All that breaks the cheek to dimples  
sweet?

XII

Is the creature too imperfect, say?  
Would you mend it  
And so end it?  
Since not all addition perfects aye!

XIII

Or is it of its kind, perhaps,  
Just perfection—  
Whence, rejection  
Of a grace not to its mind, perhaps?

XIV

Shall we burn up, tread that face at once  
Into tinder,  
And so hinder  
Sparks from kindling all the place at once?

XV

Or else kiss away one's soul on her?  
Your love-fancies!  
—A sick man sees  
Truer, when his hot eyes roll on her!

XVI

Thus the craftsman thinks to grace the  
rose,—  
Plucks a mould-flower  
For his gold flower,  
Uses fine things that efface the rose:

XVII

Rosy rubies make its cup more rose,  
Precious metals  
Ape the petals,—  
Last, some old king locks it up, morose!

XVIII

Then how grace a rose? I know a way!  
• Leave it, rather.  
Must you gather?  
Smell, kiss, wear it—at last, throw away!

## RESPECTABILITY

I

DEAR, had the world in its caprice  
Deigned to proclaim 'I know you both,  
'Have recognized your plighted troth,  
'Am sponsor for you: live in peace!'  
How many precious months and years  
Of youth had passed, that speed so fast,  
Before we found it out at last,  
The world, and what it fears?

II

How much of priceless life were spent  
With men that every virtue decks,  
And women models of their sex,  
Society's true ornament,—  
'Ere we dared wander, nights like this,  
Thro' wind and rain, and watch the  
Seine,  
And feel the Boulevart break again  
To warmth and light and bliss?

## RESPECTABILITY

I know! the world proscribes not love;  
 Allows my finger to caress  
 Your lips' contour and downiness,  
 Provided it supply a glove.  
 The world's good word!—the Institute!  
 Guizot receives Montalembert!  
 Eh? Down the court three lampions  
 flare:  
 Put forward your best foot!

While, look but once from your farthest  
 bound  
 At me so deep in the dust and dark,  
 No sooner the old hope goes to ground  
 Than a new one, straight to the self-  
 same mark,  
 I shape me—  
 Ever  
 Removed!

## LOVE IN A LIFE

ROOM after room,  
 I hunt the house through  
 We inhabit together.  
 Heart, fear nothing, for, heart, thou shalt  
 find her—  
 Next time, herself!—not the trouble be-  
 hind her  
 Left in the curtain, the couch's perfume!  
 As she brushed it, the cornice-wreath  
 blossomed anew:  
 Yon looking-glass gleamed at the wave  
 of her feather.

Yet the day wears,  
 And door succeeds door;  
 I try the fresh fortune—  
 Range the wide house from the wing to  
 the centre.  
 Still the same chance! she goes out as I  
 enter.  
 Spend my whole day in the quest,—who  
 cares?  
 But 'tis twilight, you see,—with such suites  
 to explore,  
 Such closets to search, such alcoves to im-  
 portune!

## LIFE IN A LOVE

ESCAPE me?  
 Never—  
 Beloved!  
 While I am I, and you are you,  
 So long as the world contains us both,  
 Me the loving and you the loth,  
 While the one eludes, must the other pur-  
 sue.  
 My life is a fault at last, I fear:  
 It seems too much like a fate, indeed!  
 Though I do my best I shall scarce suc-  
 ceed.  
 But what if I fail of my purpose here?  
 It is but to keep the nerves at strain,  
 To dry one's eyes and laugh at a fall,  
 And, baffled, get up and begin again,—  
 So the chace takes up one's life, that's  
 all.

## IN THREE DAYS

So, I shall see her in three days  
 And just one night, but nights are short,  
 Then two long hours, and that is morn.  
 See how I come, unchanged, unworn!  
 Feel, where my life broke off from thine,  
 How fresh the splinters keep and fine,—  
 Only a touch and we combine!

Too long, this time of year, the days!  
 But nights, at least the nights are short.  
 As night shows where her one moon is,  
 A hand's-breadth of pure light and bliss,  
 So life's night gives my lady birth  
 And my eyes hold her! What is worth  
 The rest of heaven, the rest of earth?

O loaded curls, release your store  
 Of warmth and scent, as once before  
 The tingling hair did, lights and darks  
 Outbreaking into fairy sparks,  
 When under curl and curl I pried  
 After the warmth and scent inside,  
 Thro' lights and darks how manifold—  
 The dark inspire, the light controlled!  
 As early Art embrowns the gold.

What great fear, should one say, 'Three  
 days  
 'That change the world might change as  
 well  
 'Your fortune; and if joy delays,  
 'Be happy that no worse befell!  
 'What small fear, if another says,  
 'Three days and one short night beside  
 'May throw no shadow on your ways:  
 'But years must teem with change un-  
 tried,  
 'With chance not easily defied,  
 'With an end somewhere undescried.'  
 No fear!—or if a fear be born  
 This minute, it dies out in scorn.  
 Fear? I shall see her in three days  
 And one night, now the nights are short,  
 Then just two hours, and that is morn.



## IN A YEAR

### IN A YEAR

#### I

NEVER any more,  
While I live,  
Need I hope to see his face  
As before.  
Once his love grown chill,  
Mine may strive:  
Bitterly we re-embrace,  
Single still.

#### II

Was it something said,  
Something done,  
Vexed him? was it touch of hand,  
Turn of head?  
Strange! that very way  
Love begun:  
I as little understand  
Love's decay.

#### III

When I sewed or drew,  
I recall  
How he looked as if I sung,  
—Sweetly too.  
If I spoke a word,  
First of all  
Up his cheek the colour sprung,  
Then he heard.

#### IV

Sitting by my side,  
At my feet,  
So he breathed but air I breathed,  
Satisfied!  
I, too, at love's brim  
Touched the sweet:  
I would die if death bequeathed  
Sweet to him.

#### V

'Speak, I love thee best!'  
He exclaimed:  
'Let thy love my own foretell!'  
I confessed:  
'Clasp my heart on thine  
'Now unblamed,  
'Since upon thy soul as well  
'Hangeth mine!'

#### VI

Was it wrong to own,  
Being truth?  
Why should all the giving prove  
His alone?  
I had wealth and ease,  
Beauty, youth:  
Since my lover gave me love,  
I gave these.

#### VII

That was all I meant,  
—To be just,  
And the passion I had raised,  
To content.  
Since he chose to change  
Gold for dust,  
If I gave him what he praised  
Was it strange?

#### VIII

Would he loved me yet,  
On and on,  
While I found some way undreamed  
—Paid my debt!  
Gave more life and more,  
Till, all gone,  
He should smile 'She never seemed  
'Mine before.

#### IX

'What, she felt the while,  
'Must I think?  
'Love's so different with us men!'  
He should smile:  
'Dying for my sake—  
'White and pink!  
'Can't we touch these bubbles then  
'But they break?'

#### X

Dear, the pang is brief,  
Do thy part,  
Have thy pleasure! How perplexed  
Grows belief!  
Well, this cold clay clod  
Was man's heart:  
Crumble it, and what comes next?  
Is it God?

## WOMEN AND ROSES

#### I

I DREAM of a red-rose tree.  
And which of its roses three  
Is the dearest rose to me?

#### II

Round and round, like a dance of snow  
In a dazzling drift, as its guardians, go  
Floating the women faded for ages,  
Sculptured in stone, on the poet's pages.  
Then follow women fresh and gay,  
Living and loving and loved to-day.  
Last, in the rear, flee the multitude of  
'maidens,  
Beauties yet unborn. And all, to one  
cadence,  
They circle their rose on my rose tree.

#### III

Dear rose, thy term is reached,  
Thy leaf hangs loose and bleached:  
Bees pass it unimpeached.

## WOMEN AND ROSES

### IV

Stay then, stoop, since I cannot climb,  
 You, great shapes of the antique time!  
 How shall I fix you, fire you, freeze you,  
 Break my heart at your feet to please you?  
 Oh, to possess and be possessed!  
 Hearts that beat 'neath each pallid breast!  
 Once but of love, the poesy, the passion,  
 Drink but once and die!—In vain, the  
 same fashion,  
 They circle their rose on my rose tree.

### V

Dear rose, thy joy's undimmed,  
 Thy cup is ruby-rimmed,  
 Thy cup's heart nectar-brimmed.

### VI

Deep, as drops from a statue's plinth  
 The bee sucked in by the hyacinth,  
 So will I bury me while burning,  
 Quench like him at a plunge my yearning,  
 Eyes in your eyes, lips on your lips!  
 Fold me fast where the cincture slips,  
 Prison all my soul in eternities of pleasure,  
 Girdle me for once! But no—the old  
 measure,  
 They circle their rose on my rose tree.

### VII

Dear rose without a thorn,  
 Thy bud's the babe unborn:  
 First streak of a new morn.

### VIII

Wings, lend wings for the cold, the clear!  
 What is far conquers what is near.  
 Roses will bloom nor want beholders,  
 Sprung from the dust where our flesh  
 moulders.  
 What shall arrive with the cycle's change?  
 A novel grace and a beauty strange.  
 I will make an Eve, be the artist that be-  
 gan her,  
 Shaped her to his mind!—Alas! in like  
 manner  
 They circle their rose on my rose tree.

## BEFORE

### I

LET them fight it out, friend! things have  
 gone too far.  
 God must judge the couple: leave them as  
 they are  
 —Whichever one's the guiltless, to his  
 glory,  
 \*And whichever one the guilt's with, to my  
 story!

### II

Why, you would not bid men, sunk in  
 such a slough,  
 Strike no arm out further, stick and stink  
 as now,  
 Leaving right and wrong to settle the em-  
 broilment,  
 Heaven with snaky hell, in torture and  
 entoilment?

### III

Who's the culprit of them? How must he  
 conceive  
 God—the queen he caps to, laughing in  
 his sleeve,  
 \*Tis but decent to profess oneself beneath  
 her:  
 \*Still, one must not be too much in earnest,  
 either!

### IV

Better sin the whole sin, sure that God  
 observes;  
 Then go live his life out! Life will try his  
 nerves,  
 When the sky, which noticed all, makes  
 no disclosure,  
 And the earth keeps up her terrible com-  
 posure.

### V

Let him pace at pleasure, past the walls  
 of rose,  
 Pluck their fruits when grape-trees graze  
 him as he goes!  
 For he 'gins to guess the purpose of the  
 garden,  
 With the sly mute thing, beside there, for  
 a warden.

### VI

What's the leopard-dog-thing, constant  
 at his side,  
 A leer and lie in every eye of its obsequious  
 hide?  
 When will come an end to all the mock  
 obeisance,  
 And the price appear that pays for the  
 misfeasance?

### VII

So much for the culprit. Who's the mar-  
 tyred man?  
 Let him bear one stroke more, for be sure  
 he can!  
 He that strove thus evil's lump with good  
 to leaven,  
 Let him give his blood at last and get his  
 heaven!

### VIII

All or nothing, stake it! Trusts he God  
 or no?  
 Thus far and no farther? farther? be it so!

## BEFORE

Now, enough of your chicanes of prudent  
pauses,  
Sage provisos, sub-intents and saving-  
clauses!

### IX

Ah, 'forgive' you bid him? While God's  
champion lives,  
Wrong shall be resisted: dead, why, he  
forgives.  
But you must not end my friend ere you  
begin him;  
Evil stands not crowned on earth, while  
breath is in him.

### X

Once more—Will the wronger, at this last  
of all,  
Dare to say, 'I did wrong,' rising in his  
fall?  
No?—Let go, then! Both the fighters to  
their places!  
While I count three, step you back as many  
paces!

## AFTER

TAKE the cloak from his face, and at first  
Let the corpse do its worst!

How he lies in his rights of a man!  
Death has done all death can.  
And, absorbed in the new life he leads,  
He recks not, he heeds  
Nor his wrong nor my vengeance; both  
strike  
On his senses alike,  
And are lost in the solemn and strange  
Surprise of the change.  
Ha, what avails death to erase  
His offence, my disgrace?  
I would we were boys as of old  
In the field, by the fold:  
His outrage, God's patience, man's scorn  
Were so easily borne!

I stand here now, he lies in his place:  
Cover the face!

## THE GUARDIAN-ANGEL

### A PICTURE AT FANO

#### I

DEAR and great Angel, wouldst thou only  
leave  
That child, when thou hast done with  
him, for me!  
Let me sit all the day here, that when eve  
Shall find performed thy special  
ministry,  
And time come for departure, thou, sus-  
pending  
Thy flight, mayst see another child for  
tending,  
Another still, to quiet and retrieve.

#### II

Then I shall feel thee step one step, no  
more,  
From where thou standest now, to where  
I gaze,  
—And suddenly my head is covered o'er  
With those wings, white above the child  
who prays  
Now on that tomb—and I shall feel thee  
guarding  
Me, out of all the world; for me, dis-  
carding  
Yon heaven thy home, that waits and  
opes its door.

#### III

I would not look up thither past thy head  
Because the door opes, like that child,  
I know,  
For I should have thy gracious face in-  
stead,  
Thou bird of God! And wilt thou bend  
me low  
Like him, and lay, like his, my hands to-  
gether,  
And lift them up to pray, and gently tether  
Me, as thy lamb there, with thy gar-  
ment's spread?

#### IV

If this was ever granted, I would rest  
My head beneath thine, while thy heal-  
ing hands  
Close-covered both my eyes beside thy  
breast,  
Pressing the brain, which too much  
thought expands,  
Back to its proper size again, and smooth-  
ing  
Distortion down till every nerve had  
soothing,  
And all lay quiet, happy and suppressed.

#### V

How soon all worldly wrong would be  
repaired!  
I think how I should view the earth and  
skies  
And sea, when once again my brow was  
bared  
After thy healing, with such different  
eyes.  
O world, as God has made it! All is  
beauty:  
And knowing this, is love, and love is duty.  
What further may be sought for or de-  
clared?

#### VI

Guercino drew this angel I saw teach  
(Alfred, dear friend!)—that little child  
to pray,  
Holding the little hands up, each to each,  
Pressed gently,—with his own head  
turned away

## THE GUARDIAN ANGEL

Over the earth there so much lay before  
him  
Of work to do, though heaven was open-  
ing o'er him,  
And he was left at Fano by the beach.

### VII

We were at Fano, and three times we went  
To sit and see him in his chapel there,  
And drink his beauty to our soul's con-  
tent  
—My angel with me too: and since I  
care

For dear Guercino's fame (to which in  
power  
And glory comes this picture for a dower,  
Fraught with a pathos so magnifi-  
cent)—

### VIII

And since he did not work thus earnestly  
At all times, and has else endured some  
wrong—

I took one thought his picture struck from  
me,

And spread it out, translating it to song.  
My love is here. Where are you, dear old  
friend?

How rolls the Wairoa at your world's far  
end?

This is Ancona, yonder is the sea.

## MEMORABILIA

### I

Ah, did you once see Shelley plain,  
And did he stop and speak to you,  
And did you speak to him again?  
How strange it seems and new!

### II

But you were living before that,  
And also you are living after;  
And the memory I started at—  
My starting moves your laughter.

### III

I crossed a moor, with a name of its own  
And a certain use in the world no doubt,  
Yet a hand's-breadth of it shines alone  
'Mid the blank miles round about:

### IV

For there I picked up on the heather  
And there I put inside my breast  
A moulted feather, an eagle-feather!  
Well, I forget the rest.

## POPULARITY

### I

STAND still, true poet that you are!  
I know you; let me try and draw you.  
Some night you'll fail us: when afar  
You rise, remember one man saw you,  
Knew you, and named a star!

### II

My star, God's glow-worm! Why extend  
That loving hand of his which leads you  
Yet locks you safe from end to end  
Of this dark world, unless he needs you,  
Just saves your light to spend?

### III

His clenched hand shall uncloze at last,  
I know, and let out all the beauty:  
My poet holds the future fast,  
Accepts the coming ages' duty,  
Their present for this past.

### IV

That day, the earth's feast-master's brow  
Shall clear, to God the chalice raising;  
'Others give best at first, but thou  
'Forever set'st our table praising,  
'Keep'st the good wine till now!'

### V

Meantime, I'll draw you as you stand,  
With few or none to watch and wonder:  
I'll say—a fisher, on the sand  
By Tyre the old, with ocean-plunder,  
A netful, brought to land.

### VI

Who has not heard how Tyrian shells  
Enclosed the blue, that dye of dyes  
Whereof one drop worked miracles,  
And coloured like Astarte's eyes  
Raw silk the merchant sells?

### VII

And each bystander of them all  
Could criticize, and quote tradition  
How depths of blue sublimed some pall  
—To get which, pricked a king's ambi-  
tion;  
Worth sceptre, crown and ball.

### VIII

Yet there's the dye, in that rough mesh,  
The sea has only just o'erwhispered!  
Live whelks, each lip's beard dripping  
fresh,  
As if they still the water's lisp heard  
Through foam the rock-weeds thresh.

### IX

Enough to furnish Solomon  
Such hangings for his cedar-house,  
That, when gold-robed he took the throne  
In that abyss of blue, the Spouse  
Might swear his presence shone

### X

Most like the centre-spike of gold  
Which burns deep in the blue-bell's  
womb,  
What time, with ardours manifold,  
The bee goes singing to her groom,  
Drunken and overbold.

## POPULARITY

### XI

Mere conchs! not fit for warp or woof!  
Till cunning come to pound and squeeze  
And clarify,—refine to proof  
The liquor filtered by degrees,  
While the world stands aloof.

### XII

And there's the extract, flasked and fine,  
And priced and saleable at last!  
And Hobbs, Nobbs, Stokes and Nokes  
combine  
To paint the future from the past,  
Put blue into their line.

### XIII

Hobbs hints blue,—straight he turtle eats:  
Nobbs prints blue,—claret crowns his  
cup:  
Nokes outdares Stokes in azure feats,—  
Both gorge. Who fished the murex up?  
What porridge had John Keats?

## MASTER HUGUES OF SAXE- GOTHA

### I

Hist, but a word, fair and soft!  
Forth and be judged, Master Hugues!  
Answer the question I've put you so oft:  
What do you mean by your moun-  
tainous fugues?  
See, we're alone in the loft,—

### II

I, the poor organist here,  
Hugues, the composer of note,  
Dead though, and done with, this many  
a year:  
Let's have a colloquy, something to  
quote,  
Make the world prick up its ear!

### III

See, the church empties apace:  
Fast they extinguish the lights.  
Hallo there, sacristan! Five minutes'  
grace!  
Here's a crank pedal wants setting to  
rights,  
Baulks one of holding the base.

### IV

See, our huge house of the sounds,  
Hushing its hundreds at once,  
Bids the last loiterer back to his bounds!  
—O you may challenge them, not a  
response  
Get the church-saints on their rounds!

(Saints go their rounds, who shall doubt?  
—March, with the moon to admire,  
Up nave, down chancel, turn transept  
about,  
Supervise all betwixt pavement and  
spire,  
Put rats and mice to the rout—

### VI

Aloys and Jurien and Just—  
Order things back to their place,  
Have a sharp eye lest the candlesticks  
rust,  
Rub the church-plate, darn the sacra-  
ment-lace,  
Clear the desk-velvet of dust.)

### VII

Here's your book, younger folks shelve!  
Played I not off-hand and runningly,  
Just now, your masterpiece, hard number  
twelve?  
Here's what should strike, could one  
handle it cunningly:  
Help the axe, give it a helve!

### VIII

Page after page as I played,  
Every bar's rest, where one wipes  
Sweat from one's brow, I looked up and  
surveyed,  
O'er my three claviers, yon forest of  
pipes  
Whence you still peeped in the shade.

### IX

Sure you were wishful to speak?  
You, with brow ruled like a score,  
Yes, and eyes buried in pits on each cheek,  
Like two great breves, as they wrote  
them of yore,  
Each side that bar, your straight beak!

### X

Sure you said—'Good, the mere notes!  
'Still, couldst thou take my intent,  
'Know what procured me our Company's  
votes—  
'A master were lauded and sciolists  
shent,  
'Parted the sheep from the goats!'

### XI

Well then, speak up, never flinch!  
Quick, ere my candle's a snuff  
—Burnt, do you see? to its uttermost  
inch—  
I believe in you, but that's not enough:  
Give my conviction a clinch!

# MASTER HUGUES OF SAXE-GOTHA

## XII

First you deliver your phrase  
—Nothing propounded, that I see,  
Fit in itself for much blame or much  
praise—  
Answered no less, where no answer  
needs be:  
Off start the Two on their ways.

## XIII

Straight must a Third interpose,  
Volunteer needlessly help;  
In strikes a Fourth, a Fifth thrusts in his  
nose,  
So the cry's open, the kennel's a-yelp,  
Argument's hot to the close.

## XIV

One dissertates, he is candid;  
Two must discept,—has distinguished;  
Three helps the couple, if ever yet man  
did;  
Four protests; Five makes a dart at the  
thing wished:  
Back to One, goes the case bandied.

## XV

One says his say with a difference;  
More of expounding, explaining!  
All now is wrangle, abuse, and vocifer-  
ance;  
Now there's a truce, all's subdued, self-  
restraining:  
Five, though, stands out all the stiffer  
hence.

## XVI

One is incisive, corrosive;  
Two retorts, nettled, curt, crepitant;  
Three makes rejoinder, expansive, explo-  
sive;  
Four overbears them all, strident and  
strepitant:  
Five . . . O Danaides, O Sieve!

## XVII

Now, they ply axes and crowbars;  
Now, they prick pins at a tissue  
Fine as a skein of the casuist Escobar's  
Worked on the bone of a lie. To what  
issue?  
Where is our gain at the Two-bars?

## XVIII

*Est fuga, volvitur rota.*  
On we drift: where looms the dim port?  
One, Two, Three, Four, Five, contribute  
their quota;  
Something is gained, if one caught but  
the import—  
Show it us, Hugues of Saxe-Gotha!

## XIX

What with affirming, denying,  
Holding, riposting, subjoining,  
All's like . . . it's like . . . for an instance  
I'm trying . . .  
There! See our roof, its gilt moulding  
and groining  
Under those spider-webs lying!

## XX

So your fugue broadens and thickens,  
Greatens and deepens and lengthens,  
Till we exclaim—'But where's music, the  
dickens?  
'Blot ye the gold, while your spider-  
web strengthens  
'—Blacked to the stoutest of tickens?'

## XXI

I for man's effort am zealous:  
Prove me such censure unfounded!  
Seems it surprising a lover grows jealous—  
Hopes 'twas for something, his organ-  
pipes sounded,  
Tiring three boys at the bellows?

## XXII

Is it your moral of Life?  
Such a web, simple and subtle,  
Weave we on earth here in impotent strife,  
Backward and forward each throwing  
his shuttle,  
Death ending all with a knife?

## XXIII

Over our heads truth and nature—  
Still our life's zigzags and dodges,  
Ins and outs, weaving a new legislature—  
God's gold just shining its last where  
that lodges,  
Palled beneath man's usurpature.

## XXIV

So we o'ershroud stars and roses,  
Cherub and trophy and garland;  
Nothings grow something which quietly  
closes  
Heaven's earnest eye: not a glimpse of  
the far land  
Gets through our comments and glozes.

## XXV

Ah but traditions, inventions,  
(Say we and make up a visage)  
So many men with such various intentions,  
Down the past ages, must know more  
than this age!  
Leave we the web its dimensions!

## XXVI

Who thinks Hugues wrote for the deaf,  
Proved a mere mountain in labour?  
Better submit; try again; what's the cleft?  
'Faith, 'tis no trifle for pipe and for  
tabor—  
Four flats, the minor in F.

## MASTER HUGUES OF SAXE-GOTHA

XXVII

Friend, your fugue taxes the finger:  
Learning it once, who would lose it?  
Yet all the while a misgiving will linger,  
Truth's golden o'er us although we re-  
fuse it—  
Nature, thro' cobwebs we string her.

XXVIII

Hugues! I advise *með pænð*  
(Counterpoint glares like a Gorgon)  
Bid One, Two, Three, Four, Five, clear  
the arena!  
Say the word, straight I unstop the full-  
organ,  
Blare out the *mode Palestrina*.

XXIX

While in the roof, if I'm right there,  
... Lo you, the *pick* in the socket!  
Hallo, you sacristan, show us a light  
there!  
Down it dips, gone like a rocket.  
What, you want, do you, to come un-  
aware,  
Sweeping the church up for first morning-  
prayers,  
And find a poor devil has ended his  
cares  
At the foot of your rotten-runged rat-  
riddled stairs?  
Do I carry the moon in my pocket?

## THE RETURN OF THE DRUSES

A TRAGEDY

1843

PERSONS

*The Grand-Master's Prefect.*  
*The Patriarch's Nuncio.*  
*The Republic's Admiral.*  
LOYS DE DREUX, Knight-Novice

*Initiated Druses*—DJABAL, KHALIL, ANAEL, MAANI,  
KARSHOOK, RAGHIB, AYOUB, and others.  
*Uninitiated Druses.*  
*Prefect's Guard, Nuncio's Attendants, Admiral's*  
*Force.*

TIME, 14—

PLACE.—*An Islet of the Southern Sporades, colonized by Druses of Lebanon, and garrisoned by the Knights-Hospitalers of Rhodes.*

SCENE.—*A Hall in the Prefect's Palace.*

ACT I

*Enter stealthily KARSHOOK, RAGHIB, AYOUB and other initiated Druses, each as he enters casting off a robe that conceals his distinctive black vest and white turban; then, as giving a loose to exultation,—*

*Kar.* The moon is carried off in purple fire:

Day breaks at last! Break glory, with the day,

On Djabal's dread incarnate mystery  
Now ready to resume its pristine shape  
Of Hakeem, as the Khalif vanished erst  
In what seemed death to uninstructed

eyes,  
On red Mokattam's verge—our Founder's  
flesh,

As he resumes our Founder's function!  
*Ragh.* —Death

Sweep to the Christian Prefect that en-  
slaved

So long us sad Druse exiles o'er the sea!  
*Ay.* Most joy be thine, O Mother-  
mount! Thy brood

Returns to thee, no outcasts as we left,

But thus—but thus! Behind, our Prefect's  
corse;

Before, a presence like the morning—  
thine,

Absolute Djabal late,—God Hakeem now  
That day breaks!

*Kar.* Off then, with disguise  
at last!

As from our forms this hateful garb we  
strip,

Lose every tongue its glozing accent too,  
Discard each limb the ignoble gesture!

Cry,  
'Tis the Druse Nation, warders on our  
Mount

Of the world's secret, since the birth of  
time,

—No kindred slips, no offsets from thy  
stock,

No spawn of Christians are we, Prefect,  
we

Who rise . . .  
*Ay.* Who shout . . .

*Ragh.* Who seize, a first-fruits, ha—  
Spoil of the spoiler! Brave!

[*They begin to tear down, and to dispute for, the decorations of the hall.*]

ACT I]

Kar.

Hold!

Ay. —Mine, I say;  
And mine shall it continue!

Kar. Just this fringe!  
Take anything beside! Lo, spire on spire,  
Curl serpentwise wreathed columns to the  
top  
O' the roof, and hide themselves mysteriously  
Among the twinkling lights and darks that  
haunt  
Yon cornices! Where the huge veil, they  
suspend—

Before the Prefect's chamber of delight,  
Floats wide, then falls again as if its slave,  
The scented air, took heart now, and anon  
Lost hearts to buoy its breadths of gorge-  
ousness

Above the gloom they droop in—all the  
porch

Is jewelled o'er with frostwork character;  
And, see, yon eight-point cross of white  
flame, winking

Hoar-silvery like some fresh-broke marble  
stone:

Raze out the Rhodian cross there, so thou  
leav'st me

This single fringe!

Ay. Ha, wouldst thou, dog-  
fox? Help!

—Three hand-breadths of gold fringe, my  
son was set

To twist, the night he died!

Kar. Nay, hear the knave!  
And I could witness my one daughter

borne,  
A week since, to the Prefect's couch, yet  
fold

These arms, be mute, lest word of mine  
should mar

Our Master's work, delay the Prefect here  
A day, prevent his sailing hence for  
Rhodes—

How know I else?—Hear me denied my  
right

By such a knave!

Ragh. [interposing]. Each ravage for  
himself!

Booty enough! On, Druses! Be there  
found

Blood and a heap behind us; with us,  
Djabal

Turned Hakeem; and before us, Lebanon!  
Yields the porch? Spare not! There his

minions dragged

Thy daughter, Karshook, to the Prefect's  
couch!

Ayob! Thy son, to soothe the Prefect's  
pride,

Bent o'er that task, the death-sweat on his  
brow,

Carving the spice-tree's heart in scroll-  
work there!

Onward in Djabal's name!

THE RETURN OF THE DRUSES

As the tumult is at height, enter KHALIL.  
A pause and silence.

Kha. Was it for this,  
Djabal hath summoned you? Deserve  
you thus

A portion in to-day's event? What, here—  
When most behoves your feet fall soft,  
your eyes

Sink low, your tongues lie still,—at Dja-  
bal's side,

Close in his very hearing, who, perchance,  
Assumes e'en now God Hakeem's dreaded  
shape,—

Dispute you for these gauds?

Ay. How say'st thou, Khalil?  
Doubtless our Master prompts thee! Take

the fringe,  
Old Karshook! I supposed it was a day...

Kha. For pillage?

Kar. Hearken, Khalil!

Never spoke  
A boy so like a song-bird; we avouch thee

Prettiest of all our Master's instruments  
Except thy bright twin-sister; thou and

Anael  
Challenge his prime regard: but we may  
crave

(Such nothings as we be) a portion too  
Of Djabal's favour; in him we believed,

His bound ourselves, him moon by moon  
obeyed,

Kept silence till this daybreak—so, may  
claim

Reward: who grudges me my claim?

Ay. To-day  
Is not as yesterday!

Ragh. Stand off!

Kha. Rebel you?  
Must I, the delegate of Djabal, draw

His wrath on you, the day of our Return?  
Other Druses. Wrench from their grasp

the fringe! Hounds! must the earth  
Vomit her plagues on us thro' thee?—and

thee?

Plague me not, Khalil, for their fault!

Kha. Oh, shame!  
Thus breaks to-day on you, the mystic tribe

Who, flying the approach of Osman, bore  
Our faith, a merest spark, from Syria's

ridge

Its birthplace, hither! 'Let the sea divide  
'These hunters from their prey,' you said;

'and safe

'In this dim islet's virgin solitude

'Tend we our faith, the spark, till happier  
time

'Fan it to fire; till Hakeem rise again,  
'According to his word that, in the flesh

'Which faded on Mokattam ages since,  
'He, at our extreme need, would inter-  
pose,

'And, reinstating all in power and bliss,  
'Lead us himself to Lebanon once more,'

Was't not thus you departed years ago,



## THE RETURN OF THE DRUSES

[ACT I

Ere I was born?

*Druses.* 'Twas even thus, years ago.

*Kha.* And did you call—(according to old laws

Which bid us, lest the sacred grow profane,

Assimilate ourselves in outward rites

With strangers fortune makes our lords, and live

As Christian with the Christian, Jew with Jew,

Druse only with the Druses)—did you call

Or no, to stand 'twixt you and Osman's rage

(Mad to pursue e'en hither thro' the sea

The remnant of our tribe), a race self-vowed

To endless warfare with his hordes and him,

The White-cross Knights of the adjacent Isle?

*Kar.* And why else rend we down, wrench up, raise out?

These Knights of Rhodes we thus solicited

For help, bestowed on us a fiercer pest

Than aught we fled—their Prefect; who began

His promised mere paternal governance

By a prompt massacre of all our Sheikhs

Able to thwart the Order in its scheme

Of crushing, with our nation's memory,

Each chance of our return, and taming us

Bondslaves to Rhodes for ever—all, he thinks

To end by this day's treason.

*Kha.* Say I not?

You, fitted to the Order's purposes,

Your Sheikhs cut off, your rites, your garb

proscribed,

Must yet receive one degradation more;

The Knights at last throw off the mask—

transfer,

As tributary now and appanage,

This islet they are but protectors of,

To their own ever-craving liege, the Church,

Who licenses all crimes that pay her thus.

You, from their Prefect, were to be con-

signed

(Pursuant of I know not what vile pact)

To the Knights' Patriarch, ardent to out-

vie

His predecessor in all wickedness.

When suddenly rose Djabal in the midst,

Djabal, the man in semblance, but our

God

Confessed by signs and portents. Ye saw

fire

Bicker round Djabal, heard strange music

flit

Bird-like about his brow?

*Druses.* We saw—we heard!

Djabal is Hakeem, the incarnate Dread,

The phantasm Khalif, King of Prodigies!

*Kha.* And as he said, 'as not our Khalif done,

And so disposed events from land to land

Passing invisibly) that when, this morn,

The pact of villany complete, there comes

This Patriarch's Nuncio with this Master's

Prefect

Their treason to consummate,—each will

face

For a crouching handful, an uplifted

nation:

For simulated Christians, confessed

Druses:

And, for slaves past hope of the Mother-

mount,

Freedmen returning there 'neath Venice'

flag;

That Venice which, the Hospitallers' foe,

Grants us from Candia escort home at

price

Of our relinquished isle, Rhodes counts

her own—

Venice, whose promised argosies should

stand

Toward harbour: is it now that you, and

you,

And you, selected from the rest to bear

The burthen of the Khalif's secret, further

To-day's event, entitled by your wrongs,

And witness in the Prefect's hall his fate—

That you dare clutch these gauds? Ay,

drop them!

*Kar.* True,

Most true, all this; and yet, may one dare

hint,

Thou art the youngest of us?—though

employed

Abundantly as Djabal's confidant,

Transmitter of his mandates, even now.

Much less, whene'er beside him Anael

graces

The cedar throne, his queen-bride, art

thou like

To occupy its lowest step that day!

Now, Khalil, wert thou checked as thou

aspirest,

Forbidden such or such an honour,—say,

Would silence serve so amply?

*Kha.* Karshook thinks

I covet honours? Well, nor idly thinks.

Honours? I have demanded of them all

The greatest.

*Kar.* I supposed so.

*Kha.* Judge, yourselves!

Turn, thus: 'tis in the alcove at the back

Of yonder columned porch, whose en-

trance now

The veil hides, that our Prefect holds his

state,

'Receives the Nuncio, when the one, from

Rhodes,

The other lands from Syria; there they

meet.

Now. I have sued with earnest prayers . . .

*Kar.* For what  
Shall the Bride's brother vainly sue?

*Kha.* That mine—  
Avenging in one blow a myriad wrongs  
—Might be the hand to slay the Prefect  
there!

Djabal reserves that office for himself.

[*A silence.*  
Thus far, as youngest of you all, I speak  
—Scarce more enlightened than your-  
selves; since, near

As I approach him, nearer as I trust  
Soon to approach our Master, he reveals  
Only the God's power, not the glory yet.  
Therefore I reasoned with you: now, as  
servant

To Djabal, bearing his authority,  
Hear me appoint your several posts! Till  
noon

None see him save myself and Anael: once  
The deed achieved, our Khalif, casting off  
The embodied Awe's tremendous mys-  
tery,

The weakness of the flesh disguise, re-  
sumes

His proper glory, ne'er to fade again.

*Enter a Druse.*

*The Druse.* Our Prefect lands from  
Rhodes!—without a sign  
That he suspects aught since he left our  
Isle;

Nor in his train a single guard beyond  
The few he sailed with hence: so have we  
learned

From Loys.

*Kar.* Loys? Is not Loys gone  
For ever?

*Ay.* Loys, the Frank Knight, returned?

*The Druse.* Loys, the boy, stood on the  
leading prow  
Conspicuous in his gay attire, and leapt  
Into the surf the foremost. Since day-  
dawn

I kept watch to the Northward; take but  
note

Of my poor vigilance to Djabal!

*Kha.* Peace!  
Thou, Karshook, with thy company, re-  
ceive

The Prefect as appointed: see, all keep  
The wonted show of servitude: announce  
His entry here by the accustomed peal  
Of trumpets, then await the further plea-  
sure

Of Djabal! (Loys back, whom Djabal sent  
To Rhodes that we might spare the single  
Knight

Worth sparing!)

*Enter a second Druse.*

*The Druse.* I espied it first! Say, I  
First spied the Nuncio's galley from the  
South!

Said'st thou a Crossed-keys' flag would  
flap the mast?

It nears apace! One galley and no more.  
If Djabal chance to ask who spied the flag,  
Forget not, I it was!

*Kha.* Thou, Ayoob, bring  
The Nuncio and his followers hither!

Break  
One rule prescribed, ye wither in your  
blood,

Die at your fault!

*Enter a third Druse.*

*The Druse.* I shall see home, see  
home!

—Shall banquet in the sombre groves  
again!

Hail to thee, Khalil! Venice looms afar;  
The argosies of Venice, like a cloud,  
Bear up from Candia in the distance!

*Kha.* Joy!  
Summon our people, Raghib! Bid all  
forth!

Tell them the long-kept secret, old and  
young!

Set free the captive, let the trampled raise  
Their faces from the dust, because at  
length

The cycle is complete, God Hakeem's  
reign

Begins anew! Say, Venice for our guard,  
Ere night we steer for Syria! Hear you,  
Druses?

Hear you this crowning witness to the  
claims

Of Djabal? Oh, I spoke of hope and fear,  
Reward and punishment, because he bade  
Who has the right; for me, what should I  
say

But, mar not those imperial lineaments,  
No majesty of all that rapt regard  
Vex by the least omission! Let him rise  
Without a check from you!

*Druses.* Let Djabal rise!

*Enter LOYS.—The Druses are silent.*

*Loys.* Who speaks of Djabal?—for I  
seek him, friends!

[*Aside.*] *Tu Dieu!* 'Tis as our Isle broke  
out in song

For joy, its Prefect-incubus drops off  
To-day, and I succeed him in his rule!  
But no—they cannot dream of their good  
fortune!

[*Aloud.*] Peace to you, Druses! I have  
tidings for you,

But first for Djabal: where's your tall be-  
witcher,

With that small Arab thin-lipped silver-  
mouth?

*Kha.* [*aside to KARSHOOK.*] Loys, in  
truth! Yet Djabal cannot err!

*Kar.* [*to KHALIL.*] And who takes  
charge of Loys? That's forgotten,  
Despite thy wariness! Will Loys stand

# THE RETURN OF THE DRUSES

[ACT I

And see his comrades slaughtered?

*Loys [aside].* How they shrink  
And whisper, with those rapid faces!  
What?

The sight of me in their oppressors' garb  
Strikes terror to the simple tribe? God's  
shame

On those that bring our Order ill re-  
pute!

But all's at end now; better days begin  
For these mild mountaineers from over-  
sea:

The timidest shall have in me no Prefect  
To cower at thus! [*Aloud.*] I asked for  
Djabal—

*Kar. [aside].* Better  
One lured him, ere he can suspect, inside  
The corridor; 'twere easy to despatch  
A youngster. [*To Loys.*] Djabal passed  
some minutes since

Thro' yonder porch, and . . .  
*Kha. [aside].* Hold! What,  
him despatch?

The only Christian of them all we charge  
No tyranny upon? Who,—noblest Knight  
Of all that learned from time to time their  
trade

Of lust and cruelty among us,—heir  
To Europe's pomp, a truest child of  
pride,—

Yet stood between the Prefect and our-  
selves

From the beginning? Loys, Djabal makes  
Account of, and precisely sent to Rhodes  
For safety? I take charge of him!

[*To Loys.*] Sir Loys,—  
*Loys.* There, cousins! Does Sir Loys  
strike you dead?

*Kha. [advancing].* Djabal has inter-  
course with few or none

Till noontide: but, your pleasure?  
*Loys.* 'Intercourse

'With few or none?'—(Ah, Khalil, when  
you spoke

I saw not your smooth face! All health!—  
and health

To Anael! How fares Anael?)—'Inter-  
course

'With few or none?' Forget you, I've been  
friendly

With Djabal long ere you or any Druse?  
—Enough of him at Rennes, I think, be-  
neath

The Duke my father's roof! He'd tell by  
the hour,

With fixed white eyes beneath his swarthy  
brow,

Plausiblest stories . . .  
*Kha.* Stories, say you?—Ah,

The quaint attire!  
*Loys.* My dress for the last time!

How sad I cannot make you understand,  
This ermine, o'er a shield, betokens me  
Of Bretagne, ancientest of provinces

And noblest; and, what's best and oldest  
there,

See, Dreux', our House's blazon, which  
the Nuncio

Tacks to an Hospitaller's vest to-day!

*Kha.* The Nuncio we await? What  
brings you back

From Rhodes, Sir Loys?  
*Loys.* How you island-tribe

Forget the world's awake while here you  
drowse!

What brings me back? What should not  
bring me, rather!

Our Patriarch's Nuncio visits you to-  
day—

Is not my year's probation out? I come  
To take the knightly vows.

*Kha.* What's that you wear?

*Loys.* This Rhodian cross? The cross  
your Prefect wore.

You should have seen, as I saw, the full  
Chapter

Rise, to a man, while they transferred this  
cross

From that unworthy Prefect's neck to . . .  
(fool—

My secret will escape me!) In a word,  
My year's probation passed, a Knight ere

Am I; bound like the rest, to yield my  
wealth

To the common stock, to live in chastity,  
(We Knights espouse alone our Order's

fame)  
—Change this gay weed for the black

white-crossed gown,  
And fight to death against the Infidel

—Not, therefore, against you, you Chris-  
tians with

Such partial difference only as befits  
The peace fullest of tribes. But Khalil,

prithee,

Is not the Isle brighter than wont to-day?

*Kha.* Ah, the new sword!

*Loys.* See now! You handle sword  
As 'twere a camel-staff. Pull! That's my

motto,  
Annealed '*Pro fide*,' on the blade in blue.

*Kha.* No curve in it? Surely a blade  
should curve.

*Loys.* Straight from the wrist! Loose—  
it should poise itself!

*Kha. [waving with irrepressible exulta-  
tion the sword].* We are a nation,

Loys, of old fame  
Among the mountains! Rights have we

to keep  
With the sword too!

[*Remembering himself.*] But I forget—you  
bid me

Seek Djabal?  
*Loys.* What! A sword's sight scares—  
you not?

(The People I will make of him and them!

ACT I]

Oh let my Prefect's way begin at once!  
Bring Djabal—say, indeed, that come he  
must!

*Kha.* At noon seek Djabal in the Prefect's Chamber,  
And find . . . [*Aside.*] Nay, 'tis thy cursed  
race's token,  
Frank pride, no special insolence of wine!  
[*Aloud.*] Tarry, and I will do your bidding,  
Loys!

[*To the rest aside.*] Now, forth you! I proceed to Djabal straight.

Leave this poor boy, who knows not what he says!

Oh will it not add joy to even thy joy, Djabal, that I report all friends were true?

[*KHALIL goes, followed by the Druses.*

*Loys.* Tu Dieu! How happy I shall make these Druses!

Was't not surpassingly contrived of me  
To get the long list of their wrongs by heart,

Then take the first pretence for stealing off

From these poor islanders, present myself  
Sudden at Rhodes before the noble Chapter,

And (as best proof of ardour in its cause  
Which ere to-night will have become, too,  
mine)

Acquaint it with this plague-sore in its body,

This Prefect and his villanous career?  
The princely Synod! All I dared request  
Was his dismissal; and they graciously  
Consigned his very office to myself—  
Myself may cure the Isle diseased!

And well  
For them, they did so! Since I never felt  
How lone a lot, tho' brilliant, I embrace,  
Till now that, past retrieval, it is mine.  
To live thus, and thus die! Yet, as I leapt  
On shore, so home a feeling greeted me  
That I could half believe in Djabal's story,  
He used to tempt my father with, at  
Rennes—

And me, too, since the story brought me  
here—

Of some Count Dreux and ancestor of  
ours

Who, sick of wandering from Bouillon's  
war,

Left his old name in Lebanon.

Long days  
At least to spend in the Isle! and, my new  
known

An hour hence, what if Anael turn on me  
The great black eyes I must forget?

Why, fool,  
Recall them, then? My business is, with  
Djabal,

Not Anael! Djabal tarries: if I seek  
him?—

The Isle is brighter than its wont to-day.

THE RETURN OF THE DRUSES

ACT II

*Enter DJABAL.*

*Dja.* That a strong man should think  
himself a God!

I—Hakeem? To have wandered through  
the world,

Sown falsehood, and thence reaped now  
scorn, now faith,

For my one chapt with many a change,  
my tale

Of outrage, and my prayer for vengeance  
—this

Required, forsooth, no mere man's  
faculty,

Nought less than Hakeem's? The per-  
suading Loys

To pass probation here; the getting access  
By Loys to the Prefect; worst of all,

The gaining my tribe's confidence by fraud  
That would disgrace the very Frank,—a  
few

Of Europe's secrets which subdue the  
flame,

The wave,—to ply a simple tribe with  
these,

Took Hakeem?  
And I feel this first to-day!

Does the day break, is the hour imminent  
When one deed, when my whole life's  
deed, my deed

Must be accomplished? Hakeem? Why  
the God?

Shout, rather, 'Djabal, Youssof's child,  
thought slain

'With his whole race, the Druses' Sheikhs,  
this Prefect

'Endeavoured to extirpate—saved, a  
child,

'Returns from traversing the world, a  
man,

'Able to take revenge, lead back the march  
'To Lebanon'—so shout, and who gain-  
says?

But now, because delusion mixed itself  
Insensibly with this career, all's changed!

Have I brought Venice to afford us con-  
voy?

'True—but my jugglings wrought that!'  
Put I heart

Into our people where no heart lurked?—  
'Ah,

'What cannot an impostor do!'  
Not this!

Not do this which I do! Not bid avant  
Falsehood! Thou shalt not keep thy hold  
on me!

—Nor even get a hold on me! 'Tis now—  
This day—hour—minute—'tis as here I  
stand

On the accursed threshold of the Prefect,  
That I am found deceiving and deceived!

And now what do I?—hasten to the few

## THE RETURN OF THE DRUSES

[ACT II

Deceived, ere they deceive the many—  
shout,

'As I professed, I did believe myself!  
'Say, Druses, had you seen a butchery—  
'If Ayoob, Karshook saw—Maani there  
'Must tell you how I saw my father sink;  
'My mother's arms twine still about my  
neck;

'Hear my brothershriek, here's yet the scar  
'Of what was meant for my own death-  
blow—say,

'If you had woke like me, grown year by  
year

'Out of the tumult in a far-off clime,  
'Would it be wondrous such delusion  
grew?

'I walked the world, asked help at every  
hand;

'Came help or no? Not this and this?  
Which helps

'When I returned with, found the Prefect  
here,

'The Druses here, all here but Hakeem's  
self,

'The Khalif of the thousand prophecies,  
'Reserved for such a juncture,—could I  
call

'My mission aught but Hakeem's? Prom-  
ised Hakeem

'More than performs the Djabal—your  
absolve?

'—Me, you will never shame before the  
crowd

'Yet happily ignorant?—Me, both throngs  
surround,

'The few deceived, the many unabused,  
'—Who, thus surrounded, slay for you  
and them

'The Prefect, lead to Lebanon? No  
Khalif,

'But Sheikh once more! Mere Djabal—  
not' . . .

*Enter KHALIL hastily.*

*Kha.* —God Hakeem!

'Tis told! The whole Druse nation knows  
thee, Hakeem,

As we! and mothers lift on high their  
babes

Who seem aware, so glisten their great  
eyes,

Thou hast not failed us; ancient brows  
are proud;

Our elders could not earlier die, it seems,  
Than at thy coming! The Druse heart is  
thine!

Take it! my lord and theirs, be thou  
adored!

*Dja. [aside].* Adored!—but I renounce  
it utterly!

*Kha.* Already are they instituting choirs  
And Dances to the Khalif, as of old

'Tis chronicled thou bad'st them.  
*Dja. [aside].* I abjure it!

'Tis not mine—not for me!

*Kha.* Why pour they wine  
Flavoured like honey and bruised moun-  
tain-herbs,  
Or wear those strings of sun-dried cedar-  
fruit?

Oh, let me tell thee—Esaad, we supposed  
Doting, is carried forth, eager to see  
The last sun rise on the Isle: he can see  
now!

The shamed Druse women never wept  
before:

They can look up when we reach home,  
they say.

Smell!—sweet cane, saved in Lilith's  
breast thus long—

Sweet!—it grows wild in Lebanon. And I  
Alone do nothing for thee! 'Tis my office  
Just to announce what well thou know'st  
—but thus

Thou bidst me. At this self-same moment  
tend

The Prefect, Nuncio and the Admiral  
Hither by their three sea-paths: nor forget  
Who were the trusty watchers!—thou for-  
get?

Like me, who do forget that Anael bade . . .  
*Dja. [aside].* Ay, Anael, Anael—is that  
said at last?

Louder than all, that would be said, I  
knew!

What does abjuring mean, confessing  
mean,

To the people? Till that woman crossed  
my path,

On went I, solely for my people's sake:  
I saw her, and I then first saw myself,

And slackened pace: 'if I should prove  
indeed

'Hakeem—with Anael by!'

*Kha. [aside].* Ah, he is rapt!  
Dare I at such a moment break on him

Even to do my sister's bidding? Yes:  
The eyes are Djabal's and not Hakeem's  
yet,

Though but till I have spoken this, per-  
chance.

*Dja. [aside].* To yearn to tell her, and  
yet have no one

Great heart's word that will tell her! I  
could gasp

Doubtless one such word out, and die.  
[Aloud.] You said

That Anael . . .

*Kha.* . . . Fain would see thee,  
speak with thee,

Before you change, discard this Djabal's  
shape

She knows, for Hakeem's shape she is to  
know.

Something to say that will not from her  
mind!

I know not what—'Let him but come!'  
she said.

*Dja.* [*half-apart*]. My nation—all my Druses—how fare they?  
Those I must save, and suffer thus to save,  
Hold their their posts! Wait they their Khalif too?

*Kha.* All at the signal pant to flock around

That banner of a brow!

*Dja.* [*aside*]. And when they flock, Confess them this: and after, for reward, Be chased with howlings to her feet perchance!

—Have the poor outraged Druses, deaf and blind,

Precede me there, forestall my story there, Tell it in mocks and jeers!

I lose myself.

Who needs a Hakeem to direct him now?  
I need the veriest child—why not this child?

[*Turning abruptly to KHALIL.*  
You are a Druse too, Khalil; you were nourished

Like Anael with our mysteries: if she Could vow, so nourished, to love only one Who should avenge the Druses, whence proceeds

Your silence? Wherefore made you no essay,

Who thus implicitly can execute My bidding? What have I done, you could not?

Who, knowing more than Anael the prostration

Of our once lofty tribe, the daily life Of this detested . . .

Does he come, you say, This Prefect? All's in readiness?

*Kha.* The sword, The sacred robe, the Khalif's mystic tiar, Laid up so long, are all disposed beside The Prefect's chamber.

*Dja.* —Why did you despair?

*Kha.* I know our nation's state? Too surely know,

As thou who speak'st to prove me! Wrongs like ours

Should wake revenge: but when I sought the wronged

And spoke,—'The Prefect stabbed your son—arise!

'Your daughter, while you starve, eats shameless bread

'In his pavilion—then arise!'—my speech Fell idly: 'twas, 'Be silent, or worse fare!

Endure till time's slow cycle prove complete!

'Who mayst thou be that takest on thee to thrust

'Into this peril—art thou Hakeem?' No! Only a mission like thy mission renders

All these obedient at a breath, subdues Their private passions, brings their wills to one.

*Dja.* You think so?

*Kha.* Even now—when they have witnessed

Thy miracles—had I not threatened all With Hakeem's vengeance, they would

mar the work, And couch ere this, each with his special

prize, Safe in this dwelling, leaving our main hope

To perish. No! When these have kissed thy feet

At Lebanon, the past purged off, the present

Clear,—for the future, even Hakeem's mission

May end, and I perchance, or any youth, Shall rule them thus renewed.—I tutor thee!

*Dja.* And wisely. (He is Anael's brother, pure

As Anael's self.) Go say, I come to her. Haste! I will follow you. [*KHALIL goes.*

Oh, not confess

To these, the blinded multitude—confess, Before at least the fortune of my deed

Half-authorize its means! Only to her Let me confess my fault, who in my path

Curled up like incense from a Mage-king's tomb

When he would have the wayfarer descend Through the earth's rift and bear hid

treasure forth! How should child's-carelessness prove

manhood's crime Till now that I, whose lone youth hurried

past, Letting each joy 'scape for the Druses'

sake, At length recover in one Druse all joy?

Were her brow brighter, her eyes richer, still

Would I confess, On the gulf's verge I pause.

How could I slay the Prefect, thus and thus?

Anael, be mine to guard me, not destroy!

[*Goes.*

*Enter ANAEL, and MAANI who is assisting to array her in the ancient dress of the Druses.*

*An.* Those saffron vestures of the tabret-girls!

Comes Djabal, think you?

*Maa.* Doubtless Djabal comes.

*An.* Dost thou snow-swathe thee king-lie, Lebanon,

Than in my dreams?—Nay all the tresses off

\*My forehead! Look I lovely so? He says That I am lovely.

*Maa.* Lovely! nay, that hangs Awry.

*An.* You tell me how a khandjar hangs?

## THE RETURN OF THE DRUSES

[ACT II

The sharp side, thus, along the heart, see,  
marks  
The maiden of our class. Are you content  
For Djabal as for me?

*Maa.* Content, my child.

*An.* Oh mother, tell me more of him!

He comes

Even now—tell more, fill up my soul with  
him!

*Maa.* And did I not . . . yes, surely . . .  
tell you all?

*An.* What will be changed in Djabal  
when the Change

Arrives? Which feature? Not his eyes!

*Maa.* 'Tis writ

Our Hakeem's eyes rolled fire and clove  
the dark

Superbly.

*An.* Not his eyes! His voice perhaps?

Yet that's no change; for a grave current  
lived

—Grandly beneath the surface ever lived,  
That, scattering, broke as in live silver

spray

While . . . ah, the bliss . . . he would dis-  
course to me

In that enforced still fashion, word on  
word!

'Tis the old current which must swell thro'  
that,

For what least tone, Maani, could I lose?

'Tis surely not his voice will change!

—If Hakeem

Only stood by! If Djabal, somehow,  
passed

Out of the radiance as from out a robe;

Possessed, but was not it!

He lived with you?

Well—and that morning Djabal saw me  
first

And heard me vow never to wed but one  
Who saved my People—on that day . . .

proceed!

*Maa.* Once more, then: from the time  
of his return

In secret, changed so since he left the Isle  
That I, who screened our Emir's last of

sons,

This Djabal, from the Prefect's massacre  
—Who bade him ne'er forget the child he

was,

—Who dreamed so long the youth he  
might become—

I knew not in the man that child; the man  
Who spoke alone of hope to save our

tribe,

How he had gone from land to land to  
save

Our tribe—allies were sure, nor foes to  
dread.

And much he mused, days, nights, alone  
he mused:

But never till that day when, pale and  
worn

As by a persevering we, he cried

'Is there not one Drus, left me?'—and I  
showed

The way to Khail's and your hiding-  
place

From the abhorred eye of the Prefect  
here,

So that he saw you, heard you speak—till  
then,

Never did he announce—(how the moon  
seemed

To ope and shut, the while, above us  
both!)

—His mission was the mission promised  
us;

The cycle had revolved; all things renew-  
ing,

He was lost Hakeem clothed in flesh to  
lead

His children home anon, now veiled to  
work

Great purposes: the Druses now would  
change!

*An.* And they have changed! And ob-  
stacles did sink,

And furtherances rose! And round his  
form

Played fire, and music beat her angel  
wings!

My people, let me more rejoice, oh more  
For you than for myself! Did I but watch

Afar the pageant, feel our Khalif pass,  
One of the throng, how proud were I—

tho' ne'er

Singled by Djabal's glance! But to be  
chosen

His own from all, the most his own of all,  
To be exalted with him, side by side,

Lead the exulting Druses, meet . . . ah,  
how

Worthily meet the maidens who await  
Ever beneath the cedars—how deserve

This honour, in their eyes? So bright are  
they

Who saffron-vested sound the tabret there,  
The girls who throng there in my dream!

One hour

And all is over: how shall I do aught  
That may deserve next hour's exalting?—

How?—

[Suddenly to MAANI.

Mother, I am not worthy him! I read it  
Still in his eyes! He stands as if to tell me

I am not, yet forbears. Why else revert  
To one theme ever?—how mere human

gifts

Suffice him in myself—whose worship  
fades,

Whose awe goes ever off at his approach,  
As now, who when he comes . . .

[DJABAL enters.] Oh why is it

I cannot kneel to you?

*Dja.*

Rather, 'tis I

Should kneel to you, my Anael!

*An.*

Even so!

For never seem you—shall I speak the truth?

Never a God to me! 'Tis the Man's hand, Eye, voice! Oh do you veil these to our people,

Or but to me? To them, I think, to them! And brightness is their veil, shadow—my truth!

You mean that I should never kneel to you

—So, thus I kneel!

*Dja.* [*preventing her*]. No—no!

[*Feeling the khandjar as he raises her.*

Ha, have you chosen . . .

*An.* The khandjar with our ancient

garb. But, Djabal,

Change not, be not exalted yet! Give time

That I may plan more, perfect more! My blood

Beats, beats!

[*Aside.*] Oh must I then—since

Loys leaves us

Never to come again, renew in me

These doubts so near effaced already—must

I needs confess them now to Djabal?—own

That when I saw that stranger, heard his voice,

My faith fell, and the woeful thought flashed first

That each effect of Djabal's presence, taken

For proof of more than human attributes In him, by me whose heart at his approach

Beat fast, whose brain while he was by swam round,

Whose soul at his departure died away,

—That every such effect might have been wrought

In other frames, tho' not in mine, by Loys Or any merely mortal presence? Doubt

Is fading fast; shall I reveal it now? How shall I meet the rapture presently,

With doubt unexpiated, undisclosed?

*Dja.* [*aside*]. Avow the truth? I cannot! In what words

Avow that all she loved in me was false? —Which yet has served that flower-like love of hers

To climb by, like the clinging gourd, and clasp

With its divinest wealth of leaf and bloom! Could I take down the prop-work, in itself

So vile, yet interlaced and overlaid With painted cups and fruitage—might these still

Bask in the sun, unconscious their own strength

Of matted stalk and tendril had replaced The old support thus silently withdrawn!

## THE RETURN OF THE DRUSES

But no; the beauteous fabric crushes too. 'Tis not for my sake but for Anael's sake

I leave her soul this Hakeem where it leans.

Oh could I vanish from her, quit the Isle! And yet—a thought comes: here my work is done

At every point; the Druses must return—Have convoy to their birth-place back, whoe'er

The leader be, myself or any Druse—

Venice is pledged to that: 'tis for myself, For my own vengeance in the Prefect's death,

I stay now, not for them: to slay or spare The Prefect, whom imports it save myself?

He cannot bar their passage from the Isle;

What would his death be but my own reward?

Then, mine I will forego. It is foregone! Let him escape with all my House's blood!

Ere he can reach land, Djabal disappears, And Hakeem, Anael loved, shall, fresh as first,

Live in her memory, keeping her sublime Above the world. She cannot touch that world

By ever knowing what I truly am, Since Loys,—of mankind the only one

Able to link my present with my past, My life in Europe with my Island life,

Thence, able to unmask me,—I've disposed

Safely at last at Rhodes, and

*Enter KHALIL.*

*Kha.* Loys greets thee! *Dja.* Loys? To drag me back? It cannot be!

*An.* [*aside*]. Loys! Ah, doubt may not be stifled so!

*Kha.* Can I have erred that thou so gazest? Yes,

I told thee not in the glad press of tidings Of higher import, Loys is returned

Before the Prefect, with, if possible, Twice the light-heartedness of old. As though

On some inauguration he expects, To-day, the world's fate hung!

*Dja.* —And asks for me?

*Kha.* Thou knowest all things. Thee in chief he greets,

But every Druse of us is to be happy At his arrival, he declares: were Loys

Thou, Master, he could have no wider soul

To take us in with. How I love that Loys! *Dja.* [*aside*]. Shame winds me with her tether round and round.



# THE RETURN OF THE DRUSES

[ACT III]

*An.* [aside]. Loys? I take the trial! it is meet,  
The little I can do, be done; that faith,  
All I can offer, want no perfecting  
Which my own act may compass. Ay,  
this way  
All may go well, nor that ignoble doubt  
Be chased by other aid than mine. Advance  
Close to my fear, weigh Loys with my  
Lord,  
The mortal with the more than mortal  
gifts!

*Dja.* [aside]. Before, there were so few  
deceived! and now  
There's doubtless not one least Druse in  
the Isle  
But, having learned my superhuman  
claims,  
And calling me his Khalif-God, will clash  
The whole truth out from Loys at first  
word!

While Loys, for his part, will hold me up,  
With a Frank's unimaginable scorn  
Of such imposture, to my people's eyes!  
Could I but keep him longer yet awhile  
From them, amuse him here until I plan  
How he and I at once may leave the Isle!  
Khalil I cannot part with from my side—  
My only help in this emergency:  
There's Anael!

*An.* Please you?

*Dja.* Anael—none but she!  
[To ANAEL.] I pass some minutes in the  
chamber there,  
Ere I see Loys: you shall speak with him  
Until I join you. Khalil follows me.

*An.* [aside]. As I divined: he bids me  
save myself,  
Offers me a probation—I accept.  
Let me see Loys!

*Loys* [without]. Djabal!

*An.* [aside]. 'Tis his voice.  
The smooth Frank trifier with our people's  
wrongs,

The self-complacent boy-inquirer, loud  
On this and that inflicted tyranny,  
—Aught serving to parade an ignorance  
Of how wrong feels, inflicted! Let me  
close

With what I viewed at distance: let myself  
Probe this delusion to the core!

*Dja.* He comes.  
Khalil, along with me! while Anael waits  
Till I return once more—and but once  
more.

## ACT III

ANAEL and LOYS.

*An.* Here leave me! Here I wait another. 'Twas  
For no mad protestation of a love  
Like this you say possesses you, I came.

*Loys.* Love? how protest a love I dare  
not feel?

Mad words may doubtless have escaped  
me: you

Are here—I only feel you here!

*An.* No more!

*Loys.* But once again, whom could you  
love? I dare,

Alas, say nothing of myself, who am  
A Knight now, for when Knighthood we  
embrace,

Love we abjure: so, speak on safely:  
speak,

Lest I speak, and betray my faith! And  
yet

To say your breathing passes through me,  
changes

My blood to spirit, and my spirit to you,  
As Heaven the sacrificer's wine to it—

This is not to protest my love! You said  
You could love one . . .

*An.* One only! We are bent

To earth—who raises up my tribe, I love;  
The Prefect bows us—who removes him;  
we

Have ancient rights—who gives them  
back to us,

I love. Forbear me! Let my hand go!  
*Loys.* Him

You could love only? Where is Djabal?  
Stay!

[Aside.] Yet wherefore stay? Who does  
this but myself?

Had I apprised her that I come to do  
Just this, what more could she acknow-  
ledge? No,

She sees into my heart's core! What is it  
Feeds either cheek with red, as June some  
rose?

Why turns she from me? Ah fool, over-  
fond

To dream I could call up . . .  
. . . What never dream

Yet feigned! 'Tis love! Oh Anael, speak  
to me!

Djabal—  
*An.* Seek Djabal by the Prefect's  
chamber

At noon! [She paces the room.]

*Loys* [aside]. And am I not the Prefect  
now?

Is it my fate to be the only one  
Able to win her love, the only one

Unable to accept her love? The past  
Breaks up beneath my footing: came I  
here

This morn as to a slave, to set her free  
And take her thanks, and then spend day  
by day

Content beside her in the Isle? What  
works

This knowledge in me now? Her eye has  
broken

The faint disguise away: for Anael's sake

ACT III]

I left the Isle, forher espoused the cause  
Of the Druses, and for her I thought, till  
now,  
To live without!

—As I must live! To-day  
Ordains me Knight, forbids me . . . never  
shall

Forbid me to profess myself, heart, arm,  
Thy soldier!

*An.* Djabal you demanded, comes,  
*Loys [aside].* What wouldst thou, Loys?

See him? Nought beside

Is wanting: I have felt his voice a spell  
From first to last. He brought me here,  
made known

The Druses to me, drove me hence to seek  
Redress for them; and shall I meet him  
now,

When nought is wanting but a word of  
his,

To—what?—induce me to spurn hope,  
faith, pride,

Honour away,—to cast my lot among  
His tribe, become a proverb in men's  
mouths,

Breaking my high pact of companionship  
With those who graciously bestowed on  
me

The very opportunities I turn  
Against them! Let me not see Djabal  
now!

*An.* The Prefect also comes.

*Loys [aside].* Him let me see,  
Not Djabal! Him, degraded at a word,  
To soothe me,—to attest belief in me—  
And after, Djabal! Yes, ere I return  
To her, the Nuncio's vow shall have de-  
stroyed

This heart's rebellion, and coerced this  
will  
For ever.

Anael, not before the vows  
Irrecoverably fix me . . .

Let me fly!

The Prefect, or I lose myself for ever!

[*Goes.*]

*An.* Yes, I am calm now; just one way  
remains—

One, to attest my faith in him: for, see,  
I were quite lost else: Loys, Djabal, stand  
On either side—two men! I balance looks  
And words, give Djabal a man's prefer-  
ence,

No more. In Djabal, Hakeem is ab-  
sorbed!

And for a love like this, the God who  
saves

My race, selects me for his bride? One  
way!

*Enter DJABAL.*

*Dja. [to himself].* No moment is to  
waste then; 'tis resolved.  
If Khalil may be trusted to lead back

THE RETURN OF THE DRUSES

My Druses, and if Loys can be lured  
Out of the Isle—if I procure his silence,  
Or promise never to return at least,—  
All's over. Even now my bark awaits:  
I reach the next wild islet and the next,  
And lose myself beneath the sun for ever.  
And now, to Anael!

*An.* Djabal, I am thine!

*Dja.* Mine? Djabal's?—As if Hakeem  
had not been?

*An.* Not Djabal's? Say first, do you  
read my thought?

Why need I speak, if you can read my  
thought?

*Dja.* I do not, I have said a thousand  
times.

*An.* (My secret's safe, I shall surprise  
him yet!)

Djabal, I knew your secret from the first:  
Djabal, when first I saw you . . . (by our  
porch

You leant, and pressed the tinkling veil  
away,

And one fringe fell behind your neck—I  
see!)

. . . I knew you were not human, for I said  
'This dim secluded house where the sea  
beats

'Is heaven to me—my people's huts are  
hell

'To them; this august form will follow me.  
'Mix with the waves his voice will,—I  
have him;

'And they, the Prefect! Oh, my happiness  
'Rounds to the full whether I choose or  
no!

'His eyes met mine, he was about to speak,  
'His hand grew damp—surely he meant  
to say

'He let me love him: in that moment's  
gliss

'I shall forget my people pine for home—  
'They pass and they repass with pallid  
eyes!

I vowed at once a certain vow; this  
vow—

Not to embrace you till my tribe was  
saved.

Embrace me!

*Dja. [apart].* And she loved me! Nought  
remained

But that! Nay, Anael, is the Prefect dead?

*An.* Ah, you reproach me! True, his  
death crowns all,

I know—or should know: and I would do  
much,

Believe! but, death! Oh, you, who have  
known death,

Would never doom the Prefect, were death  
fearful

As we report!

Death!—a fire curls within us  
From the foot's palm, and fills up to the  
brain,

## THE RETURN OF THE DRUSES

[ACT III]

Up, out, then shatters the whole bubble-shell

Of flesh, perchance!

Death!—witness, I would die,  
Whate'er death be, would venture now to die

For Khalil, for Maani—what for thee?  
Nay but embrace me, Djabal, in assurance  
My vow will not be broken, for I must  
Do something to attest my faith in you,  
Be worthy you!

*Dja.* [avoiding her]. I come for that—to say

Such an occasion is at hand: 'tis like  
I leave you—that we part, my Anael,—  
part

For ever!

*An.* We part? Just so! I have succumbed,—

I am, he thinks, unworthy—and nought less

Will serve than such approval of my faith.  
Then, we part not! Remains there no way short

Of that? Oh not that!

Death!—yet a hurt bird  
Died in my hands; its eyes filmed—'Nay,  
it sleeps.'

I said, 'will wake to-morrow well:' 'twas dead.

*Dja.* I stand here and time fleets. Anael  
—I come

To bid a last farewell to you: perhaps  
We never meet again. But, ere the Prefect  
Arrive . . .

*Enter KHALIL, breathlessly.*

*Kha.* He's here! The Prefect! Twenty guards,

No more: no sign he dreams of danger.  
All

Awaits thee only. Ayoob, Karshook,  
keep

Their posts—wait but the deed's accomplishment

To join us with thy Druses to a man.  
Still holds his course the Nuncio—near

and near  
The fleet from Candia steering.

*Dja.* [aside]. All is lost!  
—Or won?

*Kha.* And I have laid the sacred robe,  
The sword, the head-tiar, at the porch—  
the place

Commanded. Thou wilt hear the Prefect's trumpet.

*Dja.* Then I keep Anael,—him then,  
past recall,

I slay—'tis forced on me. As I began  
I must conclude—so be it!

*Kha.* For the rest,  
Save Loys, our foe's solitary sword,  
All is so safe that . . . I will ne'er entreat

Thy post again of thee: who' danger none,  
There must be glory only meet for thee  
In slaying the Prefect.

*An.* [aside]. Anael 'tis now that Djabal  
Would leave me!—in the glory meet for him!

*Dja.* As glory, I would yield the deed to you

Or any Druse; what peril there may be,  
I keep. [Aside.] All things conspire to

hound me on.  
Not now, my soul, draw back, at least!

Not now!  
The course is plain, howe'er obscure all else.

Once offer this tremendous sacrifice,  
Prevent what else will be irreparable,

Secure these transcendental helps, regain  
The Cedars—then let all dark clear itself!

I slay him!

*Kha.* Anael, and no part for us!  
[To DJABAL.] Hast thou possessed her

with . . .  
*Dja.* [to ANAEL]. Whom speak you to?

What is it you behold there? Nay, this smile

Turns stranger. Shudder you? The man must die,

As thousands of our race have died thro' him.

One blow, and I discharge his weary soul  
From the flesh that pollutes it! Let him fill

Straight some new expiatory form, of earth

Or sea, the reptile or some æry thing:  
What is there in his death?

*An.* My brother said,  
Is there no part in it for us?

*Dja.* For Khalil,—  
The trumpet will announce the Nuncio's

entry;  
Here, I shall find the Prefect hastening

In the Pavilion to receive him—here  
I slay the Prefect; meanwhile Ayoob leads

The Nuncio with his guards within: once these

Secured in the outer hall, bid Ayoob bar  
Entry or egress till I give the sign

Which waits the landing of the argosies  
You will announce to me: this double

sign  
That justice is performed and help arrived,

When Ayoob shall receive, but not before,

Let him throw ope the palace doors,  
admit

The Druses to behold their tyrant, ere  
We leave for ever this detested spot.

Go, Khalil, hurry all! No pause, no pause!

Whirl on the dream, secure to wake anon!  
*Kha.* What sign? and who the bearer?

*Dja.* Who shall show

ACT III]

My ring, admit<sup>t</sup> to Ayoob. How she stands!  
Have I not . . . I must have some task for her.

Anael, not that way! 'Tis the Prefect's chamber!

Anael, keep you the ring—give you the sign!

(It holds her safe amid the stir.) You will be faithful?

An. [*taking the ring*]. I would fain be worth<sup>less</sup>. Hark! [*Trumpet without*].

Khal. He comes.

Dja. And I too come.

An. One word, but one! Say, shall you be exalted at the deed?

Then? On the instant?

Dja. I exalted? What? He, there—we, thus—our wrongs revenged, our tribe

Set free? Oh, then shall I, assure yourself, Shall you, shall each of us, be in his death Exalted!

Kha. He is here.

Dja. Away—away! [*They go*].

Enter the PREFECT with Guards, and LOYS.

The Prefect [*to Guards*]. Back, I say, to the galley every guard!

That's my sole care now; see each bench retains

Its complement of rowers; I embark O' the instant, since this Knight will have it so.

Alas me! Could you have the heart, my Loys!

[*To a Guard who whispers*]. Oh, bring the holy Nuncio here forthwith!

[*The Guards go*].

Loys, a rueful sight, confess, to see The grey discarded Prefect leave his post, With tears i' the eye! So, you are Prefect now?

You depose me—you succeed me? Ha, ha!

Loys. And dare you laugh, whom laughter less becomes

Than yesterday's forced meekness we be-held . . .

Pref. —When you so eloquently pleaded, Loys,

For my dismissal from the post? Ah, meek

With cause enough, consult the Nuncio else!

And wish him the like meekness: for so staunch

A servant of the Church can scarce have bought

His share in the Isle, and paid for it, hard pieces!

You've my successor to condole with, Nuncio!

THE RETURN OF THE DRUSES

I shall be safe by then i' the galley, Loys!

Loys. You make as you would tell me you rejoice

To leave your scene of . . .

Pref. Trade in the dear Druses? Blood and sweat traffic? Spare what yesterday

We heard enough of! Drove I in the Isle A profitable game? Learn wit, my son, Which you'll need shortly! Did it never breed

Suspicion in you, all was not pure profit, When I, the insatiate . . . and so forth—was bent

On having a partaker in my rule?

Why did I yield this Nuncio half the gain, If not that I might also shift—what on him?

Half of the peril, Loys!

Loys.

Peril?

Pref.

Hark you!

I'd love you if you'd let me—this for reason,

You save my life at price of . . . well, say risk

At least, of yours. I came a long time since

To the Isle; our Hospitallers bade me tame

These savage wizards, and reward myself—

Loys. The Knights who so repudiate your crime?

Pref. Loys, the Knights! we doubtless understood

Each other; as for trusting to reward From any friend beside myself . . . no, no!

I clutched mine on the spot, when it was sweet,

And I had taste for it. I felt these wizards Alive—was sure they were not on me, only

When I was on them: but with age comes caution:

And stinging pleasures please less and sting more.

Year by year, fear by fear! The girls were brighter

Than ever (faith, there's yet one Anael left,

I set my heart upon—Oh, prithee, let That brave new sword lie still!)

These joys looked brighter,

But siltier the town, too, as I passed. With this alcove's delicious memories

Began to mingle visions of gaunt fathers, Quick-eyed sons, fugitives from the mine,

the oar, Stealing to catch me. Brief, when I began

To quake with fear—(I think I hear the Chapter

Solicited to let me leave, now all Worth staying for was gained and gone!)

—I say,

## THE RETURN OF THE DRUSES

[ACT III]

Just when, for the remainder of my life,  
All methods of escape seemed lost—that  
then

Up should a young hot-headed Loys  
spring,

Talk very long and loud,—in fine, compel  
The Knights to break their whole arrange-  
ment, have me

Home for pure shame—from this safe-  
hold of mine

Where but ten thousand Druses seek my  
life,

To my wild place of banishment, San  
Gines

By Murcia, where my three fat manors  
lying,

Purchased by gains here and the Nuncio's  
gold,

Are all I have to guard me,—that such  
fortune

Should fall to me, I hardly could expect.  
Therefore I say, I'd love you.

*Loys.* Can it be?  
I play into your hands then? Oh no,  
no!

The Venerable Chapter, the Great Order  
Sunk o' the sudden into fiends of the  
pit?

But I will back—will yet unveil you!

*Pref.* Me? To whom?—perhaps Sir Galeas, who in  
Chapter

Shook his white head thrice—and some  
dozen times

My hand next morning shook, for value  
paid!

To that Italian saint, Sir Cosimo?—  
Indignant at my wringing year by year

A thousand bezants from the coral-divers,  
As you recounted; felt the saint aggrieved?

Well might he—I allowed for his half-  
share

Merely one hundred. To Sir . . .  
*Loys.* See! you dare

Inculcate the whole Order; yet should I,  
A youth, a sole voice, have the power to  
change

Their evil way, had they been firm in  
it?

Answer me!

*Pref.* Oh, the son of Bretagne's Duke,  
And that son's wealth, the father's in-  
fluence, too,

And the young arm, we'll even say, my  
*Loys,*

—The fear of losing or diverting these  
Into another channel, by gainsaying

A novice too abruptly, could not influence  
The Order! You might join, for aught  
they cared,

Their red-cross rivals of the Temple! Well,  
I thank you for my part, at all events.

Stay here till they withdraw you! You'll  
inhabit

My palace—sleep, perchance, in the al-  
cove

Whither I go to meet our holy friend.  
Good! and now disbelieve me if you  
can,—

This is the first time for long years I enter  
Thus *[lifts the arras]* without feeling just  
as if I lifted

The lid up of my tomb.

*Loys.* They share his crime!  
God's punishment will overtake you yet.

*Pref.* Thank you it does *[exit]*! Pardon  
this last flash:

I bear a sober visage presently  
With the disinherited Nuncio here—

His purchase-money safe at Murcia, too!  
Let me repeat—for the first time, no  
draught

Coming as from a sepulchre salutes me.  
When we next meet, this folly may have  
passed,

We'll hope. Ha, ha!

*[Goes through the arras.]*  
*Loys.* Assure me but . . . he's gone!

He could not lie. Then what have I es-  
caped,

I, who had so nigh given up happiness  
For ever, to be linked with him and them!

Oh, opportunist of discoveries! I  
Their Knight? I utterly renounce them  
all!

Hark! What, he meets by this the Nuncio?

Yes,  
The same hyæna groan-like laughter!

Quick—  
To Djabal! I am one of them at last,  
These simple-hearted Druses—Anael's  
tribe!

Djabal! She's mine at last. Djabal, I say!

*[Goes.]*

## ACT IV

*Enter DJABAL.*

*Dja.* Let me but slay the Prefect. The  
end now!

To-morrow will be time enough to pry  
Into the means I took: suffice, they served,  
Ignoble as they were, to hurl revenge  
True to its object.

*[Seeing the robe, etc. disposed.]*  
Mine should never so  
Have hurried to accomplishment! Thee,  
Djabal,

Far other mood befitted! Calm the Robe  
Should clothe this doom's awarder!

*[Taking the robe.]* Shall I dare  
Assume my nation's Robe? I am at least  
A Druse again, chill Europe's policy  
Drops from me: I dare take the Robe.

Why not  
The Tiar? I rule the Druses, and what  
more

Betokens it than rule?—yet—yet—

[*Lays down the tiar.*  
[*Footsteps in the alcove.*] He comes!

[*Taking the sword.*  
If the Sword serve, let the Tiar lie! So,  
feet

Clogged with the blood of twenty years  
can fall

Thus lightly! Round me, all ye ghosts!  
He'll lift . . .

Which arm to push the arras wide?—or  
both?

Stab from the neck down to the heart—  
there stay!

Near he comes—nearer—the next foot-  
step! Now!

[*As he dashes aside the arras, ANAEL is discovered.*

Ha! Anael! Nay, my Anael, can it be?  
Heard you the trumpet? I must slay him

here,  
And here you ruin all. Why speak you  
not?

Anael, the Prefect comes! [ANAEEL  
*screams.*] So slow to feel

'Tis not a sight for you to look upon?  
A moment's work—but such work! Till

you go,  
I must be idle—idle, I risk all!

Those locks are well, and you are beau-  
teous thus,

But with the dagger 'tis, I have to do!  
*An.* With mine!

*Dja.* Blood—Anael?  
*An.* Djabal, 'tis thy deed!

It must be! I had hoped to claim it mine—  
Be worthy thee—but I must needs confess

'Twas not I, but thyself . . . not I have . . .  
Djabal!

Speak to me!  
*Dja.* Oh, my punishment!

*An.* Speak to me  
While I can speak! touch me, despite the

blood!  
When the command passed from thy soul

to mine,  
I went, fire leading me, muttering of thee,

And the approaching exaltation,—'make  
'One sacrifice!' I said,—and he sat there,

Bade me approach; and, as I did ap-  
proach,

Thy fire with music burst into my brain.  
'Twas but a moment's work, thou said'st,

—perchance  
It may have been so! Well, it is thy deed!

*Dja.* It is my deed.  
*An.* His blood all this!

—this! and . . .  
And more! Sustain me, Djabal! Wait

not—now  
Let flash thy glory! Change thyself and

me!  
It must be! Ere the Druses flock to us!

At least confirm me! Djabal, blood gushed  
forth—

He was our tyrant—but I looked he'd fall  
Prone as asleep—why else is death called

sleep?  
Sleep? He bent o'er his breast! 'Tis sin,  
I know,—

Punish me, Djabal, but wilt thou let him?  
Be it thou that punishest, not he—who

creeps  
On his red breast—is here! 'Tis the small

groan  
Of a child—no worse! Bestow the new

life, then!  
Too swift it cannot be, too strange, sur-  
passing!

[*Following him as he retreats.*  
Now! Change us both! Change me and

change thou!  
*Dja.* [*sinks on his knees*]. Thus!

Behold my change! You have done nobly.  
I!—

*An.* Can Hakeem kneel?  
*Dja.* No Hakeem, and

scarce Djabal!  
I have dealt falsely, and this woe is come.

No—hear me ere scorn blast me! Once  
and ever,

The deed is mine. Oh think upon the past!  
*An.* [*to herself*]. Did I strike once, or

twice, or many times?  
*Dja.* I came to lead my tribe where,

bathed in glooms,  
Doth Bahumid the Renovator sleep:

Anael, I saw my tribe: I said, 'Without  
'A miracle this cannot be'—I said

'Be there a miracle!'—for I saw you.  
*An.* His head lies south the portal.

*Dja.* —Weighed with this  
The general good, how could I choose my

own?  
What matter was my purity of soul?

Little by little I engaged myself—  
Heaven would accept me for its instrum-

ent,  
I hoped: I said Heaven had accepted me.

*An.* Is it this blood breeds dreams in  
me? Who said

You were not Hakeem? And your  
miracles—

The fire that plays innocuous round your  
form?

[*Again changing her whole manner.*  
Ah, thou wouldst try me—thou art Ha-

keem still!  
*Dja.* Woe—woe! As if the Druses of

the Mount  
(Scarce Arabs, even there, but here, in the

Isle,  
Beneath their former selves) should com-

prehend  
The subtle lore of Europe! A few se-

crets  
That would not easily affect the meanest

## THE RETURN OF THE DRUSES

[ACT IV

Of the crowd there, could wholly subjugate  
The best of our poor tribe. Again that eye?

*An.* [after a pause springs to his neck].  
Djabal, in this there can be no deceit!

Why, Djabal, were you human only,—  
think,

Maani is but human, Khalil human,  
Loys is human even—did their words  
Haunt me, their looks pursue me? Shame

on you  
So to have tried me! Rather, shame on  
me

So to need trying! Could I, with the Pre-  
fect

And the blood, there—could I see only  
you?

—Hang by your neck over this gulf of  
blood?

Speak, I am saved! Speak, Djabal! Am  
I saved?

*As DJABAL slowly unclasps her arms,  
and puts her silently from him.*

Hakeem would save me. Thou art Djabal.  
Crouch!

Bow to the dust, thou basest of our kind!  
The pile of thee, I reared up to the cloud—

Full, midway, of our fathers' trophied  
tombs,

Based on the living rock, devoured not by  
The unstable desert's jaws of sand,—falls  
prone.

Fire, music, quenched: and now thou liest  
there

A ruin, obscene creatures will moan  
through.

—Let us come, Djabal!  
*Dja.* Whither come?

*An.* At once—  
Lest so it grow intolerable. Come!

Will I not share it with thee? Best at once!  
So, feel less pain! Let them deride,—thy  
tribe

Now trusting in thee,—Loys shall deride!  
Come to them, hand in hand, with me!

*Dja.* Where come?

*An.* Where?—to the Druses thou hast  
wronged! Confess,

Now that the end is gained—(I love thee  
now—)

That thou hast so deceived them—(per-  
chance love thee

Better than ever.) Come, receive their  
doom

Of infamy! O, best of all I love thee!  
Shame with the man, no triumph with the  
God,

Be mine! Come!

*Dja.* Never! More shame  
yet? and why?

Why? You have called this deed mine—  
it is mine!

And with it I accept its circumstance.

How can I longer strive with fate? The  
past

Is past: my false life shall henceforth show  
true.

Hear me! The argosies touch land by  
this;

They bear us to fresh scenes and happier  
skies.

What if we reign together?—if we keep  
Our secret for the Druses' good?—by  
means

Of even their superstition, plant in them  
New life? I learn from Europe: all who  
seek

Man's good must awe man, by such means  
as these.

We two will be divine to them—we are!  
All great works in this world spring from  
the ruins

Of greater projects—ever, on our earth,  
Babels men block out, Babylons they  
build.

I wrest the weapon from your hand! I  
claim

The deed! Retire! You have my ring—  
you bar

All access to the Nuncio till the forces  
From Venice land.

*An.* Thou wilt feign Hakeem then?  
*Dja.* [putting the Tiara of Hakeem on  
his head]. And from this moment

that I dare ope wide  
Eyes that till now refused to see, begins

My true dominion: for I know myself,  
And what am I to personate. No word?

[ANAEL goes.

'Tis come on me at last! His blood on  
her—

What memories will follow that! Her eye,  
Her fierce distorted lip and ploughed black  
brow!

Ah, fool! Has Europe then so poorly  
tamed

The Syrian blood from out thee? Thou,  
presume

To work in this foul earth by means not  
foul?

Scheme, as for heaven,—but, on the earth  
be glad

If a least ray like heaven's be left thee!  
Thus

I shall be calm—in readiness—no way  
Surprised. [A noise without.

This should be Khalil and my Druses.  
Venice is come then! Thus I grasp thee,  
sword!

Druses, 'tis Hakeem saves you! In! Be-  
hold

Your Prefect!

Enter LOYS. DJABAL hides the khandjar  
in his robe.

Loys. Oh, well found, Djabal!—but no  
time for words.

ACT IV]

You know who waits there?

[*Pointing to the alcove.*  
Well:—and that 'tis there

He meets the Nuncio? Well? Now, a surprise—  
He there—

*Dja.* I know—

*Loys.* —is now no mortal's lord,  
Is absolutely powerless—call him, dead—  
He is no longer Prefect—you are Prefect!  
Oh, shrink not! I do nothing in the dark,  
Nothing unworthy Breton blood, believe!  
I understand at once your urgency  
That I should leave this isle for Rhodes;  
I felt

What you were loath to speak—your need  
of help.

I have fulfilled the task, that earnestness  
Imposed on me: have, face to face, confronted

The Prefect in full Chapter, charged on  
him

The enormities of his long rule; he stood  
Mute, offered no defence, no crime denied.  
On which, I spoke of you, and of your  
tribe,

Your faith so like our own, and all you  
urged

Of old to me: I spoke, too, of your good-  
ness,

Your patience—brief, I hold henceforth  
the Isle

In charge, am nominally lord,—but you,  
You are associated in my rule—  
Are the true Prefect! Ay, such faith had  
they

In my assurance of your loyalty  
(For who insults an imbecile old man?)  
That we assume the Prefecture this hour.  
You gaze at me? Hear greater wonders  
yet—

I cast down all the fabric I have built.  
These Knights, I was prepared to worship  
... but

Of that another time; what's now to say,  
Is—I shall never be a Knight! Oh, Djabal,  
Here first I throw all prejudice aside,  
And call you brother! I am Druselike you:  
My wealth, my friends, my power, are  
wholly yours,

Your people's, which is now my people:  
for

There is a maiden of your tribe, I love—  
She loves me—Khalil's sister—

*Dja.* Anael?

*Loys.* Start you?

Seems what I say, unknighly? Thus it  
chanced:

When first I came, a novice, to the isle ...

*Enter one of the NUNCIO's Guards from  
the alcove.*

*Guard.* Oh horrible! Sir Loys! Here is  
Loys!

THE RETURN OF THE DRUSES

And here— [*Others enter from the alcove.*  
[*Pointing to DJABAL.*] Secure him, bind  
him—this is he!

[*They surround DJABAL.*

*Loys.* Madmen—what is't you do?  
Stand from my friend,

And tell me!

*Guard.* Thou canst have no part in  
this—

Surely no part! But slay him not! The  
Nuncio

Commanded, slay him not!

*Loys.* Speak, or ...

*Guard.* The Prefect  
Lies murdered there by him thou dost  
embrace.

*Loys.* By Djabal? Miserable fools!  
How Djabal?

[*A Guard lifts DJABAL's robe; DJABAL  
flings down the khandjar.*

*Loys* [after a pause]. Thou hast received  
some insult worse than all,

Some outrage not to be endured—

[*To the Guards.*] Stand back!  
He is my friend—more than my friend.

Thou hast

Slain him upon that provocation.

*Guard.* No!

No provocation! 'Tis a long devised  
Conspiracy: the whole tribe is involved.  
He is their Khalif—'tis on that pretence—  
Their mighty Khalif who died long ago,  
And now comes back to life and light  
again!

All is just now revealed, I know not how,  
By one of his confederates—who, struck  
With horror at this murder, first apprised  
The Nuncio. As 'twas said, we find this  
Djabal

Here where we take him.

*Dja.* [*aside*]. Who broke faith with me?

*Loys* [*to DJABAL*]. Hear'st thou? Speak!  
Till thou speak, I keep off these,

Or dic with thee. Deny this story! Thou  
A Khalif, an impostor? Thou, my friend,  
Whose tale was of an inoffensive tribe,  
With ... but thou know'st—on that tale's  
truth I pledged

My faith before the Chapter: what art  
thou?

*Dja.* Loys, I am as thou hast heard.  
All's true.

No more concealment! As these tell thee,  
all

Was long since planned. Our Druses are  
enough

To crush this handful: the Venetians  
land

Even now in our behalf. Loys, we part.  
Thou, serving much, wouldst fain have  
served me more;

It might not be. I thank thee. As thou  
hearest,

We are a separated tribe: farewell!



## THE RETURN OF THE DRUSES

[ACT IV

*Loys.* Oh where will truth be found now? Canst thou so belie the Druses? Do they share thy crime?

Those thou professest of our Breton stock, Are partners with thee? Why, I saw but now

Khalil, my friend: he spoke with me—no word

Of this! and Anael—whom I love, and who

Loves me—she spoke no word of this.

*Dja.* Poor boy! Anael, who loves thee? Khalil, fast thy friend?

We, offsets from a wandering Count of Dreux?

No: older than the oldest, princelier Than Europe's princeliest race, our tribe: enough

For thee, that on our simple faith we found

A monarchy to shame your monarchies At their own trick and secret of success.

The child of this our tribe shall laugh upon The palace-step of him whose life ere night

Is forfeit, as that child shall know, and yet

Shall laugh there! What, we Druses wait forsooth

The kind interposition of a boy—Can only save ourselves if thou concede:

—Khalil admire thee? He is my right-hand,

My delegate!—Anael accept thy love?

She is my bride!

*Loys.* Thy bride? She one of them?

*Dja.* My bride!

*Loys.* And she retains her glorious eyes!

She, with those eyes, has shared this miscreant's guilt!

Ah—who but she directed me to find Djabal within the Prefect's chamber?

Khalil Bade me seek Djabal there, too. All is truth.

What spoke the Prefect worse of them than this?

Did the Church ill to institute long since Perpetual warfare with such serpentry?

And I—have I desired to shift my part, Evade my share in her design? 'Tis well.

*Dja.* Loys, I wronged thee—but unwittingly:

I never thought there was in thee a virtue That could attach itself to what thou deemest

A race below thine own. I wronged thee, Loys,

But that is over: all is over now, Save the protection I ensure against

My people's anger. By their Khalif's side, Thou art secure and mayst depart: so, come!

*Loys.* Thy side? I take protection at thy hand?

*Enter other Guards.*

*Guards.* Fly with him! Fly, Sir Loys! 'Tis too true:

And only by his side thou mayst escape. The whole tribe is in full revolt; they flock About the palace—will be here—on thee—

And there are twenty of us, we the Guards O' the Nuncio, to withstand them! Even we

Had stayed to meet our death in ignorance,

But that one Druse, a single faithful Druse, Made known the horror to the Nuncio.

Fly! The Nuncio stands aghast. At least let us

Escape thy wrath, O Hakeem! We are nought

In thy tribe's persecution! [*To Loys.*] Keep by him!

They hail him Hakeem, their dead Prince returned:

He is their God, they shout, and at his beck

Are life and death!

*Loys [springing at the khandjar DJABAL had thrown down, seizes him by the throat].*

Thus I resume by his side am I! Thus I resume my knighthood and its warfare,

Thus end thee, miscreant, in thy pride of place!

Thus art thou caught. Without, thy dupes may cluster:

Friends aid thee, foes avoid thee,—thou art Hakeem,

How say they?—God art thou! but also here

Is the least, youngest, meanest the Church calls

Her servant, and his single arm avails To aid her as she lists. I rise, and thou

Art crushed. Hordes of thy Druses flock without:

Here thou hast me, who represent the Cross,

Honour and Faith, 'gainst Hell, Mahound and thee.

Die! [*DJABAL remains calm.*] Implore my mercy, Hakeem, that my scorn

May help me! Nay, I cannot ply thy trade;

I am no Druse, no stabber: and thine eye, Thy form, are too much as they were—my friend

Had such. Speak! Beg for mercy at my foot!

[*DJABAL still silent.*]

ACT IV]

Heaven could not ask so much of me—  
not, sure,  
So much. I cannot kill him so.

[*After a pause.*] Thou art  
Strong in thy cause, then—dost outbrave  
us, then.

Heardst thou that one of thine accomplices,

Thy very people, has accused thee? Meet  
His charge! Thou hast not even slain the  
Prefect

As thy own vile creed warrants. Meet that  
Druse!

Come with me and disprove him—be thou  
tried

By him, nor seek appeal! Promise me this,  
Or I will do God's office. What, shalt thou  
Boast of assassins at thy beck, yet truth  
Want even an executioner? Consent,  
Or I will strike—look in my face—I will!

*Dja.* Give me again my khandjar, if  
thou darest! [*Loys gives it.*]

Let but one Druse accuse me, and I plunge,  
This home. A Druse betray me? Let us  
go!

[*Aside.*] Who has betrayed me?

[*Shouts without.*]

Hearst thou? I hear  
No plainer than long years ago I heard  
That shout—but in no dream now. They  
return!

Wilt thou be leader with me, Loys? Well.

ACT V

*The Uninitiated Druses, filling the hall tumultuously, and speaking together.*

Here flock we, obeying the summons.  
Lo, Hakeem hath appeared, and the Prefect  
is dead, and we return to Lebanon!  
My manufacture of goats' fleece must, I  
doubt, soon fall away there. Come, old  
Nasif—link thine arm in mine—we fight,  
if needs be. Come, what is a great fight-  
word?—"Lebanon?" (My daughter—my  
daughter!)—But is Khalil to have the office  
of Hamza?—Nay, rather, if he be wise,  
the monopoly of henna and cloves. Where  
is Hakeem?—The only prophet I ever saw,  
prophesied at Cairo once, in my youth: a  
little black Copht, dressed all in black too,  
with a great stripe of yellow cloth flapping  
down behind him like the back-fin of a  
water-serpent. Is this he? Biamrallah!  
Biamreh! HAKEEM!

*Enter the NUNCIO, with Guards.*

*Nuncio* [*to his Attendants*]. Hold both,  
the sorcerer and this accomplice  
Ye talk of, that accuseth him! And tell  
Sir Loys he is mine, the Church's hope:  
Bid him approve himself our Knight in-  
deed!

THE RETURN OF THE DRUSES

Lo, this black disemboгуing of the Isle!  
[*To the Druses.*] Ah children, what a sight  
for these old eyes

That kept themselves alive this voyage  
through

To smile their very last on you! I came  
To gather one and all you wandering  
sheep

Into my fold, as though a father came . . .  
As though, in coming, a father should . . .

[*To his Guards.*] (Ten, twelve,  
—Twelve guards of you, and not an out-  
let? None?

The wizards stop each avenue? Keep  
close!)

[*To the Druses.*] As if one came to a son's  
house, I say,

So did I come—no guard with me—to  
find . . .

Alas—alas!

*A Druse.* Who is the old man?

*Another.* Oh, ye are to shout!  
Children, he styles you.

*Druses.* Ay, the Prefect's slain!  
Glory to the Khalif, our Father!

*Nuncio.* Even so  
I find, (ye prompt aright) your father  
slain.

While most he plotted for your good, that  
father

(Alas, how kind, ye never knew)—lies  
slain.

[*Aside.*] (And hell's worm gnaw the gloz-  
ing knave—with me,

For being duped by his cajoleries!  
Are these the Christians? These the docile  
crew

My bezants went to make me Bishop  
o'er?)

[*To his Attendants, who whisper.*] What  
say ye does this wizard style himself?

Hakeem? Biamallah? The third Fatem-  
ite?

What is this jargon? He—the insane  
Khalif,

Dead near three hundred years ago, come  
back

In flesh and blood again?

*Druses.* He mutters! Hear ye?  
He is blaspheming Hakeem. The old man  
Is our dead Prefect's friend. Tear him!

*Nuncio.* Ye dare not.  
I stand here with my five-and-seventy  
years,

The Patriarch's power behind me, God's  
above.

Those years have witnessed sin enough;  
ere now

Misguided men arose against their lords,  
And found excuse; but ye, to be enslaved  
By sorceries, cheats—alas! the same tricks,  
tried

On my poor children in this nook o' the  
earth,

## THE RETURN OF THE DRUSES

[ACT V

Could triumph, that have been successively  
Exploded, laughed to scorn, all nations  
through:

'*Romaioi, Ioudaioite kai proselutoi,*  
'Cretes and Arabians'—you are duped  
the last.

Said I, refrain from tearing me? I pray ye  
Tear me! Shall I return to tell the Patriarch

That so much love was wasted—every gift  
Rejected, from his benison I brought,  
Down to the galley-full of bezants, sunk  
An hour since at the harbour's mouth, by  
that . . .

That . . . never will I speak his hated name!  
[To his Servants.] What was the name his  
fellow slip-fetter

Called their arch-wizard by? [*They whisper.*] Oh, Djabal was't?

*Druses.* But how a sorcerer? false  
wherein?

*Nuncio.* (Ay, Djabal!)

How false? Ye know not, Djabal has confessed . . .

Nay, that by tokens found on him we  
learn . . .

What I sailed hither solely to divulge—  
How by his spells the demons were allured  
To seize you: not that these be aught save  
lies

And mere illusions. Is this clear? I say,  
By measures such as these, he would have  
led you

Into a monstrous ruin: follow ye?

Say, shall ye perish for his sake, my sons?  
*Druses.* Hark ye!

*Nuncio*—Be of one privilege amerced?  
No! Infinite the Patriarch's mercies are!  
No! With the Patriarch's licence, still I  
bid

Tear him to pieces who misled you! Haste!

*Druses.* The old man's beard shakes,  
and his eyes are white fire! After all, I  
know nothing of Djabal beyond what Karshook  
says; he knows but what Khalil  
says, who knows just what Djabal says  
himself. Now, the little Copht Prophet,  
I saw at Cairo in my youth, began by promising  
each bystander three full measures  
of wheat . . .

*Enter KHALIL and the initiated DRUSES.*

*Kha.* Venice and her deliverance are at  
hand:

Their fleet stands through the harbour.  
Hath he slain

The Prefect yet? Is Djabal's change come,  
yet?

*Nuncio* [to Attendants]. What's this of  
Venice? Who's this boy?

[Attendants whisper.] One Khalil?  
Djabal's accomplice, Loys called, but now,

The only Druse, save 'Djabal's self, to  
fear?

[*To the Druses.*] I cannot hear ye with  
these aged ears:

Is it so? Ye would have my troops assist?  
Doth he abet him in his sorceries?

Down with the cheat, guards, as my children  
bid!

[*They spring at KHALIL; as he beats them back,*

Stay! No more bloodshed! Spare deluded  
youth!

Whom seek'st thou? (I will teach him)—  
whom, my child?

Thou know'st not what these know, what  
these declare.

I am an old man as thou seest—have don  
With life; and what should move me but  
the truth?

Art thou the only fond one of thy tribe?  
'Tis I interpret for thy tribe.

*Kha.* Oh, this

Is the expected Nuncio! *Druses*, hear—  
Endure ye this? Unworthy to partake

The glory Hakeem gains you! While I  
speak,

The ships touch land: who makes for  
Lebanon?

They plant the winged lion in these halls!  
*Nuncio* [*aside*]. If it be true! Venice?

Oh, never true!

Yet Venice would so gladly thwart our  
Knights,

So fain get footing here, stand close by  
Rhodes!

Oh, to be duped this way!  
*Kha.* Ere he appear

And lead you gloriously, repent, I say!  
*Nuncio* [*aside*]. Nor any way to stretch

the arch-wizard stark  
Ere the Venetians come? Cut off the head,

The trunk were easily stilled. [*To the  
Druses.*] He? Bring him forth!

Since so you needs will have it, I assent.  
You'd judge him, say you, on the spot—  
confound

The sorcerer in his very circle? Where's  
Our short black-bearded sallow friend  
who swore

He'd earn the Patriarch's guerdon by one  
stab?

Bring Djabal forth at once!  
*Druses.* Ay, bring him forth!

The Patriarch drives a trade in oil and  
silk,

And we're the Patriarch's children—true  
men, we!

Where is the glory? Show us all the glory!  
*Kha.* You dare not so insult him!

What, not see . . .

(I tell thee, Nuncio, these are uninstructed,  
Untrusting: they know nothing of our  
Khalil!)

—Not see that if he lets a doubt arise

ACT V]

\*Tis but to give yourselves the chance of seeming  
To have some influence in your own Return!  
That all may say ye would have trusted him  
Without the all-convincing glory—ay,  
And did! Embrace the occasion, friends!  
For, think—  
What wonder when his change takes place? But now  
For your sakes, he should not reveal himself.  
No: could I ask and have, I would not ask  
The change yet!

*Enter DJABAL and LOYS.*

Spite of all, reveal thyself!  
I had said, pardon them for me—for Anael—  
For our sakes pardon these besotted men—  
Ay, for thine own—they hurt not thee!  
Yet now  
One thought swells in me and keeps down all else.  
This Nuncio couples shame with thee, has called  
Imposture thy whole course, all bitter things  
Has said: he is but an old fretful man!  
Hakeem—nay, I must call thee Hakeem now—  
Reveal thyself! See! Where is Anael? See!

*Loys* [to DJABAL]. Here are thy people.  
Keep thy word to me!

*Dja.* Who of my people hath accused me?

*Nuncio.* So!

So this is Djabal, Hakeem, and what not?  
A fit deed, Loys, for thy first Knight's day!  
May it be augury of thy after-life!  
Ever prove truncheon of the Church as now

That, Nuncio of the Patriarch, having charge

Of the Isle here, I claim thee [turning to DJABAL] as these bid me,

Forfeit for murder done thy lawful prince,  
Thou conjurer that peep'st and mutterest!

Why should I hold thee from their hands? (Spells, children?)

But hear how I dispose of all his spells! Thou art a prophet?—wouldst entice thy tribe

From me?—thou workest miracles? (Attend!)

Let him but move me with his spells! I, Nuncio . . .

*Dja.* . . . Which how thou camest to be, I say not now,

Though I have also been at Stamboul, Lukel!

THE RETURN OF THE DRUSES

Ply thee with spells, forsooth! What need of spells?

If Venice, in her Admiral's person, stoop  
To ratify thy compact with her foe,  
The Hospitallers, for this Isle—withdraw  
Her warrant of the deed which reinstates  
My people in their freedom, tricked away  
By him I slew,—refuse to convoy us  
To Lebanon and keep the Isle we leave—  
Then will be time to try what spells can do!  
Dost thou dispute the Republic's power?

*Nuncio.* Lo ye!

He tempts me too, the wily exorcist!

No! The renowned Republic was and is  
The Patriarch's friend: 'tis not for court-  
ing Venice

That I—that these implore thy blood of me.

Lo ye, the subtle miscreant! Ha, so subtle?

Ye, Druses, hear him. Will ye be deceived?  
How he evades me! Where's the miracle

He works? I bid him to the proof—fish up  
Your galley-full of bezants that he sank!

That were a miracle! One miracle!  
Enough of trifling, for it chafes my years.

I am the Nuncio, Druses! I stand forth  
To save you from the good Republic's

rage  
When she shall find her fleet was sum-  
moned here

To aid the mummeries of a knave like this.  
[As the Druses hesitate, his Attendants

whisper.

Ah, well suggested! Why, we hold the while

One who, his close confederate till now,  
Confesses Djabal at the last a cheat,

And every miracle a cheat. Who throws me

His head? I make three offers, once I offer,—

And twice . . .

*Dja.* Let who moves perish at my foot!

*Kha.* Thanks, Hakeem, thanks! Oh, Anael, Maani,

Why tarry they?  
*Druses* [to each other]. He can! He can!

Live fire—  
[To the NUNCIO.] I say he can, old man!

Thou know'st him not.

Live fire like that thou seest now in his eyes,

Plays fawning round him. See! The change begins.

All the brow lightens as he lifts his arm.  
Look not at me! It was not I!

*Dja.* What Druse  
Accused me, as he saith? I bid each bone

Crumble within that Druse! None, Loys, none

Of my own people, as thou said'st, have raised

# THE RETURN OF THE DRUSES

[ACT V

A voice against me.

*Nuncio* [aside]. Venice to come! Death!

*Dja.* [continuing]. Confess and go unscathed, however false!

Seest thou my Druses, Luke? I would submit

To thy pure malice did one Druse confess! How said I, Loys?

*Nuncio* [to his Attendants who whisper].

Ah, ye counsel so?

[Aloud.] Bring in the witness, then, who, first of all,

Disclosed the treason! Now I have thee wizard!

Ye hear that? If one speaks, he bids you tear him

Joint after joint: well then, one does speak! One,

Befooled by Djabal, even as yourselves,

But who hath voluntarily proposed

To expiate, by confessing thus, the fault

Of having trusted him.

[They bring in a veiled Druse.

*Loys.* Now, Djabal, now!

*Nuncio.* Friend, Djabal fronts thee!

Make a ring, sons. Speak!

Expose this Djabal—what he was, and how:

The wiles he used, the aims he cherished: all,

Explicitly as late 'twas spoken to these

My servants: I absolve and pardon thee.

*Loys.* Thou hast the dagger ready,

Djabal?

*Dja.*

Speak,

Recreant!

*Druses.* Stand back, fool! farther!

Suddenly

You shall see some huge serpent glide from under

The empty vest, or down will thunder crash!

Back, Khalil!

*Kha.* I go back? Thus go I back!

[To ANAEL.] Unveil! Nay, thou shalt face the Khalil! Thus!

[He tears away ANAEL'S veil; DJABAL folds his arms and bows his head; the Druses fall back; LOYS springs from the side of DJABAL and the NUNCIO.

*Loys.* Then she was true—she only of them all!

True to her eyes—may keep those glorious eyes,

And now be mine, once again mine! Oh, Anael!

Dared I think thee a partner in his crime—That blood could soil that hand? nay, 'tis

mine—Anael,

—Not mine?—who offer thee before all these

My heart, my sword, my name—so thou wilt say

That Djabal, who affirms thou art his bride,

Lies—say but that he lies!

*Dja.*

Thou, Anael?

*Loys.* Nay, Djabal, nay, one chance for me—the last!

Thou hast had every other; thou hast spoken

Days, nights, what falsehood listed thee—let me

Speak first now; I will speak now!

*Nuncio.*

*Loys,* pause!

Thou art the Duke's son, Bretagne's choicest stock,

Loys of Dreux, God's sepulchre's first sword:

This wilt thou spit on, this degrade, this trample

To earth?

*Loys* [to ANAEL]. Who had foreseen that one day Loys

Would stake these gifts against some other good

In the whole world? I give thee! I would

My strong will might bestow real shape on them,

That I might see, with my own eyes, thy foot

Tread on their very neck! 'Tis not by gifts I put aside this Djabal: we will stand—

We do stand, see, two men! Djabal, stand forth!

Who's worth her, I or thou? I—who for Anael

Uprightly, purely kept my way, the long True way—left thee each by-path, boldly

lived

Without the lies and blood,—or thou, or thou?

Me! love me, Anael! Leave the blood and him!

[To DJABAL.] Now speak—now, quick on this that I have said,—

Thou with the blood, speak if thou art a man!

*Dja.* [to ANAEL]. And was it thou betrayedst me? 'Tis well!

I have deserved this of thee, and submit. Nor 'tis much evil thou inflictest: life

Ends here. The cedars shall not wave for us:

For there was crime, and must be punishment.

See fate! By thee I was seduced, by thee I perish: yet do I—can I repent?

I with my Arab instinct, thwarted ever

By my Frank policy,—and with, in turn, My Frank brain, thwarted by my Arab

heart—

While these remained in equipoise, I lived

—Nothing; had either been predominant, As a Frank schemer or an Arab mystic,

I had been something;—now, each has destroyed

The other—and behold, from out their  
crash,

A third and better nature rises up—  
My mere man's-nature! And I yield to it:  
I love thee, I who did not love before!  
*An. Djabal!*

*Dja.* It seemed love, but it was  
not love:

How could I love while thou adorest me?  
Now thou despisest, art above me so  
immeasurably! Thou, no other, doomest  
My death now; this my steel shall execute  
Thy judgment; I shall feel thy hand in it.  
Oh luxury to worship, to submit,  
Transcended, doomed to death by thee!

*An.* My Djabal!

*Dja.* Dost hesitate? I force thee then.

Approach,

Druses! for I am out of reach of fate;  
No further evil waits me. Speak the  
doom!

Hear, Druses, and hear, Nuncio, and hear,  
Loys!

*An. HAKEEM!* [*She falls dead.*  
[*The Druses scream, grovelling before*

*him.*  
*Druses.* Ah Hakeem!—not on  
me thy wrath!

Biamrallah, pardon! never doubted I!

Ha, dog, how sayest thou?

[*They surround and seize the NUNCIO and*  
*his Guards. LOYS flings himself upon*  
*the body of ANAEL, on which DJABAL*  
*continues to gaze as stupefied.*

*Nuncio.* Caitiffs! Have ye eyes?

Whips, racks should teach you! What,  
his fools? his dupes?

Leave me! Unhand me!

*Kha. [approaching DJABAL timidly].*

Save her for my sake!

She was already thine; she would have  
shared

To-day thine exaltation: think, this day  
Her hair was plaited thus because of thee!  
Yes, feel the soft bright hair—feel!

*Nuncio [struggling with those who have*  
*seized him].* What, because

His leman dies for him? You think it hard  
To die? Oh, would you were at Rhodes,  
and choice

Of deaths should suit you!

*Kha. [bending over ANAEL'S body].*

Just restore her life!

So little does it! there—the eyelids  
tremble!

'Twas not my breath that made them: and  
the lips

Move of themselves. I could restore her  
life!

Hakeem, we have forgotten—have pre-  
sumed

On our free converse: we are better taught.  
See, I kiss—how I kiss thy garment's hem  
For her! She kisses it—Oh, take her deed

In mine! Thou dost believe now,  
Anaël?—See,

She smiles! Were her lips open o'er the  
teeth

Thus, when I spoke first? She believes in  
thee!

Go not without her to the cedars, lord!  
Or leave us both—I cannot go alone!

I have obeyed thee, if I dare so speak:  
Hath Hakeem thus forgot all Djabal

knew?

Thou feelest then my tears fall hot and fast  
Upon thy hand, and yet thou speakest not?  
Ere the Venetian trumpet sound—ere thou  
Exalt thyself, O Hakeem! save thou her!

*Nuncio.* And the accursed Republic will  
arrive

And find me in their toils—dead, very like.  
Under their feet!

What way—not one way yet  
To foil them? None?

[*Observing DJABAL'S face.*

What ails the Khalif? Ah,  
That ghastly face! A way to foil them  
yet!

[*To the Druses.*] Look to your Khalif,  
Druses! Is that face

God Hakeem's? Where is triumph,—  
where is . . . what

Said he of exaltation—hath he promised  
So much to-day? Why then, exalt thyself!

Cast off that husk, thy form, set free thy  
soul

In splendour! Now, bear witness! here I  
stand—

I challenge him exalt himself, and I  
Become, for that, a Druse like all of you!

*The Druses.* Exalt thyself! Exalt thy-  
self, O Hakeem!

*Dja. [advances].* I can confess now all  
from first to last.

There is no longer shame for me. I am . . .

[*Here the Venetian trumpet sounds: the*  
*Druses shout, DJABAL'S eye catches*  
*the expression of those about him, and,*  
*as the old dream comes back, he is*  
*again confident and inspired.*

—Am I not Hakeem? And ye would have  
crawled

But yesterday within these impure courts  
Where now ye stand erect! Not grand  
enough?

—What more could be conceded to such  
beasts

As all of you, so sunk and base as you,  
Than a mere man? A man among such

beasts

Was miracle enough: yet him you doubt.  
Him you forsake, him fain would you

destroy—

With the Venetians at your gate, the  
Nuncio

Thus—(see the baffled hypocrite!) and,  
best,

## THE RETURN OF THE DRUSES

[ACT V

The Prefect there!

*Druses.* No, Hakeem, ever thine!

*Nuncio.* He lies—and twice he lies—and thrice he lies!

Exalt thyself, Mahound! Exalt thyself!

*Dja.* Druses! we shall henceforth be far away—

Out of mere mortal ken—above the cedars—

But we shall see ye go, hear ye return, Repeopling the old solitudes,—through thee,

My Khalil! Thou art full of me: I fill Thee full—my hands thus fill thee! Yesterday,

—Nay, but this morn, I deemed thee ignorant

Of all to do, requiring word of mine To teach it: now, thou hast all gifts in one, With truth and purity go other gifts, All gifts come clustering to that. Go, lead My people home whate'er betide!

[*Turning to the Druses.*] Ye take This Khalil for my delegate? To him Bow as to me? He leads to Lebanon— Ye follow?

*Druses.* We follow! Now exalt thyself!

*Dja.* [*raises LOYS*]. Then to thee, Loys! How I wronged thee, Loys!

Yet, wronged, no less thou shalt have full revenge,

Fit for thy noble self, revenge—and thus, Thou, loaded with such wrongs, the princely soul,

The first sword of Christ's sepulchre— thou shalt

Guard Khalil and my Druses home again! Justice no less, God's justice and no more,

For those I leave! To seeking this, devote Some few days out of thy Knight's brilliant life:

And, this obtained them, leave their Lebanon,

My Druses' blessing in thine ears—(they shall

Bless thee with blessing sure to have its way)

—One cedar-blossom in thy ducal cap, One thought of Anael in thy heart,—perchance,

One thought of him who thus, to bid thee speed,

His last word to the living speaks! This done,

Resume thy course, and, first amidst the first

In Europe, take my heart along with thee! Go boldly, go serenely, go augustly—

What shall withstand thee then?

[*He bends over ANAEL.*] And last to thee! Ah, did I dream I was to have, this day,

Exalted thee? A vain dream: hast thou not Won greater exaltation? What remains

But press to thee, exalt myself to thee? Thus I exalt myself, set free my soul!

[*He stabs himself. As he falls, supported by KHALIL and LOYS, the Venetians enter; the ADMIRAL advances.*

*Admiral.* God and St. Mark for Venice! Plant the Lion!

[*At the clash of the planted standard, the Druses shout and move tumultuously forward, LOYS drawing his sword.*

*Dja.* [*leading them a few steps between KHALIL and LOYS*]. On to the Mountain! At the Mountain, Druses!

[*Dies.*

## A BLOT IN THE 'SCUTCHEON

### A TRAGEDY

1843

#### PERSONS

MILDRED TRESHAM,  
GUENDOLEN TRESHAM,  
THOROLD, Earl Tresham.

AUSTIN TRESHAM,  
HENRY, Earl Mertoun,  
GERARD, and other retainers of Lord Tresham.

TIME, 17—

#### ACT I

SCENE I.—*The interior of a lodge in LORD TRESHAM'S park. Many Retainers crowded at the window, supposed to command a view of the entrance to his mansion. GERARD, the warrener, his back to a table on which are flagons, etc.*

1st Ret. Ay, do! push, friends, and then you'll push down me!

—What for? Does any hear a runner's foot

Or, a steed's trample or a coach-wheel's cry?

Is the Earl come or his least poursuivant? But there's no breeding in a man of you

Save Gerard yonder: here's a half-place yet,

Old Gerard!

Ger. Save your courtesies, my friend. Here is my place.

*2nd Ret.* Now, Gerard, out with it!  
What makes you sullen, this of all the  
days  
I' the year? To-day, that young rich  
bouniful  
Handsome Earl Mertoun, whom alone  
they match  
With our Lord Tresham through the  
country-side,  
Is coming here in utmost bravery  
To ask our master's sister's hand?

*Ger.* What then? What then?

*2nd Ret.* What then? Why, you, she  
speaks to, if she meets  
Your worship, smiles on as you hold apart  
The boughs to let her through her forest  
walks,  
You, always favourite for your no-deserts,  
You've heard, these three days, how Earl  
Mertoun sues  
To lay his heart and house and broad lands  
too  
At Lady Mildred's feet: and while we  
squeeze  
Ourselves into a mousehole lest we miss  
One congee of the least page in his train,  
You sit o' one side—'there's the Earl,'  
say I—

'What then?' say you!

*3rd Ret.* I'll wager he has let  
Both swans he tamed for Lady Mildred  
swim

Over the falls and gain the river!

*Ger.* Ralph,  
Is not to-morrow my inspecting-day  
For you and for your hawks?

*4th Ret.* Let Gerard be!  
He's coarse-grained, like his carved black  
cross-bow stock.

Ha, look now, while we squabble with  
him, look!

Well done, now—is not this beginning,  
now,  
To purpose?

*1st Ret.* Our retainers look as fine—  
That's comfort. Lord, how Richard holds  
himself

With his white staff! Will not a knave  
behind

Prick him upright?

*4th Ret.* He's only bowing, fool!  
The Earl's man bent us lower by this  
much.

*1st Ret.* That's comfort. Here's a very  
cavalcade!

*3rd Ret.* I don't see wherefore Richard,  
and his troop

Of silk and silver varlets there, should find  
Their perfumed selves so indispensable  
On high days, holidays! Would it so dis-  
grace

Our family, if I, for instance, stood—  
In my right hand a cast of Swedish hawks,  
A leash of greyhounds in my left?—

*Ger.* —With Hugh

The logman for supporter, in his right  
The bill-hook, in his left the brushwood-  
shears!

*3rd Ret.* Out on you, crab! What next,  
what next? The Earl!

*1st Ret.* Oh Walter, groom, our horses,  
do they match

The Earl's? Alas, that first pair of the  
six—

They paw the ground—Ah Walter! and  
that brute

Just on his haunches by the wheel!

*6th Ret.* Ay—ay!

You, Philip, are a special hand, I hear,  
At soups and sauces: what's a horse to  
you?

D'ye mark that beast they've slid into the  
midst

So cunningly?—then, Philip, mark this  
further;

No leg has he to stand on!

*1st Ret.* No? That's comfort.

*2nd Ret.* Peace, Cook! The Earl de-  
scends. Well, Gerard, see

The Earl at least! Come, there's a proper  
man,

I hope! Why, Ralph, no falcon, Pole or  
Swede,

Has got a starrier eye.

*3rd Ret.* His eyes are blue:

But leave my hawks alone!

*4th Ret.* So young, and yet

So tall and shapely!

*5th Ret.* Here's Lord Tresham's  
self!

There now—there's what a nobleman  
should be!

He's older, graver, loftier, he's more like  
A House's head.

*2nd Ret.* But you'd not have a boy  
—And what's the Earl beside?—possess  
too soon

That stateliness?

*1st Ret.* Our master takes his hand—  
Richard and his white staff are on the  
move—

Back fall our people—(tsh!—there's  
Timothy

Sure to get tangled in his ribbon-ties,  
And Peter's cursed rosette's a-coming off!)

—At last I see our lord's back and his  
friend's;

And the whole beautiful bright company  
Close round them—in they go! [*Jumping  
down from the window-bench, and  
making for the table and its jugs.*]

Good health, long life,  
Great joy to our Lord Tresham and his  
House!

*6th Ret.* My father drove his father first  
to court,

After his marriage-day—ay, did he!

*2nd Ret.* God bless



# A BLOT IN THE 'SCUTCHEON

[ACT I

Lord Tresham, Lady Mildred, and the Earl!

Here, Gerard, reach your beaker!

*Ger.* Drink, my boys! Don't mind me—all's not right about me—drink!

*2nd Ret. [aside].* He's vexed, now, that he let the show escape!  
[To GERARD.] Remember that the Earl returns this way.

*Ger.* That way?

*2nd Ret.* Just so.

*Ger.* Then my way's here.

*2nd Ret.* Old Gerard  
Will die soon—mind, I said it! He was used

To care about the pitifullest thing  
That touched the House's honour, not an eye

But his could see wherein: and on a cause  
Of scarce a quarter this importance,  
*Gerard*

Fairly had fretted flesh and bone away  
In cares that this was right, nor that was wrong,

Such point decorous, and such square by rule—

He knew such niceties, no herald more:  
And now—you see his humour: die he will!

*2nd Ret.* God help him! Who's for the great servants'-hall  
To hear what's going on inside? They'd follow

Lord Tresham into the saloon.

*3rd Ret.* I!—

*4th Ret.* I!—  
Leave Frank alone for catching, at the door,

Some hint of how the parley goes inside!  
Prosperity to the great House once more!  
Here's the last drop!

*1st Ret.* Have at you! Boys, hurrah!

SCENE II.—A Saloon in the Mansion.

*Enter* LORD TRESHAM, LORD MERTOUN, AUSTIN, and GUENDOLEN.

*Tresh.* I welcome you, Lord Mertoun, yet once more,

To this ancestral roof of mine. Your name—Noble among the noblest in itself,  
Yet taking in your person, fame avers,  
New price and lustre,—(as that gem you wear,

Transmitted from a hundred knightly breasts,

Fresh chased and set and fixed by its last lord,

Seems to re-kindle at the core)—your name  
Would win you welcome!—

*Mer.*

Thanks!

*Tresh.*

—But add to that,  
The worthiness and grace and dignity  
Of your proposal for uniting both  
Our Houses even closer than respect  
Unites them now—add these, and you must grant

One favour more, nor that the least,—to think

The welcome I should give;—'tis given!  
My lord,

My only brother, Austin: he's the king's.  
Our cousin, Lady Guendolen—betrothed  
To Austin: all are yours.

*Mer.*

I thank you—less  
For the expressed commendings which  
your seal,

And only that, authenticates—forbids  
My putting from me . . . to my heart I take

Your praise . . . but praise less claims my gratitude,

Than the indulgent insight it implies  
Of what must needs be uppermost with one

Who comes, like me, with the bare leave to ask,

In weighed and measured unimpassioned words,

A gift, which, if as calmly 'tis denied,  
He must withdraw, content upon his cheek,

Despair within his soul. That I dare ask  
Firmly, near boldly, near with confidence  
That gift, I have to thank you. Yes, Lord

Tresham,

I love your sister—as you'd have one love  
That lady . . . oh more, more I love her!

*Wealth,*

Rank, all the world thinks me, they're  
yours, you know,

To hold or part with, at your choice—but grant

My true self, me without a rood of land,  
A piece of gold, a name of yesterday,  
Grant me that lady, and you . . . Death or life?

*Guen. [apart to AUSTIN].* Why, this is loving, Austin!

*Aus.*

He's so young!

*Guen.* Young? Old enough, I think, to half surmise

He never had obtained an entrance here  
Were all this fear and trembling needed.

*Aus.*

Hush!

He reddens.

*Guen.*

Mark him, Austin; that's true love!

Ours must begin again.

*Tresh.*

We'll sit, my lord.  
Ever with best desert goes diffidence.

I may speak plainly nor be misconceived.  
That I am wholly satisfied with you  
On this occasion, when a falcon's eye

sc. II]

Were dull compared with mine to search  
out faults,  
Is somewhat. Mildred's hand is hers to  
give  
Or to refuse.

*Mer.* But you, you grant my suit?  
I have your word if hers?

*Tresh.* My best of words  
If hers encourage you. I trust it will.  
Have you seen Lady Mildred, by the way?

*Mer.* I . . . I . . . our two demesnes, re-  
membrance, touch;

I have been used to wander carelessly  
After my stricken game: the heron roused  
Deep in my woods, has trailed its broken  
wing

Thro' thickets and glades a mile in yours,—  
or else

Some eyass ill-reclaimed has taken flight  
And lured me after her from tree to tree,  
I marked not whither. I have come upon  
The lady's wondrous beauty unaware,  
And—and then . . . I have seen her.

*Guen.* [aside to AUSTIN]. Note that,  
mode

Of faltering out that, when a lady passed,  
He, having eyes, did see her! You had  
said—

'On such a day I scanned her, head to foot;  
'Observed a red, where red should not  
have been,

'Outside her elbow; but was pleased  
enough

'Upon the whole.' Let such irreverent talk  
Be lessoned for the future!

*Tresh.* What's to say  
May be said briefly. She has never known  
A mother's care; I stand for father too.  
Her beauty is not strange to you, it seems—  
You cannot know the good and tender  
heart,

Its girl's trust and its woman's constancy,  
How pure yet passionate, how calm yet  
kind,

How grave yet joyous, how reserved yet  
free

As light where friends are—how imbued  
with lore

The world most prizes, yet the simplest,  
yet

The . . . one might know I talked of Mil-  
dred—thus

We brothers talk!

*Mer.* I thank you.

*Tresh.* In a word,  
Control's not for this lady; but her wish  
To please me outstrips in its subtlety  
My power of being pleased: herself creates  
The want she means to satisfy. My heart  
Prefers your suit to her as 'twere its own.  
Can I say more?

*Mer.* No more—thanks, thanks  
—no more!

*Tresh.* This matter then discussed . . .

## A BLOT IN THE 'SCUTCHEON

*Mer.* —We'll waste no breath  
On aught less precious. I'm beneath the  
roof

Which holds her: while I thought of that,  
my speech

To you would wander—as it must not do,  
Since as you favour me I stand or fall.  
I pray you suffer that I take my leave!

*Tresh.* With less regret 'tis suffered, that  
again

We meet, I hope, so shortly.

*Mer.* We? again?—  
Ah yes, forgive me—when shall . . . you  
will crown

Your goodness by forthwith apprising me  
When . . . if . . . the lady will appoint a day  
For me to wait on you—and her.

*Tresh.* So soon  
As I am made acquainted with her thoughts  
On your proposal—howsoever they lean—  
A messenger shall bring you the result.

*Mer.* You cannot bind me more to you,  
my lord.

Farewell till we renew . . . I trust, renew  
A converse ne'er to disunite again.

*Tresh.* So may it prove!

*Mer.* You, lady, you,  
sir, take

My humble salutation!

*Guen. and Aus.* Thanks!

*Tresh.* Within there!

[Servants enter. TRESHAM conducts  
MERTOUN to the door. Meantime  
AUSTIN remarks,

Well,  
Here I have an advantage of the Earl,  
Confess now! I'd not think that all was  
safe

Because my lady's brother stood my  
friend!

Why, he makes sure of her—'do you say,  
yes—

'She'll not say, 'no,'—what comes it to  
beside?

I should have prayed the brother, 'speak  
this speech,

'For Heaven's sake urge this on her—put  
in this—

'Forget not, as you'd save me, t'other  
thing,—

'Then set down what she says, and how  
she looks,

'And if she smiles, and' (in an under  
breath)

'Only let her accept me, and do you  
'And all the world refuse me, if you dare!'

*Guen.* That way you'd take, friend  
Austin? What a shame

I was your cousin, tamely from the first  
Your bride, and all this fervour's run to  
waste!

Do you know you speak sensibly to-day?  
The Earl's a fool.

*Aus.* Here's Thorold. Tell him so!

## A BLOT IN THE 'SCUTCHEON

[ACT I

*Tresh.* [returning]. Now, voices, voices!  
'St! the lady's first!  
How seems he?—seems he not . . . come,  
faith give fraud  
The mercy-stroke whenever they engage!  
Down with fraud, up with faith! How  
seems the Earl?  
A name! a blazon! if you knew their worth,  
As you will never! come—the Earl?

*Guen.* He's young.

*Tresh.* What's she? an infant save in  
heart and brain.

Young! Mildred is fourteen, remark!  
And you . . .

Austin, how old is she?

*Guen.* There's tact for you!  
I meant that being young was good excuse  
If one should tax him . . .

*Tresh.* Well?

*Guen.* —With lacking wit.

*Tresh.* He lacked wit? Where might he  
lack wit, so please you?

*Guen.* In standing straighter than the  
steward's rod

And making you the tiresomest harangue,  
Instead of slipping over to my side  
And softly whispering in my ear, 'Sweet  
lady,

'Your cousin there will do me detriment

'He little dreams of: he's absorbed, I see,  
'In my old name and fame—be sure he'll

leave  
'My Mildred, when his best account of  
me

'Is ended, in full confidence I wear

'My grandsire's periwig down either  
cheek.

'I'm lost unless your gentleness vouch-  
safes' . . .

*Tresh.* . . . 'To give a best of best ac-  
counts, yourself,

'Of me and my demerits.' You are right!  
He should have said what now I say for  
him.

Yon golden creature, will you help us all?  
Here's Austin means to vouch for much,  
but you

—You are . . . what Austin only knows!

Come up,

All three of us: she's in the library

No doubt, for the day's wearing fast.  
Precede!

*Guen.* Austin, how we must—!

*Tresh.* Must what? Must speak truth,  
Malignant tongue! Detect one fault in  
him!

I challenge you!

*Guen.* Witchcraft's a fault in him,  
For you're bewitched.

*Tresh.* What's urgent we obtain  
Is, that she soon receive him—say, to-  
morrow—

Next day at furthest.

*Guen.* Ne'er instruct me!

*Tresh.* Come!  
—He's out of your good graces, since for-  
sooth,  
He stood not as he'd carry us by storm  
With his perfections! You're for the com-  
posed  
Manly assured becoming confidence!  
—Get her to say, 'to-morrow,' and I'll  
give you . . .  
I'll give you black Urganda, to be spoiled  
With petting and snail-paces. Will you?  
Come!

SCENE III.—MILDRED'S chamber. A  
painted window overlooks the park.  
MILDRED and GUENDOLEN.

*Guen.* Now, Mildred, spare those pains.  
I have not left

Our talkers in the library, and climbed  
The wearisome ascent to this your bower  
In company with you,—I have not  
dared . . .

Nay, worked such prodigies as sparing  
you

Lord Mertoun's pedigree before the flood,  
Which Thorold seemed in very act to tell

—Or bringing Austin to pluck up that  
most

Firm-rooted heresy—your suitor's eyes,  
He would maintain, were grey instead of

blue—  
I think I brought him to contrition!—

Well,  
I have not done such things, (all to deserve  
A minute's quiet cousin's talk with you,)

To be dismissed so coolly.

*Mil.* Guendolen!  
What have I done? what could suggest . . .

*Guen.* There, there!  
Do I not comprehend you'd be alone

To throw those testimonies in a heap,  
Thorold's enlargings, Austin's brevities,

With that poor silly heartless Guendolen's  
Ill-timed misplaced attempted smart-  
nesses—

And sift their sense out? now, I come to  
spare you

Nearly a whole night's labour. Ask and  
have!

Demand, be answered! Lack I ears and  
eyes?

Am I perplexed which side of the rock-  
table

The Conqueror dined on when he landed  
first,

Lord Mertoun's ancestor was bidden  
take—

The bow-hand or the arrow-hand's great  
meed?

Mildred, the Earl has soft blue eyes!  
*Mil.* My brother—

Did he . . . you said that he received him  
well?

sc. III]

*Guen.* If I said only 'well' I said not much.

Oh, stay—which brother?

*Mil.* Thorold! who—who else?

*Guen.* Thorold (a secret) is too proud by half,—

Nay, hear me out—with us he's, even gentler

Than we are with our birds. Of this great House

The least retainer that e'er caught his glance

Would die for him, real dying—no mere talk:

And in the world, the court, if men would cite

The perfect spirit of honour, Thorold's name

Rises of its clear nature to their lips.

But he should take men's homage, trust in it,

And care no more about what drew it down.

He has desert, and that, acknowledgment; Is he content?

*Mil.* You wrong him, Guendolen.

*Guen.* He's proud, confess; so proud with brooding o'er

The light of his interminable line,

An ancestry with men all paladins,

And women all . . .

*Mil.* Dear Guendolen, 'tis late! When yonder purple pane the climbing

moon

Pierces, I know 'tis midnight.

*Guen.* Well, that Thorold Should rise up from such musings and receive

One come audaciously to graft himself Into this peerless stock, yet find no

flaw,

No slightest spot in such an one . . .

*Mil.* Who finds A spot in Mertoun?

*Guen.* Not your brother; therefore, Not the whole world.

*Mil.* I am weary, Guendolen. Bear with me!

*Guen.* I am foolish.

*Mil.* Oh no, kind! But I would rest.

*Guen.* Good night and rest to you! I said how gracefully his mantle lay

Beneath the rings of his light hair?

*Mil.* Brown hair? *Guen.* Brown? why, it is brown: how could you know that?

*Mil.* How? did not you—Oh, Austin 'twas, declared

His hair was light, not brown—my head!—and look,

The moon-beam purpling the dark chamber! Sweet,

Good night!

## A BLOOT IN THE 'SCUTCHEON

*Guen.* Forgive me—sleep the soundlier for me!

[*Going, she turns suddenly.*

*Mildred!* Perdition! all's discovered! Thorold finds

—That the Earl's greatest of all grandmothers

Was grander daughter still—to that fair dame

Whose garter slipped down at the famous dance!

*[Goes.] Mil.* Is she—can she be really gone at last?

My heart! I shall not reach the window. Needs

Must I have sinned much, so to suffer.

[*She lifts the small lamp which is suspended before the Virgin's image in the window, and places it by the purple pane.*

There!

[*She returns to the seat in front.* Mildred and Mertoun! Mildred, with consent

Of all the world and Thorold, Mertoun's bride!

Too late! 'Tis sweet to think of, sweeter still

To hope for, that this blessed end soothes up The curse of the beginning; but I know

It comes too late: 'twill sweetest be of all To dream my soul away and die upon.

[*A noise without.* The voice! Oh why, why glided sin the

snake

Into the paradise Heaven meant us both? [The window opens softly. A low voice sings.

There's a woman like a dew-drop, she's so purer than the purest;

And her noble heart's 'the noblest, yes, and her sure faith's the surest:

And her eyes are dark and humid, like the depth on depth of lustrous

Hid i' the harebell, while her tresses, sunnier than the wild-grape cluster,

Gush in golden-tinted plenty down her neck's rose-misted marble:

Then her voice's music . . . call it the well's bubbling, the bird's warble!

[A figure wrapped in a mantle appears at the window.

And this woman says, 'My days were sunless and my nights were moonless,

'Parched the pleasant April herbage, and the lark's heart's outbreak tuneless,

'If you loved me not!' And! who—(ah, for words of flame!) adore her,

Who am mad to lay my spirit prostrate palpably before her—

[He enters, approaches her seat, and bends over her.

# A BLOT IN THE 'SCUTCHEON

[ACT I

*I may enter at her portal soon, as now her  
lattice takes me,  
And by noontide as by midnight make her  
mine, as hers she makes me!*

*[The Earl throws off his slouched hat and  
long cloak.*

My very heart sings, so I sing, Beloved!  
*Mil.* Sit, Henry—do not take my hand!  
*Mer.* 'Tis mine.  
The meeting that appalled us both so  
much

Is ended.  
*Mil.* What begins now?  
*Mer.* Happiness  
Such as the world contains not.

*Mil.* That is it.  
Our happiness would, as you say, exceed  
The whole world's best of blisses: we—  
do we  
Deserve that? Utter to your soul, what  
mine  
Long since, Beloved, has grown used to  
hear,  
Like a death-knell, so much regarded once,  
once,  
And so familiar now; this will not be!

*Mer.* Oh, Mildred, have I met your  
brother's face?  
Compelled myself—if not to speak un-  
truth,  
Yet to disguise, to shun, to put aside  
The truth, as—what had e'er prevailed on  
me  
Save you, to venture? Have I gained at  
last  
Your brother, the one scarer of your  
dreams,  
And waking thoughts' sole apprehension  
too?

Does a new life, like a young sunrise, break  
On the strange unrest of our night, con-  
fused  
With rain and stormy flaw—and will you  
see  
No dripping blossoms, no fire-tinted  
drops  
On each live spray, no vapour steaming up,  
And no expressible glory in the East?  
When I am by you, to be ever by you,  
When I have won you and may worship  
you,

Oh, Mildred, can you say 'this will not  
be'?

*Mil.* Sin has surprised us, so will pun-  
ishment.

*Mer.* No—me alone, who sinned  
alone!

*Mil.* The night  
You likened our past life to—was it storm  
Throughout to you then, Henry?

*Mer.* Of your life  
I spoke—what am I, what my life, to  
waste

A thought about when you are by me?—  
you

It was, I said my folly called the storm  
And pulled the night upon. 'Twas day  
with me—  
Perpetual dawn with me.

*Mil.* Come what, come will,  
You have been happy: take my hand!

*Mer.* *[after a pause].* How good  
Your brother is! I figured him a cold—  
Shall I say, haughty man?

*Mil.* They told me all.

I know all.  
*Mer.* It will soon be over.

*Mil.* Over?  
Oh, what is over? what must I live through  
And say, 'tis over'? Is our meeting over?  
Have I received in presence of them all  
The partner of my guilty love—with brow  
Trying to seem a maiden's brow—with  
lips

Which make believe that when they strive  
to form

'Replies to you and tremble as they strive,  
It is the nearest ever they approached  
A stranger's . . . Henry, yours that stran-  
ger's . . . lip—

With cheek that looks a virgin's, and that  
is . . .

Ah God, some prodigy of thine will stop  
This planned piece of deliberate wicked-  
ness

In its birth even! some fierce leprous spot  
Will mar the brow's dissimulating! I  
Shall murmur no smooth speeches got by  
heart,

But, frenzied, pour forth all our woeful  
story,  
The love, the shame, and the despair—  
with them

Round me aghast as round some cursed  
fount

That should spirt water, and spouts blood.  
I'll not

. . . Henry, you do not wish that I should  
draw

This vengeance down? I'll not affect a  
grace

That's gone from me—gone once, and  
gone for ever!

*Mer.* Mildred, my honour is your own.  
I'll share

Disgrace I cannot suffer by myself.  
A word informs your brother I retract

This morning's offer; time will yet bring  
forth

Some better way of saving both of us.  
*Mil.* I'll meet their faces, Henry!

*Mer.* When? to-morrow!  
Get done with it!

*Mil.* Oh, Henry, not to-morrow!  
Next day! I never shall prepare my words  
And looks and gestures sooner.—How  
you must

Despise me!

*Mer.* Mildred, break it if you choose,  
A heart the love of you uplifted—still  
Uplifts, thro' this protracted agony,  
To heaven! but Mildred, answer me,—

first pace  
The chamber with me—once again—now,  
say

Calmly the part, the . . . what it is of me  
You see contempt (for you did say contempt)

—Contempt: for you in! I would pluck it  
off

And cast it from me!—but no—no, you'll  
not

Repeat that?—will you, Mildred, repeat  
that?

*Mil.* Dear Henry!

*Mer.* I was scarce a boy—e'en now  
What am I more? And you were infantine

When first I met you; why, your hair fell  
loose

On either side! My fool's-cheek reddens  
now

Only in the recalling how it burned  
That morn to see the shape of many a  
dream

—You know we boys are prodigal of  
charms

To her we dream of—I had heard of one,  
Had dreamed of her, and I was close to  
her,

Might speak to her, might live and die  
her own,

Who knew? I spoke. Oh, Mildred, feel  
you not

That now, while I remember every glance  
Of yours, each word of yours, with power  
to test

And weigh them in the diamond scales of  
pride,

Resolved the treasure of a first and last  
Heart's love shall have been bartered at its  
worth,

—That now I think upon your purity  
And utter ignorance of guilt—your own  
Or other's guilt—the girlish undisguised

Delight at a strange novel prize—(I talk  
A silly language, but interpret, you!)

If I, with fancy at its full, and reason  
Scarce in its germ, enjoined you secrecy,

If you had pity on my passion, pity  
On my protested sickness of the soul

To sit beside you, hear you breathe, and  
watch

Your eyelids and the eyes beneath—if you  
Accorded gifts and knew not they were  
gifts—

If I grew mad at last with enterprise  
And must behold my beauty in her bower

Or perish—(I was ignorant of even  
My own desires—what then were you?)

if sorrow—

Sin—if the end came—must I now re-  
nounce

My reason, blind myself to light, say truth  
Is false and lie to God and my own soul?  
Contempt were all of this!

*Mil.* Do you believe . . .  
Or, Henry, I'll not wrong you—you be-  
lieve

That I was ignorant. I scarce grieve o'er  
The past. We'll love on; you will love me

still.

*Mer.* Oh, to love less what one has in-  
jured! Dove,

Whose pinion I have rashly hurt, my  
breast—

Shall my heart's warmth not nurse thee  
into strength?

Flower I have crushed, shall I not care for  
thee?

Bloom o'er my crest, my fight-mark and  
device!

Mildred, I love you and you love me.  
*Mil.* Go!

'Be that your last word. I shall sleep to-  
night.

*Mer.* This is not our last meeting?  
*Mil.* One night more.

*Mer.* And then—think, then!  
*Mil.* Then, no

sweet courtship-days,  
No dawning consciousness of love for  
us,

No strange and palpitating births of  
sense

From words and looks, no innocent fears  
and hopes,

Reserves and confidences: morning's over!  
*Mer.* How else should love's perfected

noontide follow?

All the dawn promised shall the day per-  
form.

*Mil.* So may it be! but—  
You are cautious, Love?

Are sure that unobserved you scaled the  
walls?

*Mer.* Oh, trust me! Then our final  
meeting's fixed

To-morrow night?  
*Mil.* Farewell! Stay, Henry

. . . wherefore?  
His foot is on the yew-tree bough; the  
turf

Receives him: now the moonlight as he  
runs

Embraces him—but he must go—is gone.  
Ah, once again he turns—thanks, thanks,

my Love!

He's gone. Oh, I'll believe him every  
word!

I was so young, I loved him so, I had  
No mother, God forgot me, and I fell.

There may be pardon yet: all's doubt be-  
yond.

Surely the bitterness of death is past.

# A BLOT IN THE 'SCUTCHEON

[ACT II

## ACT II

SCENE.—*The Library.*

*Enter LORD TRESHAM, hastily.*

*Tresh.* This way! In, Gerard, quick!

[*As GERARD enters, TRESHAM secures the door.*

Now speak! or, wait—  
I'll bid you speak directly.

[*Sits himself.*

Now repeat

Firmly and circumstantially the tale  
You just now told me; it eludes me; either  
I did not listen, or the half is gone  
Away from me. How long have you lived  
here?

Here in my house, your father kept our  
woods

Before you?

*Ger.* —As his father did, my lord.  
I have been eating, sixty years almost,  
Your bread.

*Tres.* Yes, yes. You ever were of all  
The servants in my father's house, I know,  
The trusted one. You'll speak the truth.

*Ger.* I'll speak  
God's truth. Night after night . . .

*Tresh.* Since when?

*Ger.* At least  
A month—each midnight has some man

access  
To Lady Mildred's chamber.

*Tresh.* Tush, 'access'—  
No wide words like 'access' to me!

*Ger.* He runs  
Along the woodside, crosses to the South,  
Takes the left tree that ends the avenue . . .

*Tresh.* The last great yew-tree?

*Ger.* You might stand upon  
The main boughs like a platform. Then  
he . . .

*Tresh.* Quick!

*Ger.* Climbs up, and, where they lessen  
at the top,

—I cannot see distinctly, but he throws,  
I think—for this I do not vouch—a line  
That reaches to the lady's casement—

*Tresh.* —Which  
He enters not! Gerard, some wretched  
fool

Dares pry into my sister's privacy!

When such are young, it seems a precious

thing  
To have approached,—to merely have ap-

proached,  
Got sight of, the abode of her they set  
Their frantic thoughts upon. He does not  
enter?

*Gerard?*

*Ger.* There is a lamp that's full i' the  
midst,

Under a red square in the painted glass  
Of Lady Mildred's . . .

*Tresh.* Leave that 'name out! Well?  
That lamp?

*Ger.* —Is moved at midnight higher up  
To one pane—a small dark-blue pane; he  
waits

For that among the boughs: at sight of  
that,

I see him, plain as I see you, my lord,  
Open the lady's casement, enter there . . .

*Tresh.* —And stay?

*Ger.* An hour, two hours.

*Tresh.* And this you saw

Once?—twice?—quick!

*Ger.* Twenty times.

*Tresh.* And what brings you

Under the yew-trees?

*Ger.* The first night I left  
My range so far, to track the stranger stag  
That broke the pale, I saw the man.

*Tresh.* Yet sent  
No cross-bow shaft through the marau-  
der?

*Ger.* But  
He came, my lord, the first time he was  
seen,

In a great moonlight, light as any day,  
From Lady Mildred's chamber.

*Tresh.* [after a pause]. You have  
no cause

—Who could have cause to do my sister  
wrong?

*Ger.* Oh, my lord, only once—let me  
this once

Speak what is on my mind! Since first I  
noted

All this, I've groaned as if a fiery net  
Plucked me this way and that—fire if I  
turned

To her, fire if I turned to you, and fire  
If down I flung myself and strove to die.

The lady could not have been seven years  
old

When I was trusted to conduct her safe  
Through the deer-herd to stroke the snow-  
white fawn

I brought to eat bread from her tiny hand  
Within a month. She ever had a smile  
To greet me with—she . . . if it could undo

What's done, to lop each limb from off  
this trunk . . .

All that is foolish talk, not fit for you—  
I mean, I could not speak and bring her

hurt  
For Heaven's compelling. But when I

was fixed

To hold my peace, each morsel of your  
food

Eaten beneath your roof, my birth-place  
too,

'Choked me. I wish I had grown mad in  
doubts

What it behoved me do. This morn it  
seemed

Either I must confess to you, or die:

Now it is done, I seem the vilest worm  
That crawls, to have betrayed my lady.

*Tresh.*

No, Gerard!

*Ger.* Let me go!

*Tresh.* A man you say:

What man? Young? Not a vulgar hind?  
What dress?

*Ger.* A slouched hat and a large dark  
foreign cloak

Wraps his whole form; even his face is  
hid;

But I should judge him young: no hind,  
be sure!

*Tresh.* Why?

*Ger.* He is ever armed: his sword  
projects

Beneath the cloak.

*Tresh.* Gerard,—I will not say  
No word, no breath of this!

*Ger.* Thanks, thanks, my lord!

[*Goes.*]

*Tresh.* [paces the room. After a pause].  
Oh, thought's absurd!—as with some  
monstrous fact

Which, when ill thoughts beset us, seems  
to give

Merciful God that made the sun and stars,  
The waters and the green delights of earth,  
The lie! I apprehend the monstrous fact—  
Yet know the maker of all worlds is good,  
And yield my reason up, inadequate  
To reconcile what yet I do behold—  
Blasting my sense! There's cheerful day  
outside:

This is my library, and this the chair  
My father used to sit in carelessly  
After his soldier-fashion, while I stood  
Between his knees to question him: and  
here

Gerard our grey retainer,—as he says,  
Fed with our food, from sire to son, an  
age,—

Has told a story—I am to believe!  
That Mildred . . . oh, no, no! both tales  
are true,

Her pure cheek's story and the forester's!  
Would she, or could she, err—much less,  
confound

All guilts of treachery, of craft, of . . .  
Heaven

Keep me within its hand!—I will sit here  
Until thought settle and I see my course.  
Avert, oh God, only this woe from me!

[As he sinks his head between his arms  
on the table, GUENDOLEN'S voice is  
heard at the door.

Lord Tresham! [*She knocks.*] Is Lord  
Tresham there?

[TRESHAM, hastily turning, pulls down  
the first book above him and opens it.

*Tresh.* Come in! [*She enters.*

Ha, Guendolen!—good morning.

*Guen.*

Nothing more?

## A BLOT IN THE 'SCUTCHEON

*Tresh.* What should I say more?

*Guen.* Pleasant question! more?

This more. Did I besiege poor Mildred's  
brain

Last night till close on morning with 'the  
Earl,'

'The Earl'—whose worth did I asseverate  
Till I am very fain to hope that . . . Thorold,  
What is all this? You are not well!

*Tresh.*

Who, I?

You laugh at me.

*Guen.* Has what I'm fain to hope,

Arrived then? Does that huge tome show  
some blot

In the Earl's 'scutcheon come no longer  
back

Than Arthur's time?

*Tresh.* When left you Mildred's  
chamber?

*Guen.* Oh, late enough, I told you! The  
main thing

To ask is, how I left her chamber,—sure,  
Content yourself, she'll grant this para-  
gon

Of Earls no such ungracious . . .

*Tresh.*

Send her here!

*Guen.* Thorold?

*Tresh.*

I mean—acquaint

her, Guendolen,

—But mildly!

*Guen.* Mildly?

*Tresh.*

Ah, you guessed aright!

I am not well: there is no hiding it.  
But tell her I would see her at her leisure—

That is, at once! here in the library!  
The passage in that old Italian book

We hunted for so long is found, say,  
found—

And if I let it slip again . . . you see,  
That she must come—and instantly!

*Guen.*

I'll die

Piecemeal, record that, if there have not  
gloomed

Some blot i' the 'scutcheon!

*Tresh.*

Go! or, Guendolen,

Be you at call,—with Austin, if you  
choose,—

In the adjoining gallery! There, go!  
[GUENDOLEN goes.

Another lesson to me! You might bid  
A child disguise his heart's sore, and con-  
duct

Some sly investigation point by point  
With a smooth brow, as well as bid me  
catch

The inquisitorial cleverness some praise.  
If you had told me yesterday, 'There's  
one

'You needs must circumvent and prac-  
tise with,

'Entrap by policies, if you would worm  
'The truth out: and that one is—Mildred!'

*Tresh.*

There,  
There—reasoning is thrown away on it!



# A BLOT IN THE 'SCUTCHEON

[ACT II

Prove she's unchaste . . . why, you may  
after prove  
That she's a poisoner, traitress, what you  
will!  
Where I can comprehend nought, nought's  
to say.  
Or do, or think. Force on me but the first  
Abomination,—then outpour all plagues,  
And I shall ne'er make count of them.

*Enter MILDRED.*

*Mil.* What book  
Is it I wanted, Thorold? Guendolen  
Thought you were pale; you are not pale.  
That book?

That's Latin surely.

*Tresh.* Mildred, here's a line,  
(Don't lean on me: I'll English it for you)  
'Love conquers all things.' What love  
conquers them?

What love should you esteem—best love?

*Mil.* True love.

*Tresh.* I mean, and should have said,  
whose love is best

Of all that love or that profess to love?

*Mil.* The list's so long: there's father's,  
mother's, husband's . . .

*Tresh.* Mildred, I do believe a brother's  
love

For a sole sister must exceed them all.  
For see now, only see! there's no alloy  
Of earth that creeps into the perfect'st  
gold

Of other loves—no gratitude to claim;  
You never gave her life, not even aught  
That keeps life—never tended her, in-  
structed,

Enriched her—so, your love can claim no  
right

O'er her save pure love's claim: that's  
what I call

Freedom from earthliness. You'll never  
hope

To be such friends, for instance, she and  
you,

As when you hunted cowslips in the woods  
Or played together in the meadow hay.

Oh yes—with age, respect comes, and your  
worth

Is felt, there's growing sympathy of tastes,  
There's ripened friendship, there's con-  
firmed esteem:

—Much head these make against the new-  
comer!

The startling apparition, the strange  
youth—

Whom one half-hour's conversing with,  
or, say,

Mere gazing at, shall change (beyond all  
change

This Ovid ever sang about) your soul

. . . Her soul, that is,—the sister's soul!  
With her

'Twas winter yesterday; now, all is  
warmth,

The green leaf's springing and the turtle's  
voice,

'Arise and come away!' Come whither?  
—far

Enough from the esteem, respect, and all  
The brother's somewhat insignificant

Array of rights! All which he knows be-  
fore,

Has calculated on so long ago!  
I think such love, (apart from yours and  
mine,)

Contented with its little term of life,  
Intending to retire betimes, aware

How soon the background must be place  
for it,

—I think, am sure, a brother's love ex-  
ceeds

All the world's love in its unworldliness.  
*Mil.* What is this for?

*Tresh.* This, Mildred, is it for!  
Or, no, I cannot go to it so soon!

That's one of many points my haste left  
out—

Each day, each hour throws forth its silk-  
slight film

Between the being tied to you by birth,  
And you, until those slender threads com-  
pose

A web that shrouds her daily life of hopes  
And fears and fancies, all her life, from  
yours:

So close you live and yet so far apart!  
And must I rend this web, tear up, break  
down

The sweet and palpitating mystery  
That makes her sacred? You—for you I  
mean,

Shall I speak, shall I not speak?  
*Mil.* Speak!

*Tresh.* I will.  
Is there a story men could—any man  
Could tell of you, you would conceal from  
me?

I'll never think there's falsehood on that  
lip.

Say 'There is no such story men could  
tell,'

And I'll believe you, though I disbelieve  
The world—the world of better men  
than I,

And women such as I suppose you. Speak!  
[After a pause.] Not speak? Explain then!

Clear it up then! Move  
Some of the miserable weight away  
That presses lower than the grave! Not  
speak?

Some of the dead weight, Mildred! Ah,  
if I

Could bring myself to plainly make their  
charge

Against you! Must I, Mildred? Silent  
still?

[*After a pause.*] Is there a gallant that has night by night admittance to your chamber?

[*After a pause.*] Then, his name! Till now, I only had a thought for you: But now,—his name!

*Mil.* Thorold, do you devise fit expiation for my guilt, if fit  
There be! 'Tis nought to say that I'll endure  
And bless you,—that my spirit yearns to purge  
Her stains off in the fierce renewing fire:

But do not plunge me into other guilt! Oh, guilt enough! I cannot tell his name.

*Fresh.* Then judge yourself! How should I act? Pronounce!

*Mil.* Oh, Thorold, you must never tempt me thus!  
To die here in this chamber by that sword

Would seem like punishment: so should I glide,  
Like an arch-cheat, into extremest bliss!  
'Twere easily arranged for me; but you—  
What would become of you?

*Fresh.* And what will now become of me? I'll hide your shame and mine  
From every eye; the dead must heave their hearts

Under the marble of our chapel-floor;  
They cannot rise and blast you. You may wed

Your paramour above our mother's tomb;  
Our mother cannot move from 'neath your foot.

We too will somehow wear this one day out:

But with to-morrow hastens here—the Earl!

The youth without suspicion face can come

From Heaven, and heart from . . . whence proceed such hearts?

I have despatched last night at your command

A missive bidding him present himself To-morrow—here—thus much is said; the rest

Is understood as if 'twere written down—  
'His suit finds favour in your eyes.' Now dictate

This morning's letter that shall countermand

Last night's—do dictate that!

*Mil.* But, Thorold—if I will receive him as I said?

*Fresh.* The Earl?  
*Mil.* I will receive him.  
*Fresh.* [starting up]. Ho there!  
Guendolen!

GUENDOLEN and AUSTIN enter.

And, Austin, you are welcome, too! Look there!

The woman there!

*Aus. and Guen.* How? Mildred?

*Fresh.* Mildred once!

Now the receiver night by night, when sleep

Blesses the inmates of her father's house,  
—I say, the soft sly wanton that receives

Her guilt's accomplice 'neath this roof which holds

You, Guendolen, you, Austin, and has held

A thousand Treshams—never one like her!

No lighter of the signal-lamp her quick Foul breath near quenches in hot eagerness

To mix with breath as foul! no loosener O' the lattice, practised in the stealthy tread,

The low voice and the noiseless come-and-go!

Not one composer of the bacchant's mien Into—what you thought Mildred's, in a word!

Know her!

*Guen.* Oh, Mildred, look to me, at least!

Thorold—she's dead, I'd say, but that she stands

Rigid as stone and whiter!

*Fresh.* You have heard . . .

*Guen.* Too much! You must proceed no further.

*Mil.* Yes—

Proceed! All's truth. Go from me!

*Fresh.* All is truth,  
She tells you! Well, you know, or ought to know,

All this I would forgive in her. I'd con- Each precept the harsh world enjoins, I'd take

Our ancestors' stern verdicts one by one, I'd bind myself before them to exact

The prescribed vengeance—and one word of hers,

The sight of her, the bare least memory Of Mildred, my one sister, my heart's pride

Above all prides, my all in all so long, Would scatter every trace of my resolve.

What were it silently to waste away And see her waste away from this day forth,

Two scathed things with leisure to repent, And grow acquainted with the grave, and die

Tired out if not at peace, and be forgotten? It were not so impossible to bear.

But this—that, fresh from last night's pledge renewed

Of love with the successful gallant there,

## A BLOT IN THE 'SCUTCHEON

[ACT II

She calmly bids me help her to entice,  
Inveigle an unconscious trusting youth  
Who thinks her all that's chaste and good  
and pure,

—Invites me to betray him . . . who so fit  
As honour's self to cover shame's arch-  
deed?

—That she'll receive Lord Mertoun—(her  
own phrase)—

This, who could bear? Why, you have  
heard of thieves,

Stabbers, the earth's disgrace, who yet  
have laughed,

'Talk not to me of torture—I'll betray  
'No comrade I've pledged faith to!'—you  
have heard

Of wretched women—all but Mildreds—  
tied

By wild illicit ties to losels vile  
You'd tempt them to forsake; and they'll  
reply

'Gold, friends, repute, I left for him, I find  
'In him, why should I leave him then for  
gold,

'Repute or friends?'—and you have felt  
your heart

Respond to such poor outcasts of the  
world

As to so many friends; bad as you please,  
You've felt they were God's men and  
women still,

So, not to be disowned by you. But she  
That stands there, calmly gives her lover  
up

As means to wed the Earl that she may  
hide

Their intercourse the surelier: and, for  
this,

I curse her to her face before you all.  
Shame hunt her from the earth! Then  
Heaven do right

To both! It hears me pow—shall judge  
her then!

[As MILDRED faints and falls, TRESHAM  
rushes out.

Aus. Stay, Tresham, we'll accompany  
you!

Guen. We?

What, and leave Mildred? We? Why,  
where's my place

But by her side, and where yours but by  
mine?

Mildred—one word! Only look at me,  
then!

Aus. No, Guendolen! I echo Thorold's  
voice.

She is unworthy to behold . . . Us two?

Guen. If you spoke on reflection, and if I  
Approved your speech—if you (to put the  
thing

At lowest) you the soldier, bound to make  
The king's cause yours and fight for it,  
and throw

Regard to others of its right or wrong,  
—If with a death-white woman you can  
help,

Let alone sister, let alone a Mildred,  
You left her—or if I, her cousin, friend

This morning, playfellow but yesterday,  
Who said, or thought at least a thousand  
times,

'I'd serve you if I could,' should now face  
round

And say, 'Ah, that's to only signify  
'I'd serve you while you're fit to serve  
yourself:

'So long as fifty eyes await the turn  
'Of yours to forestall its yet half-formed  
wish,

'I'll proffer my assistance you'll not  
need—

'When every tongue is praising you, I'll  
join

'The praisers' chorus—when you're  
hemmed about

'With lives between you and detraction—  
lives

'To be laid down if a rude voice, rash eye,  
'Rough hand should violate the sacred  
ring

'Their worship throws about you,—then  
indeed,

'Who'll stand up for you stout as I?' If so  
We said, and so we did,—not Mildred  
there

Would be unworthy to behold us both,  
But we should be unworthy, both of us,  
To be beheld by—by—your meanest dog,  
Which, if that sword were broken in your  
face

Before a crowd, that badge torn off your  
breast,

And you cast out with hooting and con-  
tempt,

—Would push his way thro' all the  
hooters, gain

Your side, go off with you and all your  
shame

To the next ditch you choose to die in!  
Austin,

Do you love me? Here's Austin, Mildred,  
—here's

Your brother says he does not believe  
half—

No, nor half that—of all he heard! He  
says,

Look up and take his hand!  
'Aus. Look up and take

My hand, dear Mildred!  
Mil. I—I was so young!

Beside, I loved him, Thorold—and I had  
No mother; God forgot me: so, I fell.

Guen. Mildred!

Mil. Require no further!

Did I dream

That I could palliate what is done? All's  
true.

Now, punish me! A woman takes my hand?  
Let go my hand! You do not know, I see.  
I thought that Thorold told you.

*Guen.* What is this?  
Where start you to?

*Mil.* Oh, Austin, loosen me!  
You heard the whole of it—your eyes were worse.

In their surprise, than Thorold's! Oh, unless

You stay to execute his sentence, loose My hand! Has Thorold gone, and are you here?

*Guen.* Here, Mildred, we two friends of yours will wait

Your bidding; be you silent, sleep or muse!

Only, when you shall want your bidding done,

How can we do it if we are not by?

Here's Austin waiting patiently your will!

One spirit to command, and one to love

And to believe in it and do its best,

Poor as that is, to help it—why, the world

Has been won many a time, its length and breadth,

By just such a beginning!

*Mil.* I believe

If once I threw my arms about your neck

And sunk my head upon your breast,

that I

Should weep again.

*Guen.* Let go her hand now,

Austin!

Wait for me. Pace the gallery and think

On the world's seemings and realities,

Until I call you. [*AUSTIN goes.*]

*Mil.* No—I cannot weep.

No more tears from this brain—no sleep

—no tears!

O Guendolen, I love you!

*Guen.* Yes: and 'love'

is a short word that says so very much!

It says that you confide in me.

*Mil.* Confide!

*Guen.* Your lover's name, then! I've

so much to learn,

Ere I can work in your behalf!

*Mil.* My friend,

You know I cannot tell his name.

*Guen.* At least

He is your lover? and you love him too?

*Mil.* Ah, do you ask me that?—but I

am fallen

So low!

*Guen.* You love him still, then?

*Mil.* My sole prop

Against the guilt that crushes me! I say,

Each night ere I lie down, 'I was so

young—

'I had no mother, and I loved him so!'

And then God seems indulgent, and I

dare

Trust him my soul in sleep.

*Guen.* How could you let us

E'en talk to you about Lord Mertoun

then?

*Mil.* There is a cloud around me.

*Guen.* But you said

You would receive his suit in spite of this?

*Mil.* I say there is a cloud . . .

*Guen.* No cloud to me!

Lord Mertoun and your lover are the

same!

*Mil.* What maddest fancy . . .

*Guen.* [*calling aloud*]. Austin!

(spare your pains—

When I have got a truth, that truth I

keep)—

*Mil.* By all you love, sweet Guendolen,

forbear!

Have I confided in you . . .

*Guen.* Just for this!

Austin!—Oh, not to guess it at the first!

But I did guess it—that is, I divined,

Felt by an instinct how it was: why else

Should I pronounce you free from all that

heap

Of sins which had been irredeemable?

I felt they were not yours—what other

way

Than this, not yours? The secret's wholly

mine!

*Mil.* If you would see me die before his

face . . .

*Guen.* I'd hold my peace! And if the

Earl returns

To-night?

*Mil.* Ah Heaven, he's lost!

*Guen.* I thought so. Austin!

*Enter AUSTIN.*

Oh, where have you been hiding?

*Aus.* Thorold's gone,

I know not how, across the meadow-land.

I watched him till I lost him in the skirts

O' the beech-wood.

*Guen.* Gone? All 'thwarts us.

*Mil.* Thorold too?

*Guen.* I have thought. First lead this

Mildred to her room.

Go on the other side; and then we'll seek

Your brother: and I'll tell you, by the way,

The greatest comfort in the world. You

said

There was a clue to all. Remember, Sweet,

He said there was a clue! I hold it. Come!

### ACT III

SCENE I.—*The end of the Yew-tree Avenue under MILDRED'S window. A light seen through a central red pane.*

*Enter TRESHAM through the trees.*

Again here! But I cannot lose myself.

The heath—the orchard—I have traversed glades

## A BLOT IN THE 'SCUTCHEON

[ACT III

And dells and bosky paths which used to lead

Into green wild-wood depths, bewildering  
My boy's adventurous step. And now  
they tend

Hither or soon or late; the blackest shade  
Breaks up, the thronged trunks of the trees  
ope wide,

And the dim turret I have fled from, fronts  
Again my step; the very river put  
Its arm about me and conducted me  
To this detested spot. Why then, I'll shun  
Their will no longer: do your will with  
me!

Oh, bitter! To have reared a towering  
scheme

Of happiness, and to behold it razed.

Were nothing: all men hope, and see their  
hopes

Frustrate, and grieve awhile, and hope  
anew.

But I . . . to hope that from a line like ours  
No horrid prodigy like this would spring,  
Were just as though I hoped that from  
these old

Confederates against the sovereign day,  
Children of older and yet older sires,  
Whose living coral berries dropped, as  
now

On me, on many a baron's surcoat once,  
On many a beauty's wimple—would  
proceed

No poison-tree, to thrust, from hell its  
root,

Hither and thither its strange snaky arms.  
Why came I here? What must I do? [*A  
bell strikes.*] A bell?

Midnight! and 'tis at midnight . . . Ah, I  
catch

—Woods, river, plains, I catch your mean-  
ing now,

And I obey you! Hist! This tree will  
serve.

[*He retires behind one of the trees. After  
a pause, enter MERTOUN cloaked as  
before.*

*Mer.* Not time! Beat out thy last  
voluptuous beat

Of hope and fear, my heart! I thought  
the clock

I' the chapel struck as I was pushing  
through

The ferns. And so I shall no more see  
rise

My love-star! Oh, no matter for the past!  
So much the more delicious task to watch  
Mildred revive: to pluck out, thorn by  
thorn,

All traces of the rough forbidden path  
My rash love lured her to! Each day must  
see

Some fear of hers effaced, some hope re-  
newed:

Then there will be surprises, unforeseen

Delights in store. I'll not regret the past.

[*The light is placed above, in the purple  
pane.*

And see, my signal rises, Mildred's star!  
I never saw it lovelier than now

It rises for the last time. If it sets,

'Tis that the re-assuring sun may dawn.

[*As he prepares to ascend the last tree of  
the avenue, TRESHAM arrests his arm.*

Unhand me—peasant, by your grasp!  
Here's gold.

'Twas a mad freak of mine, I said I'd  
pluck

A branch from the white-blossomed shrub  
beneath

The casement there. Take this, and hold  
your peace.

*Tresh.* Into the moonlight yonder,  
come with me!

Out of the shadow!  
*Mer.* I am armed, fool!

*Tresh.* Yes,

Or no? You'll come into the light, or no?  
My hand is on your throat—refuse!—

*Mer.* That voice!

Where have I heard . . . no—that was mild  
and slow.

I'll come with you. [*They advance.*  
*Tresh.* You're armed: that's well.

Declare

Your name: who are you?

*Mer.* [*Tresham!—she is lost!*]

*Tresh.* Oh, silent? Do you know, you  
bear yourself

Exactly as, in curious dreams I've had  
How felons, this wild earth is full of, look

When they're detected, still your kind has  
looked!

The bravo holds an assured countenance,  
The thief is voluble and plausible,

But silently the slave of lust has crouched  
When I have fancied it before a man.

Your name!

*Mer.* I do conjure Lord Tresham—ay,  
Kissing his foot, if so I might prevail—

That he for his own sake forbear to ask  
My name! As heaven's above, his future  
weal

Or woe depends upon my silence! Vain!  
I read your white inexorable face.

Know me, Lord Tresham!

[*He throws off his disguises.*

*Tresh.* Mertoun!

[*After a pause.*] Draw now!

*Mer.* Hear me

But speak first!

*Tresh.* Not one least word on your  
life!

Be sure that I will strangle in your  
throat

The least word that informs me how you  
live

And yet seem what you seem! No doubt  
'twas you

Taught Mildred still to keep that face and  
sin.

We should join hands in frantic sympathy  
If you once taught me the unteachable,  
Explained how you can live so, and so lie.  
With God's help I retain, despite my  
sense,

The old belief—a life like yours is still  
Impossible. Now draw!

*Mer.* Not for my sake,  
Do I entreat a hearing—for your sake,  
And most for her sake!

*Tresh.* Ha ha, what should I  
Know of your ways? A miscreant like  
yourself,

How must one rouse his ire? A blow?—  
that's pride

No doubt, to him! One spurns him, does  
one not?

Or sets the foot upon his mouth, or spits  
Into his face! Come! Which, or all of  
these?

*Mer.* 'Twixt him and me and Mildred,  
Heaven be judge!

Can I avoid this? Have your will, my  
lord!

*[He draws and, after a few passes, falls.]*

*Tresh.* You are not hurt?

*Mer.* You'll hear me now!

*Tresh.* But rise!

*Mer.* Ah, Tresham, say I not 'you'll  
hear me now!'

And what procures a man the right to  
speak

In his defence before his fellow man,

But—I suppose—the thought that pre-  
sently

He may have leave to speak before his  
God

His whole defence?

*Tresh.* Not hurt? It cannot be!  
You made no effort to resist me. Where  
Did my sword reach you? Why not have  
returned

My thrusts? Hurt where?

*Mer.* My lord—

*Tresh.* How young he is!

*Mer.* Lord Tresham, I am very young,  
and yet

I have entangled other lives with mine.

Do let me speak, and do believe my  
speech!

That when I die before you presently,—

*Tresh.* Can you stay here till I return  
with help?

*Mer.* Oh, stay by me! When I was less  
than boy

I did you grievous wrong and knew it  
not—

Upon my honour, knew it not! Once,  
known,

I could not find what seemed a better way  
To right you than I took: my life—you  
feel

How less than nothing were the giving  
you

The life you've taken! But I thought my  
way

The better—only for your sake and hers:  
And as you have decided otherwise,

Would I had an infinity of lives  
To offer you! Now say—instruct me—  
think!

Can you, from the brief minutes I have  
left,

Eke out my reparation? Oh think—  
think!

For I must wring a partial—dare I say,  
Forgiveness from you, ere I die?

*Tresh.* I do  
Forgive you.

*Mer.* Wait and ponder that great word!  
Because, if you forgive me, I shall hope

To speak to you of—Mildred!

*Tresh.* Mertoun, haste  
And anger have undone us. 'Tis not  
you

Should tell me for a novelty you're young,  
Thoughtless, unable to recall the past.

Be but your pardon ample as my own!

*Mer.* Ah, Tresham, that a sword-stroke  
and a drop

Of blood or two, should bring all this  
about!

Why, 'twas my very fear of you, my love  
Of you—(what passion like a boy's for  
one

Like you?)—that ruined me! I dreamed  
of you—

You, all accomplished, courted every-  
where,

The scholar and the gentleman. I burned  
To knit myself to you: but I was young,

And your surpassing reputation kept me  
So far aloof! Oh, wherefore all that love?

With less of love, my glorious yesterday  
Of praise and gentlest words and kindest  
looks,

Had taken place perchance six months  
ago.

Even now, how happy we had been! And  
yet

I know the thought of this escaped you,  
Tresham!

Let me look up into your face; I feel  
'Tis changed above me: yet my eyes are  
glazed.

Where? where?

*[As he endeavours to raise himself, his  
eye catches the lamp.]*

Ah, Mildred! What will  
Mildred do?

Tresham, her life is bound up in the life  
That's bleeding fast away! I'll live—must  
live,

There, if you'll only turn me I shall live  
And save her! Tresham—oh, had you  
but heard!

# A BLOT IN THE 'SCUTCHEON

[ACT III]

Had you but heard! What right was yours  
to set

The thoughtless foot upon her life and  
mine,

And then say, as we perish, 'Had I  
thought,

'All had gone otherwise'? We've sinned  
and die:

Never you sin, Lord Tresham! for you'll  
die,

And God will judge you.  
*Tresh.* Yes, be satisfied!

That process is begun.  
*Mer.* And she sits there

Waiting for me! Now, say you this to  
her—

You, not another—say, I saw him die  
As he breathed this, 'I love her'—you

don't know  
What those three small words mean! Say,

loving her  
Lowers me down the bloody slope to death

With memories . . . I speak to her, not  
you,

Who had no pity, will have no remorse,  
Perchance intend her . . . Die along with

me,  
Dear Mildred! 'tis so easy, and you'll  
'scape

So much unkindness! Can I lie at rest,  
With rude speech spoken to you, ruder

deeds  
Done to you?—heartless men shall have  
my heart,

And I tied down with grave-clothes and  
the worm,

Aware, perhaps, of every blow—oh  
God!—

Upon those lips—yet of no power to tear  
The felon stripe by stripe! Die, Mildred!

Leave  
Their honourable world to them! For  
God

We're good enough, though the world  
casts us out. [A whistle is heard.

*Tresh.* Ho, Gerard!

*Enter GERARD, AUSTIN and GUENDOLEN,  
with lights.*

No one speak!

You see what's done.  
I cannot bear another voice.

*Mer.* There's light—  
Light all about me, and I move to it.

*Tresham,* did I not tell you—did you not  
just promise to deliver words of mine

To Mildred?

*Tresh.* I will bear those words to her.  
*Mer.* Now?

*Tresh.* Now. Lift you the body,  
and leave me

The head.  
[As they have half raised MERTOUN, he

turns suddenly.

*Mer.* I knew they turned me: turn me  
not from her!

There! stay you! there! [*Dies.*  
*Guen.* [after a pause]. Austin, remain

you here  
With Thorold until Gerard comes with

help:  
Then lead him to his chamber. I must go

To Mildred.  
*Tresh.* Guendolen, I hear each

word  
You utter. Did you hear him bid me give

His message? Did you hear my promise?  
I,

And only I, see Mildred.  
*Guen.* She will die.

*Tresh.* Oh no, she will not die! I dare  
not hope

She'll die. What ground have you to think  
she'll die?

Why, Austin's with you!  
*Aus.* Had we but arrived

Before you fought!  
*Tresh.* There was no fight at all.

He let me slaughter him—the boy! I'll  
trust

The body there to you and Gerard—thus!  
Now bear him on before me.

*Aus.* Whither bear him?  
*Tresh.* Oh, to my chamber! When we

meet there next,  
We shall be friends.

[*They bear out the body of MERTOUN.*  
Will she die, Guendolen?

*Guen.* Where are you taking me?  
*Tresh.* He fell just here.

Now answer me. Shall you in your whole  
life

—You who have nought to do with Mer-  
toun's fate,

Now you have seen his breast upon the  
turf,

Shall you e'er walk this way if you can  
help?

When you and Austin wander arm-in-arm  
Through our ancestral grounds, will not

a shade  
Be ever on the meadow and the waste—  
Another kind of shade than when the

night  
Shuts the woodside with all its whispers

up?  
But will you ever so forget his breast

As carelessly to cross this bloody turf  
Under the black yew avenue? That's

well!  
You turn your head: and I then?—

*Guen.* What is done  
Is done. My care is for the living. Thorold,

Bear up against this burden: more remains  
To set the neck to!

*Tresh.* Dear and ancient trees  
My fathers planted, and I loved so

well!

What have I donè that, like some fabled  
crime  
Of yore, lets loose a Fury leading thus  
Her miserable dance amidst you all?  
Oh, never more for me shall winds intone  
With all your tops a vast antiphony,  
Demanding and responding in God's  
praise!  
Hers ye are now, not mine! Farewell—  
farewell!

## SCENE II.—MILDRED'S chamber.

MILDRED alone.

He comes not! I have heard of those who  
seemed  
Resourceless in prosperity,—you thought  
Sorrow might slay them when she listed;  
yet  
Did they so gather up their diffused  
strength  
At her first menace, that they bade her  
strike,  
And stood and laughed her subtlest skill  
to scorn.  
Oh, 'tis not so with me! The first woe fell,  
And the rest fall upon it, not on me:  
Else should I bear that Henry comes not?  
—fails  
Just this first night out of so many nights?  
Loving is done with. Were he sitting  
now,  
As so few hours since, on that seat, we'd  
love  
No more—contrive no thousand happy  
ways  
To hide love from the loveless, any more.  
I think I might have urged some little  
point  
In my defence, to Thorold; he was breath-  
less  
For the least hint of a defence: but no,  
The first shame over, all that would might  
fall.  
No Henry! Yet I merely sit and think  
The morn's deed o'er and o'er. I must  
have crept  
Out of myself. A Mildred that has lost  
Her lover—oh, I dare not look upon  
Such woe! I crouch away from it! 'Tis  
she,  
Mildred, will break her heart, not I! The  
world  
Forsakes me: only Henry's left me—left?  
When I have lost him, for he does not,  
come,  
And I sit stupidly . . . Oh Heaven, break up  
This worse than anguish, this mad apathy,  
By any means or any messenger!  
Tresh. [without]. Mildred!  
Mil. Heaven hears me!  
[Enter TRESHAM.] You? alone?  
Oh, no more cursing!

## A BLOT IN THE 'SCUTCHEON

Tresh. Mildred, I must sit.  
There—you sit!  
Mil. Say it, Thorold—do not  
look  
The curse! deliver all you come to say!  
What must become of me? Oh, speak  
that thought  
Which makes your brow and cheeks so  
pale!  
Tresh. My thought?  
Mil. All of it!  
Tresh. How we waded—years ago—  
After those water-lilies, till the flash,  
I know not how, surprised us; and you  
dared  
Neither advance nor turn back: so, we  
stood  
Laughing and crying until Gerard came—  
Once safe upon the turf, the loudest too,  
For once more reaching the relinquished  
prize!  
How idle thoughts are, some men's, dying  
men's!  
Mildred,—  
Mil. You call me kindlier by my name  
Than even yesterday: what is in that?  
Tresh. It weighs so much upon my  
mind that I  
This morning took an office not my own!  
I might . . . of course, I must be glad or  
grieved,  
Content or not, at every little thing  
That touches you. I may with a wrung  
heart  
Even reprove you, Mildred; I did more:  
Will you forgive me?  
Mil. Thorold? do you mock!  
Or no . . . and yet you bid me . . . say that  
word!  
Tresh. Forgive me, Mildred!—are you  
silent, Sweet?  
Mil. [starting up]. Why does not Henry  
Mertoun come to-night?  
Are you, too, silent?  
[Dashing his mantle aside, and pointing  
to his scabbard, which is empty.  
Ah, this speaks for you!  
You've murdered Henry Mertoun! Now  
proceed!  
What is it I must pardon? This and all?  
Well, I do pardon you—I think I do.  
Thorold, how very wretched you must be!  
Tresh. He bade me tell you . . .  
Mil. What I do forbid  
Your utterance of! So much that you  
may tell  
And will not—how you murdered him . . .  
but, no!  
You'll tell me that he loved me, never  
more  
Than bleeding out his life there: must I  
say  
'Indeed,' to that? Enough! I pardon  
you.



*Tresh.* You cannot, Mildred! for the harsh words, yes:  
Of this last deed Another's judge: whose doom

I wait in doubt, despondency and fear.  
*Mil.* Oh, true! There's nought for me to pardon! True!

You loose my soul of all its cares at once.  
Death makes me sure of him for ever!

You  
Tell me his last words? He shall tell me them,

And take my answer—not in words, but reading

Himself the heart I had to read him late,  
Which death . . .

*Tresh.* Death? You are dying too? Well said

Of Guendolen! I dared not hope you'd die:

But she was sure of it.

*Mil.* Tell Guendolen  
I loved her, and tell Austin . . .

*Tresh.* Him you loved:  
And me?

*Mil.* Ah, Thorold! Was't not rashly done

To quench that blood, on fire with youth and hope

And love of me—whom you loved too, and yet

Suffered to sit here waiting his approach  
While you were slaying him? Oh, doubtlessly

You let him speak his poor confused boy's-speech

—Do this poor utmost to disarm your wrath

And respite me!—you let him try to give  
The story of our love and ignorance,

And the brief madness and the long despair—

You let him plead all this, because your code

Of honour bids you hear before you strike:  
But at the end, as he looked up for life  
Into your eyes—you struck him down!

*Tresh.* No! No! No! Had I but heard him—had I let him speak

Half the truth—less—had I looked long on him

I had desisted! Why, as he lay there,  
The moon on his flushed cheek, I gathered

all  
The story ere he told it: I saw through

The troubled surface of his crime and yours

A depth of purity immovable,  
Had I but glanced, where all seemed tur-

bidest  
Had gleamed some inlet to the calm be-

neath;  
I would not glance: my punishment's at

hand.

There, Mildred, is the truth! and you—say on—

You curse me?

*Mil.* As I dare approach that Heaven  
Which has not bade a living thing despair,

Which needs no code to keep its grace  
from stain,

But bids the vilest worm that turns on it  
Desist and be forgiven,—I—forgive not,

But bless you, Thorold, from my soul of  
souls! [*Falls on his neck.*]

There! Do not think too much upon the  
past!

The cloud that's broke was all the same a  
cloud

While it stood up between my friend and  
you;

You hurt him 'neath its shadow: but is  
that

So past retrieve? I have his heart, you  
know;

I may dispose of it: I give it you!

It loves you as mine loves! Confirm me,  
Henry! [*Dies.*]

*Tresh.* I wish thee joy, Beloved! I am  
glad

In thy full gladness!

*Guen.* [*without.*] Mildred! Tresham!

[*Entering with AUSTIN.*] Thorold,  
I could desist no longer. Ah, she swoons!

That's well.

*Tresh.* Oh, better far than that!

*Guen.* She's dead!

Let me unlock her arms!

*Tresh.* She threw them thus  
About my neck, and blessed me, and then

died:

You'll let them stay now, Guendolen!

*Aus.* Leave her

And look to him! What ails you, Thorold?

*Guen.* White

As she, and whiter! Austin! quick—this  
side!

*Aus.* A froth is oozing through his  
clenched teeth;

Both lips, where they're not bitten through,  
are black:

Speak, dearest Thorold!

*Tresh.* Something does weigh down  
My neck beside her weight: thanks: I

should fall

But for you, Austin, I believe!—there,  
there,

'Twill pass away soon!—ah,—I had for-  
gotten:

I am dying.

*Guen.* Thorold—Thorold—why was  
this?

*Tresh.* I said, just as I drank the poison  
off,

The earth would be no longer earth to me,  
The life out of all life was gone from me.

There are blind ways provided, the fore-  
done

sc. ii]

Heart-weary player in this pageant-world  
Drops out by, letting the main masque  
defile

By the conspicuous portal: I am through—  
Just through!

*Guen.* Don't leave him, Austin!

Death is close.

*Tresh.* Already Mildred's face is peace-  
fuller.

I see you, Austin—feel you: here's my  
hand,

Put yours in it—you, Guendolen, yours  
too!

You're lord and lady now—you're Tre-  
shams; name

And fame are yours: you hold our  
'scutcheon up.

## A BLOT IN THE 'SCUTCHEON

Austin, no blot on it! You see how  
blood

Must wash one blot away: the first blot  
came

And the first blood came. To the vain  
world's eye

All's gules again: no care to the vain  
world,

From whence the red was drawn!

*Aus.* No blot shall come!

*Tresh.* I said that: yet it did come.

Should it come,

Vengeance is God's, not man's. Remem-  
ber me! [*Dies.*]

*Guen.* [*letting fall the pulseless arm.*]

Ah, Thorold, we can but—remember  
you!

# COLOMBE'S BIRTHDAY

A PLAY

1844

NO ONE LOVES AND HONOURS BARRY CORNWALL MORE THAN

DOES ROBERT BROWNING;

WHO, HAVING NOTHING BETTER THAN THIS PLAY

TO GIVE HIM IN PROOF OF IT, MUST SAY SO.

LONDON: 1844.

Ivy and violet, what do ye here

With blossom and shoot in the warm spring-weather.

Hiding the arms of Monchenci and Vere?—*Hammer.*

## PERSONS

COLOMBE OF RAVESTEIN, Duchess of Juliers and

Cleves.

SABYNE, A'DOLF, *her attendants.*

GUIBERT, GAUCELME, MAUFROY, CLUGNET, *courtiers.*

VALENCE, *advocate of Cleves.*

PRINCE BERTHOLD, *claimant of the Duchy.*

MELCHIOR, *his confidant.*

PLACE.—*The Palace at Juliers.*

TIME, 16—.

## ACT I

MORNING

SCENE.—*A corridor leading to the  
Audience-chamber.*

GAUCELME, CLUGNET, MAUFROY and other  
Courtiers, round GUIBERT, who is  
silently reading a paper: as he drops it  
at the end—

*Gui.* That this should be her birthday;  
and the day

We all invested her, twelve months ago,  
As the late Duke's true heiress and our  
liege;

And that this also must become the day ...  
Oh, miserable lady!

*1st Court.* Ay, indeed?

*2nd Court.* Well, Guibert?

*3rd Court.* But your news,  
my friend, your news!

The sooner, friend, one learns Prince Ber-  
thold's pleasure,

The better for us all: how writes the  
Prince?

Give me! I'll read it for the common  
good.

*Gui.* In time, sir,—but till time comes,  
pardon me!

Our old Duke just disclosed his child's  
retreat,

Declared her true succession to his rule,  
And died: this birthday was the day, last

year,

We convoyed her from Castle Ravestein—  
That sleeps out trustfully its extreme age

On the Meuse' quiet bank, where she lived  
queen

• Over the water-buds,—to Juliers' court  
With joy and bustle. Here again we stand;

Sir Gaucelme's buckle's constant to his  
cap;

To-day's much such another sunny day!

# COLOMBE'S BIRTHDAY

[ACT I

*Gau.* Come, Guibert, this outgrows a jest, I think!  
You're hardly such a novice as to need The lesson, you pretend.

*Gui.* What lesson, sir? That everybody, if he'd thrive at court, Should, first and last of all, look to himself?

Why, no: and therefore with your good example,  
(—Ho, Master Adolf!)—to myself I'll look.

*Enter ADOLF.*

*Gui.* The Prince's letter; why, of all men else,  
Comes it to me?

*Adolf.* By virtue of your place, Sir Guibert! 'Twas the Prince's express charge,

His envoy told us, that the missive there Should only reach our lady by the hand Of whosoever held your place.

*Gui.* Enough!

[*ADOLF ret.res.*]

Then, gentles, who'll accept a certain poor Indifferently honourable place,  
My friends, I make no doubt, have gnashed their teeth

At leisure minutes these half-dozen years, To find me never in the mood to quit? Who asks may have it, with my blessing, and—

This to present our lady. Who'll accept? You,—you,—you? There it lies, and may, for me!

*Mau.* [a youth, picking up the paper, reads aloud]. 'Prince Berthold, proved by titles following

'Undoubted Lord of Juliers, comes this day

'To claim his own, with licence from the Pope,

'The Emperor, the Kings of Spain and France'...

*Gau.* Sufficient 'titles following,' I judge!

Don't read another! Well,—'to claim his own?'

*Mau.* —And take possession of the Duchy held

'Since twelve months, to the true heir's prejudice,

'By'... Colombe, Juliers' mistress, so she thinks,

And Ravestein's mere lady, as we find. Who wants the place and paper? Guibert's right.

I hope to climb a little in the world,— I'd push my fortunes,—but, no more than

he, Could tell her on this happy day of days, That, save the nosegay in her hand, per-

haps,

There's nothing left to call her own. Sir Clugnet,

You famish for promotion; what say you? *Clug.* [an old man]. To give this letter

were a sort, I take it, Of service; services ask recompense:

What kind of corner may be Ravestein? *Gui.* The castle? Oh, you'd share her

fortunes? Good! Three walls stand upright, full as good as

four, With no such bad remainder of a roof.

*Clug.* Oh,—but the town? *Gui.* Five houses, fifteen huts;

A church whereto was once a spire, 'tis judged;

And half a dyke, except in time of thaw. *Clug.* Still, there's some revenue?

*Gui.* Else Heaven forfend! You hang a beacon out, should fogs in-

crease; So, when the Autumn floats of pine-wood steer

Safe 'mid the white confusion, thanks to you,

Their grateful raftsmen flings a guilder in; —That's if he mean to pass your way next

time. *Clug.* If not?

*Gui.* Hang guilders, then! He blesses you.

*Clug.* What man do you suppose me? Keep your paper!

And, let me say, it shows no handsome spirit

To dally with misfortune: keep your place!

*Gau.* Some one must tell her. *Gui.* Some one may; you may!

*Gau.* Sir Guibert, 'tis no trifle turns me sick

Of court-hypocrisy at years like mine, But this goes near it. Where's there news

at all? Who'll have the face, for instance, to affirm

He never heard, e'en while we crowned the girl,

That Juliers' tenure was by Salic law; That one, confessed her father's cousin's

child, And, she away, indisputable heir, Against our choice protesting and the

Duke's, Claimed Juliers?—nor, as he preferred his claim,

That first this, then another potentate, Inclined to its allowance?—I or you,

Or any one except the lady's self? Oh, it had been the direst cruelty

To break the business to her! Things might change:

At all events, we'd see next masque at end, Next mummery over first: and so the edge

Was taken off sharp tidings as they came,  
Till here's the Prince upon us, and there's  
she

—Wreathing her hair, a song between her  
lips,

With just the faintest notion possible  
That some such claimant earns a liveli-  
hood

About the world, by feigning grievances—  
Few pay the story of, but grudge its price,  
And fewer listen to, a second time.

Your method proves a failure; now try  
mine!

And, since this must be carried . . .

*Gui. [snatching the paper from him].* By  
your leave!

Your zeal transports you! 'Twill not serve  
the Prince

So much as you expect, this course you'd  
take.

If she leaves quietly her palace,—well;  
But if she died upon its threshold,—no:

He'd have the trouble of removing her.  
Come, gentles, we're all—what the devil

knows!  
You, Gaucelme, won't lose character, be-  
side:

You broke your father's heart superiorly  
To gather his succession—never blush!

You're from my province, and, be com-  
forted,

They tell of it with wonder to this day.  
You can afford to let your talent sleep.

We'll take the very worst supposed, as  
true:

There, the old Duke knew, when he hid his  
child

Among the river-flowers at Ravestein,  
With whom the right lay! Call the Prince

our Duke!  
There, she's no Duchess, she's no any-  
thing

More than a young maid with the bluest  
eyes:

And now, sirs, we'll not break this young  
maid's heart

Coolly as Gaucelme could and would!  
No haste!

His talent's full-blown, ours but in the bud:  
We'll not advance to his perfection yet—

Will we, Sir Maufroy? See, I've ruined  
Maufroy

For ever as a courtier!

*Gau.* Here's a coil!  
And, count us, will you? Count its residue,  
This boasted convoy, this day last year's

crowd!  
A birthday, too, a gratulation day!

I'm dumb: bid that keep silence!

*Mau. and others.* Eh, Sir Guibert?  
He's right: that does say something: that's

bare truth.

Ten—twelve, I make: a perilous dropping  
off!

*Gui.* Pooh—is it audience hour? The  
vestibule

Swarms too, I wager, with the common  
sort

That want our privilege of entry here.  
*Gau.* Adolf! [*Re-enter ADOLF.*] Who's

outside?  
*Gui.* Oh, your looks suffice!

Nobody waiting?  
*Mau.* [*looking through the door-folds*].

Scarce our number!

*Gui.* 'Sdeath!  
Nothing to beg for, to complain about?

It can't be! Ill news spreads, but not so fast  
As thus to frighten all the world!

*Gau.* The world  
Lives out of doors, sir—not with you and

me  
By presence-chamber porches, state-room

stairs,  
Wherever warmth's perpetual: outside's

free  
To every wind from every compass-point,

And who may get nipped needs be weather-  
wise.

The Prince comes and the lady's People  
go;

The snow-goose settles down, the swal-  
lows flee—

Why should they wait for winter-time?  
'Tis instinct.

Don't you feel somewhat chilly?  
*Gui.* That's their craft?

And last year's crowders-round and criers-  
forth

That strewed the garlands, overarched the  
roads,

Lighted the bonfires, sang the loyal songs!  
Well 'tis my comfort, you could never call

me  
The People's Friend! The People keep

their word—  
I keep my place: don't doubt I'll entertain

The People when the Prince comes, and  
the People

Are talked of! Then, their speeches—no  
one tongue

Found respite, not a pen had holiday  
—For they wrote, too, as well as spoke,

these knaves!

Now see: we tax and tithe them, pill and  
poll,

They wince and fret enough, but pay they  
must

—We manage that,—so, pay with a good  
grace

They might as well, it costs so little more.  
But when we've done with taxes, meet folk

next  
Outside the toll-booth and the rating-

place,  
In public—there they have us if they will,

We're at their mercy after that, you see!  
For one tax not ten devils could extort—

# COLOMBE'S BIRTHDAY

[ACT I

Over and above necessity, a grace;  
This prompt disbosoming of love, to wit—

Their vine-leaf wrappage of our tribute penny,  
And crowding attestation, all works well.

Yet this precisely do they thrust on us!  
These cappings quick, these crook-and-

cringings low,  
Hand to the heart, and forehead to the

knee,  
With grin that shuts the eyes and opes the

mouth—  
So tender they their love; and, tender

made,  
Go home to curse us, the first do it we

ask.  
As if their souls were any longer theirs!

As if they had not given ample warrant  
To who should clap a collar on their neck,

Rings in their nose, a goad to either flank,  
And take them for the brute they boast

themselves!  
Stay—there's a bustle at the outer door—

And somebody entreating . . . that's my  
name!

Adolf.—I heard my name!  
Adolf. 'Twas probably

The suitor.  
Gui. Oh, there is one?

Adolf. With a suit  
He'd fain enforce in person.

Gui. The good heart  
—And the great fool! Just ope the mid-

door's fold!  
Is that a lappet of his cloak, I see?

Adolf. If it bear plenteous sign of travel  
. . . ay,

The very cloak my comrades tore!  
Gui. Why tore?

Adolf. He seeks the Duchess' presence  
in that trim:

Since daybreak, was he posted hereabouts  
Lest he should miss the moment.

Gui. Where's he now?  
Adolf. Gone for a minute possibly, not

more:  
They have ado enough to thrust him back.

Gui. Ay—but my name, I caught?  
Adolf. Oh, sir—he said

—What was it?—You had known him  
formerly,

And, he believed, would help him did you  
guess

He waited now; you promised him as  
much:

The old plea! 'Faith, he's back,—renews  
the charge!

[Speaking at the door.] So long as the man,  
parleys, peace outside—

Nor be too ready with your halberts,  
there!

Gau. My horse bespattered, as he  
blocked the path

A thin sour man, not unlike somebody.

Adolf. He holds a paper in his breast,  
whereon

He glances when his cheeks flush and his  
brow

At each repulse—  
Gau. I noticed he'd a brow.

Adolf. So glancing, he grows calmer,  
leans awhile

Over the balustrade, adjusts his dress,  
And presently turns round, quiet again,

With some new pretext for admittance.—  
Back!

[To GUIBERT.]—Sir, he has seen you!  
Now cross halberts! Ha—

Pascal is prostrate—there lies Fabian too!  
No passage! Whither would the madman

press?  
Close the doors quick on me!

Gui. Too late! He's here.

Enter, hastily and with discomposed  
dress, VALENCE.

Val. Sir Guibert, will you help me?—  
me, that come

Charged by your townsmen, all who starve  
at Cleves,

To represent their heights and depths of  
woe

Before our Duchess and obtain relief!  
Such errands barricade such doors, it

seems:  
But not a common hindrance drives me

back  
On all the sad yet hopeful faces, lit

With hope for the first time, which sent  
me forth.

Cleves, speak for me! Cleves' men and  
women, speak!

Who followed me—your strongest—many  
a mile

That I might go the fresher from their  
ranks,

—Who sit—your weakest—by the city  
gates,

To take me fuller of what news I bring  
As I return—for I must needs return!

—Can I? 'Twere hard, no listener for  
their wrongs,

To turn them back upon the old despair—  
Harder, Sir Guibert, than imploring

thus—  
So, I do—any way you please—implore!

If you . . . but how should you remember  
Cleves?

Yet they of Cleves remember you so well!  
Ay, comment on each trait of you they

keep,  
Your words and deeds caught up at second

hand,—  
Proud, I believe, at bottom of their hearts,

O' the very levity and recklessness  
Which only prove that you forget their

wrongs.

Cleves, the grand town, whose men and women starve,  
Is Cleves forgotten? Then, remember me!  
You promised me that you would help me once,

For other purpose: will you keep your word?

*Gui.* And who may you be, friend?

*Val.* Valence of Cleves.

*Gui.* Valence of . . . not the advocate of Cleves,

I owed my whole estate to, three years back?

Ay, well may you keep silence! Why, my lords,

You've heard, I'm sure, how, Pentecost three years,

I was so nearly ousted of my land

By some knave's-pretext—(eh? when you refused me

Your ugly daughter, Clugnet!)—and you've heard

How I recovered it by miracle

—(When I refused her!) Here's the very friend,

—Valence of Cleves, all parties have to thank!

Nay, Valence, this procedure's vile in you!  
I'm no more grateful than a courtier should,

But politic am I—I bear a brain,

Can cast about a little, might require

Your services a second time. I tried

To tempt you with advancement here to court

—'No!'—well, for curiosity at least

To view our life here—'No!'—our Duchess, then,—

A pretty woman's worth some pains to see,  
Nor is she spoiled, I take it, if a crown

Complete the forehead pale and tresses pure . . .

*Val.* Our city trusted me its miseries,  
And I am come.

*Gui.* So much for taste! But 'come,'—

So may you be, for anything I know,

To beg the Pope's cross, or Sir Clugnet's daughter,

And with an equal chance you get all three.  
If it was ever worth your while to come,

Was not the proper way worth finding too?

*Val.* Straight to the palace-portal, sir,  
I came—

*Gui.* —And said?—

*Val.* —That I had brought the miseries

Of a whole city to relieve.

*Gui.* —Which saying Won your admittance? You saw me, indeed,

And here, no doubt, you stand: as certainly,

My intervention, I shall not dispute,  
Procures you audience; which, if I procure,—

That paper's closely written—by Saint Paul,

Here flock the Wrongs, follow the Remedies,

Chapter and verse, One, Two, A, B and C!

Perhaps you'd enter, make a reverence,  
And launch these 'miseries' from first to last?

*Val.* How should they let me pause or turn aside?

*Gau.* [to VALENCE]. My worthy sir, one question! You've come straight

From Cleves, you tell us: heard you any talk

At Cleves about our lady?

*Val.* Much.

*Gau.* And what?

*Val.* Her wish was to redress all wrongs she knew.

*Gau.* That, you believed?

*Val.* You see me, sir!

*Gau.* —Nor stopped Upon the road from Cleves to Juliers here,

For any—rumours you might find afloat?

*Val.* I had my townsmen's wrongs to busy me.

*Gau.* This is the lady's birthday, do you know?

—Her day of pleasure?

*Val.* —That the great, I know,  
For pleasure born, should still be on the watch

To exclude pleasure when a duty offers:

Even as, for duty born, the lowly too

May ever snatch a pleasure if in reach:

Both will have plenty of their birthright, sir!

*Gau.* [aside to GUIBERT]. Sir Guibert, here's your man! No scruples now—

You'll never find his like! Time presses hard.

I've seen your drift and Adolf's too, this while,

But you can't keep the hour of audience back

Much longer, and at noon the Prince arrives.

[Pointing to VALENCE.] Entrust him with it—fool no chance away!

*Gui.* Him?

*Gau.* —With the missive! What's the man to her?

*Gui.* No bad thought! Yet, 'tis yours, who ever played

The tempting serpent: else 'twere no bad thought!

I should—and do—mistrust it for your sake,

Or else . . .

## COLOMBE'S BIRTHDAY

[ACT I

*Enter an Official who communicates with ADOLF.*

*Adolf.* The Duchess will receive the court.

*Gui.* Give us a moment, Adolf! Valence, friend,

I'll help you. We of the service, you're to mark,

Have special entry, while the herd . . . the folk

Outside, get access through our help alone;

—Well, it is so, was so, and I suppose So ever will be: your natural lot is, therefore,

To wait your turn and opportunity, And probably miss both. Now, I engage To set you, here and in a minute's space, Before the lady, with full leave to plead Chapter and verse, and A, and B, and C, To heart's content.

*Val.* I grieve that I must ask.— This being, yourself admit, the custom here,—

To what the price of such a favour mounts?

*Gui.* Just so! You're not without a courtier's tact.

Little at court, as your quick instinct prompts,

Do such as we without a recompense.

*Val.* Yours is?—

*Gui.* A trifle: here's a document 'Tis some one's duty to present her Grace—

I say, not mine—these say, not theirs— such points

Have weight at court. Will you relieve us all

And take it? Just say, 'I am bidden lay

'This paper at the Duchess' feet!'

*Val.* No more?

I thank you, sir!

*Adolf.* Her Grace receives the court.

*Gui.* [aside]. Now, *sursum corda*, quoth the mass-priest! Do—

Whoever's my kind saint, do let alone These pushings to and fro, and pullings back;

Peaceably let me hang o' the devil's arm The downward path, if you can't pluck me off

Completely! Let me live quite his, or yours!

[The Courtiers begin to range themselves, and move toward the door.

After me, Valence! So, our famous Cleves Lacks bread? Yet don't we gallants buy their lace?

And dear enough—it beggars me, I know, To keep my very gloves fringed properly. This, Valence, is our Great State Hall you cross;

Yon grey urn's veritable marcasite,

The Pope's gift; and those salvers testify The Emperor. Presently you'll set your foot

. . . But you don't speak, friend Valence! *Val.* I shall speak.

*Gau.* [aside to GUIBERT]. Guibert—it were no such ungraceful thing

If you and I, at first, seemed horror-struck With the bad news. Look here, what you shall do.

Suppose you, first, clap hand to sword and cry

'Yield strangers our allegiance? First I'll perish

'Beside your Grace!';—and so give me the cue

To . . .

*Gui.* —Clap your hand to note-book and jot down

That to regale the Prince with? I conceive.

[To VALENCE.] Do, Valence, speak, or I shall half suspect

You're plotting to supplant us, me the first,

I' the lady's favour! Is't the grand harangue

You mean to make, that thus engrosses you?

—Which of her virtues you'll apostrophize?

Or is't the fashion you aspire to start, Of that close-curl'd, not unbecoming hair?

Or what else ponder you?

*Val.* My townsmen's wrongs.

## ACT II

NOON

SCENE.—*The Presence-chamber.*

*The DUCHESS and SABYNE.*

*The D.* Announce that I am ready for the court!

*Sab.* 'Tis scarcely audience-hour, I think; your Grace

May best consult your own relief, no doubt,

And shun the crowd: but few can have arrived.

*The D.* Let those not yet arrived, then, keep away!

'Twas me, this day last year at Ravestein, You hurried. It has been full time, beside, This half-hour. Do you hesitate?

*Sab.* Forgive me!

*The D.* Stay, Sabyne; let me hasten to make sure

Of one true thanker: here with you begins My audience, claim you first its privilege! It is my birth's event they celebrate:

You need not wish me more such happy days.

But—ask some favour! Have you none to ask?

Has Adolf none, then? this was far from least

Of much I waited for impatiently, Assure yourself! It seemed so natural Your gift, beside this bunch of river-bells, Should be the power and leave of doing good

To you, and greater pleasure to myself. You ask my leave to-day to marry Adolf? The rest is my concern.

*Sab.* Your Grace is ever Our lady of dear Ravestein,—but, for Adolf...

*The D.* 'But?' You have not, sure, changed in your regard And purpose towards him?

*Sab.* We change? *The D.* Well then? Well?

*Sab.* How could we two be happy, and, most like,

Leave Juliers, when—when . . . but 'tis audience-time!

*The D.* 'When, if you left me, I were left indeed!'

Would you subjoin that?—Bid the court approach!

—Why should we play thus with each other, Sabyne?

Do I not know, if courtiers prove remiss, If friends detain me, and get blame for it,

There is a cause? Of last year's fervid throng

Scarce one half comes now.

*Sab.* [aside]. One half? No, alas!

*The D.* So can the mere suspicion of a cloud

Over my fortunes, strike each loyal heart. They've heard of this Prince Berthold; and, forsooth,

Some foolish arrogant pretence he makes, May grow more foolish and more arrogant,

They please to apprehend! I thank their love.

Admit them!

*Sab.* [aside]. How much has she really learned?

*The D.* Surely, whoever's absent, Tristan waits?

—Or at least Romuald, whom my father raised

From nothing—come, he's faithful to me, come!

(Sabyne, I should but be the prouder—yes, The fitter to comport myself aright)

Not Romuald? Xavier—what said he to that?

For Xavier hates a parasite, I know!

[SABYNE goes out.  
*The D.* Well, sunshine's everywhere, and summer too.

Next year 'tis the old place again, perhaps—

The water-breeze again, the birds again. —It cannot be! It is too late to be!

What part had I, or choice in all of it? Hither they brought me; I had not to think

Nor care, concern myself with doing good Or ill, my task was just—to live,—to live,

And, answering ends there was no need explain,

To render Juliers happy—so they said. All could not have been falsehood; some

was love, And wonder and obedience. I did all

They looked for: why then cease to do it now?

Yet this is to be calmly set aside, And—ere next birthday's dawn, for aught

I know, Things change, a claimant may arrive, and I . . .

It cannot nor it shall not be! His right? Well then, he has the right, and I have

not, —But who bade all of you surround my life

And close its growth up with your ducal crown

Which, plucked off rudely, leaves me perishing?

I could have been like one of you,—loved, hoped,

Feared, lived and died like one of you—but you

Would take that life away and give me this, And I will keep this! I will face you!

Come!

*Enter the COURTIERs and VALENCE.*

*The Courtiers.* Many such happy mornings to your Grace!

*The D.* [aside, as they pay their devoir]. The same words, the same faces,—the same love!

I have been overfearful. These are few; But these, at least, stand firmly: these are

mine. As many come as may; and if no more, 'Tis that these few suffice—they do suffice!

What succour may not next year bring me? Plainly,

I feared too soon. [To the Courtiers.] I thank you, sirs: all thanks!

*Val.* [aside, as the DUCHESS passes from one group to another, conversing]. 'Tis she—the vision this day last year brought,

When, for a golden moment at our Cleves, She tarried in her progress hither. Cleves

Chose me to speak its welcome, and I spoke

—Not that she could have noted the re-

lapse



# COLOMBE'S BIRTHDAY

[ACT II

—Ungainly, old before his time—who gazed.

Well, Heaven's gifts are not wasted, and that gaze

Kept, and shall keep me to the end, her own!

She was above it—but so would not sink My gaze to earth! The People caught it, hers—

Thenceforward, mine; but thus entirely mine,

Who shall affirm, had she not raised my soul

Ere she retired and left me—them? She turns—

There's all her wondrous face at once! The ground

Reels and . . . [*suddenly occupying himself with his paper*]

These wrongs of theirs I have to plead!

*The D.* [*to the Courtiers*]. Nay, compliment enough! and kindness' self Should pause before it wish me more such years.

'Twas fortunate that thus, ere youth escaped,

I tasted life's pure pleasure—one such, pure,

Is worth a thousand, mixed—and youth's for pleasure:

Mine is received; let my age pay for it.

*Gau.* So, pay, and pleasure paid for, thinks your Grace,

Should never go together?

*Gui.* How, Sir Gaucelme? Hurry one's feast down unenjoyingly

At the snatched breathing-intervals of work?

As good you saved it till the dull day's-end

When, stiff and sleepy, appetite is gone.

Eat first, then work upon the strength of food!

*The D.* True: you enable me to risk my future,

By giving me a past beyond recall.

I lived, a girl, one happy leisure year: Let me endeavour to be the Duchess now!

And so,—what news, Sir Guibert, spoke you of?

[*As they advance a little, and GUIBERT speaks—*]

—That gentleman?

*Val.* [*aside*]. I feel her eyes on me.

*Gui.* [*to VALENCE*]. The Duchess, sir, inclines to hear your suit.

Advance! He is from Cleves.

*Val.* [*coming forward. Aside*]. Their wrongs—their wrongs!

*The D.* And you, sir, are from Cleves? How fresh in mind,

The hour or two I passed at queenly Cleves!

She entertained me bravely, but the best

Of her good pageant seemed its standers-by

With insuppressible joy on every face!

What says my ancient famous happy Cleves?

*Val.* Take the truth, lady—you are made for truth!

So think my friends: nor do they less deserve

The having you to take it, you shall think, When you know all—nay, when you only know

How, on that day you recollect at Cleves, When the poor acquiescing multitude

Who thrust themselves with all their woes apart

Into unnoticed corners, that the few, Their means sufficed to muster trappings for,

Might fill the foreground, occupy your sight

With joyous faces fit to bear away And boast of as a sample of all Cleves

—How, when to daylight these crept out once more,

Clutching, unconscious, each his empty rags

Whence the scant coin, which had not half bought bread,

That morn he shook forth, counted piece by piece,

And, well-advisedly, on perfumes spent them

To burn, or flowers to strew, before your path

—How, when the golden flood of music and bliss

Ebbd, as their moon retreated, and again Left the sharp black-point rocks of misery bare

—Then I, their friend, had only to suggest 'Saw she the horror as she saw the pomp!'

And as one man they cried 'He speaks the truth:

'Show her the horror! Take from our own mouths

'Our wrongs and show them, she will see them too!'

This they cried, lady! I have brought the wrongs.

*The D.* Wrongs? Cleves has wrongs—apparent now and thus?

I thank you! In that paper? Give it me!

*Val.* (There, Cleves!) In this! (What did I promise, Cleves?)

Our weavers, clothiers, spinners are reduced

Since . . . Oh, I crave your pardon! I forget I buy the privilege of this approach,

And promptly would discharge my debt. I lay

This paper humbly at the Duchess' feet.

[*Presenting GUIBERT's paper.*]

*Gui.* Stay! for the present . . .

*The D.* Stay, sir? I take aught  
That teaches me their wrongs with greater  
pride  
Than this your ducal circlet. Thank you,  
sir!

[*The DUCHESS reads hastily; then, turning to the Courtiers—*  
What have I done to you? Your deed or  
mine

Was it, this crowning me? I gave myself  
No more a title to your homage, no,  
Than church-flowers, born this season,  
wrote the words

In the saint's-book that sanctified them  
first.

For such a flower, you plucked me; well,  
you erred—

Well, 'twas a weed; remove the eye-sore  
quick!

But should you not remember it has lain  
Steeped in the candles' glory, palely  
shrined,

Nearer God's Mother than most earthly  
things?

—That if 't be faded 'tis with prayer's sole  
breath—

That the one day it boasted was God's  
day?

Still, I do thank you! Had you used re-  
spect,

Here might I dwindle to my last white leaf,  
Here lose life's latest freshness, which even  
yet

May yield some wandering insect rest and  
food:

So, fling me forth, and—all is best for all!  
[*After a pause.*] Prince Berthold, who art

Juliers' Duke it seems—  
The King's choice, and the Emperor's, and  
the Pope's—

Be mine, too! Take this People! Tell not  
me  
Of rescripts, precedents, authorities,

—But take them, from a heart that yearns  
to give!

Find out their love,—I could not; find  
their fear,—

I would not; find their like,—I never shall,  
Among the flowers!

[*Taking off her coronet.*  
Colombe of Ravestein  
Thanks God she is no longer Duchess  
here!

*Val.* [*advancing to GUIBERT*]. Sir Gui-  
bert, knight, they call you—this of  
mine

Is the first step I ever set at court.  
You dared make me your instrument, I  
find;

For that, so sure as you and I are men,  
We reckon to the utmost presently:

But as you are a courtier and I none,  
Your knowledge may instruct me. I, al-  
ready,

Have too far outraged, by my ignorance  
Of courtier-ways, this lady, to proceed  
A second step and risk addressing her:  
—I am degraded—you let me address!  
Out of her presence, all is plain enough  
What I shall do—but in her presence, too,  
Surely there's something proper to be  
done.

[*To the others.*] You, gentles, tell me if I  
guess aright—

May I not strike this man to earth?

*The Courtiers* [*as GUIBERT springs for-  
ward, withholding him*]. Let go!

—The clothiers' spokesman, Guibert?  
Grace a churl?

*The D.* [*to VALENCE*]. Oh, be acquainted  
with your party, sir!

He's of the oldest lineage Juliers boasts;  
A lion crests him for a cognizance;

'Scorning to waver'—that's his 'scutch-  
con's word;

His office with the new Duke—probably  
The same in honour as with me; or more,

By so much as this gallant turn deserves.  
He's now, I dare say, of a thousand times

The rank and influence that remain with  
her

Whose part you take! So, lest for taking  
it

You suffer . . .

*Val.* I may strike him then to earth?

*Gui.* [*falling on his knee*]. Great and  
dear lady, pardon me! Hear once!

Believe me and be merciful—be just!  
I could not bring myself to give that paper

Without a keener pang than I dared meet  
—And so felt Clugnet here, and Maufroy

here  
—No one dared meet it. Protestation's  
cheap,—

But, if to die for you did any good,  
[*To GAUCELME.*] Would not I die, sir? Say

your worst of me!  
But it does no good, that's the mournful

truth.

And since the hint of a resistance, even,  
Would just precipitate, on you the first,

A speedier ruin—I shall not deny,  
Saving myself indubitable pain,

I thought to give you pleasure (who might  
say?)

By showing that your only subject found  
To carry the sad notice, was the man

Precisely ignorant of its contents;  
A nameless, mere provincial advocate;

One whom 'twas like you never saw be-  
fore,

Never would see again. All has gone  
wrong;

But I meant right, God knows, and you,  
I trust!

*The D.* A nameless advocate, this  
gentleman?

—(I pardon you, Sir Guibert!)

# COLOMBE'S BIRTHDAY

[ACT II

*Gui.* [*rising, to VALENCE*]. Sir, and you?  
*Val.*—Rejoice that you are lightened  
of a load.

Now, you have only me to reckon with.  
*The D.* One I have never seen, much  
less obliged?

*Val.* Dare I speak, lady?

*The D.* Dare you!

Heard you not

I rule no longer?

*Val.* Lady, if your rule  
Were based alone on such a ground as  
these [*Pointing to the Courtiers*].  
Could furnish you,—abjure it! They have  
hidden

A source of true dominion from your sight.

*The D.* You hear them—no such  
source is left . . .

*Val.* Hear Cleves!

Whose haggard craftsmen rose to starve  
this day,

Starve now, and will lie down at night to  
starve,

Sure of a like to-morrow—but as sure  
Of a most unlike morrow-after-that,  
Since end things must, end howsoe'er  
things may.

What curbs the brute-force instinct in its  
hour?

What makes—instead of rising, all as one,  
And teaching fingers, so expert to wield  
Their tool, the broadsword's play or car-  
bine's trick,

—What makes that there's an easier help,  
they think,

For you, whose name so few of them can  
spell,

Whose face scarce one in every hundred  
saw,—

You simply have to understand their  
wrongs,

And wrongs will vanish—so, still trades  
are plied,

And swords lie rusting, and myself stand  
here?

There is a vision in the heart of each  
Of justice, mercy, wisdom, tenderness  
To wrong and pain, and knowledge of its  
cure:

And these embodied in a woman's form  
That best transmits them, pure as first re-  
ceived,

From God above her, to mankind below.  
Will you derive your rule from such a  
ground,

Or rather hold it by the suffrage, say,  
Of this man—this—and this?

*The D.* [*after a pause*]. You come from  
Cleves:

How many are at Cleves of such a mind?

*Val.* [*from his paper*]. 'We, all the  
manufacturers of Cleves—'

*The D.* Or stay, sir,—lest I seem too  
covetous—

Are you my subject? such as you describe,  
Am I to you, though to no other man?

*Val.* [*from his paper*]. —'Valence, or-  
dained your Advocate at Cleves,—'

*The D.* [*replacing the coronet*]. Then I  
remain Cleves' Duchess! Take you  
note,

While Cleves but yields one subject of this  
stamp,

I stand her lady till she waves me off!

For her sake, all the Prince claims I with-  
hold;

Laugh at each menace; and, his power  
defying,

Return his missive with its due contempt!

[*Casting it away.*]

*Gui.* [*picking it up*]. —Which to the  
Prince I will deliver, lady,

(Note it down, Gaucelme)—with your  
message too!

*The D.* I think the office is a subject's,  
sir!

—Either . . . how style you him?—my  
special guarder

The Marshal's—for who knows but  
violence

May follow the delivery?—Or, perhaps,  
My Chancellor's—for law may be to urge

On its receipt!—Or, even my Chamber-  
lain's—

For I may violate established form!

[*To VALENCE*]. Sir,—for the half-hour till  
this service ends,

Will you become all these to me?

*Val.* [*falling on his knee*]. My liege!

*The D.* Give me!

[*The Courtiers present their badges of  
office.*]

[*Putting them by.*] Whatever was their  
virtue once,

They need new consecration. [*Raising  
VALENCE.*] Are you mine?

I will be Duchess yet! [*She retires.*  
*The Courtiers.* Our Duchess yet!

A glorious lady! Worthy love and dread!  
I'll stand by her,—And I, what'er betide!

*Gui.* [*to VALENCE*]. Well done, well  
done, sir! I care not who knows,

You have done nobly and I envy you—  
Tho' I am but unfairly used, I think:

For when one gets a place like this I hold,  
One gets too the remark that its mere

wages,  
The pay and the preferment, make our

prize.

Talk about zeal and faith apart from these,  
We're laughed at—much would zeal and

faith subsist  
Without these also! Yet, let these be

stopped,

Our wages discontinue,—then, indeed,  
Our zeal and faith, (we hear on every side,)

Are not released—having been pledged  
away

ACT II

I wonder, for what zeal and faith in turn?  
Hard money purchased me my place! No,  
no—

I'm right, sir—but your wrong is better  
still,

If I had time and skill to argue it.  
Therefore, I say, I'll serve you, how you  
please—

If you like,—fight you, as you seem to  
wish—

(The kinder of me that, in sober truth,  
I never dreamed I did you any harm) . . .

*Gau.* —Or, kinder still, you'll intro-  
duce, no doubt,

His merits to the Prince who's just at  
hand,

And let no hint drop he's made Chancellor  
And Chamberlain and Heaven knows  
what beside!

*Clug.* [to VALENCE]. You stare, young  
sir, and threaten! Let me say,

That at your age, when first I came to  
court,

I was not much above a gentleman;  
While now . . .

*Val.* —You are Head-Lackey?  
With your office

I have not yet been graced, sir!  
*Other Courtiers* [to CLUGNET]. Let him  
talk!

Fidelity, disinterestedness,  
Excuse so much! Men claim my worship  
ever

Who staunchly and steadfastly . . .

*Enter ADOLF.*

*Adolf.* The Prince arrives.  
*Courtiers.* Ha? How?

*Adolf.* He leaves his guard a stage be-  
hind

At Aix, and enters almost by himself.  
*1st Court.* The Prince! This foolish  
business puts all out.

*2nd Court.* Let Gaucelme speak first!  
*3rd Court.* Better I began

About the state of Juliers: should one say  
All's prosperous and inviting him?

*4th Court.* —Or rather,  
All's prostrate and imploring him?

*5th Court.* That's best!  
Where's the Cleves' paper, by the way?

*4th Court.* [to VALENCE]. Sir—sir—  
If you'll but lend that paper—trust it me,  
I'll warrant . . .

*5th Court.* Softly, sir—the Marshal's  
duty!

*Clug.* Has not the Chamberlain a hear-  
ing first

By virtue of his patent?  
*Gau.* Patents?—Duties?

All that, my masters, must begin again!  
One word composes the whole contro-  
versy;

COLOMBE'S BIRTHDAY

We're simply now—the Prince's!  
*The Others.* Ay—the Prince's!

*Enter SABYNE.*

*Sab.* Adolf! Bid . . . Oh, no time for  
ceremony!

Where's whom our lady calls her only  
subject?

She needs him. Who is here the Duchess's?  
*Val.* [starting from his reverie]. Most  
gratefully I follow to her feet.

ACT III

AFTERNOON

SCENE.—*The Vestibule.*

*Enter PRINCE BERTHOLD and MELCHIOR.*

*Berth.* A thriving little burgh this Juliers  
looks.

[*Half-apart.*] Keep Juliers, and as good  
you kept Cologne:

•Better try Aix, though!—  
*Mel.* Please't your Highness speak?

*Berth.* [as before]. Aix, Cologne, Frank-  
fort,—Milan;—Rome!—

*Mel.* The Grave.  
More weary seems your Highness, I re-  
mark,

Than sundry conquerors whose path I've  
watched

Through fire and blood to any prize they  
gain.

I could well wish you, for your proper  
sake,

Had met some shade of opposition here  
—found a blunt seneschal refuse unlock,

Or a scared usher lead your steps astray.  
You must not look for next achievement's

palm  
So easily: this will hurt your conquering.

*Berth.* My next? Ay, as you say, my  
next and next!

Well, I am tired, that's truth, and moody  
too,

This quiet entrance-morning: listen why!  
Our little burgh, now, Juliers—'tis indeed

One link, however insignificant,  
Of the great chain by which I reach my

hope,  
—A link I must secure; but otherwise,

You'd wonder I esteem it worth my grasp.  
Just see what life is, with its shifts and

turns!  
It happens now—this very nook—to be

A place that once . . . not a long while since,  
neither—

When I lived an ambiguous hanger-on  
•Of foreign courts, and bore my claims

about,  
Discarded by one kinsman, and the other

A poor priest merely,—then, I say, this  
place

# COLOMBE'S BIRTHDAY

[ACT III]

Shone my ambition's object; to be Duke—  
Seemed then, what to be Emperor seems  
now.

My rights were far from judged as plain  
and sure

In those days as of late, I promise you:  
And 'twas my day-dream, Lady Colombe  
here

Might e'en compound the matter, pity me,  
Be struck, say, with my chivalry and grace  
(I was a boy!)—bestow her hand at length,  
And make me Duke, in her right if not  
mine.

Here am I, Duke confessed, at Juliers now.  
Hearken: if ever I be Emperor,  
Remind me what I felt and said to-day!

*Mel.* All this consoles a bookish man  
like me.

—And so will weariness cling to you.  
Wrong,

Wrong! Had you sought the lady's court  
yourself,—

Faced the redoubtables composing it,  
Flattered this, threatened that man, bribed,  
the other,—

Pleaded by writ and word and deed, your  
cause,—

Conquered a footing inch by painful  
inch,—

And, after long years' struggle, pounced  
at last

On her for prize,—the right life had been  
lived,

And justice done to divers faculties  
Shut in that brow. Yourself were visible  
As you stood victor, then; whom now—  
(your pardon!)

I am forced narrowly to search and see,  
So are you hid by helps—this Pope, your  
uncle—

Your cousin, the other King! You are a  
mind,—

They, body: too much of mere legs-and-  
arms

Obstructs the mind so! Match these with  
their like:

Match mind with mind!

*Berth.* And where's your  
mind to match?

They show me legs-and-arms to cope  
withal!

I'd subjugate this city—where's its mind?  
[*The Courtiers enter slowly.*]

*Mel.* Got out of sight when you came  
troops and all!

And in its stead, here greets you flesh-and-  
blood:

A smug economy of both, this first!

[*As CLUGNET bows obsequiously.*]  
Well done, gout, all considered!—I may  
go?

*Berth.* Help me receive them!

*Mel.* Oh, they just will say  
What yesterday at Aix their fellows said—

At Treves, the day before! Sir Prince, my  
friend,

Why do you let your life slip thus?—  
Meantime,

I have my little Juliers to achieve—  
The understanding this tough Platonist,  
Your holy uncle disinterred, Amelius:  
Lend me a company of horse and foot,  
To help me through his tractate—gain my  
Duchy!

*Berth.* And Empire, after that is gained,  
will be—?

*Mel.* To help me through your uncle's  
comment, Prince! [*Goes.*]

*Berth.* Ah? Well: he o'er-refines—the  
scholar's fault!

How do I let my life slip? Say, this life,  
I lead now, differs from the common life  
Of other men in mere degree, not kind,  
Of joys and griefs,—still there is such  
degree

Mere largeness in a life is something,  
sure,—

Enough to care about and struggle for,  
In this world: for this world, the size of  
things;

The sort of things, for that to come, no  
doubt.

A great is better than a little aim:  
And when I wooed Priscilla's rosy mouth

And failed so, under that grey convent-  
wall,

Was I more happy than I should be now  
[*By this time, the Courtiers are ranged  
before him.*]

If failing of my Empire? Not a whit.  
—Here comes the mind, it once had tasked  
me sore

To baffle, but for my advantages!  
All's best as 'tis: these scholars talk and  
talk. [*Seats himself.*]

*The Courtiers.* Welcome our Prince to  
Juliers!—to his heritage!

Our dutifullest service proffer we!

*Clug.* I, please your Highness, having  
exercised

The function of Grand Chamberlain at  
court,

With much acceptance, as men testify . . .

*Berth.* I cannot greatly thank you,  
gentlemen!

The Pope declares my claim to the Duchy  
founded

On strictest justice—you concede it, there-  
fore,

I do not wonder: and the kings my friends  
Protest they mean to see such claim en-  
forced,—

You easily may offer to assist.

But there's a slight discretionary power  
To serve me in the matter, you've had  
long,

Though late you use it. This is well to  
say—

But could you not have said it months ago?

I'm not denied my own Duke's truncheon, true—

'Tis flung me—I stoop down, and from the ground

Pick it, with all you placid standers-by: And now I have it, gems and mire at once, Grace go with it to my soiled hands, you say!

*Gui.* (By Paul, the advocate our doughty friend

Cuts the best figure!)

*Gau.* If our ignorance

May have offended, sure our loyalty . . .

*Berth.* Loyalty? Yours? Oh—of yourselves you speak!

I mean the Duchess all this time, I hope! And since I have been forced repeat my claims

As if they never had been urged before, As I began, so must I end, it seems.

The formal answer to the grave demand! What says the lady?

*Courtiers* [one to another]. 1st *Court.*

Marshal! 2nd *Court.* Orator!

*Gui.* A variation of our mistress' way! Wipe off his boots' dust, Clugnet!—that, he waits!

1st *Court.* Your place!

2nd *Court.* Just now it was your own!

*Gui.* The devil's!

*Berth.* [to GUIBERT]. Come forward, friend—you with the paper, there!

Is Juliers the first city I've obtained? By this time, I may boast proficiency

In each decorum of the circumstance. Give it me as she gave it—the petition,

Demand, you style it! What's required, in brief?

What title's reservation, appanage's Allowance? I heard all at Treves, last week.

*Gau.* [to GUIBERT]. 'Give it him as she gave it!'

*Gui.* And why not?

[To BERTHOLD.] The lady crushed your summons thus together,

And bade me, with the very greatest scorn So fair a frame could hold, inform you . . .

*Courtiers.* Stop—Idiot!

*Gui.* —Inform you she denied your claim,

Defied yourself! (I tread upon his heel, The blustering advocate!)

*Berth.* By heaven and earth!

Dare you jest, sir?

*Gui.* Did they at Treves, last week?

*Berth.* [starting up]. Why then, I look much bolder than I knew,

And you prove better actors than I thought:

Since, as I live, I took you as you entered For just so many dearest friends of mine, Fled from the sinking to the rising power —The sneaking'st crew, in short, I e'er despised!

Whereas, I am alone here for the moment, With every soldier left behind at Aix!

Silence? That means the worst? I thought as much!

What follows next then?

*Courtiers.* Gracious Prince, he raves!

*Gui.* He asked the truth and why not get the truth?

*Berth.* Am I a prisoner? Speak, will somebody?

—But why stand paltering with imbeciles? Let me see her, or . . .

*Gui.* Her, without her leave, Shall no one see: she's Duchess yet!

*Courtiers* [footsteps without, as they are disputing]. Good chance!

She's here—the Lady Colombe's self!

*Berth.* 'Tis well!

[Aside.] Array a handful thus against my world?

Not ill done, truly! Were not this a mind To match one's mind with? Colombe!

Let us wait!

I failed so, under that grey convent wall! She comes.

*Gui.* The Duchess! Strangers, range yourselves!

[As the DUCHESS enters in conversation with VALENCE, BERTHOLD and the Courtiers fall back a little.

The D. Presagefully it beats, presagefully,

My heart: the right is Berthold's and not mine.

*Val.* Grant that he has the right, dare I mistrust

Your power to acquiesce so patiently As you believe, in such a dream-like

change Of fortune—change abrupt, profound, complete?

The D. Ah, the first bitterness is over now!

Bitter I may have felt it to confront The truth, and ascertain those natures' value

I had so counted on; that was a pang: But I did bear it, and the worst is over.

Let the Prince take them!

*Val.* And take Juliers too?

—Your people without crosses, wands and chains—

Only with hearts?

The D. There I feel guilty, sir! I cannot give up what I never had:

For I ruled these, not them—these stood between.

I Shall I confess, sir? I have heard by stealth

# COLOMBE'S BIRTHDAY,

[ACT III

Of Berthold from the first; more news and more;

Closer and closer swam the thundercloud,  
But I was safely housed with these, I knew.  
At times when to the casement I would turn,

At a bird's passage or a flower-trail's play,  
I caught the storm's red glimpses on its edge—

Yet I was sure some one of all these friends  
Would interpose: I followed the bird's flight

Or plucked the flower: some one would interpose!

*Val.* Not one thought on the People—  
and Cleves there!

*The D.* Now, sadly conscious my real  
sway was missed,

Its shadow goes without so much regret:  
Else could I not again thus calmly bid you,  
Answer Prince Berthold!

*Val.* Then you acquiesce?

*The D.* Remember over whom it was  
I ruled!

*Gut. [stepping forward].* Prince Berthold,  
yonder, craves an audience, lady!

*The D. [to VALENCE].* I only have to  
turn, and I shall face

Prince Berthold! Oh, my very heart is  
sick!

It is the daughter of a line of Dukes  
This scornful insolent adventurer  
Will bid depart from my dead father's  
halls!

I shall not answer him—dispute with  
him—

But, as he bids, depart! Prevent it, sir!  
Sir—but a mere day's respite! Urge for  
me

—What I shall call to mind I should have  
urged

When time's gone by: 'twill all be mine,  
you urge!

A day—an hour—that I myself may lay  
My rule down! 'Tis too sudden—must  
not be!

The world's to hear of it! Once done—  
for ever!

How will it read, sir? How be sung about?  
Prevent it!

*Berth. [approaching].* Your frank in-  
dignation, lady,

Cannot escape me. Overbold I seem;  
But somewhat should be pardoned my  
surprise

At this reception,—this defiance, rather.  
And if, for their and your sake, I rejoice

Your virtues could inspire a trusty few  
To make such gallant stand in your behalf,

I cannot but be sorry, for my own,  
Your friends should force me to retrace

my steps:  
Since I no longer am permitted speak

After the pleasant peaceful course pre-  
scribed

No less by courtesy than relationship—  
Which I remember, if you once forgot.

But never must attack pass unrepelled.  
Suffer that, through you, I demand of  
these,

Who 'controverts my claim to Juliers?  
*The D.* —Me

You say, you do not speak to—  
*Berth.* Of your subjects

I ask, then: whom do you accredit? Where  
Stand those should answer?

*Val. [advancing].* The lady is alone.  
*Berth.* Alone, and thus? So weak and  
yet so bold?

*Val.* I said she was alone—  
*Berth.* And weak, I  
said.

*Val.* When is man strong until he feels  
alone?

It was some lonely strength at first, be  
sure,

Created organs, such as those you seek,  
By which to give its varied purpose shape:

And, naming the selected ministrants,  
Took sword, and shield, and sceptre,—  
each, a man!

That strength performed its work and  
passed its way:

You see our lady: there, the old shapes  
stand!

—A Marshal, Chamberlain, and Chan-  
cellor—

'Be helped their way, into their death put  
life

'And find advantage!'—so you counsel us.  
But let strength feel alone, seek help it-  
self,—

And, as the inland-hatched sea-creature  
hunts

The sea's breast out,—as, littered 'mid the  
waves

The desert-brute makes for the desert's  
joy,

So turns our lady to her true resource,  
Passing o'er hollow fictions, worn-out  
types,

—And I am first her instinct fastens on.  
And prompt I say, as clear as heart can  
speak,

The People will not have you; nor shall  
have!

It is not merely I shall go bring Cleves  
And fight you to the last,—though that  
does much,

And men and children,—ay, and women  
too,

Fighting for home, are rather to be feared  
Than mercenaries fighting for their pay—

But, say you beat us, since such things  
have been,

And, where this Juliers laughed, you set  
your foot

Upon a steaming bloody plash—what then?

Stand you the more our lord that there you stand?

Lord it o'er troops whose force you concentrate,

A pillared flame whereto all ardours tend—

Lord it 'mid priests whose schemes you amplify,

A cloud of smoke 'neath which all shadows brood—

But never, in this gentle spot of earth, Can you become our Colombe, our play-queen,

For whom, to furnish lilies for her hair, We'd pour our veins forth to enrich the soil.

—Our conqueror? Yes!—Our despot? Yes!—Our Duke?

Know yourself, know us!

*Berth.* [who has been in thought]. Know your lady, also!

[*Very deferentially.*]—To whom I need must exculpate myself

For having made a rash demand, at least. Wherefore to you, sir, who appear to be

Her chief adviser, I submit my claims, [Giving papers.

But, this step taken, take no further step, Until the Duchess shall pronounce their worth.

Here be our meeting-place; at night, its time:

Till when I humbly take the lady's leave!

[*He withdraws. As the DUCHESS turns to VALENCE, the Courtiers interchange glances and come forward a little.*

*1st Court.* So, this was their device!

*2nd Court.* No bad device!

*3rd Court.* You'd say they love each other, Guibert's friend

From Cleves, and she, the Duchess!

*4th Court.* —And moreover, That all Prince Berthold comes for, is to help

Their loves!

*5th Court.* Pray, Guibert, what is next to do?

*Gui.* [advancing]. I laid my office at the Duchess' foot—

*Others.* And I—and I—and I!

*The D.* I took them, sirs. *Gui.* [apart to VALENCE]. And now, sir, I am simple knight again—

Guibert, of the great ancient house, as yet That never bore affront; whate'er your birth,—

As things stand now, I recognize yourself (If you'll accent experience of some date)\*

As like to be the leading man o' the time, Therefore as much above me now, as I

Seemed above you this morning. Then, I offered

To fight you: will you be as generous And now fight me?

*Val.* Ask when my life is mine!

*Gui.* ('Tis hers now!)

*Clug.* [apart to VALENCE, as GUIBERT turns from him]. You, sir, have insulted me

Grossly,—will grant me, too, the selfsame favour

You've granted him, just now, I make no question?

*Val.* I promise you, as him, sir.

*Clug.* Do you so? Handsomely said! I hold you to it, sir. You'll get me reinstated in my office

As you will Guibert!

*The D.* I would be alone!

[*They begin to retire slowly; as VALENCE is about to follow—*

Alone, sir—only with my heart: you stay!

*Gau.* You hear that? Ah, light breaks upon me! Cleves—

It was at Cleves some man harangued us all—

With great effect,—so those who listened said,

My thoughts being busy elsewhere: was this he?

Guibert,—your strange, disinterested man!

Your uncorrupted, if uncourtly friend! The modest worth you mean to patronize!

He cares about no Duchesses, not he— His sole concern is with the wrongs of Cleves!

What, Guibert? What, it breaks on you at last?

*Gui.* Would this hall's floor were a mine's roof! I'd back

And in her very face . . .

*Gau.* Apply the match

That fired the train,—and where would you be, pray?

*Gui.* With him!

*Gau.* Stand, rather, safe

outside with me!

The mine's charged: shall I furnish you the match

And place you properly? To the antechamber!

*Gui.* Can you?

*Gau.* Try me! Your friend's in fortune!

*Gui.* Quick—

To the antechamber! He is pale with bliss!

*Gau.* No wonder! Mark her eyes!

*Gui.* To the antechamber!

[*The Courtiers retire.*

*The D.* Sir, could you know all you have done for me

You were content! You spoke, and I am saved.

*Val.* Be not too sanguine, lady! Ere you dream,



## COLOMBE'S BIRTHDAY,

[ACT III]

That transient flush of generosity  
Fades off, perchance. The man, beside,  
is gone,—

Him we might bend; but see, the papers  
here—

Inalterably his requirement stays,  
And cold hard words have we to deal with  
now.

In that large eye there seemed a 'latent  
pride,

To self-denial not incompetent,  
But very like to hold itself dispensed  
From such a grace: however, let us hope!  
He is a noble spirit in noble form.

I wish he less had bent that brow to smile  
As with the fancy how he could subject  
Himself upon occasion to—himself!

From rudeness, violence, you rest secure;  
But do not think your Duchy rescued yet!

*The D.* You,—who have opened a new  
world to me,

Will never take the faded language up  
Of that I leave? My Duchy—keeping it,  
Or losing it—is that my sole world now?

*Val.* Ill have I spoken if you thence  
despise

Juliers; although the lowest, on true  
grounds,

Be worth more than the highest rule, on  
false:

Aspire to rule, on the true grounds!

*The D.* Nay, hear—

False, I will never—rash, I would not be!  
This is indeed my birthday—soul and  
body,

Its hours have done on me the work of  
years.

You hold the requisition: ponder it!  
If I have right, my duty's plain: if he—

Say so, nor ever change a tone of voice!  
At night you meet the Prince; meet me at  
eve!

Till when, farewell! This discomposes  
you?

Believe in your own nature, and its force  
Of renovating mine! I take my stand

Only as under me the earth is firm:  
So, prove the first step stable, all will  
prove.

That first, I choose: [*Laying her hand on*  
*his.*—the next to take, choose you!

[*She withdraws.*

*Val.* [*after a pause.*] What drew down  
this on me?—on me, dead once,

She thus bids live,—since all I hitherto  
Thought dead in me, youth's ardours and  
emprise,

Burst into life before her, as she bids  
Who needs them. Whither will this reach,  
where end?

Her hand's print burns on mine . . . Yet  
she's above—

So very far above me! All's too plain:  
I served her when the others sank away,

And she rewards me as such souls re-  
ward—

The changed voice, the suffusion of the  
cheek,

The eye's acceptance, the expressive hand,  
—Reward, that's little, in her generous  
thought,

Though all to me . . .

I cannot so disclaim  
Heaven's gift, nor call it other than it!

She loves me!  
[*Looking at the Prince's papers.*]—Which  
love, these, perchance, forbid.

Can I decide against myself—pronounce  
She is the Duchess and no mate for me?

—Cleves, help me! Teach me,—every  
haggard face,—

To sorrow and endure! I will do right  
Whatever be the issue. Help me, Cleves!

## ACT IV

### EVENING

SCENE.—*An Antechamber.*

*Enter the Courtiers.*

*Mau.* Now, then, that we may speak  
—how spring this mine?

*Gau.* Is Guibert ready for its match?  
He cools!

Not so friend Valence with the Duchess  
there!

'Stay, Valence! Are not you my better  
self?'

And her cheek mantled—  
*Gui.* Well, she loves him, sir:

And more,—since you will have it I grow  
cool,—

She's right: he's worth it.  
*Gau.* For his deeds to-day?

Say so!  
*Gui.* What should I say beside?

*Gau.* Not this—  
For friendship's sake leave this for me to  
say—

That we're the dupes of an egregious  
cheat!

This plain unpractised suitor, who found  
way

To the Duchess through the merest die's  
turn-up

A year ago, had seen her and been seen,  
Loved and been loved.

*Gui.* Impossible!  
*Gau.* —Nor say,

How sly and exquisite a trick, moreover,  
Was this which—taking not their stand  
on facts

Boldly, for that had been endurable,  
But worming on their way by craft, they  
choose

Resort to, rather,—and which you and  
we,

Sheep-like, assist them in the playing-off!

The Duchess thus parades him as preferred,

Not on the honest ground of preference,  
Seeing first, liking more, and there an end—

But as we all had started equally,  
And at the close of a fair race he proved  
The only valiant, sage and loyal man.  
Herself, too, with the pretty fits and starts,—

The careless, winning, candid ignorance  
Of what the Prince might challenge or forego—

She had a hero in reserve! What risk  
Ran she? This deferential easy Prince  
Who brings his claims for her to ratify  
—He's just her puppet for the nonce!

You'll see,—

Valence pronounces, as is equitable,  
Against him: off goes the confederate:

As equitable, Valence takes her hand!

*The Chancellor.* You run too fast: her hand, no subject takes.

Do not our archives hold her father's will?  
That will provides against such accident,  
And gives next heir, Prince Berthold, the reversion

Of Juliers, which she forfeits, wedding so.

*Gau.* I know that, well as you,—but does the Prince?

Knows Berthold, think you, that this plan, he helps,

For Valence's ennoblement,—would end,  
If crowned with the success which seems its due,

In making him the very thing he plays,  
The actual Duke of Juliers? All agree  
That Colombe's title waived or set aside,  
He is next heir.

*The Chan.* Incontrovertibly.

*Gau.* Guibert, your match, now, to the train!

*Gui.* Enough!

I'm with you: selfishness is best again.  
I thought of turning honest—what a dream!

Let's wake now!

*Gau.* Selfish, friend, you never were:  
'Twas but a series of revenges taken  
On your unselfishness for prospering ill.  
But now that you're grown wiser, what's our course?

*Gui.* —Wait, I suppose, till Valence  
weds our lady,

And then, if we must needs revenge ourselves,

Apprise the Prince.

*Gau.* —The Prince, ere then dismissed

With thanks for playing his mock part so well?

Tell the Prince now, sir! Ay, this very night,

Ere he accepts his dole and goes his way,

Explain how such a marriage makes him Duke,

Then trust his gratitude for the surprise!

*Gui.* —Our lady wedding Valence all the same

As if the penalty were undisclosed?

Good! If she loves, she'll not disown her love,

Throw Valence up. I wonder you see that.

*Gau.* The shame of it!—the suddenness and shame!

Within her, the inclining heart—without,  
A terrible array of witnesses—

And Valence by, to keep her to her word,  
With Berthold's indignation or disgust!

We'll try it!—Not that we can venture much.

Her confidence we've lost for ever: Berthold's

Is all to gain.

*Gui.* To-night, then, venture we!

Yet—if lost confidence might be renewed?

*Gau.* Never in noble natures! With the base ones,—

Twist off the crab's claw, wait a smarting-while,

And something grows and grows and gets to be

A mimic of the lost joint, just so like

As keeps in mind it never, never will

Replace its predecessor! Crabs do that:

But lop the lion's foot—and . . .

*Gui.* To the Prince!

*Gau.* [*aside*]. And come what will to the lion's foot, I pay you,

My cat's-paw, as I long have yearned to pay.

[*Aloud.*] Footsteps! Himself! 'Tis Valence breaks on us,

Exulting that their scheme succeeds. We'll hence—

And perfect ours! Consult the archives, first—

Then, fortified with knowledge, seek the Hall!

*Clug.* [*to GAUCELME as they retire*]. You have not smiled so since your father died!

As they retire, enter VALENCE with papers.

*Val.* So must it be! I have examined these

With scarce a palpitating heart—so calm,  
Keeping her image almost wholly off,

Setting upon myself determined watch,  
Repealing to the uttermost his claims:

And the result is—all men would pronounce

And not I, only, the result to be—

Berthold is heir; she has no shade of right  
To the distinction which divided us,

But, suffered to rule first, I know not why,  
Her rule connived at by those Kings and

Popes,

# COLOMBE'S BIRTHDAY,

[ACT IV

To serve some devil's-purpose,—now 'tis gained,

Whate'er it was, the rule expires as well.  
—Valence, this rapture . . . selfish can it be?

Eject it from your heart, her home!—It stays!

Ah, the brave world that opens on us both!

—Do my poor townsmen so esteem it? Cleves,—

I need not your pale faces! This, reward  
For service done to you? Too horrible!  
I never served you: 'twas myself I served—  
Nay, served not—rather saved from punishment

Which, had I failed you then, would plague me now.

My life continues yours, and your life, mine.

But if, to take God's gift, I swerve no step—

Cleves! If I breathe no prayer for it—if she,

Colombe, that comes now, freely gives herself—

Will Cleves require, that, turning thus to her,

I . . .

*Enter Prince BERTHOLD.*

Pardon, sir! I did not look for you  
Till night, i' the Hall; nor have as yet declared

My judgment to the lady.

*Berth.* So I hoped.

*Val.* And yet I scarcely know why that should check

The frank disclosure of it first to you—  
What her right seems, and what, in consequence,

She will decide on.

*Berth.* That I need not ask.

*Val.* You need not: I have proved the lady's mind:

And, justice being to do, dare act for her.

*Berth.* Doubtless she has a very noble mind.

*Val.* Oh, never fear but she'll in each conjuncture

Bear herself bravely! She no whit depends  
On circumstance; as she adorns a throne,  
She had adorned . . .

*Berth.* A cottage—in what book  
Have I read that, of every queen that lived?

A throne! You have not been instructed,

sure,

To forestall my request?

*Val.* 'Tis granted, sir!

My heart instructs me. I have scrutinized  
Your claims . . .

*Berth.* Ah—claims, you mean,  
at first preferred?

With a Duke's marriage. How go precedents

In Juliers' story—how use Juliers' Dukes? I see you have them here in goodly row; Yon must be Luitpold—ay, a stalwart sire!

Say, I have been arrested suddenly, In my ambition's course, its rocky course, By this sweet flower: I fain would gather it

And then proceed: so say and speedily —(Nor stand there like Duke Luitpold's brazen self!)

Enough, sir: you possess my mind, I think. This is my claim, the others being withdrawn,

And to this be it that, i' the Hall to-night, Your lady's answer comes; till when, farewell! [He retires.

*Val.* [after a pause]. The heavens and earth stay as they were; my heart Beats at its beat: the truth remains the truth.

What falls away, then, if not faith in her? Was it my faith, that she could estimate Love's value, and, such faith still guiding me,

Dare I now test her? Or grew faith so strong

Solely because no power of test was mine?

*Enter the DUCHESS.*

*The D.* My fate, sir! Ah, you turn away. All's over.

But you are sorry for me? Be not so! What I might have become, and never was,

Regret with me! What I have merely been,

Rejoice I am no longer! What I seem Beginning now, in my new state, to be, Hope that I am!—for, once my rights proved void,

This heavy roof seems easy to exchange For the blue sky outside—my lot henceforth.

*Val.* And what a lot is Berthold's!

*The D.* How of him?

*Val.* He gathers earth's whole good into his arms;

Standing, as man now, stately, strong and wise,

Marching to fortune, not surprised by her. One great aim, like a guiding-star, above—

Which tasks strength, wisdom, stateliness, to lift

His manhood to the height that takes the prize;

A prize not near—lest overlooking earth He rashly spring to seize it—nor remote, So that he rest upon his path content:

But day by day, while shimmering grows shine,

And the faint circlet prophesies the orb, He sees so much as, just evolving these, The stateliness, the wisdom and the strength,

To due completion, will suffice this life, And lead him at his grandest to the grave. After this star, out of a night he springs; A beggar's cradle for the throne of thrones He quits; so, mounting, feels each step he mounts,

Nor, as from each to each exultingly He passes, overleaps one grade of joy.

This, for his own good:—with the world, each gift

Of God and man,—reality, tradition, Fancy and fact—so well environ him, That as a mystic panoply they serve— Of force, untenanted, to awe mankind, And work his purpose out with half the world,

While he, their master, dexterously slipt From such encumbrance, is meantime employed

With his own prowess on the other half. Thus shall he prosper, every day's success Adding, to what is he, a solid strength— An æry might to what encircles him,

Till at the last, so life's routine lends help, That as the Emperor only breathes and moves,

His shadow shall be watched, his step or stalk

Become a comfort or a portent, how He trails his ermine take significance,—

Till even his power shall cease to be most power,

And men shall dread his weakness more, nor dare

Peril their earth its bravest, first and best, Its typified invincibility.

Thus shall he go on, greatening, till he ends—

The man of men, the spirit of all flesh, The fiery centre of an earthly world!

*The D.* Some such a fortune I had dreamed should rise

Out of my own—that is, above my power Seemed other, greater potencies to stretch—

*Val.* For you?

*The D.* It was not I moved there, I think:

But one I could,—though constantly beside,

And aye approaching,—still keep distant from,

And so adore. 'Twas a man moved there.

*Val.* Who?

*The D.* I felt the spirit, never saw the face.

*Val.* See it! 'Tis Berthold's! He enables you

To realize your vision.

*The D.* Berthold?

*Val.* Duke—  
Emperor to be: he proffers you his hand.  
*The D.* Generous and princely!  
*Val.* He is all of this.  
*The D.* Thanks, Berthold, for my father's sake! No hand  
Degrades me.  
*Val.* You accept the proffered hand?  
*The D.* That he should love me!  
*Val.* 'Loved' I did not say.  
Had that been—love might so incline the  
Prince  
To the world's good, the world that's at  
his foot,—  
I do not know, this moment, I should dare  
Desire that you refused the world—and  
Cleves—  
The sacrifice he asks.  
*The D.* Not love me, sir?  
*Val.* He scarce affirmed it.  
*The D.* May not deeds affirm?  
*Val.* What does he? . . . Yes, yes, very  
much he does!  
All the shame saved, he thinks, and sor-  
row saved—  
Immitigable sorrow, so he thinks,—  
Sorrow that's deeper than we dream, per-  
chance.  
*The D.* Is not this love?  
*Val.* So very much he does!  
For look, you can descend now grace-  
fully:  
All doubts are banished, that the world  
might have,  
Or worst, the doubts yourself, in after-  
time,  
May call up of your heart's sincereness  
now.  
To such, reply, 'I could have kept my  
rule—  
'Increased it to the utmost of my dreams—  
'Yet I abjured it.' This, he does for you:  
It is munificently much.  
*The D.* Still 'much!'  
But why is it not love, sir? Answer me!  
*Val.* Because not one of Berthold's  
words and looks  
Had gone with love's presentment of a  
flower  
To the beloved: because bold confidence,  
Open superiority, free pride—  
Love owns not, yet were all that Berthold  
owned:  
Because where reason, even, finds no flaw,  
Unerringly a lover's instinct may.  
*The D.* You reason, then, and doubt?  
*Val.* I love, and know.  
*The D.* You love? How strange! I  
never cast a thought  
On that. Just see our selfishness! You  
seemed  
So much my own . . . I had no ground—  
and yet,  
I never dreamed another might divide

My power with you, much less exceed it.  
*Val.* Lady,  
I am yours wholly.  
*The D.* Oh, no, no, not mine!  
'Tis not the same now, never more can be.  
—Your first love, doubtless. Well, what's  
gone from me?  
What have I lost in you?  
*Val.* My heart replies—  
No loss there! So, to Berthold back  
again:  
This offer of his hand, he bids me make—  
Its obvious magnitude is well to weigh.  
*The D.* She's . . . yes, she must be very  
fair for you!  
*Val.* I am a simple advocate of Cleves.  
*The D.* You! With the heart and brain  
that so helped me,  
I fancied them exclusively my own,  
Yet find are subject to a stronger sway!  
She must be . . . tell me, is she very fair?  
*Val.* Most fair, beyond conception or  
belief.  
*The D.* Black eyes?—no matter! Co-  
lombe, the world leads  
Its life without you, whom your friends  
professed  
The only woman: see how true they  
spoke!  
One lived this while, who never saw your  
face,  
Nor heard your voice—unless . . . Is she  
from Cleves?  
*Val.* Cleves knows her well.  
*The D.* Ah—just a fancy, now!  
When you poured forth the wrongs of  
Cleves,—I said,  
—Thought, that is, afterward . . .  
*Val.* You thought of me?  
*The D.* Of whom else? Only such  
great cause, I thought,  
For such effect: see what true love can do!  
Cleves is his love. I almost fear to ask  
. . . And will not. This is idling: to our  
work!  
Admit before the Prince, without reserve,  
My claims misgrounded; then may follow  
better  
. . . When you poured out Cleves' wrongs  
impetuously,  
Was she in your mind?  
*Val.* All done was done for her  
—To humble me!  
*The D.* She will be proud at least.  
'*Val.* She?  
*The D.* When you tell her.  
*Val.* That will never be.  
*The D.* How—are there sweeter things  
you hope to tell?  
'No, sir! You counselled me,—I counsel  
you  
In the one point I—any woman—can.  
Your worth, the first thing; let her own  
come next—

Say what you did through her, and she through you—

The praises of her beauty afterward!

Will you?

*Val.* I dare not.

*The D.* Dare not?

*Val.* She I love

Suspects not such a love in me.

*The D.* You jest.

*Val.* The lady is above me and away.

Not only the brave form, and the bright mind;

And the great heart, combine to press me low—

But all the world calls rank divides us.

*The D.* Rank!

Now grant me patience! Here's a man declares

Oracularly in another's case—

Sees the true value and the false, for them—

Nay, bids them see it, and they straight do see.

You called my court's love worthless—so it turned:

I threw away as dross my heap of wealth, And here you stickle for a piece or two!

First—has she seen you?

*Val.* Yes.

*The D.* She loves you, then.

*Val.* One flash of hope burst; then succeeded night:

And all's at darkest now. Impossible!

*The D.* We'll try: you are—so to speak—my subject yet?

*Val.* As ever—to the death.

*The D.* Obey me, then!

*Val.* I must.

*The D.* Approach her, and . . . no! first of all

Get more assurance. 'My instructress,' say,

'Was great, descended from a line of kings,

'And even fair'—(wait why I say this folly)—

'She said, of all men, none for eloquence,

'Courage, and (what cast even these to shade)

'The heart they sprung from,—none deserved like him

'Who saved her at her need: if she said this, 'What should not one I love, say?'

*Val.* Heaven—this hope—

Oh, lady, you are filling me with fire!

*The D.* Say this!—nor think I bid you cast aside

One touch of all the awe and reverence; Nay, make her proud for once to heart's content

That all this wealth of heart and soul's her own!

Think you are all of this,—and, thinking it,

. . . (Obey!)

*Val.* I cannot choose.

*The Duchess.* Then, kneel to her

[*VALENCE sinks on his knee.*]

I dream!

*Val.* Have mercy! Yours, unto the death,—

I have, obeyed. Despise, and let me die!

*The D.* Alas, sir, is it to be ever thus?

Even with you as with the world? I know

This morning's service was no vulgar deed

Whose motive, once it dares avow itself,

Explains all done and infinitely more,

So, takes the shelter of a nobler cause.

Your service named its true source,—loyalty!

The rest's unsaid again. The Duchess bids you,

Rise, sir! The Prince's words were in debate.

*Val.* [rising]. Rise? Truth, as ever, lady, comes from you!

I should rise—I who spoke for Cleves, can speak

For Man—yet tremble now, who stood firm then.

I laughed—for 'twas past tears—that Cleves should starve

With all hearts beating loud the infamy, And no tongue daring trust as much to air:

Yet here, where all hearts speak, shall I be mute?

Oh, lady, for your own sake look on me!

On all I am, and have, and do—heart, brain,

Body and soul,—this Valence and his gifts!

I was proud once: I saw you, and they sank,

So that each, magnified a thousand times, Were nothing to you—but such nothingness,

Would a crown gild it, or a sceptre prop, A treasure speed, a laurel-wreath enhance?

What is my own desert? But should your love

Have . . . there's no language helps here

. . . singled me,—

Then—oh, that wild word 'then!'—be just to love,

In generosity its attribute!

Love, since you pleased to love! All's cleared—a stage

For trial of the question kept so long: Judge you—Is love or vanity the best?

You, solve it for the world's sake—you, speak first

What all will shout one day—you, vindicate

Our earth and be its angel! All is said. Lady, I offer nothing—I am yours:

But, for the cause' sake, look on me and him,

# COLOMBE'S BIRTHDAY

[ACT V

And speak!

*The D.* I have received the Prince's message:

Say, I prepare my answer!

*Val.*

Take me, Cleves!

*[He withdraws.]*

*The D.* Mournful—that nothing's what it calls itself!

Devotion, zeal, faith, loyalty—mere love!

And, love in question, what may Berthold's be?

I did ill to mistrust the world so soon:

Already was this Berthold at my side.

The valley-level has its hawks no doubt:

May not the rock-top have its eagles, too?

Yet Valence . . . let me see his rival then!

## ACT V

### NIGHT

SCENE.—*The Hall.*

*Enter BERTHOLD and MELCHIOR.*

*Mel.* And here you wait the matter's issue?

*Berth.* Here. *Mel.* I don't regret I shut Amelius, then.

But tell me, on this grand disclosure,—how

Behaved our spokesman with the forehead?

*Berth.* Oh, Turned out no better than the foreheadless—

Was dazzled not so very soon, that's all! For my part, this is scarce the hasty showy Chivalrous measure you give me credit of. Perhaps I had a fancy,—but 'tis gone.

—Let her commence the unfriended innocent

And carry wrongs about from court to court?

No, truly! The least shake of fortune's sand,

—My uncle-Pope chokes in a coughing fit,

King-cousin takes a fancy to blue eyes,—

And wondrously her claims would brighten up;

Forth comes a new gloss on the ancient law,

O'er-looked provisos, o'er-past premises, Follow in plenty. No: 'tis the safe step.

The hour beneath the convent-wall is lost: Juliers and she, once mine, are ever mine.

*Mel.* Which is to say, you, losing heart already,

Elude the adventure.

*Berth.* Not so—or, if so— Why not confess at once that I advise None of our kingly craft and guild just now

To lay, one moment, down their privilege With the notion they can any time at pleasure

Retake it: that may turn out hazardous. We seem, in Europe, pretty well at end

O' the night, with our great masque: those favoured few

Who keep the chamber's top, and honour's chance

Of the early evening, may retain their place

And figure as they list till out of breath.

But it is growing late: and I observe

A dim grim kind of tipstaves at the doorway

Not only bar new-comers entering now, But caution those who left, for any cause,

And would return, that morning draws too near;

The ball must die off, shut itself up. We—I think, may dance lights out and sunshine in,

And sleep off headache on our frippery: But friend the other, who cunningly stole out,

And, after breathing the fresh air outside, Means to re-enter with a new costume,

Will be advised go back to bed, I fear. I stick to privilege, on second thoughts.

*Mel.* Yes—you evade the adventure: and, beside,

Give yourself out for colder than you are. King Philip, only, notes the lady's eyes?

Don't they come in for somewhat of the motive

With you too?

*Berth.* Yes—no: I am past that now. Gone 'tis: I cannot shut my soul to fact.

Of course, I might by forethought and contrivance

Reason myself into a rapture. Come: And something better come instead, no doubt.

*Mel.* So be it! Yet, all the same, proceed my way,

Thought to your ends; so shall you prosper best!

The lady,—to be won for selfish ends,— Will be won easier my unselfish . . . call it, Romantic way.

*Berth.* Won easier?

*Mel.* Will not she?

*Berth.* There I profess humility without bound:

I cannot speed—not I—the Emperor.

*Mel.* And I should think the Emperor best waived,

From your description of her mood and way.

You could look, if it pleased you, into hearts;

But are too indolent and fond of watching Your own—you know that, for you study it.

*Berth.* Had you but seen the orator her friend,

So bold and vobuble an hour before,  
Abashed to earth at aspect of the change!  
Make her an Empress? Ah, that changed the case!

Oh, I read hearts! 'Tis for my own behoof,  
I court her with my true worth: wait the event!

I learned my final lesson on that head  
When years ago,—my first and last essay—

Before the priest my uncle could by help  
Of his superior, raise me from the dirt—  
Priscilla left me for a Brabant lord  
Whose cheek was like the topaz on his thumb.

I am past illusion on that score.

*Mel.* Here comes  
The lady—

*Berth.* —And there you go. But do not! Give me

Another chance to please you! Hear me plead!

*Mel.* You'll keep, then, to the lover,  
to the man?

*Enter the DUCHESS—followed by ADOLF and SARYNE and, after an interval, by the Courtiers.*

*Berth.* Good auspice to our meeting!

*The D.* May it prove!

—And you, sir, will be Emperor one day?

*Berth.* (Ay, that's the point!) I may be Emperor.

*The D.* 'Tis not for my sake only, I am proud

Of this you offer: I am prouder far  
That from the highest state should duly spring

The highest, since most generous, of deeds.

*Berth.* (Generous—still that!) You underrate yourself.

You are, what I, to be complete, must gain—

Find now, and may not find, another time.

While I career on all the world for stage,  
There needs at home my representative.

*The D.* —Such, rather, would some warrior-woman be—

One dowered with lands and gold, or rich in friends—

One like yourself.

*Berth.* Lady, I am myself, and have all these: I want what's not myself,

Nor has all these. Why give one hand two swords?

Here's one already: be a friend's next gift

A silk glove, if you will—I have a sword.

*The D.* You love me, then?

*Berth.* Your lineage I revere,  
Honour your virtue, in your truth believe,  
Do homage to your intellect, and bow  
Before your peerless beauty.

*The D.* But, for love—  
*Berth.* A further love I do not understand.

Our best course is to say these hideous truths,

And see them, once said, grow enduring:  
Like waters shuddering from their central bed,

Black with the midnight bowels of the earth,

That, once up-spouted by an earthquake's throes,

A portent and a terror—soon subside,  
Freshen apace, take gold and rainbow hues

In sunshine, sleep in shadow, and at last  
Grow common to the earth as hills or trees—

Accepted by all things they came to scare.

*The D.* You cannot love, then?

*Berth.* —Charlemagne, perhaps!  
Are you not over-curious in love-lore?

*The D.* I have become so, very recently.  
It seems, then, I shall best deserve esteem,  
Respect, and all your candour promises,  
By putting on a calculating mood—

Asking the terms of my becoming yours?

*Berth.* Let me not do myself injustice,  
neither.

Because I will not condescend to fictions  
That promise what my soul can ne'er acquit,

It does not follow that my guarded phrase  
May not include far more of what you seek.

Than wide profession of less scrupulous men.

You will be Empress, once for all: with me  
The Pope disputes supremacy—you stand,  
And none gainsays, the earth's first woman.

*The D.* That—  
Or simple Lady of Ravestein again?

*Berth.* The matter's not in my arbitration:

Now I have made my claims—which I regret—

Cede one, cede all.

*The D.* This claim then, you enforce?  
*Berth.* The world looks on.

*The D.* And when must I decide?

*Berth.* When, lady? Have I said thus much so promptly

For nothing?—Poured out, with such pains, at once

What I might else have suffered to ooze forth

Droplet by droplet in a lifetime long—

For aught less than as prompt an answer, too?



# COLOMBE'S BIRTHDAY

[ACT V

All's fairly told now: who can teach you more?

*The D.* I do not see him.

*Berth.* I shall ne'er deceive.

This offer should be made befittingly  
Did time allow the better setting forth  
The good of it, with what is not so good,  
Advantage, and disparagement as well:  
But as it is, the sum of both must serve.  
I am already weary of this place;  
My thoughts are next stage on to Rome.  
Decide!

The Empire—or,—not even Juliers now!  
Hail to the Empress—farewell to the  
Duchess!

*[The Courtiers, who have been drawing nearer and nearer, interpose.]*

*Gau.* —'Farewell,' Prince? when we  
break in at our risk—

*Clug.* Almost upon court-licence trespassing—

*Gau.* —To point out how your claims  
are valid yet!

You know not, by the Duke her father's  
will,

The lady, if she weds beneath her rank,  
Forfeits her Duchy in the next heir's  
favour—

So 'tis expressly stipulate. And if  
It can be shown 'tis her intent to wed  
A subject, then yourself, next heir, by  
right

Succeed to Juliers.

*Berth.* What insanity?—

*Gui.* Sir, there's one Valence, the pale  
fiery man

You saw and heard this morning—  
thought, no doubt,

Was of considerable standing here:  
I put it to your penetration, Prince,  
If aught save love, the truest love for her  
Could make him serve the lady as he did!  
He's simply a poor advocate of Cleves

—Creeps here with difficulty, finds a place  
With danger, gets in by a miracle,  
And for the first time meets the lady's  
face—

So runs the story: is that credible?  
For, first—no sooner in, than he's ap-  
prised

Fortunes have changed; you are all-  
powerful here,

The lady as powerless: he stands fast by her!  
*The D.* *[aside].* And do such deeds  
spring up from love alone?

*Gui.* But here occurs the question, does  
the lady

Love him again? I say, how else can she?  
Can she forget how he stood singly forth  
In her defence, dared outrage all of us,  
Insult yourself—for what, save love's  
reward?

*The D.* *[aside].* And is love then the  
sole reward of love?

*Gui.* But, love him as she may and  
must—you ask,

Means she to wed him? 'Yes,' both  
natures answer!

Both, in their pride, point out the sole  
result;

Nought less would he accept nor she  
propose.

For each conjuncture was she great enough  
—Will be, for this,

*Clug.* Though, now that this  
is known,

Policy, doubtless, urges she deny . . .  
*The D.* —What, sir, and wherefore?—  
since I am not sure

That all is any other than you say!  
You take this Valence, hold him close to  
me,

Him with his actions: can I choose but  
look?

I am not sure, love trulier shows itself  
Than in this man, you hate and would  
degrade,

Yet, with your worst abatement, show me  
thus.

Nor am I—(thus made look within myself,  
Ere I had dared)—now that the look is  
dared—

Sure that I do not love him!

*Gui.* Hear you, Prince?

*Berth.* And what, sirs, please you, may  
this prattle mean

Unless to prove with what alacrity  
You give your lady's secrets to the world?

How much indebted, for discovering  
That quality, you make me, will be found  
When there's a keeper for my own to seek.

*Courtiers.* 'Our lady?'

*Berth.* —She assuredly remains.

*The D.* Ah, Prince—and you too can  
be generous?

You could renounce your power, if this  
were so,

And let me, as these phrase it, wed my  
love

Yet keep my Duchy? You perhaps exceed  
Him, even, in disinterestedness!

*Berth.* How, lady, should all this affect  
my purpose?

Your will and choice are still as ever, free.  
Say, you have known a worthier than  
myself

In mind and heart, of happier form and  
face—

Others must have their birthright: I have  
gifts,

To balance theirs, not blot them out of  
sight.

Against a hundred alien qualities,  
I lay the prize I offer. I am nothing:

Wed you the Empire?

*The D.* And my heart away?

*Berth.* When have I made pretension  
to your heart?

I give none, I shall keep your honour safe;

With mine I trust you, as the sculptor trusts

Yon marble woman with the marble rose,  
Loose on her hand, she never will let fall,  
In graceful, slight, silent security.

You will be proud of my world-wide career,

And I content in you the fair and good.  
What were the use of planting a few seeds  
The thankless climate never would mature—

Affections all repelled by circumstance?

Enough: to these no credit I attach,—

To what you own, find nothing to object.

Write simply on my requisition's face

What shall content my friends—that you admit,

As Colombe of Ravestein, the claims therein,

Or never need admit them, as my wife—  
And either way, all's ended!

*The D.* Let all end!

*Berth.* The requisition!

*Gul.* —Valence holds, of course!

*Berth.* Desire his presence!

[ADOLF goes out.]

*Courtiers* [to each other]. Out it all comes yet;

He'll have his word against the bargain yet;

He's not the man to tamely acquiesce.

One passionate appeal—upbraiding even,  
May turn the tide again. Despair not yet!

[*They retire a little.*]

*Berth.* [to MELCHIOR]. The Empire has its old success, my friend!

*Mel.* You've had your way: before the spokesman speaks,

Let me, but this once, work a problem out,

And ever more be dumb! The Empire wins?

To better purpose have I read my books!

*Enter VALENCE.*

*Mel.* [to the Courtiers]. Apart, my masters!

[To VALENCE.] Sir, one word with you!

I am a poor dependant of the Prince's—  
Pitched on to speak, as of slight consequence.

You are no higher, I find! in other words,

We two, as probably the wisest here,

Need not hold diplomatic talk like fools.

Suppose I speak, divesting the plain fact

Of all their tortuous phrases, fit for them?

Do you reply so, and what trouble saved!

The Prince, then—an embroiled strange

heap of news

This moment reaches him—if true or false,

All dignity forbids he should inquire

In person, or by worthier deputy;

Yet somehow must inquire, lest slander come:

And so, 'tis I am pitched on. You have heard

His offer to your lady?

*Val.* Yes.

*Mel.*

—Conceive

Her joy thereat?

*Val.*

I cannot.

*Mel.*

No one can.

All draws to a conclusion, therefore.

*Val.* [aside].

So!

No after-judgment—no first thought revised—

Her first and last decision!—me, she leaves,

Takes him; a simple heart is flung aside,  
The ermine o'er a heartless breast embraced.

Oh Heaven, this mockery has been played

too oft!

Once, to surprise the angels—twice, that

fiends

Recording, might be proud they chose

not so—

Thrice, many thousand times, to teach the world

All men should pause, misdoubt their strength, since men

Can have such chance yet fail so signally,  
—But ever, ever this farewell to Heaven,

Welcome to earth—this taking death for life—

This spurning love and kneeling to the world—

Oh Heaven, it is too often and too old!

*Mel.* Well, on this point, what but an

absurd rumour

Arises—these, its source—its subject, you!

Your faith and loyalty misconstruing,

They say, your service claims the lady's hand!

Of course, nor Prince nor lady can respond:

Yet something must be said: for, were it true

You made such claim, the Prince would...

*Val.*

Well, sir,—would?

*Mel.* —Not only probably withdraw his suit,

But, very like, the lady might be forced

Accept your own. Oh, there are reasons why!

But you'll excuse at present all save one,—  
I think so. What we want is, your own

witness,

For, or against—her good, or yours: decide!

*Val.* [aside]. Be it her good if she

accounts it so!

[*After a contest.*] For what am I but hers,  
to choose as she?

## COLOMBE'S BIRTHDAY

[ACT V

Who knows how far, beside, the light from her  
May reach, and dwell with, what she looks upon?

*Mel.* [to the Prince]. Now to him, you!

*Berth.* [to VALENCE]. My friend acquaints you, sir,

The noise runs . . .  
*Val.* —Prince, how fortunate you are,

Wedding her as you will, in spite of noise,  
To show belief in love! Let her but love you,

All else you disregard! What else can be?  
You know how love is incompatible  
With falsehood—purifies, assimilates  
All other passions to itself.

*Mel.* Ay, sir:

But softly! Where, in the object we select,  
Such love is, perchance, wanting?

*Val.* Then indeed,

What is it you can take?

*Mel.* Nay, ask the world!

Youth, beauty, virtue, an illustrious name,  
An influence o'er mankind.

*Val.* When man perceives . . .

—Ah, I can only speak as for myself!

*The D.* Speak for yourself!

*Val.* May I?—no, I have spoken,

And time's gone by. Had I seen such an one,

As I loved her—weighing thoroughly that word—

So should my task be to evolve her love:  
If for myself!—if for another—well.

*Berth.* Heroic truly! And your sole reward,—

The secret pride in yielding up love's right?

*Val.* Who thought upon reward? And yet how much

Comes after—oh, what amplest recompense!

Is the knowledge of her, nought? the memory, nought?

—Lady, should such an one have looked on you,

Ne'er wrong yourself so far as quote the world

And say, love can go unrequited here!  
You will have blessed him to his whole life's end—

Low passions hindered, baser cares kept back,

All goodness cherished where you dwell—and dwell.

What would he have? He holds you—you, both form

And mind, in his,—where self-love makes such room

For love of you, he would not serve you now

The vulgar way,—repulse your enemies,  
Win you new realms, or best, to save the old

Die blissfully—that's past so long ago!  
He wishes you no need, thought, care of him—

Your good, by any means, himself unseen,  
Away, forgotten!—He gives that life's task up,

As it were . . . but this charge which I return—

[Offers the requisition, which she takes. Wishing your good.

*The D.* [having subscribed it]. And opportunely, sir—

Since at a birthday's close, like this of mine,

Good wishes gentle deeds reciprocate.  
Most on a wedding-day, as mine is too,

Should gifts be thought of: yours comes first by right.

Ask of me!

*Berth.* He shall have whate'er he asks,  
For your sake and his own.

*Val.* [aside]. If I should ask—

The withered bunch of flowers she wears—perhaps,

One last touch of her hand, I never more

Shall see! [After a pause, presenting his paper to the Prince.

Cleves' Prince, redress the wrongs of Cleves!

*Berth.* I will, sir!

*The D.* [as VALENCE prepares to retire]. —Nay, do out your duty, first!

You bore this paper; I have registered  
My answer to it: read it and have done!

[VALENCE reads it. I take him—give up Juliers and the world. This is my Birthday.

*Mel.* Berthold, my one hero  
Of the world she gives up, one friend

worth my books,  
Sole man I think it pays the pains to watch,—

Speak, for I know you through your Popes and Kings!

*Berth.* [after a pause]. Lady, well rewarded! Sir, as well deserved!

I could not imitate—I hardly envy—I do admire you. All is for the best.

Too costly a flower were this, I see it now,  
To pluck and set upon my barren helm

To wither—any garish plume will do.  
I'll not insult you and refuse your

Duchy—  
You can so well afford to yield it me,

And I were left, without it, sadly lone.  
As it is—for me—if that will flatter you,

A somewhat wearier life seems to remain  
Than I thought possible where . . . 'faith,

their life  
Begins already! They're too occupied

To listen: and few words content me best.  
[Abruptly to the Courtiers.] I am your

Duke, though! Who obey me here?

*The D.* Adolf and Sabyne follow us—  
*Gai.* [starting from the Courtiers].

—And I?

Do I not follow them, if I mayn't you?  
 Shall not I get some little duties up  
 At Ravestein and emulate the rest?  
 God save you, Gaucelme! 'Tis my Birth-  
 day, too!

*Berth.* You happy handful that remain  
 with me

... That is, with Dietrich the black Barna-  
 bite

I shall leave over you—will earn your wages  
 Or Dietrich has forgot to ply his trade!  
 Meantime,—go copy me the precedents  
 Of every installation, proper styles  
 And pedigrees of all your Juliers' Dukes—  
 While I prepare to plod on my old way,  
 And somewhat wearily, I must confess!

*The D.* [with a light joyous laugh as she  
 turns from them]. Come, Valence, to  
 our friends, God's earth . . .  
*Val.* [as she falls into his arms].

—And thee!

## DRAMATIC ROMANCES

184- 185-

INCIDENT OF THE FRENCH CAMP 'You're wounded!' 'Nay,' the soldier's  
 pride

I

You know, we French stormed Ratisbon:  
 A mile or so away,  
 On a little mound, Napoleon  
 Stood on our storming-day;  
 With neck out-thrust, you fancy how,  
 Legs wide, arms locked behind,  
 As if to balance the prone brow  
 Oppressive with its mind.

II

Just as perhaps he mused 'My plans  
 'That soar, to earth may fall,  
 'Let once my army-leader Lannes  
 'Waver at yonder wall,'—  
 Out 'twixt the battery-smokes there flew  
 A rider, bound on bound  
 Full-galloping; nor bridle drew  
 Until he reached the mound.

III

Then off there flung in smiling joy,  
 And held himself erect  
 By just his horse's mane, a boy:  
 You hardly could suspect—  
 (So tight he kept his lips compressed,  
 Scarce any blood came through)  
 You looked twice ere you saw his breast  
 Was all but shot in two.

IV

'Well,' cried he, 'Emperor, by God's grace  
 'We've got you Ratisbon!  
 'The Marshal's in the market-place,  
 'And you'll be there anon'  
 'To see your flag-bird flap his vans  
 'Where I, to heart's desire,  
 'Perched him!' The chief's eye flashed;  
 his plans  
 Soared up again like fire.

V

The chief's eye flashed; but presently  
 Softened itself, as sheathes  
 A film the mother-eagle's eye  
 When her bruised eaglet breathes;

Touched to the quick, he said:  
 'I'm killed, Sire!' And his chief beside  
 Smiling the boy fell dead.

### THE PATRIOT

AN OLD STORY

I

It was roses, roses, all the way,  
 With myrtle mixed in my path like mad:  
 The house-roofs seemed to heave and  
 sway,  
 The church-spires flamed, such flags  
 they had,  
 A year ago on this very day.

II

The air broke into a mist with bells,  
 The old walls rocked with the crowd  
 and cries.  
 Had I said, 'Good folk, mere noise re-  
 pels—  
 'But give me your sun from yonder  
 skies!'  
 They had answered, 'And afterward, what  
 else?'

III

Alack, it was I who leaped at the sun  
 To give it my loving friends to keep!  
 Nought man could do, have I left un-  
 done:  
 And you see my harvest, what I reap  
 This very day, now a year is run.

IV

'There's nobody on the house-tops now—  
 Just a palsied few at the windows set;  
 For the best of the sight is, all allow,  
 At the Shambles' Gate—or, better yet,  
 By the very scaffold's foot, I trow.

## THE PATRIOT

### V

I go in the rain, and, more than needs,  
A rope cuts both my wrists behind;  
And I think, by the feel, my forehead  
bleeds,  
For they fling, whoever has a mind,  
Stones at me for my year's misdeeds.

### VI

Thus I entered, and thus I go!  
In triumphs, people have dropped down  
dead.  
'Paid by the world, what dost thou owe  
'Me?'—God might question; now in-  
stead,  
'Tis God shall repay: I am safer so.

## MY LAST DUCHESS

### FERRARA

THAT's my last Duchess painted on the  
wall,  
Looking as if she were alive. I call  
That piece a wonder, now: Frà Pandolf's  
hands  
Worked busily a day, and there she stands.  
Will't please you sit and look at her? I  
said  
'Frà Pandolf' by design, for never read  
Strangers like you that pictured counte-  
nance,  
The depth and passion of its earnest  
glance,  
But to myself they turned (since none puts  
by  
The curtain I have drawn for you, but I)  
And seemed as they would ask me, if they  
durst,  
How such a glance came there; so, not the  
first  
Are you to turn and ask thus. Sir, 'twas  
not  
Her husband's presence only, called that  
spot  
Of joy into the Duchess' cheek: perhaps  
Frà Pandolf chanced to say 'Her mantle  
laps  
'Over my lady's wrist too much,' or  
'Paint  
'Must never hope to reproduce the faint  
'Half-flush that dies along her throat:'  
such stuff  
Was courtesy, she thought, and cause  
enough  
For calling up that spot of joy. She had  
A heart—how shall I say?—too soon  
made glad,  
Too easily impressed; she liked whate'er  
She looked on, and her looks went every-  
where.  
Sir, 'twas all one! My favour at her breast,  
The dropping of the daylight in the West,

The bough of cherries some officious fool  
Broke in the orchard for her, the white  
mule  
She rode with round the terrace—all and  
each  
Would draw from her alike the approving  
speech,  
Or blush, at least. She thanked men,—  
good! but thanked  
Somehow—I know not how—as if she  
ranked  
My gift of a nine-hundred-years-old name  
With anybody's gift. Who'd stoop to  
blame  
This sort of trifling? Even had you skill  
In speech—(which I have not)—to make  
your will  
Quite clear to such an one, and say, 'Just  
this  
'Or that in you disgusts me; here you miss,  
'Or there exceed the mark'—and if she let  
Herself be lessoned so, nor plainly set  
Her wits to yours, forsooth, and made  
excuse,  
—E'en then would be some stooping; and  
I choose  
Never to stoop. Oh sir, she smiled, no  
doubt,  
Whene'er I passed her; but who passed  
without  
Much the same smile? This grew; I gave  
commands;  
Then all smiles stopped together. There  
she stands  
As if alive. Will't please you rise? We'll  
meet  
The company below, then. I repeat,  
The Count your master's known munifi-  
cence  
Is ample warrant that no just pretence  
Of mine for dowry will be disallowed;  
Though his fair daughter's self, as I  
avowed  
At starting, is my object. Nay, we'll go  
Together down, sir. Notice Neptune,  
though,  
Taming a sea-horse, thought a rarity,  
Which Claus of Innsbruck cast in bronze  
for me!

## COUNT GISMOND

### AIX IN PROVENCE

### I

CHRIST God who savest man, save most  
Of men Count Gismond who saved me!  
Count Gauthier, when he chose his post,  
Chose time and place and company  
To suit it; when he struck at length  
My honour, 'twas with all his strength.

II

And doubtlessly ere he could draw  
All points to one, he must have schemed!  
That miserable morning saw  
Few half so happy as I seemed,  
While being dressed in queen's array  
To give our tourney prize away.

III

I thought they loved me, did me grace  
To please themselves; 'twas all their  
deed;  
God makes, or fair or foul, our face;  
If showing mine so caused to bleed  
My cousins' hearts, they should have  
dropped  
A word, and straight the play had stopped.

IV

They, too, so beauteous! Each a queen  
By virtue of her brow and breast;  
Not needing to be crowned, I mean,  
As I do. E'en when I was dressed,  
Had either of them spoke, instead  
Of glancing sideways with still head!

V

But no; they let me laugh, and sing  
My birthday song quite through, adjust  
The last rose in my garland, fling  
A last look on the mirror, trust  
My arms to each an arm of theirs,  
And so descend the castle-stairs—

VI

And come out on the morning-troop  
Of merry friends who kissed my cheek,  
And called me queen, and made me stoop  
Under the canopy—(a streak  
That pierced it, of the outside sun,  
Powdered with gold its gloom's soft  
dun)—

VII

And they could let me take my state  
And foolish throne amid applause  
Of all come there to celebrate  
My queen's-day—Oh I think the cause  
Of much was, they forgot no crowd  
Makes up for parents in their shroud!

VIII

However that be, all eyes were bent  
Upon me, when my cousins cast  
Theirs down; 'twas time I should present.  
The victor's crown, but . . . there, 'twill  
last  
No long time . . . the old mist again  
Blinds me as then it did. How vain!

IX

See! Gismond's at the gate, in talk  
With his two boys: I can proceed.  
Well, at that moment, who should stalk  
Forth boldly—to my face, indeed—  
But Gauthier, and he thundered 'Stay!'  
And all stayed. 'Bring no crowns, I say!'

X

'Bring torches! Wind the penance-sheet  
'About her! Let her shun the chaste,  
'Or lay herself before their feet!  
'Shall she whose body I embraced  
'A night long, queen it in the day?  
'For honour's sake no crowns, I say!'

XI

I? What I answered? As I live,  
I never fancied such a thing  
As answer possible to give.  
What says the body when they spring  
Some monstrous torture-engine's whole  
Strength on it? No more says the soul.

XII

Till out strode Gismond; then I knew  
That I was saved. I never met  
His face before, but, at first view,  
I felt quite sure that God had set  
Himself to Satan; who would spend  
A minute's mistrust on the end?

XIII

He strode to Gauthier, in his throat  
Gave him the lie, then struck his mouth  
With one back-handed blow that wrote  
In blood men's verdict there. North,  
South,  
East, West, I looked. The lie was dead,  
And damned, and truth stood up instead

XIV

This glads me most, that I enjoyed  
The heart of the joy, with my content  
In watching Gismond unalloyed  
By any doubt of the event:  
God took that on him—I was bid  
Watch Gismond for my part: I did.

XV

Did I not watch him while he let  
His armourer just brace his greaves,  
Rivet his hauberk, on the fret  
The while! His foot . . . my memory  
leaves  
No least stamp out, nor how anon  
He pulled his ringing gauntlets on.

XVI

And e'en before the trumpet's sound  
Was finished, prone lay the false knight,  
Prone as his lie, upon the ground:  
Gismond flew at him, used no sleight  
O' the sword, but open-breasted drove,  
Cleaving till out the truth he clove.

## COUNT GISMOND

### XVII

Which done, he dragged him to my feet  
And said 'Here die, but end thy breath  
'In full confession, lest thou fleet  
'From my first, to God's second death!  
'Say, hast thou lied?' And, 'I have lied  
'To God and her,' he said, and died.

### XVIII

Then Gismond, kneeling to me, asked  
—What safe my heart holds, though no  
word  
Could I repeat now, if I tasked  
My powers for ever, to a third  
Dear even as you are. Pass the rest  
Until I sank upon his breast.

### XIX

Over my head his arm he flung  
Against the world; and scarce I felt  
His sword (that dripped by me and swung)  
A little shifted in its belt:  
For he began to say the while  
How South our home lay many a mile.

### XX

So 'mid the shouting multitude  
We two walked forth to never more  
Return. My cousins have pursued  
Their life, untroubled as before  
I vexed them. Gauthier's dwelling-place  
God lighten! May his soul find grace!

### XXI

Our elder boy has got the clear  
Great brow; tho' when his brother's  
black  
Full eye shows scorn, it . . . Gismond here?  
And have you brought my tercel back?  
I just was telling Adela  
How many birds it struck since May.

## THE BOY AND THE ANGEL

MORNING, evening, noon and night,  
'Praise God!' sang Theocrite.

Then to his poor trade he turned,  
Whereby the daily meal was earned.

Hard he laboured, long and well;  
O'er his work the boy's curls fell.

But ever, at each period,  
He stopped and sang, 'Praise God!'

Then back again his curls he threw,  
And cheerful turned to work anew.

Said Blaise, the listening monk, 'Well  
done;  
'I doubt not thou art heard, my son:

'As well as if thy voice to-day  
'Were praising God, the Pope's great way.

'This Easter Day, the Pope at Rome  
'Praises God from Peter's dome.'

Said Theocrite, 'Would God that I  
'Might praise him, that great way, and  
die!'

Night passed, day shone,  
And Theocrite was gone.

With God a day endures alway,  
A thousand years are but a day.

God said in heaven, 'Nor day nor night  
'Now brings the voice of my delight.'

Then Gabriel, like a rainbow's birth,  
Spread his wings and sank to earth;

Entered, in flesh, the empty cell,  
Lived there, and played the craftsman  
well;

And morning, evening, noon and night,  
Praised God in place of Theocrite.

And from a boy, to youth he grew:  
The man put off the stripling's huc:

The man matured and fell away  
Into the season of decay:

And ever o'er the trade he bent,  
And ever lived on earth content.

(He did God's will; to him, all one  
If on the earth or in the sun.)

God said, 'A praise is in mine ear;  
'There is no doubt in it, no fear:

'So sing old worlds, and so  
'New worlds that from my footstool go.

'Clearer loves sound other ways:  
'I miss my little human praise.'

Then forth sprang Gabriel's wings, off fell  
The flesh disguise, remained the cell.

'Twas Easter Day: he flew to Rome,  
And paused above Saint Peter's dome.

In the tiring-room close by  
The great outer gallery,

With his holy vestments dight,  
Stood the new Pope, Theocrite:

And all his past career  
Came back upon him clear,

Since when, a boy, he plied his trade,  
Till on his life the sickness weighed;

And in his cell, when death drew near,  
An angel in a dream brought cheer:

## THE BOY AND THE ANGEL

And rising from the sickness drear  
He grew a priest, and now stood here.

To the East with praise he turned,  
And on his sight the angel burned.

'I bore thee from thy craftsman's cell  
'And set thee here; I did not well.

'Vainly I left my angel-sphere,  
'Vain was thy dream of many a year.

'Thy voice's praise seemed weak; it  
dropped—  
'Creation's chorus stopped!

'Go back and praise again  
'The early way, while I remain.

'With that weak voice of our disdain,  
'Take up creation's pausing strain.

'Back to the cell and poor employ:  
'Resume the craftsman and the boy!'

Theocrite grew old at home;  
A new Pope dwelt in Peter's dome.

One vanished as the other died:  
They sought God side by side.

### INSTANS TYRANNUS

#### I

Of the million or two, more or less,  
I rule and possess,  
One man, for some cause undefined,  
Was least to my mind.

#### II

I struck him, he grovelled of course—  
For, what was his force?  
I pinned him to earth with my weight  
And persistence of hate:  
And he lay, would not moan, would not  
curse,  
As his lot might be worse.

#### III

'Were the object less mean, would he  
stand  
'At the swing of my hand!  
'For obscurity helps him and blots  
'The hole where he squats.'  
So, I set my five wits on the stretch  
To inveigle the wretch.  
All in vain! Gold and jewels I threw,  
Still he couched there perdue;  
I tempted his blood and his flesh,  
Hid in roses my mesh,  
Choicest cates and the flagon's best spilth:  
Still he kept to his filth.

#### IV

Had he kith now or kin, were access  
To his heart, did I press:  
Just a son or a mother to seize!  
No such booty as these.

Were it simply a friend to pursue  
'Mid my million or two,  
Who could pay me in person or pelf  
What he owes me himself!  
No: I could not but smile through my  
chafe:  
For the fellow lay safe  
As his mates do, the midge and the nit,  
—Through minuteness, to wit.

#### V

Then a humour more great took its place  
At the thought of his face,  
The droop, the low cares of the mouth,  
The trouble uncouth  
'Twixt the brows, all that air one is fain  
To put out of its pain.  
And, 'no!' I admonished myself,  
'Is one mocked by an elf,  
'Is one baffled by toad or by rat?  
'The gravamen's in that!  
'How the lion, who crouches to suit  
'His back to my foot,  
'Would admire that I stand in debate!  
'But the small turns the great  
'If it vexes you,—that is the thing!  
'Toad or rat vex the king?  
'Though I waste half my realm to unearth  
'Toad or rat, 'tis well worth!'

#### VI

So, I soberly laid my last plan  
To extinguish the man.  
Round his creep-hole, with never a break  
Ran my fires for his sake;  
Over-head, did my thunder combine  
With my underground mine:  
Till I looked from my labour content  
To enjoy the event.

#### VII

When sudden . . . how think ye, the end?  
Did I say 'without friend'?  
Say rather, from marge to blue marge  
The whole sky grew his target  
With the sun's self for visible boss,  
While an Arm ran across  
Which the earth heaved beneath like a  
breast  
Where the wretch was safe prest!  
Do you see? Just my vengeance complete,  
The man sprang to his feet,  
Stood erect, caught at God's skirts, and  
prayed!  
—So, I was afraid!

### MESMERISM

#### I

ALL I believed is true!  
I am able yet  
All I want, to get  
By a method as strange as new:  
Dare I trust the same to you?



## MESMERISM

### II

If at night, when doors are shut,  
And the wood-worm picks,  
And the death-watch ticks,  
And the bar has a flag of smut,  
And a cat's in the water-butt—

### III

And the socket floats and flares,  
And the house-beams groan,  
And a foot unknown  
Is surmised on the garret-stairs,  
And the locks slip unawares—

### IV

And the spider, to serve his ends,  
By a sudden thread,  
Arms and legs outspread,  
On the table's midst descends,  
Comes to find, God knows what  
friends!—

### V

If since eve drew in, I say,  
I have sat and brought  
(So to speak) my thought  
To bear on the woman away,  
Till I felt my hair turn grey—

### VI

Till I seemed to have and hold,  
In the vacancy  
'Twixt the wall and me,  
From the hair-plait's chestnut gold  
To the foot in its muslin fold—

### VII

Have and hold, then and there,  
Her, from head to foot,  
Breathing and mute,  
Passive and yet aware,  
In the grasp of my steady stare—

### VIII

Hold and have, there and then,  
All her body and soul  
That completes my whole,  
All that women add to men,  
In the clutch of my steady ken—

### IX

Having and holding, till  
I imprint her fast  
On the void at last  
As the sun does whom he will  
By the calotypist's skill—

### X

Then,—if my heart's strength serve,  
And through all and each  
Of the veils I reach  
To her soul and never swerve,  
Knitting an iron nerve—

### XI

Command her soul to advance  
And inform the shape  
Which has made escape  
And before my countenance  
Answers me glance for glance—

### XII

I, still with a gesture fit  
Of my hands that best  
Do my soul's behest,  
Pointing the power from it,  
While myself do steadfast sit—

### XIII

Steadfast and still the same  
On my object bent,  
While the hands give vent  
To my ardour and my aim  
And break into very flame—

### XIV

Then I reach, I must believe,  
Not her soul in vain,  
For to me again  
It reaches, and past retrieve  
Is wound in the toils I weave;

### XV

And must follow as I require,  
As befits a thrall,  
Bringing flesh and all,  
Essence and earth-attire,  
To the source of the tractile fire:

### XVI

Till the house called hers, not mine,  
With a growing weight  
Seems to suffocate  
If she break not its leaden line  
And escape from its close confine.

### XVII

Out of doors into the night!  
On to the maze  
Of the wild wood-ways,  
Not turning to left nor right  
From the pathway, blind with sight—

### XVIII

Making thro' rain and wind  
O'er the broken shrubs,  
'Twixt the stems and stubs,  
With a still, composed, strong mind,  
Nor a care for the world behind—

### XIX

Swifter and still more swift,  
As the crowding peace  
Doth to joy increase  
In the wide blind eyes uplift  
Thro' the darkness and the drift!

## XX

While I—to the shape, I too  
 Feel my soul dilate  
 Nor a whit abate,  
 And relax not a gesture due,  
 As I see my belief come true.

## XXI

For, there! have I drawn or no  
 Life to that lip?  
 Do my fingers dip  
 In a flame which again they throw  
 On the cheek that breaks a-glow?

## XXII

Ha! was the hair so first?  
 What, unfileted,  
 Made alive, and spread  
 Through the void with a rich outburst,  
 Chestnut gold-interspersed?

## XXIII

Like the doors of a casket-shrine,  
 See, on either side,  
 Her two arms divide  
 Till the heart betwixt makes sign,  
 Take me, for I am thine!

## XXIV

'Now—now'—the door is heard!  
 Hark, the stairs! and near—  
 Nearer—and here—  
 'Now!' and at call the third  
 She enters without a word.

## XXV

On doth she march and on  
 To the fancied shape;  
 It is, past escape,  
 Herself, now: the dream is done  
 And the shadow and she are one.

## XXVI

First I will pray. Do Thou  
 That ownest the soul,  
 Yet wilt grant control  
 To another, nor disallow  
 For a time, restrain me now!

## XXVII

I admonish me while I may,  
 Not to squander guilt,  
 Since require Thou wilt  
 At my hand its price one day!  
 What the price is, who can say?

## THE GLOVE

(PETER RONSARD *loquitur*.)

'HEIGHO! 'yawned one day King Francis,  
 'Distance all value enhances!  
 'When a man's busy, why, leisure  
 'Strikes him as wonderful pleasure:

'Faith, and at leisure once is he?  
 'Straightway he wants to be busy.  
 'Here we've got peace; and aghast I'm  
 'Caught thinking war the true pastime.  
 'Is there a reason in metre?  
 'Give us your speech, master Peter!  
 I who, if mortal dare say so,  
 Ne'er am at loss with my Naso,  
 'Sire,' I replied, 'joys prove cloudlets:  
 'Men are the merest Ixions'—  
 Here the King whistled aloud, 'Let's  
 '—Heigho—go look at our lions!  
 Such are the sorrowful chances  
 If you talk fine to King Francis.

And so, to the courtyard proceeding,  
 Our company, Francis was leading,  
 Increased by new followers tenfold  
 Before he arrived at the penfold;  
 Lords, ladies, like clouds which bedizen  
 At sunset the western horizon.  
 And Sir De Lorge pressed 'mid the fore-

most  
 'With the dame he professed to adore most.  
 Oh, what a face! One by fits eyed  
 Her, and the horrible pittance;  
 For the penfold surrounded a hollow  
 Which led where the eye scarce dared  
 follow,

And shelved to the chamber secluded  
 Where Bluebeard, the great lion, brooded.  
 The King hailed his keeper, an Arab  
 As glossy and black as a scarab,  
 And bade him make sport and at once stir  
 Up and out of his den the old monster.  
 They opened a hole in the wire-work  
 Across it, and dropped there a firework,  
 And fled: one's heart's beating redoubled;  
 A pause, while the pit's mouth was  
 troubled,

The blackness and silence so utter,  
 By the firework's slow sparkling and  
 sputter;

Then earth in a sudden contortion  
 Gave out to our gaze her abortion.  
 Such a brute! Were I friend Clement Marot  
 (Whose experience of nature's but narrow,  
 And whose faculties move in no small mist  
 When he versifies David the Psalmist)  
 I should study that brute to describe you  
*Illum Juda Leonem de Tribu.*

One's whole blood grew curdling and  
 creepy

To see the black mane, vast and heapy,  
 The tail in the air stiff and straining,  
 The wide eyes, nor waxing nor waning,  
 As over the barrier which bounded  
 His platform, and us who surrounded  
 The barrier, they reached and they rested  
 'On space that might stand him in best  
 stead:

For who knew, he thought, what the  
 amazement,  
 The eruption of clatter and blaze meant,

## THE GLOVE

And if, in this minute of wonder,  
No outlet, 'mid lightning and thunder,  
Lay broad, and, his shackles all shivered,  
The lion at last was delivered?

Ay, that was the open sky o'erhead!  
And you saw by the flash on his forehead,  
By the hope in those eyes wide and steady,  
He was leagues in the desert already,  
Driving the flocks up the mountain,  
Or catlike couched hard by the fountain  
To waylay the date-gathering negress:  
So guarded he entrance or egress.

'How he stands!' quoth the King: 'we  
may well swear,  
(No novice, we've won our spurs else-  
where

'And so can afford the confession,  
'We exercise wholesome discretion  
'In keeping aloof from his threshold;  
'Once hold you, those jaws want no fresh  
hold,  
'Their first would too pleasantly purloin  
'The visitor's brisket or surloin:  
'But who's he would prove so fool-hardy?  
'Not the best man of Marignan, pardie!'

The sentence no sooner was uttered,  
Than over the rails a glove fluttered,  
Fell close to the lion, and rested:  
The dame 'twas, who flung it and jested  
With life so, De Lorge had been wooing  
For months past; he sat there pursuing  
His suit, weighing out with nonchalance  
Fine speeches like gold from a balance.

Sound the trumpet, no true knight's a  
tarrier!

De Lorge made one leap at the barrier,  
Walked straight to the glove,—while the  
lion

Ne'er moved, kept his far-reaching eye on  
The palm-tree-edged desert-spring's  
sapphire,

And the musky oiled skin of the Kaffir,—  
Picked it up, and as calmly retreated,  
Leaped back where the lady was seated,  
And full in the face of its owner  
Flung the glove.

'Your heart's queen, you  
dethrone her?

'So should I!—cried the King—'twas  
mere vanity,

'Not love, set that task to humanity!'  
Lords and ladies alike turned with loath-  
ing

From such a proved wolf in sheep's  
clothing.

Not so, I; for I caught an expression  
In her brow's undisturbed self-possession:  
Amid the Court's scoffing and merri-  
ment,—

As if from no pleasing experiment  
She rose, yet of pain not much heedful

So long as the process was needful,—  
As if she had tried in a crucible,  
To what 'speeches like gold' were re-  
ducible,

And, finding the finest prove copper,  
Felt the smoke in her face was but proper;  
To know what she had *not* to trust to,  
Was worth all the ashes and dust too.  
She went out 'mid hooting and laughter;  
Clement Marot stayed; I followed after,  
And asked, as a grace, what it all meant?  
If she wished not the rash deod's recal-  
ment?

'For I'—so I spoke—'am a poet:  
'Human nature,—behoves that I know it!

She told me, 'Too long had I heard  
'Of the deed proved alone by the word:  
'For my love—what De Lorge would not  
dare!

'With my scorn—what De Lorge could  
compare!

'And the endless descriptions of death  
'He would brave when my lip formed a  
breath,

'I must reckon as braved, or, of course,  
'Doubt his word—and moreover, per-  
force,

'For such gifts as no lady could spurn,  
'Must offer my love in return.

'When I looked on your lion, it brought  
'All the dangers at once to my thought,  
'Encountered by all sorts of men,  
'Before he was lodged in his den,—

'From the poor slave whose club or bare  
hands

'Dug the trap, set the snare on the sands,  
'With no King and no Court to applaud,  
'By no shame, should he shrink, over-  
awed,

'Yet to capture the creature made shift,  
'That his rude boys might laugh at the  
gift,

'—To the page who last leaped o'er the  
fence

'Of the pit, on no greater pretence  
'Than to get back the bonnet he dropped,  
'Lest his pay for a week should be stopped.

'So, wiser I judged it to make  
'One trial what "death for my sake"

'Really meant, while the power was yet  
mine,

'Than to wait until time should define  
'Such a phrase not so simply as I,  
'Who took it to mean just "to die."

'The blow a glove gives is but weak:  
'Does the mark yet discolour my cheek?

'But when the heart suffers a blow,  
'Will the pain pass so soon, do you know?'

I looked, as away she was sweeping,  
And saw a youth eagerly keeping  
As close as he dared to the doorway.  
No doubt that a noble should more weigh

## THE GLOVE

His life than befits a plebeian;  
And yet, had our brute been Nemean—  
(I judge by a certain calm fervour  
The youth stepped with, forward to serve  
her)

—He'd have scarce thought you did him  
the worst turn

If you whispered 'Friend, what you'd get,  
first earn!'

And when, shortly after, she carried  
Her shame from the Court, and they  
married,

To that marriage some happiness, maugre  
The voice of the Court, I dared augur.

For De Lorge, he made women with men  
vie,

Those in wonder and praise, these in envy;  
And in short stood so plain a head taller  
That he wooed and won . . . how do you  
call her?

The beauty, that rose in the sequel  
To the King's love, who loved her a week  
well.

And 'twas noticed he never would honour  
De Lorge (who looked daggers upon her)  
With the easy commission of stretching  
His legs in the service, and fetching  
His wife from her chamber, those straying  
Sad gloves she was always mislaying,  
While the King took the closet to chat  
in,—

But of course this adventure came pat in.  
And never the King told the story,  
How bringing a glove brought such glory,  
But the wife smiled—'His nerves are  
grown firmer:

'Mine he brings now and utters no mur-  
mur.'

*Venienti occurrere morbo!*

With which moral I drop my theorbos.

## TIME'S REVENGES

I've a Friend, over the sea;  
I like him, but he loves me.  
It all grew out of the books I write;  
They find such favour in his sight  
That he slaughters you with savage looks  
Because you don't admire my books.  
He does himself though,—and if some  
vein

Were to snap to-night in this heavy brain,  
To-morrow month, if I lived to try,  
Round should I just turn quietly,  
Or out of the bedclothes stretch my hand  
Till I found him, come from his foreign  
land

To be my nurse in this poor place,  
And make my broth and wash my face  
And light my fire and, all the while,  
Bear with his old good-humoured smile

That I told him 'Better have kept away  
'Than come and kill me, night and day,  
'With, worse than fever throbs and shoots,  
'The creaking of his clumsy boots.'

I am as sure that this he would do,  
As that Saint Paul's is striking two.  
And I think I rather . . . woe is me!

—Yes, rather would see him than not see,  
If lifting a hand could seat him there  
Before me in the empty chair  
To-night, when my head aches indeed,  
And I can neither think nor read  
Nor make these purple fingers hold  
The pen; this garret's freezing cold!

And I've a Lady—there he wakes,  
The laughing fiend and prince of snakes  
Within me, at her name, to pray  
Fate send some creature in the way  
Of my love for her, to be down-torn,  
Uphrust and outward-borne,  
So I might prove myself that sea  
Of passion which I needs must be!  
Call my thoughts false and my fancies  
quaint

And my style infirm and its figures faint,  
All the critics say, and more blame yet,  
And not one angry word you get.  
But, please you, wonder I would put  
My cheek beneath that lady's foot  
Rather than trample under mine  
The laurels of the Florentine,  
And you shall see how the devil spends  
A fire God gave for other ends!  
I tell you, I stride up and down  
This garret, crowned with love's best  
crown,

And feasted with love's perfect feast,  
To think I kill for her, at least,  
Body and soul and peace and fame,  
Alike youth's end and manhood's aim,  
—So is my spirit, as flesh with sin,  
Filled full, eaten out and in  
With the face of her, the eyes of her,  
The lips, the little chin, the stir  
Of shadow round her mouth; and she  
—I'll tell you,—calmly would decree  
That I should roast at a slow fire,  
If that would compass her desire  
And make her one whom they invite  
To the famous ball to-morrow night.

There may be heaven; there must be hell;  
Meantime, there is our earth here—well!

## THE ITALIAN IN ENGLAND

THAT second time they hunted me  
From hill to plain, from shore to sea,  
And Austria, hounding far and wide  
Her blood-hounds thro' the country-side,  
Breathed hot and instant on my trace,—  
I made six days a hiding-place

## THE ITALIAN IN ENGLAND

Of that dry green old aqueduct  
Where I and Charles, when boys, have  
plucked

The fire-flies from the roof above,  
Bright creeping thro' the moss they love:  
—How long it seems since Charles was  
lost!

Six days the soldiers crossed and crossed  
The country in my very sight;  
And when that peril ceased at night,  
The sky broke out in red dismay  
With signal fires; well, there I lay  
Close covered o'er in my recess,  
Up to the neck in ferns and cress,  
Thinking on Metternich our friend,  
And Charles's miserable end,  
And much beside, two days; the third,  
Hunger o'ercame me when I heard  
The peasants from the village go  
To work among the maize; you know,  
With us in Lombardy, they bring  
Provisions packed on mules, a string  
With little bells that cheer their task,  
And casks, and boughs on every cask  
To keep the sun's heat from the wine;  
These I let pass in jingling line,  
And, close on them, dear noisy crew,  
The peasants from the village, too;  
For at the very rear would troop  
Their wives and sisters in a group  
To help, I knew. When these had passed,  
I threw my glove to strike the last,  
Taking the chance: she did not start,  
Much less cry out, but stooped apart,  
One instant rapidly glanced round,  
And saw me beckon from the ground.  
A wild bush grows and hides my crypt;  
She picked my glove up while she stripped  
A branch off, then rejoined the rest  
With that; my glove lay in her breast.  
Then I drew breath; they disappeared.  
It was for Italy I feared.

An hour, and she returned alone  
Exactly where my glove was thrown.  
Meanwhile came many thoughts: on me  
Rested the hopes of Italy,  
I had devised a certain tale  
Which, when 'twas told her, could not  
fail

Persuade a peasant of its truth;  
I meant to call a freak of youth  
This hiding, and give hopes of pay,  
And no temptation to betray.  
But when I saw that woman's face,  
Its calm simplicity of grace,  
Our Italy's own attitude  
In which she walked thus far, and stood,  
Planting each naked foot so firm,  
To crush the snake and spare the worm—  
At first sight of her eyes, I said,  
'I am that man upon whose head  
'They fix the price, because I hate  
'The Austrians over us: the State

'Will give you gold—oh, gold so much!—  
'If you betray me to their clutch,  
'And be your death, for aught I know,  
'If once they find you saved their foe,  
'Now, you must bring me food and drink,  
'And also paper, pen and ink,  
'And carry safe what I shall write  
'To Padua, which you'll reach at night  
'Before the duomo shuts; go in,  
'And wait till Tenebræ begin;  
'Walk to the third confessional,  
'Between the pillar and the wail,  
'And kneeling whisper, *Whence comes  
peace?*

'Say it a second time, then cease;  
'And if the voice inside returns,  
'From Christ and Freedom; what concerns  
'The cause of Peace?—for answer, slip  
'My letter where you placed your lip;  
'Then come back happy we have done  
'Our mother service—I, the son,  
'As you the daughter of our land!'

Three mornings more, she took her  
stand

In the same place, with the same eyes:  
I was no surer of sun-rise  
Than of her coming. We conferred  
Of her own prospects, and I heard  
She had a lover—stout and tall,  
She said—then let her eyelids fall,  
'He could do much'—as if some doubt  
Entered her heart,—then, passing out,  
'She could not speak for others, who  
'Had other thoughts; herself she knew.'  
And so she brought me drink and food.  
After four days, the scouts pursued  
Another path; at last arrived  
The help my Paduan friends contrived  
To furnish me: she brought the news.  
For the first time I could not choose  
But kiss her hand, and lay my own  
Upon her head—'This faith was shown  
'To Italy, our mother; she  
'Uses my hand and blesses thee.'  
She followed down to the sea-shore;  
I left and never saw her more.

How very long since I have thought  
Concerning—much less wished for—  
aught

Beside the good of Italy,  
For which I live and mean to die!  
I never was in love; and since  
Charles proved false, what shall now con-  
vince.

My inmost heart I have a friend?  
However, if I pleased to spend  
Real wishes on myself—say, three—  
I know at least what one should be.  
I would grasp Metternich until  
I felt his red wet throat distil  
In blood thro' these two hands. And next,  
—Nor much for that am I perplexed—

## THE ITALIAN IN ENGLAND

Charles, perjured traitor, for his part,  
Should die slow of a broken heart  
Under his new employers. Last  
—Ah, there, what should I wish? For  
fast

Do I grow old and out of strength.  
If I resolved to seek at length  
My father's house again, how scared  
They all would look, and unprepared!  
My brothers live in Austria's pay  
—Disowned me long ago, men say;  
And all my early mates who used  
To praise me so—perhaps induced  
More than one early step of mine—  
Are turning wise: while some opine  
'Freedom grows license,' some suspect  
'Haste breeds delay,' and recollect  
They always said, such premature  
Beginnings never could endure!  
So, with a sullen 'All's for best,'  
The land seems settling to its rest.  
I think then, I should wish to stand  
This evening in that dear, lost land,  
Over the sea the thousand miles,  
And know if yet that woman smiles  
With the calm smile; some little farm  
She lives in there, no doubt: what harm  
If I sat on the door-side bench,  
And, while her spindle made a trench  
Fantastically in the dust,  
Inquired of all her fortunes—just  
Her children's ages and their names,  
And what may be the husband's aims  
For each of them. I'd talk this out,  
And sit there, for an hour about,  
Then kiss her hand once more, and lay  
Mine on her head, and go my way.

So much for idle wishing—how  
It steals the time! To business now.

## THE ENGLISHMAN IN ITALY

### PIANO DI SORRENTO

FORTÙ, Fortù, my beloved one,  
Sit here by my side,  
On my knees put up both little feet!  
I was sure, if I tried,  
I could make you laugh spite of Scirocco.  
Now, open your eyes,  
Let me keep you amused till he vanish  
In black from the skies,  
With telling my memories over  
As you tell your beads;  
All the Plain saw me gather, I garland  
—The flowers or the weeds.

Time for rain! for your long hot dry  
Autumn

Had net-worked with brown  
The white skin of each grape on the  
bunches,  
Marked like a quail's crown,

Those creatures you make such account of,  
Whose heads,—speckled white  
Over brown like a great spider's back,  
As I told you last night,—  
Your mother bites off for her supper.  
Red-ripe as could be,  
Pomegranates were chapping and splitting  
In halves on the tree:  
And betwixt the loose walls of great flint-  
stone,  
Or in the thick dust  
On the path, or straight out of the rock-side,  
Wherever could thrust  
Some burnt sprig of bold hardy rock-  
flower

Its yellow face up,  
For the prize were great butterflies fighting,  
Some five for one cup.  
So, I guessed, ere I got up this morning,  
What change was in store,  
By the quick rustle-down of the quail-nets  
Which woke me before  
I could open my shutter, made fast  
With a bough and a stone,  
And look thro' the twisted dead vine-  
twigs,

Sole lattice that's known.  
Quick and sharp rang the rings down the  
net-poles,  
While, busy beneath,  
Your priest and his brother tugged at  
them,  
The rain in their teeth.  
And out upon all the flat house-roofs  
Where split figs lay drying,  
The girls took the frails under cover:  
Nor use seemed in trying  
To get out the boats and go fishing,  
For, under the cliff,  
Fierce the black water frothed o'er the  
blind-rock.

No seeing o'er skiff  
Arrive about noon from Amalfi,  
—Our fisher arrive,  
And pitch down his basket before us,  
All trembling alive  
With pink and grey jellies, your sea-fruit;  
You touch the strange lumps,  
And mouths gape there, eyes open, all  
manner  
Of horns and of humps,  
Which only the fisher looks grave at,  
While round him like imps  
Cling screaming the children as naked  
And brown as his shrimps;  
Himself too as bare to the middle  
—You see round his neck  
The string and its brass coin suspended,  
That saves him from wreck.  
But to-day not a boat reached Salerno,  
So back, to a man,  
Came our friends, with whose help in the  
vineyards  
Grape-harvest began.

## THE ENGLISHMAN IN ITALY

In the vat, halfway up in our house-  
side,

Like blood the juice spins,  
While your brother all bare-legged is  
dancing

Till breathless he grins  
Dead-beaten in effort on effort

To keep the grapes under,  
Since still when he seems all but master,  
In pours the fresh plunder

From girls who keep coming and going  
With basket on shoulder,

And eyes shut against the rain's driving;  
Your girls that are older,—

For under the hedges of aloe,  
And where, on its bed

Of the orchard's black mould, the love-  
apple

Lies pulpy and red,  
All the young ones are kneeling and filling  
Their laps with the snails

Tempted out by this first rainy weather,—  
Your best of regales,

As to-night will be proved to my sorrow,  
When, supping in state,

We shall feast our grape-gleaners (two  
dozen,

Three over one plate)  
With lasagne so tempting to swallow

In slippery ropes,  
And gourds fried in great purple slices,

That colour of popes.  
Meantime, see the grape bunch they've

brought you:  
The rain-water slips

O'er the heavy blue bloom on each globe  
Which the wasp to your lips

Still follows with fretful persistence:  
Nay, taste, while awake,

This half of a curd-white smooth cheese-  
ball

That peels, flake by flake,  
Like an onion, each smoother and whiter;

Next, sip this weak wine  
From the thin green glass flask, with its

stopper,  
A leaf of the vine;

And end with the prickly-pear's red flesh  
That leaves thro' its juice

The stony black seeds on your pearl-  
teeth.

Scirocco is loose!  
Hark, the quick, whistling pelt of the

olives  
Which, thick in one's track,

Tempt the stranger to pick up and bite  
them,

Tho' not yet half black!  
How the old twisted olive trunks shudder,

The medlars let fall  
Their hard fruit, and the brittle great fig-  
trees

Snap off, figs and all,  
For here comes the whole of the tempest!

No refuge, but creep  
Back again to my side and my shoulder,  
And listen or sleep.

O how will your country show next week,  
When all the vine-boughs

Have been stripped of their foliage to  
pasture

The mules and the cows?  
Last eve, I rode over the mountains;

Your brother, my guide,  
Soon left me, to feast on the myrtles

That offered, each side,  
Their fruit-balls, black, glossy and

luscious,—  
Or strip from the sorbs

A treasure, or, rosy and wondrous,  
Those hairy gold orbs!

But my mule picked his sober path out,  
Just stopping to neigh

When he recognized down in the valley  
His mates on their way

With the faggots and barrels of water;  
And soon we emerged

From the plain, where the woods could  
scarce follow;

And still as we urged  
Our way, the woods wondered, and left us,

As up still we trudged  
Though the wild path grew wilder each

instant,  
And place was e'en grudged

'Mid the rock-chasms and piles of loose  
stones

Like the loose broken teeth  
Of some monster which climbed there to

die  
From the ocean beneath—

Place was grudged to the silver-grey fume-  
weed

That clung to the path,  
And dark rosemary ever a-dying

That, 'spite the wind's wrath,  
So loves the salt rock's face to seaward,

And lentisks as staunch  
To the stone where they root and bear

berries,  
And . . . what shows a branch

Coral-coloured, transparent, with circlets  
Of pale seagreen leaves;

Over all trod my mule with the caution  
Of gleaners o'er sheaves,

Still, foot after foot like a lady,  
Till, round after round,

He climbed to the top of Calvano,  
And God's own profound

Was above me, and round me the moun-  
tains,

And under, the sea,  
And within me my heart to bear witness

What was and shall be.  
Oh, heaven and the terrible crystal!

No rampart excludes  
Your eye from the life to be lived

In the blue solitudes.

## THE ENGLISHMAN IN ITALY

Oh, those mountains, their infinite movement!  
 Still moving with you;  
 For, ever some new head and breast of them  
 Thrusts into view  
 To observe the intruder; you see it  
 If quickly you turn  
 And, before they escape you surprise them.  
 They grudge you should learn  
 How the soft plains they look on, lean over  
 And love (they pretend)  
 —Cower beneath them, the flat sea-pine crouches,  
 The wild fruit-trees bend,  
 E'en the myrtle-leaves curl, shrink and shut:  
 All is silent and grave:  
 'Tis a sensual and timorous beauty,  
 How fair! but a slave.  
 So, I turned to the sea; and there slumbered  
 As greenly as ever  
 Those isles of the siren, your Galli;  
 No ages can sever  
 The Three, nor enable their sister  
 To join them,—halfway  
 On the voyage, she looked at Ulysses—  
 No farther to-day,  
 Tho' the small one, just launched in the wave,  
 Watches breast-high and steady  
 From under the rock, her bold sister  
 Swum halfway already.  
 Fortù, shall we sail there together  
 And see from the sides  
 Quite new rocks show their faces, new haunts  
 Where the siren abides?  
 Shall we sail round and round them, close over  
 The rocks, tho' unseen,  
 That ruffle the grey glassy water  
 To glorious green?  
 Then scramble from splinter to splinter,  
 Reach land and explore,  
 On the largest, the strange square black turret  
 With never a door,  
 Just a loop to admit the quick lizards;  
 Then, stand there and hear  
 The birds' quiet singing, that tells us  
 What life is, so clear?  
 —The secret they sang to Ulysses  
 When, ages ago,  
 He heard and he knew this life's secret  
 I hear and I know.  
 Ah, see! The sun breaks o'er Calvano;  
 He strikes the great gloom  
 And flutters it o'er the mount's summit  
 In airy gold fume.

All is over. Look out, see the gipsy,  
 Our tinker and smith,  
 Has arrived, set up bellows and forge,  
 And down-squatted forthwith  
 To his hammering, under the wall there;  
 One eye keeps aloof  
 The urchins that itch to be putting  
 His jews'-harps to proof,  
 While the other, thro' locks of curled wire,  
 Is watching how sleek  
 Shines the hog, come to share in the wind-fall  
 —Chew, abbot's own cheek!  
 All is over. Wake up and come out now,  
 And down let us go,  
 And see the fine things got in order  
 At church for the show  
 Of the Sacrament, set forth this evening.  
 To-morrow's the Feast  
 Of the Rosary's Virgin, by no means  
 Of Virgins the least,  
 As you'll hear in the off-hand discourse  
 Which (all nature, no art)  
 The Dominican brother, these three weeks,  
 Was getting by heart.  
 Not a pillar nor post but is dizen'd  
 With red and blue papers;  
 All the roof waves with ribbons, each altar  
 A-blaze with long tapers;  
 But the great masterpiece is the scaffold  
 Rigged glorious to hold  
 All the fiddlers and fifers and drummers  
 And trumpeters bold,  
 Not afraid of Bellini nor Auber,  
 Who, when the priest's hoarse,  
 Will strike us up something that's brisk  
 For the feast's second course.  
 And then will the flaxen-wigged Image  
 Be carried in pomp  
 Thro' the plain, while in gallant procession  
 The priests mean to stomp.  
 All round the glad church lie old bottles  
 With gunpowder stopped,  
 Which will be, when the Image re-enters,  
 Religiously popped;  
 And at night from the crest of Calvano  
 Great bonfires will hang,  
 On the plain will the trumpets join chorus,  
 And more poppers bang.  
 At all events, come—to the garden  
 As far as the wall;  
 See me tap with a hoe on the plaster  
 Till out there shall fall  
 A scorpion with wide angry nippers!  
 —'Such trifles!' you say?  
 Fortù, in my England at home,  
 Men meet gravely to-day  
 And debate, if abolishing Corn-laws  
 Be righteous and wise  
 —If 'twere proper, Scirocco should vanish  
 In black from the skies!



## IN A GONDOLA

### IN A GONDOLA

*He sings.*

I SEND my heart up to thee, all my heart  
In this my singing.  
For the stars help me, and the sea bears  
part;  
The very night is clinging  
Closer to Venice' streets to leave one space  
Above me, whence thy face  
May light my joyous heart to thee its  
dwelling-place.

*She speaks.*

Say after me, and try to say  
My very words, as if each word  
Came from you of your own accord,  
In your own voice, in your own way:  
'This woman's heart and soul and brain  
'Are mine as much as this gold chain  
'She bids me wear; which' (say again)  
'I choose to make by cherishing  
'A precious thing, or choose to fling  
'Over the boat-side, ring by ring.'  
And yet once more say . . . no word more  
Since words are only words. Give o'er!

Unless you call me, all the same,  
Familiarly by my pet name,  
Which if the Three should hear you call,  
And me reply to, would proclaim  
At once our secret to them all.  
Ask of me, too, command me, blame—  
Do, break down the partition-wall  
'Twixt us, the daylight world beholds  
Curtained in dusk and splendid folds!  
What's left but—all of me to take?  
I am the Three's: prevent them, slake  
Your thirst! 'Tis said, the Arab sage,  
In practising with gems, can loose  
Their subtle spirit in his cruce  
And leave but ashes: so, sweet mage,  
Leave the n my ashes when thy use  
Sucks out my soul, thy heritage!

*He sings.*

I

Past we glide, and past, and past!  
What's that poor Agnese doing  
Where they make the shutters fast?  
Grey Zanobi's just a-wooing  
To his couch the purchased bride:  
Past we glide!

II

Past we glide, and past, and past!  
Why's the Pucci Palace flaring  
Like a beacon to the blast?  
Guests by hundreds, not one caring  
If the dear host's neck were wried:  
Past we glide!

*She sings.*

I

The moth's kiss, fast!  
Kiss me as if you made believe  
You were not sure, this eve,  
How, my face, your flower, had pursed  
Its petals up; so, here and there  
You brush it, till I grow aware  
Who wants me, and wide ope I burst.

II

The bee's kiss, now!  
Kiss me as if you entered gay  
My heart at some noonday,  
A bud that dares not disallow  
The claim, so all is rendered up,  
And passively its shattered cup  
Over your head to sleep I bow.

*He sings.*

I

What are we two?  
I am a Jew,  
And carry thee, farther than friends can  
pursue,  
To a feast of our tribe;  
Where they need thee to bribe  
The devil that blasts them unless he imbibe  
Thy . . . Scatter the vision for ever! And  
now,  
As of old, I am I, thou art thou!

II

Say again, what we are?  
The sprite of a star,  
I lure thee above where the destinies bar  
My plumes their full play  
Till a ruddier ray  
Than my pale one announce there is  
withering away  
Some . . . Scatter the vision for ever! And  
now,  
As of old, I am I, thou art thou!

*He muses.*

Oh, which were best, to roam or rest?  
The land's lap or the water's breast?  
To sleep on yellow millet-sheaves,  
Or swim in lucid shallows just  
Eluding water-lily leaves,  
An inch from Death's black fingers, thrust  
To lock you, whom release he must;  
Which life were best on Summer eves?

*He speaks, musing.*

Lie back; could thought of mine improve  
you?  
From this shoulder let there spring  
A wing; from this, another wing;  
Wings, not legs and feet, shall move you!  
Snow-white must they spring, to blend  
With your flesh, but I intend  
They shall deepen to the end,

Broader, into burning gold,  
Till both wings crescent-wise enfold  
Your perfect self, from 'neath your feet  
To o'er your head, where, lo, they meet  
As if a million sword-blades hurled  
Defiance from you to the world!

Rescue me thou, the only real!  
And scare away this mad ideal  
That came, nor motions to depart!  
Thanks! Now, stay ever as thou art!

*Still he muses.*

I  
What if the Three should catch at last  
Thy serenader? While there's cast  
Paul's cloak about my head, and fast  
Gian pinions me, Himself has past  
His stylet thro' my back; I reel;  
And . . . is it thou I feel?

II

They trail me, these three godless knaves,  
Past every church that saints and saves,  
Nor stop till, where the cold sea raves  
By Lido's wet accursed graves,  
They scoop mine, roll me to its brink,  
And . . . on thy breast I sink!

*She replies, musing.*

Dip your arm o'er the boat-side, elbow-  
deep,  
As I do: thus: were death so unlike sleep,  
Caught this way? Death's to fear from  
flame or steel,  
Or poison doubtless; but from water—  
feel!  
Go find the bottom! Would you stay me?  
There!  
Now pluck a great blade of that ribbon-  
grass  
To plait in where the foolish jewel was,  
I flung away: since you have praised my  
hair,  
'Tis proper to be choice in what I wear.

*He speaks.*

Row home? must we row home? Too  
surely  
Know I where its front's demurely  
Over the Giudecca piled;  
Window just with window mating,  
Door on door exactly waiting,  
All's the set face of a child:  
But behind it, where's a trace  
Of the staidness and reserve,  
And formal lines without a curve,  
In the same child's playing-face?  
No two windows look one way  
O'er the small sea-water thread  
Below them. Ah, the autumn day  
I, passing, saw you overhead!

First, out a cloud of curtain blew,  
Then a sweet cry, and last came you—  
To catch your lory that must needs  
Escape just then, of all times then,  
To peck a tall plant's fleecy seeds,  
And make me happiest of men.  
I scarce could breathe to see you reach  
So far back o'er the balcony  
To catch him ere he climbed too high  
Above you in the Smyrna peach  
That quick the round smooth cord of gold,  
This coiled hair on your head, unrolled,  
Fell down you like a gorgeous snake  
The Roman girls were wont, of old,  
When Rome there was, for coolness' sake  
To let lie curling o'er their bosoms.  
Dear lory, may his beak retain  
Ever its delicate rose stain  
As if the wounded lotus-blossoms  
Had marked their thief to know again!

Stay longer yet, for other's sake  
Than mine! What should your chamber  
do?

—With all its rarities that ache  
In silence while day lasts, but wake  
At night-time and their life renew,  
Suspended just to pleasure you  
Who brought against their will together  
These objects, and, while day lasts, weave  
Around them such a magic tether  
That dumb they look; your harp, be-  
lieve,

With all the sensitive tight strings  
Which dare not speak, now to itself  
Breathes slumberously, as if some elf  
Went in and out the chords, his wings  
Make murmur wheresoe'er they graze,  
As an angel may, between the maze  
Of midnight palace-pillars, on  
And on, to sow God's plagues, have gone  
Through guilty glorious Babylon.  
And while such murmurs flow, the nymph  
Bends o'er the harp-top from her shell  
As the dry limpet for the lymph  
Come with a tune he knows so well.  
And how your statues' hearts must swell!  
And how your pictures must descend  
To see each other, friend with friend!  
Oh, could you take them by surprise,  
You'd find Schidone's eager Duke  
Doing the quaintest courtesies  
To that prim saint by Haste-thee-Luke  
And, deeper into her rock den,  
Bold Castelfranco's Magdalen  
You'd find retreated from the ken  
Of that robed counsel-keeping Ser—  
As if the Tizian thinks of her,  
And is not, rather, gravely bent  
On seeing for himself what toys  
Are these, his progeny invent,  
What litter now the board employs  
Whereon he signed a document  
That got him murdered! Each enjoys

## IN A GONDOLA

Its night so well, you cannot break  
The sport up, so, indeed must make  
More stay with me, for others' sake.

*She speaks.*

### I

To-morrow, if a harp-string, say,  
Is used to tie the jasmine back  
That overfloods my room with sweets,  
Contrive your Zorzi somehow meets  
My Zanze! If the ribbon's black,  
The Three are watching: keep away!

### II

Your gondola—let Zorzi wreath  
A mesh of water-weeds about  
Its prow, as if he unaware  
Had struck some quay or bridge-foot  
stair!

That I may throw a paper out  
As you and he go underneath.

There's Zanze's vigilant taper; safe are we.  
Only one minute more to-night with me?  
Resume your past self of a month ago!  
Be you the bashful gallant, I will be  
The lady with the colder breast than snow.  
Now bow you, as becomes, nor touch my  
hand  
More than I touch yours when I step to  
land,  
And say, 'All thanks, Siora!'

Heart to heart

And lips to lips! Yet once more, ere we  
part,  
Clasp me and make me thine, as mine thou  
art!

*He is surprised, and stabbed.*

It was ordained to be so, sweet!—and  
best

Comes now, beneath thine eyes, upon thy  
breast.

Still kiss me! Care not for the cowards!  
Care

Only to put aside thy beauteous hair  
My blood will hurt! The Three, I do not  
scorn

To death, because they never lived: but I  
Have lived indeed, and so—(yet one more  
kiss)—can die!

## WARING

### I

### I

WHAT'S become of Waring  
Since he gave us all the slip,  
Chose land-travel or seafaring,  
Boots and chest or staff and scrip,  
Rather than pace up and down  
Any longer London town?

### II

Who'd have guessed it from his lip  
Or his brow's accustomed bearing,  
On the night he thus took ship  
Or started landward?—little caring  
For us, it seems, who supped together  
(Friends of his too, I remember)  
And walked home thro' the merry  
weather,  
The snowiest in all December.  
I left his arm that night myself  
For what's-his-name's, the new prose-  
poet

Who wrote the book there, on the shelf—  
How, forsooth, was I to know it  
If Waring meant to glide away  
Like a ghost at break of day?  
Never looked he half so gay!

### III

He was prouder than the devil:  
How he must have cursed our revel!  
Ay and many other meetings,  
Indoor visits, outdoor greetings,  
As up and down he paced this London,  
With no work done, but great works un-  
done,

Where scarce twenty knew his name.  
Why not, then, have earlier spoken,  
Written, bustled? Who's to blame  
If your silence kept unbroken?  
'True, but there were sundry jottings,  
'Stray-leaves, fragments, blurs and blot-  
tings,

'Certain first steps were achieved  
'Already which'—(is that your meaning?)  
'Had well borne out who'er believed  
'In more to come!' But who goes glean-  
ing  
Hedge-side chance-blades, while full-  
sheaved

Stand cornfields by him? Pride, o'erween-  
ing

Pride alone, puts forth such claims  
O'er the day's distinguished names.

### IV

Meantime, how much I loved him,  
I find out now I've lost him.  
I who cared not if I moved him,  
Who could so carelessly accost him,  
Henceforth never shall get free  
Of his ghostly company,  
His eyes that just a little wink  
As deep I go into the merit  
Of this and that distinguished spirit—  
His cheeks' raised colour, soon to sink,  
As long I dwell on some stupendous  
And tremendous (Heaven defend us!)  
'Monstr'-inform'-ingens-horrend-ous  
Demoniac-seraphic  
Penman's latest piece of graphic.  
Nay, my very wrist grows warm  
With his dragging weight of arm.

E'en so, swimmingly appears,  
Through one's after-supper musings,  
Some lost lady of old years  
With her beauteous vain endeavour  
And goodness unrepaid as ever;  
The face, accustomed to refusings,  
We, puppies that we were . . . Oh never  
Surely, nice of conscience, scrupled  
Being aught like false, forsooth, to?  
Telling aught but honest truth to?  
What a sin, had we centupled  
Its possessor's grace and sweetness!  
No! she heard in its completeness  
Truth, for truth's a weighty matter,  
And truth, at issue, we can't flatter!  
Well, 'tis done wit! she's exempt  
From damning us thro' such a sally;  
And so she glides, as down a valley,  
Taking up with her contempt,  
Past our reach; and in, the flowers  
Shut her unregarded hours.

v

Oh, could I have him back once more,  
This Waring, but one half-day more!  
Back, with the quiet face of yore,  
So hungry for acknowledgment  
Like mine! I'd fool him to his bent.  
Feed, should not he, to heart's content?  
I'd say, 'to only have conceived,  
'Planned your great works, apart from  
progress,  
'Surpasses little works achieved!'  
I'd lie so, I should be believed.  
I'd make such havoc of the claims  
Of the day's distinguished names  
To feast him with, as feasts an ogress  
Her feverish sharp-toothed gold-crowned  
child!

Or as one feasts a creature rarely  
Captured here, unreconciled  
To capture; and completely gives  
Its pettish humours license, barely  
Requiring that it lives.

vi

Ichabod, Ichabod,  
The glory is departed!  
Travels Waring East away?  
Who, of knowledge, by hearsay,  
Reports a man upstart  
Somewhere as a god,  
Hordes grown European-hearted,  
Millions of the wild made tame  
On a sudden at his fame?  
In Vishnu-land what Avatar?  
Or who in Moscow, toward the Czar,  
With the demurest of footfalls  
Over the Kremlin's pavement bright  
With serpentine and syenite,  
Steps, with five other Generals  
That simultaneously take snuff,  
For each to have pretext enough  
And kerchiefwise unfold his sash  
Which, softness' self, is yet the stuff

To hold fast where a steel chain snaps,  
And leave the grand white neck no gash?  
Waring in Moscow, to those rough  
Cold northern natures borne perhaps,  
Like the lambwhite maiden dear  
From the circle of mute kings  
Unable to repress the tear,  
Each as his sceptre down he flings,  
To Dian's fane at Taurica,  
Where now a captive priestess, she  
always  
Mingles her tender grave Hellenic speech  
With theirs, tuned to the hailstone-beaten  
beach:  
As pours some pigeon, from the myrrhy  
lands  
Rapt by the whirlblast to fierce Scythian  
strands  
Where breed the swallows, her melodious  
cry  
Amid their barbarous twitter!  
In Russia? Never! Spain were fitter!  
Ay, most likely 'tis in Spain  
That we and Waring meet again  
Now, while he turns down that cool narrow  
lane  
Into the blackness, out of grave Madrid  
All fire and shine, abrupt as when there's  
slid  
Its stiff gold blazing pall  
From some black coffin-lid.  
Or, best of all,  
I love to think  
The leaving us was just a feint:  
Back here to London did he sink,  
And now works on without a wink  
Of sleep, and we are on the brink  
Of something great in fresco-paint:  
Some garret's ceiling, walls and floor,  
Up and down and o'er and o'er  
He splashes, as none splashed before  
Since great Caldara Polidore.  
Or Music means this land of ours  
Some favour yet, to pity won  
By Purcell from his Rosy Bowers,—  
'Give me my so-long promised son,  
'Let Waring end what I begun!'  
Then down he creeps and out he steals  
Only when the night conceals  
His face; in Kent 'tis cherry-time,  
Or hops are picking: or at prime  
Of March he wanders as, too happy,  
Years ago when he was young,  
Some mild eve when woods grew sappy  
And the early moths had sprung  
To life from many a trembling sheath  
Woven the warm boughs beneath;  
While small birds said to themselves  
What should soon be actual song,  
And young gnats, by tens and twelves  
Made as if they were the throng  
That crowd around and carry aloft  
The sound they have nursed, so sweet and  
pure,

## WARING

Out of a myriad noises soft,  
Into a tone that can endure  
Amid the noise of a July noon  
When all God's creatures crave their boon,  
All at once and all in tune,  
And get it, happy as Waring then,  
Having first within his ken  
What a man might do with men:  
And far too glad, in the even-glow,  
To mix with the world he meant to take  
Into his hand, he told you, so—  
And out of it his world to make,  
To contract and to expand  
As he shut or oped his hand.  
Oh Waring, what's to really be?  
A clear stage and a crowd to see!  
Some Garrick, say, out shall not he  
The heart of Hamlet's mystery pluck?  
Or, where most unclean beasts are rife,  
Some Junius—am I right?—shall tuck  
His sleeve, and forth with flaying-knife!  
Some Chatterton shall have the luck  
Of calling Rowley into life!  
Some one shall somehow run a muck  
With this old world, for want of strife  
Sound asleep. Contrive, contrive  
To rouse us, Waring! Who's alive?  
Our men scarce seem in earnest now.  
Distinguished names!—but 'tis, some-  
how,  
As if they played at being names  
Still more distinguished, like the games  
Of children. Turn our sport to earnest  
With a visage of the sternest!  
Bring the real times back, confessed  
Still better than our very best!

### II

#### I

'WHEN I last saw Waring . . .'  
(How all turned to him, who spoke!  
You saw Waring? Truth or joke?  
In land-travel or sea-faring?)

#### II

'We were sailing by Triest  
'Where a day or two we harboured:  
'A sunset was in the West,  
'When, looking over the vessel's side,  
'One of our company espied  
'A sudden speck to larboard.  
'And as a sea-duck flies and swims  
'At once, so came the light craft up,  
'With its sole lateen sail that trims  
'And turns (the water round its rims  
'Dancing, as round a sinking cup)  
'And by us like a fish it curled,  
'And drew itself up close beside,  
'Its great sail on the instant furled,  
'And o'er its thwarts a shrill voice cried,  
'(A neck as bronzed as a Lascar's)  
'"Buy wine of us, you English Brig?  
'"Or fruit, tobacco and cigars?

"A pilot for you to Triest?  
"Without one, look you ne'er so big,  
"They'll never let you up the bay!  
"We natives should know best."  
'I turned, and "just those fellows' way,"  
'Our captain said, "The 'long-shore  
thieves  
"Are laughing at us in their sleeves."

### III

'In truth, the boy leaned laughing back;  
'And one, half-hidden by his side  
'Under the furled sail, soon I spied,  
'With great grass hat and kerchief black,  
'Who looked up with his kingly throat,  
'Said somewhat, while the other shook  
'His hair back from his eyes to look  
'Their longest at us; then the boat,  
'I know not how, turned sharply round,  
'Laying her whole side on the sea  
'As a leaping fish does; from the lee  
'Into the weather, cut somehow  
'Her sparkling path beneath our bow  
'And so went off, as with a bound,  
'Into the rosy and golden half  
'O' the sky, to overtake the sun  
'And reach the shore, like the sea-calf  
'Its singing cave; yet I caught one  
'Glance ere away the boat quite passed,  
'And neither time nor toil could mar  
'Those features: so I saw the last  
'Of Waring!—You? Oh, never star  
Was lost here but it rose afar!  
Look East, where whole new thousands  
are!  
In Vishnu-land what Avatar?

## THE TWINS

'Give' and 'It-shall-be-given-unto-you.'

### I

GRAND rough old Martin Luther  
Bloomed fables—flowers on furze,  
The better the uncouth:  
Do roses stick like burrs?

### II

A beggar asked an alms  
One day at an abbey-door,  
Said Luther; but, seized with qualms,  
The abbot replied, 'We're poor!

### III

'Poor, who had plenty once,  
'When gifts fell thick as rain:  
'But they give us nought, for the nonce,  
'And how should we give again?'

### IV

Then the beggar, 'See your sins!  
'Of old, unless I err,  
'Ye had brothers for inmates, twins,  
'Date and Dabitur.

V

'While Daté was in good case  
'Dabitur flourished too:  
'For Dabitur's lenter face  
'No wonder if Daté rue.

VI

'Would ye retrieve the one?  
'Try and make plump the other!  
'When Daté's penance is done,  
'Dabitur helps his brother.

VII

'Only, beware relapse!  
The Abbot hung his head.  
This beggar might be perhaps  
An angel, Luther said.

A LIGHT WOMAN

I

So far as our story approaches the end,  
Which do you pity the most of us,  
three?—  
My friend, or the mistress of my friend  
With her wanton eyes, or me?

II

My friend was already too good to lose,  
And seemed in the way of improvement  
yet,  
When she crossed his path with her hunt-  
ing-noose  
And over him drew her net.

III

When I saw him tangled in her toils,  
A shame, said I, if she adds just him  
To her nine-and-ninety other spoils,  
The hundredth for a whim!

IV

And before my friend be wholly hers,  
How easy to prove to him, I said,  
An eagle's the game her pride prefers,  
Though she snaps at a wren instead!

V

So, I gave her eyes my own eyes to take,  
My hand sought hers as in earnest need,  
And round she turned for my noble sake,  
And gave me herself indeed.

VI

The eagle am I, with my fame in the world,  
The wren is he, with his maiden face.  
—You look away and your lip is curled?  
Patience, a moment's space!

VII

For see, my friend goes shaking and white;  
He eyes me as the basilisk:  
I have turned, it appears, his day to night,  
Eclipsing his sun's disk.

VIII

And I did it, he thinks, as a very thief:  
'Though I love her—that, he compre-  
hends—  
'One should master one's passions, (love,  
in chief)  
'And be loyal to one's friends!'

IX

And she,—she lies in my hand as tame  
As a pear late basking over a wall;  
Just a touch to try and off it came;  
'Tis mine,—can I let it fall?

X

With no mind to eat it, that's the worst!  
Were it thrown in the road, would the  
case assist?  
'Twas quenching a dozen blue-flies' thirst  
When I gave its stalk a twist.

XI

And I,—what I seem to my friend, you see:  
What I soon shall seem to his love, you  
guess:  
What I seem to myself, do you ask of me?  
No hero, I confess.

XII

'Tis an awkward thing to play with souls,  
And matter enough to save one's own:  
Yet think of my friend, and the burning  
coals  
He played with for bits of stone!

XIII

One likes to show the truth for the truth;  
That the woman was light is very true:  
But suppose she says,—Never mind that  
youth!  
What wrong have I done to you?

XIV

Well, any how, here the story stays,  
So far at least as I understand;  
And, Robert Browning, you a writer of  
plays,  
Here's a subject made to your hand!

THE LAST RIDE TOGETHER

I

I SAID—Then, dearest, since 'tis so,  
Since now at length my fate I know,  
Since nothing all my love avails,  
Since all, my life seemed meant for, fails,  
Since this was written and needs must  
be—  
My whole heart rises up to bless  
Your name in pride and thankfulness!  
'Take back the hope you gave,—I claim  
Only a memory of the same,  
—And this beside, if you will not blame,  
Your leave for one more last ride with  
me.

## THE LAST RIDE TOGETHER

### II

My mistress bent that brow of hers;  
Those deep dark eyes where pride demurs  
When pity would be softening through,  
Fixed me a breathing-while or two

With life or death in the balance: right!  
The blood replenished me again;  
My last thought was at least not vain:  
I and my mistress, side by side  
Shall be together, breathe and ride,  
So, one day more am I deified.

Who knows but the world may end to-  
night?

### III

Hush! if you saw some western cloud  
All billowy-bosomed, over-bowed  
By many benedictions—sun's  
And moon's and evening-star's at once—

And so, you, looking and loving best,  
Conscious grew, your passion drew  
Cloud, sunset, moonrise, star-shine too,  
Down on you, near and yet more near,  
Till flesh must fade for heaven was here!—  
Thus leant she and lingered—joy and fear!

Thus lay she a moment on my breast.

### IV

Then we began to ride. My soul  
Smoothed itself out, a long-cramped scroll  
Freshening and fluttering in the wind.  
Past hopes already lay behind.

What need to strive with a life awry?  
Had I said that, had I done this,  
So might I gain, so might I miss.  
Might she have loved me? just as well  
She might have hated, who can tell!  
Where had I been now if the worst befell?

And here we are riding, she and I.

### V

Fail I alone, in words and deeds?  
Why, all men strive and who succeeds?  
We rode; it seemed my spirit flew,  
Saw other regions, cities new,  
As the world rushed by on either side.  
I thought,—All labour, yet no less  
Bear up beneath their unsuccess.  
Look at the end of work, contrast  
The petty done, the undone vast,  
This present of theirs with the hopeful  
past!

I hoped she would love me; here we ride.

### VI

What hand and brain went ever paired?  
What heart alike conceived and dared?  
What act proved all its thought had been?  
What will but felt the fleshly screen?  
We ride and I see her bosom heave.

There's many a crown for who can reach.  
Ten lines, a statesman's life in each!  
The flag stuck on a heap of bones,  
A soldier's doing! what atones?  
They scratch his name on the Abbey-  
stones.

My riding is better, by their leave.

### VII

What does it all mean, poet? Well,  
Your brains beat into rhythm, you tell  
What we felt only; you expressed  
You hold things beautiful the best,  
And pace them in rhyme so, side by side.  
'Tis something, nay 'tis much: but then,  
Have you yourself what's best for men?  
Are you—poor, sick, old ere your time—  
Nearer one whit your own sublime  
Than we who never have turned a rhyme?  
Sing, riding's a joy! For me, I ride.

### VIII

And you, great sculptor—so, you gave  
A score of years to Art, her slave,  
And that's your Venus, whence we turn  
To yonder girl that fords the burn!  
You acquiesce, and shall I repine?  
What, man of music, you grown grey  
With notes and nothing else to say,  
Is this your sole praise from a friend,  
'Greatly his opera's strains intend,  
'But in music we know how fashions end!'  
I gave my youth; but we ride, in fine.

### IX

Who knows what's fit for us? Had fate  
Proposed bliss here should sublimiate  
My being—had I signed the bond—  
Still one must lead some life beyond,  
Have a bliss to die with, dim-descried.  
This foot once planted on the goal,  
This glory-garland round my soul,  
Could I descry such? Try and test!  
I sink back shuddering from the quest.  
Earth being so good, would heaven seem  
best?  
Now, heaven and she are beyond this  
ride.

### X

And yet—she has not spoke so long!  
What if heaven be that, fair and strong  
At life's best, with our eyes upturned  
Whither life's flower is first discerned,  
We, fixed so, ever should so abide?  
What if we still ride on, we two  
With life for ever old yet new,  
Changed not in kind but in degree,  
The instant made eternity,—  
And heaven just prove that I and she  
Ride, ride together, for ever ride?

## THE PIED PIPER OF HAMELIN

### THE PIED PIPER OF HAMELIN;

#### A CHILD'S STORY

(Written for, and inscribed to, W. M. the Younger.)

#### I

HAMELIN Town's in Brunswick,  
By famous Hanover city;  
The river Weser, deep and wide,  
Washes its wall on the southern side;  
A pleasant spot you never spied;  
But, when begins my ditty,  
Almost five hundred years ago,  
To see the townfolk suffer so  
From vermin, was a pity.

#### II

Rats!  
They fought the dogs and killed the cats,  
And bit the babies in the cradles,  
And ate the cheeses out of the vats,  
And licked the soup from the cooks'  
own ladles,  
Split open the kegs of salted sprats,  
Made nests inside men's Sunday hats,  
And even spoiled the women's chats  
By drowning their speaking  
With shrieking and squeaking  
In fifty different sharps and flats.

#### III

At last the people in a body  
To the Town Hall came flocking:  
'Tis clear,' cried they, 'our Mayor's a  
noddy;  
'And as for our Corporation—shock-  
ing  
'To think we buy gowns lined with ermine  
'For dolts that can't or won't determine  
'What's best to rid us of our vermin!  
'You hope, because you're old and obese,  
'To find in the furry civic robe ease?  
'Rouse up, sirs! Give your brains a rack-  
ing  
'To find the remedy we're lacking,  
'Or, sure as fate, we'll send you packing!'  
At this the Mayor and Corporation  
Quaked with a mighty consternation.

#### IV

An hour they sat in council,  
At length the Mayor broke silence:  
'For a guildler I'd my ermine gown sell,  
'I wish I were a mile hence!  
'It's easy to bid one rack one's brain—  
'I'm sure my poor head aches again,  
'I've scratched it so, and all in vain.  
'Oh for a trap, a trap, a trap!  
Just as he said this, what should hap  
At the chamber door but a gentle tap?  
'Bless us,' cried the Mayor, 'what's that?'  
(With the Corporation as he sat,  
Looking little though wondrous fat;

Nor brighter was his eye, nor moister  
Than a too-long-opened oyster,  
Save when at noon his paunch grew muti-  
nous  
For a plate of turtle green and glutinous)  
'Only a scraping of shoes on the mat?  
'Anything like the sound of a rat  
'Makes my heart go pit-a-pat!'

#### V

'Come in!'—the Mayor cried, looking  
bigger:  
And in did come the strangest figure!  
His queer long coat from heel to head  
Was half of yellow and half of red,  
And he himself was tall and thin,  
With sharp blue eyes, each like a pin,  
And light loose hair, yet swarthy skin,  
No tuft on cheek nor beard on chin,  
But lips where smiles went out and in;  
There was no guessing his kith and kin:  
And nobody could enough admire  
The tall man and his quaint attire.  
'Quoth one: 'It's as my great-grandsire,  
'Starting up at the Trump of Doom's tone,  
'Had walked this way from his painted  
tombstone!'

#### VI

He advanced to the council-table:  
And, 'Please your honours,' said he, 'I'm  
able,  
'By means of a secret charm, to draw  
'All creatures living beneath the sun,  
'That creep or swim or fly or run,  
'After me so as you never saw!  
'And I chiefly use my charm  
'On creatures that do people harm,  
'The mole and toad and newt and viper;  
'And people call me the Pied Piper.'  
(And here they noticed round his neck  
A scarf of red and yellow stripe,  
To match with his coat of the self-same  
cheque;  
And at the scarf's end hung a pipe;  
And his fingers, they noticed, were ever  
straying  
As if impatient to be playing  
Upon this pipe, as low it dangled  
Over his vesture so old-fangled.)  
'Yet,' said he, 'poor piper as I am,  
'In Tartary I freed the Cham,  
'Last June, from his huge swarms of  
gnats;  
'I eased in Asia the Nizam  
'Of a monstrous brood of vampyre-  
bats:  
'And as for what your brain bewilders,  
'If I can rid your town of rats  
'Will you give me a thousand guilders?'  
'One? fifty thousand!'—was the excla-  
mation  
Of the astonished Mayor and Corpora-  
tion.



## THE PIED PIPER OF HAMELIN

### VII

Into the street the Piper stept,  
Smiling first a little smile,  
As if he knew what magic slept  
In his quiet pipe the while;  
Then, like a musical adept,  
To blow the pipe his lips he wrinkled,  
And green and blue his sharp eyes twinkled,  
Like a candle-flame where salt is sprinkled;  
And ere three shrill notes the pipe uttered,  
You heard as if an army muttered;  
And the muttering grew to a grumbling;  
And the grumbling grew to a mighty rum-  
bling;  
And out of the houses the rats came tum-  
bling.  
Great rats, small rats, lean rats, brawny  
rats,  
Brown rats, black rats, grey rats, tawny  
rats,  
Grave old plodders, gay young friskers,  
Fathers, mothers, uncles, cousins,  
Cocking tails and pricking whiskers,  
Families by tens and dozens,  
Brothers, sisters, husbands, wives—  
Followed the Piper for their lives,  
From street to street he piped advancing,  
And step for step they followed dancing,  
Until they came to the river Weser,  
Wherein all plunged and perished!  
Save one who, stout as Julius Cæsar,  
Swam across and lived to carry  
(As he, the manuscript he cherished)  
To Rat-land home his commentary:  
Which was, 'At the first shrill notes of the  
pipe,  
'I heard a sound as of scraping tripe,  
'And putting apples, wondrous ripe,  
'Into a cider-press's gripe:  
'And a moving away of pickle-tub-boards,  
'And a leaving ajar of conserve-cupboards,  
'And a drawing the corks of train-oil-  
flasks,  
'And a breaking the hoops of butter-casks:  
'And it seemed as if a voice  
'(Sweeter far than by harp or by psaltery  
'Is breathed) called out, "Oh rats, rejoice!"  
'"The world is grown to one vast dry-  
saltery!"  
'"So munch on, crunch on, take your  
nuncheon,  
'"Breakfast, supper, dinner, luncheon!"  
'And just as a bulky sugar-puncheon,  
'All ready staved, like a great sun shone  
'Glorious scarce an inch before me,  
'Just as methought it said, "Come, bore  
me!"  
'—I found the Weser rolling o'er me.'

### VIII

You should have heard the Hamelin  
people  
Ringing the bells till they rocked the  
steeples.

'Go,' cried the Mayor, 'and get long  
poles,  
'Poke out the nests and block up the  
holes!  
'Consult with carpenters and builders,  
'And leave in our town not even a trace  
'Of the rats!'—when suddenly, up the  
face  
Of the Piper perked in the market-place,  
With a, 'First, if you please, my thousand  
guilders!'

### IX

A thousand guilders! The Mayor looked  
blue;  
So did the Corporation too.  
For council dinners made rare havoc  
With Claret, Moselle, Vin-de-Grave,  
Hock;  
And half the money would replenish  
Their cellar's biggest butt with Rhenish.  
To pay this sum to a wandering fellow  
With a gipsy coat of red and yellow!  
'Beside,' quoth the Mayor with a knowing  
wink,  
'Our business was done at the river's  
brink;  
'We saw with our eyes the vermin sink,  
'And what's dead can't come to life, I  
think.  
'So, friend, we're not the folks to shrink  
'From the duty of giving you something  
for drink,  
'And a matter of money to put in your  
poke;  
'But as for the guilders, what we spoke  
'Of them, as you very well know, was in  
joke.  
'Beside, our losses have made us thrifty.  
'A thousand guilders! Come, take fifty!'

### X

The Piper's face fell, and he cried  
'No trifling! I can't wait, beside!  
'I've promised to visit by dinnertime  
'Bagdat, and accept the prime  
'Of the Head-Cook's pottage, all he's  
rich in,  
'For having left, in the Caliph's kitchen,  
'Of a nest of scorpions no survivor:  
'With him I proved no bargain-driver,  
'With you, don't think I'll bate a share!  
'And folks who put me in a passion  
'May find me pipe after another fashion.'

### XI

'How?' cried the Mayor, 'd'ye think I  
brook  
'Being worse treated than a Cook?  
'Insulted by a lazy ribald  
'With idle pipe and vesture piebald?  
'You threaten us, fellow? Do your worst,  
'Blow your pipe there till you burst!'

## THE PIED PIPER OF HAMELIN

### XII

Once more he stept into the street  
 And to his lips again  
 Laid his long pipe of smooth straight  
 cane;  
 And ere he blew three notes (such sweet  
 Soft notes as yet musician's cunning  
 Never gave the enraptured air)  
 There was a rustling that seemed like a  
 bustling  
 Of merry crowds justling at pitching and  
 hustling,  
 Small feet were pattering, wooden shoes  
 clattering,  
 Little hands clapping and little tongues  
 chattering,  
 And, like fowls in a farm-yard when barley  
 is scattering,  
 Out came the children running.  
 All the little boys and girls,  
 With rosy cheeks and flaxen curls,  
 And sparkling eyes and teeth like pearls,  
 Tripping and skipping, ran merrily after  
 The wonderful music with shouting and  
 laughter.

### XIII

The Mayor was dumb, and the Council  
 stood  
 As if they were changed into blocks of  
 wood,  
 Unable to move a step, or cry  
 To the children merrily skipping by,  
 —Could only follow with the eye  
 That joyous crowd at the Piper's back.  
 But how the Mayor was on the rack,  
 And the wretched Council's bosoms beat,  
 As the Piper turned from the High  
 Street  
 To where the Weser rolled its waters  
 Right in the way of their sons and daugh-  
 ters!  
 However he turned from South to West,  
 And to Koppelberg Hill his steps ad-  
 dressed,  
 And after him the children pressed;  
 Great was the joy in every breast.  
 'He never can cross that mighty top!  
 'He's forced to let the piping drop,  
 'And we shall see our children stop!'—  
 When, lo, as they reached the mountain-  
 side,  
 A wondrous portal opened wide,  
 As if a cavern was suddenly hollowed;  
 And the Piper advanced and the childreil  
 followed,  
 And when all were in to the very last,  
 The door in the mountain-side shut fast.  
 Did I say, all? No! One was lame,  
 And could not dance the whole of the  
 way;  
 And in after years, if you would blame  
 His sadness, he was used to say,—

'It's dull in our town since my playmates  
 left!  
 'I can't forget that I'm bereft  
 'Of all the pleasant sights they see,  
 'Which the Piper also promised me.  
 'For he led us, he said, to a joyous land,  
 'Joining the town and just at hand,  
 'Where waters gushed and fruit-trees grew  
 'And flowers put forth a fairer hue,  
 'And everything was strange and new;  
 'The sparrows were brighter than pea-  
 cocks here,  
 'And their dogs outran our fallow deer,  
 'And honey-bees had lost their stings,  
 'And horses were born with eagles' wings:  
 'And just as I became assured  
 'My lame foot would be speedily cured,  
 'The music stopped and I stood still,  
 'And found myself outside the hill,  
 'Left alone against my will,  
 'To go now limping as before,  
 'And never hear of that country more!'

### XIV

Alas, alas for Hamelin!  
 There came into many a burgher's pate  
 A text which says that heaven's gate  
 Opes to the rich at as easy rate  
 As the needle's eye takes a camel in!  
 The mayor sent East, West, North and  
 South,  
 To offer the Piper, by word of mouth,  
 Wherever it was men's lot to find him,  
 Silver and gold to his heart's content,  
 If he'd only return the way he went,  
 And bring the children behind him.  
 But when they saw 'twas a lost endeavour,  
 And Piper and dancers were gone for ever,  
 They made a decree that lawyers never  
 Should think their records dated duly  
 If, after the day of the month and year,  
 These words did not as well appear,  
 'And so long after what happened here  
 'On the Twenty-second of July,  
 'Thirteen hundred and seventy-six:'  
 And the better in memory to fix  
 The place of the children's last retreat,  
 They called it, the Pied Piper's Street—  
 Where any one playing on pipe or tabor  
 Was sure for the future to lose his labour.  
 Nor suffered they hostelry or tavern  
 To shock with mirth a street so solemn;  
 But opposite the place of the cavern  
 They wrote the story on a column,  
 And on the great church-window painted  
 The same, to make the world acquainted  
 How their children were stolen away,  
 And there it stands to this very day.  
 And I must not omit to say  
 That in Transylvania there's a tribe  
 Of alien people who ascribe  
 The outlandish ways and dress  
 On which their neighbours lay such stress,

## THE PIED PIPER OF HAMELIN

To their fathers and mothers having risen  
Out of some subterraneous prison  
Into which they were trepanned  
Long time ago in a mighty band  
Out of Hamelin town in Brunswick land,  
But how or why, they don't understand.

xv

So, Willy, let me and you be wipers  
Of scores out with all men—especially  
pipers!  
And, whether they pipe us free from rats  
or from mice,  
If we've promised them aught, let us keep  
our promise!

## THE FLIGHT OF THE DUCHESS

I

You'RE my friend:  
I was the man the Duke spoke to;  
I helped the Duchess to cast off his yoke,  
too;  
So here's the tale from beginning to end,  
My friend!

II

Ours is a great wild country;  
If you climb to our castle's top,  
I don't see where your eye can stop;  
For when you've passed the cornfield  
country,  
Where vineyards leave off, flocks are  
packed,  
And sheep-range leads to cattle-tract,  
And cattle-tract to open-chase,  
And open-chase to the very base  
Of the mountain where, at a funeral pace,  
Round about, solemn and slow,  
One by one, row after row,  
Up and up the pine-trees go,  
So, like black priests up, and so  
Down the other side again  
To another greater, wilder country,  
That's one vast red drear burnt-up plain,  
Branched through and through with many  
a vein  
Whence iron's dug, and copper's dealt;  
Look right, look left, look straight  
before,—  
Beneath they mine, above they smelt,  
Copper-ore and iron-ore,  
And forge and furnace mould and melt,  
And so on, more and ever more,  
Till at the last, for a bounding belt,  
Comes the salt sand hoar of the great  
sea-shore,  
—And the whole is our Duke's country.

III

I was born the day this present Duke was—  
(And O, says the song, ere I was old!)  
In the castle where the other Duke was—  
(When I was happy and young, not old!)

I in the kennel, he in the bower:  
We are of like age to an hour.  
My father was huntsman in that day;  
Who has not heard my father say  
That, when a boar was brought to bay,  
Three times, four times out of five,  
With his huntspear he'd contrive  
To get the killing-place transfix'd,  
And pin him true, both eyes betwixt?  
And that's why the old Duke would rather  
He lost a salt-pit than my father,  
And loved to have him ever in call;  
That's why my father stood in the hall  
When the old Duke brought his infant out  
To show the people, and while they  
passed

The wondrous bantling round about,  
Was first to start at the outside blast  
As the Kaiser's courier blew his horn  
Just a month after the babe was born.  
'And,' quoth the Kaiser's courier, 'since  
'The Duke has got an heir, our Prince  
'Needs the Duke's self at his side.'  
The Duke looked down and seemed to  
wince,  
But he thought of wars o'er the world  
wide,

Castles a-fire, men on their march,  
The toppling tower, the crashing arch;  
And up he looked, and awhile he eyed  
The row of crests and shields and banners  
Of all achievements after all manners,  
And 'ay,' said the Duke with a surly  
pride.

The more was his comfort when he died  
At next year's end, in a velvet suit,  
With a gilt glove on his hand, his foot  
In a silken shoe for a leather boot,  
Petticoated like a herald,  
In a chamber next to an ante-room,  
Where he breathed the breath of page  
and groom,

What he called stink, and they, perfume:  
—They should have set him on red Berold  
Mad with pride, like fire to manage!  
They should have got his cheek fresh tan-  
nage

Such a day as to-day in the merry sun-  
shine!

Had they stuck on his fist a rough-foot  
merlin!

(Hark, the wind's on the heath at its game!  
Oh for a noble falcon-lanner  
To flap each broad wing like a banner,  
And turn in the wind, and dance like  
flame!)

Had they broached a white-beer cask from  
Berlin

—Or if you incline to prescribe mere wine  
'Put to his lips, when they saw him pine,  
A cup of our own Moldavia fine,  
Cotnar for instance, green as May sorrel  
And rosy with sweet,—we shall not quar-  
rel.

## THE FLIGHT OF THE DUCHESS

### IV

So, at home, the sick tall yellow Duchess  
Was left with the infant in her clutches,  
She being the daughter of God knows who:  
And now was the time to revisit her  
tribe.

Abroad and afar they went, the two,  
And let our people rail and gibe  
At the empty hall and extinguished fire,  
As loud as we liked, but ever in vain,  
Till after long years we had our desire,  
And back came the Duke and his mother  
again.

### V

And he came back the pertest little ape  
That ever affronted human shape;  
Full of his travel, struck at himself.

You'd say, he despised our bluff old  
ways?

—Not he! For in Paris they told the elf  
Our rough North land was the Land of  
Lays,

The one good thing left in evil days;  
Since the Mid-Age was the Heroic Time,  
And only in wild nooks like ours  
Could you taste of it yet as in its prime,

And see true castles, with proper towers,  
Young-hearted women, old-minded men,  
And manners now as manners were then.  
So, all that the old Dukes had been, with-  
out knowing it,

This Duke would fain know he was,  
without being it;

'Twas not for the joy's self, but the joy of  
his showing it,

Nor for the pride's self, but the pride  
of our seeing it,

He revived all usages thoroughly worn-  
out,

The souls of them fumed-forth, the hearts  
of them torn-out:

And chief in the chase his neck he perilled  
On a lathy horse, all legs and length,  
With blood for bone, all speed, no  
strength;

—They should have set him on red Berold  
With the red eye slow consuming in fire,  
And the thin stiff ear like an abbey-spire!

### VI

Well, such as he was, he must marry, we  
heard:

And out of a convent, at the word,  
Came the lady, in time of spring.

—Oh, old thoughts they cling, they cling!  
That day, I know, with a dozen oaths

I clad myself in thick hunting-clothes  
Fit for the chase of urochs or buffle

In winter-time when you need to muffle.  
But the Duke had a mind we should cut  
a figure,

And so we saw the lady arrive:

My friend, I have seen a white crane  
bigger!

She was the smallest lady alive,  
Made in a piece of nature's madness,  
Too small, almost, for the life and gladness

That over-filled her, as some hive  
Out of the bears' reach on the high trees  
Is crowded with its safe merry bees:

In truth, she was not hard to please!  
Up she looked, down she looked, round at  
the mead,

Straight at the castle, that's best indeed  
To look at from outside the walls:

As for us, styled the 'serfs and thralls,'  
She as much thanked me as if she had  
said it,

(With her eyes, do you understand?)  
Because I patted her horse while I led it;

And Max, who rode on her other hand,  
Said, no bird flew past but she inquired  
What its true name was, nor ever seemed  
tired—

If that was an eagle she saw hover,  
And the green and grey bird on the field  
was the plover.

When suddenly appeared the Duke:  
And as down she sprung, the small foot  
pointed

On to my hand,—as with a rebuke,  
And as if his backbone were not jointed,

The Duke stepped rather aside than for-  
ward,

And welcomed her with his grandest  
smile;

And, mind you, his mother all the while  
Chilled in the rear, like a wind to Nor-  
ward;

And up, like a weary yawn, with its pullies  
Went, in a shriek, the rusty portcullis;

And, like a glad sky the north-wind sullies,  
The lady's face stopped its play,

As if her first hair had grown grey;  
For such things must begin some one day.

### VII

In a day or two she was well again;  
As who should say, 'You labour in vain!

'This is all a jest against God, who meant  
'I should ever be, as I am, content

'And glad in his sight; therefore, glad I  
will be.'

So, smiling as at first went she.

### VIII

She was active, stirring, all fire—  
Could not rest, could not tire—

To a stone she might have given life!  
(I myself loved once, in my day)

—For a shepherd's, miner's, huntsman's  
wife,

(I had a wife, I know what I say)  
Never in all the world such an one!

And here was plenty to be done,  
And she that could do it, great or small,  
She was to do nothing at all.

## THE FLIGHT OF THE DUCHESS

There was already this man in his post,  
This in his station, and that in his office,  
And the Duke's plan admitted a wife, at  
most,

To meet his eye, with the other trophies,  
Now outside the hall, now in it,

To sit thus, stand thus, see and be seen,  
At the proper place in the proper minute,  
And die away the life between.

And it was amusing enough, each in-  
fraction

Of rule—(but for after-sadness that  
came)

To hear the consummate self-satisfac-  
tion

With which the young Duke and the old  
dame

Would let her advise, and criticise,  
And, being a fool, instruct the wise,

And, child-like, parcel out praise or  
blame;

They bore it all in complacent guise,  
As though an artificer, after contriving  
A wheel-work image as if it were living,  
Should find with delight it could motion  
to strike him!

So found the Duke, and his mother like  
him:

The lady hardly got a rebuff—  
That had not been contemptuous enough,  
With his cursed smirk, as he nodded  
applause.

And kept off the old mother-cat's claws.

### IX

So, the little lady grew silent and thin,  
Paling and ever paling,

As the way is with a hid chagrin;  
And the Duke perceived that she was  
ailing,

And said in his heart, 'Tis done to spite  
me,

'But I shall find in my power to right me!'  
Don't swear, friend! The old one, many

a year,  
Is in hell, and the Duke's self . . . you shall  
hear.

### X

Well, early in autumn, at first winter-  
warning,

When the stag had to break with his foot,  
of a morning,

A drinking-hole out of the fresh tender ice  
That covered the pond till the sun, in a  
trice,

Loosening it, let out a ripple of gold,  
And another and another, and faster,  
and faster,

Till, dimpling to blindness, the wide water  
rolled:

Then it so chanced that the Duke our  
master

Asked himself what were the pleasures in  
season,

And found, since the calendar bade him  
be hearty,

He should do the Middle Age no treason  
In resolving on a hunting-party.

Always provided, old books showed the  
way of it!

What meant old poets by their stric-  
tures?

And when old poets had said their say of it,  
How taught old painters in their pic-  
tures?

We must revert to the proper channels,  
Workings in tapestry, paintings on panels,

And gather up woodcraft's authentic  
traditions:

Here was food for our various ambitions,  
As on each case, exactly stated—

To encourage your dog, now, the pro-  
perest chirrup,

Or best prayer to Saint Hubert on  
mounting your stirrup—

We of the household took thought and  
debated.

Blessed was he whose back ached with the  
jerkin

His sire was wont to do forest-work in;  
Blesseder he who nobly sunk 'ohs'

And 'ahs' while he tugged on his grand-  
sire's trunk-hose;

What signified hats if they had no rims on,  
Each slouching before and behind like

the scallop,  
And able to serve at sea for a shallop,

Loaded with lacquer and looped with  
crimson?

So that the deer now, to make a short  
rhyme on't,

What with our Venerers, Prickers and  
Verderers,

Might hope for real hunters at length  
and not murderers,

And oh the Duke's tailor, he had a hot  
time on't!

### XI

Now you must know that when the first  
dizziness

Of flap-hats and buff-coats and jack-  
boots subsided,

The Duke put this question, 'The  
Duke's part provided,

'Had not the Duchess some share in the  
business?'

For out of the mouth of two or three wit-  
nesses

Did he establish all fit-or-unfitnesses:  
And, after much laying of heads together,

Somebody's cap got a notable feather  
By the announcement with proper unction

That he had discovered the lady's func-  
tion;

## THE FLIGHT OF THE DUCHESS

Since ancient authors gave this tenet,  
 'When horns wind a mort and the deer  
 is at siege,  
 'Let the dame of the castle prick forth on  
 her jennet,  
 'And, with water to wash the hands of  
 her liege  
 'In a clean ewer with a fair toweling,  
 'Let her preside at the disemboweling.'  
 Now, my friend, if you had so little religion  
 As to catch a hawk, some falcon-lanner,  
 And thrust her broad wings like a banner  
 Into a coop for a vulgar pigeon;  
 And if day by day and week by week  
 You cut her claws, and sealed her  
 eyes,  
 And clipped her wings, and tied her  
 beak,  
 Would it cause you any great surprise  
 If, when you decided to give her an airing,  
 You found she needed a little preparing?  
 —I say, should you be such a curmudgeon,  
 If she clung to the perch, as to take it in  
 dudgeon?  
 Yet when the Duke to his lady signified,  
 Just a day before, as he judged most  
 dignified,  
 In what a pleasure she was to partici-  
 pate,—  
 And, instead of leaping wide in flashes,  
 Her eyes just lifted their long lashes,  
 As if pressed by fatigue even he could not  
 dissipate,  
 And duly acknowledged the Duke's fore-  
 thought,  
 But spoke of her health, if her health were  
 worth aught,  
 Of the weight by day and the watch by  
 night,  
 And much wrong now that used to be  
 right,  
 So, thanking him, declined the hunting,—  
 Was conduct ever more affronting?  
 With all the ceremony settled—  
 With the towel ready, and the sewer  
 Polishing up his oldest ewer,  
 And the jennet pitched upon, a piebald,  
 Black-barred, cream-coated and pink  
 eye-balled,—  
 No wonder if the Duke was nettled!  
 And when she persisted nevertheless,—  
 Well, I suppose here's the time to confess  
 That there ran half round our lady's  
 chamber  
 A balcony none of the hardest to clamber;  
 And that Jacynth the tire-woman, ready  
 in waiting,  
 Stayed in call outside, what need of re-  
 lating?  
 And since Jacynth was like a June rose,  
 why, a fervent  
 Adorer of Jacynth of course was your ser-  
 vant;

And if she had the habit to peep through  
 the casement,  
 How could I keep at any vast distance?  
 And so, as I say, on the lady's persis-  
 tence,  
 The Duke, dumb-stricken with amazement,  
 Stood for a while in a sultry smother,  
 And then, with a smile that partook of  
 the awful,  
 Turned her over to his yellow mother  
 To learn what was held decorous and  
 lawful;  
 And the mother smelt blood with a cat-like  
 instinct,  
 As her cheek quick whitened thro' all its  
 quince-tinct.  
 Oh, but the lady heard the whole truth at  
 once!  
 What meant she?—Who was she?—  
 Her duty and station,  
 The wisdom of age and the folly of youth,  
 at once,  
 Its decent regard and its fitting rela-  
 tion—  
 In brief, my friend, set all the devils in hell  
 free  
 And turn them out to carouse in a belfry  
 And treat the priests to a fifty-part canon,  
 And then you may guess how that tongue  
 of hers ran on!  
 Well, somehow or other it ended at last  
 And, licking her whiskers, out she passed;  
 And after her,—making (he hoped) a face  
 Like Emperor Nero or Sultan Saladin,  
 Stalked the Duke's self with the austere  
 grace  
 Of ancient hero or modern paladin,  
 From door to staircase—oh such a solemn  
 Unbending of the vertebral column!

### xii

However, at sunrise our company mus-  
 tered;  
 And here was the huntsman bidding  
 unkennel,  
 And there 'neath his bonnet the pricker  
 blustered,  
 With feather dank as a bough of wet  
 fennel;  
 For the court-yard walls were filled with  
 fog  
 You might have cut as an axe chops a log—  
 Like so much wool for colour and bulki-  
 ness;  
 And out rode the Duke in a perfect sulki-  
 ness,  
 Since, before breakfast, a man feels but  
 queasily,  
 And a sinking at the lower abdomen  
 Begins the day with indifferent omen.  
 And lo, as he looked around uneasily,  
 The sun ploughed the fog up and drove it  
 asunder  
 This way and that from the valley under;

## THE FLIGHT OF THE DUCHESS

And, looking through the court-yard  
arch,  
Down in the valley, what should meet him  
But a troop of Gipsies on their march?  
No doubt with the annual gifts to greet  
him.

### xiii

Now, in your land, Gipsies reach you, only  
After reaching all lands beside;  
North they go, South they go, trooping or  
lonely,  
And still, as they travel far and wide,  
Catch they and keep now a trace here, a  
trace there,  
That puts you in mind of a place here, a  
place there.  
But with us, I believe they rise out of the  
ground,  
And nowhere else, I take it, are found  
With the earth-tint yet so freshly em-  
browned:  
Born, no doubt, like insects which breed  
on  
The very fruit they are meant to feed on.  
For the earth—not a use to which they  
don't turn it,  
The ore that grows in the mountain's  
womb,  
Or the sand in the pits like a honeycomb,  
They sift and soften it, bake it and burn  
it—  
Whether they weld you, for instance, a  
snaffle  
With side-bars never a brute can baffle;  
Or a lock that's a puzzle of wards within  
wards;  
Or, if your colt's fore-foot inclines to curve  
inwards,  
Horseshoes they hammer which turn on a  
swivel  
And won't allow the hoof to shrivel.  
Then they cast bells like the shell of the  
winkle  
That keep a stout heart in the ram with  
their tinkle;  
But the sand—they pinch and pound it  
like otters;  
Commend me to Gipsy glass-makers and  
potters!  
Glasses they'll blow you, crystal-clear,  
Where just a faint cloud of rose shall  
appear,  
As if in pure water you dropped and let die  
A bruised black-blooded mulberry;  
And that other sort, their crowning pride,  
With long white threads distinct inside,  
Like the lake-flower's fibrous roots which  
dangle  
Loose such a length and never tangle,  
Where the bold sword-lily cuts the clear  
waters,  
And the cup-lily couches with all the white  
daughters:

Such are the works they put their hand  
to,  
The uses they turn and twist iron and  
sand to.  
And these made the troop, which our  
Duke saw sally  
Toward his castle from out of the valley,  
Men and women, like new-hatched  
spiders,  
Come out with the morning to greet our  
riders,  
And up they wound till they reached the  
ditch,  
Whereat all stopped save one, a witch  
That I knew, as she hobbled from the  
group,  
By her gait directly and her stoop,  
I, whom Jacynth was used to importune  
To let that same witch tell us our for-  
tune.  
The oldest Gipsy then above ground;  
And, sure as the autumn season came  
round,  
She paid us a visit for profit or pastime,  
And every time, as she swore, for the last  
time.  
And presently she was seen to sidle  
Up to the Duke till she touched his bridle,  
So that the horse of a sudden reared up  
As under its nose the old witch peered up  
With her worn-out eyes, or rather eye-  
holes  
Of no use now but to gather brine,  
And began a kind of level whine  
Such as they used to sing to their viols  
When their ditties they go grinding  
Up and down with nobody minding:  
And then, as of old, at the end of the  
humming  
Her usual presents were forthcoming  
—A dog-whistle blowing the fiercest of  
trebles,  
(Just a sea-shore stone holding a dozen  
fine pebbles,)  
Or a porcelain mouth-piece to screw on a  
pipe-end,—  
And so she awaited her annual stipend.  
But this time, the Duke would scarcely  
vouchsafe  
A word in reply; and in vain she felt  
With twitching fingers at her belt  
For the purse of sleek pine-martin pelt,  
Ready to put what he gave in her pouch  
safe,—  
Till, either to quicken his apprehension,  
Or possibly with an after-intention,  
She was come, she said, to pay her duty  
To the new Duchess, the youthful beauty.  
No sooner had she named his lady,  
'Than a shine lit up the face so shady,  
And its smirk returned with a novel mean-  
ing—  
For it struck him, the babe just wanted  
weaning;

## THE FLIGHT OF THE DUCHESS

If one gave her a taste of what life was and  
sorrow,  
She, foolish to-day, would be wiser to-  
morrow;

And who so fit a teacher of trouble  
As this sordid crone bent well-nigh  
double?

So, glancing at her wolf-skin vesture,  
(If such it was, for they grow so hirsute  
That their own fleece serves for natural  
fur-suit)

He was contrasting, 'twas plain from his  
gesture,

The life of the lady so flower-like and  
delicate

With the loathsome squalor of this helicat.  
I, in brief, was the man the Duke beckoned  
From out of the throng, and while I  
drew near

He told the crone—as I since have  
reckoned

By the way he bent and spoke into her  
ear

With circumspection and mystery—

The main of the lady's history,  
Her frowardness and ingratitude:

And for all the crone's submissive attitude  
I could see round her mouth the loose  
plaits tightening,

And her brow with assenting intelligence  
brightening,

As though she engaged with hearty  
goodwill

Whatever he now might enjoin to fulfil,  
And promised the lady a thorough fright-  
ening.

And so, just giving her a glimpse  
Of a purse, with the air of a man who imps  
The wing of the hawk that shall fetch the  
hernshaw,

He bade me take the Gipsy mother  
And set her telling some story or other  
Of hill or dale, oak-wood or fernshaw,  
To wile away a weary hour

For the lady left alone in her bower,  
Whose mind and body craved exertion  
And yet shrank from all better diversion.

### xiv

Then clapping heel to his horse, the mere  
curveter,

Out rode the Duke, and after his hollo  
Horses and hounds swept, huntsman and  
servitor,

And back I turned and bade the crone  
follow.

And what makes me confident what's to  
be told you

Had all along been of this crone's de-  
vising,

Is, that, on looking round sharply, behold  
you,

There was a novelty quick as surprising:

For first, she had shot up a full head in  
stature,

And her step kept pace with mine nor  
faltered,

As if age had foregone its usurpature,  
And the ignoble mien was wholly al-  
tered,

And the face looked quite of another  
nature,

And the change reached too, whatever the  
change meant,

Her shaggy wolf-skin cloak's arrange-  
ment:

For where its tatters hung loose like  
sedges,

Gold coins were glittering on the edges,  
Like the band-roll strung with tomons

Which proves the veil a Persian woman's:  
And under her brow, like a snail's horns

newly  
Come out as after the rain he paces,

Two unmistakeable eye-points duly  
Live and aware looked out of their

places.  
So, we went and found Jacynth at the entry

Of the lady's chamber standing sentry;  
I told the command and produced my

companion,  
And Jacynth rejoiced to admit any one,

For since last night, by the same token,  
Not a single word had the lady spoken:

They went in both to the presence together,  
While I in the balcony watched the

weather.

### xv

And now, what took place at the very first  
of all,

I cannot tell, as I never could learn it:  
Jacynth constantly wished a curse to fall  
On that little head of hers and burn it  
If she knew how she came to drop so  
soundly

Asleep of a sudden and there continue  
The whole time sleeping as profoundly

As one of the boars my father would  
pin you

'Twixt the eyes where life holds garrison,  
—Jacynth forgive me the comparison!

But where I begin my own narration  
Is a little after I took my station

To breathe the fresh air from the balcony,  
And, having in those days a falcon eye,

To follow the hunt thro' the open country,  
From where the bushes thinlier crested

The hillocks, to a plain where's not one  
tree.

When, in a moment, my ear was arrested  
By—was it singing, or was it saying,

'Or a strange musical instrument playing  
In the chamber?—and to be certain

I pushed the lattice, pulled the curtain,  
And there lay Jacynth asleep,

Yet as if a watch she tried to keep,



## THE FLIGHT OF THE DUCHESS

In a rosy sleep along the floor  
With her head against the door;  
While in the midst, on the seat of state,  
Was a queen—the Gipsy woman late,  
With head and face downbent  
On the lady's head and face intent:  
For, coiled at her feet like a child at ease,  
The lady sat between her knees  
And o'er them the lady's clasped hands  
met,

And on those hands her chin was set,  
And her upturned face met the face of the  
crone

Wherein the eyes had grown and grown  
As if she could double and quadruple  
At pleasure the play of either pupil

—Very like, by her hands' slow fanning,  
As up and down like a gor-crow's flappers  
They moved to measure, or bell-clappers.  
I said 'Is it blessing, is it banning,  
'Do they applaud you or burlesque you—  
'Those hands and fingers with no flesh  
on?'

But, just as I thought to spring in to the  
rescue,

At once I was stopped by the lady's  
expression:

For it was life her eyes were drinking  
From the crone's wide pair above unwink-  
ing,

—Life's pure fire received without shrink-  
ing,

Into the heart and breast whose heaving  
Told you no single drop they were leaving,

—Life, that filling her, passed redundant  
Into her very hair, back swerving

Over each shoulder, loose and abundant,  
As her head thrown back showed the  
white throat curving;

And the very tresses shared in the pleasure,  
Moving to the mystic measure,  
Bounding as the bosom bounded.

I stopped short, more and more con-  
founded,

As still her cheeks burned and eyes glis-  
tened,

As she listened and she listened:  
When all at once a hand detained me,  
The selfsame contagion gained me,  
And I kept time to the wondrous chime,  
Making out words and prose and rhyme,  
Till it seemed that the music furled

Its wings like a task fulfilled, and  
dropped

From under the words it first had  
propped,

And left them midway in the world:  
Word took word as hand takes hand,  
I could hear at last, and understand,  
And when I held the unbroken thread,  
The Gipsy said:—

'And so at last we find my tribe.  
'And so I set thee in the midst,

'And to one and all of them describe

'What thou saidst and what thou didst,  
'Our long and terrible journey through,  
'And all thou art ready to say and do

'In the trials that remain:

'I trace them the vein and the other vein

'That meet on thy brow and part again,

'Making our rapid mystic mark;

'And I bid my people prove and probe

'Each eye's profound and glorious  
globe

'Till they detect the kindred spark

'In those depths so dear and dark,

'Like the spots that snap and burst and  
flee,

'Circling over the midnight sea.

'And on that round young cheek of thine

'I make them recognize the tinge,

'As when of the costly scarlet wine

'They drip so much as will impinge

'And spread in a thinnest scale afloat

'One thick gold drop from the olive's coat

'Over a silver plate whose sheen

'Still thro' the mixture shall be seen.

'For so I prove thee, to one and all,

'Fit, when my people ope their breast,

'To see the sign, and hear the call,

'And take the vow, and stand the test

'Which adds one more child to the  
rest—

'When the breast is bare and the arms are  
wide,

'And the world is left outside.

'For there is probation to decree,

'And many and long must the trials be

'Thou shalt victoriously endure,

'If that brow is true and those eyes are  
sure;

'Like a jeweller's fierce assay

'Of the prize he dug from its mountain-  
tomb—

'Let once the vindicating ray

'Leap out amid the anxious gloom,

'And steel and fire have done their part

'And the prize falls on its finder's heart;

'So, trial after trial past,

'Wilt thou fall at the very last

'Breathless, half in trance

'With the thrill of the great deliverance,

'Into our arms for evermore;

'And thou shalt know, those arms once  
curled

'About thee, what we knew before,

'How love is the only good in the world.

'Henceforth beloved as heart can love,

'Or brain devise, or hand approve!

'Stand up, look below,

'It is our life at thy feet we throw

'To step with into light and joy;

'Not a power of life but we employ

'To satisfy thy nature's want;

'Art thou the tree that props the plant,

'Or the climbing plant that seeks the tree—

'Canst thou help us, must we help thee?

## THE FLIGHT OF THE DUCHESS

'If any two creatures grew into one,  
 'They would do more than the world has  
   done:  
 'Though each apart were never so weak,  
 'Ye vainly through the world should seek  
 'For the knowledge and the might  
 'Which in such union grew their right:  
 'So, to approach at least that end,  
 'And blend,—as much as may be, blend  
 'Thee with us or us with thee,—  
 'As climbing plant or propping tree,  
 'Shall some one deck thee, over and down,  
   'Up and about, with blossoms and  
   leaves?  
 'Fix his heart's fruit for thy garland-crown,  
   'Cling with his soul as the gourd-vine  
   cleaves,  
 'Die on thy boughs and disappear  
 'While not a leaf of thine is sere?  
 'Or is the other fate in store,  
 'And art thou fitted to adore,  
 'To give thy wondrous self away,  
 'And take a stronger nature's sway?  
 'I foresee and could foretell  
 'Thy future portion, sure and well:  
 'But those passionate eyes speak true,  
   speak true,  
 'Let them say what thou shalt do!  
 'Only be sure thy daily life,  
 'In its peace or in its strife,  
 'Never shall be unobserved;  
   'We pursue thy whole career,  
   'And hope for it, or doubt, or fear,—  
 'Lo, hast thou kept thy path or swerved,  
 'We are beside thee in all thy ways,  
 'With our blame, with our praise,  
 'Our shame to feel, our pride to show,  
 'Glad, angry—but indifferent, no!  
 'Whether it be thy lot to go,  
 'For the good of us all, where the haters  
   meet  
 'In the crowded city's horrible street;  
 'Or thou step alone through the morass  
 'Where never sound yet was  
 'Save the dry quick clap of the stork's bill,  
 'For the air is still, and the water still,  
 'When the blue breast of the dipping coot  
 'Dives under, and all is mute.  
 'So, at the last shall come old age,  
 'Decrepit as befits that stage;  
 'How else wouldst thou retire apart  
 'With the hoarded memories of thy heart,  
 'And gather all to the very least  
 'Of the fragments of life's earlier feast,  
 'Let fall through eagerness to find  
 'The crowning dainties yet behind?  
 'Ponder on the entire past  
 'Laid together thus at last,  
 'When the twilight helps to fuse  
 'The first fresh with the faded hues,  
 'And the outline of the whole,  
 'As round eve's shades their framework  
   roll,  
 'Grandly fronts for once thy soul.

'And then as, 'mid the dark, a gleam  
   'Of yet another morning breaks,  
 'And like the hand which ends a dream,  
 'Death, with the might of his sunbeam,  
   'Touches the flesh and the soul awakes,  
 'Then—  
   Ay, then indeed something  
   would happen!  
 But what? For here her voice changed  
   like a bird's;  
 There grew more of the music and less  
   of the words;  
 Had Jacynth only been by me to clap pen  
 To paper and put you down every syllable  
   With those clever clerkly fingers,  
 All I've forgotten as well as what lingers  
 In this old brain of mine that's but ill  
   able  
 To give you even this poor version  
   Of the speech I spoil, as it were, with  
   stammering  
   —More fault of those who had the ham-  
   mering  
 Of prosody into me and syntax,  
 And did it, not with hobnails but tin-  
   tacks!  
 But to return from this excursion,—  
 Just, do you mark, when the song was  
   sweetest,  
 The peace most deep and the charm com-  
   pletest,  
 There came, shall I say, a snap—  
 And the charm vanished!  
 And my sense returned, so strangely  
   banished,  
 And, starting as from a nap,  
 I knew the crone was bewitching my  
   lady,  
 With Jacynth asleep; and but one spring  
   made I  
 Down from the casement, round to the  
   portal,  
 Another minute and I had entered,—  
 When the door opened, and more than  
   mortal  
 Stood, with a face where to my mind  
   centred  
 All beauties I ever saw or shall see,  
 The Duchess: I stopped as if struck by  
   palsy.  
 She was so different, happy and beautiful,  
 I felt at once that all was best,  
 And that I had nothing to do, for the  
   rest,  
 But wait her commands, obey and be  
   dutiful.  
 Not that, in fact, there was any com-  
   manding;  
   I saw the glory of her eye,  
 'And the brow's height and the breast's  
   expanding,  
 And I was hers to live or to die.  
 As for finding what she wanted,  
 You know God Almighty granted

## THE FLIGHT OF THE DUCHESS

Such little signs should serve wild creatures  
To tell one another all their desires,  
So that each knows what his friend re-  
quires,

And does its bidding without teachers.  
I preceded her; the crone  
Followed silent and alone;

I spoke to her, but she merely jabbered  
In the old style; both her eyes had slunk  
Back to their pits; her stature shrunk;

In short, the soul in its body sunk  
Like a blade sent home to its scabbard.

We descended, I preceding;  
Crossed the court with nobody heeding;

All the world was at the chase,  
The courtyard like a desert-place

The stable emptied of its small fry;  
I saddled myself the very palfrey

I remember patting while it carried her,  
The day she arrived and the Duke married  
her.

And, do you know, though it's easy de-  
ceiving

Oneself in such matters, I can't help be-  
lieving

The lady had not forgotten it either,  
And knew the poor devil so much beneath

her  
Would have been only too glad for her  
service

To dance on hot ploughshares like a Turk  
dervise,

But, unable to pay proper duty where  
owing it,

Was reduced to that pitiful method of  
showing it:

For though the moment I began setting  
His saddle on my own nag of Berold's

begetting,  
(Not that I meant to be obtrusive)

She stopped me, while his rug was  
shifting,

By a single rapid finger's lifting,  
And, with a gesture kind but conclusive,

And a little shake of the head, refused  
me,—

I say, although she never used me,  
Yet when she was mounted, the Gipsy

behind her,  
And I ventured to remind her,

I suppose with a voice of less steadiness  
Than usual, for my feeling exceeded me,

—Something to the effect that I was in  
readiness

Whenever God should please she needed  
me,—

Then, do you know, her face looked down  
on me

With a look that placed a crown on me,  
And she felt in her bosom,—mark, her

bosom—  
And, as a flower-tree drops its blossom,  
Dropped me . . . ah, had it been a purse

Of silver, my friend, or gold that's worse,

Why, you see, as soon as I found myself  
So understood,—that a true heart so  
may gain

Such a reward,—I should have gone  
home again,

Kissed Jacynth, and soberly drowned my-  
self!

It was a little plait of hair  
Such as friends in a convent make

To wear, each for the other's sake,—  
This, see, which at my breast I wear,

Ever did (rather to Jacynth's grudging),  
And ever shall, till the Day of Judgment.

And then,—and then,—to cut short,—this  
is idle,

These are feelings it is not good to  
foster,—

I pushed the gate wide, she shook the  
bridle,

And the palfrey bounded,—and so we  
lost her.

XVI

When the liquor's out why clink the  
cannikin?

I did think to describe you the panic in  
The redoubtable breast of our master the

mannikin,  
And what was the pitch of his mother's

yellowness,  
How she turned as a shark to snap the

spare-rib  
Clean off, sailors say, from a pearl-  
diving Carib,

When she heard, what she called the flight  
of the feloness

—But it seems such child's play,  
What they said and did with the lady away!

And to dance on, when we've lost the music,  
Always made me—and no doubt makes

you—sick.  
Nay, to my mind, the world's face looked

so stern  
As that sweet form disappeared through  
the postern,

She that kept it in constant good humour,  
It ought to have stopped; there seemed

nothing to do more.  
But the world thought otherwise and went

on,  
And my head's one that its spite was spent

on:  
Thirty years are fled since that morning,

And with them all my head's adorning.  
Nor did the old Duchess die outright,

As you expect, of suppressed spite,  
The natural end of every adder

Not suffered to empty its poison-bladder:  
But she and her son agreed, I take it,

That no one should touch on the story to  
wake it,

For the wound in the Duke's pride rankled  
fiery,

So, they made no search and small in-  
quiry—

## THE FLIGHT OF THE DUCHESS

And when fresh Gipsies have paid us a visit, I've

Noticed the couple were never inquisitive,  
But told them they're folks the Duke don't want here,

And bade them make haste and cross the frontier.

Brief, the Duchess was gone and the Duke was glad of it,

And the old one was in the young one's stead,

And took, in her place, the household's head,

And a blessed time the household had of it!

And were I not, as a man may say, cautious  
How I trench, more than needs, on the nauseous,

I could favour you with sundry touches  
Of the paint-smutches with which the Duchess

Heightened the mellowness of her cheek's yellowness

(To get on faster) until at last her  
Cheek grew to be one master-plaster  
Of mucus and fucus from mere use of ceruse:

In short, she grew from scalp to udder  
Just the object to make you shudder.

### XVII

You're my friend—

What a thing friendship is, world without end!

How it gives the heart and soul a stir-up  
As if somebody broached you a glorious runlet,

And poured out, all lovelily, sparkingly, sunlit,

Our green Moldavia, the streaky syrup,  
Cotnar as old as the time of the Druids—

Friendship may match with that monarch of fluids;

Each supple a dry brain, fills you its ins-and-outs,

Gives your life's hour-glass a shake when the thin sand doubts

Whether to run on or stop short, and guarantees

Age is not all made of stark sloth and arrant ease.

I have seen my little lady once more,  
Jacynth, the Gipsy, Berold, and the rest of it,

For to me spoke the Duke, as I told you before;

I always wanted to make a clean breast of it;

And now it is made—why, my heart's blood, that went trickle,

Trickle, but anon, in such muddy drib-lets,

Is pumped up brisk now, through the main ventricle,

And genially floats me about the giblets.

I'll tell you what I intend to do:

I must see this fellow his sad life through—  
He is our Duke, after all,

And I, as he says, but a serf and thrall.

My father was born here, and I inherit  
His fame, a chain he bound his son with;

Could I pay in a lump I should prefer it,  
But there's no mine to blow up and get done with:

So, I must stay till the end of the chapter.

For, as to our middle-age-manners-adapting,

Be it a thing to be glad on or sorry on,  
Some day or other, his head in a morior

And breast in a hauberk, his heels he'll kick up,

Slain by an onslaught fierce of hiccup.

And then, when red doth the sword of our Duke rust,

And its leathern sheath lie o'ergrown with a blue crust,

Then I shall scrape together my earnings;

For, you see, in the churchyard Jacynth reposes,

And our children all went the way of the roses:

It's a long lane that knows no turnings.  
One needs but little tackle to travel in;

So, just one stout cloak shall I induce:  
And for a staff, what beats the javelin

With which his boars my father pinned you?

And then, for a purpose you shall hear presently,

Taking some Cotnar, a tight plump skinful,

I shall go journeying, who but I, pleasantly!

Sorrow is vain and despondency sinful.  
What's a man's age? He must hurry more,

that's all;  
Cram in a day, what his youth took a year to hold:

When we mind labour, then only, we're too old—

What age had Methusalem when he begat Saul?

And at last, as its haven some buffeted ship sees,

(Come all the way from the north-parts with sperm oil)

I hope to get safely out of the turmoil

And arrive one day at the land of the Gipsies,

And find my lady, or hear the last news of her

From some old thief and son of Lucifer,  
His forehead chapleted green with wreathy

hop,  
Sunburned all over like an Æthiop.

And when my Cotnar begins to operate  
And the tongue of the rogue to run at a proper rate,

## THE FLIGHT OF THE DUCHESS

And our wine-skin, tight once, shows each  
flaccid dent,

I shall drop in with—as if by accident—  
'You never knew, then, how it all ended,  
'What fortune good or bad attended  
'The little lady your Queen befriended?'  
—And when that's told me, what's re-  
maining?

This world's too hard for my explaining.  
The same wise judge of matters equine  
Who still preferred some slim four-year-  
old

To the big-boned stock of mighty  
Berold,  
And, for strong Cotnar, drank French  
weak wine,

He also must be such a lady's scorner!  
Smooth Jacob still robs homely Esau:  
Now up, now down, the world's one  
see-saw.

—So, I shall find out some snug corner  
Under a hedge, like Orson the wood-  
knight,

Turn myself round and bid the world good-  
night;

And sleep a sound sleep till the trumpet's  
blowing

Wakes me (unless priests cheat us lay-  
men)  
To a world where will be no further throw-  
ing

Pearls before swine that can't value  
them. Amen!

## A GRAMMARIAN'S FUNERAL,

SHORTLY AFTER THE REVIVAL OF  
LEARNING IN EUROPE

LET us begin and carry up this corpse,  
Singing together.

Leave we the common crofts, the vulgar  
thorpes

Each in its tether  
Sleeping safe on the bosom of the plain,  
Cared-for till cock-crow:

Look out if yonder be not day again  
Rimming the rock-row!

That's the appropriate country; there,  
man's thought,

Rarer, intenser,  
Self-gathered for an outbreak, as it ought,  
Chafes in the censer.

Leave we the unlettered plain its herd and  
crop;

Seek we sepulture  
On a tall mountain, citied to the top,  
Crowded with culture!

All the peaks soar, but one the rest ex-  
cels;

Clouds overcome it;  
Not yonder sparkle is the citadel's  
Circling its summit.

Thither our path lies; wind we up the  
heights:

Wait ye the warning?  
Our low life was the level's and the night's;  
He's for the morning.

Step to a tune, square chests, erect each  
head,

'Ware the beholders!  
This is our master, famous calm and dead,  
Borne on our shoulders.

Sleep, crop and herd! sleep, darkling  
thorpe and croft,

Safe from the weather!  
He, whom we convoy to his grave aloft,  
Singing together,

He was a man born with thy face and  
throat,  
Lyric Apollo!

Long he lived nameless: how should spring  
take note

Winter would follow?  
Till lo, the little touch, and youth was  
gone!

Cramped and diminished,  
Moaned he, 'New measures, other feet  
anon!

'My dance is finished?'  
No, that's the world's way: (keep the  
mountain-side,

Make for the city!)  
He knew the signal, and stepped on with  
pride

Over men's pity;  
Left play for work, and grappled with the  
world

Bent on escaping:  
'What's in the scroll,' quoth he, 'thou  
keepest furled?

'Show me their shaping,  
'Theirs who most studied man, the bard  
and sage,—

'Give!'—So, he gowned him,  
Straight got by heart that book to its last  
page:

Learned, we found him.  
Yea, but we found him bald too, eyes like  
lead,

Accents uncertain:  
'Time to taste life,' another would have  
said,

'Up with the curtain!'  
This man said rather, 'Actual life comes  
next?

'Patience a moment!  
'Grant I have mastered learning's crabbed  
text,

'Still there's the comment.  
'Let me know all! Prate not of most or  
least,

'Painful or easy!  
'Even to the crumbs I'd fain eat up the  
feast,

'Ay, nor feel queasy.'

## A GRAMMARIAN'S FUNERAL

Oh, such a life as he resolved to live,  
 When he had learned it,  
 When he had gathered all books had to  
 give!  
 Sooner, he spurned it.  
 Image the whole, then execute the parts—  
 Fancy the fabric  
 Quite, ere you build, ere steel strike fire  
 from quartz,  
 Ere mortar dab brick!

(Here's the town-gate reached: there's the  
 market-place  
 Gaping before us.)

Yea, this in him was the peculiar grace  
 (Hearten our chorus!)  
 That before living he'd learn how to live—  
 No end to learning:  
 Earn the means first—God surely will  
 contrive  
 Use for our earning.  
 Others mistrust and say, 'But time es-  
 capes:

'Live now or never!'  
 He said, 'What's time? Leave Now for  
 dogs and apes!  
 'Man has Forever.'  
 Back to his book then: deeper drooped his  
 head:

*Calculus* racked him:  
 Leaden before, his eyes grew dross of lead:  
*Tussis* attacked him.

'Now, master, take a little rest!'—not he!  
 (Caution redoubled,

Step two abreast, the way winds narrowly!)  
 Not a whit troubled

Back to his studies, fresher than at first,  
 Fierce as a dragon

He (soul-hydroptic with a sacred thirst)  
 Sucked at the flagon.

Oh, if we draw a circle premature,  
 Heedless of far gain,

Greedy for quick returns of profit, sure  
 Bad is our bargain!

Was it not great? did not he throw on God,  
 (He loves the burthen)—

God's task to make the heavenly period  
 Perfect the earthen?

Did not he magnify the mind, show clear  
 Just what it all meant?

He would not discount life, as fools do  
 here,

Paid by instalment.  
 He ventured neck or nothing—heaven's  
 success

Found, or earth's failure:  
 'Wilt thou trust death or not?' He

answered 'Yes:  
 'Hence with life's pale lure!'

That low man seeks a little thing to do,  
 Sees it and does it:

This high man, with a great thing to pur-  
 sue,

Dies ere he knows it.

That low man goes on adding one to  
 one,

His hundred's soon hit:  
 This high man, aiming at a million,

Misses an unit.  
 That, has the world here—should he need  
 the next,

Let the world mind him!  
 This, throws himself on God, and unper-  
 plexed

Seeking shall find him.  
 So, with the throttling hands of death at  
 strife,

Ground he at grammar;  
 Still, thro' the rattle, parts of speech were  
 rife:

While he could stammer  
 He settled *Hoti's* business—let it be!—  
 Properly based *Oun*—

Gave us the doctrine of the enclitic *De*,  
 Dead from the waist down.

Well, here's the platform, here's the pro-  
 per place:

Hail to your purlieus,  
 All ye highfliers of the feathered race,  
 Swallows and curlews!

Here's the top-peak; the multitude be-  
 low

Live, for they can, there:  
 This man decided not to Live but Know—  
 Bury this man there?

Here—here's his place, where meteors  
 shoot, clouds form,  
 Lightnings are loosened,

Stars come and go! Let joy break with the  
 storm,

Peace let the dew send!  
 Lofty designs must close in like effects:  
 Loftily lying,

Leave him—still loftier than the world  
 suspects,

Living and dying.

## THE HERETIC'S TRAGEDY

### A MIDDLE-AGE INTERLUDE

ROSA MUNDI; SEU, FULCITE ME FLORIBUS,  
 A CONCEIT OF MASTER GYSBRECHT,  
 CANON-REGULAR OF SAINT JODOCUS-  
 BY-THE-BAR, YPRES CITY. CANTUQUE,  
*Virgilius*. AND HATH OFTEN BEEN SUNG  
 AT HOCK-TIDE AND FESTIVALS. GAVI-  
 SUS ERAM, *Jessides*.

(It would seem to be a glimpse from the  
 burning of Jacques du Bourg-Molay, at Paris,  
 A.D. 1314; as distorted by the refraction from  
 Flemish brain to brain, during the course of a  
 couple of centuries.)

[Molay was Grand Master of the Templars  
 when that order was suppressed in 1312.]

# THE HERETIC'S TRAGEDY

## I

PREADMONISHETH THE ABBOT DEODAET  
 THE Lord, we look to once for all,  
 Is the Lord we should look at, all at  
 once:  
 He knows not to vary, saith Saint Paul,  
 Nor the shadow of turning, for the  
 nonce.  
 See him no other than as he is!  
 Give both the infinitudes their due—  
 Infinite mercy, but, I wis,  
 As infinite a justice too.  
 [Organ: *plagal-cadence*.  
 As infinite a justice too.

## II

### ONE SINGETH

John, Master of the Temple of God,  
 Falling to sin the Unknown Sin,  
 What he bought of Emperor Aldabrod,  
 He sold it to Sultan Saladin:  
 Till, caught by Pope Clement, a-buzzing  
 there,  
 Hornet-prince of the mad wasps' hive,  
 And clipt of his wings in Paris square,  
 They bring him now to be burned alive.  
 [And wanteth there grace of lute  
 or clavicithern, ye shall say to  
 confirm him who singeth—  
 We bring John now to be burned alive.

## III

In the midst is a goodly gallows built;  
 'Twixt fork and fork, a stake is stuck;  
 But first they set divers tumbrels a-tilt,  
 Make a trench all round with the city  
 muck;  
 Inside they pile log upon log, good store;  
 Faggots no few, bloc's great and small,  
 Reach a man's mid-thigh, no less, no  
 more,—  
 For they mean he should roast in the  
 sight of all.

### CHORUS

We mean he should roast in the sight of  
 all.

## IV

Good sappy bavins that kindle forthwith;  
 Billets that blaze substantial and slow;  
 Pine-stump split deftly, dry as pith;  
 Larch-heart that chars to a chalk-white  
 glow:  
 Then up they hoist me John in a chafe,  
 Sling him fast like a hog to scorch,  
 Spit in his face, then leap back safe,  
 Sing 'Laudes' and bid clap-to the torch.

### CHORUS

*Laus Deo*—who bids clap-to the torch.

## V

John of the Temple, whose fame so  
 bragged,  
 Is burning alive in Paris square!  
 How can he curse, if his mouth is gagged?  
 Or wriggle his neck, with a collar there?  
 Or heave his chest, which a band goes  
 round?  
 Or threat with his fist, since his arms are  
 spliced?  
 Or kick with his feet, now his legs are  
 bound?  
 —Thinks John, I will call upon Jesus  
 Christ.

[Here one crosseth himself.

## VI

Jesus Christ—John had bought and sold,  
 Jesus Christ—John had eaten and  
 drunk;  
 To him, the Flesh meant silver and gold.  
 (*Salvâ reverentiâ.*)  
 Now it was, 'Saviour, bountiful lamb,  
 'I have roasted thee Turks, though men  
 roast me!  
 'See thy servant, the plight wherein I am!  
 'Art thou a saviour? Save thou me!'

### CHORUS

'Tis John the mocker cries, 'Save thou  
 me!'

## VII

Who maketh God's menace an idle word?  
 —Saith, it no more means what it pro-  
 claims,  
 Than a damsel's threat to her wanton  
 bird?—  
 For she too prattles of ugly names.  
 —Saith, he knoweth but one thing,—what  
 he knows?  
 That God is good and the rest is breath;  
 Why else is the same styled Sharon's rose?  
 Once a rose, ever a rose, he saith.

### CHORUS

O, John shall yet find a rose, he saith!

## VIII

Alack, there be roses and roses, John!  
 Some, honied of taste like your leman's  
 tongue:  
 Some, bitter; for why? (roast gaily on!)  
 Their tree struck root in devil's-dung.  
 When Paul once reasoned of righteousness  
 And of temperance and of judgment to  
 come,  
 Good Felix trembled, he could no less:  
 John, snickering, crook'd his wicked  
 thumb.

### CHORUS

What cometh to John of the wicked  
 thumb?

## THE HERETIC'S TRAGEDY

### IX

Ha, ha, John plucketh now at his rose  
To rid himself of a sorrow at heart!  
Lo,—petal on petal, fierce rays unclose;  
Anther on anther, sharp spikes outstart;  
And with blood for dew, the bosom boils;  
And a gust of sulphur is all its smell;  
And lo, he is horribly in the toils  
Of a coal-black giant flower of hell!

### CHORUS

What maketh heaven, That maketh hell.

### X

So, as John called now, through the fire  
amain,  
On the Name, he had cursed with, all  
his life—  
To the Person, he bought and sold again—  
For the Face, with his daily buffets  
rife—  
Feature by feature It took its place:  
And his voice, like a mad dog's choking  
bark,  
At the steady whole of the Judge's face—  
Died. Forth John's soul flared into the  
dark.

### SUBJOINETH THE ABBOT DEODAET

God help all poor souls lost in the dark!

## HOLY-CROSS DAY

### ON WHICH THE JEWS WERE FORCED TO ATTEND AN ANNUAL CHRISTIAN SER- MON IN ROME.

[Now was come about Holy-Cross Day, and now must my lord preach his first sermon to the Jews: as it was of old cared for in the merciful bowels of the Church, that, so to speak, a crumb at least from her conspicuous table here in Rome should be, though but once yearly, cast to the famishing dogs, under-trampled and bespitten-upon beneath the feet of the guests. And a moving sight in truth, this, of so many of the besotted blind restif and ready-to-perish Hebrews! now maternally brought—nay (for He saith, 'Compel them to come in') haled, as it were, by the head and hair, and against their obstinate hearts, to partake of the heavenly grace. What awakening, what striving with tears, what working of a yeasty conscience! Nor was my lord wanting to himself on so apt an occasion; witness the abundance of conversions which did incon- tinently reward him: though not to my lord be altogether the glory.'—*Diary by the Bishop's Secretary, 1600.*]

What the Jews really said, on thus being driven to church, was rather to this effect:—

### I

FEE, faw, fum! bubble and squeak!  
Blessedest Thursday's the fat of the week.  
Rumble and tumble, sleek and rough,  
Stinking and savoury, smug and gruff,

Take the church-road, for the bell's due  
chime  
Gives us the summons—'tis sermon-time!

### II

Boh, here's Barnabas! Job, that's you?  
Up stumps Solomon—bustling too?  
Shame, man! greedy beyond your years  
To handsel the bishop's shaving-shears?  
Fair play's a jewel! Leave friends in the  
lurch?  
Stand on a line ere you start for the church!

### III

Higgledy piggledy, packed we lie,  
Rats in a hamper, swine in a sty,  
Wasps in a bottle, frogs in a sieve,  
Worms in a carcase, fleas in a sleeve.  
Hist! square shoulders, settle your thumbs  
And buzz for the bishop—here he comes.

### IV

Bow, wow, wow—a bone for the dog!  
I liken his Grace to an acorned hog.  
What, a boy at his side, with the bloom of  
a lass,  
To help and handle my lord's hour-glass!  
Didst ever behold so lithe a chine?  
His cheek hath laps like a fresh-singed  
swine.

### V

Aaron's asleep—shove hip to haunch,  
Or somebody deal him a dig in the paunch!  
Look at the purse with the tassel and knob,  
And the gown with the angel and thingum-  
bob!  
What's he at, quotha? reading his text!  
Now you've his curtesy—and what comes  
next?

### VI

See to our converts—you doomed black  
dozen—  
No stealing away—nor cog nor cozen!  
You five, that were thieves, deserve it  
fairly;  
You seven, that were beggars, will live less  
sparely;  
You took your turn and dipped in the hat,  
Got fortune—and fortune gets you; mind  
that!

### VII

Give your first groan—compunction's at  
work;  
And soft! from a Jew you mount to a Turk.  
Lo, Micah,—the selfsame beard on chin  
He was four times already converted in!  
Here's a knife, clip quick—it's a sign of  
grace—  
Or he ruins us all with his hanging-face.



## HOLY-CROSS DAY

### VIII

Whom now is the bishop a-leering at?  
I know a point where his text falls pat.  
I'll tell him to-morrow, a word just now  
Went to my heart and made me vow  
I meddle no more with the worst of  
trades—  
Let somebody else pay his serenades.

### IX

Groan all together now, whee—hee—heel!  
It's a-work, it's a-work, ah, woe is me!  
It began, when a herd of us, picked and  
placed,  
Were spurred through the Corso, stripped  
to the waist;  
Jew brutes, with sweat and blood well  
spent  
To usher in worthily Christian Lent.

### X

It grew, when the hangman entered our  
bounds:  
Yelled, pricked us out to his church like  
hounds!  
It got to a pitch, when the hand indeed  
Which gutted my purse would throttle my  
creed:  
And it overflows when, to even the odd,  
Men I helped to their sins help me to their  
God.

### XI

But now, while the scapegoats leave our  
flock,  
And the rest sit silent and count the clock,  
Since forced to muse the appointed time  
On these precious facts and truths sub-  
lime,—  
Let us fitly employ it, under our breath,  
In saying Ben Ezra's Song of Death.

### XII

For Rabbi Ben Ezra, the night he died,  
Called sons and sons' sons to his side,  
And spoke, 'This world has been harsh  
and strange;  
'Something is wrong: there needeth a  
change.  
'But what, or where? at the last or first?  
'In one point only we sinned, at worst.

### XIII

'The Lord will have mercy on Jacob yet,  
'And again in his border see Israel set.  
'When Judah beholds Jerusalem,  
'The stranger-seed shall be joined to them:  
'To Jacob's House shall the Gentiles  
cleave.  
'So the Prophet saith and his sons believe.'

### XIV

'Ay, the children of the chosen race  
'Shall carry and bring them to their place:

'In the land of the Lord shall lead the same,  
'Bondsmen and handmaids. Who shall  
blame,  
'When the slaves 'enslave, the oppressed  
ones o'er  
'The oppressor triumph for evermore?

### XV

'God spoke, and gave us the word to keep,  
'Bade never fold the hands nor sleep  
'Mid a faithless world,—at watch and  
ward,  
'Till Christ at the end relieve our guard.  
'By His servant Moses the watch was set;  
'Though near upon cock-crow, we keep it  
yet.

### XVI

'Thou! if thou wast He, who at mid-watch  
came,  
'By the starlight, naming a dubious name!  
'And if, too heavy with sleep—too rash  
'With fear—O Thou, if that martyr-gash  
'Fell on Thee coming to take thine own,  
'And we gave the Cross, when we owed the  
Throne—

### XVII

'Thou art the Judge. We are bruised thus.  
'But, the Judgment over, join sides with  
us!  
'Thine too is the cause! and not more thine  
'Than ours, is the work of these dogs and  
swine,  
'Whose life laughs through and spits at  
their creed!  
'Who maintain Thee in word, and defy  
Thee in deed!

### XVIII

'We withstood Christ then? Be mindful  
how  
'At least we withstand Barabbas now!  
'Was our outrage sore? But the worst we  
spared,  
'To have called these—Christians, had we  
dared!  
'Let defiance to them pay mistrust of Thee,  
'And Rome make amends for Calvary!

### XIX

'By the torture, prolonged from age to age,  
'By the infamy, Israel's heritage,  
'By the Ghetto's plague, by the garb's dis-  
grace,  
'By the badge of shame, by the felon's  
place,  
'By the branding-tool, the bloody whip,  
'And the summons to Christian fellow-  
ship,—

### XX

'We boast our proof that at least the Jew  
'Would wrest Christ's name from the  
Devil's crew.

'Thy face took never so deep a shade  
'But we fought them in it, God our aid!  
'A trophy to bear, as we march, thy band,  
'South, East, and oh to the Pleasant  
Land!'

[Pope Gregory XVI abolished this bad  
business of the Sermon.—R. B.]

### PROTUS

AMONG these latter busts we count by  
scores,  
Half-emperors and quarter-emperors,  
Each with his bay-leaf fillet, loose-thonged  
vest,  
Loric<sup>1</sup> and low-browed Gorgon on the  
breast,—  
One loves a baby face, with violets there,  
Violets instead of laurel in the hair,  
As those were all the little locks could  
bear.

Now read here. 'Protus ends a period  
'Of empery beginning with a god;  
'Born in the porphyry chamber at Byzant,  
'Queens by his cradle, proud and minis-  
trant:  
'And if he quickened breath there, 'twould  
like fire  
'Panting through the dim vast realm  
transpire.  
'A fame that he was missing spread afar:  
'The world from its four corners, rose in  
war,  
'Till he was borne out on a balcony  
'To pacify the world when it should see.  
'The captains ranged before him, one, his  
hand  
'Made baby points at, gained the chief  
command.  
'And day by day more beautiful he grew  
'In shape, all said, in feature and in hue,  
'While young Greek sculptors, gazing on  
the child,  
'Became with old Greek sculpture recon-  
ciled.  
'Already sages laboured to condense  
'In easy tomes a life's experience:  
'And artists took grave counsel to impart  
'In one breath and one hand-sweep, all  
their art—  
'To make his graces prompt as blossoming  
'Of plentifully-watered palms in spring:  
'Since well beseems it, whoso mounts the  
throne,  
'For beauty, knowledge, strength, should  
stand alone,  
'And mortals love the letters of his name.'

—Stop! Have you turned two pages? Still  
the same.

<sup>1</sup> Cuirass or corslet of leather.

New reign, same date. The scribe goes on  
to say  
How that same year, on such a month and  
day,  
'John the Pannonian, groundedly believed  
'A blacksmith's bastard, whose hard hand  
reprieved  
'The Empire from its fate the year be-  
fore,—  
'Came, had a mind to take the crown, and  
wore  
'The same for six years (during which the  
Huns  
'Kept off their fingers from us), till his sons  
'Put something in his liquor"—and so  
forth.  
Then a new reign. Stay—"Take at its just  
worth"  
(Subjoins an annotator) 'what I give  
'As hearsay. Some think, John let Protus  
live  
'And slip away. 'Tis said, he reached  
man's age  
'At some blind northern court; made, first  
a page,  
'Then tutor to the children; last, of use  
'About the hunting-stables. I deduce  
'He wrote the little tract "On worming  
dogs,"  
'Whereof the name in sundry catalogues  
'Is extant yet. A Protus of the race  
'Is rumoured to have died a monk in  
Thrace,—  
'And if the same, he reached senility.'

Here's John the Smith's rough-ham-  
mered head. Great eye,  
Gross jaw and griped lips do what granite  
can  
To give you the crown-grasper. What a  
man!

### THE STATUE AND THE RUST

THERE'S a palace in Florence, the world  
knows well,  
And a statue watches it from the square,  
And this story of both do our townsmen  
tell.

Agos ago, a lady there,  
At the farthest window facing the East  
Asked, 'Who rides by with the royal air?'

The bridesmaids' prattle around her  
ceased;  
She leaned forth, one on either hand;  
They saw how the blush of the bride in-  
creased—

They felt by its beats her heart expand—  
As one at each ear and both in a breath  
Whispered, 'The Great-Duke Ferdinand.'

## THE STATUE AND THE BUST

That self-same instant, underneath,  
The Duke rode past in his idle way,  
Empty and fine like a swordless sheath.

Gay he rode, with a friend as gay,  
Till he threw his head back—'Who is she?'  
—'A bride the Riccardi brings home to-day.'

Hair in heaps lay heavily  
Over a pale brow spirit-pure—  
Carved like the heart of a coal-black tree,

Crisped like a war-steed's encolure  
And vainly sought to dissemble her eyes  
Of the blackest black our eyes endure.

And lo, a blade for a knight's emprise  
Filled the fine empty sheath of a man,—  
The Duke grew straightway brave and wise.

He looked at her, as a lover can;  
She looked at him, as one who awakes:  
The past was a sleep, and her life began.

Now, love so ordered for both their sakes,  
A feast was held that selfsame night  
In the pile which the mighty shadow makes.

(For Via Larga is three-parts light,  
But the palace overshadows one,  
Because of a crime which may God requite!

To Florence and God the wrong was done,  
Through the first republic's murder there  
By Cosimo and his cursed son.)

The Duke (with the statue's face in the square)  
Turned in the midst of his multitude  
At the bright approach of the bridal pair.

Face to face the lovers stood  
A single minute and no more,  
While the bridegroom bent as a man subdued—

Bowed till his bonnet brushed the floor—  
For the Duke on the lady a kiss conferred,  
As the courtly custom was of yore.

In a minute can lovers exchange a word?  
If a word did pass, which I do not think,  
Only one out of the thousand heard.

That was the bridegroom. At day's brink  
He and his bride were alone at last  
In a bedchamber by a taper's blink.

Calmly he said that her lot was cast,  
That the door she had passed was shut on her  
Till the final catafalk repassed.

The world meanwhile, its noise and stir,  
Through a certain window facing the East,  
She could watch like a convent's chronicler.

Since passing the door might lead to a feast,  
And a feast might lead to so much beside,  
He, of many evils, chose the least.

'Freely I choose too,' said the bride—  
'Your window and its world suffice,'  
Replied the tongue, while the heart replied—

'If I spend the night with that devil twice,  
'May his window serve as my loop of hell  
'Whence a damned soul looks on paradise!

'I fly to the Duke who loves me well,  
'Sit by his side and laugh at sorrow  
'Ere I count another ave-bell.

'Tis only the coat of a page to borrow,  
'And tie my hair in a horse-boy's trim,  
'And I save my soul—but not to-morrow'—

(She checked herself and her eye grew dim)  
'My father tarries to bless my state:  
'I must keep it one day more for him.

'Is one day more so long to wait?  
'Moreover the Duke rides past, I know;  
'We shall see each other, sure as fate.'

She turned on her side and slept. Just so!  
So we resolve on a thing and sleep:  
So did the lady, ages ago.

That night the Duke said, 'Dear or cheap  
'As the cost of this cup of bliss may prove  
'To body or soul, I will drain it deep.'

And on the morrow, bold with love,  
He beckoned the bridegroom (close on call,  
As his duty bade, by the Duke's alcove)

And smiled 'Twas a very funeral,  
'Your lady will think, this feast of ours,—  
'A shame to efface, whate'er befall!

'What if we break from the Arno bowers,  
'And try if Petraja, cool and green,  
'Cure last night's fault with this morning's flowers?'

The bridegroom, not a thought to be seen  
On his steady brow and quiet mouth,  
Said, 'Too much favour for me so mean!

'But, alas! my lady leaves the South;  
'Each wind that comes from the Apennine  
'Is a menace to her tender youth:

## THE STATUE AND THE BUST

'Nor a way exists, the wise opine,  
'If she quits' her palace twice this year,  
'To avert the flower of life's decline.'

Quoth the Duke, 'A sage and a kindly fear.  
'Moreover Petraja is cold this spring:  
'Be our feast to-night as usual here!'

And then to himself—'Which night shall  
bring  
'Thy bride to her lover's embraces, fool—  
'Or I am the fool, and thou art the king!

'Yet my passion must wait a night, nor  
cool—  
'For to-night the Envoy arrives from  
France  
'Whose heart I unlock with thyself, my  
tool.

'I need thee still and might miss perchance.  
'To-day is not wholly lost, beside,  
'With its hope of my lady's countenance:

'For I ride—what should I do but ride? •  
'And passing her palace, if I list,  
'May glance at its window—well betide!'

So said, so done: nor the lady missed  
One ray that broke from the ardent brow,  
Nor a curl of the lips where the spirit  
kissed.

Be sure that each renewed the vow,  
No morrow's sun should arise and set  
And leave them then as it left them now.

But next day passed, and next day yet,  
With still fresh cause to wait one day more  
Ere each leaped over the parapet.

And still, as love's brief morning wore,  
With a gentle start, half smile, half sigh,  
They found love not as it seemed before.

They thought it would work infallibly,  
But not in despite of heaven and earth:  
The rose would blow when the storm  
passed by.

Meantime they could profit in winter's  
dearth  
By store of fruits that supplant the rose:  
The world and its ways have a certain  
worth:

And to press a point while these oppose  
Were simple policy; better wait:  
We lose no friends and we gain no foes.

Meantime, worse fates than a lover's fate,  
Who daily may ride and pass and look  
Where his lady watches behind the grate!

And she—she watched the square like a  
book  
Holding one picture and only one,  
Which daily to find she undertook:

When the picture was reached the book  
was done,  
And she turned from the picture at night to  
scheme

Of tearing it out for herself next sun.

So weeks grew months, years; gleam by  
gleam  
The glory dropped from their youth and  
love,  
And both perceived they had dreamed a  
dream;

Which hovered as dreams do, still above:  
But who can take a dream for a truth?  
Oh, hide our eyes from the next remove!

One day as the lady saw her youth  
Depart, and the silver thread that streaked  
Her hair, and, worn by the serpent's tooth,

The brow so puckered, the chin so  
peaked,—  
And wondered who the woman was,  
Hollow-eyed and haggard-cheeked,

Fronting her silent in the glass—  
'Summon here,' she suddenly said,  
'Before the rest of my old self pass,

'Him, the Carver, a hand to aid,  
'Who fashions the clay no love will  
change,  
'And fixes a beauty never to fade.

'Let Robbia's craft so apt and strange  
'Arrest the remains of young and fair,  
'And rivet them while the seasons range.

'Make me a face on the window there,  
'Waiting as ever, mute the while,  
'My love to pass below in the square!

'And let me think that it may beguile  
'Dreary days which the dead must spend  
'Down in their darkness under the aisle,

'To say, "What matters it at the end?  
'"I did no more while my heart was warm  
'"Than does that image, my pale-faced  
friend."

'Where is the use of the lip's red charm,  
'The heaven of hair, the pride of the brow,  
'And the blood that blues the inside arm—

'Unless we turn, as the soul knows how,  
'The earthly gift to an end divine?  
'A lady of clay is as good, I trow.'

But long ere Robbia's cornice, fine,  
With flowers and fruits which leaves en-  
lace,  
Was set where now is the empty shrine—

(And, leaning out of a bright blue space,  
As a ghost might lean from a chink of sky,  
The passionate pale lady's face—

## THE STATUE AND THE BUST

Eyeing ever, with earnest eye  
And quick-turned neck at its breathless  
stretch,  
Some one who ever is passing by—)

The Duke had sighed like the simplest  
wretch

In Florence, 'Youth—my dream escapes!  
'Will its record stay?' And he bade them  
fetch

Some subtle moulder of brazen shapes—  
'Can the soul, the will, die out of a man  
'Ere his body find the grave that gapes?

'John of Douay shall effect my plan,  
'Set me on horseback here aloft,  
'Alive, as the crafty sculptor can,

'In the very square I have crossed so oft:  
'That men may admire, when future suns  
'Shall touch the eyes to a purpose soft,

'While the mouth and the brow stay brave  
in bronze—

'Admire and say, "When he was alive  
'"How he would take his pleasure once!"

'And it shall go hard but I contrive  
'To listen the while, and laugh in my tomb  
'At idleness which aspires to strive.'

So! While these wait the trump of doom,  
How do their spirits pass, I wonder,  
Nights and days in the narrow room?

Still, I suppose, they sit and ponder  
What a gift life was, ages ago,  
Six steps out of the chapel yonder.

Only they see not God, I know,  
Nor all that chivalry of his,  
The soldier-saints who, row on row,

Burn upward each to his point of bliss—  
Since, friend of life being manifest,  
He had burned his way thro' the world to  
this.

I hear you reproach, 'But delay was best,  
'For their end was a crime.'—Oh, a crime  
will do

As well, I reply, to serve for a test,

As a virtue golden through and through,  
Sufficient to vindicate itself  
And prove its worth at a moment's view!

Must a game be played for the sake of self?  
Where a button goes, 'twere an epigram  
To offer the stamp of the very Guelph.

The true has no value beyond the sham:  
As well the counter as coin, I submit,  
When your table's a hat, and your prize a  
dram.

Stake your counter as boldly every whit,  
Venture as warily, use the same skill,  
Do your best, whether winning or losing it,

If you choose to play!—is my principle.  
Let a man contend to the uttermost  
For his life's set prize, be it what it will!

The counter our lovers staked was lost  
As surely as if it were lawful coin:  
And the sin I impute to each frustrate  
ghost

Is—the unlit lamp and the ungirt loin,  
Though the end in sight was a vice, I say.  
You of the virtue (we issue join)  
How strive you? *De te, fabula!*

## PORPHYRIA'S LOVER

THE rain set early in to-night,  
The sullen wind was soon awake,  
It tore the elm-tops down for spite,  
And did its worst to vex the lake:

I listened with heart fit to break,  
'When glided in Porphyria; straight  
She shut the cold out and the storm,  
And kneeled and made the cheerless grate  
Blaze up, and all the cottage warm;  
Which done, she rose, and from her form  
Withdrew the dripping cloak and shawl,  
And laid her soiled gloves by, untied  
Her hat and let the damp hair fall,  
And, last, she sat down by my side  
And called me. When no voice replied,  
She put my arm about her waist,  
And made her smooth white shoulder  
bare,

And all her yellow hair displaced,  
And, stooping, made my cheek lie there,  
And spread, o'er all, her yellow hair,  
Murmuring how she loved me—she  
Too weak, for all her heart's endeavour,  
To set its struggling passion free  
From pride, and vainer ties dissever,  
And give herself to me for ever.

But passion sometimes would prevail,  
Nor could to-night's gay feast restrain  
A sudden thought of one so pale  
For love of her, and all in vain:  
So, she was come through wind and rain.  
Be sure I looked up at her eyes  
Happy and proud; at last I knew  
Porphyria worshipped me; surprise  
Made my heart swell, and still it grew  
While I debated what to do.

That moment she was mine, mine, fair,  
'Perfectly pure and good: I found  
A thing to do, and all her hair  
In one long yellow string I wound  
Three times her little throat around,  
'And strangled her. No pain felt she;

I am quite sure she felt no pain.  
As a shut bud that holds a bee,  
I warily oped her lids: again  
Laughed the blue eyes without a stain.

And I untightened next the tress

About her neck; her cheek once more  
Blushed bright beneath my burning kiss:

I propped her head up as before,  
Only, this time my shoulder bore  
Her head, which droops upon it still:

The smiling rosy little head,  
So glad it has its utmost will,  
That all it scorned at once is fled,  
And I, its love, am gained instead!  
Porphyria's love: she guessed not how  
Her darling one wish would be heard.  
And thus we sit together now,  
And all night long we have not stirred,  
And yet God has not said a word!

'CHILDE ROLAND TO THE DARK  
TOWER CAME'

(See *Edgar's song in 'LEAR'*)

I

My first thought was, he lied in every  
word,

That hoary cripple, with malicious eye  
Askance to watch the working of his lie  
On mine, and mouth scarce able to afford  
Suppression of the glee, that pursed and  
scored  
Its edge, at one more victim gained  
thereby.

II

What else should he be set for, with his  
staff?

What, save to waylay with his lies, en-  
snare

All travellers who might find him posted  
there,

And ask the road? I guessed what skull-  
like laugh

Would break, what crutch 'gin write my  
epitaph

For pastime in the dusty thoroughfare,

III

If at his counsel I should turn aside  
Into that ominous tract which, all agree,  
Hides the Dark Tower. Yet acquiesc-

ingly

I did turn as he pointed: neither pride  
Nor hope rekindling at the end descried,

So much as gladness that some end  
might be.

IV

For, what with my whole world-wide  
wandering,

What with my search drawn out thro'  
years, my hope

Dwindled into a ghost not fit to cope  
With that obstreperous joy success would  
bring,

I hardly tried now to rebuke the spring  
My heart made, finding failure in its  
scope.

V

As when a sick man very near to death  
Seems dead indeed, and feels begin and  
end

The tears and takes the farewell of each  
friend,

And hears one bid the other go, draw  
breath

Freelier outside, ('since all is o'er,' he  
saith,

'And the blow fallen no grieving can  
amend;')

VI

While some discuss if near the other graves  
Be room enough for this, and when a  
day

Suits best for carrying the corpse away,  
With care about the banners, scarves and  
staves:

And still the man hears all, and only craves  
He may not shame such tender love and  
stay.

VII

Thus, I had so long suffered in this quest,  
Heard failure prophesied so oft, been  
writ

So many times among 'The Band'—  
to wit,

The knights who to the Dark Tower's  
search addressed

Their steps—that just to fail as they,  
seemed best,

And all the doubt was now—should I  
be fit?

VIII

So, quiet as despair, I turned from him,  
That hateful cripple, out of his highway  
Into the path he pointed. All the day

Had been a dreary one at best, and dim  
Was settling to its close, yet shot one grim

Red leer to see the plain catch its estray.

IX

For mark! no sooner was I fairly found  
Pledged to the plain, after a pace or two,  
Than, pausing to throw backward a last  
view

O'er the safe road, 'twas gone; grey plain  
all round:

Nothing but plain to the horizon's bound.  
I might go on; nought else remained  
to do.

X

So, on I went. I think I never saw  
Such starved ignoble nature; nothing  
throve:

For flowers—as well expect a cedar  
grove!

But cockle, spurge, according to their law  
Might propagate their kind, with none to  
awe,

You'd think; a burr had been a treasure-  
trove.

# 'CHILDE ROLAND TO THE DARK TOWER CAME'

## XI

No! penury, inertness and grimace,  
In some strange sort, were the land's  
portion. 'See  
'Or shut your eyes,' said Nature peev-  
ishly,  
'It nothing skills: I cannot help my case:  
'Tis the Last Judgment's fire must cure  
this place,  
'Calcine its clods and set my prisoners  
free.'

## XII

If there pushed any ragged thistle-stalk  
Above its mates, the head was chopped;  
the bents  
Were jealous else. What made those  
holes and rents  
In the dock's harsh swarth leaves, bruised  
as to baulk  
All hope of greenness? 'tis a brute must  
walk  
Pushing their life out, with a brute's  
intent.

## XIII

As for the grass, it grew as scant as hair  
In leprosy; thin dry blades pricked the  
mud  
Which underneath looked kneaded up  
with blood.  
One stiff blind horse, his every bone  
a-stare,  
Stood stupefied, however he came there:  
Thrust out past service from the devil's  
stud!

## XIV

Alive? he might be dead for aught I know,  
With that red gaunt and colloped neck  
a-strain,  
And shut eyes underneath the rusty  
mane;  
Seldom went such grotesqueness with such  
worn;  
I never saw a brute I hated so;  
He must be wicked to deserve such pain.

## XV

I shut my eyes and turned them on my  
heart.  
As a man calls for wine before he fights,  
I asked one draught of earlier, happier  
sights,  
Ere fitly I could hope to play my part.  
Think first, fight afterwards—the soldier's  
art:  
One taste of the old time sets all to  
rights.

## XVI

Not it! I fancied Cuthbert's reddening  
face  
Beneath its garniture of curly gold,  
Dear fellow, till I almost felt him fold

An arm in mine to fix me to the place,  
That way he used. Alas, one night's dis-  
grace!  
Out went my heart's new fire and left it  
cold.

## XVII

Giles then, the soul of honour—there he  
stands  
Frank as ten years ago when knighted  
first.  
What honest man should dare (he said)  
he durst.  
Good—but the scene shifts—faugh! what  
hangman hands  
Pin to his breast a parchment? His own  
bands  
Read it. Poor traitor, spit upon and  
curst!

## XVIII

Better this present than a past like that;  
Back therefore to my darkening path  
again!  
No sound, no sight as far as eye could  
strain.  
Will the night send a howlet or a bat?  
I asked: when something on the dismal flat  
Came to arrest my thoughts and change  
their train.

## XIX

A sudden little river crossed my path  
As unexpected as a serpent comes.  
No sluggish tide congenial to the  
glooms;  
This, as it frothed by, might have been a  
bath  
For the fiend's glowing hoof—to see the  
wrath  
Of its black eddy bespate with flakes and  
spumes.

## XX

So petty yet so spiteful! All along,  
Low scrubby alders kneeled down over  
it;  
Drenched willows flung them headlong  
in a fit  
Of mute despair, a suicidal throng:  
The river which had done them all the  
wrong,  
Whate'er that was, rolled by, deterred  
no whit.

## XXI

Which, while I forded,—good saints, how  
I feared  
To set my foot upon a dead man's cheek,  
Each step, or feel the spear I thrust to  
seek  
For hollows, tangled in his hair or beard!  
—It may have been a water-rat I speared,  
But, ugh! it sounded like a baby's  
shriek.

# 'CHILDE ROLAND TO THE DARK TOWER CAME'

XXII

Glad was I when I reached the other bank.  
Now for a better country. Vain presage!  
Who were the strugglers, what war did  
they wage,  
Whose savage trample thus could pad the  
dank  
Soil to a plash? Toads in a poisoned tank,  
Or wild cats in a red-hot iron cage—

XXIII

The fight must so have seemed in that fell  
cirque.  
What penned them there, with all the  
plain to choose?  
No foot-print leading to that horrid  
mews,  
None out of it. Mad brewage set to work  
Their brains, no doubt, like galley-slaves  
the Turk  
Pits for his pastime, Christians against  
Jews.

XXIV

And more than that—a furlong on—why,  
there!  
What bad use was that engine for, that  
wheel,  
Or brake, not wheel—that harrow fit to  
reel  
Men's bodies out like silk? with all the air  
Of Tophet's tool, on earth left unaware,  
Or brought to sharpen its rusty teeth of  
steel.

XXV

Then came a bit of stubbed ground, once  
a wood,  
Next a marsh, it would seem, and now  
mere earth  
Desperate and done with; (so a fool  
finds mirth,  
Makes a thing and then mars it, till his  
mood  
Changes and off he goes!) within a rood—  
Bog, clay and rubble, sand and stark  
black dearth.

XXVI

Now blotches rankling, coloured gay and  
grim,  
Now patches where some leanness of  
the soil's  
Broke into moss or substances like boils;  
Then came some palsied oak, a cleft in him  
Like a distorted mouth that splits its rim  
Gaping at death, and dies while it  
recoils.

XXVII

And just as far as ever from the end!  
Nought in the distance but the evening,  
nought  
To point my footstep further! At the  
thought,

A great black bird, Apollyon's bosom-  
friend,  
Sailed past, nor beat his wide wing dragon-  
penned  
That brushed my cap—perchance the  
guide I sought.

XXVIII

For, looking up, aware I somehow grew,  
'Spite of the dusk, the plain had given  
place  
All round to mountains—with such  
name to grace  
Mere ugly heights and heaps now stolen  
in view.  
How thus they had surprised me,—solve  
it, you!  
How to get from them was no clearer  
case.

XXIX

Yet half I seemed to recognize some trick  
Of mischief happened to me, God  
knows when—  
In a bad dream perhaps. Here ended,  
then,  
Progress this way. When, in the very nick  
Of giving up, one time more, came a click  
As when a trap shuts—you're inside the  
den!

XXX

Burningly it came on me all at once,  
This was the place! those two hills on  
the right,  
Crouched like two bulls locked horn in  
horn in fight;  
While to the left, a tall scalped mountain  
. . . Dunce,  
Dotard, a-doing at the very nonce,  
After a life spent training for the sight!

XXXI

What in the midst lay but the Tower itself?  
The round squat turret, blank as the  
fool's heart,  
Built of brown stone, without a counter-  
part  
In the whole world. The tempest's mock-  
ing elf  
Points to the shipman thus the unseen  
self  
He strikes on, only when the timbers  
start.

XXXII

Not see? because of night perhaps?—why,  
day  
Came back again for that! before it left,  
The dying sunset kindled through a  
cleft:  
The hills, like giants at a hunting, lay,  
Chin upon hand, to see the game at bay,—  
'Now stab and end the creature—to the  
heft!'



# 'CHILDE ROLAND TO THE DARK TOWER CAME'

xxxiii

Not hear? when noise was everywhere! it tolled  
Increasing like a bell. Names in my ears  
Of all the lost adventurers my peers,—  
How such a one was strong, and such was bold,  
And such was fortunate, yet each of old  
Lost, lost! one moment knelled the woe  
of years.

xxxiv

There they stood, ranged along the hill-  
sides, met  
To view the last of me, a living frame  
For one more picture! in a sheet of  
flame  
I saw them and I knew them all. And yet  
Dauntless the slug-horn to my lips I set,  
And blew. 'Childe Roland to the Dark  
Tower came.'

## LURIA

A TRAGEDY

1846

I DEDICATE THIS LAST ATTEMPT FOR THE PRESENT AT DRAMATIC POETRY  
TO A GREAT DRAMATIC POET;

'WISHING WHAT I WRITE MAY BE READ BY HIS LIGHT:'

IF A PHRASE ORIGINALLY ADDRESSED,

BY NOT THE LEAST WORTHY OF HIS CONTEMPORARIES,

TO SHAKESPEARE,

MAY BE APPLIED HERE, BY ONE WHOSE SOLE PRIVILEGE IS IN

A GRATEFUL ADMIRATION,

TO WALTER SAVAGE LANDOR

LONDON: 1846.

### PERSONS

LURIA, a Moor, Commander of the Florentine Forces.  
HUSAIN, a Moor, his friend.  
PUCCIO, the old Florentine Commander, now LURIA'S  
chief officer.

BRACCIO, Commissary of the Republic of Florence.  
JACOPO (LAPO), his secretary.  
TIBURZIO, Commander of the Pisans.  
DOMIZIA, a noble Florentine lady.

SCENE.—LURIA'S Camp between Florence and Pisa.

TIME, 14—.

### ACT I

MORNING

BRACCIO, as dictating to his Secretary;

PUCCIO standing by.

Brac. [to PUCCIO]. Then, you join battle  
in an hour?

Puc.

Luria, the captain.

Brac. [to the Secretary]. 'In an hour, the  
battle.'

[To PUCCIO.] Sir, let your eye run o'er this  
loose digest,

And see if very much of your report  
Have slipped away through my civilian  
phrase.

Does this instruct the Signory aright  
How army stands with army?

Puc. [taking the paper]. All seems here:

—That Luria, seizing with our city's force  
The several points of vantage, hill and  
plain,

Shuts Pisa safe from help on every side,  
And, baffling the Lucchese arrived too  
late,

Must, in the battle he delivers now,

Beat her best troops and first of chiefs.

Brac.

So sure?

Tiburzio's a consummate captain too!

Puc. Luria holds Pisa's fortune in his  
hand.

Brac. [to the Secretary]. 'The Signory  
hold Pisa in their hand.'

Your own proved soldiiership's our war-  
rant, sir:

So, while my secretary ends his task,  
Have out two horsemen, by the open roads,  
To post with it to Florence!

Puc. [returning the paper]. All seems  
here;

Unless . . . Ser Braccio, 'tis my last report!  
Since Pisa's outbreak, and my overthrow,  
And Luria's hastening at the city's call

'To save her, as he only could, no doubt;  
Till now that she is saved or sure to be,—

Whatever you tell Florence, I tell you:  
Each day's note you, her Commissary,

make

Of Luria's movements, I myself supply.  
No youngster am I longer, to my cost;

Therefore while Florence gloried in her  
choice

And vaunted Luria, whom but Luria, still,  
As if zeal, courage, prudence, conduct,  
faith,

Had never met in any man before,  
I saw no pressing need to swell the cry.  
But now, this last report and I have done:  
So, ere to-night comes with its roar of  
praise,

'Twere not amiss if some one old i' the  
trade

Subscribed with, 'True, for once rash  
counsel's best.

'This Moor of the bad faith and doubtful  
race,

'This boy to whose untried sagacity,  
'Raw valour, Florence trusts without re-  
serve

'The charge to save her,—justifies her  
choice;

'In no point has this stranger failed his  
friends.

'Now praise!' I say this, and it is not here.  
*Brac. [to the Secretary].* Write, 'Puccio,  
superseded in the charge,

'By Luria, bears full witness to his worth,  
'And no reward our Signory can give  
'Their champion but he'll back it cheer-  
fully.'

Aught more? Five minutes hence, both  
messengers! [*PUCCIO goes.*]

*Brac. [after a pause, and while he slowly  
tears the paper into shreds].* I think...  
(pray God, I hold in fit contempt

This warfare's noble art and ordering,  
And,—once the brace of prizes fairly  
matched,

Poleaxe with poleaxe, knife with knife as  
good,—

Spit properly at what men term their  
skill!—)

Yet here I think our fighter has the odds.  
With Pisa's strength diminished thus and  
thus,

Such points of vantage in our hands and  
such,

Lucca still off the stage, too,—all's as-  
sured:

Luria must win this battle. Write the  
Court,

That Luria's trial end and sentence pass!  
*Sec. Patron,—*

*Brac.* Ay, Lapo?  
*Sec.* If you trip, I fall;

'Tis in self-interest I speak—  
*Brac.* Nay, nay,

You overshoot the mark, my Lapo! Nay!  
When did I say pure love's impossible?

I make you daily write those red cheeks  
thin,

Load your young brow with what con-  
cerns it least,

And, when we visit Florence, let you pace  
The Piazza by my side as if we talked,

Where all your old acquaintances may see:

You'd die for me, I should not be surprised.  
Now then!

*Sec.* Sir, look about and love yourself!  
Step after step, the Signory and you  
Tread gay till this tremendous point's to  
pass;

Which pass not, pass not, ere you ask your-  
self,—

Bears the brain steadily such draughts of  
fire,

Or too delicious may not prove the pride  
Of this long secret trial you dared plan,

Dare execute, you solitary here,  
With the grey-headed toothless fools at  
home,

Who think themselves your lords, such  
slaves are they?

If they pronounce this sentence as you bid,  
Declare the treason, claim its penalty,—

And sudden out of all the blaze of life,  
On the best minute of his brightest day,

From that adoring army at his back,  
Thro' Florence' joyous crowds before his  
face,

Into the dark you beckon Luria...  
*Brac.* Then—

Why, Lapo, when the fighting-people  
vaunt,

We of the other craft and mystery,  
May we not smile demure, the danger  
past?

*Sec.* Sir, no, no, no,—the danger, and  
your spirit

At watch and ward? Where's danger on  
your part,

With that thin flitting instantaneous steel  
'Gainst the blind bull-front of a brute-force  
world?

If Luria, that's to perish sure as fate,  
Should have been really guiltless after all?

*Brac.* Ah, you have thought that?  
*Sec.* Here I sit, your scribe,

And in and out goes Luria, days and  
nights;

This Puccio comes; the Moor his other  
friend,

Husain; they talk—that's all feigned  
easily;

He speaks (I would not listen if I could),  
Reads, orders, counsels:—but he rests  
sometimes,—

I see him stand and eat, sleep stretched an  
hour

On the lynx-skins yonder; hold his bared  
black arms

Into the sun from the tent-opening; laugh  
When his horse drops the forage from his  
teeth

And neighs to hear him hum his Moorish  
songs.

That man believes in Florence, as the saint  
Tied to the wheel believes in God.

*Brac.* How strange!  
You too have thought that!

*Sec.* Do but you think too,  
And all is saved! I only have to write,  
'The man seemed false awhile, proves true  
at last,

'Bury it'—so I write the Signory—  
'Bury this trial in your breast for ever,  
'Blot it from things or done or dreamed  
about!

'So Luria shall receive his meed to-day  
'With no suspicion what reverse was  
near,—

'As if no meteoric finger hushed  
'The doom-word just on the destroyer's  
lip,

'Motioned him off, and let life's sun fall  
straight.'

*Brac.* [looks to the wall of the tent]. Did  
he draw that?

*Sec.* With charcoal, when the watch  
Made the report at midnight; Lady  
Domizia

Spoke of the unfinished Duomo, you re-  
member;

That is his fancy how a Moorish front  
Might join to, and complete, the body,—  
a sketch,—

And again where the cloak hangs, yonder  
in the shadow.

*Brac.* He loves that woman.

*Sec.* She is sent the spy  
Of Florence,—spies on you as you on him:  
Florence, if only for Domizia's sake,  
Is surely safe. What shall I write?

*Brac.* I see—  
A Moorish front, nor of such ill design!  
Lapo, there's one thing plain and positive;  
Man seeks his own good at the whole  
world's cost.

What? If to lead our troops, stand forth  
our chiefs,

And hold our fate, and see us at their beck,  
Yet render up the charge when peace re-  
turn,

Have ever proved too much for Floren-  
tines,

Even for the best and bravest of ourselves—  
If in the struggle when the soldier's sword  
Should sink its point before the statist's  
pen,

And the calm head replace the violent  
hand,

Virtue on virtue still have fallen away  
Before ambition with unvarying fate,  
Till Florence' self at last in bitterness  
Be forced to own such falls the natural end,

And, sparing further to expose her sons  
To a vain strife and profitless disgrace,  
Declare, 'The foreigner, one not my child,  
'Shall henceforth lead my troops, reach  
height by height

'The glory, then descend into the shame;  
'So shall rebellion be less guilt in him,  
'And punishment the easier task for me.'  
—If on the best of us such brand she set,

Can I suppose an utter alien here,  
This Luria, our inevitable foe,  
Confessed a mercenary and a Moor,  
Born free from many ties that bind the rest  
Of common faith in Heaven or hope on  
earth,

No past with us, no future,—such a spirit  
Shall hold the path from which our  
staunchest broke,

Stand firm where every famed precursor  
fell?

My Lapo, I will frankly say, these proofs  
So duly noted of the man's intent,  
Are for the doting fools at home, not me.  
The charges here, they may be true or  
false:

—What is set down? Errors and over-  
sights,

A dallying interchange of courtesies  
With Pisa's General,—all that, hour by  
hour,

Puccio's pale discontent has furnished us,  
Of petulant speeches, inconsiderate acts,  
Now overhazard, overcaution now;

Even that he loves this lady who believes  
She outwits Florence, and whom Florence  
posted

By my procurement here, to spy on me.  
Lest I one minute lose her from my sight—  
She who remembering her whole House's  
fall,

That nest of traitors strangled in the birth,  
Now labours to make Luria (poor device  
As plain) the instrument of her revenge  
—That she is ever at his ear to prompt

Inordinate conceptions of his worth,  
Exorbitant belief in worth's reward,  
And after, when sure disappointment fol-  
lows,

Proportionable rage at such a wrong—  
Why, all these reasons, while I urge them  
most,

Weigh with me less than least—as nothing  
weigh.

Upon that broad man's-heart of his, I go:  
On what I know must be, yet, while I live,  
Shall never be, because I live and know.  
Brute-force shall not rule Florence! Intel-  
lect

May rule her, bad or good as chance sup-  
plies:

But intellect it shall be, pure if bad,  
And intellect's tradition so kept up.  
Till the good come—'twas intellect that  
ruled,

'Not brute-force bringing from the battle-  
field

The attributes of wisdom, foresight's  
graces

We lent it there to lure its grossness on:  
All which it took for earnest and kept safe  
To show against us in our market-place,  
Just as the plumes and tags and swords-  
man's-gear

(Fetched from the camp where, at their foolish best,

When all was done they frightened nobody)

Perk in our faces in the street, forsooth, With our own warrant and allowance. No!

The whole procedure's overcharged,—its end

In too strict keeping with the bad first step. To conquer Pisa was sheer inspiration?

Well then, to perish for a single fault, Let that be simple justice! There, my

Lapo!

A Moorish front ill suits our Duomo's body:

Blot it out—and bid Luria's sentence come!

[LURIA, who, with DOMIZIA, has entered unobserved at the close of the last phrase, now advances.

Lur. And Luria, Luria, what of Luria now?

Brac. Ah, you so close, sir? Lady Domizia too?

I said it needs must be a busy moment For one like you: that you were now in the thick

Of your duties, doubtless, while we idlers sat . . .

Lur. No—in that paper,—it was in that paper

What you were saying!

Brac. Oh—my day's despatch!

I censure you to Florence: will you see?

Lur. See your despatch, your last, for the first time?

Well, if I should, now? For in truth, Domizia,

He would be forced to set about another, In his sly cool way, the true Florentine, To mention that important circumstance. So, while he wrote I should gain time, such time!

Do not send this!

Brac. And wherefore?

Lur. These Lucchese

Are not arrived—they never will arrive! And I must fight to-day, arrived or not,

And I shall beat Tiburzio, that is sure: And then will be arriving his Lucchese,

But slowly, oh so slowly, just in time To look upon my battle from the hills,

Like a late moon, of use to nobody! And I must break my battle up, send forth,

Surround on this side, hold in check on that.

Then comes to-morrow, we negotiate, You make me send for fresh instructions,

home,

—Incompleteness, incompleteness!

Brac. Ah, we scribes!

Why, I had registered that very point, The non-appearance of our foes' ally,

As a most happy fortune; both at once Were formidable: singly faced, each falls.

Lur. So, no great battle for my Florentines!

No crowning deed, decisive and complete, For all of them, the simple as the wise,

Old, young, alike, that do not understand Our wearisome pedantic art of war,

By which we prove retreat may be success, Delay—best speed,—half loss, at times,—

whole gain:

They want results: as if it were their fault! And you, with warmest wish to be my

friend,

Will not be able now to simply say 'Your servant has performed his task—

enough!

'You ordered, he has executed: good!

'Now walk the streets in holiday attire,

'Congratulate your friends, till noon strikes fierce,

'Then form bright groups beneath the Duomo's shade!'

No, you will have to argue and explain, Persuade them, all is not so ill in the end,

Tease, tire them out! Arrive, arrive, Lucchese!

Dom. Well, you will triumph for the past enough,

Whatever be the present chance; no service

Falls to the ground with Florence: she awaits

Her saviour, will receive him fittingly.

Lur. Ah Braccio, you know Florence!

Will she, think you, Receive one . . . what means 'fittingly receive'?

—Receive compatriots, doubtless—I am none:

And yet Domizia promises so much!

Brac. Kind women still give men a woman's prize.

I know not o'er which gate most boughs will arch,

Nor if the Square will wave red flags or blue.

I should have judged, the fullest of rewards Our state gave Luria, when she made him

chief

Of her whole force, in her best captain's place.

Lur. That, my reward? Florence on my account

Relieved Ser Puccio?—mark you, my reward!

And Puccio's having all the fight's true joy—

Goes here and there, gets close, may fight, himself,

While I must order, stand aloof, o'ersee. That was my calling, there was my true

place!

I should have felt, in some one over me,

Florence impersonate, my visible head,  
As I am over Puccio,—taking life  
Directly from her eye! They give me you:  
But do you cross me, set me half to work?  
I enjoy nothing—though I will, for once!  
Decide, shall we join battle? may I wait?

*Brac.* Let us compound the matter;  
wait till noon:

Then, no arrival,—

*Lur.* Ah, noon comes too fast!  
I wonder, do you guess why I delay  
Involuntarily the final blow  
As long as possible? Peace follows it!  
Florence at peace, and the calm studious

heads

Come out again, the penetrating eyes;  
As if a spell broke, all's resumed, each art  
You boast, more vivid that it slept awhile,  
'Gainst the glad heaven, o'er the white  
palace-front

The interrupted scaffold climbs anew;  
The walls are peopled by the painter's  
brush;

The statue to its niche ascends to dwell.  
The present noise and trouble have retired  
And left the eternal past to rule once more;  
You speak its speech and read its records  
plain,

Greece lives with you, each Roman  
breathes your friend:

But Luria—where will then be Luria's  
place?

*Dom.* Highest in honour, for that past's  
own sake,

Of which his actions, sealing up the sum  
By saving all that went before from wreck,  
Will range as part, with which be wor-  
shipped too.

*Lur.* Then I may walk and watch you  
in your streets,

Lead the smooth life my rough life helps  
no more,

So different, so new, so beautiful—  
Nor fear that you will tire to see parade  
The club that slew the lion, now that  
crooks

And shepherd-pipes come into use again?  
For very lone and silent seems my East  
In its drear vastness: still it spreads, and  
still

No Braccios, no Domizias anywhere—  
Not ever more! Well, well, to-day is ours!

*Dom.* [to BRACCIO]. Should he not have  
been one of us?

*Lur.* Oh, no!  
Not one of you, and so escape the thrill  
Of coming into you, of changing thus,—  
Feeling a soul grow on me that restricts  
The boundless unrest of the savage heart!  
The sea heaves up, hangs loaded o'er the  
land,

Breaks there and buries its tumultuous  
strength;

Horror, and silence, and a pause awhile:

Lo, inland glides the gulf-stream, miles  
away,

In rapture of assent, subdued and still,  
'Neath those strange banks, those un-  
imagined skies.

Well, 'tis not sure the quiet lasts for ever!  
Your placid heads still find rough hands  
new work;

Some minute's chance—there comes the  
need of mine:

And, all resolved on, I too hear at last.  
Oh, you must find some use for me, Ser  
Braccio!

You hold my strength; 'twere best dispose  
of it:

What you created, see that you find food  
for—

I shall be dangerous else!

*Brac.* How dangerous, sir?

*Lur.* There are so many ways, Domizia  
warns me,

And one with half the power that I possess,  
—Grows very formidable. Do you doubt?

\*Why, first, who holds the army . . .  
*Dom.* While we talk,

Morn wears; we keep you from your  
proper place,

The field.

*Lur.* Nay, to the field I move no more;  
My part is done, and Puccio's may begin:  
I cannot trench upon his province longer  
With any face.—You think yourselves so  
safe?

Why, see—in concert with Tiburzio,  
now—

One could . . .

*Dom.* A trumpet!

*Lur.* My Lucchese at last!  
Arrived, as sure as Florence stands! Your  
leave! [*Springs out.*]

*Dom.* How plainly is true greatness  
charactered

By such unconscious sport as Luria's here,  
Strength sharing least the secret of itself!  
Be it with head that schemes or hand that  
acts,

Such save the world which none but they  
could save,

Yet think whate'er they did, that world  
could do.

*Brac.* Yes: and how worthy note, that  
these same great ones

In hand or head, with such unconscious-  
ness

And all its due entailed humility,  
'Should never shrink, so far as I perceive,  
From taking up whatever tool there be  
Effects the whole world's safety or mis-  
hap,

Into their mild hands as a thing of course!  
The statist finds it natural to lead  
The mob who might as easily lead him—  
The captain marshals troops born skilled  
in war—

Statist and captain verily believe!  
While we poor scribes . . . you catch me  
thinking now,  
That I shall in this very letter write  
What none of you are able! To it, Lapo!

[DOMIZIA goes.]

This last worst all-affected child! fit  
Of Luria's, this be-praised unconscious-  
ness,  
Convinces me; the past was no child's play:  
It was a man beat Pisa,—not a child.  
All's mere dissimulation—to remove  
The fear, he best knows we should enter-  
tain.  
The utmost danger was at hand. Is't  
written?

Now make a duplicate, lest this should fail,  
And speak your fullest on the other side.

Sec. I noticed he was busily repairing  
My half-effacement of his Duomo sketch,  
And, while he spoke of Florence, turned  
to it,

As the Mage Negro king to Christ the  
babe.

I judge his childishness the mere relapse  
To boyhood of a man who has worked  
lately,

And presently will work, so, meantime,  
plays:

Whence, more than ever I believe in him.

Brac. [after a pause]. The sword! At  
best, the soldier, as he says,

In Florence—the black face, the barbarous  
name,

For Italy to boast her show of the age,  
Her man of men! To Florence with each  
letter!

## ACT II

### NOON

Dom. Well, Florence, shall I reach thee,  
pierce thy heart  
Thro' all its safeguards? Hate is said to  
help—

Quicken the eye, invigorate the arm;  
And this my hate, made up of many hates,  
Might stand in scorn of visible instrument,  
And will thee dead: yet do I trust it not.  
Nor man's devices nor Heaven's memory  
Of wickedness forgot on earth so soon,  
But thy own nature,—hell and thee I trust,  
To keep thee constant in that wickedness,  
Where my revenge may meet thee. Turn  
aside

A single step, for gratitude or shame,—  
Grace but this Luria,—this wild mass of  
rage

I have prepared to launch against thee  
now,—

With other payment than thy noblest  
found,—

Give his desert for once its due reward,—

And past thee would my sure destruction  
roll.

But thou, who mad'st our House thy sacri-  
fice,

It cannot be thou wilt except this Moor  
From the accustomed fate of zeal and  
truth:

Thou wilt deny his looked-for recompense,  
And then—I reach thee. Old and trained,  
my sire

Could bow down on his quiet broken  
heart,

Die awe-struck and submissive, when at  
last

The strange blow came for the expected  
wreath;

And Porzio passed in blind bewilderment  
To exile, never to return,—they say,

Perplexed in his frank simple honest soul,  
As if some natural law had changed,—  
how else

Could Florence, on plain fact pronouncing  
thus,

Judge Porzio's actions worthy such re-  
ward?

But Berto, with the ever-passionate pulse,  
—Oh that long night, its dreadful hour on  
hour,

In which no way of getting his fair fame  
From their inexplicable charges free,

Was found, save pouring forth the im-  
patient blood

To show its colour whether false or no!  
My brothers never had a friend like me

Close in their need to watch the time, then  
speak,

—Burst with a wakening laughter on their  
dream,

Cry, 'Florence was all falseness, so, false  
here!'

And show them what a simple task re-  
mained—

To leave dreams, rise, and punish in God's  
name

The city wedded to the wickedness.  
None stood by them as I by Luria stand.

So, when the stranger cheated of his due  
Turns on thee as his rapid nature bids,

Then, Florence, think, a hireling at thy  
throat

For the first outrage, think who bore thy  
last,

Yet mutely in forlorn obedience died!  
He comes—his friend—black faces in the  
camp

Where moved those peerless brows and  
eyes of old.

*Enter LURIA and HUSAIN.*

Dom. Well, and the movement—is it  
as you hope?

'Tis Lucca?

Lur. Ah, the Pisan trumpet merely!  
Tiburzio's envoy, I must needs receive.

*Dom.* Whom I withdraw before; tho'  
if I lingered

You could not wonder, for my time fleets  
fast.

The overtaking night brings such reward!  
And where will then be room for me? Yet,  
praised,

Remember who was first to promise praise,  
And envy those who also can perform!

*[Goes.]*  
*Lur.* This trumpet from the Pisans?—

*Hus.* In the camp;  
A very noble presence—Braccio's visage  
On Puccio's body—calm and fixed and  
good;

A man I seem as I had seen before:  
Most like, it was some statue had the face.

*Lur.* Admit him! This will prove the  
last delay.

*Hus.* Ay, friend, go on, and die thou  
going on!

Thou heardest what the grave woman said  
but now:

To-night rewards thee. That is well to  
hear;

But stop not therefore: hear it, and go on!

*Lur.* Oh, their reward and triumph and  
the rest

They round me in the ears with, all day  
long?

All that, I never take for earnest, friend!  
Well would it suit us,—their triumphal  
arch

Or storied pillar,—thee and me, the  
Moors!

But gratitude in those Italian eyes—  
That, we shall get?

*Hus.* It is too cold an air.  
Our sun rose out of yonder mound of mist:

Where is he now? So, I trust none of them.

*Lur.* Truly?  
*Hus.* I doubt and fear. There  
stands a wall

'Twixt ~~an~~ expansive and explosive race  
And those absorbing, concentrating men.

They use thee.

*Lur.* And I feel it, Husain! yes,  
And care not—yes, an alien force like mine

Is only called to play its part outside  
Their different nature; where its sole use  
seems

To fight with and keep off an adverse force,  
As alien,—which repelled, mine too with-  
draws:

Inside, they know not what to do with me.  
Thus I have told them laughingly and oft,

But long since am prepared to learn the  
worst.

*Hus.* What is the worst?

*Lur.* I will forestall them, Husain,  
Will speak the destiny they dare not  
speak—

Banish myself before they find the heart.  
I will be first to say, 'The work rewards!

'I know, for all your praise, my use is over,  
'So may it prove!—meanwhile 'tis best I  
go,

'Go carry safe my memories of you all  
'To other scenes of action, newer lands.'—

Thus leaving them confirmed in their  
bélief

They would not easily have tired of me.  
You think this hard to say?

*Hus.* Say or not say,  
So thou but go, so they but let thee go!

This hating people, that hate each the  
other,

And in one blandness to us Moors unite—  
Locked each to each like slippery snakes,

I say,  
Which still in all their tangles, hissing  
tongue

And threatening tail, ne'er do each other  
harm;

While any creature of a better blood,  
They seem to fight for, while they circle safe

And never touch it,—pines without a  
wound,

Withers away beside their eyes and breath.  
See thou, if Puccio come not safely out

Of Braccio's grasp, this Braccio sworn his  
foe,

As Braccio safely from Domizia's toils  
Who hates him most! But thou, the friend

of all,  
... Come out of them!

*Lur.* The Pisan trumpet now!

*Hus.* Breathe free—it is an enemy, no  
friend!

*Lur.* He keeps his instincts, no new  
culture mars

Their perfect use in him; just so the brutes  
Rest not, are anxious without visible  
cause,

When change is in the elements at work,  
Which man's trained senses fail to appre-  
hend.

But here,—he takes the distant chariot  
wheel

For thunder, festal flame for lightning's  
flash,

The finer traits of cultivated life  
For treachery and malevolence: I see!

*Enter TIBURZIO.*

*Lur.* Quick, sir, your message! I but  
wait your message

To sound the charge. You bring no over-  
ture

For truce? I would not, for your General's  
sake,

You spoke of truce: a time to fight is come,  
And, whatso'er the fight's event, he keeps

His honest soldier's-name to beat me with,  
Or leaves me all himself to beat, I trust!

*Tib.* I am Tiburzio.

*Lur.* You? 'Tis—yes  
... Tiburzio!

You were the last to keep the ford i' the valley

From Puccio, when I threw in succours there!

Why, I was on the heights—through the defile

Ten minutes after, when the prey was lost!

You wore an open skull-cap with a twist Of water-reeds—the plume being hewn away;

While I drove down my battle from the heights,

I saw with my own eyes!

*Tib.* And you are Luria Who sent my cohort, that laid down its arms

In error of the battle-signal's sense, Back safely to me at the critical time— One of a hundred deeds. I know you.

Therefore

To none but you could I . . .

*Lur.* No truce, Tiburzio!

*Tib.* Luria, you know the peril imminent

On Pisa,—that you have us in the toils, Us her last safeguard, all that intercepts The rage of her implacablest of foes From Pisa: if we fall to-day, she falls.

Tho' Lucca will arrive, yet, 'tis too late.

You have so plainly here the best of it, That you must feel, brave soldier as you are,

How dangerous we grow in this extreme, How truly formidable by despair.

Still, probabilities should have their weight:

The extreme chance is ours, but, that chance failing,

You win this battle. Wherefore say I this?

To be well apprehended when I add, This danger absolutely comes from you.

Were you, who threaten thus, a Florentine . . .

*Lur.* Sir, I am nearer Florence than her sons.

I can, and have perhaps obliged the State, Nor paid a mere son's duty.

*Tib.* Even so.

Were you the son of Florence, yet ended

With all your present nobleness of soul, No question, what I must communicate

Would not detach you from her.

*Lur.* Me, detach?

*Tib.* Time urges. You will ruin presently

Pisa, you never knew, for Florence' sake You think you know. I have from time to time

Made prize of certain secret missives sent From Braccio here, the Commissary,

home:

And knowing Florence otherwise, I piece

The entire chain out, from these its scattered links.

Your trial occupies the Signory;

They sit in judgment on your conduct now.

When men at home inquire into the acts Which in the field e'en foes appreciate . . .

Brief, they are Florentines! You, saving them,

Seek but the sure destruction saviours find.

*Lur.* Tiburzio!

*Tib.* All the wonder is of course.

I am not here to teach you, nor direct, Only to loyally apprise—scarce that.

This is the latest letter, sealed and safe, As it left here an hour ago. One way

Of two thought free to Florence, I command.

The duplicate is on its road; but this,— Read it, and then I shall have more to say.

*Lur.* Florence!

*Tib.* Now, were yourself a Florentine,

This letter, let it hold the worst it can, Would be no reason you should fall away.

The mother city is the mother still, And recognition of the children's service

Her own affair; reward—there's no reward!

But you are bound by quite another tie. Nor nature shows, nor reason, why at first

A foreigner, born friend to all alike, Should give himself to any special State.

More than another, stand by Florence' side

Rather than Pisa; 'tis as fair a city You war against as that you fight for—

famed

As well as she in story, graced no less With noble heads and patriotic hearts:

Nor to a stranger's eye would either cause, Stripped of the cumulative loves and hates

Which take importance from familiar view,

Stand as the right and sole to Læzapheld. Therefore, should the preponderating gift

Of love and trust, Florence was first to throw,

Which made you hers, not Pisa's, void the scale,—

Old ties dissolving, things resume their place

And all begins again. Break seal and read! At least let Pisa offer for you now!

And I, as a good Pisan, shall rejoice— Though for myself I lose, in gaining you,

This last fight and its opportunity; The chance it brings of saving Pisa yet,

Or in the turn of battle dying so That shame should want its extreme bitter-

ness.

*Lur.* Tiburzio, you that fight for Pisa now

As I for Florence . . . say my chance were yours!



# LURIA

[ACT II

You read this letter, and you find . . . no,  
no!

Too mad!

*Tib.* I read the letter, find they purpose  
When I have crushed their foe, to crush  
me; well?

*Lur.* You, being their captain, what is  
it you do?

*Tib.* Why, as it is, all cities are alike;  
As Florence pays you, Pisa will pay me.  
I shall be as belied, whate'er the event,  
As you, or more: my weak head, they will  
say,

Prompted this last expedient, my faint  
heart

Entailed on them indelible disgrace,  
Both which defects ask proper punish-  
ment.

Another tenure of obedience, mine!

You are no son of Pisa's: break and read!

*Lur.* And act on what I read? What  
act were fit?

If the firm-fixed foundation of my faith  
In Florence, who to me stands for man-  
kind,

—If that break up and, disimprisoning  
From the abyss. . . Ah friend, it cannot be!  
You may be very sage, yet—all the world  
Having to fail, or your sagacity,  
You do not wish to find yourself alone!  
What would the world be worth? Whose  
love be sure?

The world remains: you are deceived!

*Tib.* Your hand!  
I lead the vanguard.—If you fall, beside,  
The better: I am left to speak! For me,  
This was my duty, nor would I rejoice  
If I could help, it misses its effect;  
And after all you will look gallantly  
Found dead here with that letter in your  
breast.

*Lur.* Tiburzio—I would see these  
people once

And test them ere I answer finally!

At your arrival let the trumpet sound:  
If mine return not then the wonted cry  
It means that I believe—am Pisa's!

*Tib.*

Well!

[*Goes.*

*Lur.* My heart will have it he speaks  
true! My blood

Beats close to this Tiburzio as a friend.  
If he had stept into my watch-tent, night  
And the wild desert full of foes around,  
I should have broke the bread and given,  
the salt

Secure, and, when my hour of watch was  
done,

Taken my turn to sleep between his knees,  
Safe in the untroubled brow and honest  
cheek.

Oh world, where all things pass and nought  
abides,

Oh life, the long mutation—is it so?

Is it with life as with the body's change?

—Where, e'en tho' better follow, good  
must pass,

Nor manhood's strength can mate with  
boyhood's grace,

Nor age's wisdom, in its turn, find  
strength,

But silently the first gift dies away,  
And though the new stays, never both at  
once.

Life's time of savage instinct o'er with me,  
It fades and dies away, past trusting more,  
As if to punish the ingratitude

With which I turned to grow in these new  
lights,

And learned to look with European eyes.  
Yet it is better, this cold certain way,

Where Braccio's brow tells nothing,  
Puccio's mouth,

Domizia's eyes reject the searcher: yes!

For on their calm sagacity I lean,  
Their sense of right, deliberate choice of  
good,

Sure, as they know my deeds, they deal  
with me.

Yes, that is better—that is best of all!  
Such faith stays when mere wild belief

would go.  
Yes—when the desert creature's heart, at  
fault

Amid the scattering tempest's pillared  
sands,

Betrays its step into the pathless drift—  
The calm instructed eye of man holds fast

By the sole bearing of the visible star,  
Sure that when slow the whirling wreck

subside,  
The boundaries, lost now, shall be found  
again,—

The palm-trees and the pyramid over all.  
Yes: I trust Florence: Pisa is deceived.

*Enter BRACCIO, PUCCIO, and DOMIZIA.*

*Brac.* Noon's at an end: no Lucca?  
You must fight.

*Lur.* Do you remember ever, gentle  
friends,

I am no Florentine?

*Dom.* It is yourself

Who still are forcing us, importunately,  
To bear in mind what else we should for-  
get.

*Lur.* For loss!—for what I lose in being  
none!

No shrewd man, such as you yourselves  
respect,

But would remind you of the stranger's  
loss

In natural friends and advocates at home,  
Hereditary loves, even rivalships

With precedent for honour and reward.  
Still, there's a gain, too! If you take it so,

The stranger's lot has special gain as well.  
Do you forget there was my own far East

I might have given away myself to, once,  
As now to Florence, and for such a gift,  
Stood there like a descended deity?  
There, worship waits us: what is it waits  
here?

[Shows the letter.

See! Chance has put into my hand the  
means  
Of knowing what I earn, before I work.  
Should I fight better, should I fight the  
worse,

With payment palpably before me? See!  
Here lies my whole reward! Best learn it  
now

Or keep it for the end's entire delight?

*Brac.* If you serve Florence as the vul-  
gar serve,  
For swordsmen's-pay alone,—break seal  
and read!

In that case, you will find your full desert.

*Lur.* Give me my one last happy mo-  
ment, friends!

You need me now, and all the graciousness,  
This letter can contain will hardly balance  
The after-feeling that you need no more.  
This moment . . . oh, the East has use with  
you!

Its sword still flashes—is not flung aside  
With the past praise, in a dark corner yet!  
How say you? 'Tis not so with Floren-  
tines,

Captains of yours: for them, the ended  
war

Is but a first step to the peace begun:  
He who did well in war, just earns the  
right

To begin doing well in peace, you know:  
And certain my precursors,—would not  
such

Look to themselves in such a chance as  
mine,

Secure the ground they trod upon, per-  
haps?

For I have heard, by fits, or seemed to  
hear,

Of strange mishap, mistake, ingratitude,  
Treachery even. Say that one of you  
Surmised this letter carried what might  
turn

To harm hereafter, cause him prejudice:  
What would he do?

*Dom.* [hastily]. Thank God and take  
revenge!

Hurl her own force against the city straight  
And, even at the moment when the foe  
Sounded defiance . . .

[TIBURZIO'S trumpet sounds  
in the distance.

*Lur.* Ah, you Florentines!  
So would you do? Wisely for you, no  
doubt.

My simple Moorish instinct bids me  
clench

The obligation you relieve me from,

Still deeper! [To PUCCIO.] Sound our  
answer, I should say,  
And thus:—[tearing the paper.]—The  
battle! That solves every doubt.

## ACT III

### AFTERNOON

PUCCIO, as making a report to JACOPO.

*Puc.* And here, your captain must re-  
port the rest;

For, as I say, the main engagement over  
And Luria's special part in it performed,  
How could a subaltern like me expect  
Leisure or leave to occupy the field  
And glean what dropped from his wide  
harvesting?

I thought, when Lucca at the battle's end  
Came up, just as the Pisan centre broke,  
That Luria would detach me and prevent  
The flying Pisans seeking what they found,  
Friends in the rear, a point to rally by.  
But no, more honourable proved my post!  
I had the august captive to escort

Safe to our camp; some other could pur-  
sue,

Fight, and be famous; gentler chance was  
mine—

Tiburzio's wounded spirit must be  
soothed!

He's in the tent there.

*Jac.* Is the substance down?  
I write—'The vanguard beaten and both  
wings

'In full retreat, Tiburzio prisoner'—  
And now,—'That they fell back and  
formed again

'On Lucca's coming.' Why then, after all,  
'Tis half a victory, no conclusive one?

*Puc.* Two operations where a sole had  
served.

*Jac.* And Luria's fault was—  
*Puc.* Oh, for fault—not much!

He led the attack, a thought impetuously,  
—There's commonly more prudence;  
now, he seemed

To hurry measures, otherwise well judged.  
By over-concentrating strength at first  
Against the enemy's van, both wings  
escaped:

That's reparable, yet it is a fault.

*Enter BRACCIO.*

*Jac.* As good as a full victory to  
Florence,

With the advantage of a fault beside—  
What is it, Puccio?—that by pressing for-  
ward

With too impetuous . . .

*Brac.* The report anon!  
Thanks, sir—you have elsewhere a charge,  
I know. [PUCCIO goes.

# LURIA

[ACT III]

There's nothing done but I would do again;

Yet, Lapo, it may be the past proves nothing,

And Luria has kept faithful to the close.  
*Jac.* I was for waiting.

*Brac.* Yes: so was not I.  
He could not choose but tear that letter—true!

Still, certain of his tones, I mind, and looks:—

You saw, too, with a fresher soul than I.  
So, Porzio seemed an injured man, they say!

Well, I have gone upon the broad, sure ground.

*Enter LURIA, PUCCIO, and DOMIZIA*

*Lur.* [to PUCCIO]. Say, at his pleasure I will see Tiburzio!

All's at his pleasure.

*Dom.* [to LURIA]. Were I not forewarned

You would reject, as you do constantly,  
Praise,—I might tell you how you have deserved

Of Florence by this last and crowning feat:  
But words offend.

*Lur.* Nay, you may praise me now.  
I want instruction every hour, I find,

On points where once I saw least need of it;

And praise, I have been used to slight perhaps,

Seems scarce so easily dispensed with now.  
After a battle half one's strength is gone;

The glorious passion in us once appeased,  
Our reason's calm cold dreadful voice begins.

All justice, power and beauty scarce appear

Monopolized by Florence, as of late,  
To me, the stranger: you, no doubt, may know

Why Pisa needs must bear her rival's yoke.  
And peradventure I grow nearer you,

For I, too, want to know and be assured.  
When a cause ceases to reward itself,

Its friend seeks fresh sustainments; praise is one,

And here stand you—you, lady, praise me well.

But yours—(your pardon)—is unlearned praise.

To the motive, the endeavour, the heart's self,

Your quick sense looks: you crown and call aright

The soul o' the purpose, ere 'tis shaped as, act,

Takes flesh i' the world, and clothes itself a king.

But when the act comes, stands for what 'tis worth,

—Here's Puccio, the skilled soldier, he's my judge!

Was all well, Puccio?

*Puc.* All was . . . must be well:  
If we beat Lucca presently, as doubtless . . .

—No, there's no doubt, we must—all was well done.

*Lur.* In truth? Still you are of the trade, my Puccio!

You have the fellow-craftsman's sympathy.

There's none cares, like a fellow of the craft,

For the all-unestimated sum of pains  
That go to a success the world can see:

They praise then, but the best they never know

—While you know! So, if envy mix with it,

Hate even, still the bottom-praise of all,  
Whatever be the dregs, that drop's pure gold!

—For nothing's like it; nothing else records

Those daily, nightly drippings in the dark  
Of the heart's blood, the world lets drop away

For ever—so, pure gold that praise must be!

And I have yours, my soldier! yet the best  
Is still to come. There's one looks on apart

Whom all refers to, failure or success;  
What's done might be our best, our utmost work,

And yet inadequate to serve his need.  
Here's Braccio now, for Florence—here's our service—

Well done for us, seems it well done for him?

His chosen engine, tasked to its full strength

Answers the end? Should he have chosen higher?

Do we help Florence, now our best is wrought?

*Brac.* This battle, with the foregone services,  
Saves Florence.

*Lur.* Why then, all is very well!  
Here am I in the middle of my friends,

Who know me and who love me, one and all.

And yet . . . 'tis like . . . this instant while I speak

'Is like the turning-moment of a dream  
When . . . Ah, you are not foreigners like me!

Well then, one always dreams of friends at home;

And always comes, I say, the turning-point

When something changes in the friendly eyes

That love and look on you . . . so slight, so slight . . .

And yet it tells you they are dead and gone,  
Or changed and enemies, for all their words,

And all is mockery and a maddening show.  
You now, so kind here, all you Florentines,

What is it in your eyes . . . those lips, those brows . . .

Nobody spoke it, yet I know it well!  
Come now—this battle saves you, all's at end,

Your use of me is o'er, for good, for ill,—  
Come now, what's done against me, while I speak,

In Florence? Come! I feel it in my blood,  
My eyes, my hair, a voice is in my ears  
That spite of all this smiling and soft speech

You are betraying me. What is it you do?  
Have it your way, and think my use is over—

Think you are saved and may throw off  
the mask—

Have it my way, and think more work remains

Which I could do,—so, show you fear me not!

Or prudent be, or daring, as you choose,  
But tell me—tell what I refused to know  
At noon, lest heart should fail me! Well?  
That letter?

My fate is sealed at Florence! What is it?  
*Brac.* Sir, I shall not deny what you divine.

It is no novelty for innocence  
To be suspected, but a privilege:  
The after certain compensation comes.  
Charges, I say not whether false or true,  
Have been preferred against you some time since,

Which Florence was bound, plainly, to receive,

And which are therefore undergoing now  
The due investigation. That is all.  
I doubt not but your innocence will prove  
Apparent and illustrious, as to me,  
To them this evening, when the trial ends.

*Lur.* My trial?

*Dom.* Florence, Florence to the end,

My whole heart thanks thee!

*Puc.* [to BRACCIO]. What is 'trial,' sir?  
It was not for a trial—surely, no—  
I furnished you those notes from time to time?

I held myself aggrieved—I am a man—  
And I might speak,—ay, and speak mere truth, too,

And yet not mean at bottom of my heart  
What should assist a—trial, do you say?  
You should have told me!

*Dom.* Nay, go on, go on!

His sentence! Do they sentence him?  
What is it?

The block—wheel?

*Brac.* Sentence there is none as yet,  
Nor shall I give my own opinion now  
Of what it should be, or is like to be.  
When it is passed, applaud or disapprove!  
Up to that point, what is there to impugn?

*Lur.* They are right, then, to try me?  
*Brac.* I assert,

Maintain and justify the absolute right  
Of Florence to do all she can have done  
In this procedure,—standing on her guard,  
Receiving even services like yours  
With utmost fit suspicious wariness.

In other matters, keep the mummery up!  
Take all the experiences of all the world,  
Each knowledge that broke through a heart to life,

Each reasoning which, to reach, burnt out  
a brain,

—In other cases, know these, warrant these,

And then dispense with these—'tis very well!

Let friend trust friend, and love demand love's like.

And gratitude be claimed for benefits,—  
There's grace in that,—and when the fresh heart breaks,

The new brain proves a ruin, what of them?

Where is the matter of one moth the more

Singed in the candle, at a summer's end?  
But Florence is no simple John or James  
To have his toy, his fancy, his conceit  
That he's the one excepted man by fate,

And, when fate shows him he's mistaken there,

Die with all good men's praise, and yield his place

To Paul and George intent to try their chance!

Florence exists because these pass away.  
She's a contrivance to supply a type  
Of man, which men's deficiencies refuse;  
She binds so many, that she grows out of them—

Stands steady o'er their numbers, though they change

And pass away—there's always what upholds,

Always enough to fashion the great show.  
As see, yon hanging city, in the sun,  
Of shapely cloud substantially the same!  
A thousand vapours rise and sink again,  
Are interfused, and live their life and die,—

Yet ever hangs the steady show i' the air,  
Under the sun's straight influence: that is well,

That is worth heaven should hold, and God should bless!

And so is Florence,—the unseen sun above,  
Which draws and holds suspended all of  
us,

Binds transient vapours into a single  
cloud  
Differing from each and better than they  
all.

And shall she dare to stake this perma-  
nence

On any one man's faith? Man's heart is  
weak,

And its temptations many: let her prove  
Each servant to the very uttermost  
Before she grant him her reward, I say!

*Dom.* And as for hearts she chances to  
mistake,

Wronged hearts, not destined to receive  
reward,

Though they deserve it, did she only know,  
—What should she do for these?

*Brac.* What does she not?  
Say, that she gives them but herself to  
serve!

Here's Luria—what had profited his  
strength,

When half an hour of sober fancying  
Had shown him step by step the useless-  
ness

Of strength exerted for strength's proper  
sake?

But the truth is, she did create that  
strength,

Draw to the end the corresponding means.  
The world is wide—are we the only men?

Oh, for the time, the social purpose' sake,  
Use words agreed on, bandy epithets,

Call any man the sole great wise and good!  
But shall we therefore, standing by our-  
selves,

Insult our souls and God with the same  
speech?

There, swarm the ignoble thousands under  
him:

What makes us from the hundreds and the  
tens?

Florence took up, turned all one way the  
soul

Of Luria with its fires, and here he glows!  
She takes me out of all the world as him,

Fixing my coldness till like ice it checks  
The fire! So, Braccio, Luria, which is best?

*Lur.* Ah, brave me? And is this indeed  
the way

To gain your good word and sincere es-  
teem?

Am I the baited animal that must turn  
And fight his baiters to deserve their  
praise?

Obedience is mistake then? Be it so!  
Do you indeed remember I stand here

The captain of the conquering army,—  
mine—

With all your tokens, praise and promise,  
ready

To show for what their names meant when  
you gave,

Not what you style them now you take  
away?

If I call in my troops to arbitrate,  
And dash the first enthusiastic thrill

Of victory with this you menace now—  
Commend to the instinctive popular sense,

My story first, your comment afterward,—  
Will they take, think you, part with you

or me?

If I say—I, the labourer they saw work,  
Ending my work, ask pay, and find my  
lords

Have all this while provided silently  
Against the day of pay' and proving faith,

By what you call my sentence that's to  
come—

Will friends advise I wait complacently?  
If I meet Florence half way at their head,

What will you do, my mild antagonist?  
*Brac.* I will rise up like fire, proud and  
triumphant

That Florence knew you thoroughly and  
by me,

And so was saved. 'See, Italy,' I'll say,  
'The crown of our precautions! Here's a  
man

'Was far advanced, just touched on the  
belief

'Less subtle cities had accorded long;  
'But we are wiser: at the end comes this!'

And from that minute, where is Luria?  
Lost!

The very stones of Florence cry against  
The all-exacting, nought-enduring fool

Who thus resents her first probation,  
flouts

As if he, only, shone and cast no shade,  
He, only, walked the earth with privilege

Against suspicion, free where angels fear:  
He, for the first inquisitive mother's-word,

Must turn, and stand on his defence, for-  
sooth!

Reward? You will not be worth punish-  
ment!

*Lur.* And Florence knew me thus!  
Thus I have lived,—

And thus you, with the clear fine intellect,  
Braccio, the cold acute instructed mind,

Out of the stir, so calm and unconfused,  
Reported me—how could you otherwise!

Ay?—and what dropped from you, just  
now, moreover?

Your information, Puccio?—Did your  
'skill,

Your understanding sympathy approve  
Such a report of me? Was this the end?

Or is even this the end? Can I stop here?  
'You, lady, with the woman's stand apart,

The heart to see with, past man's brain and  
eyes,

... I cannot fathom why you should de-  
stroy

The unoffending one, you call your friend—

Still, lessoned by the good examples here  
Of friendship, 'tis but natural I ask—  
Had you a further aim, in aught you urged,  
Than your friend's profit—in all those instances

Of perfidy, all Florence wrought of wrong—

All I remember now for the first time?

*Dom.* I am a daughter of the Traversari,  
Sister of Porzio and of Berto both,  
So, have foreseen all that has come to pass.  
I knew the Florence that could doubt their faith,

Must needs mistrust a stranger's—dealing them

Punishment, would deny him his reward.  
And I believed, the shame they bore and died,

He would not bear, but live and fight against—

Seeing he was of other stuff than they.

*Lur.* Hear them! All these against one foreigner!

And all this while, where is, in the whole world,

To his good faith a single witness?

*Tib.* [who has entered unseen during the preceding dialogue]. Here!

Thus I bear witness, not in word but deed.  
I live for Pisa; she's not lost to-day  
By many chances—much prevents from that!

Her army has been beaten, I am here,  
But Lucca comes at last, one happy chance!

I rather would see Pisa three times lost  
Than saved by any traitor, even by you;  
The example of a traitor's happy fortune  
Would bring more evil in the end than good;—

Pisa rejects the traitor, craves yourself!  
I, in her name, resign forthwith to you  
My charge,—the highest office, sword and shield!

You shall not, by my counsel, turn on Florence

Your army, give her calumny that ground—

Nor bring one soldier: be you all we gain!  
And all she'll lose,—a head to deck some bridge,

And save the cost o' the crown should deck the head.

Leave her to perish in her perfidy,  
Plague-stricken and stripped naked to all eyes,

A proverb and by-word in all mouths!  
Go you to Pisa! Florence is my place—

Leave me to tell her of the rectitude,  
I, from the first, told Pisa, knowing it.  
To Pisa!

*Dom.* Ah my Braccio, are you caught?

*Brac.* Puccio, good soldier and good citizen,

Whom I have ever kept beneath my eye,  
Ready as fit, to serve in this event

Florence, who clear foretold it from the first—

Through me, she gives you the command  
2nd charge

She takes, through me, from him who held it late!

A painful trial, very sore, was yours:  
All that could draw out, marshal in array  
The selfish passions 'gainst the public good—

Slights, scorn, neglects, were heaped on you to bear:

And ever you did bear and bow the head!  
It had been sorry trial, to precede

Your feet, hold up the promise of reward  
For luring gleam; your footsteps kept the track

Thro' dark and doubt: take all the light at once!

Trial is over, consummation shines;  
Well have you served, as well henceforth command!

*Puc.* No, no . . . I dare not! I am grateful, glad;

But Luria—you shall understand he's wronged:

And he's my captain: this is not the way  
We soldiers climb to fortune: think again!  
The sentence is not even passed, beside!  
I dare not: where's the soldier could?

*Lur.* Now, Florence—  
Is it to be? You will know all the strength  
O' the savage—to your neck the proof must go?

You will prove the brute nature? Ah, I see!  
The savage plainly is impassible:

He keeps his calm way through insulting words,

Sarcastic looks, sharp gestures—one of which

Would stop you, fatal to your finer sense,  
But if he stolidly advance, march now

Without a mark upon his callous hide,  
Through the mere brushwood you grow

angry with,  
And leave the tatters of your flesh upon,

—You have to learn that when the true bar comes,

The murk mid-forest, the grand obstacle,  
Which when you reach, you give the labour up,

Nor dash on, but lie down composed before,

—He goes against it, like the brute he is:  
It falls before him, or he dies in his course.

I kept my course through past ingratitude:  
I saw—it does seem, now, as if I saw,

Could not but see, those insults as they fell,  
—Ay, let them glance from off me, very

like,

# LURIA

[ACT III]

Laughing, perhaps, to think the quality  
You grew so bold on, while you so de-  
spised  
The Moor's dull mute inapprehensive  
mood,  
Was saving you: I bore and kept my  
course.  
Now real wrong fronts me: see if I suc-  
cumb!  
Florence withstands me? I wil' punish  
her.

At night my sentence will arrive, you say.  
Till then I cannot, if I would, rebel  
—Unauthorized to lay my office down,  
Retaining my full power to will and do:  
After—it is to see. Tiburzio, thanks!  
Go; you are free: join Lucca! I suspend  
All further operations till to-night.  
Thank you, and for the silence most of all!  
[To BRACCIO.] Let my complacent bland  
accuser go

Carry his self-approving head and heart  
Safe through the army which would  
trample him

Dead in a moment at my word or sign!  
Go, sir, to Florence; tell friends what I  
say—

That while I wait my sentence, theirs waits  
them!

[To DOMIZIA.] You, lady,—you have  
black Italian eyes!

I would be generous if I might: oh, yes—  
For I remember how so oft you seemed  
Inclined at heart to break the barrier down  
Which Florence finds God built between  
us both.

Alas, for generosity! this hour  
Asks retribution: bear it as you may,  
I must—the Moor—the savage,—pardon  
you!

Puccio, my trusty soldier, see them forth!

## ACT IV

### EVENING

*Enter PUCCIO and JACOPO.*

*Puc.* What Luria will do? Ah, 'tis  
yours, fair sir,

Your and your subtle-witted master's  
part,

To tell me that; I tell you what he can.

*Jac.* Friend, you mistake my station: I  
observe

The game, watch how my betters play, no  
more.

*Puc.* But mankind are not pieces—  
there's your fault!

You cannot push them, and, the first move  
made,

Lean back and study what the next shall  
be.

In confidence that, when 'tis fixed upon,

You find just where you left them, blacks  
and whites:

Men go on moving when your hand's  
away.

You build, I notice, firm on Luria's faith  
This whole time,—firmer than I choose  
to build,

Who never doubted it—of old, that is—  
With Luria in his ordinary mind.

But now, oppression makes the wise man  
mad:

How do I know he will not turn and stand  
And hold his own against you, as he may?  
Suppose he but withdraw to Pisa—well,—  
Then, even if all happen to your wish,  
Which is a chance . . .

*Jac.* Nay—'twas an oversight,  
Not waiting till the proper warrant came:  
You could not take what was not ours to  
give.

But when at night the sentence really  
comes,

Our city authorizes past dispute  
Luria's removal and transfers the charge,  
You will perceive your duty and accept?

*Puc.* Accept what? muster-rolls of  
soldiers' names?

An army upon paper? I want men,  
The hearts as well as hands—and where's  
a heart

But beats with Luria, in the multitude  
I come from walking through by Luria's  
side?

You gave them Luria, set him thus to grow,  
Head-like, upon their trunk; one heart  
feeds both,

They feel him there, live twice, and well  
know why.

—For they do know, if you are ignorant,  
Who kept his own place and respected  
theirs,

Managed their sweat, yet never spared his  
blood.

All was your act: another might have  
served—

There's peradventure no such dearth of  
heads—

But you chose Luria; so, they grew one  
flesh,

And now, for nothing they can under-  
stand,

Luria removed, off is to roll the head;  
The body's mine—much I shall do with it!

*Jac.* That's at the worst.

*Puc.* No—at the best, it is!  
Best, do you hear? I saw them by his side.

Only we two with Luria in the camp  
Are left that keep the secret? You think  
that?

Hear what I know: from rear to van, no  
heart

But felt the quiet patient hero there  
Was wronged, nor in the moveless ranks  
an eye

But glancing told its fellow the whole story  
Of that convicted silent knot of spies  
Who passed thro' them to Florence; they  
might pass—

No breast but gladlier beat when free of  
such!

Our troops will catch up Luria, close him  
round,

Bear him to Florence as their natural lord,  
Partake his fortune, live or die with him.

*Jac.* And by mistake catch up along  
with him

Puccio, no doubt, compelled in self despite  
To still continue second in command!

*Puc.* No, sir, no second nor so fortunate!

Your tricks succeed with me too well for  
that!

I am as you have made me, live and die  
To serve your end—a mere trained fighting-hack,

With words, you laugh at while they leave  
your mouth

For my life's rule and ordinance of God!  
I have to do my duty, keep my faith,

And earn my praise, and guard against my  
blame,

As I was trained. I shall accept your  
charge,

And fight against one better than myself,  
Spite of my heart's conviction of his  
worth—

That, you may count on!—just as hitherto  
I have gone on, persuaded I was wronged,  
Slighted, insulted, terms we learn by  
rote,—

All because Luria superseded me—  
Because the better nature, fresh-inspired,

Mounted above me to its proper place!  
What mattered all the kindly graciousness,

The cordial brother's-bearing? This was  
clear—

I, once the captain, now was subaltern,  
And so must keep complaining like a fool!

Go, take the curse of a lost soul, I say!  
You neither play your puppets to the end,

Nor treat the real man,—for his realness'  
sake

Thrust rudely in their place,—with such  
regard

As might console them for their altered  
rank.

Me, the mere steady soldier, you depose  
For Luria, and here's all your pet de-  
serves!

Of what account, then, is your laughing,  
stock?

One word for all: whatever Luria does,  
—If backed by his indignant troops he  
turn,

Revenge himself, and Florence go to  
ground,—

Or, for a signal everlasting shame,  
He pardon you, simply seek better friends,

Side with the Pisans and Lucchese for  
change

—And if I, pledged to ingrates past belief,  
Dare fight against a man such fools call  
false,

Who, inasmuch as he was true, fights  
me,—

Whichever way he win, he wins for worth,  
For every soldier, for all true and good!

Sir, chronicling the rest, omit not this!

*As they go, enter LURIA and HUSAIN.*

*Hus.* Saw'st thou?—For they are gone!  
The world lies bare

Before thee, to be tasted, felt and seen  
Like what it is, now Florence goes away!

Thou livest now, with men art man again!  
Those Florentines were all to thee of old;

But Braccio, but Domizia, gone is each,  
There lie beneath thee thine own multi-  
tudes!

Saw'st thou?

*Lur.* I saw.  
*Hus.* Then, hold thy course,  
my king!

The years return. Let thy heart have its  
way:

Ah, they would play with thee as with all  
else,

Turn thee to use, and fashion thee anew,  
Find out God's fault in thee as in the rest?

Oh watch, oh listen only to these fiends  
Once at their occupation! Ere we know,

The free great heaven is shut, their stifling  
pall

Drops till it frets the very tingling hair,  
So weighs it on our head,—and, for the  
earth,

Our common earth is tethered up and  
down,

Over and across—'here shalt thou move,'  
they cry!

*Lur.* Ay, Husain?

*Hus.* So have they spoiled all beside!  
So stands a man girt round with Floren-  
tines,

Priests, greybeards, Braccios, women,  
boys and spies,

All in one tale, all singing the same song.  
How thou must house, and live at bed and  
board,

Take pledge and give it, go their every way,  
Breathe to their measure, make thy blood  
beat time

With theirs—or, all is nothing—thou art  
lost—

A savage, how shouldst thou perceive as  
they?

Feel glad to stand 'neath God's close  
naked hand!

Look up to it! Why, down they pull thy  
neck,

Lest it crush thee, who feel'st it and wouldst  
kiss,



Without their priests that needs must glove it first,

Lest peradventure flesh offend thy lip.  
Love woman! Why, a very beast thou art!  
Thou must . . .

*Lur.* Peace, Husain!

*Hus.* Ay but, spoiling all,  
For all, else true things, substituting false,  
That they should dare spoil, of all instincts,  
thine!

Should dare to take thee with thine instincts up,

Thy battle-ardours, like a ball of fire,  
And class them and allow them place and play

So far, no farther—unabashed the while!  
Thou with the soul that never can take rest—

Thou born to do, undo, and do again,  
And never to be still,—wouldst thou make war?

Oh, that is commendable, just and right!  
'Come over,' say they, 'have the honour due

'In living out thy nature! Fight thy best:  
'It is to be for Florence, not thyself!

'For thee, it were a horror and a plague;  
'For us, when war is made for Florence,  
see,

'How all is changed: the fire that fed on earth

'Now towers to heaven!'

*Lur.* And what sealed up so long  
My Husain's mouth?

*Hus.* Oh friend, oh lord—for me,  
What am I?—I was silent at thy side,  
Who am a part of thee. It is thy hand,  
Thy foot that glows when in the heart fresh blood

Boils up, thou heart of me! Now, live again,

Again love as thou likest, hate as free!  
Turn to no Braccios nor Domizias now,  
To ask, before thy very limbs dare move,  
If Florence' welfare be concerned thereby!

*Lur.* So clear what Florence must expect of me?

*Hus.* Both armies against Florence!  
Take revenge!

Wide, deep—to live upon, in feeling now,—

And, after live, in memory, year by year—  
And, with the dear conviction, die at last!  
She lies now at thy pleasure: pleasure have!

Their vaunted intellect that gilds our sense,  
And blends with life, to show it better by,  
—How think'st thou?—I have turned that light on them!

They called our thirst of war a transient thing;

'The battle-element must pass away  
'From life,' they said, 'and leave a tranquil world.'

—Master, I took their light and turned it full

On that dull turgid vein they said would burst

And pass away; and as I looked on life,  
Still everywhere I tracked this, though it hid

And shifted, lay so silent as it thought,  
Changed shape and hue yet ever was the same.

Why, 'twas all fighting, all their nobler life!  
All work was fighting, every har.m—defeat,

And every joy obtained—a victory!  
Be not their dupe!

—Their dupe? That hour is past!  
Here stand'st thou in the glory and the calm:

All is determined. Silence for me now!

[HUSAIN goes.]

*Lur.* Have I heard all?

*Dom.* [advancing from the background].

No, Luria, I remain!  
Not from the motives these have urged on thee,

Ignoble, insufficient, incomplete,  
And pregnant each with sure seeds of decay,

As failing of sustainment from thyself,  
—Neither from low revenge, nor selfishness,

Nor savage lust of power, nor one, nor all,  
Shalt thou abolish Florence! I proclaim  
The angel in thee, and reject the sprites

Which ineffectual crowd about his strength,

And mingle with his work and claim a share!

Inconsciously to the augustest end  
Thou hast arisen: second not in rank

So much as time, to him who first ordained  
That Florence, thou art to destroy, should be.

Yet him a star, too, guided, who broke first  
The pride of lonely power, the life apart,  
And made the eminences, each to each,

Lean o'er the level world and let it lie  
Safe from the thunder henceforth 'neath their tops;

So the few famous men of old combined,  
And let the multitude rise underneath,

And reach them and unite—so Florence grew:

Braccio speaks true, it was well worth the price.

But when the sheltered many grew in pride  
And grudged the station of the elected ones,

Who, greater than their kind, are truly great

Only in voluntary servitude—  
Time was for thee to rise, and thou art here.

Such plague possessed this Florence: who can tell

The mighty girth and greatness at the heart

Of those so perfect pillars of the grove  
She pulled down in her envy? Who as I,  
The light weak parasite born but to twine  
Round each of them and, measuring them,  
live?

My light love keeps the matchless circle  
safe,

My slender life proves what has passed  
away.

I lived when they departed; lived to cling  
To thee, the mighty stranger; thou wouldst  
rise

And burst the thralldom, and avenge, I  
knew.

I have done nothing; all was thy strong  
bole.

But a bird's weight can break the infant  
tree

Which after holds an aery in its arms,  
And 'twas my care that nought should  
warp thy spire

From rising to the height; the roof is  
reached

O' the forest, break through, see extend  
the sky!

Go on to Florence, Luria! 'Tis man's  
cause!

Fail thou, and thine own fall were least to  
dread:

Thou keepest Florence in her evil way,  
Encouragest her sin so much the more—  
And while the ignoble past is justified,  
Thou all the surelier warp'st the future  
growth,

The chiefs to come, the Lurias yet unborn,  
That, greater than thyself, are reached o'er  
thee

Who giv'st the vantage-ground their foes  
require

As o'er my prostrate House thyself wast  
reached.

Man calls thee, God requites thee! All is  
said,

The mission of my House fulfilled at last:  
And the mere woman, speaking for her-  
self,

Reserves speech—it is now no woman's  
time. [DOMIZIA goes.

*Lur.* Thus at the last must figure Luria,  
then!

Doing the various work of all his friends,  
And answering every purpose save his  
own.

No doubt, 'tis well for them to wish; but  
him—

After the exploit what were left? Per-  
chance

A little pride upon the swarthy brow,  
At having brought successfully to bear

'Gainst Florence' self her own especial  
arms,—

Her craftiness, impelled by fiercer strength

From Moorish blood than feeds the  
northern wit—

But after!—once the easy vengeance  
willed,

Beautiful Florence at a word laid low  
—(Not in her domes and towers and  
palaces,

Not even in a dream, that outrage!)—low,  
As shamed in her own eyes henceforth for  
ever,

Low, for the rival cities round to laugh,  
Conquered and pardoned by a hireling  
Moor!

—For him, who did the irreparable wrong,  
What would be left, his life's illusion  
fled,—

What hope or trust in the forlorn wide  
world?

How strange that Florence should mistake  
me so!

Whence grew this? What withdrew her  
faith from me?

Some cause! These fretful-blooded chil-  
dren talk

Against their mother,—they are wronged,  
they say—

Notable wrongs her smile makes up again!  
So, taking fire at each supposed offence,

They may speak rashly, suffer for their  
speech:

But what could it have been in word or  
deed

Thus injured me? Some one word spoken  
more

Out of my heart, and all had changed per-  
haps,

My fault, it must have been,—for, what  
gain they?

Why risk the danger? See, what I could  
do!

And my fault, wherefore visit upon them,  
My Florentines? The notable revenge

I meditated! To stay passively,  
Attend their summons, be as they dispose!

Why, if my very soldiers keep the rank,  
And if my chieftains acquiesce, what then?

I ruin Florence, teach her friends mistrust,  
Confirm her enemies in harsh belief,

And when she finds one day, as find she  
must,

The strange mistake, and how my heart  
was hers,

Shall it console me, that my Florentines  
Walk with a sadder step, in graver guise,

Who took me with such frankness, praised  
me so,

At the glad outset? Had they loved me  
less,

They had less feared what seemed a change  
in me.

And after all, who did the harm? Not  
they!

How could they interpose with those old  
fools

# LURIA

[ACT IV

I' the council? Suffer for those old fools' sake—

They, who made pictures of me, sang the songs

About my battles? Ah, we Moors get blind

Out of our proper world, where we can see! The sun that guides is closer to us!

There—

There, my own orb! He sinks from out the sky.

Why, there! a whole day has he blessed the land,

My land, our Florence all about the hills, The fields and gardens, vineyards, olive-grounds,

All have been blest: and yet we Florentines With souls intent upon our battle here, Found that he rose too soon, or set too late,

Gave us no vantage, or gave Pisa much— Therefore we wronged him! Does he turn in ire

To burn the earth that cannot understand? Or drop out quietly, and leave the sky, His task once ended? Night wipes blame away.

Another morning from my East shall spring

And find all eyes at leisure, all disposed To watch and understand its work, no doubt.

So, praise the new sun, the successor praise,

Praise the new Luria and forget the old!

[*Taking a phial from his breast.*]

Strange! This is all I brought from my own land

To help me: Europe would supply the rest,

All needs beside, all other helps save one! I thought of adverse fortune, battle lost, The natural upbraiding of the loser, And then this quiet remedy to seek At end of the disastrous day.

[*He drinks.*]

'Tis sought!

This was my happy triumph-morning: Florence

Is saved: I drink this, and ere night,—die! Strange!

## ACT V

### NIGHT

LURIA and PUCCIO.

Lur. I thought to do this, not to talk this: well,

Such were my projects for the city's good, To help her in attack or by defence.

Time, here as elsewhere, soon or late may take

Our foresight by surprise thro' chance and change;

But not a little we provide against—If you see clear on every point.

Puc.

Most clear.

Lur. Then all is said—not much, if you count words,

Yet to an understanding ear enough And all that my brief stay permits, beside.

Nor must you blame me, as I sought to teach

My elder in command, or threw a doubt Upon the very skill, it comforts me

To know I leave,—your steady soldiership Which never failed me: yet, because it seemed

A stranger's eye might haply note defect That skill, through use and custom, over-looks—

I have gone into the old cares once more, As if I had to come and save again Florence—that May—that morning! 'Tis night now.

Well—I broke off with? . . .

Puc.

Of the past campaign

You spoke—of measures to be kept in mind

For future use.

Lur. True, so . . . but, time—no time! As well end here: remember this, and me!

Farewell now!

Puc.

Dare I speak?

Lur. South o' the river— How is the second stream called . . . no,

—the third?

Puc. Pesa.

Lur. And a stone's cast from the fording-place,

To the east,—the little mount's name?

Puc.

Lupo.

Lur. Ay! Ay—there the tower, and all that side is safe!

With San Romano, west of Evola, San Miniato, Scala, Empoli,

Five towers in all,—forget not!

Puc.

Fear not me!

Lur. —Nor to memorialize the Council now,

I' the easy hour, on those battalions' claim, Who forced a pass by Staggia on the hills,

And kept the Sienese at check!

Puc.

One word—

Sir, I must speak! That you submit yourself

To Florence's bidding, howsoever it prove, And give up the command to me—is

much, Too much, perhaps: but what you tell me

now, Even will affect the other course you choose—

Poor as it may be, perils even that!

Refuge you seek at Pisa: yet these plans

All militate for Florence, all conclude  
Your formidable work to make her queen  
O' the country,—which her rivals rose  
against

When you began it,—which to interrupt,

Pisa would buy you off at any price!  
You cannot mean to sue for Pisa's help,  
With this made perfect and on record?

*Lur.* I—  
At Pisa, and for refuge, do you say?

*Puc.* Where are you going, then? You must decide

On leaving us, a silent fugitive,  
Alone, at night—you, stealing through  
our lines

Who were this morning's Luria,—you  
escape

To painfully begin the world once more,  
With such a past, as it had never been!  
Where are you going?

*Lur.* Not so far, my Puccio,  
But that I hope to hear, enjoy and praise  
(If you mind praise from your old captain  
yet)

Each happy blow you strike for Florence.

*Puc.* Ay,—  
But ere you gain your shelter, what may  
come?

For see—though nothing's surely known  
as yet,

Still—truth must out—I apprehend the  
worst.

If mere suspicion stood for certainty  
Before, there's nothing can arrest the step  
Of Florence toward your ruin, once on  
foot.

Forgive her fifty times, it matters not!  
And having disbelieved your innocence,  
How can she trust your magnanimity?  
You may do harm to her—why then, you  
will!

And Florence is sagacious in pursuit.  
Have you a friend to count on?

*Lur.* One sure friend.

*Puc.* Potent?

*Lur.* All-potent.

*Puc.* And he is apprised?

*Lur.* He waits me.

*Puc.* So!—Then I, put in your place,  
Making my profit of all done by you,  
Calling your labours mine, reaping their  
fruit,

To this, the State's gift, now add yours  
beside—

That I may take as my peculiar store  
These your instructions to work Florence  
good.

And if, by putting some few happily  
In practice, I should both advantage her  
And draw down honour on myself,—what  
then?

*Lur.* Do it, my Puccio! I shall know  
and praise.

*Puc.* Though so, men say, 'mark what  
we gain by change

'—A Puccio for a Luria!'

*Lur.* Even so.

*Puc.* Then, not for fifty hundred  
Florences,

Would I accept one office save my own,  
Fill any other than my rightful post  
Here at your feet, my captain and my lord!  
That such a cloud should break, such  
trouble be,

Ere a man settle, soul and body, down  
Into his true place and take rest for ever!  
Here were my wise eyes fixed on your right-  
hand,

And so the bad thoughts came and the  
worse words,

And all went wrong and painfully  
enough,—

No wonder,—till, the right spot stumbled  
on,

All the jar stops, and there is peace at once!  
I am yours now,—a tool your right-hand  
wields!

God's love, that I should live, the man I  
am,

On orders, warrants, patents, and the  
like,

As if there were no glowing eye i' the world  
To glance straight inspiration to my brain,  
No glorious heart to give mine twice the  
beats!

For, see—my doubt, where is it?—fear?  
'tis flown!

And Florence and her anger are a tale  
To scare a child. Why, half-a-dozen  
words

Will tell her, spoken as I now can speak,  
Her error, my past folly—and all's right,  
And you are Luria, our great chief again!  
Or at the worst—which worst were best of  
all—

To exile or to death I follow you.

*Lur.* Thanks, Puccio! Let me use the  
privilege

You grant me: if I still command you,—  
stay!

Remain here—my vicegerent, it shall be,  
And not successor: let me, as of old,  
Still serve the State, my spirit prompting  
yours—

Still triumph, one for both. There! Leave  
me now!

You cannot disobey my first command?  
Remember what I spoke of Jacopo,

And what you promised to concert with  
him!

Send him to speak with me—nay, no fare-  
well!

You shall be by me when the sentence  
comes. [PUCCIO goes.

So, there's one Florentine returns again!  
Out of the genial morning-company,  
One face is left to take into the night.

*Enter JACOPO.*

*Jac.* I wait for your command, sir.

*Lur.* What, so soon!  
I thank your ready presence and fair word.  
I used to notice you in early days  
As of the other species, so to speak,  
Those watchers of the lives of us who act—  
That weigh our motives, scrutinize our  
thoughts.

So, I propound this to your faculty  
As you would tell me, were a town to take  
. . . That is, of old. I am departing hence  
Under these imputations; that is nought—  
I leave no friend on whom they may re-  
bound,

Hardly a name behind me in the land,  
Being a stranger: all the more behoves  
That I regard how altered were the case  
With natives of the country, Florentines  
On whom the like mischance should fall:  
the roots

O' the tree survive the ruin of the trunk—  
No root of mine will throb, you under-  
stand.

But I had predecessors, Florentines,  
Accused as I am now, and punished so—  
The Traversari: you know more than I  
How stigmatized they are, and lost in  
shame.

Now Puccio, who succeeds me in com-  
mand,

Both served them and succeeded, in due  
time;

He knows the way, holds proper docu-  
ments,

And has the power to lay the simple truth  
Before an active spirit, as I count yours:  
And also there's Tiburzio, my new friend,  
Will, at a word, confirm such evidence,  
He being the great chivalric soul we know.  
I put it to your tact, sir—were't not well,  
—A grace, though but for contrast's sake,  
no more,—

If you who witness, and have borne a share  
Involuntarily in my mischance,  
Should, of your proper motion, set your  
skill

To indicate—that is, investigate  
The right or wrong of what mischance be-  
fell

Those famous citizens, your countrymen?  
Nay, you shall promise nothing: but re-  
flect,

And if your sense of justice prompt you—  
good!

*Jac.* And if, the trial past, their fame  
stand clear

To all men's eyes, as yours, my lord, to  
mine—

Their ghosts may sleep in quiet satisfied!  
For me, a straw thrown up into the air,  
My testimony goes for a straw's worth.  
I used to hold by the instructed brain,

And move with Braccio as my master-  
wind;

The heart leads surelier: I must move with  
you—

As greatest now, who ever were the best.  
So, let the last and humblest of your ser-  
vants

Accept your charge, as Braccio's hereto-  
fore.

And tender homage by obeying you!  
*[JACOPO goes.]*

*Lur.* Another! Luria goes not poorly  
forth.

If we could wait! The only fault's with  
time;

All men become good creatures: but so  
slow!

*Enter DOMIZIA.*

*Lur.* Ah, you once more?

*Dom.* Domizia, whom you knew,  
Performed her task, and died with it. 'Tis

I,  
Another woman, you have never known.  
Let the past sleep now!

*Lur.* I have done with it.

*Dom.* How inexhaustibly the spirit  
grows!

One object, she seemed erewhile born to  
reach

With her whole energies and die con-  
tent,—

So like a wall at the world's edge it stood,  
With nought beyond to live for,—is that  
reached?

Already are new undreamed energies  
Outgrowing under, and extending farther

To a new object; there's another world.  
See! I have told the purpose of my life;

'Tis gained: you are decided, well or ill—  
You march on Florence, or submit to

her—  
My work is done with you, your brow de-  
clares.

But—leave you? More of you seems yet to  
reach:

I stay for what I just begin to see.

*Lur.* So that you turn not to the past!

*Dom.* You trace  
Nothing but ill in it—my selfish impulse,

Which sought its end and disregarded  
yours?

*Lur.* Speak not against your nature:  
best, each keep

His own—you; yours—most, now that I  
keep mine,

—At least, fall by it, having too weakly  
stood.

God's finger marks distinctions, all so fine,  
We would confound: the lesser has its use,

Which, when it apes the greater, is for-  
gone.

I, born a Moor, lived half a Florentine;  
But, punished properly, can end, a Moor.

Beside, there's something makes me understand

Your nature: I have seen it.

*Dom.* Aught like mine?

*Lur.* In my own East . . . if you would stoop and help

My barbarous illustration! It sounds ill; Yet there's no wrong at bottom: rather, praise.

*Dom.* Well?

*Lur.* We have creatures there, which if you saw

The first time, you would doubtless marvel at

For their surpassing beauty, craft and strength.

And though it were a lively moment's shock

When you first found the purpose of forked tongues

That seem innocuous in their lambent play,

Yet, once made know such grace requires such guard,

Your reason soon would acquiesce, I think,

In wisdom which made all things for the best—

So, take them, good with ill, contentedly, The prominent beauty with the latent sting.

I am glad to have seen you wondrous Florentines:

Yet . . .

*Dom.* I am here to listen.

*Lur.* My own East!

How nearer God we were! He glows above With scarce an intervention, presses close

And palpitatingly, his soul o'er ours: We feel him, nor by painful reason know!

The everlasting minute of creation Is felt there; now it is, as it was then;

All changes at his instantaneous will, Not by the operation of a law

Whose maker is elsewhere at other work. His hand is still engaged upon his world—

Man's praise can forward it, man's prayer suspend,

For is not God all-mighty? To recast The world, erase old things and make them new,

What costs it Him? So, man breathes nobly there.

And inasmuch as feeling, the East's gift, Is quick and transient—comes, and lo, is gone—

While Northern thought is slow and durable,

Surely a mission was reserved for me, Who, born with a perception of the power

And use of the North's thought for us of the East,

Should have remained, turned knowledge to account,

Giving thought's character and permanence

To the too transitory feeling there— Writing God's message plain in mortal words.

Instead of which, I leave my fated field For this where such a task is needed least,

Where all are born consummate in the art I just perceive a chance of making mine,—

And then, deserting thus my early post, I wonder that the men I come among

Mistake me! There, how all had understood,

Still brought fresh stuff for me to stamp and keep,

Fresh instinct to translate them into law! Me, who . . .

*Dom.* Who here the greater task achieve, More needful even: who have brought fresh stuff

For us to mould, interpret and prove right,—

New feeling fresh from God, which, could we know

O' the instant, where had been our need of it?

—Whose life re-teaches us what life should be,

What faith is, loyalty and simpleness, All, once revealed but taught us so long since

That, having mere tradition of the fact,— Truth copied falteringly from copies faint,

The early traits all dropped away,—we said

On sight of faith like yours, 'So looks not faith

'We understand, described and praised before.'

But still, the feat was dared; and though at first

It suffered from our haste, yet trace by trace

Old memories reappear, old truth returns, Our slow thought does its work, and all's re-known.

Oh noble Luria! What you have decreed I see not, but no animal revenge,

No brute-like punishment of bad by worse—

It cannot be, the gross and vulgar way Traced for me by convention and mistake,

Has gained that calm approving eye and brow!

Spare Florence, after all! Let Luria trust To his own soul, he whom I trust with mine!

*Lur.* In time!

*Dom.* How, Luria?

*Lur.* It is midnight now, And they arrive from Florence with my fate.

*Dom.* I hear no step.

*Lur.* I feel one, as you say.

*Enter HUSAIN.*

*Hus.* The man returned from Florence!

*Lur.* As I knew.

*Hus.* He seeks thee.

*Lur.* And I only wait for him.

Aught else?

*Hus.* A movement of the Lucchese troops

Southward—

*Lur.* Toward Florence? Have out instantly . . .

Ah, old use clings! Puccio must care henceforth.

In—quick—'tis nearly midnight! Bid him come!

*Enter TIBURZIO, BRACCIO, and PUCCIO.*  
Tiburzio?—not at Pisa?

*Tib.* I return

From Florence: I serve Pisa, and must think

By such procedure I have served her best.

A people is but the attempt of many

To rise to the completer life of one;

And those who live as models for the mass

Are singly of more value than they all.

Such man are you, and such a time is this,

That your sole fate concerns a nation more

Than much apparent welfare: that to prove

Your rectitude, and duly crown the same,

Imports us far beyond to-day's event,

A battle's loss or gain: man's mass remains,—

Keep but God's model safe, new men will rise

To take its mould, and other days to prove

How great a good was Luria's glory.

True—

I might go try my fortune as you urged,

And, joining Lucca, helped by your disgrace,

Repair our harm—so were to-day's work done;

But where leave Luria for our sons to see?

No, I look farther. I have testified

(Declaring my submission to your arms)

Her full success to Florence, making clear

Your probity, as none else could: I spoke,

And out it shone!

*Lur.* Ah—until Braccio spoke!

*Brac.* Till Braccio told in just a word the whole—

His lapse to error, his return to knowledge: Which told . . . Nay, Luria, I should droop

the head,

I whom shame rests with! Yet I dare look up,

Sure of your pardon now I sue for it,

Knowing you wholly. Let the midnight end!

'Tis morn approaches! Still you answer not?

'Sunshine succeeds the shadow past away;

Our faces, which phantasmal grew and false,

Are all that felt it: they change round you, turn

Truly themselves now in its vanishing.

Speak, Luria! Here begins your true career:

Look up, advance! All now is possible,

Fact's grandeur, no false dreaming! Dare and do!

And every prophecy shall be fulfilled

Save one—(nay, now your word must come at last)

—That you would punish Florence!

*Hus.* [pointing to LURIA'S dead body]. That is done.

## A SOUL'S TRAGEDY

1846

ACT FIRST, BEING WHAT WAS CALLED THE POETRY OF CHIAPPINO'S LIFE: AND ACT SECOND, ITS PROSE

### PERSONS

LUITOLFO and EULALIA, betrothed lovers.  
CHIAPPINO, their friend.

OGNIBEN, the Pope's Legate.  
Citizens of Faenza.

TIME, 15—. PLACE, Faenza.

### ACT I

SCENE.—*Inside LUITOLFO'S house.*

CHIAPPINO, EULALIA.

*Eu.* What is it keeps Luitolfo? Night's fast falling,

And 'twas scarce sunset . . . had the ave-  
bell

Sounded before he sought the Provost's house?

I think not: all he had to say would take

Few minutes, such a very few, to say!

How do you think, Chiappino? If our lord

The Provost were less friendly to your friend

Than everybody here professes him, I should begin to tremble—should not you?

Why are you silent when so many times

I turn and speak to you?

*Ch.* That's good!

*Eu.* You laugh!

*Ch.* Yes. I had fancied nothing that bears price

In the whole world was left to call my own;  
And, may be, felt a little pride thereat.  
Up to a single man's or woman's love,  
Down to the right in my own flesh and blood,

There's nothing mine, I fancied,—till you spoke:

—Counting, you see, as 'nothing' the permission

To study this peculiar lot of mine  
In silence: well, go silence with the rest  
Of the world's good! What can I say, small serve?

*Eu.* This,—lest you, even more than needs, embitter

Our parting: say your wrongs have cast, for once,

A cloud across your spirit!

*Ch.* How a cloud?

*Eu.* No man nor woman loves you, did you say?

*Ch.* My God, were't not for thee!

*Eu.* Ay, God remains,  
Even did men forsake you.

*Ch.* Oh, not so!

Were't not for God, I mean, what hope of truth—

Speaking truth, hearing truth, would stay with man?

I, now—the homeless friendless penniless  
Proscribed and exiled wretch who speak to you,—

Ought to speak truth, yet could not, for my death,

(The thing that tempts me most) help speaking lies

About your friendship and Luitolfo's courage

And all our townfolk's equanimity—  
Through sheer incompetence to rid myself

Of the old miserable lying trick  
Caught from the liars I have lived with,—

God,

Did I not turn to thee! It is thy prompting  
I dare to be ashamed of, and thy counsel  
Would die along my coward lip, I know.  
But I do turn to thee. This craven tongue,  
These features which refuse the soul its way,

Reclaim thou! Give me truth—truth, power to speak—

And after be sole present to approve  
The spoken truth! Or, stay, that spoken truth,

Who knows but you, too, may approve?

*Eu.* Ah, well—

Keep silence then, Chiappino!

*Ch.* You would hear,

You shall now,—why the thing we please to style

My gratitude to you and all your friends  
For service done me, is just gratitude  
So much as yours was service: no whit more.

I was born here, so was Luitolfo; both  
At one time, much with the same circumstance

Of rank and wealth; and both, up to this night

Of parting company, have side by side  
Still fared, he in the sunshine—I, the shadow.

'Why?' asks the world. 'Because,' replies the world

To its complacent self, 'these playfellows,  
'Who took at church the holy-water drop

'Each from the other's finger, and so forth,—

'Were of two moods: Luitolfo was the proper

'Friend-making, everywhere friend-finding soul,

'Fit for the sunshine, so, it followed him.  
'A happy-tempered bringer of the best

'Out of the worst; who bears with what's past cure,

'And puts so good a face on't—wisely passive

'Where action's fruitless, while he remedies

'In silence what the foolish rail against;  
'A man to smooth such natures as parade

'Of opposition must exasperate;  
'No general gauntlet-gatherer for the weak

'Against the strong, yet over-scrupulous  
'At lucky junctures; one who won't forego

'The after-battle work of binding wounds,  
'Because, forsooth he'd have to bring himself

'To side with wound-inflictors for their leave!'

—Why do you gaze, nor help me to repeat  
What comes so glibly from the common mouth,

About Luitolfo and his so-styled friend?

*Eu.* Because that friend's sense is obscured . . .

*Ch.* I thought

You would be readier with the other half  
Of the world's story, my half! Yet, 'tis true.

For all the world does say it. Say your worst!

True, I thank God, I ever said 'you sin,'  
When a man did sin: if I could not say it,

I glared it at him; if I could not glare it,  
I prayed against him; then my part seemed over.

God's may begin yet: so it will, I trust.

*Eu.* If the world outraged you, did we?



# A SOUL'S TRAGEDY

[ACT I

*Ch.* What's 'me'  
That you use well or ill? It's man, in me,  
All your successes are an outrage to,  
You all, whom sunshine follows, as you  
say!

Here's our Faenza birthplace; they send  
here

A provost from Ravenna: how he rules,  
You can at times be eloquent about.

'Then, end his rule!'—'Ah yes, one stroke  
does that!

'But patience under wrong works slow and  
sure,

'Must violence still bring peace forth?  
He, beside,

'Returns so blandly one's obeisance! ah—  
'Some latent virtue may be lingering yet,

'Some human sympathy which, once ex-  
cite,

'And all the lump were leavened quietly:  
'So, no more talk of striking, for this  
time!'

But I, as one of those he rules, won't bear  
These pretty takings-up and layings-down  
Our cause, just as you think occasion suits.  
Enough of earnest, is there? You'll play,  
will you?

Diversify your tactics, give submission,  
Obsequiousness and flattery a turn,

While we die in our misery patient deaths?  
We all are outraged then, and I the first:

I, for mankind, resent each shrug and  
smirk,

Each beck and bend, each . . . all you do  
and are,

I hate!

*Eu.* We share a common censure, then.  
'Tis well you have not poor Luitolfo's part  
Nor mine to point out in the wide offence.

*Ch.* Oh, shall I let you so escape me,  
lady?

Come, on your own ground, lady,—from  
yourself,

(Leaving the people's wrong, which most  
is mine)

What have I got to be so grateful for?  
These three last fines, no doubt, one on the  
other

Paid by Luitolfo?

*Eu.* Shame, Chiappino!  
*Ch.* Shame

Fall presently on who deserves it most!  
—Which is to see. He paid my fines—my  
friend,

Your prosperous smooth lover presently,  
Then, scarce your wooer,—soon, your  
husband: well—

I loved you.

*Eu.* Hold!  
*Ch.* You knew it, years ago.

When my voice faltered and my eye grew  
dim

Because you gave me your silk mask to  
hold—

My voice that greatens when there's need  
to curse

The people's Provost to their heart's con-  
tent,

—My eye, the Provost, who bears all men's  
eyes,

Banishes now because he cannot bear,—  
You knew . . . but you do your parts—my  
part, I:

So be it! You flourish, I decay: all's well.  
*Eu.* I hear this for the first time.

*Ch.* The fault's there?  
Then my days spoke not, and my nights of  
fire

Were voiceless? Then the very heart may  
burst,

Yet all prove nought, because no mincing  
speech

Tells leisurely that thus it is and thus?  
Eulalia, truce with toying for this once!

A banished fool, who troubles you to-  
night

For the last time—why, what's to fear  
from me?

You knew I loved you!

*Eu.* Not so, on my faith!  
You were my now-affianced lover's  
friend—

Came in, went out with him, could speak  
as he.

All praise your ready parts and pregnant  
wit;

See how your words come from you in a  
crowd!

Luitolfo's first to place you o'er himself  
In all that challenges respect and love:

Yet you were silent then, who blame me  
now.

I say all this by fascination, sure:  
I, all but wed to one I love, yet listen!

It must be, you are wronged, and that the  
wrongs

Luitolfo pities . . .

*Ch.* —You too pity? Do!  
But hear first what my wrongs are; so  
began

This talk and so shall end this talk. I say,  
Was't not enough that I must strive (I saw)

To grow so far familiar with your charms  
As next contrive some way to win them—  
which

To do, an age seemed far too brief—for,  
see!

We all aspire to heaven; and there lies  
heaven

Above us: go there! Dare we go? no,  
surely!

How dare we go without a reverent pause,  
A growing less unfit for heaven? Just so,

I dared not speak: the greater fool, it  
seems!

Was't not enough to struggle with such  
folly,

But I must have, beside, the very man

ACT I]

A SOUL'S TRAGEDY

Whose slight free loose and incapacious  
soul

Gave his tongue scope to say whate'er he  
would

—Must have him load me with his benefits  
—For fortune's fiercest stroke?

*Eu.* Justice to him  
That's now entreating, at his risk perhaps,  
Justice for you! Did he once call those acts  
Of simple friendship—bounties, benefits?

*Ch.* No: the straight course had been  
to call them thus.

Then, I had flung them back, and kept my-  
self

Unhampered, free as he to win the prize  
We both sought. But 'the gold was dross,'  
he said:

'He loved me, and I loved him not: why  
spurn

'A trifle out of superfluity?

'He had forgotten he had done as much.'  
So had not I! Henceforth, try as I could

To take him at his word, there stood by  
you

My benefactor; who might speak and  
laugh

And urge his nothings, even banter me  
Before you—but my tongue was tied. A

dream!  
Let's wake: your husband . . . how you  
shake at that!

Good—my revenge!

*Eu.* Why should I shake?

What forced  
Or forces me to be Luitolfo's bride?

*Ch.* There's my revenge, that nothing  
forces you.

No gratitude, no liking of the eye  
Nor longing of the heart, but the poor

bond  
Of habit—here so many times he came,  
So much he spoke,—all these compose the

tie  
That pulls you from me. Well, he paid my  
fines,

Nor missed a cloak from wardrobe, dish  
from table;

He spoke a good word to the Provost here,  
Held me up when my fortunes fell away

—It had not looked so well to let me  
drop—

Men take pains to preserve a tree-stump,  
even,

Whose boughs they played beneath—  
much more a friend.

But one grows tired of seeing, after the first,  
Pains spent upon impracticable stuff

Like me. I could not change: you know  
the rest.

I've spoke my mind too fully out, by  
chance,

This morning to our Provost; so, ere night  
I leave the city on pain of death. And now

On my account there's gallant intercession

Goes forward—that's so graceful!—and  
anon

He'll noisily come back: 'the intercession  
'Was made and fails; all's over for us both;

'Tis vain contending; I would better go.'  
And I do go—and straight to you he turns

Light of a load; and ease of that permits  
His visage to repair the natural bland

Economy, sore broken late to suit  
My discontent. Thus, all are pleased—

you, with him,  
He with himself, and all of you with me

—'Who,' say the citizens, 'had done far  
better

'In letting people sleep upon their woes,  
'If not possessed with talent to relieve them

'When once awake;—but then I had,'  
they'll say,

'Doubtless some unknown compensating  
pride

'In what I did; and as I seem content  
'With ruining myself, why, so should they

be.'

And so they are, and so be with his prize  
The devil, when he gets them speedily!

Why does not your Luitolfo come? I long  
To don this cloak and take the Lugo path.

It seems you never loved me, then?

*Eu.* Chiappino!  
*Ch.* Never?

*Eu.* Never.  
*Ch.* That's sad. Say what

I might,  
There was no help from being sure this

while  
You loved me. Love like mine must have  
return,

I thought: no river starts but to some sea.  
And had you loved me, I could soon devise

Some specious reason why you stifled love,  
Some fancied self-denial on your part.

Which made you choose Luitolfo; so, ex-  
cepting

From the wide condemnation of all here,  
One woman. Well, the other dream may

break!  
If I knew any heart, as mine loved you,  
Loved me, though in the vilest breast

'twere lodged,  
I should, I think, be forced to love again:

Else there's no right nor reason in the  
world.

*Eu.* 'If you knew,' say you,—but I did  
not know.

That's where you're blind, Chiappino!—  
a disease

Which if I may remove, I'll not repent  
The listening to. You cannot, will not, see

How, place you but in every circumstance  
Of us, you are just now indignant at,

You'd be as we.

*Ch.* I should be? . . . that;  
again!

I, to my friend, my country and my love,

# A SOUL'S TRAGEDY

[ACT I

Be as Luitolfo and these Faentines?

*Eu.* As we.

*Ch.* Now, I'll say something to remember.

I trust in nature for the stable laws  
Of beauty and utility.—Spring shall plant,  
And Autumn garner to the end of time:  
I trust in God—the right shall be the right  
And other than the wrong, while he endures:

I trust in my own soul, that can perceive  
The outward and the inward, nature's good

And God's: so, seeing these men and myself,

Having a right to speak, thus do I speak.  
I'll not curse—God bears with them, well may I—

But I—protest against their claiming me.  
I simply say, if that's allowable,  
I would not (broadly) do as they have done.

—God curse this townful of born slaves,  
bred slaves,  
Branded into the blood and bone, slaves!  
Curse

Whoever loves, above his liberty,

House, land or life! and . . .  
[*A knocking without.*  
—bless my hero-friend,

Luitolfo!

*Eu.* How he knocks!

*Ch.* The peril, lady!  
'Chiappino, I have run a risk—a risk!  
'For when I prayed the Provost (he's my friend)

'To grant you a week's respite of the sentence

'That confiscates your goods, exiles yourself,

'He shrugged his shoulder—I say, shrugged it! Yes, .

'And fright of that drove all else from my head.

'Here's a good, purse of *scudi*: off with you,

'Lest of that shrug come what God only knows!

'The *scudi*—friend, they're trash—no thanks, I beg!

'Take the north gate,—for San Vitale's suburb,

'Whose double taxes you appealed against,

'In discomposure at your ill-success

'Is apt to stone you: there, there—only go!

'Beside, Eulalia here looks sleepily.

'Shake . . . oh, you hurt me, so you squeeze my wrist!

—Is it not thus you'll speak, adventurous friend?

[*As he opens the door, LUITOLFO rushes in, his garments disordered.*

*Eu.* Luitolfo! Blood?

*Luit.*

There's more

—and more of it!

Eulalia—take the garment! No—you, friend!

You take it and the blood from me—you dare!

*Eu.* Oh, who has hurt you? where's the wound?

*Ch.* 'Who,' say you?

The man with many a touch of virtue yet!  
The Provost's friend has proved too frank

of speech,  
And this comes of it. Miserable hound!

This comes of temporizing, as I said!  
Here's fruit of your smooth speeches and soft looks!

Now see my way! As God lives, I go straight

To the palace and do justice, once for all!

*Luit.* What says he?

*Ch.* I'll do justice on him.

*Luit.* Him?

*Ch.* The Provost.

*Luit.* I've just killed him.

*Eu.* Oh, my God!

*Luit.* My friend, they're on my trace;  
they'll have me—now!

They're round him, busy with him: soon they'll find

He's past their help, and then they'll be on me!

Chiappino, save Eulalia! I forget . . .

Were you not bound for . . .

*Ch.* Lugo?

*Luit.* Ah—yes—yes!

That was the point I prayed of him to change.

Well, go—be happy! Is Eulalia safe?

They're on me!

*Ch.* 'Tis through me they reach

you, then!

Friend, seem the man you are! Lock arms

—that's right!

Now tell me what you've done; explain how you

That still professed forbearance, still preached peace,

Could bring yourself . . .

*Luit.* What was peace

for, Chiappino?

I tried peace: did that promise, when peace failed,  
Strife should not follow? All my peaceful days

Were just the prelude to a day like this.

I cried 'You call me "friend": save my true friend!

'Save him, or lose me!'

*Ch.* But you never said

You meant to tell the Provost thus and thus.

*Luit.* Why should I say it? What else did I mean?

*Ch.* Well? He persisted?

*Luit.* —'Would so order it  
'You should not trouble him too soon  
again.'

I saw a meaning in his eye and lip;  
I poured my heart's store of indignant  
words

Out on him: then—I know not! He re-  
torted,  
And I . . . some staff lay there to hand—I  
think

He bade his servants thrust me out—I  
struck . . .

Ah, they come! Fly you, save yourselves,  
you two!

The dead back-weight of the beheading  
axe!

The glowing trip-hook, thumbscrews and  
the gadge!

*Eu.* They do come! Torches in the  
Place! Farewell,

Chiappino! You can work no good to us—  
Much to yourself; believe not, all the  
world

Much needs be cursed henceforth!  
*Ch.* And you?

*Eu.* I stay.  
*Ch.* Ha, ha! Now, listen! I am master  
here!

This was my coarse disguise; this paper  
shows

My path of flight and place of refuge—  
see—

Lugo, Argenta, past San Nicolo,  
Ferrara, then to Venice and all's safe!

Put on the cloak! His people have to fetch  
A compass round about. There's time  
enough

Ere they can reach us, so you straightway  
make

For Lugo . . . nay, he hears not! On with  
it—

The cloak, Luitolfo, do you hear me?  
See—

He obeys he knows not how. Then, if I  
must—

Answer me! Do you know the Lugo gate?  
*Eu.* The north-west gate, over the  
bridge?

*Luit.* I know.  
*Ch.* Well, there—you are not fright-  
ened? all my route

Is traced in that: at Venice you escape  
Their power. Eulalia, I am master here!

[*Shouts from without. He pushes out*  
*LUITOLFO, who complies mechanically.*

In time! Nay, help me with him—so!  
He's gone.

*Eu.* What have you done? On you,  
perchance, all know

The Provost's hater, will men's vengeance  
fall

As our accomplice.  
*Ch.* Mere accomplice? See!

[*Putting on LUITOLFO'S vest.*

Now, lady, am I true to my profession,  
Or one of these?

*Eu.* You take Luitolfo's place?  
*Ch.* Die for him.

*Eu.* Well done!  
[*Shouts increase.*

*Ch.* How the people tarry!  
I can't be silent; I must speak: or sing—

How natural to sing now!  
*Eu.* Hush and pray!

We are to die; but even I perceive  
'Tis not a very hard thing so to die.

My cousin of the pale-blue tearful eyes,  
Poor Cesca, suffers more from one day's

life  
With the stern husband; Tisbe's heart  
goes forth

Each evening after that wild son of hers,  
To track his thoughtless footstep through  
the streets:

How easy for them both to die like this!  
I am not sure that I could live as they.

*Ch.* Here they come, crowds! They  
pass the gate? Yes!—No!—

One torch is in the courtyard. Here flock  
all.

*Eu.* At least Luitolfo has escaped.  
What cries!

*Ch.* If they would drag one to the  
market-place,

One might speak there!  
*Eu.* List, list!

*Ch.* They mount the steps.

*Enter the Populace.*

*Ch.* I killed the Provost!  
*The Populace [speaking together].*

'Twas Chiappino, friends!  
Our saviour! The best man at last as first!

He who first made us feel what chains we  
wore,

He also strikes the blow that shatters them,  
He at last saves us—our best citizen!

—Oh, have you only courage to speak  
now?

My eldest son was christened a year since  
'Cino' to keep Chiappino's name in  
mind—

Cino, for shortness merely, you observe!  
The city's in our hands. The guards are  
fled.

Do you, the cause of all, come down—  
come up—

Come out to counsel us, our chief, our  
king,

Whate'er rewards you! Choose your own  
reward!

The peril over, its reward begins!  
Come and harangue us in the market-  
place!

*Eu.* Chiappino?  
*Ch.* Yes—I understand your  
eyes!

## A SOUL'S TRAGEDY

[ACT I

You think I should have promptlier dis-  
owned  
This deed with its strange unforeseen  
success,

In favour of Luitolfo. But the peril,  
So far from ended, hardly seems begun.  
To-morrow, rather, when a calm succeeds,  
We easily shall make him full amends:  
And meantime—if we save them as they  
pray,

And justify the deed by its effects?

*Eu.* You would, for worlds, you had  
denied at once.

*Ch.* I know my own intention, be  
assured!

All's well. Precede us, fellow-citizens!

## ACT II

SCENE.—*The Market-place. LUITOLFO in  
disguise mingling with the Populace  
assembled opposite the Provost's  
Palace.*

*1st Bystander* [to LUITOLFO]. You, a  
friend of Luitolfo's? Then, your friend is  
vanished,—in all probability killed on the  
night that his patron the tyrannical Pro-  
vost was loyally suppressed here, exactly  
a month ago, by our illustrious fellow-  
citizen, thrice-noble saviour, and new  
Provost that is like to be, this very morn-  
ing,—Chiappino!

*Luit.* He the new Provost?

*2nd Bys.* Up those steps will he go, and  
beneath yonder pillar stand, while Ogni-  
ben, the Pope's Legate from Ravenna,  
reads the new dignitary's title to the people,  
according to established custom: for which  
reason, there is the assemblage you inquire  
about.

*Luit.* Chiappino—the late Provost's  
successor? Impossible! But tell me of that  
presently. What I would know first of all  
is, wherefore Luitolfo must so necessarily  
have been killed on that memorable night?

*3rd Bys.* You were Luitolfo's friend?  
So was I. Never, if you will credit me, did  
there exist so poor-spirited a milksop. He,  
with all the opportunities in the world, fur-  
nished by daily converse with our oppres-  
sor, would not stir a finger to help us: and,  
when Chiappino rose in solitary majesty  
and . . . how does one go on saying? . . .  
dealt the godlike blow,—this Luitolfo, not  
unreasonably fearing the indignation of  
an aroused and liberated people, fled pre-  
cipitately. He may have got trodden to  
death in the press at the south-east gate,  
when the Provost's guards fled through it  
to Ravenna, with their wounded master,—  
if he did not rather hang himself under  
some hedge.

*Luit.* Or why not simply have lain per-

due in some quiet corner,—such as San  
Cassiano, where his estate was,—receiving  
daily intelligence from some sure friend,  
meanwhile, as to the turn matters were  
taking here—how, for instance, the Pro-  
vost was not dead, after all, only wounded  
—or, as to day's news would seem to  
prove, how Chiappino was not Brutus the  
Elder, after all, only the new Provost—  
and thus Luitolfo be enabled to watch a  
favourable opportunity for returning?  
Might it not have been so?

*3rd Bys.* Why, he may have taken that  
care of himself, certainly, for he came of  
a cautious stock. I'll tell you how his uncle,  
just such another gingerly treader on tip-  
toes with finger on lip,—how he met his  
death in the great plague-year: *dico vobis!*  
Hearing that the seventeenth house in a  
certain street was infected, he calculates to  
pass it in safety by taking plentiful breath,  
say, when he shall arrive at the eleventh  
house; then scouring by, holding that  
breath, till he be got so far on the other side  
as number twenty-three, and thus elude the  
danger.—And so did he begin; but, as he  
arrived at thirteen, we will say,—thinking  
to improve on his precaution by putting  
up a little prayer to St. Nepomucene of  
Prague, this exhausted so much of his  
lungs' reserve, that at sixteen it was clean  
spent,—consequently at the fatal seven-  
teen he inhaled with a vigour and persis-  
tence enough to suck you any latent venom  
out of the heart of a stone.—Ha, ha!

*Luit.* [aside]. (If I had not lent that man  
the money he wanted last spring, I should  
fear this bitterness was attributable to me.)  
Luitolfo is dead then, one may conclude?

*3rd Bys.* Why, he had a house here, and  
a woman to whom he was affianced; and  
as they both pass naturally to the new Pro-  
vost, his friend and heir . . .

*Luit.* Ah, I suspected you of imposing  
on me with your pleasantry! I know  
Chiappino better.

*1st Bys.* (Our friend has the bile! After  
all, I do not dislike finding somebody vary  
a little this general gape of admiration at  
Chiappino's glorious qualities.) Pray, how  
much may you know of what has taken  
place in Faenza since that memorable  
night?

*Luit.* It is most to the purpose, that I  
know Chiappino to have been by pro-  
fession a hater of that very office of Pro-  
vost, you now charge him with proposing  
to accept.

*1st Bys.* Sir, I'll tell you. That night was  
indeed memorable. Up we rose, a mass  
of us, men, women, children; out fled the  
guards with the body of the tyrant; we were  
to defy the world: but, next grey morning,  
'What will Rome say?' began everybody.

You know we are governed by Ravenna, which is governed by Rome. And quietly into the town, by the Ravenna road, comes on muleback a portly personage, Ogniben by name, with the quality of Pontifical Legate; trots briskly through the streets humming a '*Cur fremuere gentes*,' and makes directly for the Provost's Palace—there it faces you. 'One Messer Chiappino is your leader? I have known three-and-twenty leaders of revolts!' (laughing gently to himself)—'Give me the help of your arm from my mule to yonder steps under the pillar—So! And now, my revolters and good friends, what do you want? The guards burst into Ravenna last night bearing your wounded Provost; and, having had a little talk with him, I take on myself to come and try appease the disorderliness, before Rome, hearing of it, resort to another method: 'tis I come, and not another, from a certain love I confess to, of composing differences. So, do you understand, you are about to experience' this unheard-of tyranny from me, that there shall be no heading nor hanging, no confiscation nor exile: I insist on your simply pleasing yourselves. And now, pray, what does please you? To live without any government at all? Or having decided for one, to see its minister murdered by the first of your body that chooses to find himself wronged, or disposed for reverting to first principles and a justice anterior to all institutions,—and so will you carry matters, that the rest of the world must at length unite and put down such a den of wild beasts? As for vengeance on what has just taken place,—once for all, the wounded man assures me he cannot conjecture who struck him; and this so earnestly, that one may be sure he knows perfectly well what intimate acquaintance could find admission to speak with him late last evening. I come not for vengeance therefore, but from pure curiosity to hear what you will do next.' And thus he ran on, on, easily and volubly, till he seemed to arrive quite naturally at the praise of law, order, and paternal government by somebody from rather a distance. All our citizens were in the snare, and about to be friends with so congenial an adviser; but that Chiappino suddenly stood forth, spoke out indignantly, and set things right again.

*Luit.* Do you see? I recognize him there!

*3rd Bys.* Ay but, mark you, at the end of Chiappino's longest period in praise of a pure republic,—'And by whom do I desire such a government should be administered, perhaps, but by one like yourself?'—returns the Legate: thereupon speaking for a quarter of an hour together,

on the natural and only legitimate government by the best and wisest. And it should seem there was soon discovered to be no such vast discrepancy at bottom between this and Chiappino's theory, place but each in its proper light. 'Oh, are you there?' quoth Chiappino: 'Ay, in that, I agree,' returns Chiappino: and so on.

*Luit.* But did Chiappino cede at once to this?

*1st Bys.* Why, not altogether at once. For instance, he said that the difference between him and all his fellows was, that they seemed all wishing to be kings in one or another way,—'whereas what right,' asked he, 'has any man to wish to be superior to another?'—whereat, 'Ah, sir,' answers the Legate, 'this is the death of me, so often as I expect something is really going to be revealed to us by you clearer-seers, deeper-thinkers—this—that your right-hand (to speak by a figure) should be found taking up the weapon it displayed so ostentatiously, not to destroy any dragon in our path, as was prophesied, but simply to cut off its own fellow left-hand: yourself set about attacking yourself. For see now! Here are you who, I make sure, glory exceedingly in knowing the noble nature of the soul, its divine impulses, and so forth; and with such a knowledge you stand, as it were, armed to encounter the natural doubts and fears as to that same inherent nobility, which are apt to waylay us, the weaker ones, in the road of life. And when we look eagerly to see them fall before you, lo, round you wheel, only the left-hand gets the blow; one proof of the soul's nobility destroys simply another proof, quite as good, of the same, for you are found delivering an opinion like this! Why, what is this perpetual yearning to exceed, to subdue, to be better than, and a king over, one's fellows,—all that you so disclaim,—but the very tendency yourself are most proud of, and under another form, would oppose to it,—only in a lower stage of manifestation? You don't want to be vulgarly superior to your fellows after their poor fashion—to have me hold solemnly up your gown's tail, or hand you an express of the last importance from the Pope, with all these bystanders noticing how unconcerned you look the while: but neither does our gaping friend, the burges yonder, want the other kind of kingship, that consists in understanding better than his fellows this and similar points of human nature, nor to roll under his tongue this 'sweeter morsel still,—the feeling that, through immense philosophy, he does *not* feel, he rather thinks, above you and me!' And so chatting, they glided off arm-in-arm.

## A SOUL'S TRAGEDY

[ACT II

*Luit.* And the result is . . .

*1st Bys.* Why that, a month having gone by, the indomitable Chiappino, marrying as he will Luitolfo's love—at all events succeeding to Luitolfo's wealth—becomes the first inhabitant of Faenza, and a proper aspirant to the Provostship; which we assemble here to see conferred on him this morning. The Legate's Guard to clear the way! He will follow presently.

*Luit.* [withdrawing a little]. I understand the drift of Eulalia's communications less than ever. Yet she surely said, in so many words, that Chiappino was in urgent danger: wherefore, disregarding her injunction to continue in my retreat and await the result of—what she called, some experiment yet in process—I hastened here without her leave or knowledge: how could I else? But if this they say be true—if it were for such a purpose, she and Chiappino kept me away . . . Oh, no, no! I must confront him and her before I believe this of them. And at the word, see!

*Enter CHIAPPINO and EULALIA.*

*Eu.* We part here, then? The change in your principles would seem to be complete.

*Ch.* Now, why refuse to see that in my present course I change no principles, only re-adapt them and more adroitly? I had despaired of, what you may call the material instrumentality of life; of ever being able to rightly operate on mankind through such a deranged machinery as the existing modes of government: but now, if I suddenly discover how to inform these perverted institutions with fresh purpose, bring the functionary limbs once more into immediate communication with, and subjection to, the soul I am about to bestow on them—do you see? Why should one desire to invent, as long as it remains possible to renew and transform? When all further hope of the old organization shall be extinct, then, I grant you, it may be time to try and create another.

*Eu.* And there being discoverable some hope yet in the hitherto much-abused old system of absolute government by a Provost here, you mean to take your time about endeavouring to realize those visions of a perfect State, we once heard of?

*Ch.* Say, I would fain realize my conception of a palace, for instance, and that there is, abstractedly, but a single way of erecting one perfectly. Here, in the market-place is my allotted building-ground; here I stand without a stone to lay, or a labourer to help me,—stand, too, during a short day of life, close on which the night comes. On the other hand, circumstances suddenly offer me (turn and see it!) the old

Provost's house to experiment upon—ruinous, if you please, wrongly constructed at the beginning, and ready to tumble now. But materials abound, a crowd of workmen offer their services; here, exists yet a Hall of Audience of originally noble proportions, there a Guest-chamber of symmetrical design enough: and I may restore, enlarge, abolish or unite these to heart's content. Ought I not make the best of such an opportunity, rather than continue to gaze disconsolately with folded arms on the flat pavement here, while the sun goes slowly down, never to rise again? Since you cannot understand this nor me, it is better we should part as you desire.

*Eu.* So, the love breaks away too!

*Ch.* No, rather my soul's capacity for love widens—needs more than one object to content it,—and, being better instructed, will not persist in seeing all the component parts of love in what is only a single part,—nor in finding that so many and so various loves are all united in the love of a woman,—manifest uses in one instrument, as the savage has his sword, staff, sceptre and idol, all in one club-stick. Love is a very compound thing. The intellectual part of my love I shall give to men, the mighty dead or the illustrious living; and determine to call a mere sensual instinct by as few fine names as possible. What do I lose?

*Eu.* Nay, I only think, what do I lose? and, one more word—which shall complete my instruction—does friendship go too? What of Luitolfo, the author of your present prosperity?

*Ch.* How the author?

*Eu.* That blow now called yours . . .

*Ch.* Struck without principle or purpose, as by a blind natural operation: yet to which all my thought and life directly and advisedly tended. I would have struck it, and could not: he would have done his utmost to avoid striking it, yet did so. I dispute his right to that deed of mine—a final action with him, from the first effect of which he fled away,—a mere first step with me, on which I base a whole mighty superstructure of good to follow. Could he get good from it?

*Eu.* So we profess, so we perform!

*Enter OGNIBEN. EULALIA stands apart.*

*Ogni.* I have seen three-and-twenty leaders of revolts. By your leave, sir! Perform? What does the lady say of performing?

*Ch.* Only the trite saying, that we must not trust profession, only performance.

*Ogni.* She'll not say that, sir, when she knows you longer; you'll instruct her better. Ever judge of men by their pro-

fessions! For though the bright moment of promising is but a moment and cannot be prolonged, yet, if sincere in its moment's extravagant goodness, 'why, trust it and know the man by it, I say—not by his performance; which is half the world's work, interfere as the world needs must, with its accidents and circumstances: the profession was purely the man's own. I judge people by what they might be,—not are, nor will be.

*Ch.* But have there not been found, too, performing natures, not merely promising?

*Ogni.* Plenty. Little Bindo of our town, for instance, promised his friend, great ugly Masaccio, once, 'I will repay you!'—for a favour done him. So, when his father came to die, and Bindo succeeded to the inheritance, he sends straightway for Masaccio and shares all with him—gives him half the land, half the money, half the kegs of wine in the cellar. 'Good,' say you: and it is good. But had little Bindo found himself possessor of all this wealth some five years before—on the happy night when Masaccio procured him that interview in the garden with his pretty cousin Lisa—instead of being the beggar he then was,—I am bound to believe that in the warm moment of promise he would have given away all the wine-kegs and all the money and all the land, and only reserved to himself some hut on a hill-top hard by, whence he might spend his life in looking and seeing his friend enjoy himself: he meant fully that much, but the world interfered.—To our business! Did I understand you just now within-doors? You are not going to marry your old friend's love, after all?

*Ch.* I must have a woman that can sympathize with, and appreciate me, I told you.

*Ogni.* Oh, I remember! you, the greater nature, needs must have a lesser one (—avowedly lesser—contest with you on that score would never do)—such a nature must comprehend you, as the phrase is, accompany and testify of your greatness from point to point onward. Why, that were being not merely as great as yourself, but greater considerably! Meantime, might not the more bounded nature as reasonably count on your appreciation of it, rather?—on your keeping close by it, so far as you both go together, and then going on by yourself as far as you please? Thus God serves us.

*Ch.* And yet a woman that could understand the whole of me, to whom I could reveal alike the strength and the weakness—

*Ogni.* Ah, my friend, wish for nothing

so foolish! Worship your love, give her the best of you to see; be to her like the western lands (they bring us such strange news of) to the Spanish Court; send her only your lumps of gold, fans of feathers, your spirit-like birds, and fruits and gems! So shall you, what is unseen of you, be supposed altogether a paradise by her,—as these western lands by Spain: though I warrant there is filth, red baboons, ugly reptiles and squalor enough, which they bring Spain as few samples of as possible. Do you want your mistress to respect your body generally? Offer her your mouth to kiss: don't strip off your boot and put your foot to her lips! You understand my humour by this time? I help men to carry out their own principles: if they please to say two and two make five, I assent, so they will but go on and say, four and four make ten.

*Ch.* But these are my private affairs; what I desire you to occupy yourself about, is my public appearance presently: for when the people hear that I am appointed Provost, though you and I may thoroughly discern—and easily, too—the right principle at bottom of such a movement, and how my republicanism remains thoroughly unaltered, only takes a form of expression hitherto commonly judged (and heretofore by myself) incompatible with its existence,—when thus I reconcile myself to an old form of government instead of proposing a new one . . .

*Ogni.* Why, you must deal with people broadly. Begin at a distance from this matter and say,—New truths, old truths! sirs, there is nothing new possible to be revealed to us in the moral world; we know all we shall ever know: and it is for simply reminding us, by 'heir various respective expedients, how we do know this and the other matter, that men get called prophets, poets and the like. A philosopher's life is spent in discovering that, of the half-dozen truths he knew when a child, such an one is a lie, as the world states it in set terms; and then, after a weary lapse of years, and plenty of hard-thinking, it becomes a truth again after all, as he happens to newly consider it and view it in a different relation with the others: and so he restates it, to the confusion of somebody else in good time. As for adding to the original stock of truths,—impossible! Thus, you see the expression of them is the grand business:—you have got a truth in your head about the right way of governing people, and you took a mode of expressing it which now you confess to be imperfect. But what then? There is truth in falsehood, falsehood in truth. No man ever told one great truth, that I know, without the help of a



good dozen of lies at least, generally unconscious ones. And as when a child comes in breathlessly and relates a strange story, you try to conjecture from the very falsities in it, what the reality was,—do not conclude that he saw nothing in the sky, because he assuredly did not see a flying horse there as he says,—so, through the contradictory expression, do you see, men should look painfully for, and trust to arrive eventually at, what you call the true principle at bottom. Ah, what an answer is there! to what will it not prove applicable?—‘Contradictions? Of course there were,’ say you!

*Ch.* Still, the world at large may call it inconsistency, and what shall I urge in reply?

*Ogni.* Why, look you, when they tax you with tergiversation or duplicity, you may answer—you begin to perceive that, when all’s done and said, both great parties in the State, the advocates of change in the present system of things, and the opponents of it, patriot and anti-patriot, are found working together for the common good; and that in the midst of their efforts for and against its progress, the world somehow or other still advances: to which result they contribute in equal proportions, those who spend their life in pushing it onward, as those who give theirs to the business of pulling it back. Now, if you found the world stand still between the opposite forces, and were glad, I should conceive you: but it steadily advances, you rejoice to see! By the side of such a rejoicer, the man who only winks as he keeps cunning and quiet, and says, ‘Let yonder hot-headed fellow fight out my battle! I, for one, shall win in the end by the blows he gives, and which I ought to be giving’—even he seems graceful in his avowal, when one considers that he might say, ‘I shall win quite as much by the blows our antagonist gives him, blows from which he saves me—I thank the antagonist equally!’ Moreover, you may enlarge on the loss of the edge of party-animosity with age and experience. . . .

*Ch.* And naturally time must wear off such asperities: the bitterest adversaries get to discover certain points of similarity between each other, common sympathies—do they not?

*Ogni.* Ay, had the young David but sat first to dine on his cheeses with the Philistine, he had soon discovered an abundance of such common sympathies. He of Gath, it is recorded, was born of a father and mother, had brothers and sisters like another man,—they, no more than the sons of Jesse, were used to eat each other. But, for the sake of one broad antipathy

that had existed from the beginning, David slung the stone, cut off the giant’s head, made a spoil of it, and after ate his cheeses alone, with the better appetite, for all I can learn. My friend, as you, with a quickened eye-sight, go on discovering much good on the worse side, remember that the same process should proportionately magnify and demonstrate to you the much more good on the better side! And when I profess no sympathy for the Goliaths of our time, and you object that a large nature should sympathize with every form of intelligence, and see the good in it, however limited—I answer, ‘So I do; but preserve the proportions of my sympathy, however finelier or widelier I may extend its action.’ I desire to be able, with a quickened eye-sight, to descry beauty in corruption where others see foulness only: but I hope I shall also continue to see a redoubled beauty in the higher forms of matter, where already everybody sees no foulness at all. I must retain, too, my old power of selection, and choice of appropriation, to apply to such new gifts; else they only dazzle instead of enlightening me. God has his archangels and consorts with them: though he made too, and intimately sees what is good in, the worm. Observe, I speak only as you profess to think and, so, ought to speak: I do justice to your own principles, that is all.

*Ch.* But you very well know that the two parties do, on occasion, assume each other’s characteristics. What more disgusting, for instance, than to see how promptly the newly emancipated slave will adopt, in his own favour, the very measures of precaution, which pressed sorest on himself as institutions of the tyranny he has just escaped from? Do the classes, hitherto without opinion, get leave to express it? there follows a confederacy immediately, from which—exercise your individual right and dissent, and woe be to you!

*Ogni.* And a journey over the sea to you! That is the generous way. Cry—‘Emancipated slaves, the first excess, and off I go!’ The first time a poor devil, who has been bastinadoed steadily his whole life long, finds himself let alone and able to legislate, so, begins pettishly, while he rubs his soles, ‘Woe-be to whoever brings anything in the shape of a stick this way!’—you, rather than give up the very innocent pleasure of carrying one to switch flies with,—you go away, to everybody’s sorrow. Yet you were quite reconciled to staying at home while the governors used to pass, every now and then, some such edict as ‘Let no man indulge in owning a stick which is not thick enough to chastise

our slaves, if need require!' Well, there are pre-ordained hierarchies among us, and a profane vulgar subjected to a different law altogether; yet I am rather sorry you should see it so clearly: for, do you know what is to—all but save you at the Day of Judgment, all you men of genius? It is this: that, while you generally began by pulling down God, and went on to the end of your life, in one effort at setting up your own genius in his place,—still, the last, bitterest concession wrung with the utmost unwillingness from the experience of the very loftiest of you, was invariably—would one think it?—that the rest of mankind, down to the lowest of the mass, stood not, nor ever could stand, just on a level and equality with yourselves. That will be a point in the favour of all such, I hope and believe.

*Ch.* Why, men of genius are usually charged, I think, with doing just the reverse; and at once acknowledging the natural inequality of mankind, by themselves participating in the universal craving after, and deference to, the civil distinctions which represent it. You wonder they pay such undue respect to titles and badges of superior rank.

*Ogni.* Not I (always on your own ground and showing, be it noted!) Who doubts that, with a weapon to brandish, a man is the more formidable? Titles and badges are exercised as such a weapon, to which you and I look up wistfully. We could pin lions with it moreover, while in its present owner's hands it hardly prods rats. Nay, better than a mere weapon of easy mastery and obvious use, it is a mysterious divining rod that may serve us in undreamed-of ways. Beauty, strength, intellect—men often have none of these, and yet conceive pretty accurately what kind of advantages they would bestow on the possessor. We know at least what it is we make up our mind to forego, and so can apply the fittest substitute in our power. Wanting beauty, we cultivate good humour; missing wit, we get riches; but the mystic unimaginable operation of that gold collar and string of Latin names which suddenly turned poor stupid little peevish Cecco of our town into natural lord of the best of us—a Duke, he is now—there indeed is a virtue to be revered!

*Ch.* Ay, by the vulgar: not by Messere Stiatto the poet, who pays more assiduous court to him than anybody.

*Ogni.* What else should Stiatto pay court to? He has talent, not honour and riches: men naturally covet what they have not.

*Ch.* No, or Cecco would covet talent, which he has not, whereas he covets more riches, of which he has plenty, already.

*Ogni.* Because a purse added to a purse makes the holder twice as rich: but just such another talent as Stiatto's, added to what he now possesses, what would that profit him? Give the talent a purse indeed, to do something with! But lo, how we keep the good people waiting! I only desired to do justice to the noble sentiments which animate you, and which you are too modest to duly enforce. Come, to our main business: shall we ascend the steps? I am going to propose you for Provost to the people; they know your antecedents, and will accept you with a joyful unanimity: whereon I confirm their choice. Rouse up! Are you nerving yourself to an effort? Beware the disaster of Messere Stiatto we were talking of! who, determining to keep an equal mind and constant face on whatever might be the fortune of his last new poem with our townsmen, heard too plainly 'hiss, hiss, hiss,' increase every moment. Till at last the man fell senseless: not perceiving that the portentous sounds had all the while been issuing from between his own nobly clenched teeth, and nostrils narrowed by resolve.

*Ch.* Do you begin to throw off the mask?—to jest with me, having got me effectually into your trap?

*Ogni.* Where is the trap, my friend? You hear what I engage to do, for my part you, for yours, have only to fulfil your promise made just now within doors, of professing unlimited obedience to Rome's authority in my person. And I shall authorize no more than the simple re-establishment of the Provostship and the conferment of its privileges upon yourself: the only novel stipulation being a birth of the peculiar circumstances of the time.

*Ch.* And that stipulation?

*Ogni.* Just the obvious one—that in the event of the discovery of the actual assailant of the late Provost . . .

*Ch.* Ha!

*Ogni.* Why, he shall suffer the proper penalty, of course; what did you expect?

*Ch.* Who heard of this?

*Ogni.* Rather, who needed to hear of this?

*Ch.* Can it be, the popular rumour never reached you . . .

*Ogni.* Many more such rumours reach me, friend, than I choose to receive; those which wait longest have best chance. Has the present one sufficiently waited? Now is its time or entry with effect. See the good people crowding about yonder palace-steps—which we may not have to ascend, after all. My good friends! (nay, two or three of you will answer every purpose)—who was it fell upon and proved nearly the death of your late Provost? His

successor desires to hear, that his day of inauguration may be graced by the act of prompt bare justice we all anticipate. Who dealt the blow that night, does anybody know?

*Luit.* [coming forward]. I:

*All.* Luitolfo!

*Luit.* I avow the deed, justify and approve it, and stand forth now, to relieve my friend of an unearned responsibility. Having taken thought, I am grown stronger: I shall shrink from nothing that awaits me. Nay, Chiappino—we are friends still: I dare say there is some proof of your superior nature in this starting aside, strange as it seemed at first. So, they tell me, my horse is of the right stock, because a shadow in the path frightens him into a frenzy, makes him dash my brains out. I understand only the dull mule's way of standing stockishly, plodding soberly, suffering on occasion a blow or two with due patience.

*Eu.* I was determined to justify my choice, Chiappino,—to let Luitolfo's nature vindicate itself. Henceforth we are undivided, whatever be our fortune.

*Ogni.* Now, in these last ten minutes of silence, what have I been doing, deem you? Putting the finishing stroke to a homily of mine, I have long taken thought to perfect, on the text, 'Let whoso thinketh he standeth, take heed lest he fall.' To your house, Luitolfo! Still silent, my patriotic friend? Well, that is a good sign however. And you will go aside for a time? That is better still. I understand: it would be easy for you to die of remorse here on the spot and shock us all, but you mean to live and grow

worthy of coming back to us one day. There, I will tell everybody; and you only do right to believe you must get better as you get older. Ah men do so: they are worst in childhood, improve in manhood, and get ready in old age for another world. Youth, with its beauty and grace, would seem bestowed on us for some such reason as to make us partly endurable till we have time for really becoming so of ourselves, without their aid; when they leave us. The sweetest child we all smile on for his pleasant want of the whole world to break up, or suck in his mouth, seeing no other good in it—would be rudely handled by that world's inhabitants, if he retained those angelic infantine desires when he had grown six feet high, black and bearded. But, little by little, he sees fit to forego claim after claim on the world, puts up with a less and less share of its good as his proper portion; and when the octogenarian asks barely a sup of gruel and a fire of dry sticks, and thanks you as for his full allowance and right in the common good of life,—hoping nobody may murder him,—he who began by asking and expecting the whole of us to bow down in worship to him,—why, I say he is advanced, far onward, very far, nearly out of sight like our friend Chiappino yonder. And now—(ay, good-bye to you! He turns round the north-west gate: going to Lugo again? Good-bye!)—and now give thanks to God, the keys of the Provost's palace to me, and yourselves to profitable meditation at home! I have known *Four-and-twenty* leaders of revolts.

## CHRISTMAS-EVE AND EASTER-DAY

1850

### CHRISTMAS EVE

#### I

Out of the little chapel I burst  
Into the fresh night-air again.  
Five minutes full, I waited first

In the doorway, to escape the rain  
That drove in gusts down the common's  
centre

At the edge of which the chapel stands,  
Before I plucked up heart to enter.

Heaven knows how many sorts of hands  
Reached past me, groping for the latch  
Of the inner door that hung on catch  
More obstinate the more they fumbled,

Till, giving way at last with a scold  
Of the crazy hinge, in squeezed or tumbled  
One sheep more to the rest in fold,

And left me irresolute, standing sentry  
In the sheepfold's lath-and-plaster entry,  
Six feet long by three feet wide,  
Partitioned off from the vast inside—

I blocked up half of it at least.  
No remedy; the rain kept driving.

They eyed me much as some wild beast,  
That congregation, still arriving,  
Some of them by the main road, white  
A long way past me into the night,  
Skirting the common, then diverging;  
Not a few suddenly emerging  
From the common's self thro' the paling-  
gaps,

—They house in the gravel-pits perhaps.  
Where the road stops short with its safe-  
guard border  
Of lamps, as tired of such disorder;—

## CHRISTMAS-EVE AND EASTER-DAY

But the most turned in yet more abruptly  
From a certain squalid knot of alleys,  
Where the town's bad blood once slept  
corruptly,

Which now the little chapel rallies  
And leads into day again,—its priestliness  
Lending itself to hide their beastliness  
So cleverly (thanks in part to the mason),  
And putting so cheery a whitewashed face  
on

Those neophytes too much in lack of it,  
That, where you cross the common as I  
did,

And meet the party thus presided,  
'Mount Zion' with Love-lane at the back  
of it,

They front you as little disconcerted  
As, bound for the hills, her fate averted,  
And her wicked people made to mind  
him,

Lot might have marched with Gomorrah  
behind him.

### II

Well, from the road, the lanes or the com-  
mon,

In came the flock: the fat weary woman,  
Panting and bewildered, down-clapping

Her umbrella with a mighty report,  
Grounded it by me, wry and flapping,  
A wreck of whalebones; then, with a  
snort,

Like a startled horse, at the interloper  
(Who humbly knew himself improper,  
But could not shrink up small enough)

—Round to the door, and in,—the gruff  
Hinge's invariable scold

Making my very blood run cold.  
Prompt in the wake of her, up-pattered  
On broken clogs, the many-tattered  
Little old-faced peaking sister-turned-  
mother

Of the sickly babe she tried to smother  
Somehow up, with its spotted face,  
From the cold, on her breast, the one warm  
place;

She too must stop, wring the poor ends dry  
Of a draggled shawl, and add thereby  
Her tribute to the door-mat, sopping  
Already from my own clothes' dropping,  
Which yet she seemed to grudge I should  
stand on:

Then, stooping down to take off her  
pattens,

She bore them defiantly, in each hand one,  
Planted together before her breast  
And its babe, as good as a lance in rest.

Close on her heels, the dingy satins  
Of a female something, past me flitted,

With lips as much too white, as a streak  
Lay far too red on each hollow cheek;

And it seemed the very door-hinge pitied  
All that was left of a woman once,  
Holding at least its tongue for the nonce.

Then a tall yellow man, like the Penitent  
Thief,

With his jaw bound up in a handkerchief,  
And eyelids screwed together tight,  
Led himself in by some inner light.

And, except from him, from each that  
entered,

I got the same interrogation—

'What, you the alien, you have ventured

'To take with us, the elect, your station?

'A carer for none of it, a Gallio!'

Thus, plain as print, I read the glance  
At a common prey, in each countenance

As of huntsman giving his hounds the  
tallyho.

And, when the door's cry drowned their  
wonder,

The draught, it always sent in shutting,  
Made the flame of the single tallow candle  
In the cracked square lantern I stood  
under,

Shoot its blue lip at me, rebutting

As it were, the luckless cause of scandal:

I verily fancied the zealous light

(In the chapel's secret, too!) for spite

Would shudder itself clean off the wick,

With the airs of a Saint John's Candle-  
stick.'

There was no standing it much longer.

'Good folks,' thought I, as resolve grew  
stronger,

'This way you perform the Grand-In-  
quisitor

'When the weather sends you a chance  
visitor?

'You are the men, and wisdom shall die  
with you,

'And none of the old Seven Churches vie  
with you!

'But still, despite the pretty perfection

'To which you carry your trick of exclu-  
siveness,

'And, taking God's word under wise pro-  
tection,

'Correct its tendency to diffusiveness,  
'And bid one reach it over hot plough-  
shares,—

Still, as I say, though you've found  
salvation,

'If I should choose to cry, as now,  
"Shares!"'

'See if the best of you bars me my ration!

'I prefer, if you please, for my expounder  
'Of the laws of the feast, the feast's own  
Founder;

'Mine's the same right with your poorest  
and sickliest

'Supposing I don the marriage vesti-  
ment:

'So, shut your mouth and open your  
Testament,

'And carve me my portion at your quick-  
liest!'

<sup>1</sup> See Rev. i. 20.

## CHRISTMAS-EVE AND EASTER-DAY

Accordingly, as a shoemaker's lad  
 With wizened face in want of soap,  
 And wet apron wound round his waist  
 like a rope,  
 (After stopping outside, for his cough was  
 bad,  
 To get the fit over, poor gentle creature,  
 And so avoid disturbing the preacher)  
 —Passed in, I sent my elbow spikewise  
 At the shutting door, and entered like-  
 wise,  
 Received the hinge's accustomed greeting,  
 And crossed the threshold's magic  
 pentacle,  
 And found myself in full conventicle,  
 —To wit, in Zion Chapel Meeting,  
 On the Christmas-Eve of 'Forty-nine,  
 Which, calling its flock to their special  
 clover,  
 Found all assembled and one sheep  
 over,  
 Whose lot, as the weather pleased, was  
 mine.

### III

I very soon had enough of it.  
 The hot smell and the human noises,  
 And my neighbour's coat, the greasy cuff  
 of it,  
 Were a pebble-stone that a child's hand  
 poises,  
 Compared with the pig-of-lead-like pres-  
 sure  
 Of the preaching man's immense stupi-  
 dity,  
 As he poured his doctrine forth, full  
 measure,  
 To meet his audience's avidity.  
 You needed not the wit of the Sibyl  
 To guess the cause of it all, in a twink-  
 ling:  
 No sooner our friend had got an inkling  
 Of treasure hid in the Holy Bible,  
 (Whene'er 'twas the thought first struck  
 him,  
 How death, at unawares, might duck him  
 Deeper than the grave, and quench  
 The gin-shop's light in hell's grim drench)  
 Than he handled it so, in fine irreverence,  
 As to hug the book of books to pieces:  
 And, a patchwork of chapters and texts in  
 severance,  
 Not improved by the private dog's-ears  
 and creases,  
 Having clothed his own soul with, he'd  
 fain see equipt yours,—  
 So tossed you again your Holy Scriptures.  
 And you picked them up, in a sense, no  
 doubt:  
 Nay, had but a single face of my neigh-  
 bours  
 Appeared to suspect that the preacher's  
 labours  
 Were help which the world could be saved  
 without,

'Tis odds but I might have borne in quiet  
 A qualm or two at my spiritual diet,  
 Or (who can tell?) perchance even muste-  
 red

Somewhat to urge in behalf of the  
 sermon:

But the flock sat on, divinely flustered,  
 Sniffing, methought, its dew of Hermon  
 With such content in every snuffle,  
 As the devil inside us loves to ruffle.  
 My old fat woman purred with pleasure,  
 And thumb round thumb went twirling  
 faster,

While she, to his periods keeping measure,  
 Maternally devoured the pastor.  
 The man with the handkerchief untied it,  
 Showed us a horrible wen inside it,  
 Gave his eyelids yet another screwing,  
 And rocked himself as the woman was  
 doing.

The shoemaker's lad, discreetly choking,  
 Kept down his cough. 'Twas too pro-  
 voking!

'My gorge rose at the nonsense and stuff  
 of it;

So, saying like Eve when she plucked  
 the apple,

'I wanted a taste, and now there's  
 enough of it,'

I flung out of the little chapel.

### IV

There was a lull in the rain, a lull  
 In the wind too; the moon was risen,  
 And would have shone out pure and full,  
 But for the ramparted cloud-prison,  
 Block on block built up in the West,  
 For what purpose the wind knows best,  
 Who changes his mind continually.  
 And the empty other half of the sky  
 Seemed in its silence as if it knew  
 What, any moment, might look through  
 A chance gap in that fortress massy:—

Through its fissures you got hints  
 Of the flying moon, by the shifting tints,  
 Now, a dull lion-colour, now, brassy  
 Burning to yellow, and whitest yellow,  
 Like furnace-smoke just ere flames bellow,  
 All a-simmer with intense strain  
 To let her through,—then blank again,  
 At the hope of her appearance failing.  
 Just by the chapel, a break in the railing  
 Shows a narrow path directly across;  
 'Tis ever dry walking there, on the moss—  
 Besides, you go gently all the way uphill.

I stooped under and soon felt better:  
 My head grew lighter, my limbs more  
 supple,

As I walked on, glad to have slipt the  
 fetter.

My mind was full of the scene I had left,  
 That placid flock, that pastor vociferant,  
 —How this outside was pure and differ-  
 ent!

## CHRISTMAS-EVE AND EASTER-DAY

The sermon, now—what a mingled weft  
Of good and ill! Were either less,  
Its fellow had coloured the whole distinctly;

But alas for the excellent earnestness,  
And the truths, quite true if stated succinctly,

But as surely false, in their quaint presentment,

However to pastor and flock's contentment!

Say rather, such truths looked false to your eyes,

With his provings and parallels twisted and twined,

Till how could you know them, grown double their size

In the natural fog of the good man's mind,

Like yonder spots of our roadside lamps, Haloed about with the common's damps?

Truth remains true, the fault's in the prover;

The zeal was good, and the aspiration;

And yet, and yet, yet, fifty times over,  
Pharaoh received no demonstration,

By his Baker's dream of Baskets Threë,  
Of the doctrine of the Trinity,—

Although, as our preacher thus embellished it,

Apparently his hearers relished it  
With so unfeigned a gust—who knows if

They did not prefer our friend to Joseph?  
But so it is everywhere, one way with all of them!

These people have really felt, no doubt,  
A something, the motion they style the

Call of them;

And this is their method of bringing about,

By a mechanism of words and tones,  
(So many texts in so many groans)

A sort of reviving and reproducing,  
More or less perfectly, (who can tell?)

The mood itself, which strengthens by using;

And how that happens, I understand well.

A tune was born in my head last week,  
Out of the thump-thump and shriek-shriek

Of the train, as I came by it, up from Manchester;

And when, next week, I take it back again,  
My head will sing to the engine's clack

again,

While it only makes my neighbour's haunches stir,

—Finding no dormant musical sprout  
In him, as in me, to be jolted out.

'Tis the taught already that profits by teaching;

He gets no more from the railway's preaching

Than, from this preacher who does the rail's office, I:

Whom therefore the flock cast a jealous eye on.

Still, why paint over their door 'Mount Zion,'

To which all flesh shall come, saith the prophecy?

But wherefore be harsh on a single case?  
After how many modes, this Christmas-Eve,

Does the self-same weary thing take place?

The same endeavour to make you believe,

And with much the same effect, no more:  
Each method abundantly convincing,

As I say, to those convinced before,  
But scarce to be swallowed without

wincing

By the not-as-yet-convinced. For me,  
I have my own church equally:

And in this church my faith sprang first!  
(I said, as I reached the rising ground,

And the wind began again, with a burst  
Of rain in my face, and a glad rebound

From the heart beneath, as if, God speeding me,

I entered his church-door, nature leading me)

—In youth I looked to these very skies,  
And probing their immensities,

I found God there, his visible power;  
Yet felt in my heart, amid all its sense

Of the power, an equal evidence  
That his love, there too, was the nobler

dower.

For the loving worm within its clod,  
Were diviner than a loveless god

Amid his worlds, I will dare to say.  
You know what I mean: God's all,

man's nought:

But also, God, whose pleasure brought  
Man into being, stands away

As it were a handbreadth off, to give  
Room for the newly-made to live,

And look at him from a place apart,  
And use his gifts of brain and heart,

Given, indeed, but to keep for ever.  
Who speaks of man, then, must not sever

Man's very elements from man,  
Saying, 'But all is God's'—whose plan

Was to create man and then leave him  
Able, his own word saith, to grieve him,

But able to glorify him too,  
As a mere machine could never do,

That prayed or praised, all unaware  
Of its fitness for aught but praise and

prayer,

Made perfect as a thing of course.  
Man, therefore, stands on his own stock

Of love and power as a pin-point rock:  
And, looking to God who ordained

divorce

## CHRISTMAS-EVE AND EASTER-DAY

Of the rock from his boundless continent,  
Sees, in his power made evident,  
Only excess by a million-fold  
O'er the power God gave man in the  
mould.

For, note: man's hand, first formed to  
carry

A few pounds' weight, when taught to  
marry

Its strength with an engine's, lifts a moun-  
tain,

—Advancing in power by one degree;  
And why count steps through eternity?

But love is the ever-springing fountain:  
Man may enlarge or narrow his bed

For the water's play, but the water-head—  
How can he multiply or reduce it?

As easily create it, as cause it to cease;  
He may profit by it, or abuse it,

But 'tis not a thing to bear increase  
As power does: be love less or more

In the heart of man, he keeps it shut  
Or opes it wide, as he pleases, but

Love's sum remains what it was before.  
So, gazing up, in my youth, at love

As seen through power, ever above  
All modes which make it manifest,

My soul brought all to a single test—  
That he, the Eternal First and Last,

Who, in his power, had so surpassed  
All man conceives of what is might,—

Whose wisdom, too, showed infinite,  
—Would prove as infinitely good;

Would never, (my soul understood,)  
With power to work all love desires,

Bestow e'en less than man requires;  
That he who endlessly was teaching,

Above my spirit's utmost reaching,  
What love can do in the leaf or stone,

(So that to master this alone,  
This done in the stone or leaf for me,

I must go on learning endlessly)  
Would never need that I, in turn,

Should point him out defect unheeded,  
And show that God had yet to learn

What the meanest human creature  
needed,

—Not life, to wit, for a few short years,  
Tracking his way through doubts and

fears,  
While the stupid earth on which I stay

Suffers no change, but passive adds  
Its myriad years to myriads,

Though I, he gave it to, decay,  
Seeing death come and choose about me,

And my dearest ones depart without me.  
No: love which, on earth, amid all the

shows of it,  
Has ever been seen the sole good of life

in it,  
The love, ever growing there, spite of

the strife in it,  
Shall arise, made perfect, from death's

repose of it.

And shall behold thee, face to face,  
O God, and in thy light retrace  
How in all I loved here, still wast thou!  
Whom pressing to, then, as I fain would

now,  
I shall find as able to satiate

The love, thy gift, as my spirit's wonder  
Thou art able to quicken and sublimiate,

With this sky of thine, that I now walk  
under,

And glory in thee for, as I gaze  
Thus, thus! Oh, let men keep their ways

Of seeking thee in a narrow shrine—  
Be this my way! And this is mine!

vi

For lo, what think you? suddenly  
The rain and the wind ceased, and the sky

Received at once the full fruition  
Of the moon's consummate apparition.

The black cloud-barricade was riven,  
Ruined beneath her feet, and driven

Deep in the West; while, bare and breath-  
less,

North and South and East lay ready  
For a glorious thing that, dauntless, death-

less,  
Sprang across them and stood steady.

'Twas a moon-rainbow, vast and perfect,  
From heaven to heaven extending, perfect

As the mother-moon's self, full in face.  
It rose, distinctly at the base

With its seven proper colours chorded,  
Which still, in the rising, were compressed,

Until at last they coalesced,  
And supreme the spectral creature

lorded  
In a triumph of whitest white,—

Above which intervened the night.  
But above night too, like only the next,

The second of a wondrous sequence,  
Reaching in rare and rarer frequency,

Till the heaven of heavens were circum-  
flexed,

Another rainbow rose, a mightier,  
Fainter, flushier and flightier,—

Rapture dying along its verge.  
Oh, whose foot shall I see emerge,

Whose, from the straining topmost dark,  
On to the keystone of that arc?

vii

This sight was shown me, there and then,—  
Me, one out of a world of men,

Singled forth, as the chance might hap  
To another if, in a thunderclap

Where I heard noise and you saw flame,  
Some one man knew God called his name.

For me, I think I said, 'Appear!  
'Good were it to be ever here.

'If thou wilt, let me build to thee  
'Service-tabernacles three,

'Where, forever in thy presence,  
'In ecstatic acquiescence,

## CHRISTMAS-EVE AND EASTER-DAY

'Far alike from thriftless learning  
'And ignorance's undiscerning,  
'I may worship and remain!

Thus at the show above me, gazing  
With upturned eyes, I felt my brain  
Glutted with the glory, blazing  
Throughout its whole mass, over and under  
Until at length it burst asunder  
And out of it bodily there streamed,  
The too-much glory, as it seemed,  
Passing from out me to the ground,  
Then palely serpentine round  
Into the dark with mazy error.

### VIII

All at once I looked up with terror.  
He was there.  
He himself with his human air.  
On the narrow pathway, just before.  
I saw the back of him, no more—  
He had left the chapel, then, as I.  
I forgot all about the sky.  
No face: only the sight  
Of a sweepy garment, vast and white,  
With a hem that I could recognize.  
I felt terror, no surprise;  
My mind filled with the cataract,  
At one bound of the mighty fact.  
'I remember, he did say  
'Doubtless that, to this world's end,  
'Where two or three should meet and pray,  
'He would be in the midst, their friend;  
'Certainly he was there with them!  
And my pulses leaped for joy  
Of the golden thought without alloy,  
That I saw his very vesture's hem.  
Then rushed the blood back, cold and  
clear,  
With a fresh enhancing shiver of fear;  
And I hastened, cried out while I pressed  
To the salvation of the vest,  
'But not so, Lord! It cannot be  
'That thou, indeed, art leaving me—  
'Me, that have despised thy friends!  
'Did my heart make no amends?  
'Thou art the love of God—above  
'His power, didst hear me place his love,  
'And that was leaving the world for thee.  
'Therefore thou must not turn from me  
'As I had chosen the other part!  
'Folly and pride o'ercame my heart.  
'Our best is bad, nor bears thy test;  
'Still, it should be our very best.  
'I thought it best that thou, the spirit,  
'Be worshipped in spirit and in truth,  
'And in beauty, as even we require it—  
'Not in the forms burlesque, uncouth,  
'I left but now, as scarcely fitted  
'For thee: I knew not what I pitied.  
'But, all I felt there, right or wrong,  
'What is it to thee, who curest sinning?  
'Am I not weak as thou art strong?  
'I have looked to thee from the begin-  
ning,

'Straight up to thee through all the world  
'Which, like an idle scroll, lay furled  
'To nothingness on either side:  
'And since the time thou wast descried,  
'Spite of the weak heart, so have I  
'Lived ever, and so fain would die,  
'Living and dying, thee before!  
'But, if thou leavest me—'

### IX

Less or more,  
I suppose that I spoke thus.  
When,—have mercy, Lord, on us!  
The whole face turned upon me full.  
And I spread myself beneath it,  
As when the bleacher spreads, to see the  
it  
In the cleansing sun, his wool,—  
Steeps in the flood of noontide whiteness  
Some defiled, discoloured web—  
So lay I, saturate with brightness.  
And when the flood appeared to ebb,  
Lo, I was walking, light and swift,  
With my senses settling fast and steady-  
ing,  
But my body caught up in the whirl and  
drift  
Of the vesture's amplitude, still eddying  
On, just before me, still to be followed,  
As it carried me after with its motion:  
What shall I say?—as a path were hol-  
lowed  
And a man went weltering through the  
ocean,  
Sucked along in the flying wake  
Of the luminous water-snake.  
Darkness and cold were cloven, as through  
I passed, upborne yet walking too.  
And I turned to myself at intervals,—  
'So he said, so it befalls.  
'God who registers the cup  
'Of mere cold water, for his sake  
'To a disciple rendered up,  
'Disdains not his own thirst to slake  
'At the poorest love was ever offered:  
'And because my heart I proffered,  
'With true love trembling at the brim,  
'He suffers me to follow him  
'For ever, my own way,—dispensed  
'From seeking to be influenced  
'By all the less immediate ways  
'That earth, in worships manifold,  
'Adopts to reach, by prayer and praise,  
'The garment's hem, which, lo, I hold!'

### X

And so we crossed the world and stopped.  
For where am I, in city or plain,  
Since I am 'ware of the world again?  
And what is this that rises propped  
With pillars of prodigious girth?  
Is it really on the earth,  
This miraculous Dome of God?  
Has the angel's measuring-rod



## CHRISTMAS-EVE AND EASTER-DAY

Which numbered cubits, gem from gem,  
'Twixt the gates of the New Jerusalem,  
Meted it out,—and what he meted,  
Have the sons of men completed?

—Binding, ever as he bade,  
Columns in the colonnade  
With arms wide open to embrace  
The entry of the human race  
To the breast of . . . what is it, yon building,  
Ablaze in front, all paint and gilding,  
With marble for brick, and stones of price  
For garniture of the edifice?  
Now I see; it is no dream;  
It stands there and it does not seem;  
For ever, in pictures, thus it looks,  
And thus I have read of it in books  
Often in England, leagues away,  
And wondered how these fountains play,  
Growing up eternally  
Each to a musical water-tree,  
Whose blossoms drop, a glittering boon,  
Before my eyes, in the light of the moon,  
To the granite lavers underneath.  
Liar and dreamer in your teeth!  
I, the sinner that speak to you,  
Was in Rome this night, and stood, and  
knew

Both this and more. For see, for see,  
The dark is rent, mine eye is free  
To pierce the crust of the outer wall,  
And I view inside, and all there, all,  
As the swarming hollow of a hive,  
The whole Basilica alive!  
Men in the chancel, body and nave,  
Men on the pillars' architrave,  
Men on the statues, men on the tombs  
With popes and kings in their porphyry  
wombs,  
All famishing in expectation  
Of the main-altar's consummation.  
For see, for see, the rapturous moment  
Approaches, and earth's best endowment  
Blends with heaven's; the taper-fires  
Pant up, the winding brazen spires  
Heave loftier yet the baldachin;  
The incense-gaspings, long kept in,  
Suspire in clouds; the organ blatant  
Holds his breath and grovels latent,  
As if God's hushing finger grazed him,  
(Like Behemoth when he praised him)  
At the silver bell's shrill tinkling,  
Quick cold drops of terror sprinkling  
On the sudden pavement strewed  
With faces of the multitude.  
Earth breaks up, time drops away,  
In flows heaven, with its new day  
Of endless life, when He who trod,  
Very man and very God,  
This earth in weakness, shame and pain,  
Dying the death whose signs remain  
Up yonder on the accursed tree,—  
Shall come again, no more to be  
Of captivity the thrall,  
But the one God, All in all,

King of kings, Lord of lords,  
As His servant John received the words,  
'I died, and live for evermore!'

### XI

Yet I was left outside the door.  
'Why sit I here on the threshold-stone  
'Left till He return, alone  
'Save for the garment's extreme fold  
'Abandoned still to bless my hold?'  
My reason, to my doubt, replied,  
As if a book were opened wide,  
And at a certain page I traced  
Every record undefaced,  
Added by successive years,—  
The harvestings of truth's stray ears  
Singly gleaned, and in one sheaf  
Bound together for belief.  
Yes, I said—that he will go  
And sit with these in turn, I know.  
Their faith's heart beats, though her head  
swims

Too giddily to guide her limbs,  
Disabled by their palsy-stroke  
From propping mine. Though Rome's  
gross yoke  
Drops off, no more to be endured,  
Her teaching is not so obscured  
By errors and perversities,  
That no truth shines athwart the lies  
And he, whose eye detects a spark  
Even where, to man's, the whole seems  
dark,

May well see flame where each beholder  
Acknowledges the embers smoulder.  
But I, a mere man, fear to quit  
The clue God gave me as most fit  
To guide my footsteps through life's maze,  
Because himself discerns all ways  
Open to reach him: I, a man  
Able to mark where faith began  
To swerve aside, till from its summit  
Judgment drops her damning plummet,  
Pronouncing such a fatal space  
Departed from the founder's base:  
He will not bid me enter too,  
But rather sit, as now I do,  
Awaiting his return outside.

—'Twais thus my reason straight replied  
And joyously I turned, and pressed  
The garment's skirt upon my breast,  
Until, afresh its light suffusing me,  
My heart cried—What has been abusing  
me

That I should wait here lonely and coldly  
Instead of rising, entering boldly,  
Baring truth's face, and letting drift  
Her veils of lies as they choose to shift?  
Do these men praise him? I will raise  
My voice up to their point of praise!  
I see the error; but above  
The scope of error, see the love.—  
Oh, love of those first Christian days!  
—Fanned so soon into a blaze,

## CHRISTMAS-EVE AND EASTER-DAY

From the spark preserved by the trampled  
sect,

That the antique sovereign Intellect  
Which then sat ruling in the world,  
Like a change in dreams, was hurled  
From the throne he reigned upon;  
You looked up and he was gone;  
Gone, his glory of the pen!

—Love, with Greece and Rome in ken,  
Bade her scribes abhor the trick  
Of poetry and rhetoric,  
And exult with hearts set free,  
In blessed imbecility  
Scrawled, perchance, on some torn sheet  
Leaving Sallust incomplete.

Gone, his pride of sculptor, painter!  
—Love, while able to acquaint her  
With the thousand statues yet  
Fresh from chisel, pictures wet  
From brush, she saw on every side,  
Chose rather with an infant's pride  
To frame those portents which impart  
Such unction to true Christian Art.  
Gone, music too! The air was stirred  
By happy wings: Terpander's bird  
(That, when the cold came, fled away)  
Would tarry not the wintry day,—

As more-enduring sculpture must,  
Till filthy saints rebuked the gust  
With which they chanced to get a sight  
Of some dear naked Aphrodite  
They glanced a thought above the toes of,  
By breaking zealously her nose off.  
Love, surely, from that music's lingering,  
Might have filched her organ-fingering,  
Nor chosen rather to set prayings  
To hog-grunts, praises to horse-neighings.  
Love was the startling thing, the new:  
Love was the all-sufficient too;  
And seeing that, you see the rest:  
As a babe can find its mother's breast  
As well in darkness as in light,  
Love shut our eyes, and all seemed right.  
True, the world's eyes are open now:  
—Less need for me to disallow

Some few that keep Love's zone un-  
buckled,  
Peevish as ever to be suckled,  
Lulled by the same old baby-prattle  
With intermixture of the rattle,  
When she would have them creep, stand  
steady

Upon their feet, or walk already,  
Not to speak of trying to climb.  
I will be wise another time,  
And not desire a wall between us,

When next I see a church-roof cover  
So many species of one genus,

All with foreheads bearing *lover*  
Written above the earnest eyes of them;

All with breasts that beat for beauty,  
Whether sublimed, to the surprise of  
them,

In noble daring, steadfast duty,

The heroic in passion, or in action,—  
Or, lowered for sense's satisfaction,  
To the mere outside of human creatures,  
Mere perfect form and faultless features.  
What? with all Rome here, whence to levy  
Such contributions to their appetite,  
With women and men in a gorgeous bevy,  
They take, as it were, a padlock, clap it  
tight

On their southern eyes, restrained from  
feeding

On the glories of their ancient reading,  
On the beauties of their modern singing,  
On the wonders of the builder's bringing,  
On the majesties of Art around them,—

And, all these loves, late struggling in-  
cessant,

When faith has at last united and bound  
them,

They offer up to God for a present?  
Why, I will, on the whole, be rather proud  
of it,—

And, only taking the act in reference  
To the other recipients who might have  
allowed it,

I will rejoice that God had the preference.

### XII

So I summed up my new resolves:

Too much love there can never be.

And where the intellect devolves

Its function on love exclusively,

I, a man who possesses both,

Will accept the provision, nothing loth,

—Will feast my love, then depart else-  
where,

That my intellect may find its share.

And ponder, O soul, the while thou de-  
partest,

And see thou applaud the great heart of  
the artist,

Who, examining the capabilities

Of the block of marble he has to fashion

Into a type of thought or passion,—

Not always, using obvious facilities,

Shapes it, as any artist can,

Into a perfect symmetrical man,

Complete from head to foot of the life-size,  
Such as old Adam stood in his wife's  
eyes,—

But, now and then, bravely aspires to con-  
summate

A Colossus by no means so easy to come  
at,

And uses the whole of his block for the  
bust,

Leaving the mind of the public to finish  
it,

Since cut it ruefully short he must:

On the face alone he expends his devotion,  
He rather would mar than resolve to

diminish it,

—Saying, 'Applaud me for this grand  
notion

## CHRISTMAS-EVE AND EASTER-DAY

'Of what a face may be! As for complet-  
ing it  
'In breast and body and limbs, do that,  
you!'

All hail! I fancy how, happily meeting it,  
A trunk and legs would perfect the  
statue,

Could man carve so as to answer volition.  
And how much nobler than petty cavils,  
Were a hope to find, in my spirit-travels,  
Some artist of another ambition,

Who having a block to carve, no bigger,  
Has spent his power on the opposite  
quest,

And believed to begin at the feet was  
best—

For so may I see, ere I die, the whole figure!

### xiii

No sooner said than out in the night!

My heart beat lighter and more light:

And still, as before, I was walking swift,  
With my senses settling fast and steady-  
ing,

But my body caught up in the whirl and  
drift

Of the vesture's amplitude, still eddying

On just before me, still to be followed,

As it carried me after with its motion,  
—What shall I say?—as a path were hol-  
lowed,

And a man went weltering through the  
ocean,

Sucked along in the flying wake

Of the luminous water-snake.

### xiv

Alone! I am left alone once more—

(Save for the garment's extreme fold

Abandoned still to bless my hold)

Alone, beside the entrance-door

Of a sort of temple,—perhaps a college,

—Like nothing I ever saw before

At home in England, to my knowledge.

The tall old quaint irregular town!

It may be... though which, I can't affirm  
...any

Of the famous middle-age towns of  
Germany;

And this flight of stairs where I sit down,

Is it Halle, Weimar, Cassel, Frankfurt

Or Göttingen, I have to thank for't?

It may be Göttingen,—most likely.

Through the open door I catch obliquely  
Glimpses of a lecture-hall;

And not a bad assembly neither,

Ranged decent and symmetrical

On benches, waiting what's to see there;

Which, holding still by the vesture's hem,

I also resolve to see with them,

Cautious this time how I suffer to slip

The chance of joining in fellowship

With any that call themselves his friends;

As these folk do, I have a notion.

But hist—a buzzing and emotion!

All settle themselves, the while ascends

By the creaking rail to the lecture-desk,

Step by step, deliberate

Because of his cranium's over-freight,

Three parts sublime to one grotesque,

If I have proved an accurate guesser,

The hawk-nosed high-cheek-boned Pro-  
fessor.

I felt at once as if there ran

A shoot of love from my heart to the  
man—

That sallow virgin-minded studious

Martyr to mild enthusiasm,

As he uttered a kind of cough-preludious

That woke my sympathetic spasm,

(Beside some spitting that made me sorry)

And stood, surveying his auditory

With a wan pure look, well nigh cele-  
stial,—

Those blue eyes had survived so much!

While, under the foot they could not  
smutch,

Lay all the fleshly and the bestial.

Over he bowed, and arranged his notes,

Till the auditory's clearing of throats

Was done with, died into a silence

And, when each glance was upward  
sent,

Each bearded mouth composed intent,

And a pin might be heard drop half a mile  
hence,—

He pushed back higher his spectacles,

Let the eyes stream out like lamps from  
cells,

And giving his head of hair—a hake

Of undressed tow, for colour and quan-  
tity—

One rapid and impatient shake,

(As our own Young England adjusts a  
jaunty tie

When about to impart, on mature diges-  
tion,

Some thrilling view of the surplice-ques-  
tion)

—The Professor's grave voice, sweet  
though hoarse,

Broke into his Christmas-Eve discourse.

### xv

And he began it by observing

How reason dictated that men

Should rectify the natural swerving,

By a reversion, now and then,

To the well-heads of knowledge, few

And far away, whence rolling grew

The life-stream wide whereat we drink,

Commingled, as we needs must think,

With waters alien to the source;

To do which, aimed this eve's discourse;

Since, where could be a fitter time

For tracing backward to its prime

## CHRISTMAS-EVE AND EASTER-DAY

This Christianity, this lake,  
This reservoir, whereat we slake,  
From one or other bank, our thirst?  
So, he proposed inquiring first  
Into the various sources whence

This Myth of Christ is derivable;  
Demanding from the evidence,  
(Since plainly no such life was liveable)

How these phenomena should class?  
Whether 'twere best opine Christ was,  
Or never was at all, or whether  
He was and was not, both together—  
It matters little for the name,  
So the idea be left the same.

Only, for practical purpose' sake,  
'Twas obviously as well to take  
The popular story,—understanding

How the ineptitude of the time,  
And the penman's prejudice, expanding

Fact into fable fit for the clime,  
Had, by slow and sure degrees, translated it

Into this myth, this Individuum,—  
Which, when reason had strained and  
abated it

Of foreign matter, left, for residuum,  
A Man!—a right true man, however,  
Whose work was worthy a man's endeavour:

Work, that gave warrant almost sufficient  
To his disciples, for rather believing  
He was just omnipotent and omniscient,  
As it gives to us, for as frankly receiving  
His word, their tradition,—which, though  
it meant

Something entirely different  
From all that those who only heard it,  
In their simplicity thought and averred it,  
Had yet a meaning quite as respectable:  
For, among other doctrines delectable,  
Was he not surely the first to insist on

The natural sovereignty of our race?—  
Here the lecturer came to a pausing-  
place.

And while his cough, like a drouthy piston,  
Tried to dislodge the husk that grew to  
him,

I seized the occasion of bidding adieu to  
him,

The vesture still within my hand.

### XVI

I could interpret its command.  
This time he would not bid me enter  
The exhausted air-bell of the Critic.  
Truth's atmosphere may grow mephitic  
When Papist struggles with Dissenter,  
Impregnating its pristine clarity,

—One, by his daily fare's vulgarity,  
Its gust of broken meat and garlic;

—One, by his soul's too-much presuming  
To turn the frankincense's fuming  
And vapours of the candle starlike

Into the cloud her wings she buoys on.

Each, that thus sets the pure air seething,

May poison it for healthy breathing—

But the Critic leaves no air to poison;

Pumps out with ruthless ingenuity

Atom by atom, and leaves you—vacuity.

Thus much of Christ does he reject?

And what retain? His intellect?

What is it I must reverence duly?

Poor intellect for worship, truly,

Which tells me simply what was told

(If mere morality, bereft

Of the God in Christ, be all that's left)

Elsewhere by voices manifold;

With this advantage, that the stater

Made nowise the important stumble

Of adding, he, the sage and humble,

Was also one with the Creator.

You urge Christ's followers' simplicity:

But how does shifting blame, evade it?

Have wisdom's words no more felicity?

The stumbling-block, his speech—who  
laid it?

How comes it that for one found able

To sift the truth of it from fable,

Millions believe it to the letter?

Christ's goodness, then—does that fare  
better?

Strange goodness, which upon the score

Of being goodness, the mere due

Of man to fellow-man, much more

To God,—should take another view

Of its possessor's privilege,

And bid him rule his race! You pledge

Your fealty to such rule? What, all—

From heavenly John and Attic Paul,

And that brave weather-battered Peter,

Whose stout faith only stood completer

For buffets, sinning to be pardoned,

As, the more his hands hauled nets, they

hardened,—

All, down to you, the man of men,

Professing here at Göttingen,

Compose Christ's flock! They, you and I,

Are sheep of a good man! And why?

The goodness,—how did he acquire it?

Was it self-gained, did God inspire it?

Choose which; then tell me, on what  
ground

Should its possessor dare propound

His claim to rise o'er us an inch?

Were goodness all some man's inven-  
tion,

Who arbitrarily made mention

What we should follow, and whence

flinch,—

What qualities might take the style

Of right and wrong,—and had such  
guessing

Met with as general acquiescing

As graced the alphabet erewhile,

When A got leave an Ox to be,

No Camel (quoth the Jews) like G,<sup>1</sup>—

<sup>1</sup> Gimel, the Hebrew G, means camel.

## CHRISTMAS-EVE AND EASTER-DAY

For thus inventing thing and title  
 Worship were that man's fit requital.  
 But if the common conscience must  
 Be ultimately judge, adjust  
 Its apt name to each quality  
 Already known,—I would decree  
 Worship for such mere demonstration  
 And simple work of nomenclature,  
 Only the day I praised, not nature,  
 But Harvey, for the circulation.  
 I would praise such a Christ, with pride  
 And joy, that he, as none beside,  
 Had taught us how to keep the mind  
 God gave him, as God gave his kind,  
 Freer than they from fleshly taint:  
 I would call such a Christ our Saint,  
 As I declare our Poet, him  
 Whose insight makes all others dim:  
 A thousand poets pried at life,  
 And only one amid the strife  
 Rose to be Shakespeare: each shall take  
 His crown, I'd say, for the world's sake—  
 Though some objected—'Had we seen  
 'The heart and head of each, what screen  
 'Was broken there to give them light,  
 'While in ourselves it shuts the sight,  
 'We should no more admire, perchance,  
 'That these found truth out at a glance,  
 'Than marvel how the bat discerns  
 'Some pitch-dark cavern's fifty turns,  
 'Led by a finer tact, a gift  
 'He boasts, which other birds must shift  
 'Without, and grope as best they can.'  
 No, freely I would praise the man,—  
 Nor one whit more, if he contended  
 That gift of his, from God descended.  
 Ah friend, what gift of man's does not?  
 No nearer something, by a jot,  
 Rise an infinity of nothings  
 Than one: take Euclid for your teacher:  
 Distinguish kinds: do crownings, cloth-  
 ings,  
 Make that creator which was creature?  
 Multiply gifts upon man's head,  
 And what, when all's done, shall be said  
 But—the more gifted he, I ween!  
 That one's made Christ, this other,  
 Pilate,  
 And this might be all that has been,—  
 So what is there to frown or smile at?  
 What is left for us, save, in growth  
 Of soul, to rise up, far past both,  
 From the gift looking to the giver,  
 And from the cistern to the river,  
 And from the finite to infinity,  
 And from man's dust to God's divinity?

### xvii

Take all in a word: the truth in God's  
 breast  
 Lies trace for trace upon ours impressed:  
 Though he is so bright and we so dim,  
 We are made in his image to witness him:

And were no eye in us to tell,  
 Instructed by no inner sense,  
 The light of heaven from the dark of hell,  
 That light would want its evidence,—  
 Though justice, good and truth were still  
 Divine, if, by some demon's will,  
 Hatred and wrong had been proclaimed  
 Law through the worlds, and right mis-  
 named.

No mere exposition of morality  
 Made or in part or in totality,  
 Should win you to give it worship, there-  
 fore:

And, if no better proof you will care for,  
 —Whom do you count the worst man  
 upon earth?

Be sure, he knows, in his conscience,  
 more

Of what right is, than arrives at birth  
 In the best man's acts that we bow  
 before:

This last knows better—true, but my fact  
 is,

'Tis one thing to know, and another to  
 practise.

And thence I conclude that the real God-  
 function

Is to furnish a motive and injunction  
 For practising what we know already.

And such an injunction and such a motive  
 As the God in Christ, do you waive, and

'heady,

'High-minded,' hang your tablet-votive  
 Outside the fane on a finger-post?

Morality to the uttermost,  
 Supreme in Christ as we all confess,

Why need we prove would avail no jot  
 To make him God, if God he were not?

What is the point where himself lays  
 stress?

Does the precept run 'Believe in good,  
 'In justice, truth, now understood

'For the first time?'—or, 'Believe in me,  
 'Who lived and died, yet essentially

'Am Lord of Life?' Whoever can take  
 The same to his heart and for mere love's

sake

Conceive of the love,—that man obtains  
 A new truth; no conviction gains

Of an old one only, made intense  
 By a fresh appeal to his faded sense.

### xviii

Can it be that he stays inside?

Is the vesture left me to commune with?

Could my soul find aught to sing in tune  
 with

Even at this lecture, if she tried?  
 Oh, let me at lowest sympathize

With the lurking drop of blood that lies  
 In the desiccated brain's white roots

Without throb for Christ's attributes,  
 As the lecturer makes his special boast!

If love's dead there, it has left a ghost.

## CHRISTMAS-EVE AND EASTER-DAY

Admire we, how from heart to brain  
(Though to say so strike the doctors dumb)

One instinct rises and falls again,  
Restoring the equilibrium.  
And how when the Critic had done his best,  
And the pearl of price, at reason's test,  
Lay dust and ashes levigable  
On the Professor's lecture-table,—  
When we looked for the inference and  
monition

That our faith, reduced to such condition,  
Be swept forthwith to its natural dust-  
hole,—

He bids us, when we least expect it,  
Take back our faith,—if it be not just  
whole,

Yet a pearl indeed, as his tests affect it,  
Which fact pays damage done reward-  
ingly,

So, prize we our dust and ashes accord-  
ingly!

'Go home and venerate the myth  
'I thus have experimented with—

'This man, continue to adore him  
'Rather than all who went before him,

'And all who ever followed after!'—

Surely for this I may praise you, my  
brother!

Will you take the praise in tears or laughter?  
That's one point gained: can I compass  
another?

Unlearned love was safe from spurning—  
Can't we respect your loveless learning?  
Let us at least give learning honour!

What laurels had we showered upon her,  
Girding her loins up to perturb

Our theory of the Middle Verb;  
Or Turk-like brandishing a scimitar

O'er anapaests in comic-trimeter;  
Or curing the halt and maimed 'Iketides,'

While we lounged on at our indebted ease:  
Instead of which, a tricky demon

Sets her at Titus or Philemon!  
When ignorance wags his ears of leather

And hates God's word, 'tis altogether;  
Nor leaves he his congenial thistles

To go and browse on Paul's Epistles.  
—And you, the audience, who might

ravage  
The world wide, enviably savage,

Nor heed the cry of the retriever,  
More than Herr Heine (before his fever),—

I do not tell a lie so arrant  
As say my passion's wings are furled up,  
And, without plainest heavenly warrant,

I were ready and glad to give the world  
up—

But still, when you rub brow meticulous,  
And ponder the profit of turning holy,

If not for God's, for your own sake  
solely,

—God forbid I should find you ridiculous!

<sup>1</sup> *The Suppliants*, a fragment of a play by Æschylus.

Deduce from this lecture all that eases you,  
Nay, call yourselves, if the calling pleases  
you,

'Christians,'—abhor the deist's pravity,—  
Go on, you shall no more move my gravity  
Than, when I see boys ride a-cockhorse,  
I find it in my heart to embarrass them  
By hinting that their stick's a mock horse,  
And they really carry what they say carries  
them.

### XIX

So sat I talking with my mind.  
I did not long to leave the door

And find a new church, as before,  
But rather was quiet and inclined

To prolong and enjoy the gentle resting  
From further tracking and trying and  
testing.

'This tolerance is a genial mood!'  
(Said I, and a little pause ensued.)

'One trims the bark 'twixt shoal and shelf,  
'And sees, each side, the good effects of

it,  
'A value for religion's self,

'A carelessness about the sects of it.  
'Let me enjoy my own conviction,

'Not watch my neighbour's faith with  
fretfulness,

'Still spying there some dereliction  
'Of truth, perversity, forgetfulness!

'Better a mild indifferentism,  
'Teaching that both our faiths (though

duller  
'His shine through a dull spirit's prism)

'Originally had one colour!  
'Better pursue a pilgrimage

'Through ancient and through modern  
times

'To many peoples, various climes,  
'Where I may see saint, savage, sage

'Fuse their respective creeds in one  
'Before the general Father's throne!'

### XX

—'Twas the horrible storm began afresh!  
The black night caught me in his mesh,

Whirled me up, and flung me prone.  
I was left on the college-step alone.

I looked, and far there, ever fleeting  
Far, far away, the receding gesture,

And looming of the lessening venture!—  
Swept forward from my stupid hand,

While I watched my foolish heart expand  
In the lazy glow of benevolence,

O'er the various modes of man's belief.  
I sprang up with fear's vehemence.

Needs must there be one way, our chief  
Best way of worship: let me strive

To find it, and when found, contrive  
My fellows also take their share!

This constitutes my earthly care:  
God's is above it and distinct.

For I, a man, with men am linked

## CHRISTMAS-EVE AND EASTER-DAY

And not a brute with brutes; no gain  
That I experience, must remain  
Unshared: but should my best endeavour  
To share it, fail—subsisteth ever  
God's care above, and I exult  
That God, by God's own ways occult,  
May—doth, I will believe—bring back  
All wanderers to a single track.  
Meantime, I can but testify  
God's care for me—no more, can I—  
It is but for myself I know;

The world rolls witnessing around me  
Only to leave me as it found me;  
Men cry there, but my ear is slow:  
Their races flourish or decay  
—What boots it, while yon lucid way  
Loaded with stars divides the vault?  
But soon my soul repairs its fault  
When, sharpening sense's hebetude,  
She turns on my own life! So viewed,  
No mere mote's breadth but teems im-  
mense

With witnessings of providence:  
And woe to me if when I look  
Upon that record, the sole book  
Unsealed to me, I take no heed  
Of any warning that I read!  
Have I been sure, this Christmas-Eve,  
God's own hand did the rainbow weave,  
Whereby the truth from heaven slid  
Into my soul?—I cannot bid  
The world admit he stooped to heal  
My soul, as if in a thunder-peal  
Where one heard noise, and one saw flame,  
I only knew he named my name:  
But what is the world to me, for sorrow  
Or joy in its censure, when to-morrow  
It drops the remark, with just-turned head  
Then, on again, 'That man is dead'?  
Yes, but for me—my name called,—drawn  
As a conscript's lot from the lap's black  
yawn,

He has dipt into on a battle-dawn:  
Bid out of life by a nod, a glance,—  
Stumbling, mute-mazed, at nature's  
chance,—

With a rapid finger circled round,  
Fixed to the first poor inch of ground  
To fight from, where his foot was found;  
Whose ear but a minute since lay free  
To the wide camp's buzz and gossipry—  
Summoned, a solitary man  
To end his life where his life began,  
From the safe glad rear, to the dreadful  
van!

Soul of mine, hadst thou caught and held  
By the hem of the vesture!—

xxi

And I caught  
At the flying robe, and unrepelled  
Was lapped again in its folds full-  
fraught

With warmth and wonder and delight,  
God's mercy being infinite.  
For scarce had the words escaped my  
tongue,

When, at a passionate bound, I sprung,  
Out of the wandering world of rain,  
Into the little chapel again.

xxii

How else was I found there, bolt upright  
On my bench, as if I had never left it?  
—Never flung out on the common at night,  
Nor met the storm and wedge-like cleft  
it,

Seen the raree-show of Peter's successor,  
Or the laboratory of the Professor!  
For the Vision, that was true, I wist,  
True as that heaven and earth exist.  
There sat my friend, the yellow and tall,  
With his neck and its wen in the selfsame  
place;

Yet my nearest neighbour's cheek showed  
gall.

'She had slid away a contemptuous  
space:

And the old fat woman, late so placable,  
Eyed me with symptoms, hardly mis-  
takable,

Of her milk of kindness turning rancid.  
In short, a spectator might have fancied  
That I had nodded, betrayed by slumber,  
Yet kept my seat, a warning ghastly,

Through the heads of the sermon, nine  
in number,

And woke up now at the tenth and lastly.  
But again, could such disgrace have hap-  
pened?

Each friend at my elbow had surely  
nudged it;

And, as for the sermon, where did my nap  
end?

Unless I heard it, could I have judged it?  
Could I report as I do at the close,  
First, the preacher speaks through his  
nose:

Second, his gesture is too emphatic:  
Thirdly, to waive what's pedagogic,  
The subject-matter itself lacks logic:  
Fourthly, the English is ungrammatic.  
Great news! the preacher is found no  
Pascal,

Whom, if I pleased, I might to the task call  
Of making square to a finite eye  
The circle of infinity,

And find so all-but-just-succeeding!  
Great news! the sermon proves no reading  
Where bee-like in the flowers I bury me,  
Like Taylor's, the immortal Jeremy!  
And now that I know the very worst of  
him,

What was it I thought to obtain at first of  
him?

Ha! Is God mocked, as he asks?

Shall I take on me to change his tasks,

## CHRISTMAS-EVE AND EASTER-DAY

And dare, despatched to a river-head  
For a simple draught of the element,  
Neglect the thing for which he sent,  
And return with another thing instead?—

Saying, 'Because the water found  
'Welling up from underground,  
'Is mingled with the taints of earth,  
'While thou, I know, dost laugh at dearth,  
'And couldst, at wink or word, convulse  
'The world with the leap of a river-pulse,—  
'Therefore I turned from the ooziings  
muddy,

'And bring thee a chalice I found, instead:

'See the brave veins' in the breccia ruddy!  
'One would suppose that the marble  
bled.

'What matters the water? A hope I have  
nursed:

'The waterless cup will quench my thirst.'  
—Better have knelt at the poorest stream  
That trickles in pain from the straitest  
rift!

For the less or the more is all God's gift,  
Who blocks up or breaks wide the granite-  
seam.

And here, is there water or not, to drink?

I then, in ignorance and weakness,  
Taking God's help, have attained to think  
My heart does best to receive in meek-  
ness

That mode of worship, as most to his mind,  
Where earthly aids being cast behind,  
His All in All appears serene  
With the thinnest human veil between,  
Letting the mystic lamps, the seven,

The many motions of his spirit,  
Pass, as they list, to earth from heaven.

For the preacher's merit or demerit,  
It were to be wished the flaws were fewer

In the earthen vessel, holding treasure  
Which lies as safe in a golden ewer;

But the main thing is, does it hold good  
measure?

Heaven soon sets right all other matters!—

Ask, else, these ruins of humanity,  
This flesh worn out to rags and tatters,

This soul at struggle with insanity,  
Who thence take comfort—can I doubt?—

Which an empire gained, were a loss with-  
out.

May it be mine! And let us hope  
That no worse blessing befall the Pope,

Turned sick at last of to-day's buffoonery,  
Of posturings and petticoatings,

Beside his Bourbon bully's gloatings  
In the bloody orgies of drunk poltroonery!

Nor may the Professor forego its peace  
At Göttingen presently, when, in the  
dusk

Of his life, if his cough, as I fear, should  
increase,

Propheied of by that horrible husk—

When thicker and thicker the darkness fills  
The world through his misty spectacles,  
And he gropes for something more sub-  
stantial

Than a fable, myth or personification,—  
May Christ do for him what no mere man  
shall,

And stand confessed as the God of  
salvation!

Meantime, in the still recurring fear  
Lest myself, at unawares, be found,

While attacking the choice of my neigh-  
bours round,

With none of my own made—I choose  
here!

The giving out of the hymn reclaims me;  
I have done: and if any blames me,

Thinking that merely to touch in brevity  
The topics I dwell on, were unlawful,—

Or worse, that I trench, with undue levity,  
On the bounds of the holy and the  
awful,—

I praise the heart, and pity the head of him,  
'And refer myself to THEE, instead of him,

Who head and heart alike discernest,  
Looking below light speech we utter,

When frothy spume and frequent  
sputter

Prove that the soul's depths boil in earnest!  
May truth shine out, stand ever before us!

I put up pencil and join chorus  
To Hepzibah Tune, without further  
apology,

The last five verses of the third section  
Of the seventeenth hymn of Whitfield's  
Collection,

To conclude with the doxology.

## EASTER-DAY

### I

How very hard it is to be  
A Christian! Hard for you and me,

—Not the mere task of making real  
That duty up to its ideal,

Effecting thus, complete and whole,  
A purpose of the human soul—

For that is always hard to do;  
But hard, I mean, for me and you

To realize it, more or less,  
With even the moderate success

Which commonly repays our strife  
To carry out the aims of life.

'This aim is greater,' you will say,  
'And so more arduous every way.'

—But the importance of their fruits  
Still proves to man, in all pursuits,

Proportional encouragement.  
'Then, what if it be God's intent

'That labour to this one result  
'Should seem unduly difficult?'

Ah, that's a question in the dark—  
And the sole thing that I remark



## CHRISTMAS-EVE AND EASTER-DAY

Upon the difficulty, this;  
We do not see it where it is,  
At the beginning of the race:  
As we proceed, it shifts its place,  
And where we looked for crowns to fall,  
We find the tug's to come,—that's all.

### II

At first you say, 'The whole, or chief  
'Of difficulties, is belief.  
'Could I believe once thoroughly,  
'The rest were simple. What? Am I  
'An idiot, do you think,—a beast?  
'Prove to me, only that the least  
'Command of God is God's indeed,  
'And what injunction shall I need  
'To pay obedience? Death so nigh,  
'When time must end, eternity  
'Begin,—and cannot I compute,  
'Weigh loss and gain together, suit  
'My actions to the balance drawn,  
'And give my body to be sawn  
'Asunder, hacked in pieces, tied  
'To horses, stoned, burned, crucified,  
'Like any martyr of the list?  
'How gladly!—if I make acquit,  
'Through the brief minute's fierce annoy,  
'Of God's eternity of joy.'

### III

—And certainly you name the point  
Whereon all turns: for could you joint  
This flexile finite life once tight  
Into the fixed and infinite,  
You, safe inside, would spurn what's out,  
With carelessness enough, no doubt—  
Would spurn mere life: but when time  
brings  
To their next stage your reasonings,  
Your eyes, late wide, begin to wink  
Nor see the path so well, I think.

### IV

You say, 'Faith may be, one agrees,  
'A touchstone for God's purposes,  
'Even as ourselves conceive of them.  
'Could he acquit us or condemn  
'For holding what no hand can loose,  
'Rejecting when we can't but choose?  
'As well award the victor's wreath  
'To whosoever should take breath  
'Duly each minute while he lived—  
'Grant heaven, because a man contrived  
'To see its sunlight every day  
'He walked forth on the public way.  
'You must mix some uncertainty  
'With faith, if you would have faith be.  
'Why, what but faith, do we abhor  
'And idolize each other for—  
'Faith in our evil or our good,  
'Which is or is not understood  
'Aright by those we love or those  
'We hate, thence called our friends or  
foes?

'Your mistress saw your spirit's grace,  
'When, turning from the ugly face,  
'I found belief in it too hard;  
'And she and I have our reward.  
'—Yet here a doubt peeps: well for us  
'Weak beings, to go using thus  
'A touchstone for our little ends,  
'Trying with faith the foes and friends;  
'—But God, bethink you! I would fain  
'Conceive of the Creator's reign  
'As based upon exacter laws  
'Than creatures build by with applause.  
'In all God's acts—(as Plato cries  
'He doth)—he should geometrize.  
'Whence, I desiderate . . .'

### V

I see!  
You would grow as a natural tree,  
Stand as a rock, soar up like fire.  
The world's so perfect and entire,  
Quite above faith, so right and fit!  
Go there, walk up and down in it!  
No. The creation travails, groans—  
Contrive your music from its moans,  
Without or let or hindrance, friend!  
That's an old story, and its end  
As old—you come back (be sincere)  
With every question you put here  
(Here where there once was, and is still,  
We think, a living oracle,  
Whose answers you stand carping at)  
This time flung back unanswered flat,—  
Beside, perhaps, as many more  
As those that drove you out before,  
Now added, where was little need.  
Questions impossible, indeed,  
To us who sat still, all and each  
Persuaded that our earth had speech,  
Of God's, writ down, no matter if  
In cursive type or hieroglyph,—  
Which one fact freed us from the yoke  
Of guessing why He never spoke.  
You come back in no better plight  
Than when you left us,—am I right?

### VI

So, the old process, I conclude,  
Goes on, the reasoning's pursued  
Further. You own, 'Tis well averred,  
'A scientific faith's absurd,  
'—Frustrates the very end 'twas meant  
'To serve. So, I would rest content  
'With a mere probability,  
'But, probable; the chance must lie  
'Clear on one side,—lie all in rough,  
'So long as there be just enough  
'To pin my faith to, though it hap  
'Only at points: from gap to gap  
'One hangs up a huge curtain so  
'Grandly, nor seeks to have it go  
'Foldless and flat along the wall.  
'What care I if some interval

## CHRISTMAS-EVE AND EASTER-DAY

'Of life less plainly may depend  
 'On God? I'd hang there to the end;  
 'And thus I should not find it hard  
 'To be a Christian and debarred  
 'From trailing on the earth, till furled  
 'Away by death.—Renounce the world!  
 'Were that a mighty hardship? Plan  
 'A pleasant life, and straight some man  
 'Beside you, with, if he thought fit,  
 'Abundant means to compass it,  
 'Shall turn deliberate aside  
 'To try and live as, if you tried  
 'You clearly might, yet most despise.  
 'One friend of mine wears out his eyes,  
 'Slighting the stupid joys of sense,  
 'In patient hope that, ten years hence,  
 'Somewhat completer," he may say,  
 '"My list of *coleoptera*!"  
 'While just the other who most laughs  
 'At him, above all epitaphs  
 'Aspires to have his tomb describe  
 'Himself as sole among the tribe  
 'Of snuff-box-fanciers, who possessed  
 'A Grignon with the Regent's crest.  
 'So that, subduing, as you want,  
 'Whatever stands predominant  
 'Among my earthly appetites  
 'For tastes and smells and sounds and  
   sights,  
 'I shall be doing that alone,  
 'To gain a palm-branch and a throne.  
 'Which fifty people undertake  
 'To do, and gladly, for the sake  
 'Of giving a Semitic guess,  
 'Or playing pawns at blindfold chess.'

### VII

Good: and the next thing is,—look round  
 For evidence enough! 'Tis found,  
 No doubt: as is your sort of mind,  
 So is your sort of search: you'll find  
 What you desire, and that's to be  
 A Christian. What says history?  
 How comforting a point it were  
 To find some mummy-scrap declare  
 There lived a Moses! Better still,  
 Prove Jonah's whale translatable  
 Into some quicksand of the seas,  
 Isle, cavern, rock, or what you please,  
 That faith might flap her wings and crow  
 From such an eminence! Or, no—  
 The human heart's best; you prefer  
 Making that prove the minister  
 To truth; you probe its wants and needs,  
 And hopes and fears, then try what creeds  
 Meet these most aptly,—resolute  
 That faith plucks such substantial fruit  
 Wherever these two correspond,  
 She little needs to look beyond,  
 And puzzle out who Orpheus was,  
 Or Dionysius Zagrias.  
 You'll find sufficient, as I say,  
 To satisfy you either way;

You wanted to believe; your pains  
 Are crowned—you do: and what remains?  
 'Renounce the world!'—Ah, were it done  
 By merely cutting one by one  
 Your limbs off, with your wise head last,  
 How easy were it!—how soon past,  
 If once in the believing mood!  
 'Such is man's usual gratitude,  
 'Such thanks to God do we return,  
 'For not exacting that we spurn  
 'A single gift of life, forego  
 'One real gain,—only taste them so  
 'With gravity and temperance,  
 'That those mild virtues may enhance  
 'Such pleasures, rather than abstract—  
 'Last spice of which, will be the fact  
 'Of love discerned in every gift;  
 'While, when the scene of life shall shift,  
 'And the gay heart be taught to ache,  
 'As sorrows and privations take  
 'The place of joy,—the thing that seems  
 'Mere misery, under human schemes,  
 'Becomes, regarded by the light  
 'Of love, as very near, or quite  
 'As good a gift as joy before.  
 'So plain is it that, all the more  
 'A dispensation's merciful,  
 'More pettishly we try and cull  
 'Briars, thistles, from our private plot,  
 'To mar God's ground where thorns are  
   not!'

### VIII

Do you say this, or I?—Oh, you!  
 Then, what, my friend?—(thus I pursue  
 Our parley)—you indeed opine  
 That the Eternal and Divine  
 Did, eighteen centuries ago,  
 In very truth . . . Enough! you know  
 The all-stupendous tale,—that Birth,  
 That Life, that Death! And all, the earth  
 Shuddered at,—all, the heavens grew  
   black  
 Rather than see; all, nature's rack  
 And throe at dissolution's brink  
 Attested,—all took place, you think,  
 Only to give our joys a zest,  
 And prove our sorrows for the best?  
 We differ, then! Where I, still pale  
 And heartstruck at the dreadful tale,  
 Waiting to hear God's voice declare  
 What horror followed for my share,  
 As implicated in the deed,  
 Apart from other sins,—concede  
 That if He blacked out in a blot  
 • My brief life's pleasantness, 'twere not  
 So very disproportionate!  
 Or there might be another fate—  
 I certainly could understand  
 (If fancies were the thing in hand)  
 How God might save, at that day's price,  
 The impure in their impurities,  
 Give licence formal and complete  
 To choose the fair and pick the sweet.

## CHRISTMAS-EVE AND EASTER-DAY

But there be certain words, broad, plain,  
Uttered again and yet again,  
Hard to mistake or overgloss—  
Announcing this world's gain for loss,  
And bidding us reject the same:  
The whole world lieth (they proclaim)  
In wickedness,—come out of it!  
Turn a deaf ear, if you think fit,  
But I who thrill through every nerve  
At thought of what deaf ears deserve—  
How do you counsel in the case?

### IX

'I'd take, by all means, in your place,  
'The safe side, since it so appears:  
'Deny myself, a few brief years,  
'The natural pleasure, leave the fruit  
'Or cut the plant up by the root.  
'Remember what a martyr said  
'On the rude tablet overhead!  
'"I was born sickly, poor and mean,  
'"A slave: no misery could screen  
'"The holders of the pearl of price  
'"From Cæsar's envy; therefore twice  
'"I fought with beasts, and three times  
saw  
'"My children suffer by his law;  
'"At last my own release was earned:  
'"I was some time in being burned,  
'"But at the close a Hand came through  
'"The fire above my head, and drew  
'"My soul to Christ, whom now I see.  
'"Sergius, a brother, writes for me  
'"This testimony on the wall—  
'"For me, I have forgot it all."  
'You say right; this were not so hard!  
'And since one nowise is debarred  
'From this, why not escape some sins  
'By such a method?'

### X

Then begins

To the old point revulsion new—  
(For 'tis just this I bring you to)  
If after all we should mistake,  
And so renounce life for the sake  
Of death and nothing else? You hear  
Each friend we jeered at, send the jeer  
Back to ourselves with good effect—  
'There were my beetles to collect!  
'My box—a trifle, I confess,  
'But here I hold it, ne'ertheless!  
Poor idiots, (let us pluck up heart  
And answer) we, the better part  
Have chosen, though 'twere only hope,—  
Nor envy moles like you that grope  
Amid your veritable muck,  
More than the grasshoppers would truck,  
For yours, their passionate life away,  
That spends itself in leaps all day  
To reach the sun, you want the eyes  
To see, as they the wings to rise  
And match the noble hearts of them!  
Thus the contemner we condemn,—

And, when doubt strikes us, thus we ward  
Its stroke off, caught upon our guard,  
—Not struck enough to overturn  
Our faith, but shake it—make us learn  
What I began with, and, I wis,  
End, having proved,—how hard it is  
To be a Christian!

### XI

'Proved, or not,  
'How'er you wis, small thanks, I wot,  
'You get of mine, for taking pains  
'To make it hard to me. Who gains  
'By that, I wonder? Here I live  
'In trusting ease; and here you drive  
'At causing me to lose what most  
'Yourself would mourn for had you lost!'

### XII

But, do you see, my friend, that thus  
You leave Saint Paul for Æschylus?  
—Who made his Titan's arch-device  
The giving men *blind hopes* to spice  
The meal of life with, else devoured  
In bitter haste, while lo, death loured  
Before them at the platter's edge!  
If faith should be, as I allege,  
Quite other than a condiment  
To heighten flavours with, or meant  
(Like that brave curry of his Grace)  
To take at need the victuals' place?  
If, having dined, you would digest  
Besides, and turning to your rest  
Should find instead . . .

### XIII

Now, you shall see

And judge if a mere popery  
Pricks on my speaking! I resolve  
To utter—yes, it shall devolve  
On you to hear as solemn, strange  
And dread a thing as in the range  
Of facts,—or fancies, if God will—  
E'er happened to our kind! I still  
Stand in the cloud and, while it wraps  
My face, ought not to speak perhaps;  
Seeing that if I carry through  
My purpose, if my words in you  
Find a live actual listener,  
My story, reason must aver  
False after all—the happy chance!  
While, if each human countenance  
I meet in London day by day,  
Be what I fear,—my warnings fray  
No one, and no one they convert,  
And no one helps me to assert  
'How hard it is to really be  
A Christian, and in vacancy  
I pour this story!

### XIV

I commence  
By trying to inform you, whence  
It comes that every Easter-night  
As now, I sit up, watch, till light,

## CHRISTMAS-EVE AND EASTER-DAY

Upon those chimney-stacks and roofs,  
Give, through my window-pane, grey  
proofs

That Easter-day is breaking slow.  
On such a night three years ago,  
It chanced that I had cause to cross  
The common, where the chapel was,  
Our friend spoke of, the other day—  
You've not forgotten, I dare say.  
I fell to musing of the time  
So close, the blessed matin-prime  
All hearts leap up at, in some guise—  
One could not well do otherwise.  
Insensibly my thoughts were bent  
Toward the main point; I overwent  
Much the same ground of reasoning  
As you and I just now. One thing  
Remained, however—one that tasked  
My soul to answer; and I asked,  
Fairly and frankly, what might be  
That History, that Faith, to me  
—Me there—not me in some domain  
Built up and peopled by my brain,  
Weighing its merits as one weighs  
Mere theories for blame or praise,  
—The kingcraft of the Lucumons,  
Or Fourier's scheme, its pros and cons,—  
But my faith there, or none at all.  
'How were my case, now, did I fall  
'Dead here, this minute—should I lie  
'Faithful or faithless?' Note that I  
Inclined thus ever!—little prone  
For instance, when I lay alone  
In childhood, to go calm to sleep  
And leave a closet where might keep  
His watch perdue some murderer  
Waiting till twelve o'clock to stir,  
As good authentic legends tell:  
'He might: but how improbable!  
'How little likely to deserve  
'The palms and trial to the nerve  
'Of thrusting head into the dark!'—  
Urged my old nurse, and bade me mark  
Beside, that, should the dreadful scout  
Really lie hid there, and leap out  
At first turn of the rusty key,  
Mine were small gain that she could see,  
Killed not in bed but on the floor,  
And losing one night's sleep the more.  
I tell you, I would always burst  
The door ope, know my fate at first.  
This time, indeed, the closet penned  
No such assassin: but a friend  
Rather, peeped out to guard me, fit  
For counsel, Common Sense, to wit,  
Who said a good deal that might pass,—  
Heartening, impartial too, it was,  
Judge else: 'For, soberly now,—who  
'Should be a Christian if not you?'  
(Hear how he smoothed me down.) 'One  
takes  
'A whole life, sees what course it makes  
'Mainly, and not by fits and starts—  
'In spite of stoppage which imparts

'Fresh value to the general speed.  
'A life, with none, would fly indeed:  
'Your progressing is slower—right!  
'We deal with progress and not flight.  
'Through baffling senses passionate,  
'Fancies as restless,—with a freight  
'Of knowledge cumbersome enough  
'To sink your ship when waves grow  
rough,  
'Though meant for ballast in the hold,—  
'I find, 'mid dangers manifold,  
'The good bark answers to the helm  
'Where faith sits, easier to o'erwhelm  
'Than some stout peasant's heavenly  
guide,  
'Whose hard head could not, if it tried,  
'Conceive a doubt, nor understand  
'How senses hornier than his hand  
'Should 'tice the Christian off his guard.  
'More happy! But shall we award  
'Less honour to the hull which, dogged  
'By storms, a mere wreck, waterlogged,  
'Masts by the board, her bulwarks gone  
'And stanchions going, yet bears on,—  
'Than to mere life-boats, built to save,  
'And triumph o'er the breaking wave?  
'Make perfect your good ship as these,  
'And what were her performances!  
'I added—'Would the ship reach home!  
'I wish indeed "God's kingdom come—"  
'The day when I shall see appear  
'His bidding, as my duty, clear  
'From doubt! And it shall dawn, that day,  
'Some future season; Easter may  
'Prove, not impossibly, the time—  
'Yes, that were striking—fates would  
chime  
'So aptly! Easter-morn, to bring  
'The Judgment!—deeper in the spring  
'Than now, however, when there's snow  
'Capping the hills; for earth must show  
'All signs of meaning to pursue  
'Her tasks as she was wont to do  
—The skylark, taken by surprise  
'As we ourselves, shall recognize  
'Sudden the end. For suddenly  
'It comes; the dreadfulness must be  
'In that; all warrants the belief—  
""At night it cometh like a thief."  
'I fancy why the trumpet blows;  
—Plainly, to wake one. From repose  
'We shall start up, at last awake  
'From life, that insane dream we take  
'For waking now, because it seems.  
'And as, when now we wake from dreams,  
'We laugh, while we recall them, "Fool,  
""To let the chance slip, linger cool  
""When such adventure offered! Just  
""A bridge to cross, a dwarf to trust  
""Aside, a wicked mage to stab—  
""And, lo ye, I had kissed Queen  
Mab!"  
'So shall we marvel why we grudged  
'Our labour here, and idly judged

## CHRISTMAS-EVE AND EASTER-DAY

'Of heaven, we might have gained, but lose!

'Lose? Talk of loss, and I refuse

'To plead at all! You speak no worse

'Nor better than my ancient nurse

'When she would tell me in my youth

'I well deserved that shapes uncouth

'Frighted and teased me in my sleep:

'Why could I not in memory keep

'Her precept for the evil's cure?

"Pinch your own arm, boy, and be sure

"You'll wake forthwith!"

### XV

And as I said  
This nonsense, throwing back my head  
With light complacent laugh, I found  
Suddenly all the midnight round  
One fire. The dome of heaven had stood  
As made up of a multitude  
Of handbreadth cloudlets, one vast rack  
Of ripples infinite and black,  
From sky to sky. Sudden there went,  
Like horror and astonishment,  
A fierce vindictive scribble of red  
Quick flame across, as if one said  
(The angry scribe of Judgment) 'There—  
'Burn it!' And straight I was aware  
That the whole ribwork round, minute  
Cloud touching cloud beyond compute,  
Was tinted, each with its own spot  
Of burning at the core, till clot  
Jammed against clot, and spilt its fire  
Over all heaven, which 'gan suspire  
As fanned to measure equable,—  
Just so great conflagrations kill  
Night overhead, and rise and sink,  
Reflected. Now the fire would shrink  
And wither off the blasted face  
Of heaven, and I distinct might trace  
The sharp black ridgy outlines left  
Unburned like network—then, each cleft  
The fire had been sucked back into,  
Regorged, and out it surging flew  
Furiously, and night writhed inflamed,  
Till, tolerating to be tamed  
No longer, certain rays world-wide  
Shot downwardly. On every side  
Caught past escape, the earth was lit;  
As if a dragon's nostril split  
And all his famished ire o'erflowed;  
Then, as he winced at his lord's goad,  
Back he inhaled: whereat I found  
The clouds into vast pillars bound,  
Based on the corners of the earth,  
Propping the skies at top: a dearth  
Of fire i' the violet intervals,  
Leaving exposed the utmost walls  
Of time, about to tumble in  
And end the world.

### XVI

I felt begin  
The Judgment-Day: to retrocede  
Was too late now. 'In very deed,'

(I uttered to myself) 'that Day!'

The intuition burned away

All darkness from my spirit too:

There, stood I, found and fixed, I knew,

Choosing the world. The choice was  
made;

And naked and disguiseless stayed,

And unevadable, the fact.

My brain held all the same compact

Its senses, nor my heart declined

Its office; rather, both combined

To help me in this juncture. I

Lost not a second,—agony

Gave boldness: since my life had end

And my choice with it—best defend,

Applaud both! I resolved to say,

'So was I framed by thee, such way

'I put to use thy senses here!

'It was so beautiful, so near,

'Thy world,—what could I then but  
choose

'My part there? Nor did I refuse

'To look above the transient boon

'Of time; but it was hard so soon

'As in a short life, to give up

'Such beauty: I could put the cup

'Undrained of half its fulness, by;

'But, to renounce it utterly,

'—That was too hard! Nor did the cry

'Which bade renounce it, touch my brain

'Authentically deep and plain

'Enough to make my lips let go.

'But Thou, who knowest all, dost know

'Whether I was not, life's brief while,

'Endeavouring to reconcile

'Those lips (too tardily, alas!)

'To letting the dear remnant pass,

'One day,—some drops of earthly good

'Untasted! Is it for this mood,

'That Thou, whose earth delights so well,

'Hast made its complement a hell?'

### XVII

A final belch of fire like blood,  
Overbroke all heaven in one flood  
Of doom. Then fire was sky, and sky  
Fire, and both, one brief ecstasy,  
Then ashes. But I heard no noise  
(Whatever was) because a voice  
Beside me spoke thus, 'Life is done,  
'Time ends, Eternity's begun,  
'And thou art judged for evermore.'

### XVIII

I looked up; all seemed as before;  
Of that cloud-Tophet overhead  
No trace was left: I saw instead  
The common round me, and the sky  
Above, stretched drear and empty  
Of life. 'Twas the last watch of night,  
Except what brings the morning quite;  
When the armed angel, conscience-clear,  
His task nigh done, leans o'er his spear

## CHRISTMAS-EVE AND EASTER-DAY

And gazes on the earth he guards,  
Safe one night more through all its wards,  
Till God relieve him at his post.

'A dream—a waking dream at most!'  
(I spoke out quick, that I might shake  
The horrid nightmare off, and wake.)  
'The world gone, yet the world is here?  
'Are not all things as they appear?  
'Is Judgment past for me alone?  
'—And where had place the great white  
throne?

'The rising of the quick and dead?  
'Where stood they, small and great? Who  
read

'The sentence from the opened book?'  
So, by degrees, the blood forsook  
My heart, and let it beat afresh;  
I knew I should break through the mesh  
Of horror, and breathe presently:  
When, lo, again, the voice by me!

### XIX

I saw . . . Oh brother, 'mid far sands  
The palm-tree-cinctured city stands,  
Bright-white beneath, as heaven, bright-  
blue,

Leans o'er it, while the years pursue  
Their course, unable to abate  
Its paradisaal laugh at fate!  
One morn,—the Arab staggers blind  
O'er a new tract of death, calcined  
To ashes, silence, nothingness,—  
And strives, with dizzy wits, to guess  
Whence fell the blow. What if, 'twixt skies  
And prostrate earth, he should surprise  
The imaged vapour, head to foot,  
Surveying, motionless and mute,  
Its work, ere, in a whirlwind rapt  
It vanish up again?—So hapt  
My chance. He stood there. Like the  
smoke

Pillared o'er Sodom, when day broke,—  
I saw Him. One magnific pall  
Mantled in massive fold and fall  
His head, and coiled in snaky swathes  
About His feet: night's black, that bathes  
All else, broke, grizzled with despair,  
Against the soul of blackness there.  
A gesture told the mood within—  
That wrapped right hand which based the  
chin,

That intense meditation fixed  
On His procedure,—pity mixed  
With the fulfilment of decree.  
Motionless, thus, He spoke to me,  
Who fell before His feet, a mass,  
No man now.

### XX

'All is come to pass.  
'Such shows are over for each soul  
'They had respect to. In the roll  
'Of Judgment which convinced mankind  
'Of sin, stood many, bold and blind,

'Terror must burn the truth into:  
'Their fate for them!—thou hadst to do  
'With absolute omnipotence,  
'Able its judgments to dispense  
'To the whole race, as every one  
'Were its sole object. Judgment done,  
'God is, thou art,—the rest is hurled  
'To nothingness for thee. This world,  
'This finite life, thou hast preferred,  
'In disbelief of God's plain word,  
'To heaven and to infinity.  
'Here the probation was for thee,  
'To show thy soul the earthly mixed  
'With heavenly, it must choose betwixt.  
'The earthly joys lay palpable,—  
'A taint, in each, distinct as well;  
'The heavenly flitted, faint and rare,  
'Above them, but as truly were  
'Taintless, so, in their nature, best.  
'Thy choice was earth: thou didst attest  
'Twas fitter spirit should subserve  
'The flesh, than flesh refine to nerve  
'Beneath the spirit's play. Advance  
'No claim to their inheritance  
'Who chose the spirit's fugitive  
'Brief gleams, and yearned, "This were to  
live

"Indeed, if rays, completely pure  
"From flesh that dulls them, could en-  
dure,—  
"Not shoot in meteor-light athwart  
"Our earth, to show how cold and swart  
"It lies beneath their fire, but stand  
"As stars do, destined to expand,  
"Prove veritable worlds, our home!"  
"Thou saidst,—“Let spirit star the dome  
"Of sky, that flesh may miss no peak,  
"No nook of earth,—I shall not seek  
"Its service further!" Thou art shut  
"Out of the heaven of spirit; glut  
"Thy sense upon the world: 'tis thine  
"For ever—take it!"

### XXI

'How? Is mine,  
'The world?' (I cried, while my soul broke  
Out in a transport.) 'Hast Thou spoke  
Plainly in that? Earth's exquisite  
'Treasures of wonder and delight,  
'For me?'

### XXII

The austere voice returned,—  
'So soon made happy? Hadst thou  
learned  
'What God accounteth happiness,  
'Thou wouldest not find it hard to guess  
'What hell may be his punishment  
'For those who doubt if God invent  
'Better than they. Let such men rest  
'Content with what they judged the best.  
'Let the unjust usurp at will:  
'The filthy shall be filthy still:  
'Miser, there waits the gold for thee!  
'Hater, indulge thine enmity!

## CHRISTMAS-EVE AND EASTER-DAY

'And thou, whose heaven self-ordained  
'Was, to enjoy earth unrestrained,  
'Do it! Take all the ancient show!  
'The woods shall wave, the rivers flow,  
'And men apparently pursue  
'Their works, as they were wont to do,  
'While living in probation yet.  
'I promise not thou shalt forget  
'The past, now gone to its account;  
'But leave thee with the old amount  
'Of faculties, nor less nor more,  
'Unvisited, as heretofore,  
'By God's free spirit, that makes an end.  
'So, once more, take thy world! Expend  
'Eternity upon its shows,  
'Flung thee as freely as one rose  
'Out of a summer's opulence,  
'Over the Eden-barrier whence  
'Thou art excluded. Knock in vain!'

### XXIII

I sat up. All was still again.  
I breathed free: to my heart, back fled  
The warmth. 'But, all the world!'—I said.  
I stooped and picked a leaf of fern,  
And recollected I might learn  
From books, how many myriad sorts  
Of fern exist, to trust reports,  
Each as distinct and beautiful  
As this, the very first I cull.  
Think, from the first leaf to the last!  
Conceive, then, earth's resources! Vast  
Exhaustless beauty, endless change  
Of wonder! And this foot shall range  
Alps, Andes,—and this eye devour  
The bee-bird and the aloe-flower?

### XXIV

Then the voice, 'Welcome so to rate  
'The arras-folds that variegates  
'The earth, God's antechamber, well!  
'The wise, who waited there, could tell  
'By these, what royalties in store  
'Lay one step past the entrance-door.  
'For whom, was reckoned, not too much,  
'This life's munificence? For such  
'As thou,—a race, whereof scarce one  
'Was able, in a million,  
'To feel that any marvel lay  
'In objects round his feet all day;  
'Scarce one, in many millions more,  
'Willing, if able, to explore  
'The secreter, minuter charm!  
'—Brave souls, a fern-leaf could disarm  
'Of power to cope with God's intent,—  
'Or scared if the south firmament  
'With north-fire did its wings reflexed!  
'All partial beauty was a pledge  
'Of beauty in its plenitude:  
'But since the pledge sufficed thy mood,  
'Retain it! plenitude be theirs  
'Who looked above!'

### XXV

Though sharp despairs  
Shot through me, I held up, bore on.  
'What matter though my trust were gone  
'From natural things? Henceforth my  
part  
'Be less with nature than with art!  
'For art supplants, gives mainly worth  
'To nature; 'tis man stamps the earth—  
'And I will seek his impress, seek  
'The statuary of the Greek,  
'Italy's painting—there my choice  
'Shall fix!'

### XXVI

'Obtain it!' said the voice,  
'—The one form with its single act,  
'Which sculptors laboured to abstract,  
'The one face, painters tried to draw,  
'With its one look, from throngs they saw.  
'And that perfection in their soul,  
'These only hinted at? The whole,  
'They were but parts of? What each laid  
'His claim to glory on?—afraid  
'His fellow-men should give him rank  
'By mere tentatives which he shrink  
'Smitten at heart from, all the more,  
'That gazers pressed in to adore!  
'"Shall I be judged by only these?"  
'If such his soul's capacities,  
'Even while he trod the earth,—think, now,  
'What pomp in Buonarroti's brow,  
'With its new palace-brain where dwells  
'Superb the soul, unweaved by cells  
'That crumbled with the transient clay!  
'What visions will his right hand's sway  
'Still turn to forms, as still they burst  
'Upon him? How will he quench thirst,  
'Titanically infantine,  
'Laid at the breast of the Divine?  
'Does it confound thee,—this first page  
'Emblazoning man's heritage?—  
'Can this alone absorb thy sight,  
'As pages were not infinite,—  
'Like the omnipotence which tasks  
'Itself to furnish all that asks  
'The soul it means to satiate?  
'What was the world, the starry state  
'Of the broad skies,—what, all displays  
'Of power and beauty intermixed,  
'Which now thy soul is chained betwixt,—  
'What else than needful furniture  
'For life's first stage? God's work, be  
sure,  
'No more spreads wasted, than falls scant!  
'He filled, did not exceed, man's want  
'Of beauty in this life. But through  
'Life pierce,—and what has earth to do,  
'Its utmost beauty's appanage,  
'With the requirement of next stage?  
'Did God pronounce earth "very good"?  
'Needs must it be, while understood  
'For man's preparatory state;  
'Nought here to heighten nor abate;

## CHRISTMAS-EVE AND EASTER-DAY

'Transfer the same completeness here,  
'To serve a new state's use,—and drear  
'Deficiency gapes every side!  
'The good, tried once, were bad, retried.  
'See the enwrapping rocky niche,  
'Sufficient for the sleep in which  
'The lizard breathes for ages safe:  
'Split the mould—and as light would  
    chafe  
'The creature's new world-widened sense,  
'Dazzled to death at evidence  
'Of all the sounds and sights that broke  
'Innumerable at the chisel's stroke,—  
'So, in God's eye, the earth's first stuff  
'Was, neither more nor less, enough  
'To house man's soul, man's need fulfil.  
'Man reckoned it immeasurable?  
'So thinks the lizard of his vault!  
'Could God be taken in default,  
'Short of contrivances, by you,—  
'Or reached, ere ready to pursue  
'His progress through eternity?  
'That chambered rock, the lizard's world,  
'Your easy mallet's blow has hurled  
'To nothingness for ever; so,  
'Has God abolished at a blow  
'This world, wherein his saints were  
    pent,—  
'Who, though found grateful and content,  
'With the provision there, as thou,  
'Yet knew he would not disallow  
'Their spirit's hunger, felt as well,—  
'Unsated,—not unsatable,  
'As paradise gives proof. Deride  
'Their choice now, thou who sit'st outside!'

### XXVII

I cried in anguish, 'Mind, the mind,  
'So miserably cast behind,  
'To gain what had been wisely lost!  
'Oh, let me strive to make the most  
'Of the poor stunted soul, I nipped  
'Of budding wings, else now equipped  
'For voyage from summer isle to isle!  
'And though she needs must reconcile  
'Ambition to the life on ground,  
'Still, I can profit by late found  
'But precious knowledge. Mind is best—  
'I will seize mind, forego the rest,  
'And try how far my tethered strength  
'May crawl in this poor breadth and  
    length.  
'Let me, since I can fly no more,  
'At least spin dervish-like about  
'(Till giddy rapture almost doubt  
'I fly) through circling sciences,  
'Philosophies and histories!  
'Should the whirl slacken there, then  
    verse,  
'Fining to music, shall asperse  
'Fresh and fresh fire-dew, till I strain  
'Intoxicate, half-break my chain!

'Not joyless, though more favoured feet  
'Stand calm, where I want wings to beat  
'The floor. At least earth's bond is broke!'

### XXVIII

Then, (sickening even while I spoke)  
'Let me alone! No answer, pray,  
'To this! I know what Thou wilt say!  
'All still is earth's,—to know, as much  
'As feel its truths, which if we touch  
'With sense, or apprehend in soul,  
'What matter? I have reached the goal—  
'"Whereto does knowledge serve!" will  
    burn  
'My eyes, too sure, at every turn!  
'I cannot look back now, nor stake  
'Bliss on the race, for running's sake.  
'The goal's a ruin like the rest!—  
'And so much worse thy latter quest,'  
(Added the voice) 'that even on earth—  
'Whenever, in man's soul, had birth  
'Those intuitions, grasps of guess,  
'Which pull the more into the less,  
'Making the finite comprehend  
'Infinity,—the hard would spend  
'Such praise alone, upon his craft,  
'As, when wind-lyres obey the waft,  
'Goes to the craftsman who arranged  
'The seven strings, changed them and re-  
    changed—  
'Knowing it was the South that harped.  
'He felt his song, in singing, warped;  
'Distinguished his and God's part: whence  
'A world of spirit as of sense  
'Was plain to him, yet not too plain,  
'Which he could traverse, not remain  
'A guest in:—else were permanent  
'Heaven on the earth its gleams were  
    meant  
'To sting with hunger for full light,—  
'Made visible in verse, despite  
'The veiling weakness,—truth by means  
'Of fable, showing while it screens,—  
'Since highest truth, man e'er supplied,  
'Was ever fable on outside.  
'Such gleams made bright the earth an  
    age;  
'Now the whole sun's his heritage!  
'Take up thy world, it is allowed,  
'Thou who hast entered in the cloud!'

### XXIX

Then I—'Behold, my spirit bleeds,  
'Catches no more at broken reeds,—  
'But lilies flower those reeds above:  
'I let the world go, and take love!  
'Love survives in me, albeit those  
'I love be henceforth masks and shows,  
'Not living men and women: still  
'I mind how love repaired all ill,  
'Cured wrong, soothed grief, made earth  
    amends  
'With parents, brothers, children, friends!



## CHRISTMAS-EVE AND EASTER-DAY

'Some semblance of a woman yet  
'With eyes to help me to forget,  
'Shall look on me; and I will match  
'Departed love with love, attach  
'Old memories to new dreams, nor scorn  
'The poorest of the grains of corn  
'I save from shipwreck on this isle,  
'Trusting its barrenness may smile,  
'With happy foodful green one day,  
'More precious for the pains. I pray,—  
'Leave to love, only!'

XXX

At the word,  
The form, I looked to have been stirred  
With pity and approval, rose  
O'er me, as when the headsman throws  
Axe over shoulder to make end—  
I fell prone, letting Him expend  
His wrath, while thus the inflicting voice  
Smote me. 'Is this thy final choice?  
'Love is the best? 'Tis somewhat late!  
'And all thou dost enumerate  
'Of power and beauty in the world,  
'The mightiness of love was curled  
'Inextricably round about.  
'Love lay within it and without,  
'To clasp thee,—but in vain! Thy soul  
'Still shrunk from Him who made the  
whole,  
'Still set deliberate aside  
'His love!—Now take love! Well betide  
'Thy tardy conscience! Haste to take  
'The show of love for the name's sake,  
'Remembering every moment Who,  
'Beside creating thee unto  
'These ends, and these for thee, was said  
'To undergo death in thy stead  
'In flesh like thine: so ran the tale.  
'What doubt in thee could countervail  
'Belief in it? Upon the ground  
"That in the story had been found  
"Too much love! How could God love  
so?"  
'He who in all his works below  
'Adapted to the needs of man,  
'Made love the basis of the plan,—  
'Did love, as was demonstrated:  
'While man, who was so fit instead  
'To hate, as every day gave proof,—  
'Man thought man, for his kind's behoof,  
'Both could and did invent that scheme  
'Of perfect love: 'twould well beseem  
'Cain's nature thou wast wont to praise,  
'Not tally with God's usual ways!'

XXXI

And I covered deprecatingly—  
'Thou Love of God! Or let me die,

'Or grant what shall seem heaven al-  
most!  
'Let me not know that all is lost,  
'Though lost it be—leave me not tied  
'To this despair, this corpse-like bride!  
'Let that old life seem mine—no more—  
'With limitation as before,  
'With darkness, hunger, toil, distress:  
'Be all the earth a wilderness!  
'Only let me go on, go on,  
'Still hoping ever and anon  
'To reach one eve the Better Land!'

XXXII

Then did the form expand,—  
I knew Him through the dread disguise  
As the whole God within His eyes  
Embraced me.

XXXIII

When I lived again,  
'The day was breaking,—the grey plain  
I rose from, silvered thick with dew.  
Was this a vision? False or true?  
Since then, three varied years are spent,  
And commonly my mind is bent  
To think it was a dream—be sure  
A mere dream and distemperature—  
The last day's watching: then the night,—  
The shock of that strange Northern  
Light  
Set my head swimming, bred in me  
A dream. And so I live, you see,  
Go through the world, try, prove, reject,  
Prefer, still struggling to effect  
My warfare; happy that I can  
Be crossed and thwarted as a man,  
Not left in God's contempt apart,  
With ghastly smooth life, dead at heart,  
Tame in earth's paddock as her prize.  
Thank God, she still each method tries  
To catch me, who may yet escape,  
She knows,—the fiend in angel's shape!  
Thank God, no paradise stands barred  
To entry, and I find it hard  
To be a Christian, as I said!  
Still every now and then my head  
Raised glad, sinks mournful—all grows  
drear  
Spite of the sunshine, while I fear  
And think, 'How dreadful to be grudging  
'No ease henceforth, as one that's judged.  
'Condemned to earth for ever, shut  
'From heaven!'

But Easter-Day breaks! But  
Christ rises! Mercy every way  
Is infinite,—and who can say?

# MEN AND WOMEN

184-185-

## 'TRANSCENDENTALISM: A POEM IN TWELVE BOOKS'

STOP playing, poet! May a brother speak?  
'Tis you speak, that's your error. Song's  
our art:

Whereas you please to speak these naked  
thoughts

Instead of draping them in sights and  
sounds.

—True thoughts, good thoughts, thoughts  
fit to treasure up!

But why such long proslusion and display,  
Such turning and adjustment of the harp,  
And taking it upon your breast, at length,  
Only to speak dry words across its strings?  
Stark-naked thought is in request enough:  
Speak prose and hollo it till Europe hears!  
The six-foot Swiss tube, braced about with  
bark,

Which helps the hunter's voice from Alp  
to Alp—

Exchange our harp for that,—who hin-  
ders you?

But here's your fault; grown men want  
thought, you think;

Thought's what they mean by verse, and  
seek in verse.

Boys seek for images and melody,  
Men must have reason—so, you aim at  
men.

Quite otherwise! Objects throng our  
youth, 'tis true;

We see and hear and do not wonder much:  
If you could tell us what they mean, in-  
deed!

As German Boehme never cared for plants  
Until it happened, a-walking in the fields,  
He noticed all at once that plants could  
speak,

Nay, talk  
with him.

That day the daisy had an eye indeed—  
Colloquized with the cowslip on such  
themes!

We find them extant yet in Jacob's prose.  
But by the time youth slips a stage or two  
While reading prose in that tough book he  
wrote

(Collating and emendating the same  
And settling on the sense most to our  
mind),

We shut the clasps and find life's summer  
past.

Then, who helps more, pray, to repair our  
loss—

Another Boehme with a tougher book  
And subtler meanings of what roses say,—  
Or some stout Mage like him of Halber-  
stadt,<sup>1</sup>

John, who made things Boehme wrote  
thoughts about?

He with a 'look you!' vents a brace of  
rhymes,

And in there breaks the sudden rose her-  
self,

Over us, under, round us every side,  
Nay, in and out the tables and the chairs  
And musty volumes, Boehme's book and  
all,—

Buries us with a glory, young once more,  
Pouring heaven into this shut house of life.

So come, the harp back to your heart  
again!

You are a poem, though your poem's  
naught.

The best of all you showed before, believe,  
Was your own boy-face o'er the finer  
chords

Bent, following the cherub at the top  
That points to God with his paired half-  
moon wings.

## HOW IT STRIKES A CONTEMPORARY

I ONLY knew one poet in my life:  
And this, or something like it, was his way.

You saw go up and down Valladolid,  
A man of mark, to know next time you  
saw.

His very serviceable suit of black  
Was courtly once and conscientious still,  
And many might have worn it, though  
none did:

The cloak, that somewhat shone and  
showed the threads,

Had purpose, and the ruff, significance.  
He walked and tapped the pavement with

his cane,  
Scenting the world, looking it full in face,

An old dog, bald and blindish, at his heels.  
They turned up, now, the alley by the

church,  
That leads nowhither; now, they breathed  
themselves

On the main promenade just at the wrong  
time:

<sup>1</sup> John of Halberstadt, a magician botanist and a  
chymist.

## HOW IT STRIKES A CONTEMPORARY

You'd come upon his scrutinizing hat,  
 Making a peaked shade blacker than it-  
 self  
 Against the single window spared some  
 house  
 Intact yet with its mouldered Moorish  
 work,—  
 Or else surprise the ferrel of his stick  
 Trying the mortar's temper 'tween the  
 chinks  
 Of some new shop a-building, French and  
 fine.  
 He stood and watched the cobbler at his  
 trade,  
 The man who slices lemons into drink,  
 The coffee-roaster's brazier, and the boys  
 That volunteer to help him turn its winch.  
 He glanced o'er books on stalls with half  
 an eye,  
 And fly-leaf ballads on the vendor's string,  
 And broad-edge bold-print posters by the  
 wall.  
 He took such cognizance of men and  
 things,  
 If any beat a horse, you felt he saw;  
 If any cursed a woman, he took note;  
 Yet stared at nobody,—you stared at him,  
 And found, less to your pleasure than  
 surprise,  
 He seemed to know you and expect as  
 much.  
 So, next time that a neighbour's tongue  
 was loosed,  
 It marked the shameful and notorious fact,  
 We had among us, not so much a spy,  
 As a recording chief-inquisitor,  
 The town's true master if the town but  
 knew!  
 We merely kept a governor for form,  
 While this man walked about and took  
 account  
 Of all thought, said and acted, then went  
 home,  
 And wrote it fully to our Lord the King  
 Who has an itch to know things, he knows  
 why,  
 And reads them in his bedroom of a night.  
 Oh, you might smile! there wanted not a  
 touch,  
 A tang of . . . well, it was not wholly ease  
 As back into your mind the man's look  
 came.  
 Stricken in years a little,—such a brow  
 His eyes had to live under!—clear as flint  
 On either side the formidable nose  
 Curved, cut and coloured like an eagle's  
 claw.  
 Had he to do with A.'s surprising fate?  
 When altogether old B. disappeared  
 And young C. got his mistress,—was't our  
 friend,  
 His letter to the King, that did it all?  
 What paid the bloodless man for so much  
 pains?

Our Lord the King has favourites mani-  
 fold.  
 And shifts his ministry some once a month;  
 Our city gets new governors at whiles,—  
 But never word or sign, that I could hear,  
 Notified to this man about the streets  
 The King's approval of those letters  
 conned  
 The last thing duly at the dead of night.  
 Did the man love his office? Frowned our  
 Lord,  
 Exhorting when none heard—'Beseech  
 me not!  
 'Too far above my people,—beneath me!  
 'I set the watch,—how should the people  
 know?  
 'Forget them, keep me all the more in  
 mind!'  
 Was some such understanding 'twixt the  
 two?

I found no truth in one report at least—  
 That if you tracked him to his home, down  
 lanes  
 Beyond the Jewry, and as clean to pace,  
 You found he ate his supper in a room  
 Blazing with lights, four Titians on the  
 wall,  
 And twenty naked girls to change his plate!  
 Poor man, he lived another kind of life  
 In that rew stuccoed third house by the  
 bridge,  
 Fresh-painted, rather smart than other-  
 wise!  
 The whole street might o'erlook him as he  
 sat,  
 Leg crossing leg, one foot on the dog's  
 back,  
 Playing a decent cribbage with his maid  
 (Jacynth, you're sure her name was) o'er  
 the cheese  
 And fruit, three red halves of starved  
 winter-pears,  
 Or treat of radishes in April. Nine,  
 Ten, struck the church clock, straight to  
 bed went he.

My father, like the man of sense he was,  
 Would point him out to me a dozen times;  
 'St—'St,' he'd whisper, 'the Corregidor!  
 I had been used to think that personage  
 Was one with lacquered breeches, lustrous  
 belt,  
 And feathers like a forest in his hat,  
 Who blew a trumpet and proclaimed the  
 news,  
 Announced the bull-fights, gave each  
 church its turn,  
 And memorized the miracle in vogue!  
 He had a great observance from us boys;  
 We were in error; that was not the man.

I'd like now, yet had haply been afraid,  
 To have just looked, when this man came  
 to die,

## HOW IT STRIKES A CONTEMPORARY

And seen who lined the clean gay garret-sides  
 And stood about the neat low truckle-bed,  
 With the heavenly manner of relieving  
 guard.  
 Here had been, mark, the general-in-chief,  
 Thro' a whole campaign of the world's life  
 and death,  
 Doing the King's work all the dim day  
 long,  
 In his old coat and up to knees in mud,  
 Smoked like a herring, dining on a crust,—  
 And, now the day was won, relieved at  
 once!  
 No further show or need for that old coat,  
 You are sure, for one thing! Bless us, all  
 the while  
 How sprucely we are dressed out, you  
 and I!  
 A second, and the angels alter that.  
 Well, I could never write a verse,—could  
 you?  
 Let's to the Prado and make the most of  
 time.

### ARTEMIS PROLOGIZES

I AM a goddess of the ambrosial courts,  
 And save by Here, Queen of Pride, sur-  
 passed  
 By none whose temples whiten this the  
 world.  
 Through heaven I roll my lucid moon  
 along;  
 I shed in hell o'er my pale people peace;  
 On earth I, caring for the creatures, guard  
 Each pregnant yellow wolf and fox-bitch  
 sleek,  
 And every feathered mother's callow  
 brood,  
 And all that love green haunts and loneli-  
 ness.  
 Of men, the chaste adore me, hanging  
 crowns  
 Of poppies red to blackness, bell and stem,  
 Upon my image at Athenai here;  
 And this dead Youth, Asclepius bends  
 above,  
 Was dearest to me. He, my buskined step  
 To follow through the wild-wood leafy  
 ways,  
 And chase the panting stag, or swift with  
 darts  
 Stop the swift ounce, or lay the leopard  
 low,  
 Neglected homage to another god:  
 Whence Aphrodite, by no midnight smoke  
 Of tapers lulled, in jealousy despatched  
 A noisome lust that, as the gadbee stings,  
 Possessed his stepdame Phaidra for him-  
 self  
 The son of Theseus her great absent  
 spouse.  
 Hippolutos exclaiming in his rage

Against the fury of the Queen, she judged  
 Life insupportable; and, pricked at heart  
 An Amazonian stranger's race should dare  
 To scorn her, perished by the murderous  
 cord:  
 Yet, ere she perished, blasted in a scroll  
 The fame of him her swerving made not  
 swerve.  
 And Theseus, read, returning, and be-  
 lieved,  
 And exiled, in the blindness of his wrath,  
 The man without a crime who, last as first,  
 Loyal, divulged not to his sire the truth.  
 Now Theseus from Poseidon had obtained  
 That of his wishes should be granted three,  
 And one he imprecated straight—'Alive  
 'May ne'er Hippolutos reach other lands!'  
 Poseidon heard, ai ai! And scarce the  
 prince  
 Had stepped into the fixed boots of the car  
 That gave the feet a stay against the  
 strength  
 Of the Henetian horses, and around  
 His body flung the rein, and urged their  
 speed  
 Along the rocks and shingles of the shore,  
 When from the gaping wave a monster  
 flung  
 His obscene body in the coursers' path.  
 These, mad with terror, as the sea-bull  
 sprawled  
 Wallowing about their feet, lost care of  
 him  
 That reared them; and the master-chariot-  
 pole  
 Snapping beneath their plunges like a reed,  
 Hippolutos, whose feet were trammelled  
 fast,  
 Was yet dragged forward by the circling  
 rein  
 Which either hand directed; nor they  
 quenched  
 The frenzy of their flight before each trace.  
 Wheel-spoke and splinter of the woeful  
 car,  
 Each boulder-stone, sharp stub and spiny  
 shell,  
 Huge fish-bone wrecked and wreathed  
 amid the sands  
 On that detested beach, was bright with  
 blood  
 And morsels of his flesh: then fell the steeds  
 Head foremost, crashing in their mooned  
 fronts,  
 Shivering with sweat, each white eye  
 horror-fixed.  
 His people, who had witnessed all afar,  
 Bore back the ruins of Hippolutos.  
 But when his sire, too swoln with pride,  
 rejoiced  
 (Indomitable as a man foredoomed)  
 That vast Poseidon had fulfilled his prayer,  
 I, in a flood of glory visible,  
 Stood o'er my dying votary and, deed

## ARTEMIS PROLOGIZES

By deed, revealed, as all took place, the truth.

Then Theseus lay the woefullest of men,  
And worthily; but ere the death-veils hid  
His face, the murdered prince full pardon  
breathed  
To his rash sire. Whereat Athenai wails.

So I, who ne'er forsake my votaries,  
Lest in the cross-way none the honey-cake  
Should tender, nor pour out the dog's hot  
life;

Lest at my fane the priests disconsolate  
Should dress my image with some faded  
poor

Few crowns, made favours of, nor dare  
object

Such slackness to my worshippers who  
turn

Elsewhere the trusting heart and loaded  
hand,

As they had climbed Olumpos to report  
Of Artemis and nowhere found her  
throne—

I interposed: and, this eventful night,—  
(While round the funeral pyre the popu-  
lace

Stood with fierce light on their black robes  
which bound

Each sobbing head, while yet their hair  
they clipped

O'er the dead body of their withered  
prince,

And, in his palace, Theseus prostrated  
On the cold hearth, his brow cold as the  
slab

'Twas bruised on, groaned away the heavy  
grief—

As the pyre fell, and down the cross logs  
crashed

Sending a crowd of sparkles through the  
night,

And the gay fire, elate with mastery,  
Towered like a serpent o'er the clotted jars

Of wine, dissolving oils and frankincense,  
And splendid gums like gold),—my

potency  
Conveyed the perished man to my retreat  
In the thrice-venerable forest here.

And this white-bearded sage who squeezes  
now

The berried plant, is Phoibos' son of fame,  
Asclepius, whom my radiant brother

taught  
The doctrine of each herb and flower and  
root,

To know their secret'st virtue and express  
The saving soul of all: who so has soothed  
With lavers the torn brow and murdered

cheeks,  
Composed the hair and brought its gloss  
again,

And called the red bloom to the pale skin  
back,

And laid the strips and jagged ends of flesh  
Even once more, and slacked the sinew's  
knot

Of every tortured limb—that now he lies  
As if mere sleep possessed him underneath  
These interwoven oaks and pines. Oh  
cheer,

Divine presenter of the healing rod,  
Thy snake, with ardent throat and lulling  
eye,

Twines his lithe spires around! I say,  
much cheer!

Proceed thou with thy wisest pharmacies!  
And ye, white crowd of woodland sister-  
nymphs,

Ply, as the sage directs, these buds and  
leaves

That strew the turf around the twain!  
While I

Await, in fitting silence, the event.

## AN EPISTLE

CONTAINING THE STRANGE MEDICAL EX-  
PERIENCE OF KARSHISH, THE ARAB  
PHYSICIAN.

KARSHISH, the picker-up of learning's  
crumbs,

The not-incurious in God's handiwork  
(This man's-flesh he hath admirably made,  
Blown like a bubble, kneaded like a paste,

To coop up and keep down on earth a  
space

That puff of vapour from its mouth, man's  
soul)

—To Abib, all-sagacious in our art,  
Breeder in me of what poor skill I boast,

Like me inquisitive how pricks and cracks  
Befall the flesh through too much stress

and strain,  
Whereby the wily vapour fain would slip  
Back and rejoin its source before the

term,—  
And aptest in contrivance (under God)  
To baffle it by deftly stopping such:—

The vagrant Scholar to his Sage at home  
Sends greeting (health and knowledge,  
fame with peace)

Three samples of true snakestone—rarer  
still,

One of the other sort, the melon-shaped,  
(But fitter, pounded fine, for charms than  
drugs)

And writeth now the twenty-second time.

• My journeyings were brought to Jeri-  
cho:

Thus I resume. Who studious in our art  
Shall count a little labour unrepaid?

• I have shed sweat enough, left flesh and  
bone

On many a flinty furlong of this land.  
Also, the country-side is all on fire

With rumours of a marching hitherward:

Some say Vespasian cometh, some, his son.  
A black lynx snarled and pricked a tufted  
ear;

Lust of my blood inflamed his yellow balls:  
I cried and threw my staff and he was gone.  
Twice have the robbers stripped and  
beaten me,

And once a town declared me for a spy;  
But at the end, I reach Jerusalem,  
Since this poor covert where I pass the  
night,  
This Bethany, lies scarce the distance  
thence

A man with plague-sores at the third  
degree

Runs till he drops down dead. Thou  
laughest here!

'Sooth, it elates me, thus reposed and safe,  
To void the stuffing of my travel-scrip  
And share with thee whatever Jewry yields.  
A viscid choler is observable

In tertians, I was nearly bold to say;  
And falling-sickness hath a happier cure  
Than our school wots of: there's a spider  
here

Weaves no web, watches on the ledge of  
tombs,

Sprinkled with mottles on an ash-grey  
back;

Take five and drop them . . . but who  
knows his mind,

The Syrian runagate I trust this to?  
His service payeth me a sublimate  
Blown up his nose to help the ailing eye.  
Best wait: I reach Jerusalem at morn,  
There set in order my experiences,  
Gather what most deserves, and give thee  
all—

Or I might add, Judæa's gum-tragacanth  
Scales off in purer flakes, shines clearer-  
grained,

Cracks 'twixt the pestle and the porphyry,  
In fine exceeds our produce. Scalp-disease  
Confounds me, crossing so with leprosy—  
Thou hadst admired one sort I gained at  
Zoar—

But zeal outruns discretion. Here I end.

Yet stay: my Syrian blinketh gratefully,  
Protesteth his devotion is my price—  
Suppose I write what harms not, though  
he steal?

I half resolve to tell thee, yet I blush,  
What set me off a-writing first of all.  
An itch I had, a sting to write, a tang!  
For, be it this town's barrenness—or else  
The Man had something in the look of  
him—

His case has struck me far more than 'tis  
worth.

So, pardon if—(lest presently I lose  
In the great press of novelty at hand  
The care and pains this somehow stole  
from me)

I bid thee take the thing while fresh in  
mind,

Almost in sight—for, wilt thou have the  
truth?

The very man is gone from me but now,  
Whose ailment is the subject of discourse.  
Thus then, and let thy better wit help all!

'Tis but a case of mania—subinduced  
By epilepsy, at the turning-point  
Of trance prolonged unduly some three  
days:

When, by the exhibition of some drug  
Or spell, exorcization, stroke of art  
Unknown to me and which 'twere well to  
know,

The evil thing out-breaking all at once  
Left the man whole and sound of body  
indeed,—

But, flinging (so to speak) life's gates too  
wide,

Making a clear house of it too suddenly,  
The first conceit that entered might in-  
scribe

Whatever it was minded on the wall  
So plainly at that vantage, as it were,  
(First come, first served) that nothing sub-  
sequent

Attaineth to erase those fancy-scrawl  
The just-returned and new-established soul  
Hath gotten now so thoroughly by heart  
That henceforth she will read or these or  
none.

And first—the man's own firm conviction  
rests

That he was dead (in fact they buried him)  
—That he was dead and then restored to  
life

By a Nazarene physician of his tribe:  
—'Sayeth, the same bade 'Rise,' and he  
did rise.

'Such cases are diurnal,' thou wilt cry.  
Not so this figment!—not, that such a  
fume,

Instead of giving way to time and health,  
Should eat itself into the life of life,  
As saffron tingeth flesh, blood, bores and  
all!

For see, how he takes up the after-life.  
The man—it is one Lazarus a Jew,  
Sanguine, proportioned, fifty years of age,  
The body's habit wholly laudable,  
As much, indeed, beyond the common  
health

As he were made and put aside to show.  
Think, could we penetrate by any drug  
And bathe the wearied soul and worried  
flesh,  
And bring it clear and fair, by three days'  
sleep!

Whence has the man the balm that  
brightens all?

This grown man eyes the world now like  
a child,

## AN EPISTLE

Some elders of his tribe, I should premise,  
Led in their friend, obedient as a sheep,  
To bear my inquisition. While they spoke,  
Now sharply, now with sorrow,—told the  
case,—

He listened not except I spoke to him,  
But folded his two hands and let them talk,  
Watching the flies that buzzed: and yet no  
fool.

And that 's a sample how his years must go.  
Look, if a beggar, in fixed middle-life,  
Should find a treasure,—can he use the  
same

With straitened habits and with tastes  
starved small,

And take at once to his impoverished  
brain

The sudden element that changes things,  
That sets the undreamed-of rapture at his  
hand

And puts the cheap old joy in the scorned  
dust?

Is he not such an one as moves to mirth—  
Warily parsimonious, when no need,  
Wasteful as drunkenness at undue times?  
All prudent counsel as to what befits  
The golden mean, is lost on such an one:  
The man's fantastic will is the man's law.  
So here—we call the treasure knowledge,  
say,

Increased beyond the fleshly faculty—  
Heaven opened to a soul while yet on  
earth,

Earth forced on a soul's use while seeing  
heaven:

The man is witless of the size, the sum,  
The value in proportion of all things,  
Or whether it be little or be much.  
Discourse to him of prodigious arma-  
ments

Assembled to besiege his city now,  
And of the passing of a mule with gourds—  
'Tis one! Then take it on the other side,  
Speak of some trifling fact,—he will gaze  
rapt

With stupor at its very littleness,  
(Far as I see) as if in that indeed  
He caught prodigious import, whole re-  
sults;

And so will turn to us the bystanders  
In ever the same stupor (note this point)  
That we too see not with his opened eyes.  
Wonder and doubt come wrongly into  
play,

Preposterously, at cross purposes.  
Should his child sicken unto death,—why,  
look

For scarce abatement of his cheerfulness,  
Or pretermission of the daily craft!  
While a word, gesture, glance from that  
same child

At play or in the school or laid asleep,  
Will startle him to an agony of fear,  
Exasperation, just as like. Demand

The reason why—'tis but a word,' ob-  
ject—

'A gesture'—he regards thee as our lord  
Who lived there in the pyramid alone,  
Looked at us (dost thou mind?) when,  
being young,

We both would unadvisedly recite  
Some charm's beginning, from that book  
of his,

Able to bid the sun throb wide and burst  
All into stars, as suns grown old are wont.  
Thou and the child have each a veil alike  
Thrown o'er your heads, from under which  
ye both

Stretch your blind hands and trifle with a  
match

Over a mine of Greek fire, did ye know!  
He holds on firmly to some thread of life—  
(It is the life to lead perforce)

Which runs across some vast distracting  
orb

Of glory on either side that meagre thread,  
Which, conscious of, he must not enter  
yet—

The spiritual life around the earthly life:  
The law of that is known to him as this,  
His heart and brain move there, his feet  
stay here.

So is the man perplex with impulses  
Sudden to start off crosswise, not straight  
on,

Proclaiming what is right and wrong  
across,

And not along, this black thread through  
the blaze—

'It should be' balked by 'here it cannot  
be.'

And oft the man's soul springs into his face  
As if he saw again and heard again  
His sage that bade him 'Rise' and he did  
rise.

Something, a word, a tick o' the blood  
within

Admonishes: then back he sinks at once  
To ashes, who was very fire before,  
In sedulous recurrence to his trade  
Whereby he earneth him the daily bread;  
And studiously the humbler for that pride,  
Professedly the faultier that he knows  
God's secret, while he holds the thread of  
life.

Indeed the especial marking of the man  
Is prone submission to the heavenly will—  
Seeing it, what it is, and why it is.

'Sayeth, he will wait patient to the last  
For that same death which must restore  
his being

To equilibrium, body loosening soul  
Divorced even now by premature full  
growth:

He will live, nay, it pleaseth him to live  
So long as God please, and just how God  
please.

He even seeketh not to please God more

(Which meaneth, otherwise) than as God please.

Hence, I perceive not he affects to preach  
The doctrine of his sect whate'er it be,  
Make proselytes as madmen thirst to do:  
How can he give his neighbour the real  
ground,

His own conviction? Ardent as he is—  
Call his great truth a lie, why, still the old  
'Be it as God please' reassureth him.  
I probe'd the sore as thy disciple should:  
'How, beast,' said I, 'this stolid careless-  
ness

'Sufficeth thee, when Rome is on her  
march

'To stamp out like a little spark thy town,  
'Thy tribe, thy crazy tale and thee at once?'  
He merely looked with his large eyes on  
me.

The man is apathetic, you deduce?  
Contrariwise, he loves both old and young,  
Able and weak, affects the very brutes  
And birds—how say I? flowers of the  
field—

As a wise workman recognizes tools  
In a master's workshop, loving what they  
make.

Thus is the man as harmless as a lamb:  
Only impatient. let him do his best,  
At ignorance and carelessness and sin—  
An indignation which is promptly curbed:  
As when in certain travel I have feigned  
To be an ignoramus in our art  
According to some preconceived design,  
And happed to hear the land's practi-  
tioners

Steeped in conceit sublimed by ignorance,  
Prattle fantastically on disease,  
Its cause and cure—and I must hold my  
peace!

Thou wilt object—Why have I not ere  
this

sought out the sage himself, the Nazarene  
Who wrought this cure, inquiring at the  
source,

Conferring with the frankness that befits?  
Alas! it grieveth me, the learned leech  
Perished in a tumult many years ago,  
Accused,—our learning's fate,—of wiz-  
ardry,

Rebellion, to the setting up a rule  
And creed prodigious as described to me.  
His death, which happened when the  
earthquake fell

(Prefiguring, as soon appeared, the loss  
To occult learning in our lord the sage  
Who lived there in the pyramid alone)  
Was wrought by the mad people—that's  
their wont!

On vain recourse, as I conjecture it,  
To his tried virtue, for miraculous help—  
How could he stop the earthquake?  
That's their way!

The other imputations must be lies:  
But take one, though I loathe to give it  
thee,

In mere respect for any good man's fame.  
(And after all, our patient Lazarus  
Is stark mad; should we count on what he  
says?

Perhaps not; though in writing to a leech  
'Tis well to keep back nothing of a case.)  
This man so cured regards the curer, then,  
As—God forgive me! who but God him-  
self,

Creator and sustainer of the world,  
That came and dwelt in flesh on it awhile!  
—'Sayeth that such an one was born and  
lived

Taught, healed the sick, broke bread at his  
own house,

Then died, with Lazarus by, for aught I  
know,

And yet was . . . what I said nor choose  
repeat,

And must have so avouched himself, in  
fact,

In hearing of this very Lazarus  
Who saith—but why all this of what he  
saith?

Why write of trivial matters, things of price  
Calling at every moment for remark?

I noticed on the margin of a pool  
Blue-flowering borage, the Aleppo sort,  
Aboundeth, very nitrous. It is strange!

Thy pardon for this long and tedious  
case,

Which, now that I review it, needs **must**  
seem

Unduly dwelt on, prolixly set forth!  
Nor I myself discern in what is writ  
Good cause for the peculiar interest  
And awe indeed this man has touched me  
with.

Perhaps the journey's end, the weariness  
'Had wrought upon me first. I met him  
thus:

I crossed a ridge of short sharp broken hills  
Like an old lion's cheek-teeth. Out there  
came

A moon made like a face with certain spots  
Multiform, manifold and menacing:

Then a wind rose behind me. So we met  
In this old sleepy town at unaware

The man and I. I send thee what is writ.  
Regard it as a chance, a matter risked

To this ambiguous Syrian—he may lose,  
Or steal, or give it thee with equal good.

Jerusalem's repose shall make amends  
For time this letter wastes, thy time and  
mine;

Till when, once more thy pardon and  
farewell!

The very God! think, Abib; dost thou  
think?



## FRA LIPPO LIPPI

And all's come square again. I'd like his face—

His, elbowing on his comrade in the door  
With the pike and lantern,—for the slave  
that holds

John Baptist's head a-dangle by the hair  
With one hand ('Look you, now,' as who  
should say)

And his weapon in the other, yet unwiped!  
It's not your chance to have a bit of chalk,  
A wood-coal or the like? or you should see!  
Yes, I'm the painter, since you style me so.  
What, brother Lippo's doings, up and  
down,

You know them and they take you? like  
enough!

I saw the proper twinkle in your eye—  
'Tell you, I liked your looks at very first.  
Let's sit and set things straight now, hip  
to haunch.

Here's spring come, and the nights one  
makes up bands

To roam the town and sing out carnival,  
And I've been three weeks shut within my  
mew,

A-painting for the great man, saints and  
saints

And saints again. I could not paint all  
night—

Ouf! I leaned out of window for fresh air.  
There came a hurry of feet and little feet,  
A sweep of lute-strings, laughs, and whiffs  
of song,—

*Flower o' the broom,  
Take away love, and our earth is a tomb!*

*Flower o' the quince,  
I let Lisa go, and what good in life since?*

*Flower o' the thyme*—and so on. Round  
they went.

Scarce had they turned the corner when a  
titter

Like the skipping of rabbits by moon-  
light,—three slim shapes,

And a face that looked up . . . zooks, sir,  
flesh and blood,

That's all I'm made of! Into shreds it  
went,

Curtain and counterpane and coverlet,  
All the bed-furniture—a dozen knots,  
There was a ladder! Down I let myself,  
Hands and feet, scrambling somehow,  
and so dropped,

And after them. I came up with the fun  
Hard by Saint Laurence, hail fellow, well  
met,—

*Flower o' the rose,  
If I've been merry, what matter who knows?*

And so as I was stealing back again  
To get to bed and have a bit of sleep

Ere I rise up to-morrow and go work  
On Jerome knocking at his poor old breast

With his great round stone to subdue the  
flesh,

You snap me of the sudden. Ah, I see!

Though your eye twinkles still, you shake  
your head—

Mine's shaved—a monk, you say—the  
sting's in that!

If Master Cosimo announced himself,  
Mum's the word naturally; but a monk!

Come, what am I a beast for? tell us, now!  
I was a baby when my mother died

And father died and left me in the street.  
I starved there, God knows how, a year or  
two

On fig-skins, melon-parings, rinds and  
shucks,

Refuse and rubbish. One fine frosty day,  
My stomach being empty as your hat,

The wind doubled me up and down I went.  
Old Aunt Lapaccia trussed me with one  
hand,

(Its fellow was a stinger as I knew)  
And so along the wall, over the bridge,

By the straight cut to the convent. Six  
words there,

While I stood munching my first bread  
that month:

'So, boy, you're minded,' quoth the good  
fat father

Wiping his own mouth, 'twas refectio-  
time,—

'To quit this very miserable world?  
'Will you renounce' . . . 'the mouthful of  
bread?' thought I;

By no means! Brief, they made a monk of  
me;

I did renounce the world, its pride and  
greed,

Palace, farm, villa, shop and banking-  
house,

Trash, such as these poor devils of Medici  
Have given their hearts to—all at eight  
years old.

Well, sir, I found in time, you may be sure,  
'Twas not for nothing—the good bellyful,

The warm serge and the rope that goes all  
round,

And day-long blessed idleness beside!  
'Let's see what the urchin's fit for'—that  
came next.

Not overmuch their way, I must confess.  
Such a to-do! They tried me with their  
books:

Lord, they'd have taught me Latin in pure  
waste!

*Flower o' the clove,  
All the Latin I construe is, 'amo' I love!*

But, mind you; when a boy starves in the  
streets

Eight years together, as my fortune was,  
Watching folk's faces to know who will  
fling

The bit of half-stripped grape-bunch he  
desires,

And who will curse or kick him for his  
pains,—

Which gentleman processional and fine,

Holding a candle to the Sacrament,  
Will wink and let him lift a plate and catch  
The droppings of the wax to sell again,  
Or holla for the Eight and have him  
whipped,—

How say I?—nay, which dog bites, which  
lets drop

His bone from the heap of offal in the  
street,—

Why, soul and sense of him grow sharp  
alike,

He learns the look of things, and none the  
less

For admonition from the hunger-pinch.  
I had a store of such remarks, be sure,  
Which, after I found leisure, turned to use.  
I drew men's faces on my copy-books,  
Scrawled them within the antiphonary's  
marge,

Joined legs and arms to the long music-  
notes,

Found eyes and nose and chin for A's and  
B's,

And made a string of pictures of the world  
Betwixt the ins and outs of verb and noun,  
On the wall, the bench, the door. The  
monks looked black.

'Nay,' quoth the Prior, 'turn him out,  
d'ye say?

'In no wise. Lose a crow and catch a lark.

'What if at last we get our man of parts,

'We Carmelites, like those Camaldolese

'And Preaching Friars, to do our church  
up fine

'And put the front on it that ought to be!'  
And hereupon he bade me daub away.

Thank you! my head being crammed, the  
walls a blank,

Never was such prompt disembodying.  
First, every sort of monk, the black and  
white,

I drew them, fat and lean: then, folk at  
church,

From good old gossips waiting to confess  
Their cribs of barrel-droppings, candle-  
ends,—

To the breathless fellow at the altar-foot,  
Fresh from his murder, safe and sitting  
there

With the little children round him in a  
row

Of admiration, half for his beard and half  
For that white anger of his victim's son  
Shaking a fist at him with one fierce arm,  
Signing himself with the other because of  
Christ

(Whose sad face on the cross sees only this  
After the passion of a thousand years)

Till some poor girl, her apron o'er her  
head,

(Which the intense eyes looked through)  
came at eve

On tiptoe, said a word, dropped in a loaf,  
Her pair of earrings and a bunch of flowers

(The brute took growling), prayed, and  
so was gone.

I painted all, then cried 'Tis ask and have;  
'Choose, for more's ready!'—laid the  
ladder flat,

And showed my covered bit of cloister-  
wall.

The monks closed in a circle and praised  
loud

Till checked, taught what to see and not  
to see,

Being simple bodies,—'That's the very  
man!

'Look at the boy who stoops to pat the  
dog!

'That woman's like the Prior's niece who  
comes

'To care about his asthma: it's the life!'  
But there my triumph's straw-fire flared  
and funk'd;

Their betters took their turn to see and say:  
The Prior and the learned pulled a face

And stopped all that in no time. 'How?  
what's here?

'Quite from the mark of painting, bless us  
all!

'Faces, arms, legs and bodies like the true  
'As much as pea and pea! it's devil's-game!

'Your business is not to catch men with  
show,

'With homage to the perishable clay,

'But lift them over it, ignore it all,

'Make them forget there's such a thing as  
flesh.

'Your business is to paint the souls of  
men—

'Man's soul, and it's a fire, smoke . . . no,  
it's not . . .

'It's vapour done up like a new-born  
babe—

'(In that shape when you die it leaves your  
mouth)

'It's . . . well, what matters talking, it's  
the soul!

'Give us no more of body than shows soul!  
'Here's Giotto, with his Saint a-praising

God,

'That sets us praising,—why not stop with  
him?

'Why put all thoughts of praise out of our  
head

'With wonder at lines, colours, and what  
not?

'Paint the soul, never mind the legs and  
arms!

'Rub all out, try at it a second time.

'Oh, that white smallish female with the  
breasts,

'She's just my niece . . . Herodias, I  
would say,—

'Who went and danced and got men's  
heads cut off!

'Have it all out!' Now, is this sense, I  
ask?

## FRA LIPPO LIPPI

A fine way to paint soul, by painting body  
So ill, the eye can't stop there, must go  
further

And can't fare worse! Thus, yellow does  
for white

When what you put for yellow's simply  
black,

And any sort of meaning looks intense  
When all beside itself means and looks  
nought.

Why can't a painter lift each foot in turn,  
Left foot and right foot, go a double step,  
Make his flesh liker and his soul more like,  
Both in their order? Take the prettiest  
face,

The Prior's niece . . . patron-saint—is it  
so pretty

You can't discover if it means hope, fear,  
Sorrow or joy? won't beauty go with these?  
Suppose I've made her eyes all right and  
blue,

Can't I take breath and try to add life's  
flash,

And then add soul and heighten them  
threefold?

Or say there's beauty with no soul at all—  
(I never saw it—put the case the same—)  
If you get simple beauty and nought else,  
You get about the best thing God invents:  
That's somewhat: and you'll find the soul  
you have missed,

Within yourself, when you return him  
thanks.

'Rub all out!' Well, well, there's my life,  
in short,

And so the thing has gone on ever since.  
I'm grown a man no doubt, I've broken  
bounds:

You should not take a fellow eight years  
old

And make him swear to never kiss the girls.  
I'm my own master, paint now as I  
please—

Having a friend, you see, in the Corner-  
house!

Lord, it's fast holding by the rings in  
front—

Those great rings serve more purposes  
than just

To plant a flag in, or tie up a horse!  
And yet the old schooling sticks, the old  
grave eyes

Are peeping o'er my shoulder as I work,  
The heads shake still—'It's art's decline,  
my son!

'You're not of the true painters, great and'  
old;

'Brother Angelico's the man, you'll find;  
'Brother Lorenzo stands his single peer:

'Fag on at flesh, you'll never make the  
third!'

*Flower o' the pine,  
You keep your mistr . . . manners, and I'll  
stick to mine!*

I'm not the third, then: bless us, they must  
know!

Don't you think they're the likeliest to  
know,

They with their Latin? So, I swallow my  
rage,

Clench my teeth, suck my lips in tight, and  
paint

To please them—sometimes do and some-  
times don't;

For, doing most, there's pretty, sure to  
come

A turn, some warm eve finds me at my  
saints—

A laugh, a cry, the business of the world—  
(*Flower o' the peach,*

*Death for us all, and his own life for each!*)

And my whole soul revolves, the cup runs  
over,

The world and life's too big to pass for a  
dream,

And I do these wild things in sheer despite,  
And play the fooleries you catch me at,

In pure rage! The old mill-horse, out at  
grass

After hard years, throws up his stiff heels  
so,

Although the miller does not preach to him  
The only good of grass is to make chaff.

What would men have? Do they like grass  
or no—

May they or mayn't they? all I want's the  
thing

Settled for ever one way. As it is,  
You tell too many lies and hurt yourself:

You don't like what you only like too  
much,

You do like what, if given you at your  
word,

You find abundantly detestable.  
For me, I think I speak as I was taught;

I always see the garden and God there  
A-making man's wife: and, my lesson  
learned,

The value and significance of flesh,  
I can't unlearn ten minutes afterwards.

You understand me: I'm a beast, I  
know.

But see, now—why, I see as certainly  
As that the morning-star's about to shine,

What will hap some day. We've a young-  
ster here

Comes to our convent, studies what I do,  
Slouches and stares and lets no atom drop:

His name is Guidi—he'll not mind the  
monks—

They call him Hulking Tom, he lets them  
talk—

He picks my practice up—he'll paint  
apace,

I hope so—though I never live so long,  
I know what's sure to follow. You be  
judge!

You speak no Latin more than I, belike;  
However, you're my man, you've seen the  
world

—The beauty and the wonder and the  
power,  
The shapes of things, their colours, lights  
and shades,  
Changes, surprises,—and God made it all!  
—For what? Do you feel thankful, ay or  
no,  
For this fair town's face, yonder river's  
line,

The mountain round it and the sky above,  
Much more the figures of man, woman,  
child,  
These are the frame to? What's it all  
about?

To be passed over, despised? or dwelt  
upon,  
Wondered at? oh, this last of course!—  
you say.

But why not do as well as say,—paint these  
Just as they are, careless what comes of it?  
God's works—paint any one, and count it  
crime

To let a truth slip. Don't object, 'Ilis  
works

'Are here already; nature is complete:  
'Suppose you reproduce her—(which you  
can't)

'There's no advantage! you must beat  
her, then.'

For, don't you mark? we're made so that  
we love

First when we see them painted, things we  
have passed

Perhaps a hundred times nor cared to see;  
And so they are better, painted—better to  
us,

Which is the same thing. Art was given for  
that;

God uses us to help each other so,  
Lending our minds out. Have you noticed,  
now,

Your cullion's hanging face? A bit of  
chalk,

And trust me but you should, though!  
How much more,

If I drew higher things with the same  
truth!

That were to take the Prior's pulpit-place,  
Interpret God to all of you! Oh, oh,  
It makes me mad to see what men shall  
do

And we in our graves! This world's no  
blot for us,

Nor blank; it means intensely, and means  
good:

To find its meaning is my meat and drink.  
'Ay, but you don't so instigate to prayer!'  
Strikes in the Prior: 'when your meaning's  
plain

'It does not say to folk—remember  
matins,

'Or, mind you fast next Friday!' Why,  
for this

What need of art at all? A skull and bones,  
Two bits of stick nailed crosswise, or,  
what's best,

A bell to chime the hour with, does as well.  
I painted a Saint Laurence six months  
since

At Prato, splashed the fresco in fine style:  
'How looks my painting, now the scaff-  
old's down?'

I ask a brother: 'Hugely,' he returns—  
'Already not one phiz of your three slaves

'Who turn the Deacon off his toasted side,  
'But's scratched and prodded to our  
heart's content,

'The pious people have so eased their own  
'With coming to say prayers there in a  
rage:

'We get on fast to see the bricks beneath.  
'Expect another job this time next year,

'For pity and religion grow i' the crowd—  
'Your painting serves its purpose!' Hang  
the fools!

—That is—you'll not mistake an idle  
word

Spoke in a huff by a poor monk, God wot,  
Tasting the air this spicy night which turns  
The unaccustomed head like Chianti wine!

Oh, the church knows! don't misreport  
me, now!

It's natural a poor monk out of bounds  
Should have his apt word to excuse him-  
self:

And hearken how I plot to make amends.  
I have bethought me: I shall paint a piece  
... There's for you! Give me six months,  
then go, see

Something in Sant' Ambrogio's! Bless the  
nuns!

They want a cast o' my office. I shall paint  
God in the midst, Madonna and her babe,  
Ringed by a bowery flowery angel-brood,  
Lilies and vestments and white faces, sweet  
As puff on puff of grated orris-root

When ladies crowd to church at mid-  
summer.

And then i' the front, of course a saint or  
two—

Saint John, because he saves the Floren-  
tines,

Saint Ambrose, who puts down in black  
and white

The convent's friends and gives them a  
long day,

And Job, I must have him there past mis-  
take,

The man of Uz (and Us without the z,  
Painters who need his patience). Well, all  
these

Secured at their devotion, up shall come  
Out of a corner when you least expect,  
As one by a dark stair into a great light,

## FRA LIPPO LIPPI

Music and talking, who but Lippo! I!—  
Mazed, motionless and moonstruck—I'm  
the man!

Back I shrink—what is this I see and hear?  
I, caught up with my monk's-things by  
mistake,

My old serge gown and rope that goes all  
round,

I, in this presence, this pure company!  
Where's a hole, where's a corner for  
escape?

Then steps a sweet angelic slip of a thing  
Forward, puts out a soft palm—"Not so  
fast!"

—Addresses the celestial presence, 'nay—  
'He made you and devised you, after all,  
'Though he's none of you! Could Saint  
John there draw—

'His camel-hair make up a painting-brush?  
'We come to brother Lippo for all that,  
'*Iste perfect opus!*' So, all smile—

I shuffle sideways with my blushing face  
Under the cover of a hundred wings  
Thrown like a spread of kirtles when  
you're gay

And play hot cockles, all the doors being  
shut,

Till, wholly unexpected, in there pops  
The hothead husband! Thus I scuttle off  
To some safe bench behind, not letting go

The palm of her, the little lily thing  
That spoke the good word for me in the  
nick,

Like the Prior's niece . . . Saint Lucy, I  
would say.

And so all's saved for me, and for the  
church

A pretty picture gained. Go, six months  
hence!

Your hand, sir, and good-bye: no lights,  
no lights!

The street's hushed, and I know my own  
way back,

Don't fear me! There's the grey begin-  
ning. Zooks!

## ANDREA DEL SARTO

(CALLED 'THE FAULTLESS PAINTER')

BUT do not let us quarrel any more,  
No, my Lucrezia; bear with me for once:  
Sit down and all shall happen as you wish.  
You turn your face, but does it bring your  
heart?

I'll work then for your friend's friend,  
never fear,

Treat his own subject after his own way,  
Fix his own time, accept too his own price,  
And shut the money into this small hand  
When next it takes mine. Will it? ten-  
derly?

Oh, I'll content him,—but to-morrow,  
Love!

I often am much wearier than you think,

This evening more than usual, and it seems  
As if—forgive now—should you let me sit  
Here by the window with your hand in  
mine

And look a half-hour forth on Fiesole,  
Both of one mind, as married people use,  
Quietly, quietly the evening through,  
I might get up to-morrow to my work  
Cheerful and fresh as ever. Let us try.  
To-morrow, how you shall be glad for  
this!

Your soft hand is a woman of itself,  
And mine the man's bared breast she curls  
inside.

Don't count the time lost, neither; you  
must serve

For each of the five pictures we require:  
It saves a model. So! keep looking so—  
My serpentine beauty, rounds on  
rounds!

—How could you ever prick those perfect  
ears,

Even to put the pearl there! oh, so sweet—  
'My face, my moon, my everybody's moon,  
Which everybody looks on and calls his,  
And, I suppose, is looked on by in turn,  
While she looks—no one's: very dear, no  
less.

You smile? why, there's my picture ready  
made,

There's what we painters call our har-  
mony!

A common greyness silvers everything,—  
All in a twilight, you and I alike

—You, at the point of your first pride in  
me

(That's gone you know),—but I, at every  
point;

My youth, my hope, my art, being all  
toned down

To yonder sober pleasant Fiesole.  
There's the bell clinking from the chapel-  
top;

That leaugh of convent-wall across the way  
Holds the trees safer, huddled more inside;  
The last monk leaves the garden; days  
decrease,

And autumn grows, autumn in everything.  
Eh? the whole seems to fall into a shape  
As if I saw alike my work and self

And all that I was born to be and do,  
A twilight-piece. Love, we are in God's  
hand,

How strange now, looks the life he makes  
us lead;

So free we seem, so fettered fast we are!  
I feel he laid the fetter: let it lie!

This chamber for example—turn your  
head—

All that's behind us! You don't under-  
stand

Nor care to understand about my art,  
But you can hear at least when people  
speak:

And that cartoon, the second from the door—  
It is the thing, Love! so such things  
should be—

Behold Madonna!—I am bold to say.  
I can do with my pencil what I know,  
What I see, what at bottom of my heart  
I wish for, if I ever wish so deep—  
Do easily, too—when I say, perfectly,  
I do not boast, perhaps: yourself are judge,  
Who listened to the Legate's talk last  
week,  
And just as much they used to say in  
France.

At any rate 'tis easy, all of it!  
No sketches first, no studies, that's long  
past:

I do what many dream of, all their lives,  
—Dream? strive to do, and agonize to do,  
And fail in doing. I could count twenty  
such

On twice your fingers, and not leave this  
town,

Who strive—you don't know how the  
others strive

To paint a little thing like that you smeared  
Carelessly passing with your robes  
afloat,—

Yet do much less, so much less, Someone  
says,  
(I know his name, no matter)—so much  
less!

Well, less is more, Lucrezia: I am judged.  
There burns a truer light of God in them,  
In their vexed beating stuffed and stopped-  
up brain,

Heart, or whate'er else, than goes on to  
prompt

This low-pulsed forthright craftsman's  
hand of mine.

Their works drop groundward, but them-  
selves, I know,

Reach many a time a heaven that's shut to  
me,

Enter and take their place there sure  
enough,

Though they come back and cannot tell  
the world.

My works are nearer heaven, but I sit here!  
The sudden blood of these men! at a  
word—

Praise them, it boils, or blame them, it  
boils too.

I, painting from myself and to myself,  
Know what I do, am unmoved by men's  
blame

Or their praise either. Somebody remarks  
Morello's outline there is wrongly traced,  
His hue mistaken; what of that? or else,  
Rightly traced and well ordered; what of  
that?

Speak as they please, what does the moun-  
tain care?

Ah, but a man's reach should exceed his  
grasp,

Or what's a heaven for? All is silver-grey,  
Placid and perfect with my art: the worse!  
I know both what I want and what might  
gain,

And yet how profitless to know, to sigh  
'Had I been two, another and myself,  
'Our head would have o'erlooked the  
world!' No doubt.

Yonder's a work now, of that famous  
youth

The Urbinate who died five years ago.  
( 'Tis copied, George Vasari sent it me.)

Well, I can fancy how he did it all,  
Pouring his soul, with kings and popes to  
see,

Reaching, that heaven might so replenish  
him,

Above and through his art—for it gives  
way;

That arm is wrongly put—and there  
again—

A fault to pardon in the drawing's lines,  
Its body, so to speak: its soul is right,  
He means right—that, a child may under-  
stand.

Still, what an arm! and I could alter it:  
But all the play, the insight and the  
stretch—

Out of me, out of me! And wherefore out?  
Had you enjoined them on me, given me  
soul,

We might have risen to Rafael, I and you!  
Nay, Love, you did give all I asked, I  
think—

More than I merit, yes, by many times.  
But had you—oh, with the same perfect  
brow,

And perfect eyes, and more than perfect  
mouth,

And the low voice my soul hears, as a bird  
The fowler's pipe, and follows to the  
snare—

Had you, with these the same, but brought  
a mind!

Some women do so. Had the mouth there  
urged

'God and the glory! never care for gain.  
'The present by the future, what is that?

'Live for fame, side by side with Agnolo!  
'Rafael is waiting: up to God, all three!' I  
might have done it for you. So it seems:

Perhaps not. All is as God over-rules.  
Beside, incentives come from the soul's  
self;

The rest avail not. Why do I need you?  
'What wife had Rafael, or has Agnolo?

In this world, who can do a thing, will not;  
And who would do it, cannot, I perceive:  
Yet the will's somewhat—somewhat, too,

the power—

And thus we half-men struggle. At the  
end,

God, I conclude, compensates, punishes.  
'Tis safer for me, if the award be strict,

## ANDREA DEL SARTO

That I am something underrated here,  
Poor this long while, despised, to speak  
the truth.

I dared not, do you know, leave home all  
day,  
For fear of chancing on the Paris lords.  
The best is when they pass and look aside;  
But they speak sometimes; I must bear it  
all.

Well may they speak! That Francis, that  
first time,  
And that long festal year at Fontaine-  
bleau!

I surely then could sometimes leave the  
ground,

Put on the glory, Rafael's daily wear,  
In that humane great monarch's golden  
look,—

One finger in his beard or twisted curl  
Over his mouth's good mark that made the  
smile,

One arm about my shoulder, round my  
neck,

The jingle of his gold chain in my ear,  
I painting proudly with his breath on me,  
All his court round him, seeing with his  
eyes,

Such frank French eyes, and such a fire of  
souls

Profuse, my hand kept plying by those  
hearts,—

And, best of all, this, this, this face beyond,  
This in the background, waiting on my  
work,

To crown the issue with a last reward!

A good time, was it not, my kingly  
days?

And had you not grown restless . . . but I  
know—

'Tis done and past; 'twas right, my instinct  
said;

Too live the life grew, golden and not grey,  
And I'm the weak-eyed bat no sun should  
tempt

Out of the grange whose four walls make  
his world.

How could it end in any other way?

You called me, and I came home to your  
heart.

The triumph was—to reach and stay there;  
since

I reached it ere the triumph, what is lost?

Let my hands frame your face in your  
hair's gold,

You beautiful Lucrezia that are mine!

'Rafael did this, Andrea painted that;

'The Roman's is the better when you pray,

'But still the other's Virgin was his wife—

Men will excuse me. I am glad to judge

Both pictures in your presence; clearer  
grows

My better fortune, I resolve to think.

For, do you know, Lucrezia, as God lives,

Said one day Agnolo, his very self,

To Rafael . . . I have known it all these  
years . . .

(When the young man was flaming out his  
thoughts

Upon a palace-wall for Rome to see,  
Too lifted up in heart because of it)

'Frierd, there's a certain sorry little scrub  
'Goes up and down our Florence, none  
cares how,

'Who, were he set to plan and execute  
'As you are, pricked on by your piques and

kings,  
'Would bring the sweat into that brow of  
yours!'

To Rafael's!—And indeed the arm is  
wrong.

I hardly dare . . . yet, only you to see,  
Give the chalk here—quick, thus the line

should go!

Ay, but the soul! he's Rafael! rub it out!

Still, all I care for, if he spoke the truth,  
(What he? why, who but Michel Agnolo?)

'Do you forget already words like those?)  
'If really there was such a chance, so lost,—

Is, whether you're—not grateful—but  
more pleased.

Well, let me think so. And you smile  
indeed!

This hour has been an hour! Another  
smile?

If you would sit thus by me every night  
I should work better, do you comprehend?

I mean that I should earn more, give you  
more.

See, it is settled dusk now; there's a star;  
Morello's gone, the watch-lights show the

wall,  
The cue-owls speak the name we call them  
by.

Come from the window, love,—come in,  
at last,

Inside the melancholy little house  
We built to be so gay with. God is just.

King Francis may forgive me: oft at nights  
When I look up from painting, eyes tired

out,  
The walls become illumined, brick from  
brick

Distinct, instead of mortar, fierce bright  
gold,

That gold of his I did cement them with!

Let us but love each other. Must you go?

That Cousin here again? he waits outside?

Must see you—you, and not with me?  
Those loans?

'More gaming debts to pay? you smiled for  
that?

Well, let smiles buy me! have you more to  
spend?

While hand and eye and something of a  
heart

Are left me, work's my ware, and what's  
it worth?

I'll pay my fancy. Only let me sit

The grey remainder of the evening out,  
Idle, you call it, and muse perfectly  
How I could paint, were I but back in  
France,

One picture, just one more—the Virgin's  
face,  
Not yours this time! I want you at my  
side

To hear them—that is, Michel Agnolo—  
Judge all I do and tell you of its worth.  
Will you? To-morrow, satisfy your friend.  
I take the subjects for his corridor,  
Finish the portrait out of hand—there,  
there,

And throw him in another thing or two  
If he demurs; the whole should prove  
enough

To pay for this same Cousin's freak. Be-  
side,

What's better and what's all I care about,  
Get you the thirteen scudi for the ruff!  
Love, does that please you? Ah, but what  
does he,

The Cousin! what does he to please you  
more?

I am grown peaceful as old age to-  
night.

I regret little, I would change still less.  
Since there my past life lies, why alter it?  
The very wrong to Francis!—it is true  
I took his coin, was tempted and complied,  
And built this house and sinned, and all  
is said.

My father and my mother died of want.  
Well, had I riches of my own? you see  
How one gets rich! Let each one bear his  
lot.

They were born poor, lived poor, and poor  
they died:

And I have laboured somewhat in my  
time

And not been paid profusely. Some good  
son

Paint my two hundred pictures—let him  
try!

No doubt, there's something strikes a  
balance. Yes,

You loved me quite enough, it seems to-  
night.

This must suffice me here. What would  
one have?

In heaven, perhaps, new chances, one  
more chance—

Four great walls in the New Jerusalem,  
Meted on each side by the angel's reed,  
For Leonard, Rafael, Agnolo and me  
To cover—the three first without a wife,  
While I have mine! So—still they over-  
come

Because there's still Lucrezia,—as I  
choose.

Again the Cousin's whistle! Go, my Love.

THE BISHOP ORDERS HIS TOMB  
AT SAINT PRAXED'S CHURCH

ROME, 15—

VANITY, saith the preacher, vanity!  
Draw round my bed: is Anselm keeping  
back?

Nephews—sons mine . . . ah God, I know  
not! Well—

She, men would have to be your mother  
once,

Old Gandolf envied me, so fair she was!  
What's done is done, and she is dead  
beside,

Dead long ago, and I am Bishop since,  
And as she died so must we die ourselves,  
And thence ye may perceive the world's  
a dream.

Life, how and what is it? As here I lie  
In this state-chamber, dying by degrees,  
Hours and long hours in the dead night, I  
ask

'Do I live, am I dead?' Peace, peace  
seems all.

Saint Praxed's ever was the church for  
peace;

And so, about this tomb of mine. I fought  
With tooth and nail to save my niche, ye  
know:

—Old Gandolf cozened me, despite my  
care;

Shrewd was that snatch from out the  
corner South

He graced his carrion with, God curse the  
same!

Yet still my niche is not so cramped but  
thence

One sees the pulpit o' the epistle-side,  
And somewhat of the choir, those silent  
seats,

And up into the aery dome where live  
The angels, and a sunbeam's sure to lurk:

And I shall fill my slab of basalt there,  
And 'neath my tabernacle take my rest,

With those nine columns round me, two  
and two,

The odd one at my feet where Anselm  
stands:

Peach-blossom marble all, the rare, the  
ripe

As fresh-poured red wine of a mighty  
pulse.

—Old Gandolf with his paltry onion-  
stone,

Put me where I may look at him! True  
peach,

Rosy and flawless: how I earned the prize!  
Draw close: that conflagration of my  
church

—What then? So much was saved if aught  
were missed!

My sons, ye would not be my death? Go  
dig



## THE BISHOP ORDERS HIS TOMB

The white-grape vineyard where the oil-  
press stood,  
Drop water gently till the surface sink,  
And if ye find . . . Ah God, I know not,  
I! . . .

Bedded in store of rotten fig-leaves soft,  
And corded up in a tight olive-frail,  
Some lump, ah God, of *lapis lazuli*,  
Big as a Jew's head cut off at the nape,  
Blue as a vein o'er the Madonna's  
breast . . .

Sons, all have I bequeathed you, villas, all,  
That brave Frascati villa with its bath,  
So, let the blue lump poise between my  
knees,

Like God the Father's globe on both his  
hands

Ye worship in the Jesu Church so gay,  
For Gandolf shall not choose but see and  
burst!

Swift as a weaver's shuttle fleet our years:  
Man goeth to the grave, and where is  
he?

Did I say basalt for my slab, sons? Black—  
'Twas ever antique-black I meant! How  
else

Shall ye contrast my frieze to come be-  
neath?

The bas-relief in bronze ye promised me,  
Those Pans and Nymphs ye wot of, and  
perchance

Some tripod, thyrsus, with a vase or so,  
The Saviour at his sermon on the mount,  
Saint Praxed in a glory, and one Pan  
Ready to twitch the Nymph's last garment  
off,

And Moses with the tables . . . but I know  
Ye mark me not! What do they whisper  
thee,

Child of my bowels, Anselm? Ah, ye hope  
To revel down my villas while I gasp  
Bricked o'er with beggar's mouldy traver-  
tine

Which Gandolf from his tomb-top  
chuckles at!

Nay, boys, ye love me—all of jasper, then!  
'Tis jasper ye stand pledged to, lest I grieve.  
My bath must needs be left behind, alas!  
One block, pure green as a pistachio-  
nut,

There's plenty jasper somewhere in the  
world—

And have I not Saint Praxed's ear to pray  
Horses for ye, and brown Greek manu-  
scripts,

And mistresses with great smooth marbly  
limbs?

—That's if ye carve my epitaph aright,  
Choice Latin, picked phrase, Tully's every  
word,

No gaudy ware like Gandolf's second  
line—

Tully, my masters? Ulpian serves his  
need!

And then how I shall lie through cen-  
turies,

And hear the blessed mutter of the mass,  
And see God made and eaten all day  
long,

And feel the steady candle-flame, and taste  
Good strong thick stupefying incense-  
smoke!

For as I lie here, hours of the dead night,  
Dying in state and by such slow degrees,  
I fold my arms as if they clasped a crook,  
And stretch my feet forth straight as stone  
can point,

And let the bedclothes, for a mortcloth,  
drop

Into great laps and folds of sculptor's-  
work:

And as yon tapers dwindle, and strange  
thoughts

Grow, with a certain humming in my ears,  
About the life before I lived this life,  
And this life too, popes, cardinals and  
priests,

Saint Praxed at his sermon on the mount,  
Your tall pale mother with her talking  
eyes,

And new-found agate urns as fresh as day,  
And marble's language, Latin pure, dis-  
creet,

—Aha, *ELUCESCEBAT* quoth our friend?  
No Tully, said I, Ulpian at the best!

Evil and brief hath been my pilgrimage.  
All *lapis*, all, sons! Else I give the Pope  
My villas! Will ye ever eat my heart?

Ever your eyes were as a lizard's quick,  
The glitter like your mother's for my soul,  
Or ye would heighten my impoverished  
frieze,

Piece out its starved design, and fill my  
vase

With grapes, and add a vizor and a Term,  
And to the tripod ye would tie a lynx

That in his struggle throws the thyrsus  
down,

To comfort me on my entablature  
Whereon I am to lie till I must ask

'Do I live, am I dead?' There, leave me,  
there!

For ye have stabbed me with ingratitude  
To death—ye wish it—God, ye wish it!

Stone—  
Gritstone, a-crumble! Clammy squares  
which sweat

As if the corpse they keep were oozing  
through—

And no more *lapis* to delight the world!  
Well go! I bless ye. Fewer tapers there,

But in a row: and, going, turn your backs  
—Ay, like departing altar-ministrants,

And leave me in my church, the church for  
peace,

That I may watch at leisure if he leers—  
Old Gandolf, at me, from his onion-stone,  
As still he envied me, so fair she was!

## BISHOP BLOUGRAM'S APOLOGY

No more wine? then we'll push back chairs and talk.

A final glass for me, though: cool, i' faith! We ought to have our Abbey back, you see.

It's different, preaching in basilicas, And doing duty in some masterpiece Like this of brother Pugin's, bless his heart!

I doubt if they're half baked, those chalk rosettes,

Ciphers and stucco—twiddlings everywhere;

It's just like breathing in a lime-kiln: eh? These hot long ceremonies of our church Cost us a little—oh, they pay the price, You take me—amply pay it! Now, we'll talk.

So, you despise me, Mr. Gigadibs. No deprecation,—nay, I beg you, sir! Beside 'tis our engagement: don't you know,

I promised, if you'd watch a dinner out, We'd see truth dawn together?—truth that peeps

Over the glasses' edge when dinner's done, And body gets its sop and holds its noise And leaves soul free a little. Now's the time:

Truth's break of day! You do despise me then.

And if I say, 'despise me,'—never fear! I know you do not in a certain sense—Not in my arm-chair, for example: here, I well imagine you respect my place (*Status, entourage, worldly circumstance*) Quite to its value—very much indeed:

—Are up to the protesting eyes of you In pride at being seated here for once— You'll turn it to such capital account! When somebody, through years and years to come,

Hints of the bishop,—names me—that's enough:

'Blougram? I knew him'—(into it you slide)

'Dined with him once, a Corpus Christi Day,

'All alone, we two; he's a clever man: 'And after dinner,—why, the wine you know,—

'Oh, there was wine, and good!—what with the wine . . .

'Faith, we began upon all sorts of talk! 'He's no bad fellow, Blougram; he had seen

'Something of mine he relished, some review:

'He's quite above their humbug in his heart,

'Half-said as much, indeed—the thing's his trade.

## BISHOP BLOUGRAM'S APOLOGY

'I warrant, Blougram's sceptical at times: 'How otherwise? I liked him, I confess!' *Che che*, my dear sir, as we say at Rome, Don't you protest now! It's fair give and take;

You have had your turn and spoken your home-truths:

The hand's mine now, and here you follow suit.

Thus much conceded, still the first fact stays—

You do despise me; your ideal of life Is not the bishop's: you would not be I. You would like better to be Goethe, now, Or Buonaparte, or, bless me, lower still, Count D'Orsay,—so you did what you preferred,

Spoke as you thought, and, as you cannot help,

Believed or disbelieved, no matter what, So long as on that point, whate'er it was, You loosed your mind, were whole and sole yourself.

—That, my ideal never can include, Upon that element of truth and worth Never be based! for say they make me

Pope— (They can't—suppose it for our argument!)

Why, there I'm at my tether's end, I've reached

My height, and not a height which pleases you:

An unbelieving Pope won't do, you say. It's like those eerie stories nurses tell, Of how some actor on a stage played Death,

With pasteboard crown, sham orb and tinselled dart,

And called himself the monarch of the world;

Then, going in the tire-room afterward, Because the play was done, to shift himself, Got touched upon the sleeve familiarly, The moment he had shut the closet door, By Death himself. Thus God might touch a Pope

At unawares, ask what his baubles mean, And whose part he presumed to play just now.

Best be yourself, imperial, plain and true!

So, drawing comfortable breath again, You weigh and find, whatever more or less I boast of my ideal realized

Is nothing in the balance when opposed To your ideal, your grand simple life, Of which you will not realize one jot.

I am much, you are nothing; you would be all,

I would be merely much: you beat me there.

## BISHOP BLOUGRAM'S APOLOGY

No, friend, you do not beat me: hearken  
why!

The common problem, yours, mine, every  
one's,

Is—not to fancy what were fair in life  
Provided it could be,—but, finding first  
What may be, then find how to make it  
fair

Up to our means: a very different thing!  
No abstract intellectual plan of life  
Quite irrespective of life's plainest laws,  
But one, a man, who is man and nothing  
more,

May lead within a world which (by your  
leave)

Is Rome or London, not Fool's-paradise.  
Embellish Rome, idealize away,  
Make paradise of London if you can,  
You're welcome, nay, you're wise.

A simile!

We mortals cross the ocean of this world  
Each in his average cabin of a life;

The best's not big, the worst yields elbow-  
room.

Now for our six months' voyage—how  
prepare?

You come on shipboard with a landsman's  
list

Of things he calls convenient: so they are!  
An India screen is pretty furniture,

A piano-forte is a fine resource,  
All Balzac's novels occupy one shelf,

The new edition fifty volumes long;  
And little Greek books, with the funny  
type

They get up well at Leipsic, fill the next:  
Go on! slabbed marble, what a bath it  
makes!

And Parma's pride, the Jerome, let us add!  
'Twere pleasant could Correggio's fleeting  
glow

Hang full in face of one where'er one  
roams,

Since he more than the others brings with  
him

Italy's self,—the marvellous Modenese!—  
Yet was not on your list before, perhaps.

—Alas, friend, here's the agent . . . is't  
the name?

The captain, or whoever's master here—  
You see him screw his face up; what's his  
cry

Ere you set foot on shipboard? 'Six feet  
square!'

If you won't understand what six feet  
mean,

Compute and purchase stores accord-  
ingly—

And if, in pique because he overhauls  
Your Jerome, piano, bath, you come on  
board

Bare—why, you cut a figure at the first  
While sympathetic landsmen see you off;

Not afterward, when long ere half seas  
over,

You peep up from your utterly naked  
boards

Into some snug and well-appointed berth,  
Like mine for instance (try the cooler jug—

Put back the other, but don't jog the ice!)  
And mortified you mutter 'Well and good;

'He sits enjoying his sea-furniture;  
'Tis stout and proper, and there's store  
of it:

'Though I've the better notion, all agree,  
'Of fitting rooms up. Hang the carpenter,

'Neat ship-shape fixings and contri-  
vances—

'I would have brought my Jerome, frame  
and all!'

And meantime you bring nothing: never  
mind—

You've proved your artist-nature: what  
you don't

You might bring, so despise me, as I say.

' Now come, let's backward to the start-  
ing-place.

See my way: we're two college friends,  
suppose.

Prepare together for our voyage, then;  
Each note and check the other in his  
work,—

Here's mine, a bishop's outfit; criticize!  
What's wrong? why won't you be a bishop  
too?

Why first, you don't believe, you don't  
and can't,

(Not stately, that is, and fixedly  
And absolutely and exclusively)

In any revelation called divine.  
No dogmas nail your faith; and what re-  
mains

But say so, like the honest man you are?  
First, therefore, overhaul theology!

Nay, I too, not a fool, you please to think,  
Must find believing every whit as hard:

And if I do not frankly say as much,  
The ugly consequence is clear enough.

Now wait, my friend: well, I do not  
believe—

If you'll accept no faith that is not fixed,  
Absolute and exclusive, as you say.

You're wrong—I mean to prove it in due  
time.

Meanwhile, I know where difficulties lie  
I could not, cannot solve, nor ever shall,

So give up hope accordingly to solve—  
(To you, and over the wine). Our dogmas  
then

With both of us, though in unlike degree,  
Missing full credence—overboard with  
them!

I mean to meet you on your own premise:  
Good, there go mine in company with  
yours!

## BISHOP BLOUGRAM'S APOLOGY

And now what are we? unbelievers both,  
Calm and complete, determinately fixed  
To-day, to-morrow and for ever, pray?  
You'll guarantee me that? Not so, I think!  
In no wise! all we've gained is, that belief,  
As unbelief before, shakes us by fits,  
Confound us like its predecessor.

Where's

The gain? how can we guard our unbelief,  
Make it bear fruit to us?—the problem  
here.

Just when we are safest, there's a sunset-  
touch,

A fancy from a flower-bell, some one's  
death,

A chorus-ending from Euripides,—  
And that's enough for fifty hopes and fears

As old and new at once as nature's self,  
To rap and knock and enter in our soul,  
Take hands and dance there, a fantastic  
ring,

Round the ancient idol, on his base  
again,—

The grand Perhaps! We look on help-  
lessly.

There the old misgivings, crooked ques-  
tions are—

This good God,—what he could do, if he  
would,

Would, if he could—then must have done  
long since:

If so, when, where and how? some way  
must be,—

Once feel about, and soon or late you hit  
Some sense, in which it might be, after all.  
Why not, 'The Way, the Truth, the Life?'

—That way

Over the mountain, which who stands  
upon

Is apt to doubt if it be meant for a road;  
While, if he views it from the waste itself,  
Up goes the line there, plain from base to  
brow,

Not vague, mistakeable! what's a break  
or two

Seen from the unbroken desert either side?  
And then (to bring in fresh philosophy)

What if the breaks themselves should  
prove at last

The most consummate of contrivances  
To train a man's eye, teach him what is  
faith?

And so we tumble at truth's very test!  
All we have gained then by our unbelief

Is a life of doubt diversified by faith,  
For one of faith diversified by doubt:

We called the chess-board white,—we call  
it black.

'Well,' you rejoin, 'the end's no worse,  
at least

'We've reason for both colours on the  
board:

'Why not confess then, where I drop the  
faith

'And you the doubt, that I'm as right as  
you?'

Because, friend, in the next place, this  
being so,

And both things even,—faith and unbelief  
Left to a man's choice,—we'll proceed a  
step,

Returning to our image, which I like.

A man's choice, yes—but a cabin-pas-  
senger's—

The man made for the special life o' the  
world—

Do you forget him? I remember though!  
Consult our ship's conditions and you  
find

One and but one choice suitable to all;  
The choice, that you unluckily prefer,

Turning things topsy-turvy—they or it  
Going to the ground. Belief or unbelief

Bears upon life, determines its whole  
course,

Begins at its beginning. See the world  
Such as it is,—you made it not, nor I;

I mean to take it as it is,—and you,  
Not so you'll take it,—though you get  
nought else.

I know the special kind of life I like,  
What suits the most my idiosyncrasy,

Brings out the best of me and bears me  
fruit

In power, peace, pleasantness and length  
of days.

I find that positive belief does this  
For me, and unbelief, no whit of this.

—For you, it does, however?—that, we'll  
try!

'Tis clear, I cannot lead my life, at least,  
Induce the world to let me peaceably,

Without declaring at the outset, 'Friends,  
'I absolutely and peremptorily

'Believe!'—I say, faith is my waking life:  
One sleeps, indeed, and dreams at inter-  
vals,

We know, but waking's the main point  
with us,

And my provision's for life's waking part.  
Accordingly, I use heart, head and hand

All day, I build, scheme, study, and make  
friends;

And when night overtakes me, down I  
lie,

'Sleep, dream a little, and get done with it,  
The sooner the better, to begin afresh.

What's midnight doubt before the day-  
spring's faith?

\*You, the philosopher, that disbelieve,  
That recognize the night, give dreams their  
weight—

To be consistent you should keep your  
bed,

## BISHOP BLOUGRAM'S APOLOGY

Abstain from healthy acts that prove you  
man,  
For fear you drowse perhaps at unawares!  
And certainly at night you'll sleep and  
dream,  
Live through the day and bustle as you  
please.  
And so you live to sleep as I to wake,  
To unbelieve as I to still believe?  
Well, and the common sense o' the world  
calls you  
Bed-ridden,—and its good things come to  
me.  
Its estimation, which is half the fight,  
That's the first-cabin comfort I secure:  
The next . . . bu. you perceive with half an  
eye!  
Come, come, it's best believing, if we may;  
You can't but own that!

Next, concede again,  
If once we choose belief, on all accounts  
We can't be too decisive in our faith,  
Conclusive and exclusive in its terms,  
To suit the world which gives us the good  
things.

In every man's career are certain points  
Whereon he dares not be indifferent;  
The world detects him clearly, if he dare,  
As baffled at the game, and losing life.  
He may care little or he may care much  
For riches, honour, pleasure, work, re-  
pose,

Since various theories of life and life's  
Success are extant which might easily  
Comport with either estimate of these;  
And whoso chooses wealth or poverty,  
Labour or quiet, is not judged a fool  
Because his fellow would choose other-  
wise:

We let him choose upon his own account  
So long as he's consistent with his choice.  
But certain points, left wholly to himself,  
When once a man has arbitrated on,  
We say he must succeed there or go hang.  
Thus, he should wed the woman he loves  
most

Or needs most, whatsoe'er the love or  
need—  
For he can't wed twice. Then, he must  
avouch,

Or follow, at the least, sufficiently,  
The form of faith his conscience holds the  
best,

Whate'er the process of conviction was:  
For nothing can compensate his mistake.  
On such a point, the man himself being  
judge:  
He cannot wed twice, nor twice lose his  
soul.

Well now, there's one great form of  
Christian faith  
I happened to be born in—which to teach

Was given me as I grew up, on all hands,  
As best and readiest means of living by;  
The same on examination being proved  
The most pronounced moreover, fixed,  
precise

And absolute form of faith in the whole  
world—

Accordingly, most potent of all forms  
For working on the world. Observe, my  
friend!

Such as you know me, I am free to say,  
In these hard latter days which hamper  
one,

Myself—by no immoderate exercise  
Of intellect and learning, but the tact  
To let external forces work for me,  
—Bid the street's stones be bread and they  
are bread;

Bid Peter's creed, or rather, Hildebrand's,  
Exalt me o'er my fellows in the world  
And make my life an ease and joy and  
pride;

It does so,—which for me's a great point  
gained,

Who have a soul and body that exact  
A comfortable care in many ways.  
There's power in me and will to dominate  
Which I must exercise, they hurt me else:  
In many ways I need mankind's respect,  
Obedience, and the love that's born of  
fear:

While at the same time, there's a taste I  
have,

A toy of soul, a titillating thing,  
Refuses to digest these dainties crude.  
The naked life is gross till clothed upon:  
I must take what men offer, with a grace  
As though I would not, could I help it,  
take!

An uniform I wear though over-rich—  
Something imposed on me, no choice of  
mine;

No fancy-dress worn for pure fancy's sake  
And despicable therefore! now folk kneel  
And kiss my hand—of course the Church's  
hand.

Thus I am made, thus life is best for me,  
And thus that it should be I have procured;  
And thus it could not be another way,  
I venture to imagine.

You'll reply,

So far my choice, no doubt, is a success;  
But were I made of better elements,  
With nobler instincts, purer tastes, like  
you,

I hardly would account the thing success  
Though it did all for me I say.

But, friend,

We speak of what is; not of what might be,  
And how 'twere better if 'twere otherwise.  
I am the man you see here plain enough:

## BISHOP BLOUGRAM'S APOLOGY

Grant I'm a beast, why, beasts must lead  
beasts' lives!

Suppose I own at once to tail and claws;  
The tailless man exceeds me: but being  
tailed

I'll lash out lion-fashion, and leave apes  
To dock their stump and dress their  
haunches up.

My business is not to remake myself,  
But make the absolute best of what God  
made.

Or—our first simile—though you prove  
me doomed

To a viler berth still, to the steerage-hole,  
The sheep-pen or the pig-stye, I should  
strive

To make what use of each were possible;  
And as this cabin gets upholstery,  
That hutch should rustle with sufficient  
straw.

But, friend, I don't acknowledge quite  
so fast

I fail of all your manhood's lofty tastes'  
Enumerated so complacently,  
On the mere ground that you forsooth can  
find

In this particular life I choose to lead  
No fit provision for them. Can you not?  
Say you, my fault is I address myself  
To grosser estimators than should judge?  
And that's no way of holding up the soul,  
Which, robber, needs men's praise per-  
haps, yet knows

One wise man's verdict outweighs all the  
fools'—

Would like the two, but, forced to choose,  
takes that.

I pine among my million imbeciles  
(You think) aware some dozen men of  
sense

Eye me and know me, whether I believe  
In the last winking Virgin, as I vow,  
And am a fool, or disbelieve in her  
And am a knave,—approve in neither case,  
Withhold their voices though I look their  
way:

Like Verdi when, at his worst opera's end  
(The thing they gave at Florence,—what's  
its name?)

While the mad houseful's plaudits near  
outbang

His orchestra of salt-box, tongs and bones,  
He looks through all the roaring and the  
wreaths

Where sits Rossini patient in his stall.

Nay, friend, I meet you with an answer  
here—

That even your prime men who appraise  
their kind

Are men still, catch a wheel within a wheel,  
See more in a truth than the truth's simple  
self,

Confuse themselves. You see lads walk  
the street

Sixty the minute; what's to note in that?  
You see one lad o'erstride a chimney-  
stack;

Him you must watch—he's sure to fall,  
yet stands!

Our interest's on the dangerous edge of  
things.

The honest thief, the tender murderer,  
The superstitious atheist, demirep  
That loves and saves her soul in new  
French books—

We watch while these in equilibrium keep  
The giddy line midway: one step aside,  
They're classed and done with. I, then,  
keep the line

Before your sages,—just the men to shrink  
From the gross weights, coarse scales and  
labels broad

You offer their refinement. Fool or  
knave?

Why needs a bishop be a fool or knave  
When there's a thousand diamond weights  
between?

So, I enlist them. Your picked twelve,  
you'll find,

Profess themselves indignant, scandalized  
At thus being held unable to explain  
How a superior man who disbelieves  
May not believe as well: that's Schelling's  
way!

It's through my coming in the tail of time,  
Nicking the minute with a happy tact.

Had I been born three hundred years ago  
They'd say, 'What's strange? Blougram  
of course believes;'

And, seventy years since, 'disbelieves of  
course.'

But now, 'He may believe; and yet, and  
yet

'How can he?' All eyes turn with in-  
terest.

Whereas, step off the line on either side—  
You, for example, clever to a fault,

The rough and ready man who write  
apace,

Read somewhat seldomer, think perhaps  
even less—

You disbelieve! Who wonders and who  
cares?

Lord So-and-so—his coat bedropped with  
wax,

All Peter's chains about his waist, his  
back

Brave with the needlework of Noodle-  
dom—

Believes! Again, who wonders and who  
cares?

But I, the man of sense and learning too,  
The able to think yet act, the this, the that,  
I, to believe at this late time of day!

Enough; you see, I need not fear con-  
tempt.

## BISHOP BLOUGRAM'S APOLOGY

—Except it's yours! Admire me as these may,  
 You don't. But whom at least do you admire?  
 Present your own perfection, your ideal,  
 Your pattern man for a minute—oh, make haste!  
 Is it Napoleon you would have us grow?  
 Concede the means; allow his head and hand,  
 (A large concession, clever as you are)  
 Good! In our common primal element  
 Of unbelief (we can't believe, you know—  
 We're still at that admission, recollect!)  
 Where do you find—apart from, towering o'er  
 The secondary temporary aims  
 Which satisfy the gross taste you despise—  
 Where do you find his star?—his crazy trust  
 God knows through what or in what? it's alive  
 And shines and leads him, and that's all we want.  
 Have we aught in our sober night shall point  
 Such ends as his were, and direct the means  
 Of working out our purpose straight as his,  
 Nor bring a moment's trouble on success  
 With after-care to justify the same?  
 —Be a Napoleon, and yet disbelieve—  
 Why, the man's mad, friend, take his light away!  
 What's the vague good o' the world, for which you dare  
 With comfort to yourself blow millions up?  
 We neither of us see it! we do see  
 The blown-up millions—spatter of their brains  
 And writhing of their bowels and so forth,  
 In that bewildering entanglement  
 Of horrible eventualities  
 Past calculation to the end of time!  
 Can I mistake for some clear word of God  
 (Which were my ample warrant for it all)  
 His puff of hazy instinct, idle talk,  
 'The State, that's I,' quack-nonsense about crowns,  
 And (when one beats the man to his last hold)  
 A vague idea of setting things to rights,  
 Policing people efficaciously,  
 More to their profit, most of all to his own;  
 The whole to end that dismallest of ends  
 By an Austrian marriage, cant to us the Church,  
 And resurrection of the old *régime*?  
 Would I, who hope to live a dozen years,  
 Fight Austerlitz for reasons such and such?  
 No: for, concede me but the merest chance  
 Doubt may be wrong—there's judgment, life to come!

With just that chance, I dare not. Doubt proves right?  
 This present life is all?—you offer me  
 Its dozen noisy years, without a chance  
 That wedding an archduchess, wearing lace,  
 And getting called by divers new-coined names,  
 Will drive off ugly thoughts and let me dine,  
 Sleep, read and chat in quiet as I like!  
 Therefore I will not.

Take another case;  
 Fit up the cabin yet another way.  
 What say you to the poets? shall we write  
 Hamlet, Othello—make the world our own,  
 Without a risk to run of either sort?  
 I can't!—to put the strongest reason first.  
 'But try,' you urge, 'the trying shall suffice;  
 'The aim, if reached or not, makes great the life:  
 'Try to be Shakespeare, leave the rest to fate!'  
 Spare my self-knowledge—there's no fooling me!  
 If I prefer remaining my poor self,  
 I say so not in self-dispraise but praise.  
 If I'm a Shakespeare, let the well alone;  
 Why should I try to be what now I am?  
 If I'm no Shakespeare, as too probable,—  
 His power and consciousness and self-delight  
 And all we want in common, shall I find—  
 Trying for ever? while on points of taste  
 Wherewith, to speak it humbly, he and I  
 Are dowered alike—I'll ask you, I or he,  
 Which in our two lives realizes most?  
 Much, he imagined—somewhat, I possess.  
 He had the imagination; stick to that!  
 Let him say, 'In the face of my soul's works  
 'Your world is worthless and I touch it not  
 'Lest I should wrong them'—I'll withdraw my plea.  
 But does he say so? look upon his life!  
 Himself, who only can, gives judgment there.  
 He leaves his towers and gorgeous palaces  
 To build the trimmest house in Stratford town;  
 Saves money, spends it, owns the worth of things,  
 Giulio Romano's pictures, Dowland's lute;  
 Enjoys a show, respects the puppets, too,  
 And none more, had he seen its entry once,  
 Than 'Pandolph, of fair Milan cardinal.'  
 Why then should I who play that personage,  
 The very Pandolph Shakespeare's fancy made,

## BISHOP BLOUGRAM'S APOLOGY

Be told that had the poet chanced to start  
From where I stand now (some degree like  
mine

Being just the goal he ran his race to reach)  
He would have run the whole race back,  
forsooth,

And left being Pandulph, to begin 'write  
plays?

Ah, the earth's best can be but the earth's  
best!

Did Shakespeare live, he could but sit at  
home

And get himself in dreams the Vatican,  
Greek busts, Venetian paintings, Roman  
walls,

And English books, none equal to his own,  
Which I read, bound in gold (he never did).

—Terni's fall, Naples' bay and Gothard's  
top—

Eh, friend? I could not fancy one of these;  
But, as I pour this claret, there they are:  
I've gained them—crossed St. Gothard  
last July

With ten mules to the carriage and a bed  
Slung inside; is my hap the worse for that?  
We want the same things, Shakespeare  
and myself,

And what I want, I have: he, gifted more,  
Could fancy he too had them when he  
liked,

But not so thoroughly that, if fate allowed,  
He would not have them also in my sense.  
We play one game; I send the ball aloft  
No less adroitly that of fifty strokes  
Scarce five go o'er the wall so wide and  
high

Which sends them back to me: I wish and  
get.

He struck balls higher and with better  
skill,

But at a poor fence level with his head,  
And hit—his Stratford house, a coat of  
arms,

Successful dealings in his grain and  
wool,—

While I receive heaven's incense in my  
nose

And style myself the cousin of Queen Bess.  
Ask him, if this life's all, who wins the  
game?

Believe — and our whole argument  
breaks up.

Enthusiasm's the best thing, I repeat;  
Only, we can't command it; fire and life  
Are all, dead matter's nothing, we agree:

And be it a mad dream or God's very  
breath,

The fact's the same,—belief's fire, once in  
us,

Makes of all else mere stuff to show itself:  
We penetrate our life with such a glow

As fire lends wood and iron—this turns  
steel,

That burns to ash—all's one, fire proves  
its power

For good or ill, since men call flare success.  
But paint a fire, it will not therefore burn.  
Light one in me, I'll find it food enough!

Why, to be Luther—that's a life to lead,  
Incomparably better than my own.

He comes, reclaims God's earth for God,  
he says,

Sets up God's rule again by simple means,  
Re-opens a shut book, and all is done.

He flared out in the flaring of mankind;  
Such Luther's luck was: how shall such  
be mine?

If he succeeded, nothing's left to do:  
And if he did not altogether—well,

Strauss is the next advance. All Strauss  
should be

I might be also. But to what result?  
He looks upon no future: Luther did.

What can I gain on the denying side?  
Ice makes no conflagration. State the  
facts,

Read the text right, emancipate the  
world—

The emancipated world enjoys itself  
With scarce a thank-you: Blougram told  
it first

It could not owe a farthing,—not to him  
More than Saint Paul! 'twould press its

pay, you think?

Then add there's still that plaguy hun-  
dredth chance

Strauss may be wrong. And so a risk is  
run—

For what gain? not for Luther's, who  
secured

A real heaven in his heart throughout his  
life,

Supposing death a little altered things.

'Ay, but since really you lack faith,' you  
cry,

'You run the same risk really on all sides,  
'In cool indifference as bold unbelief.

'As well be Strauss as swing 'twixt Paul  
and him.

'It's not worth having, such imperfect  
faith,

'No more available to do faith's work  
'Than unbelief like mine. Whole faith, or  
none!'

Softly, my friend! I must dispute that  
point.

Once own the use of faith, I'll find you  
faith.

We're back on Christian ground. You call  
for faith:

I show you doubt, to prove that faith  
exists.

The more of doubt, the stronger faith, I  
say,



## BISHOP BLOUGRAM'S APOLOGY

If faith o'ercomes doubt. How I know it does?

By life and man's free will, God gave for that!

To mould life as we choose it, shows our choice:

That's our one act, the previous work's his own.

You criticize the soul? it reared this tree—

This broad life and whatever fruit it bears!

What matter though I doubt at every pore, Head-doubts, doubts at my fingers' ends,

Doubts in the trivial work of every day, Doubts at the very bases of my soul

In the grand moments when she probes herself—

If finally I have a life to show, The thing I did, brought out in evidence

Against the thing done to me underground By hell and all its brood, for aught I know?

I say, whence sprang this? shows it faith or doubt?

All's doubt in me; where's break of faith in this?

It is the idea, the feeling and the love, God means mankind should strive for and show forth

Whatever be the process to that end,— And not historic knowledge, logic sound, And metaphysical acumen, sure!

'What think ye of Christ,' friend? when all's done and said,

Like you this Christianity or not? It may be false, but will you wish it true?

Has it your vote to be so if it can? Trust you an instinct silenced long ago

That will break silence and enjoin you love What mortified philosophy is hoarse,

And all in vain, with bidding you despise? If you desire faith—then you've faith enough:

What else seeks God—nay, what else seek ourselves?

You form a notion of me, we'll suppose, On hearsay; it's a favourable one:

'But still' (you add), 'there was no such good man,

'Because of contradiction in the facts. 'One proves, for instance, he was born in Rome,

'This Blougram; yet throughout the tales of him

'I see he figures as an Englishman.' Well, the two things are reconcileable.

But would I rather you discovered that, Subjoining—'Still, what matter though they be?

'Blougram concerns me nought, born here or there.'

Pure faith indeed—you know not what you ask!

Naked belief in God the Omnipotent, Omniscient, Omnipresent, sears too much

The sense of conscious creatures to be borne.

It were the seeing him, no flesh shall dare. Some think, Creation's meant to show him forth:

I say it's meant to hide him all it can, And that's what all the blessed evil's for.

Its use in Time is to environ us, Our breath, our drop of dew, with shield enough

Against that sight till we can bear its stress. Under a vertical sun, the exposed brain

And lidless eye and disemprisoned heart Less certainly would wither up at once

Than mind, confronted with the truth of him.

But time and earth case-harden us to live; The feeblest sense is trusted most, the child

Feels God a moment, ichors o'er the place, Plays on and grows to be a man like us.

With me, faith means perpetual unbelief Kept quiet like the snake 'neath Michael's foot

'Who stands calm just because he feels it writhe.

Or, if that's too ambitious,—here's my box—

I need the excitation of a pinch Threatening the torpor of the inside-nose

Nigh on the imminent sneeze that never comes.

'Leave it in peace' advise the simple folk: Make it aware of peace by itching-fits,

Say I—let doubt occasion still more faith!

You'll say, once all believed, man, woman, child,

In that dear middle-age these noodles praise.

How you'd exult if I could put you back Six hundred years, blot out cosmogony,

Geology, ethnology, what not, (Greek endings, each the little passing-bell

That signifies some faith's about to die), And set you square with Genesis again,—

When such a traveller told you his last news,

He saw the ark a-top of Ararat But did not climb there since 'twas getting dusk

And robber-bands infest the mountain's foot!

How should you feel, I ask, in such an age, How act? As other people felt and did;

With soul more blank than this decanter's knob,

Believe—and yet lie, kill, rob, fornicate Full in belief's face, like the beast you'd bel

No, when the fight begins within himself,

A man's worth something. God stoops o'er his head,

## BISHOP BLOUGRAM'S APOLOGY

Satan looks up between his feet—both  
 tug—  
 He's left, himself, i' the middle; the soul  
 wakes  
 And grows. Prolong that battle through  
 his life!  
 Never leave growing till the life to come!  
 Here, we've got callous to the Virgin's  
 winks  
 That used to puzzle people wholesomely:  
 Men have outgrown the shame of being  
 fools.  
 What are the laws of nature, not to bend  
 If the Church bid them?—brother New-  
 man asks.  
 Up with the Immaculate Conception,  
 then—  
 On to the rack with faith!—is my advice.  
 Will not that hurry us upon our knees,  
 Knocking our breasts, 'It can't be—yet it  
 shall!  
 'Who am I, the worm, to argue with my  
 Pope?  
 'Low things confound the high things!'  
 and so forth.  
 That's better than acquitting God with  
 grace  
 As some folk do. He's tried—no case is  
 proved,  
 Philosophy is lenient—he may go!

You'll say, the old system's not so  
 obsolete  
 But men believe still: ay, but who and  
 where?  
 King Bomba's lazzaroni foster yet  
 The sacred flame, so Antonelli writes;  
 But even of these, what ragamuffin-saint  
 Believes God watches him continually,  
 As he believes in fire that it will burn,  
 Or rain that it will drench him? Break  
 fire's law,  
 Sin against rain, although the penalty  
 Be just a singe or soaking? 'No,' he  
 smiles;  
 'Those laws are laws that can enforce  
 themselves.'

The sum of all is—yes, my doubt is  
 great,  
 My faith's still greater, then my faith's  
 enough.  
 I have read much, thought much, experi-  
 enced much,  
 Yet would die rather than avow my fear  
 The Naples' liquefaction may be false,  
 When set to happen by the palace-clock  
 According to the clouds or dinner-time.  
 I hear you recommend, I might at least  
 Eliminate, declassify my faith  
 Since I adopt it; keeping what I must  
 And leaving what I can—such points as  
 this.  
 I won't—that is, I can't throw one away.

Supposing there's no truth in what I hold  
 About the need of trial to man's faith,  
 Still, when you bid me purify the same,  
 To such a process I discern no end.  
 Clearing off one excrescence to see two,  
 There's ever a next in size, now grown as  
 big,  
 That meets the knife: I cut and cut again!  
 First cut the Liquefaction, what comes last  
 But Fichte's clever cut at God himself?  
 Experimentalize on sacred things!  
 I trust nor hand nor eye nor heart nor brain  
 To stop betimes: they all get drunk alike.  
 The first step, I am master not to take.

You'd find the cutting-process to your  
 taste  
 As much as leaving growths of lies un-  
 pruned,  
 Nor see more danger in it,—you retort.  
 Your taste's worth mine; but my taste  
 proves more wise  
 When we consider that the steadfast hold  
 On the extreme end of the chain of faith  
 Gives the advantage, makes the differ-  
 ence  
 With the rough purblind mass we seek to  
 rule:  
 We are their lords, or they are free of us,  
 Just as we tighten or relax our hold.  
 So, other matters equal, we'll revert  
 To the first problem—which, if solved my  
 way  
 And thrown into the balance, turns the  
 scale—  
 How we may lead a comfortable life,  
 How suit our luggage to the cabin's size.

Of course you are remarking all this  
 time  
 How narrowly and grossly I view life,  
 Respect the creature-comforts, care to rule  
 The masses, and regard complacently  
 'The cabin,' in our old phrase. Well, I do.  
 I act for, talk for, live for this world now,  
 As this world prizes action, life and talk:  
 No prejudice to what next world may  
 prove,  
 Whose new laws and requirements, my  
 best pledge  
 To observe then, is that I observe these  
 now,  
 Shall do hereafter what I do meanwhile.  
 Let us concede (gratuitously though)  
 Next life relieves the soul of body, yields  
 Pure spiritual enjoyment: well, my friend,  
 Why lose this life i' the meantime, since its  
 use  
 May be to make the next life more intense?

Do you know, I have often had a dream  
 (Work it up in your next month's article)  
 Of man's poor spirit in its progress, still  
 Losing true life for ever and a day

## BISHOP BLOUGRAM'S APOLOGY

Through ever trying to be and ever being—  
 In the evolution of successive spheres—  
*Before* its actual sphere and place of life,  
 Halfway into the next, which having  
     reached,  
 It shoots with corresponding foolery  
 Halfway into the next still, on and off!  
 As when a traveller, bound from North to  
     South,  
 Scouts fur in Russia: what's its use in  
     France?  
 In France spurns flannel: where's its need  
     in Spain?  
 In Spain drops cloth, too cumbrous for  
     Algiers!  
 Linen goes next, and last the skin itself,  
 A superfluity at Timbuctoo.  
 When, through his journey, was the fool  
     at ease?  
 I'm at ease now, friend; worldly in this  
     world,  
 I take and like its way of life; I think  
 My brothers, who administer the means,  
 Live better for my comfort—that's good  
     too;  
 And God, if he pronounce upon such life,  
 Approves my service, which is better still.  
 If he keep silence,—why, for you or me  
 Or that brute beast pulled-up in to-day's  
     'Times,'  
 What odds is't, save to ourselves, what life  
     we lead?

You meet me at this issue: you de-  
     clare,—  
 All special-pleading done with—truth is  
     truth,  
 And justifies itself by undreamed ways.  
 You don't fear but it's better, if we  
     doubt,  
 To say so, act up to our truth perceived  
 However feebly. Do then,—act away!  
 'Tis there I'm on the watch for you. How  
     one acts  
 Is, both of us agree, our chief concern:  
 And how you'll act is what I fain would see  
 If, like the candid person you appear,  
 You dare to make the most of your life's  
     scheme  
 As I of mine, live up to its full law  
 Since there's no higher law that counter-  
     checks,  
 Put natural religion to the test  
 You've just demolished the revealed with  
     —quick,  
 Down to the root of all that checks your  
     will,  
 All prohibition to lie, kill and thief,  
 Or even to be an atheistic priest!  
 Suppose a pricking to incontinence—  
 Philosophers deduce you chastity  
 Or shame, from just the fact that at the  
     first  
 Whoso embraced a woman in the field,

Threw club down and forewent his brains  
     beside,  
 So, stood a ready victim in the reach  
 Of any brother savage, club in hand;  
 Hence saw the use of going out of sight  
 In wood or cave to prosecute his loves:  
 I read this in a French book t'other day.  
 Does law so analysed coerce you much?  
 Oh, men spin clouds of fuzz where matters  
     end,  
 But you who reach where the first thread  
     begins,  
 You'll soon cut that!—which means you  
     can, but won't,  
 Through certain instincts, blind, un-  
     reasoned out,  
 You dare not set aside, you can't tell why,  
 But there they are, and so you let them  
     rule.  
 Then, friend, you seem as much a slave  
     as I,  
 A liar, conscious coward and hypocrite,  
 Without the good the slave expects to get,  
 In case he has a master after all!  
 You own your instincts? why, what else  
     do I,  
 Who want, am made for, and must have  
     a God  
 Ere I can be aught, do aught?—no mere  
     name  
 Want, but the true thing with what proves  
     its truth,  
 To wit, a relation from that thing to me,  
 Touching from head to foot—which touch  
     I feel,  
 And with it take the rest, this life of ours!  
 I live my life here; yours you dare not live.

—Not as I state it, who (you please sub-  
     join)  
 Disfigure such a life and call it names.  
 While, to your mind, remains another way  
 For simple men: knowledge and power  
     have rights,  
 But ignorance and weakness have rights  
     too.  
 There needs no crucial effort to find truth  
 If here or there or anywhere about:  
 We ought to turn each side, try hard and  
     see,  
 And if we can't, be glad we've earned at  
     least  
 The right, by one laborious proof the  
     more,  
 To graze in peace earth's pleasant pastur-  
     age.  
 Men are not angels, neither are they  
     brutes:  
 Something we may see, all we cannot see.  
 What need of lying? I say, I see all,  
 And swear to each detail the most minute  
 In what I think a Pan's face—you, mere  
     cloud:  
 I swear I hear him speak and see him wink,

## BISHOP BLOUGRAM'S APOLOGY

For fear, if once I drop the emphasis,  
Mankind may doubt there's any cloud at  
all.

You take the simple life—ready to see,  
Willing to see (for no cloud's worth a  
face)—

And leaving quiet what no strength can  
move,

And which, who bids you move? who has  
the right?

I bid you; but you are God's sheep, not  
mine:

'*Pastor est tui Dominus.*' You find  
In this the pleasant pasture of our life

Much you may eat without the least  
offence,

Much you don't eat because your maw  
objects,

Much you would eat but that your fellow-  
flock

Open great eyes at you and even butt,  
And thereupon you like your mates so well

You cannot please yourself, offending  
them;

Though when they seem exorbitantly  
sheep,

You weigh your pleasure with their butts  
and bleats

And strike the balance. Sometimes certain  
fears

Restrain you, real checks since you find  
them so;

Sometimes you please yourself and no-  
thing checks:

And thus you graze through life with not  
one lie,

And like it best.

But do you, in truth's name?

If so, you beat—which means you are not  
I—

Who needs must make earth mine and  
feed my fill

Not simply unbutted at, unbickered with,  
But motioned to the velvet of the sword

By those obsequious wethers' very selves.  
Look at me, sir; my age is double yours:

At yours, I knew beforehand, so enjoyed,  
What now I should be—as, permit the

word,  
I pretty well imagine your whole range

And stretch of tether twenty years to come.  
We both have minds and bodies much

alike:  
In truth's name, don't you want my

bishopric,  
My daily bread, my influence and my

state?  
You're young. I'm old; you must be old

one day;  
Will you find then, as I do hour by hour,

Women their lovers kneel to, who cut curls  
From your fat lap-dog's ear to grace a

brooch—

Dukes, who petition just to kiss your  
ring—

With much beside you know or may con-  
ceive?

Suppose we die to-night; well, here am I,  
Such were my gains, life bore this fruit to

me,  
While writing all the same my articles

On music, poetry, the fictile vase  
Found at Albano, chess, Anacreon's

Greek.  
But you—the highest honour in your life,

The thing you'll crown yourself with, all  
your days,

Is—dining here and drinking this last glass  
I pour you out in sign of amity

Before we part for ever. Of your power  
And social influence, worldly worth in

short,  
Judge what's my estimation by the fact,

I do not condescend to enjoin, beseech,  
Hint secrecy on one of all these words!

You're shrewd and know that should you  
publish one

The world would brand the lie—my ene-  
mies first,

Who'd sneer—'the bishop's an arch-  
hypocrite

'And knave perhaps, but not so frank a  
fool.'

Whereas I should not dare for both my  
ears

Breathe one such syllable, smile one such  
smile,

Before the chaplain who reflects myself—  
My shade's so much more potent than

your flesh.  
What's your reward, self-abnegating

friend?  
Stood you confessed of those exceptional

And privileged great natures that dwarf  
mine—

A zealot with a mad ideal in reach,  
A poet just about to print his ode,

A statesman with a scheme to stop this  
war,

An artist whose religion is his art—  
I should have nothing to object: such men

Carry the fire, all things grow warm to  
them,

Their druggist's worth my purple, they  
beat me.

But you,—you're just as little those as I—  
You, Gigadibs, who, thirty years of age,

Write steadily for Blackwood's Maga-  
zine,

Believe you see two points in Hamlet's soul  
Unseized by the Germans yet—which view

you'll print—  
Meantime the best you have to show being

still  
That lively lightsome article we took

Almost for the true Dickens,—what's its  
name?

## CLEON

Resolved into a subtler element.

And yet the vulgar call the sphere first full  
Up to the visible height—and after, void;  
Not knowing air's more hidden properties.  
And thus our soul, misknown, cries out to  
Zeus

To vindicate his purpose in our life:  
Why stay he on the earth unless to grow?  
Long since, I imaged, wrote the fiction out,  
That he or other god descended here  
And, once for all, showed simultaneously  
And, in its nature, never can be shown,  
Piecemeal or in succession;—showed, I  
say,

The worth both absolute and relative  
Of all his children from the birth of time,  
His instruments for all appointed work.  
I now go on to image,—might we hear  
The judgment which should give the due  
to each,

Show where the labour lay and where the  
ease,  
And prove Zeus' self, the latent every-  
where!

This is a dream:—but no dream, let us  
hope,

That years and days, the summers and the  
springs,

Follow each other with unwaning powers.  
The grapes which dye thy wine are richer  
far,

Through culture, than the wild wealth of  
the rock;

The suave plum than the savage-tasted  
drupe;

The pastured honey-bee drops choicer  
sweet;

The flowers turn double, and the leaves  
turn flowers;

That young and tender crescent-moon, thy  
slave,

Sleeping above her robe as buoyed by  
clouds,

Refines upon the women of my youth.  
What, and the soul alone deteriorates?

I have not chanted verse like Homer, no—  
Nor swept string like Terpander, no—nor  
carved

And painted men like Phidias and his  
friend:

I am not great as they are, point by point.  
But I have entered into sympathy

With these four, running these into one  
soul,

Who, separate, ignored each other's art.  
Say, is it nothing that I know them all?

The wild flower was the larger; I have  
dashed

Rose-blood upon its petals, pricked its  
cup's

Honey with wine, and driven its seed to  
fruit,

And show a better flower if not so large:  
I stand myself. Refer this to the gods

Whose gift alone it is! which, shall I dare  
(All pride apart) upon the absurd pretext  
That such a gift by chance lay in my hand,  
Discourse of lightly or depreciate?  
It might have fallen to another's hand:  
what then?

I pass too surely: let at least truth stay!

And next, of what thou followest on to  
ask.

This being with me as I declare, C king,  
My works, in all these varicoloured kinds,  
So done by me, accepted so by men—

Thou askest, if (my soul thus in men's  
hearts)

I must not be accounted to attain  
The very crown and proper end of life?

Inquiring thence how, now life closeth up,  
I face death with success in my right hand:

Whether I fear death less than dost thyself  
The fortunate of men? 'For' (writest  
thou)

'Thou leavest much behind, while I leave  
nought.

'Thy life stays in the poems men shall sing,  
'The pictures men shall study; while my  
life,

'Complete and whole now in its power and  
joy,

'Dies altogether with my brain and arm,  
'Is lost indeed; since, what survives my-  
self?

'The brazen statue to o'erlook my grave,  
'Set on the promontory which I named.

'And that—some supple courtier of my  
heir

'Shall use its robed and sceptred arm, per-  
haps,

'To fix the rope to, which best drags it  
down.

'I go then: triumph thou, who dost not  
go!'

Nay, thou art worthy of hearing my  
whole mind.

Is this apparent, when thou turn'st to muse  
Upon the scheme of earth and man in  
chief,

That admiration grows as knowledge  
grows?

That imperfection means perfection hid,  
Reserved in part, to grace the after-time?

If, in the morning of philosophy,  
Ere aught had been recorded, nay per-  
ceived,

Thou, with the light now in thee, couldst  
have looked

On all earth's tenantry, from worm to bird,  
Ere man, her last, appeared upon the  
stage—

Thou wouldst have seen them perfect, and  
deduced

The perfectness of others yet unseen.

Conceding which,—had Zeus then questioned thee

'Shall I go on a step, improve on this,  
'Do more for visible creatures than is done?'

Thou wouldst have answered, 'Ay, by making each

'Grow conscious in himself—by that alone.

'All's perfect else: the shell sucks fast the rock,

'The fish strikes through the sea, the snake both swims

'And slides, forth range the beasts, the birds take flight,

'Till life's mechanics can no further go—  
'And all this joy in natural life is put

'Like fire from off thy finger into each,  
'So exquisitely perfect is the same.

'But 'tis pure fire, and they mere matter are;

'It has them, not they it: and so I choose  
'For man, thy last premeditated work

'(If I might add a glory to the scheme)'  
'That a third thing should stand apart

from both,  
'A quality arise within his soul,

'Which, intro-active, made to supervise  
'And feel the force it has, may view itself,

'And so be happy.' Man might live at first  
The animal life: but is there nothing more?

In due time, let him critically learn  
How he lives; and, the more he gets to know

Of his own life's adaptabilities,  
The more joy-giving will his life become.

Thus man, who hath this quality, is best.

But thou, king, hadst more reasonably said:

'Let progress end at once,—man make no step

'Beyond the natural man, the better beast,  
'Using his senses, not the sense of sense.'

In man there's failure, only since he left  
The lower and unconscious forms of life.

We called it an advance, the rendering plain

Man's spirit might grow conscious of man's life,

And, by new lore so added to the old,  
Take each step higher over the brute's head.

This grew the only life, the pleasure-house,  
Watch-tower and treasure-fortress of the soul,

Which whole surrounding flats of natural life

Seemed only fit to yield subsistence to;  
A tower that crowns a country. But alas,

The soul now climbs it just to perish there!  
For thence we have discovered ('tis no dream—

We know this, which we had not else perceived)

That there's a world of capability  
For joy, spread round about us, meant for us,

Inviting us; and still the soul craves all,  
And still the flesh replies, 'Take no jot more

'Than ere thou clombst the tower to look abroad!

'Nay, so much less as that fatigue has brought

'Deduction to it.' We struggle, fain to enlarge

Our bounded physical reciprocity,  
Increase our power, supply fresh oil to life,

Repair the waste of age and sickness: no,  
It skills not! life's inadequate to joy,

As the soul sees joy, tempting life to take.  
They praise a fountain in my garden here

Wherein a Naiad sends the water-bow  
Thin from her tube; she smiles to see it rise.

What if I told her, it is just a thread  
From that great river which the hills shut up,

And mock her with my leave to take the same?

The artificer has given her one small tube  
Past power to widen or exchange—what boots

To know she might spout oceans if she could?

She cannot lift beyond her first thin thread:

And so a man can use but a man's joy  
While he sees God's. Is it for Zeus to boast,

'See, man, how happy I live, and despair—  
'That I may be still happier—for thy use!'

If this were so, we could not thank our lord,

As hearts beat on to doing; 'tis not so—  
Malice it is not. Is it carelessness?

Still, no. If care—where is the sign? I ask,  
And get no answer, and agree in sum,

O king, with thy profound discouragement,

Who seest the wider but to sigh the more.  
Most progress is most failure: thou sayest well.

The last point now:—thou dost except a case—

Holding joy not impossible to one  
With artist-gifts—to such a man as I

Who leave behind me living works indeed;  
For, such a poem, such a painting lives.

What? dost thou verily trip upon a word,  
Confound the accurate view of what joy is

(Caught somewhat clearer by my eyes than thine)

With knowing joy? confound the knowing how

## CLEON

And showing how to live (my faculty)  
With actually living?—Otherwise  
Where is the artist's vantage o'er the king?  
Because in my great epos I display  
How divers men young, strong, fair, wise,  
can act—

Is this as though I acted? if I paint,  
Carve the young Phœbus, am I therefore  
young?

Methinks I'm older that I bowed myself  
The many years of pain that taught me art!  
Indeed, to know is something, and to  
prove

How all this beauty might be enjoyed, is  
more:

But, knowing nought, to enjoy is some-  
thing too.

Yon rower, with the moulded muscles  
there,

Lowering the sail, is nearer it than I.  
I can write love-odes: thy fair slave's an  
ode.

I get to sing of love, when grown too grey  
For being beloved: she turns to that young  
man,

The muscles all a-ripple on his back.  
I know the joy of kingship: well, thou art  
king.

'But,' sayest thou—(and I marvel, I  
repeat,  
To find thee trip on such a mere word)  
'what

'Thou writest, paintest, stays; that does  
not die:

'Sappho survives, because we sing her  
songs,

'And Æschylus, because we read his  
plays!'

Why, if they live still, let them come and  
take

Thy slave in my despite, drink from thy  
cup,

Speak in my place. Thou diest while I  
survive?

Say rather that my fate is deadlier still,  
In this, that every day my sense of joy  
Grows more acute, my soul (intensified  
By power and insight) more enlarged,  
more keen;

While every day my hairs fall more and  
more,

My hand shakes, and the heavy years in-  
crease—

The horror quickening still from year to  
year,

The consummation coming past escape  
When I shall know most, and yet least  
enjoy—

When all my works wherein I prove my  
worth,

Being present still to mock me in men's  
mouths,

Alive still, in the praise of such as thou,

I, I the feeling, thinking, acting man,  
The man who loved his life so over-much,  
Sleep in my urn. It is so horrible,  
I dare at times imagine to my need  
Some future state revealed to us by Zeus,  
Unlimited in capability

For joy; as this is in desire for joy,  
—To seek which, the joy-hunger forces us:  
That, stung by straitness of our life, made  
strait

On purpose to make prized the life at  
large—

Freed by the throbbing impulse we call  
death,

We burst there as the worm into the fly,  
Who, while a worm still, wants his wings.

But no!  
Zeus has not yet revealed it; and alas,  
He must have done so, were it possible!

Live long and happy, and in that  
thought die:

Glad for what was! Farewell. And for  
the rest,

I cannot tell thy messenger aright  
Where to deliver what he bears of thine

To one called Paulus; we have heard his  
fame

Indeed, if Christus be not one with him—  
I know not, nor am troubled much to  
know.

Thou canst not think a mere barbarian  
Jew,

As Paulus proves to be, one circumcized,  
Hath access to a secret shut from us?

Thou wrongest our philosophy, O king,  
In stooping to inquire of such an one,

As if his answer could impose at all!  
He writeth, doth he? well, and he may  
write.

Oh, the Jew findeth scholars! certain slaves  
Who touched on this same isle, preached  
him and Christ;

And (as I gathered from a bystander)  
Their doctrine could be held by no sane  
man.

## RUDEL TO THE LADY OF TRIPOLI

I

I KNOW a Mount, the gracious Sun per-  
ceives

First, when he visits, last, too, when he  
leaves

The world; and, vainly favoured, it repays  
The day-long glory of his steadfast gaze

By no change of its large calm front of  
snow.

And underneath the Mount, a Flower I  
know,

He cannot have perceived, that changes  
ever

At his approach; and, in the lost endea-  
vour

## RUDEL TO THE LADY OF TRIPOLI

To live his life, has parted, one by one,  
With all a flower's true graces, for the  
grace

Of being but a foolish mimic sun,  
With ray-like florets round a disk-like face.  
Men nobly call by many a name the Mount  
As over many a land of theirs its large  
Calm front of snow like a triumphal targe  
Is reared, and still with old names, fresh  
names vie,

Each to its proper praise and own account:  
Men call the Flower, the Sunflower, sport-  
tively.

### II

Oh, Angel of the East, one, one gold look  
Across the waters to this twilight nook,  
—The far sad waters, Angel, to this nook!

### III

Dear Pilgrim, art thou for the East indeed?  
Go!—saying ever as thou dost proceed,  
That I, French Rudel, choose for my  
device

A sunflower outspread like a sacrifice  
Before its idol. See! These inept  
And hurried fingers could not fail to hurt  
The woven picture; 'tis a woman's skill  
Indeed; but nothing baffled me, so, ill  
Or well, the work is finished. Say, men  
feed

On songs I sing, and therefore bask the  
bees

On my flower's breast as on a platform  
broad:

But, as the flower's concern is not for these  
But solely for the sun, so men applaud  
In vain this Rudel, he not looking here  
But to the East—the East! Go, say this,  
Pilgrim dear!

## ONE WORD MORE!

TO E. B. B.

1855

### I

THERE they are, my fifty men and women  
Naming me the fifty poems finished!

Take them, Love, the book and me to-  
gether:

Where the heart lies, let the brain lie also.

### II

Rafael made a century of sonnets,  
Made and wrote them in a certain volume  
Dinted with the silver-pointed pencil  
Else he only used to draw Madonnas:  
These, the world might view—but one, the  
volume.

Who that one, you ask? Your heart in-  
structs you.

<sup>1</sup> [Originally appended to the collection of Poems called 'Men and Women', the greater portion of which has now been, more correctly, distributed under the other titles of this edition.—R. B.]

Did she live and love it all her life-time?  
Did she drop, his lady of the sonnets,  
Die, and let it drop beside her pillow  
Where it lay in place of Rafael's glory,  
Rafael's cheek so duteous and so loving—  
Cheek, the world was wont to hail a  
painter's,  
Rafael's cheek, her love had turned a  
poet's?

### III

You and I would rather read that volume,  
(Taken to his beating bosom by it)  
Lean and list the bosom-beats of Rafael,  
Would we not? than wonder at Ma-  
donnas—

Her, San Sisto names, and Her, Foligno,  
Her, that visits Florence in a vision,  
Her, that's left with lilies in the Louvre—  
Seen by us and all the world in circle.

### IV

You and I will never read that volume.  
Guido Reni, like his own eye's apple  
Guarded long the treasure-book and loved  
it.

Guido Reni dying, all Bologna  
Cried, and the world cried too, 'Ours, the  
treasure!'

Suddenly, as rare things will, it vanished.

### V

Dante once prepared to paint an angel:  
Whom to please? You whisper 'Beatrice.'  
While he mused and traced it and retraced  
it,

(Peradventure with a pen corroded  
Still by drops of that hot ink he dipped for,  
When, his left-hand i' the hair o' the  
wicked,

Back he held the brow and pricked its  
stigma,

Bit into the live man's flesh for parch-  
ment,

Loosed him, laughed to see the writing  
rankle,

Let the wretch go festering through  
Florence)—

Dante, who loved well because he hated,  
Hated wickedness that hinders loving,  
Dante standing, studying his angel,—  
In there broke the folk of his Inferno.

Says he—'Certain people of importance'  
(Such he gave his daily dreadful line to)  
'Entered and would seize, forsooth, the  
poet.'

Says the poet—'Then I stopped my paint-  
ing.'

### VI

You and I would rather see that angel,  
Painted by the tenderness of Dante,  
Would we not?—than read a fresh In-  
ferno.



# ONE WORD MORE

## VII

You and I will never see that picture.  
While he mused on love and Beatrice,  
While he softened o'er his outlined angel,  
In they broke, those 'people of importance.'  
We and Bice bear the loss for ever.

## VIII

What of Rafael's sonnets, Dante's picture?  
This: no artist lives and loves, that longs  
not  
Once, and only once, and for one only,  
(Ah, the prize!) to find his love a language  
Fit and fair and simple and sufficient—  
Using nature that's an art to others,  
Not, this one time, art that's turned his  
nature.  
Ay, of all the artists living, loving,  
None but would forego his proper  
dowry,—  
Does he paint? he fain would write a  
poem,—  
Does he write? he fain would paint a picture,  
Put to proof art alien to the artist's,  
Once, and only once, and for one only,  
So to be the man and leave the artist,  
Gain the man's joy, miss the artist's  
sorrow.

## IX

Wherefore? Heaven's gift takes earth's  
abatement!  
He who smites the rock and spreads the  
water,  
Bidding drink and live a crowd beneath  
him,  
Even he, the minute makes immortal,  
Proves, perchance, but mortal in the  
minute,  
Desecrates, belike, the deed in doing.  
While he smites, how can he but remember,  
So he smote before, in such a peril,  
When they stood and mocked—'Shall  
smiting help us?'  
When they drank and sneered—'A stroke  
is easy!'  
When they wiped their mouths and went  
their journey,  
Throwing him for thanks—'But drought  
was pleasant.'  
Thus old memories mar the actual triumph;  
Thus the doing savours of disrelish;  
Thus achievement lacks a gracious something;  
O'er-importuned brows becloud the mandate,  
Carelessness or consciousness—the gesture.  
For he bears an ancient wrong about him,  
Sees and knows again those phalanxed  
faces,

Hears, yet one time more, the 'customed  
prelude—

'How shouldst thou, of all men, smite,  
and save us?'  
Guesses what is like to prove the sequel—  
'Egypt's flesh-pots—nay, the drought  
was better.'

## X

Oh, the crowd must have emphatic warrant!  
Theirs, the Sinai-forehead's cloven brilliance,  
Right-arm's rod-sweep, tongue's imperial fiat.  
Never dares the man put off the prophet.

## XI

Did he love one face from out the thousands,  
(Were she Jethro's daughter, white and  
wifely,  
Were she but the Æthiopian bondslave,)  
He would envy yon dumb patient camel,  
Keeping a reserve of scanty water  
Meant to save his own life in the desert;  
Ready in the desert to deliver  
(Kneeling down to let his breast be opened)  
Hoard and life together for his mistress.

## XII

I shall never, in the years remaining,  
Paint you pictures, no, nor carve you  
statues,  
Make you music that should all-express  
me;  
So it seems: I stand on my attainment.  
This of verse alone, one life allows me;  
Verse and nothing else have I to give you.  
Other heights in other lives, God willing:  
All the gifts from all the heights, your own,  
Love!

## XIII

Yet a semblance of resource avails us—  
Shade so finely touched, love's sense must  
seize it.  
Take these lines, look lovingly and nearly,  
Lines I wrote the first time and the last  
time.  
He who works in fresco, steals a hair-  
brush,  
Curbs the liberal hand, subservient  
proudly,  
Cramps his spirit, crowds its all in little,  
Makes a strange art of an art familiar,  
Fills his lady's missal-marge with flower-  
ets.  
He who blows thro' bronze, may breathe  
thro' silver,  
Fitably serenade a slumbrous princess.  
He who writes, may write for once as I do.

## XIV

Love, you saw me gather men and women,  
Live or dead or fashioned by my fancy,

## ONE WORD MORE

Enter each and all, and use their service,  
Speak from every mouth,—the speech, a  
poem.

Hardly shall I tell my joys and sorrows,  
Hopes and fears, belief and disbelieving:  
I am mine and yours—the rest be all men's,  
Karshish, Cleon, Norbert and the fifty.  
Let me speak this once in my true person,  
Not as Lippo, Roland or Andrea,  
Though the fruit of speech be just this  
sentence:

Pray you, look on these my men and  
women,

Take and keep my fifty poems finished;  
Where my heart lies, let my brain lie also!  
Poor the speech; be how I speak, for all  
things.

### XV

Not but that you know me! Lo, the  
moon's self!

Here in London, yonder late in Florence,  
Still we find her face, the thrice-trans-  
figured.

Curving on a sky imbrued with colour,  
Drifted over Fiesole by twilight,  
Came she, our new crescent of a hair's-  
breadth.

Full she flared it, lamping Samminiato,  
Rounder 'twixt the cypresses and rounder,  
Perfect till the nightingales applauded.

Now, a piece of her old self, impoverished,  
Hard to greet, she traverses the house-  
roofs,

Hurries with unhandsome thrift of silver,  
Goes dispiritedly, glad to finish.

### XVI

What, there's nothing in the moon note-  
worthy?

Nay: for if that moon could love a mortal,  
Use, to charm him (so to fit a fancy),  
All her magic ('tis the old sweet mythos),  
She would turn a new side to her mortal,  
Side unseen of herdsman, huntsman,  
steersman—

Blank to Zoroaster on his terrace,  
Blind to Galileo on his turret,  
Dumb to Homer, dumb to Keats—him,  
even!

Think, the wonder of the moonstruck  
mortal—

When she turns round, comes again in  
heaven,

Opens out anew for worse or better!  
Proves she like some portent of an iceberg  
Swimming full upon the ship it founders,  
Hungry with huge teeth of splintered  
crystals?

Proves she as the paved work of a sapphire  
Seen by Moses when he climbed the  
mountain?

Moses, Aaron, Nadab and Abihu  
Climbed and saw the very God, the  
Highest,

Stand upon the paved work of a sapphire.  
Like the bodied heaven in his clearness  
Shone the stone, the sapphire of that paved  
work,

When they ate and drank and saw God  
also!

### XVII

What were seen? None knows, none ever  
shall know.

Only this is sure—the sight were other,  
Not the moon's same side, born late in  
Florence,

Dying now impoverished here in London.  
God be thanked, the meanest of his crea-  
tures

Boasts two soul-sides, one to face the  
world with,

One to show a woman when he loves her!

### XVIII

This I say of me, but think of you, Love!  
This to you—yourself my moon of poets!  
Ah, but that's the world's side, there's the  
wonder,

Thus they see you, praise you, think they  
know you!

There, in turn I stand with them and praise  
you—

Out of my own self, I dare to phrase it.  
But the best is when I glide from out them,  
Cross a step or two of dubious twilight,  
Come out on the other side, the novel  
Silent silver lights and darks undreamed  
of,

Where I hush and bless myself with silence.

### XIX

Oh, their Rafael of the dear Madonnas,  
Oh, their Dante of the dread Inferno,  
Wrote one song—and in my brain I sing it,  
Drew one angel—borne, see, on my  
bosom!

# IN A BALCONY

1855

PERSONS

NORBERT.

CONSTANCE.

THE QUEEN.

CONSTANCE and NORBERT.

*Nor.* Now!

*Con.* Not now!

*Nor.* Give me them

again, those hands:

Put them upon my forehead, how it throbs!

Press them before my eyes, the fire comes through!

You cruellest, you dearest in the world, Let me! The Queen must grant what'er

I ask—

How can I gain you and not ask the Queen?

There she stays waiting for me, here stand you;

Some time or other this was to be asked; Now is the one time—what I ask, I gain:

Let me ask now, Love!

*Con.* Do, and ruin us.

*Nor.* Let it be now, Love! All my soul breaks forth.

How I do love you! Give my love its way! A man can have but one life and one

death,

One heaven, one hell. Let me fulfil my fate—

Grant me my heaven now! Let me know you mine,

Prove you mine, write my name upon your brow,

Hold you and have you, and then die away,

If God please, with completion in my soul!

*Con.* I am not yours then? How content this man!

I am not his—who change into himself, Have passed into his heart and beat its

beats,

Who give my hands to him, my eyes, my hair,

Give all that was of me away to him— So well, that now, my spirit turned his

own,

Takes part with him against the woman here,

Bids him not stumble at so mere a straw As caring that the world be cognizant

How he loves her and how she worships him.

You have this woman, not as yet that world.

Go on, I bid, nor stop to care for me

By saying what I cease to care about, The courtly name and pride of circumstance—

The name you'll pick up and be cumbered with

Just for the poor parade's sake, nothing more;

Just that the world may slip from under you—

Just that the world may cry 'So much for him—

'The man predestined to the heap of crowns:

'There goes his chance of winning one, at least!'

*Nor.* The world!

*Con.* You love it. Love me quite as well,

And see if I shall pray for this in vain! Why must you ponder what it knows or

thinks?

*Nor.* You pray for—what, in vain?

*Con.* Oh my heart's heart, How I do love you, Norbert! That is

right:

But listen, or I take my hands away! You say, 'let it be now': you would go

now

And tell the Queen, perhaps six steps from us,

You love me—so you do, thank God!

*Nor.* Thank God!

*Con.* Yes, Norbert,—but you fain would tell your love,

And, what succeeds the telling, ask of her

My hand. Now take this rose and look at it,

Listening to me. You are the minister, The Queen's first favourite, nor without

a cause.

To-night completes your wonderful year's-work

(This palace-feast is held to celebrate) Made memorable by her life's success,

The junction of two crowns, on her sole head,

Her house had only dreamed of anciently: That this mere dream is grown a stable

truth,

To-night's feast makes authentic. Whose the praise?

Whose genius, patience, energy, achieved What turned the many heads and broke

the hearts?

You are the fate, your minute's in the heaven.

Next comes the Queen's turn. 'Name your own reward!'

With leave to clench the past, chain the to-come,

Put out an arm and touch and take the sun

And fix it ever full-faced on your earth, Possess yourself supremely of her life,—

You choose the single thing she will not grant;

Nay, very declaration of which choice Will turn the scale and neutralize your work:

At best she will forgive you, if she can. You think I'll let you choose—her cousin's hand?

*Nor.* Wait. First, do you retain your old belief

The Queen is generous,—nay, is just?

*Con.* There, there! So men make women love them, while they know

No more of women's hearts than . . . look you here,

You that are just and generous beside, Make it your own case! For example now,

I'll say—I let you kiss me, hold my hands—

Why? do you know why? I'll instruct you, then—

The kiss, because you have a name at court;

This hand and this, that you may shut in each

A jewel, if you please to pick up such. That's horrible? Apply it to the Queen—

Suppose I am the Queen to whom you speak:

'I was a nameless man; you needed me: 'Why did I proffer you my aid? there stood

'A certain pretty cousin at your side. 'Why did I make such common cause with you?

'Access to her had not been easy else. 'You give my labour here abundant praise?

'Faith, labour, which she overlooked, grew play.

'How shall your gratitude discharge itself? 'Give me her hand!'

*Nor.* And still I urge the same. Is the Queen just? just—generous or no!

*Con.* Yes, just. You love a rose; no harm in that:

But was it for the rose's sake or mine You put it in your bosom? mine, you said—

Then, mine you still must say or else be false.

You told the Queen you served her for herself;

If so, to serve her was to serve yourself, She thinks, for all your unbelieving face!

I know her. In the hall, six steps from us, One sees the twenty pictures; there's a life

Better than life, and yet no life at all. Conceive her born in such a magic dome,

Pictures all round her! why, she sees the world,

Can recognize its given things and facts, The fight of giants or the feast of gods,

Sages in senate, beauties at the bath, Chases and battles, the whole earth's display,

Landscape and sea-piece, down to flowers and fruit—

And who shall question that she knows them all,

In better semblance than the things outside?

Yet bring into the silent gallery Some live thing to contrast in breath and blood,

Some lion, with the painted lion there— You think she'll understand composedly?

—Say, 'that's his fellow in the hunting-piece

'Yonder, I've turned to praise a hundred times?'

Not so. Her knowledge of our actual earth,

Its hopes and fears, concerns and sympathies,

Must be too far, too mediate, too unreal. The real exists for us outside, not her:

How should it, with that life in these four walls—

That father and that mother, first to last No father and no mother—friends, a heap,

Lovers, no lack—a husband in due time, And every one of them alike a lie!

Things painted by a Rubens out of nought Into what kindness, friendship, love should be;

All better, all more grandiose than the life, Only no life; mere cloth and surface-paint,

You feel, while you admire. How should she feel?

Yet now that she has stood thus fifty years The sole spectator in that gallery,

You think to bring this warm real struggling love

In to her of a sudden, and suppose She'll keep her state untroubled? Here's the truth—

She'll apprehend truth's value at a glance, Prefer it to the pictured loyalty?

You only have to say, 'so men are made, 'For this they act; the thing has many names,

'But this the right one: and now, Queen, be just!'

Your life slips back; you lose her at the word:

You do not even for amends gain me.

## IN A BALCONY

He will not understand; oh, Norbert,  
Norbert,

Do you not understand?

*Nor.* The Queen's the Queen:  
I am myself—no picture, but alive  
In every nerve and every muscle, here  
At the palace-window o'er the people's

street,  
As she in the gallery where the pictures  
glow:

The good of life is precious to us both.  
She cannot love; what do I want with rule?  
When first I saw your face a year ago  
I knew my life's good, my soul heard one  
voice—

'The woman yonder, there's no use of life  
'But just to obtain her! heap earth's woes  
in one

'And bear them—make a pile of all earth's  
joys

'And spurn them, as they help or help not  
this;

'Only, obtain her!' How was it to be?  
I found you were the cousin of the Queen;  
I must then serve the Queen to get to you.  
No other way. Suppose there had been  
one,

And I, by saying prayers to some white  
star

With promise of my body and my soul,  
Might gain you,—should I pray the star  
or no?

Instead, there was the Queen to serve! I  
served,

Helped, did what other servants failed to  
do.

Neither she sought nor I declared my end.  
Her good is hers, my recompense be  
mine,—

I therefore name you as that recompense.  
She dreamed that such a thing could never  
be?

Let her wake now. She thinks there was  
more cause

In love of power, high fame, pure loyalty?  
Perhaps she fancies men wear out their  
lives

Chasing such shades. Then, I've a fancy  
too;

I worked because I want you with my soul:  
I therefore ask your hand. Let it be now!

*Con.* Had I not loved you from the very  
first,

Were I not yours, could we not steal out  
thus

So wickedly, so wildly, and so well,  
You might become impatient. What's  
conceived

Of us without here, by the folk within?  
Where are you now? immersed in cares d'

state—  
Where am I now? intent on festal robes—  
We two, embracing under death's spread  
hand!

What was this thought for, what that  
scruple of yours

Which broke the council up?—to bring  
about

One minute's meeting in the corridor!  
And then the sudden sleights, strange  
secrecies,

Complots inscrutable, deep telegraphs,  
Long-planned chance-meetings, hazards  
of a look,

'Does she know? does she not know?  
saved or lost?'

A year of this compression's ecstasy  
All goes for nothing! you would give this  
up

For the old way, the open way, the world's,  
His way who beats, and his who sells his  
wife!

What tempts you?—their notorious hap-  
piness

Makes you ashamed of ours? The best  
you'll gain

Will be—the Queen grants all that you  
require,

Concedes the cousin, rids herself of you  
And me at once, and gives us ample leave  
To live like our five hundred happy  
friends.

The world will show us with officious hand  
Our chamber-entry, and stand sentinel  
Where we so oft have stolen across its  
traps!

Get the world's warrant, ring the falcons'  
feet,

And make it duty to be bold and swift,  
Which long ago was nature. Have it so!

We never hawked by rights till flung from  
fist?

Oh, the man's thought! no woman's such  
a fool.

*Nor.* Yes, the man's thought and my  
thought, which is more—

One made to love you, let the world take  
note!

Have I done worthy work? be love's the  
praise,

Though hampered by restrictions, barred  
against

By set forms, blinded by forced secrecies!  
Set free my love, and see what love can do  
Shown in my life—what work will spring  
from that!

The world is used to have its business done  
On other grounds, find great effects pro-  
duced

For power's sake, fame's sake, motives in  
men's mouth.

So, good: but let my low ground shame  
their high!

Truth is the strong thing. Let man's life  
be true!

And love's the truth of mine. Time prove  
the rest!

I choose to wear you stamped all over me,

Your name upon my forehead and my  
breast,  
You, from the sword's blade to the rib-  
bon's edge,  
That men may see, all over, you in me—  
That pale loves may die out of their pre-  
sence  
In face of mine, shames thrown on love  
fall off.  
Permit this, Constance! Love has been so  
long  
Subdued in me, eating me through and  
through,  
That now 'tis all of me and must have way.  
Think of my work, 'that chaos of intrigues,  
Those hopes and fears, surprises and de-  
lays,  
That long endeavour, earnest, patient,  
slow,  
Trembling at last to its assured result:  
Then think of this revulsion! I resume  
Life after death, (it is no less than life,  
After such long unlovely labouring days)  
And liberate to beauty life's great need  
O' the beautiful, which, while it prompted  
work,  
Suppressed itself awhile. This eve's the  
time,  
This eve intense with yon first trembling  
star  
We seem to pant and reach; scarce aught  
between  
The earth that rises and the heaven that  
bends;  
All nature self-abandoned, every tree  
Flung as it will, pursuing its own thoughts  
And fixed so, every flower and every weed,  
No pride, no shame, no victory, no defeat;  
All under God, each measured by itself.  
These statues round us stand abrupt, dis-  
tinct,  
The strong in strength, the weak in weak-  
ness fixed,  
The Muse for ever wedded to her lyre,  
Nymph to her fawn, and Silence to her  
rose:  
See God's approval on his universe!  
Let us do so—aspire to live as these  
In harmony with truth, ourselves being  
true!  
Take the first way, and let the second  
come!  
My first is to possess myself of you;  
The music sets the march-step—forward,  
then!  
And there's the Queen, I go to claim you  
of,  
The world to witness, wonder and ap-  
plaud.  
Our flower of life breaks open. No delay!  
Con. And so shall we be ruined, both  
of us.  
Norbert, I know her to the skin and bone:  
You do not know her, were not born to it,

To feel what she can see or cannot see.  
Love, she is generous,—ay, despite your  
smile,  
Generous as you are: for, in that thin  
frame  
Pain-twisted, punctured through and  
through with cares,  
There lived a lavish soul until it starved,  
Debarred of healthy food. Look to the  
soul—  
Pity that, stoop to that, ere you begin  
(The true man's-way) on justice and your  
rights,  
Exactions and acquittance of the past!  
Begin so—see what justice she will deal!  
We women hate a debt as men a gift.  
Suppose her some poor keeper of a school  
Whose business is to sit thro' summer  
months  
And dole out children leave to go and play,  
Herself superior to such lightness—she  
In the arm-chair's state and pædagogic  
pomp—  
To the life, the laughter, sun and youth  
outside:  
We wonder such a face looks black on us?  
I do not bid you wake her tenderness,  
(That were vain truly—none is left to  
wake)  
But let her think her justice is engaged  
To take the shape of tenderness, and mark  
If she'll not coldly pay its warmest debt!  
Does she love me, I ask you? not a whit:  
Yet, thinking that her justice was en-  
gaged  
To help a kinswoman, she took me up—  
Did more on that bare ground than other  
loves  
Would do on greater argument. For me,  
I have no equivalent of such cold kind  
To pay her with, but love alone to give  
If I give anything. I give her love:  
I feel I ought to help her, and I will.  
So, for her sake, as yours, I tell you twice  
That women hate a debt as men a gift.  
If I were you, I could obtain this grace—  
Could lay the whole I did to love's account,  
Nor yet be very false as courtiers go—  
Declaring my success was recompense;  
It would be so, in fact: what were it else?  
And then, once loose her generosity,—  
Oh, how I see it!—then, were I but you,  
To turn it, let it seem to move itself,  
And make it offer what I really take,  
Accepting just, in the poor cousin's hand,  
Her value as the next thing to the  
Queen's—  
Since none love Queens directly, none  
dare that,  
And a thing's shadow or a name's mere  
echo  
Suffices those who miss the name and  
thing!  
You pick up just a ribbon she has worn,

## IN A BALCONY

To keep in proof how near her breath you came.

Say, I'm so near I seem a piece of her—  
Ask for me that way—(oh, you understand)

You'd find the same gift yielded with a grace,

Which, if you make the least show to extort . . .

—You'll see! and when you have ruined both of us,

Dissertate on the Queen's ingratitude!

*Nor.* Then, if I turn it that way, you consent?

'Tis not my way; I have more hope in truth:

Still, if you won't have truth—why, this indeed,

Were scarcely false, as I'd express the sense.

Will you remain here?

*Con.* O best heart of mine,  
How I have loved you! then, you take my way?

Are mine as you have been her minister,  
Work out my thought, give it effect for me,

Paint plain my poor conceit and make it serve?

I owe that withered woman everything—  
Life, fortune, you, remember! Take my part—

Help me to pay her! Stand upon your rights?

You, with my rose, my hands, my heart on you?

Your rights are mine—you have no rights but mine.

*Nor.* Remain here. How you know me!

*Con.* Ah, but still—  
[*He breaks from her: she remains.*

*Dance-music from within.*

*Enter the QUEEN.*

*Queen.* Constance? She is here as he said. Speak quick!

Is it so? Is it true or false? One word!

*Con.* True.

*Queen.* Mercifullest Mother, thanks to thee!

*Con.* Madam?

*Queen.* I love you, Constance, from my soul.

Now say once more, with any words you will,

'Tis true, all true, as true as that I speak.

*Con.* Why should you doubt it?

*Queen.* Ah, why doubt? why doubt?

Dear, make me see it! Do you see it so? None see themselves; another sees them best.

You say 'why doubt it?'—you see him and me.

It is because the Mother has such grace  
That if we had but faith—wherein we fail—

Whate'er we yearn for would be granted us;  
Yet still we let our whims prescribe despair,

Our fancies thwart and cramp our will and power,

And, while accepting life, abjure its use.

Constance, I had abjured the hope of love  
And being loved, as truly as yon palm

The hope of seeing Egypt from that plot.  
*Con.* Heaven!

*Queen.* But it was so, Constance, it was so!

Men say—or do men say it? fancies say—  
'Stop here, your life is set, you are grown old.

'Too late—no love for you, too late for love—

'Leave love to girls. Be queen: let Constance love.'

One takes the hint—half meets it like a child,

Ashamed at any feelings that oppose.  
'Oh love, true, never think of love again!

'I am a queen: I rule, not love forsooth.'

So it goes on; so a face grows like this,  
Hair like this hair, poor arms as lean as these,

Till,—nay, it does not end so, I thank God!

*Con.* I cannot understand—  
*Queen.* The happier you!

Constance, I know not how it is with men:  
For women (I am a woman now like you)

There is no good of life but love—but love!  
What else looks good, is some shade flung from love;

Love gifts it, gives it worth. Be warned by me,

Never you cheat yourself one instant!  
Love,

Give love, ask only love, and leave the rest!  
O Constance, how I love you!

*Con.* I love you.  
*Queen.* I do believe that all is come through you.

I took you to my heart to keep it warm  
When the last chance of love seemed dead

in me;

I thought your fresh youth warmed my withered heart.

Oh, I am very old now, am I not?

Not so! it is true and it shall be true!

*Con.* Tell it me: let me judge if true or false.

*Queen.* Ah, but I fear you! you will look at me

And say, 'she's old, she's grown unlovely quite

'Who ne'er was beauteous: men want beauty still.'

Well, so I feared—the curse! so I felt sure!  
*Con.* Be calm. And now you feel not sure, you say?

## IN A BALCONY

*Queen.* Constance, he came,—the coming was not strange—  
Do not I stand and see men come and go?

I turned a half-look from my pedestal  
Where I grow marble—'one young man the more!

'He will love some one; that is nought to me;

'What would he with my marble stateliness?'

Yet this seemed somewhat worse than heretofore;

The man more gracious, youthful, like a god,

And I still older, with less flesh to change—  
We two those dear extremes that long to touch.

It seemed still harder when he first began  
To labour at those state-affairs, absorbed  
The old way for the old end—interest.

Oh, to live with a thousand beating hearts  
Around you, swift eyes, serviceable hands,  
Professing they've no care but for your cause,

Thought but to help you, love but for yourself,—

And you the marble statue all the time  
They praise and point at as preferred to life.

Yet leave for the first breathing woman's smile,

First dancer's, gipsy's or street baladine's!  
Why, how I have ground my teeth to hear men's speech

Stifled for fear it should alarm my ear,  
Their gait subdued lest step should startle me,

Their eyes declined, such queendom to respect,

Their hands alert, such treasure to preserve,

While not a man of them broke rank and spoke,

Wrote me a vulgar letter all of love,  
Or caught my hand and pressed it like a hand!

There have been moments, if the sentinel  
Lowering his halbert to salute the queen,  
Had flung it brutally and clasped my knees,

I would have stooped and kissed him with my soul.

*Con.* Who could have comprehended?

*Queen.* Ay, who—who?

Who, no one, Constance, but this one who did,

Not they, not you, not I. Even now perhaps

It comes too late—would you but tell the truth.

*Con.* I wait to tell it.

*Queen.* Well, you see, he came,

Outfaced the others, did a work this year  
Exceeds in value all was ever done,

You know—it is not I who say it—all  
Say it. And so (a second pang and worse)  
I grew aware not only of what he did,  
But why so wondrously. Oh, never work  
Like his was done for work's ignoble sake—

Souls need a finer aim to light and lure!  
I felt, I saw, he loved—loved somebody.

And Constance, my dear Constance, do you know,

I did believe this while 'twas you he loved.

*Con.* Me, madam?

*Queen.* It did seem to me, your face  
Met him where'er he looked: and whom but you

Was such a man to love? It seemed to me,  
You saw he loved you, and approved his love,

And both of you were in intelligence.  
You could not loiter in that garden, step

Into this balcony, but I straight was stung  
And forced to understand. It seemed so true,

So right, so beautiful, so like you both,  
That all this work should have been done by him

Not for the vulgar hope of recompense,  
But that at last—suppose, some night like this—

Borne on to claim his due reward of me,  
He might say 'Give her hand and pay me so.'

And I (O Constance, you shall love me now!)

I thought, surmounting all the bitterness,  
—'And he shall have it. I will make her blest,

'My flower of youth, my woman's self that was,

'My happiest woman's self that might have been!

'These two shall have their joy and leave me here.'

Yes—yes!

*Con.* Thanks!

*Queen.* And the word was on my lips  
When he burst in upon me. I looked to hear

A mere calm statement of his just desire  
For payment of his labour. When—O heaven,

How can I tell you? lightning on my eyes  
And thunder in my ears proved that first word

Which told 'twas love of me, of me, did all—

I loved me—from the first step to the last,  
Loved me!

*Con.* You hardly saw, scarce heard him speak

Of love: what if you should mistake?

*Queen.* No, no—

No mistake! Ha, there shall be no mistake!



## IN A BALCONY

He had not dared to hint the love he felt—  
You were my reflex—(how I understood!)  
He said you were the ribbon I had worn,  
He kissed my hand, he looked into my eyes,

And love, love came at end of every phrase.  
Love is begun; this much is come to pass:  
The rest is easy. Constance, I am yours!  
I will learn, I will place my life on you,  
Teach me but how to keep what I have won!

Am I so old? This hair was early grey;  
But joy ere now has brought hair brown again,  
And joy will bring the cheek's red back, I feel.

I could sing once too; that was in my youth.

Still, when men paint me, they declare me . . . yes,

Beautiful—for the last French painter did!  
I know they flatter somewhat; you are frank—

I trust you. How I loved you from the first!  
Some queens would hardly seek a cousin out

And set her by their side to take the eye:  
I must have felt that good would come from you.

I am not generous—like him—like you!  
But he is not your lover after all:  
It was not you he looked at. Saw you him?  
You have not been mistaking words or looks?

He said you were the reflex of myself.  
And yet he is not such a paragon  
To you, to younger women who may choose

Among a thousand Norberts. Speak the truth!

You know you never named his name to me:

You know, I cannot give him up—ah God,  
Not up now, even to you!

*Con.* Then calm yourself.

*Queen.* See, I am old—look here, you happy girl!

I will not play the fool, deceive—ah, whom?

'Tis all gone: put your cheek beside my cheek

And what a contrast does the moon behold!

But then I set my life upon one chance,  
The last chance and the best—am I not left,  
My soul, myself? All women love great men

If young or old; it is in all the tales:  
Young beauties love old poets who can love—

Why should not he, the poems in my soul,  
The passionate faith, the pride of sacrifice,  
Life-long, death-long? I throw them at his feet.

Who cares to see the fountain's very shape,  
Whether it be a Triton's or a Nymph's  
That pours the foam, makes rainbows all around?

You could not praise indeed the empty conch;

But I'll pour floods of love and hide myself.  
How I will love him! Cannot men love love?

Who was a queen and loved a poet once  
Humpbacked, a dwarf? ah, women can do that!

Well, but men too; at least, they tell you so.  
They love so many women in their youth,  
And even in age they all love whom they please;

And yet the best of them confide to friends  
That 'tis not beauty makes the lasting love—

They spend a day with such and tire the next:

They like soul,—well then, they like phantasy,

Novelty even. Let us confess the truth,  
Horrible though it be, that prejudice,  
Prescription . . . curses! they will love a queen.

They will, they do: and will not, does not—he?

*Con.* How can he? You are wedded: 'tis a name

We know, but still a bond. Your rank remains,

His rank remains. How can he, nobly souled

As you believe and I incline to think,  
Aspire to be your favourite, shame and all?

*Queen.* Hear her! There, there now—could she love like me?

What did I say of smooth-cheeked youth and grace?

See all it does or could do! so youth loves! Oh, tell him, Constance, you could never do

What I will—you, it was not born in! I Will drive these difficulties far and fast  
As yonder mists curdling before the moon.  
I'll use my light too, gloriously retrieve  
My youth from its enforced calamity,  
Dissolve that hateful marriage, and be his.  
His own in the eyes alike of God and man.

*Con.* You will do—dare do . . . pause on what you say!

*Queen.* Hear her! I thank you, sweet, for that surprise.

You have the fair face: for the soul, see mine!

I have the strong soul: let me teach you, here.

I think I have borne enough and long enough,

And patiently enough, the world remarks,

## IN A BALCONY

To have my own way now, unblamed by all.

It does so happen (I rejoice for it)  
This most unhopèd-for issue cuts the knot.  
There's not a better way of settling claims  
Than this; God sends the accident express:  
And were it for my subjects' good, no more,

'Twere best thus ordered. I am thankful now,

Mute, passive, acquiescent. I receive,  
And bless God simply, or should almost fear

To walk so smoothly to my ends at last.  
Why, how I baffle obstacles, spurn fate!  
How strong I am! Could Norbert see me now!

Con. Let me consider. It is all too strange.

Queen. You, Constance, learn of me;  
do you, like me!

You are young, beautiful: my own, best girl,

You will have many lovers, and love one—  
Light hair, not hair like Norbert's, to suit yours:

Taller than he is, since yourself are tall.  
Love him, like me! Give all away to him;  
Think never of yourself; throw by your pride,

Hope, fear,—your own good as you saw it once,

And love him simply for his very self.  
Remember, I (and what am I to you?)  
Would give up all for one, leave throne, lose life,

Do all but just unlove him! He loves me.  
Con. He shall.

Queen. You, step inside my inmost heart!

Give me your own heart: let us have one heart!

I'll come to you for counsel; 'this he says,  
'This he does; what should this amount to, pray?

'Beseech you, change it into current coin!  
'Is that worth kisses? Shall I please him there?'

And then we'll speak in turn of you—what else?

Your love, according to your beauty's worth,

For you shall have some noble love, all gold:

Whom choose you? we will get him at your choice.

—Constance, I leave you. Just a minute since,

I felt as I must die or be alone  
Breathing my soul into an ear like yours:  
Now, I would face the world with my new life,

Wear my new crown. I'll walk around the rooms,

And then come back and tell you how it feels.

How soon a smile of God can change the world!

How we are made for happiness—how work

Grows play, adversity a winning fight!  
True, I have lost so many years: what then!

Many remain: God has been very good.  
You, stay here! 'Tis as different from

dreams,  
From the mind's cold calm estimate of bliss,

As these stone statues from the flesh and blood.

The comfort thou hast caused mankind,  
God's moon!

[*She goes out, leaving* CONSTANCE.  
*Dance-music from within.*

NORBERT enters.

Nor. Well? we have but one minute and one word!

Con. I am yours, Norbert!

Nor. Yes, mine.

Con. Not till now!

You were mine. Now I give myself to you.

Nor. Constance?

Con. Your own! I know the thrifter way

Of giving—haply, 'tis the wiser way.  
Meaning to give a treasure, I might dole  
Coin after coin out (each, as that were all,  
With a new largess still at each despair)  
And force you keep in sight the deed, pre-serve

Exhaustless till the end my part and yours.  
My giving and your taking; both our joys  
Dying together. Is it the wiser way?

I choose the simpler; I give all at once.  
Know what you have to trust to, trade

upon!

Use it, abuse it,—anything but think  
Hereafter, 'Had I known she loved me so,

'And what my means, I might have thriven with it.'

This is your means. I give you all myself.  
Nor. I take you and thank God.

Con. Look on through years!  
We cannot kiss, a second day like this;

Else were this earth no earth.  
Nor. With this day's heat

We shall go on through years of cold.  
Con. So, best!

—I try to see those years—I think I see.  
You walk quick and new warmth comes;

you look back  
And lay all to the first glow—not sit down

For ever brooding on a day like this  
While seeing embers whiten and love die.

Yes, love lives best in its effect; and mine,  
Full in its own life, yearns to live in yours.

Nor. Just so. I take and know you all at once.

## IN A BALCONY

Your soul is disengaged so easily,  
Your face is there, I know you; give me  
time,  
Let me be proud and think you shall know  
me.

My soul is slower: in a life I roll  
The minute out whereto you condense  
yours—

The whole slow circle round you I must  
move,

To be just you. I look to a long life  
To decompose this minute, prove its  
worth.

'Tis the sparks' long succession one by  
one

Shall show you, in the end, what fire was  
crammed

In that mere stone you struck: how could  
you know,

If it lay ever unproved in your sight,  
As now my heart lies? your own warmth  
would hide

Its coldness, were it cold.

*Con.* But how prove, how?

*Nor.* Prove in my life, you ask?

*Con.* Quick, Norbert—how?

*Nor.* That's easy told. I count life just  
a stuff

To try the soul's strength on, educe the  
man.

Who keeps one end in view makes all  
things serve.

As with the body—he who hurls a lance  
Or heaps up stone on stone, shows strength  
alike:

So must I seize and task all means to prove  
And show this soul of mine, you crown  
as yours,

And justify us both.

*Con.* Could you write books,  
Paint pictures! One sits down in poverty  
And writes or paints, with pity for the  
rich.

*Nor.* And loves one's painting and  
one's writing, then,

And not one's mistress! All is best, be-  
lieve,

And we best as no other than we are.  
We live, and they experiment on life—

Those poets, painters, all who stand aloof  
To overlook the farther. Let us be

The thing they look at! I might take your  
face

And write of it and paint it—to what end?  
For whom? what pale dictatress in the  
air

Feeds, smiling sadly, her fine ghost-like  
form

With earth's real blood and breath, the  
beauteous life

She makes despised for ever? You are  
mine,

Made for me, not for others in the world,  
Nor yet for that which I should call my art,

The cold calm power to see how fair you  
look.

I come to you; I leave you not, to write  
Or paint. You are, I am: let Rubens there  
Paint us!

*Con.* So, best!

*Nor.* I understand your soul.

You live, and rightly sympathize with life,  
With action, power, success. This way is  
straight;

And time were short beside, to let me  
change

The craft my childhood learnt: my craft  
shall serve.

Men set me here to subjugate, enclose,  
Manure their barren lives, and force  
thence fruit

First for themselves, and afterward for me  
In the due tithe; the task of some one soul,  
Through ways of work appointed by the  
world.

I am not bid create—men see no star  
Transfiguring my brow to warrant that—  
But find and bind and bring to bear their  
wills.

So I began: to-night sees how I end.

What if it see, too, power's first outbreak  
here

Amid the warmth, surprise and sympathy,  
And instincts of the heart that teach the  
head?

What if the people have discerned at  
length

The dawn of the next nature, novel brain  
Whose will they venture in the place of  
theirs,

Whose work, they trust, shall find them as  
novel ways

To untried heights which yet he only sees?  
I felt it when you kissed me. See this

Queen,

This people—in our phrase, this mass of  
men—

See how the mass lies passive to my hand  
Now that my hand is plastic, with you by

To make the muscles iron! Oh, an end  
Shall crown this issue as this crowns the

first!

My will be on this people! then, the strain,  
The grappling of the potter with his clay,

The long uncertain struggle,—the success  
And consummation of the spirit-work,

Some vase shaped to the curl of the god's  
lip,

While rounded fair for human sense to see  
The Graces in a dance men recognize

With turbulent applause and laughs of  
heart!

So triumph ever shall renew itself;

Ever shall end in efforts higher yet,

Ever begin . . .

*Con.* I ever helping?

*Nor.*

Thus!

[As he embraces her, the QUEEN enters.

*Con.* Hist, madam! So have I performed my part.

You see your gratitude's true decency, Norbert? A little slow in seeing it!

Begin, to end the sooner! What's a kiss? *Nor.* Constance?

*Con.* Why, must I teach it you again?

You want a witness to your dulness, sir? What was I saying these ten minutes long?

Then I repeat—when some young handsome man

Like you has acted out a part like yours, Is pleased to fall in love with one beyond,

So very far beyond him, as he says— So hopelessly in love that but to speak

Would prove him mad,—he thinks judiciously,

And makes some insignificant good soul, Like me, his friend, adviser, confidant,

And very stalking-horse to cover him In following after what he dares not face.

When his end's gained—(sir, do you understand?)

When she, he dares not face, has loved him first,

—May I not say so, madam?—tops his hope,

And overpasses so his wildest dream, With glad consent of all, and most of her

The confidant who brought the same about—

Why, in the moment when such joy explodes,

I do hold that the merest gentleman Will not start rudely from the stalking-

horse, Dismiss it with a 'There, enough of you!' Forget it, show his back unmannerly:

But like a liberal heart will rather turn And say, 'A tingling time of hope was

ours;

'Betwixt the fears and falterings, we two lived

'A chanceful time in waiting for the prize: The confidant, the Constance, served not

ill. And though I shall forget her in due time, Her use being answered now, as reason

bids,

'Nay as herself bids from her heart of hearts,—

'Still, she has rights, the first thanks go to her,

'The first good praise goes to the prosperous tool,

'And the first—which is the last—rewarding kiss.'

*Nor.* Constance, it is a dream—ah, see, you smile!

*Con.* So, now his part being properly performed,

Madam, I turn to you and finish mine As duly; I do justice in my turn.

Yes, madam, he has loved you—long and well;

He could not hope to tell you so—'twas I Who served to prove your soul accessible,

I led his thoughts on, drew them to their place

When they had wandered else into despair, And kept love constant toward its natural

aim. Enough, my part is played; you stoop half-

way And meet us royally and spare our fears: 'Tis like yourself. He thanks you, so do I.

Take him—with my full heart! my work is praised

By what comes of it. Be you happy, both! Yourself—the only one on earth who

can— Do all for him, much more than a mere heart

Which though warm is not useful in its warmth

As the silk vesture of a queen! fold that Around him gently, tenderly. For him—

For him,—he knows his own part!

*Nor.* Have you done? I take the jest at last. Should I speak now?

Was yours the wager, Constance, foolish child,

Or did you but accept it? Well—at least You lose by it.

*Con.* Nay, madam, 'tis your turn! Restrain him still from speech a little

more, And make him happier as more confident! Pity him, madam, he is timid yet!

Mark, Norbert! Do not shrink now! Here I yield

My whole right in you to the Queen, observe!

With her go put in practice the great schemes

You team with, follow the career else closed—

Be all you cannot be except by her! Behold her!—Madam, say for pity's sake

Anything—frankly say you love him! Else

He'll not believe it: there's more earnest in His fear than you conceive: I know the

man! *Nor.* I know the woman somewhat, and confess

I thought she had jested better: she begins To overcharge her part. I gravely wait

Your pleasure, madam: where is my reward?

*Queen.* Norbert, this wild girl (whom I recognize

Scarce more than you do, in her fancy-fit, Eccentric speech and variable mirth,

Not very wise perhaps and somewhat bold, Yet suitable, the whole night's work being

strange)

## IN A BALCONY

—May still be right: I may do well to speak  
And make authentic what appears a dream  
To even myself. For, what she says, is  
true:

Yes, Norbert—what you spoke just now  
of love,

Devotion, stirred no novel sense in me,  
But justified a warmth felt long before.

Yes, from the first—I loved you, I shall  
say:

Strange! but I do grow stronger, now 'tis  
said.

Your courage helps mine: you did well to  
speak

To-night, the night that crowns your  
twelvemonths' toil:

But still I had not waited to discern  
Your heart so long, believe me! From the  
first

The source of so much zeal was almost  
plain,

In absence even of your own words just  
now

Which hazarded the truth. 'Tis very  
strange,

But takes a happy ending—in your love  
Which mine meets: be it so! as you chose  
me,

So I choose you.

Nor. And worthily you choose.  
I will not be unworthy your esteem,

No, madam. I do love you; I will meet  
Your nature, now I know it. This was  
well.

I see,—you dare and you are justified:  
But none had ventured such experiment,

Less versed than you in nobleness of heart,  
Less confident of finding such in me.

I joy that thus you test me ere you grant  
The dearest richest beauteousest and best  
Of women to my arms: 'tis like yourself.

So—back again into my part's set words—  
Devotion to the uttermost is yours,

But no, you cannot, madam, even you,  
Create in me the love our Constance does.

Or—something truer to the tragic  
phrase—

Not yon magnolia-bell superb with scent  
Invites a certain insect—that's myself—

But the small eye-flower nearer to the  
ground.

I take this lady.

Con. Stay—not hers, the trap—  
Stay, Norbert—that mistake were worst  
of all!

He is too cunning, madam! It was I,  
I, Norbert, who . . .

Nor. You, was it, Constance?

Then.

But for the grace of this divinest hour  
Which gives me you, I might not pardon  
here!

I am the Queen's; she only knows my  
brain:

She may experiment upon my heart  
And I instruct her too by the result.

But you, sweet, you who know me, who  
so long

Have told my heart-beats over, held my  
life

In those white hands of yours,—it is not  
well!

Con. Tush! I have said it, did I not say  
it all?

The life, for her—the heart-beats, for her  
sake!

Nor. Enough! my cheek grows red, I  
think. Your test?

There's not the meanest woman in the  
world,

Not she I least could love in all the  
world,

Whom, did she love me, had love proved  
itself,

I dare insult as you insult me now.  
Constance, I could say, if it must be said,

'Take back the soul you offer, I keep  
mine!'

But—'Take the soul still quivering on  
your hand,

'The soul so offered, which I cannot use,  
'And, please you, give it to some playful  
friend,

'For—what's the trifle he requites me  
with?'

I, tempt a woman, to amuse a man,  
That two may mock her heart if it suc-

cumb?

No: fearing God and standing 'neath his  
heaven,

I would not dare insult a woman so,  
Were she the meanest woman in the world,

And he, I cared to please, ten emperors!

Con. Norbert!

Nor. I love once as I live but  
once.

What case is this to think or talk about?  
I love you. Would it mend the case at all

If such a step as this killed love in me?  
Your part were done: account to God for  
it!

But mine—could murdered love get up  
again,

And kneel to whom you please to de-  
signate,

And make you mirth? It is too horrible.  
You did not know this, Constance? now  
you know

That body and soul have each one life,  
but one:

And here's my love, here, living, at your  
feet.

Con. See the Queen! Norbert—this  
one more last word—

If thus you have taken jest for earnest—  
thus

Loved me in earnest . . .  
Nor. Ah, no jest holds here!

## IN A BALCONY

Where is the laughter in which jests break  
up,  
And what this horror that grows palp-  
able?  
Madam—why grasp you thus the bal-  
cony?  
Have I done ill? Have I not spoken  
truth?  
How could I other? Was it not your test,  
To try me, what my love for Constance  
meant?  
Madam, your royal soul itself approves,  
The first, that I should choose thus! so  
one takes  
A beggar,—asks him, what would buy his  
child?  
And then approves the expected laugh of  
scorn  
Returned as something noble from the  
rags.  
Speak, Constance, I'm the beggar! Ha,  
what's this?  
You two glare each at each like panther's  
now.  
Constance, the world fades; only you  
stand there!  
You did not, in to-night's wild whirl of  
things,  
Sell me—your soul of souls, for any price?  
No—no—'tis easy to believe in you!  
Was it your love's mad trial to o'ertop  
Mine by this vain self-sacrifice? well,  
still—  
Though I might curse, I love you. I am  
love

And cannot change: love's self is at your  
feet!

[*The QUEEN goes out.*]

*Con.* Feel my heart; let it die against  
your own!

*Nor.* Against my own. Explain not;  
let this be!

This is life's height.

*Con.* Yours, yours, yours!

*Nor.* You and I—

Why care by what meanders we are here  
I' the centre of the labyrinth? Men have  
died

Trying to find this place, which we have  
found.

*Con.* Found, found!

*Nor.* Sweet, never fear  
what she can do!

We are past harm now.

*Con.* On the breast of God.

I thought of men—as if you were a man.  
Tempting him with a crown!

*Nor.* This must end here:

It is too perfect.

*Con.* There's the music stopped.

What measured heavy tread? It is one  
blaze

About me and within me.

*Nor.* Oh, some death

Will run its sudden finger round this spark  
And sever us from the rest!

*Con.* And so do well.

Now the doors open.

*Nor.* 'Tis the guard comes.

*Con.* Kiss!

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ

1864

### JAMES LEE'S WIFE

#### I

JAMES LEE'S WIFE SPEAKS AT THE  
WINDOW

#### I

AH, Love, but a day  
And the world has changed!  
The sun's away,  
And the bird estranged;  
The wind has dropped,  
And the sky's deranged:  
Summer has stopped.

#### II

Look in my eyes!  
Wilt thou change too?  
Should I fear surprise?  
Shall I find aught new  
In the old and dear,  
In the good and true,  
With the changing year?

#### III

Thou art a man,  
But I am thy love.  
For the lake, its swan;  
For the dell, its dove;  
And for thee—(oh, haste!)  
Me, to bend above,  
Me, to hold embraced.

#### II

BY THE FIRESIDE

#### I

Is all our fire of shipwreck wood,  
Oak and pine?  
Oh, for the ill half-understood,  
The dim dead woe  
Long ago  
Befallen this bitter coast of France!  
Well, poor sailors took their chance;  
I take mine.

## JAMES LEE'S WIFE

### II

A ruddy shaft our fire must shoot  
O'er the sea:  
Do sailors eye the casement—mute,  
Drenched and stark,  
From their bark—  
And envy, gnash their teeth for hate  
O' the warm safe house and happy freight  
—Thee and me?

### III

God help you, sailors, at your need!  
Spare the curse!  
For some ships, safe in port indeed,  
Rot and rust,  
Run to dust,  
All through worms i' the wood, which  
crept,  
Gnawed our hearts out while we slept:  
That is worse.

### IV

Who lived here before us two?  
Old-world pairs.  
Did a woman ever—would I knew!—  
Watch the man  
With whom began  
Love's voyage full-sail,—(now, gnash  
your teeth!)  
When planks start, open hell beneath  
Unawares?

### III

#### IN THE DOORWAY

#### I

THE swallow has set her six young on the  
rail,  
And looks sea-ward:  
The water's in stripes like a snake, olive-  
pale  
To the leeward,—  
On the weather-side, black, spotted white  
with the wind.  
'Good fortune departs, and disaster's be-  
hind,'—  
Hark, the wind with its wants and its in-  
finite wail!

#### II

Our fig-tree, that leaned for the saltness,  
has furled  
Her five fingers,  
Each leaf like a hand opened wide to the  
world  
Where there lingers  
No glint of the gold, Summer sent for her  
sake:  
How the vines writhe in rows, each im-  
paled on its stake!  
My heart shrivels up and my spirit shrinks  
curled.

### III

Yet here are we two; we have love, house  
enough,  
With the field there,  
This house of four rooms, that field red  
and rough,  
Though it yield there,  
For the rabbit that robs, scarce a blade or  
a bent;  
If a magpie alight now, it seems an event;  
And they both will be gone at November's  
rebuff.

### IV

But why must cold spread? but wherefore  
bring change  
To the spirit,  
God meant should mate his with an in-  
finite range,  
And inherit  
His power to put life in the darkness and  
cold?  
Oh, live and love worthily, bear and be  
bold!  
Whom Summer made friends of, let  
Winter estrange!

### IV

#### ALONG THE BEACH

#### I

I WILL be quiet and talk with you,  
And reason why you are wrong.  
You wanted my love—is that much true?  
And so I did love, so I do:  
What has come of it all along?

#### II

I took you—how could I otherwise?  
For a world to me, and more;  
For all, love greatens and glorifies  
Till God's a-glow, to the loving eyes,  
In what was mere earth before.

#### III

Yes, earth—yes, mere ignoble earth!  
Now do I mis-state, mistake?  
Do I wrong your weakness and call it  
worth?  
Expect all harvest, dread no dearth,  
Seal my sense up for your sake?

#### IV

Oh, Love, Love, no, Love! not so, indeed!  
You were just weak earth, I knew:  
With much in you waste, with many a  
weed,  
'And plenty of passions run to seed,  
But a little good grain too.

#### V

And such as you were, I took you for mine:  
Did not you find me yours,  
To watch the olive and wait the vine,  
And wonder when rivers of oil and wine  
Would flow, as the Book assures?

VI

Well, and if none of these good things  
came,  
What did the failure prove?  
The man was my whole world, all the  
same,  
With his flowers to praise or his weeds to  
blame,  
And, either or both, to love.

VII

Yet this turns now to a fault—there! there!  
That I do love, watch too long,  
And wait too well, and weary and wear;  
And 'tis all an old story, and my despair  
Fit subject for some new song:

VIII

How the light, light love, he has wings to  
fly  
'At suspicion of a bond:  
'My wisdom has bidden your pleasure  
good-bye,  
'Which will turn up next in a laughing eye,  
'And why should you look beyond?'

V

ON THE CLIFF

I

I LEANED on the turf,  
I looked at a rock  
Left dry by the surf;  
For the turf, to call it grass were to mock:  
Dead to the roots, so deep was done  
The work of the summer sun.

II

And the rock lay flat  
As an anvil's face:  
No iron like that!  
Baked dry; of a weed, of a shell, no trace:  
Sunshine outside, but ice at the core,  
Death's altar by the lone shore.

III

On the turf, sprang gay  
With his films of blue,  
No cricket, I'll say,  
But a warhorse, barded and chanfroned  
too,  
The gift of a quixote-mage to his knight,  
Real fairy, with wings all right.

IV

On the rock, they scorch  
Like a drop of fire  
From a brandished torch,  
Fall two red fans of a butterfly:  
No turf, no rock: in their ugly stead,  
See, wonderful blue and red!

V

Is it not so  
With the minds of men?  
The level and low,  
The burnt and bare, in themselves; but  
then  
With such a blue and red grace, not  
theirs,—  
Love settling unawares!

VI

READING A BOOK, UNDER  
THE CLIFF

I

'Still ailing, Wind? Wilt be appeased or  
no?  
'Which needs the other's office, thou  
or I?  
'Dost want to be disburthened of a woe,  
'And can, in truth, my voice untie  
'Its links, and let it go?

II

'Art thou a dumb wronged thing that  
would be righted,  
'Entrusting thus thy cause to me? For-  
bear!  
'No tongue can mend such pleadings;  
faith, requited  
'With falsehood,—love, at last aware  
'Of scorn,—hopes, early blighted,—

III

'We have them; but I know not any tone  
'So fit as thine to falter forth a sorrow:  
'Dost think men would go mad without a  
moan,  
'If they knew any way to borrow  
'A pathos like thy own?

IV

'Which sigh wouldst mock, of all the  
sighs? The one  
'So long escaping from lips starved and  
blue,  
'That lasts while on her pallet-bed the nun  
'Stretches her length; her foot comes  
through  
'The straw she shivers on;

V

'You had not thought she was so tall: and  
spent,  
'Her shrunk lids open, her lean fingers  
shut  
'Close, close, their sharp and livid nails  
indent  
'The clammy palm; then all is mute:  
'That way, the spirit went.



## JAMES LEE'S WIFE

### VI

'Or wouldst thou rather that I understand  
'Thy will to help me?—like the dog I  
found  
'Once, pacing sad this solitary strand,  
'Who would not take my food, poor  
hound,  
'But whined and licked my hand.'

### VII

All this, and more, comes from some  
young man's pride  
Of power to see,—in failure and mis-  
take,  
Relinquishment, disgrace, on every side,—  
Merely examples for his sake,  
Helps to his path untried:

### VIII

Instances he must—simply recognize?  
Oh, more than so!—must, with a  
learner's zeal,  
Make doubly prominent, twice empha-  
size,  
By added touches that reveal  
The god in babe's disguise.

### IX

Oh, he knows what defeat means, and the  
rest!  
Himself the undefeated that shall be:  
Failure, disgrace, he flings them you to  
test,—  
His triumph, in eternity  
Too plainly manifest!

### X

Whence, judge if he learn forthwith what  
the wind  
Means in its moaning—by the happy  
prompt  
Instinctive way of youth, I mean; for kind  
Calm years, exacting their accopt  
Of pain, mature the mind:

### XI

And some midsummer morning, at the lull  
Just about daybreak, as he looks across  
A sparkling foreign country, wonderful  
To the sea's edge for gloom and gloss,  
Next minute must annul,—

### XII

Then, when the wind begins among the  
vines,  
So low, so low, what shall it say but this?  
'Here is the change beginning, here the  
lines  
'Circumscribe beauty, set to bliss  
'The limit time assigns.'

### XIII

Nothing can be as it has been before;  
Better, so call it, only not the same.  
To draw one beauty into our hearts' core,  
And keep it changeless! such our claim,  
So answered,—Never more!

### XIV

Simple? Why this is the old woe o' the  
world;  
Tune, to whose rise and fall we live and  
die.  
Rise with it, then! Rejoice that man is  
hurled  
From change to change unceasingly,  
His soul's wings never furled!

### XV

That's a new question; still replies the  
fact,  
Nothing endures: the wind moans, say-  
ing so;  
We moan in acquiescence: there's life's  
pact,  
Perhaps probation—do I know?  
God does: endure his act!

### XVI

Only, for man, how bitter not to grave  
On his soul's hands' palms one fair good  
wise thing  
Just as he grasped it! For himself, death's  
wave;  
While time first washes—ah, the stinging!—  
O'er all he'd sink to save.

## VII

### AMONG THE ROCKS

#### I

OH, good gigantic smile o' the brown: old  
earth,  
This autumn morning! How he sets his  
bones  
To bask i' the sun, and thrusts out knees  
and feet  
For the ripple to run over in its mirth;  
Listening the while, where on the heap  
of stones  
The white breast of the sea-lark twitters  
sweet.

#### II

That is the doctrine, simple, ancient, true;  
'Such is life's trial, as old earth smiles  
and knows.  
If you loved only what were worth your  
love,  
'Love were clear gain, and wholly well for  
you:  
Make the low nature better by your  
throes!  
Give earth yourself, go up for gain above!

VIII

BESIDE THE DRAWING BOARD

I

'As like as a Hand to another Hand!'  
 Whoever said that foolish thing,  
 Could not have studied to understand  
 The counsels of God in fashioning,  
 Out of the infinite love of his heart,  
 This Hand, whose beauty I praise, apart  
 From 'the world of wonder left to praise,  
 If I tried to learn the other ways  
 Of love in its skill, or love in its power.  
 'As like as a Hand to another Hand':  
 Who said that, 'never took his stand,  
 Found and followed, like me, an hour,  
 The beauty in this,—how free, how fine  
 To fear, almost,—of the limit-line!  
 As I looked at this, and learned and drew,  
 Drew and learned, and looked again,  
 While fast the happy minutes flew,  
 Its beauty mounted into my brain,  
 And a fancy seized me; I was fain  
 To efface my work, begin anew,  
 Kiss what before I only drew;  
 Ay, laying the red chalk 'twixt my lips,  
 With soul to help if the mere lips failed,  
 I kissed all right where the drawing  
 Ailed,  
 Kissed fast the grace that somehow slips  
 Still from one's soulless finger-tips.

II

'Tis a clay cast, the perfect thing,  
 From Iland live once, dead long ago:  
 Princess-like it wears the ring  
 To fancy's eye, by which we know  
 That here at length a master found  
 His match, a proud lone soul its mate,  
 As soaring genius sank to ground,  
 And pencil could not emulate  
 The beauty in this,—how free, how fine  
 To fear almost!—of the limit-line.  
 Long ago the god, like me  
 The worm, learned, each in our degree:  
 Looked and loved, learned and drew,  
 Drew and learned and loved again,  
 While fast the happy minutes flew,  
 Till beauty mounted into his brain  
 And on the finger which outvied  
 His art he placed the ring that's there,  
 Still by fancy's eye descried,  
 In token of a marriage rare:  
 For him on earth, his art's despair,  
 For him in heaven, his soul's fit bride.

III

Little girl with the poor coarse hand  
 I turned from to a cold clay cast—  
 I have my lesson, understand  
 The worth of flesh and blood at last.  
 Nothing but beauty in a Hand?

Because he could not change the hue,  
 Mend the lines and make them true  
 To this which met his soul's demand,—  
 Would Da Vinci turn from you?  
 I hear him laugh my woes to scorn—  
 'The fool forsooth is all forlorn  
 'Because the beauty, she thinks best,  
 'Lived long ago or was never born,—  
 'Because no beauty bears the test  
 'In this rough peasant Hand! Confessed!  
 "'Art is null and study void!"  
 'So sayest thou? So said not I,  
 'Who threw the faulty pencil by,  
 'And years instead of hours employed,  
 'Learning the veritable use  
 'Of flesh and bone and nerve beneath  
 'Lines and hue of the outer sheath,  
 'If haply I might reproduce  
 'One motive of the powers profuse,  
 'Flesh and bone and nerve that make  
 'The poorest coarsest human hand  
 'An object worthy to be scanned  
 'A whole life long for their sole sake.  
 'Shall earth and the cramped moment-  
 space  
 'Yield the heavenly crowning grace?  
 'Now the parts and then the whole!  
 'Who art thou, with stunted soul  
 'And stunted body, thus to cry  
 "'I love,—shall that be life's strait dole?  
 "'I must live beloved or die!"  
 'This peasant hand that spins the wool  
 'And bakes the bread, why lives it on,  
 'Poor and coarse with beauty gone,—  
 'What use survives the beauty?' Fool!

Go, little girl with the poor coarse hand!  
 I have my lesson, shall understand.

IX

ON DECK

I

THERE is nothing to remember in me,  
 Nothing I ever said with a grace,  
 Nothing I did that you care to see,  
 Nothing I was that deserves a place  
 In your mind, now I leave you, set you  
 free.

II

Conceded! In turn, concede to me,  
 Such things have been as a mutual  
 flame.  
 Your soul's locked fast; but, love for a  
 key,  
 You might let it loose, till I grew the  
 same  
 In your eyes, as in mine you stand: strange  
 plea!

III

For then, then, what would it matter to me  
 That I was the harsh ill-favoured one?

## JAMES LEE'S WIFE

We both should be like as pea and pea;  
It was ever so since the world begun:  
So, let me proceed with my reverie.

### IV

How strange it were if you had all me,  
As I have all you in my heart and brain,  
You, whose least word brought gloom or  
glee,

Who never lifted the hand in vain—  
Will hold mine yet, from over the sea!

### V

Strange, if a face, when you thought of me,  
Rose like your own face present now,  
With eyes as dear in their due degree,  
Much such a mouth, and as bright a  
brow,  
Till you saw yourself, while you cried 'Tis  
She!'

### VI

Well, you may, you must set down to me  
Love that was life, life that was love;  
A tenure of breath at your lips' decree,  
A passion to stand as your thoughts  
approve,  
A rapture to fall where your foot might be.

### VII

But did one touch of such love for me  
Come in a word or a look of yours,  
Whose words and looks will, circling, flee  
Round me and round while life en-  
dures,—  
Could I fancy 'As I feel, thus feels he';

### VIII

Why, fade you might to a thing like me,  
And your hair grow these coarse hanks  
of hair,  
Your skin, this bark of a gnarled tree,—  
You might turn myself!—should I know  
or care  
When I should be dead of joy, James Lee?

## GOLD HAIR:

### A STORY OF PORNIC

#### I

OH, the beautiful girl, too white,  
Who lived at Pornic, down by the sea,  
Just where the sea and the Loire unite!  
And a boasted name in Brittany  
She bore, which I will not write.

#### II

Too white, for the flower of life is red;  
Her flesh was the soft seraphic screen  
Of a soul that is meant (her parents said)  
To just see earth, and hardly be seen,  
And blossom in heaven instead.

#### III

Yet earth saw one thing, one how fair!  
One grace that grew to its full on earth:

Smiles might be sparse on her cheek so  
sparse,  
And her waist want half a girdle's girth,  
But she had her great gold hair.

#### IV

Hair, such a wonder of flax and floss,  
Freshness and fragrance—floods of it,  
too!  
Gold, did I say? Nay, gold's mere dross:  
Here, Life smiled, 'Think what I meant  
to do!'

And Love sighed, 'Fancy my loss!'

#### V

So, when she died, it was scarce more  
strange  
Than that, when delicate evening dies,  
And you follow its spent sun's pallid range,  
There's a shoot of colour startles the  
skies

With sudden, violent change,—

#### VI

That, while the breath was nearly to seek,  
As they put the little cross to her lips,  
She changed; a spot came out on her  
cheek,

A spark from her eye in mid-eclipse,  
And she broke forth, 'I must speak!'

#### VII

'Not my hair!' made the girl her moan—  
'All the rest is gone or to go;  
'But the last, last grace, my all, my own,  
'Let it stay in the grave, that the ghosts  
may know!  
'Leave my poor gold hair alone!'

#### VIII

The passion thus vented, dead lay she;  
Her parents sobbed their worst on that;  
All friends joined in, nor observed degree:  
For indeed the hair was to wonder at,  
As it spread—not flowing free,

#### IX

But curled around her brow, like a crown,  
And coiled beside her cheeks, like a cap,  
And calmed about her neck—ay, down  
To her breast, pressed flat, without a  
gap  
I' the gold, it reached her gown.

#### X

All kissed that face, like a silver wedge  
'Mid the yellow wealth, nor disturbed  
its hair:  
E'en the priest allowed death's privilege,  
As he planted the crucifix with care  
'On her breast, 'twixt edge and edge.

#### XI

And thus was she buried, inviolate  
Of body and soul, in the very space

By the altar; keeping saintly state

In Pornic church, for her pride of race,  
Pure life and piteous fate.

## XII

And in after-time would your fresh tear  
fall,

Though your mouth might twitch with  
a dubious smile,

As they told you of gold, both robe and  
pall,

How she prayed them leave it alone  
awhile,

So it never was touched at all.

## XIII

Years flew; this legend grew at last

The life of the lady; all she had done,  
All been, in the memories fading fast

Of lover and friend, was summed in one  
Sentence survivors passed:

## XIV

To wit, she was meant for heaven, not,  
earth;

Had turned an angel before the time:

Yet, since she was mortal, in such dearth  
Of frailty, all you could count a crime  
Was—she knew her gold hair's worth.

## XV

At little pleasant Pornic church,

It chanced, the pavement wanted re-  
pair,

Was taken to pieces: left in the lurch,

A certain sacred space lay bare,  
And the boys began research.

## XVI

'Twas the space where our sires would lay  
a saint,

A benefactor,—a bishop, suppose,

A baron with armour-adornments quaint,  
Dame with chased ring and jewelled

rose,

Things sanctity saves from taint;

## XVII

So we come to find them in after-days

When the corpse is presumed to have  
done with gauds,

Of use to the living, in many ways:

For the boys get pelf, and the town ap-  
plauds,

And the church deserves the praise.

## XVIII

They grubbed with a will: and at length—

*O cor*

*Humanum, pectora cæca*, and the rest!—

They found—no gaud they were prying  
for,

No ring, no rose, but—who would have  
guessed?—

A double Louis-d'or!

## XX

Here was a case for the priest: he heard,

Marked, inwardly digested, laid

Finger on nose, smiled, 'There's a bird

'Chirps in my ear': then, 'Bring a spade,  
'Dig deeper!'—he gave the word.

## XX

And lo, when they came to the coffin-lid,  
Or rotten planks which composed it

once,

Why, there lay the girl's skull wedged amid  
A mint of money, it served for the nonce

To hold in its hair-heaps hid!

## XXI

Hid there? Why? Could the girl be wont

(She the stainless soul) to treasure up

Money, earth's trash and heaven's affront?

Had a spider found out the communion-  
cup,

Was a toad in the christening-font?

## XXII

Truth is truth: too true it was.

Gold! She hoarded and hugged it first,

Longed for it, leaned o'er it, loved it—  
alas—

Till the humour grew to a head and  
burst,

And she cried, at the final pass,—

## XXIII

'Talk not of God, my heart is stone!

'Nor lover nor friend—be gold for both!

'Gold I lack; and, my all, my own,

'It shall hide in my hair. I scarce die  
loth

'If they let my hair alone!'

## XXIV

Louis-d'or, some six times five,

And duly double, every piece.

Now do you see? With the priest to thrive,  
With parents preventing her soul's re-  
lease

By kisses that kept alive,—

## XXV

With heaven's gold gates about to ope,

With friends' praise, gold-like, lingering  
still,

An instinct had bidden the girl's hand  
gripe

For gold, the true sort—'Gold in  
heaven, if you will;

'But I keep earth's too, I hope.'

## XXVI

Enough! The priest took the grave's grim  
yield:

The parents, they eyed that price of sin  
As if *thirty pieces* lay revealed

On the place to *bury strangers in*,

The hideous Potter's Field.

## GOLD HAIR

### XXVII

But the priest bethought him: "Milk  
that's spilt"  
'—You know the adage! Watch and  
pray!  
'Saints tumble to earth with so slight a  
tilt!  
'It would build a new altar; that, we  
may!  
And the altar therewith was built.

### XXVIII

Why I deliver this horrible verse?  
As the text of the sermon, which now  
I preach:  
Evil or good may be better or worse  
In the human heart, but the mixture of  
each  
Is a marvel and a curse.

### XXIX

The candid incline to surmise of late  
That the Christian faith proves false, I  
find;  
For our Essays-and-Reviews' debate  
Begins to tell on the public mind,  
And Colenso's words have weight:

### XXX

I still, to suppose it true, for my part,  
See reasons and reasons; this, to begin:  
'Tis the faith that launched point-blank  
her dart  
At the head of a lie—taught Original  
Sin,  
The Corruption of Man's Heart.

## THE WORST OF IT

### I

WOULD it were I had been false, not you!  
I that am nothing, not you that are all:  
I, never the worse for a touch or two  
On my speckled hide; not you, the pride  
Of the day, my swan, that a first fleck's fall  
On her wonder of white must unswan,  
undo!

### II

I had dipped in life's struggle and, out  
again,  
Bore specks of it here, there, easy to see,  
When I found my swan and the cure was  
plain;  
The dull turned bright as I caught your  
white  
On my bosom: you saved me—saved in,  
vain  
If you ruined yourself, and all through  
me!

### III

Yes, all through the speckled beast that I  
am,  
Who taught you to stoop; you gave me  
yourself,

And bound your soul by the vows that  
damn:  
Since on better thought you break, as  
you ought,  
Vows—words, no angel set down, some elf  
Mistook,—for an oath, an epigram!

### IV

Yes, might I judge you, here were my heart,  
And a hundred its like, to treat as you  
pleased!  
I choose to be yours, for my proper part,  
Yours, leave or take, or mar me or  
make;  
If I acquiesce, why should you be teased  
With the conscience-prick and the  
memory-smart?

### V

But what will God say? Oh, my sweet,  
Think, and be sorry you did this thing  
Though earth were unworthy to feel your  
feet,  
There's a heaven above may deserve  
your love:  
Should you forfeit heaven for a snapt gold  
ring  
And a promise broke, were it just or  
meet?

### VI

And I to have tempted you! I, who tired  
Your soul, no doubt, till it sank! Un-  
wise,  
I loved and was lowly, loved and aspired,  
Loved, grieving or glad, till I made you  
mad,  
And you meant to have hated and de-  
spised—  
Whereas, you deceived me nor inquired!

### VII

She, ruined? How? No heaven for her?  
Crowns to give, and none for the brow  
That looked like marble and smelt like  
myrrh?  
Shall the robe be worn, and the palm-  
branch borne,  
And she go graceless, she graced now  
Beyond all saints, as themselves aver?

### VIII

Hardly! That must be understood!  
The earth is your place of penance, then;  
And what will it prove? I desire your  
good,  
But, plot as I may, I can find no way  
How a blow should fall, such as falls on  
men,  
Nor prove too much for your woman-  
hood.

### IX

It will come, I suspect, at the end of life,  
When you walk alone, and review the  
past;

## THE WORST OF IT

And I, who so long shall have done with  
strife,  
And journeyed my stage and earned my  
wage  
And retired as was right,—I am called at  
last  
When the devil stabs you, to lend the  
knife.

### X

He stabs for the minute of trivial wrong,  
Nor the other hours are able to save,  
The happy, that lasted my whole life long:  
For a promise broke, not for first words  
spoke,  
The true, the only, that turn my grave  
To a blaze of joy and a crash of song.

### XI

Witness beforehand! Off I trip  
On a safe path gay through the flowers  
you flung:  
My very name made great by your lip,  
And my heart a-glow with the good I  
know  
Of a perfect year when we both were young,  
And I tasted the angels' fellowship.

### XII

And witness, moreover . . . Ah, but wait!  
I spy the loop whence an arrow shoots!  
It may be for yourself, when you meditate,  
That you grieve—for slain ruth, murdered truth.  
'Though falsehood escape in the end, what  
boots?  
'How truth would have triumphed!'—  
you sigh too late.

### XIII

Ay, who would have triumphed like you,  
I say!  
Well, it is lost now; well, you must bear,  
Abide and grow fit for a better day:  
You should hardly grudge, could I be  
your judge!  
But hush! For you, can be no despair:  
There's amends: 'tis a secret: hope and  
pray!

### XIV

For I was true at least—oh, true enough!  
And, Dear, truth is not as good as it  
seems!  
Commend me to conscience! Idle stuff!  
Much help is in mine, as I mope and  
pine,  
And skulk through day, and scowl in my  
dreams  
At my swan's obtaining the crow's re-  
buff.

### XV

Men tell me of truth now—'False!' I cry:  
Of beauty—'A mask, friend! Look be-  
neath!'

We take our own method, the devil and I,  
With pleasant and fair and wise and  
rare:  
And the best we wish to what lives, is—  
death;  
Which even in wishing, perhaps we lie!

### XVI

Far better commit a fault and have done—  
As you, Dear!—for ever; and choose  
the pure,  
And look where the healing waters run,  
And strive and strain to be good again,  
And a place in the other world ensure,  
All glass and gold, with God for its sun.

### XVII

Misery! What shall I say or do?  
I cannot advise, or, at least, persuade:  
Most like, you are glad you deceived me  
—rue  
No whit of the wrong: you endured too  
long,  
Have done no evil and want no aid,  
Will live the old life out and chance the  
new.

### XVIII

And your sentence is written all the same,  
And I can do nothing,—pray, perhaps:  
But somehow the world pursues its  
game,—  
If I pray, if I curse,—for better or worse:  
And my faith is torn to a thousand scraps,  
And my heart feels ice while my words  
breathe flame.

### XIX

Dear, I look from my hiding-place.  
Are you still so fair? Have you still the  
eyes?  
Be happy! Add but the other grace,  
Be good! Why want what the angels  
vaunt?  
I knew you once: but in Paradise,  
If we meet, I will pass nor turn my face.

## DÏS ALITER VISUM; OR, LE BYRON DE NOS JOURS

### I

STOP, let me have the truth of that!  
Is that all true? I say, the day  
Ten years ago when both of us  
Met on a morning, friends—as thus  
We meet this evening, friends or what?—

### II

Did you—because I took your arm  
'And sillily smiled, 'A mass of brass  
'That sea looks, blazing underneath!'  
While up the cliff-road edged with  
heath,  
We took the turns nor came to harm—

## DIS ALITER VISUM

### III

Did you consider 'Now makes twice  
'That I have seen her, walked and talked  
'With this poor pretty thoughtful thing,  
'Whose worth I weigh: she tries to sing;  
'Draws, hopes in time the eye grows nice;

### IV

'Reads verse and thinks she understands;  
'Loves all, at any rate, that's great,  
'Good, beautiful; but much as we  
'Down at the bath-house love the sea,  
'Who breathe its salt and bruise its sands:

### V

'While . . . do but follow the fishing-gull  
'That flaps and floats from wave to cove!  
'There's the sea-lover, fair my friend!  
'What then? Be patient, mark and mend!  
'Had you the making of your scull?'

### VI

And did you, when we faced the church  
With spire and sad slate roof, aloof  
From human fellowship so far,  
Where a few graveyard crosses are,  
And garlands for the swallows' perch,—

### VII

Did you determine, as we stepped  
O'er the lone stone fence, 'Let me get  
'Her for myself, and what's the earth  
'With all its art, verse, music, worth—  
'Compared with love, found, gained, and kept?

### VIII

'Schumann's our music-maker now;  
'Has his march-movement youth and mouth?  
'Ingres's the modern man that paints;  
'Which will lean on me, of his saints?  
'Heine for songs; for kisses, how?'

### IX

And did you, when we entered, reached  
The votive frigate, soft aloft  
Riding on air this hundred years,  
Safe-smiling at old hopes and fears,—  
Did you draw profit while she preached?

### X

Resolving, 'Fools we wise men grow!  
'Yes, I could easily blurt out curt  
'Some question that might find reply  
'As prompt in her stopped lips, dropped eye,  
'And rush of red to cheek and brow:

### XI

'Thus were a match made, sure and fast,  
'Mid the blue weed-flowers round the mound

'Where, issuing, we shall stand and stay  
'For one more look at baths and bay,  
'Sands, sea-gulls, and the old church last—

### XII

'A match 'twixt me, bent, wiggled and lamed,  
'Famous, however, for verse and worse,  
'Sure of the Fortieth spare Arm-chair  
'When gout and glory seat me there,  
'So, one whose love-freaks pass unblamed,—

### XIII

'And this young beauty, round and sound  
'As a mountain-apple, youth and truth  
'With loves and doves, at all events  
'With money in the Three per Cents;  
'Whose choice of me would seem profound:—

### XIV

'She might take me as I take her.  
'Perfect the hour would pass, alas!  
'Climb high, love high, what matter?  
Still,  
'Feet, feelings, must descend the hill:  
'An hour's perfection can't recur.

### XV

'Then follows Paris and full time  
'For both to reason: "Thus with us!"  
'She'll sigh, "Thus girls give body and soul  
'"At first word, think they gain the goal,  
'"When 'tis the starting-place they climb!

### XVI

'My friend makes verse and gets renown;  
'"Have they all fifty years, his peers?"  
'"He knows the world, firm, quiet and gay;  
'"Boys will become as much one day:  
'"They're fools; he cheats, with beard less brown.

### XVII

'"For boys say, *Love me or I die!*  
'"He did not say, *The truth is, youth*  
'"I want, who am old and know too much;  
'"I'd catch youth: lend me sight and touch!  
'"Drop heart's blood where life's wheels grate dry!"

### XVIII

'While I should make rejoinder'—(then  
It was, no doubt, you ceased that least  
Light pressure of my arm in yours)  
'"I can conceive of cheaper cures  
'"For a yawning-fit o'er books and men.

### XIX

'What? All I am, was, and might be,  
'"All, books taught, art brought, life's whole strife,

"Painful results since precious, just  
 "Were fitly exchanged, in wise disgust,  
 "For two cheeks freshened by youth and  
 sea?

xx

"All for a nosegay!—what came first;  
 "With fields on flower, untried each  
 side;  
 "I rally, need my books and men,  
 "And find a nosegay": drop it, then,  
 'No match yet made for best or worst!'

xxi

That ended me. You judged the porch  
 We left by, Norman; took our look  
 At sea and sky; wondered so few  
 Find out the place for air and view;  
 Remarked the sun began to scorch;

xxii

Descended, soon regained the baths,  
 And then, good-bye! Years ten since  
 then:  
 Ten years! We meet: you tell me, now,  
 By a window-seat for that cliff-brow,  
 On carpet-stripes for those sand-paths.

xxiii

Now I may speak: you fool, for all  
 Your lore! WHO made things plain in  
 vain?  
 What was the sea for? What, the grey  
 Sad church, that solitary day,  
 Crosses and graves and swallows' call?

xxiv

Was there nought better than to enjoy?  
 No feat which, done, would make time  
 break,  
 And let us pent-up creatures through  
 Into eternity, our due?  
 No forcing earth teach heaven's employ?

xxv

No wise beginning, here and now,  
 What cannot grow complete (earth's  
 feat)  
 And heaven must finish, there and then?  
 No tasting earth's true food for men,  
 Its sweet in sad, its sad in sweet?

xxvi

No grasping at love, gaining a share  
 O' the sole spark from God's life a strife  
 With death, so, sure of range above  
 The limits here? For us and love,  
 Failure; but, when God fails, despair.

xxvii

This you call wisdom? Thus you add  
 Good unto good again, in vain?  
 You loved, with body worn and weak;  
 I loved, with faculties to seek:  
 Were both loves worthless since ill-clad?

xxviii

Let the mere star-fish in his vault  
 Crawl in a wash of weed, indeed,  
 Rose-jacynth to the finger-tips:  
 He, whole in body and soul, outstrips  
 Man, found with either in default.

xxix

But what's whole, can increase no more,  
 Is dwarfed and dies, since here's its  
 sphere.  
 The devil laughed at you in his sleeve!  
 You knew not? That I well believe;  
 Or you had saved two souls: nay, four.

xxx

For Stephanie sprained last night her  
 wrist,  
 Ankle or something. 'Pooh,' cry you?  
 At any rate she danced, all say,  
 Vilely; her rogue has had its day.  
 Here comes my husband from his whist.

TOO LATE

I

HERE was I with my arm and heart  
 And brain, all yours for a word, a want  
 Put into a look—just a look, your part,—  
 While mine, to repay it . . . vainest vaunt,  
 Were the woman, that's dead, alive to  
 hear,  
 Had her lover, that's lost, love's proof  
 to show!  
 But I cannot show it; you cannot speak  
 From the churchyard neither, miles re-  
 moved,  
 Though I feel by a pulse within my cheek,  
 Which stabs and stops, that the woman  
 I loved  
 Needs help in her grave and finds none  
 near,  
 Wants warmth from the heart which  
 sends it—so!

II

Did I speak once angrily, all the drear days  
 You lived, you woman I loved so well,  
 Who married the other? Blame or praise,  
 Where was the use then? Time would  
 tell,  
 And the end declare what man for you,  
 What woman for me, was the choice of  
 God.  
 But, Edith dead! no doubting more!  
 I used to sit and look at my life  
 As it rippled and ran till, right before,  
 A great stone stopped it: oh, the strife  
 Of waves at the stone some devil threw  
 In my life's midcurrent, thwarting God!

III

But either I thought, 'They may churn and  
 chide  
 'Awhile, my waves which came for their  
 joy



## TOO LATE

'And found this horrible stone full-tide:  
'Yet I see just a thread escape, deploy  
'Through the evening-country, silent and  
safe,  
'And it suffers no more till it finds the  
sea.  
Or else I would think, 'Perhaps some night  
'When new things happen, a meteor-  
ball  
'May slip through the sky in a line of light;  
'And earth breathe hard, and land-  
marks fall,  
'And my waves no longer champ nor chafe,  
'Since a stone will have rolled from its  
place: let be!'

### IV

But, dead! All's done with: wait who  
may,  
Watch and wear and wonder who will.  
Oh, my whole life that ends to-day!  
Oh, my soul's sentence, sounding still,  
'The woman is dead that was none of his;  
'And the man that was none of hers,  
may go!'  
There's only the past left: worry that!  
Wreak, like a bull, on the empty coat,  
Rage, its late wearer is laughing at!  
Tear the collar to rags, having missed  
his throat;  
Strike stupidly on—'This, this and this,  
'Where I would that a bosom received  
the blow!'

### V

I ought to have done more: once my  
speech,  
And once your answer, and there, the  
end,  
And Edith was henceforth out of reach!  
Why, men do more to deserve a friend,  
Be rid of a foe, get rich, grow wise,  
Nor, folding their arms, stare fate in the  
face.  
Why, better even have burst like a thief  
And borne you away to a rock for us  
two,  
In a moment's horror, bright, bloody and  
brief:  
Then changed to myself again—'I slew  
'Myself in that moment; a ruffian lies  
'Somewhere: your slave, see, born in  
his place!'

### VI

What did the other do? You be judge!  
Look at us, Edith! Here are we both!  
Give him his six whole years: I grudge  
None of the life with you, nay, loathe  
Myself that I grudged his start in advance  
Of me who could overtake and pass.  
But, as if he loved you! No, not he,  
Nor anyone else in the world, 'tis plain:  
Who ever heard that another, free  
As I, young, prosperous, sound and  
sane,

Poured life out, proffered it—'Half a  
glance  
'Of those eyes of yours and I drop the  
glass!'

### VII

Handsome, were you? 'Tis more than they  
held,  
More than they said; I was 'ware and  
watched:  
I was the 'scapegrace, this rat belied  
The cat, this fool got his whiskers  
scratched:  
The others? No head that was turned, no  
heart  
Broken, my lady, assure yourself!  
Each soon made his mind up; so and so  
Married a dancer, such and such  
Stole his friend's wife, stagnated slow,  
Or maundered, unable to do as much,  
And muttered of peace where he had no  
part:  
While, hid in the closet, laid on the  
shelf,—

### VIII

On the whole, you were let alone, I think!  
So, you looked to the other, who ac-  
quiesced;  
My rival, the proud man,—prize your pink  
Of poets! A poet he was! I've guessed:  
He rhymed you his rubbish nobody read,  
Loved you and doved you—did not I  
laugh!  
There was a prize! But we both were tried.  
Oh, heart of mine, marked broad with  
her mark,  
Tekel, found wanting, set aside,  
Scorned! See, I bleed these tears in the  
dark  
Till comfort come and the last be bled:  
He? He is tagging your epitaph.

### IX

If it would only come over again!  
—Time to be patient with me, and probe  
This heart till you punctured the proper  
vein,  
Just to learn what blood is: twitch the  
robe  
From that blank lay-figure your fancy  
draped,  
Prick the leathern heart till the—verses  
spirt!  
And late it was easy; late, you walked  
Where a friend might meet you; Edith's  
name  
Arose to one's lip if one laughed or talked;  
If I heard good news, you heard the  
same;  
When I woke, I knew that your breath  
escaped;  
I could bide my time, keep alive, alert.

## X

And alive I shall keep and long, you will see!

I knew a man, was kicked like a dog  
From gutter to cesspool; what cared he  
So long as he picked from the filth his  
prog?

He saw youth, beauty and genius die,  
And jollily lived to his hundredth year.  
But I will live otherwise: none of such life!

At once I begin as I mean to end.  
Go on with the world, get hold in its strife,  
Give your spouse the slip and betray  
your friend!

There are two who decline, a woman and I,  
And enjoy our death in the darkness  
here.

## XI

I liked that way you had with your curls  
Wound to a ball in a net behind:

Your cheek was chaste as a quaker-girl's,  
And your mouth—there was never, to  
my mind,

Such a funny mouth, for it would not shut;  
And the dented chin too—what a chin!  
There were certain ways when you spoke,  
some words

That you know you never could pro-  
nounce:

You were thin, however; like a bird's  
Your hand seemed—some would say,  
the pounce

Of a scaly-footed hawk—all but!  
The world was right when it called you  
thin.

## XII

But I turn my back on the world: I take  
Your hand, and kneel, and lay to my  
lips.

Bid me live, Edith! Let me slake  
Thirst at your presence! Fear no slips:  
Tis your slave shall pay, while his soul  
endures,

Full due, love's whole debt, *summum jus*.  
My queen shall have high observance,  
planned

Courtship made perfect, no least line  
Crossed without warrant. There you stand,  
Warm too, and white too: would this  
wine

Had washed all over that body of yours,  
Ere I drank it, and you down with it,  
thus!

## ABT VOGLER

(AFTER HE HAS BEEN EXTEMPORIZING UPON  
THE MUSICAL INSTRUMENT OF HIS IN-  
VENTION.)

## I

WOULD that the structure brave, the mani-  
fold music I build,  
Bidding my organ obey, calling its keys  
to their work,

Claiming each slave of the sound, at a  
touch, as when Solomon willed  
Armies of angels that soar, legions of  
demons that lurk,

Man, brute, reptile, fly,—alien of end and  
of aim,

Adverse, each from the other heaven-  
high, hell-deep removed,—

Should rush into sight at once as he named  
the ineffable Name,

And pile him a palace straight, to pleasure  
the princess he loved!

## II

Would it might tarry like his, the beautiful  
building of mine,

This which my keys in a crowd pressed  
and importuned to raise!

Ah, one and all, how they helped, would  
dispart now and now combine,

Zealous to hasten the work, heighten  
their master his praise!

And one would bury his brow with a blind  
plunge down to hell,

Burrow awhile and build, broad on the  
root of things,

Then up again swim into sight, having  
based me my palace well,

Founded it, fearless of flame, flat on the  
nether springs.

## III

And another would mount and march,  
like the excellent minion he was,

Ay, another and yet another, one crowd  
but with many a crest,

Raising my rampired walls of gold as  
transparent as glass,

Eager to do and die, yield each his place  
to the rest:

For higher still and higher (as a runner  
tips with fire,

When a great illumination surprises a  
festal night—

Outlining round and round Rome's dome  
from space to spire)

Up, the pinnacled glory reached, and  
the pride of my soul was in sight.

## IV

In sight? Not half! for it seemed, it was  
certain, to match man's birth,

Nature in turn conceived, obeying an  
impulse as I;

And the emulous heaven yearned down,  
made effort to reach the earth,

As the earth had done her best, in my  
passion, to scale the sky:

Novel splendours burst forth, grew fami-  
liar and dwelt with mine,

Not a point nor peak but found and  
fixed its wandering star;

Meteor-moons, balls of blaze: and they  
did not pale nor pine,

For earth had attained to heaven,  
there was no more near nor far.

## ABT VOGLER

### V

Nay more; for there wanted not who  
walked in the glare and glow,  
Presences plain in the place; or, fresh  
from the Protoplast,  
Furnished for ages to come, when a kind-  
lier wind should blow.  
Lured now to begin and live, in a house  
to their liking at last;  
Or else the wonderful Dead who have  
passed through the body and gone,  
But were back once more to breathe in  
an old world worth their new:  
What never had been, was now; what was,  
as it shall be anon;  
And what is,—shall I say, matched  
both? for I was made perfect too.

### VI

All through my keys that gave their sounds  
to a wish of my soul,  
All through my soul that praised as its  
wish flowed visibly forth,  
All through music and me! For think,  
had I painted the whole,  
Why, there it had stood, to see, nor the  
process so wonder-worth:  
Had I written the same, made verse—still,  
effect proceeds from cause,  
Ye know why the forms are fair, ye hear  
how the tale is told;  
It is all triumphant art, but art in obedience  
to laws,  
Painter and poet are proud in the  
artist-list enrolled:—

### VII

But here is the finger of God, a flash of the  
will that can,  
Existent behind all laws, that made  
them and, lo, they are!  
And I know not if, save in this, such gift  
be allowed to man,  
That out of three sounds he frame, not  
a fourth sound, but a star.  
Consider it well: each tone of our scale in  
itself is nought;  
It is everywhere in the world—loud,  
soft, and all is said:  
Give it to me to use! I mix it with two in  
my thought:  
And, there! Ye have heard and seen:  
consider and bow the head!

### VIII

Well, it is gone at last, the palace of music  
I reared;  
Gone! and the good tears start, the  
praises that come too slow;  
For one is assured at first, one scarce can  
say that he feared,  
That he even gave it a thought, the gone  
thing was to go

Never to be again! But many more of the  
kind  
As good, nay, better perchance: is this  
your comfort to me?  
To me, who must be saved because I cling  
with my mind  
To the same, same self, same love, same  
God: ay, what was, shall be.

### IX

Therefore to whom turn I but to thee, the  
ineffable Name?  
Builder and maker, thou, of houses not  
made with hands!  
What, have fear of change from thee who  
art ever the same?  
Doubt that thy power can fill the heart  
that thy power expands?  
There shall never be one lost good! What  
was, shall live as before;  
The evil is null, is nought, is silence  
implying sound;  
What was good shall be good, with, for  
evil, so much good more;  
On the earth the broken arcs; in the  
heaven, a perfect round.

### X

All we have willed or hoped or dreamed  
of good shall exist;  
Not its semblance, but itself; no beauty,  
nor good, nor power  
Whose voice has gone forth, but each sur-  
vives for the melodist  
When eternity affirms the conception  
of an hour.  
The high that proved too high, the heroic  
for earth too hard,  
The passion that left the ground to lose  
itself in the sky,  
Are music sent up to God by the lover and  
the bard;  
Enough that he heard it once: we shall  
hear it by-and-by.

### XI

And what is our failure here but a  
triumph's evidence  
For the fullness of the days? Have we  
withered or agonized?  
Why else was the pause prolonged but that  
singing might issue thence?  
Why rushed the discords in but that  
harmony should be prized?  
Sorrow is hard to bear, and doubt is slow  
to clear,  
Each sufferer says his say, his scheme of  
the weal and woe:  
But God has a few of us whom he whispers  
in the ear;  
The rest may reason and welcome: 'tis  
we musicians know.

XII

Well, it is earth with me; silence resumes  
her reign:  
I will be patient and proud, and soberly  
acquiesce.  
Give me the keys. I feel for the common  
chord again,  
Sliding by semitones, till I sink to the  
minor,—yes,  
And I blunt it into a ninth, and I stand on  
alien ground,  
Surveying awhile the heights I rolled  
from into the deep;  
Which, hark, I have dared and done, for  
my resting-place is found,  
The C Major of this life: so, now I will  
try to sleep.

RABBI BEN EZRA

I

GROW old along with me!  
The best is yet to be,  
The last of life, for which the first was  
made:  
Our times are in His hand  
Who saith 'A whole I planned,  
'Youth shows but half; trust God: see all  
nor be afraid!'

II

Not that, amassing flowers,  
Youth sighed 'Which rose make  
ours,  
'Which lily leave and then as best recall?'  
Not that, admiring stars,  
It yearned 'Nor Jove, nor Mars;  
'Mine be some figured flame which blends,  
transcends them all!'

III

Not for such hopes and fears  
Annulling youth's brief years,  
Do I remonstrate: folly wide the mark!  
Rather I prize the doubt  
Low kinds exist without,  
Finished and finite clods, untroubled by  
a spark.

IV

Poor vaunt of life indeed,  
Were man but formed to feed  
On joy, to solely seek and find and feast:  
Such feasting ended, then  
As sure an end to men;  
Irks care the crop-full bird? Frets doubt  
the maw-crammed beast?

V

Rejoice we are allied  
To That which doth provide  
And not partake, effect and not receive!  
A spark disturbs our clod;  
Nearer we hold of God  
Who gives, than of His tribes that take, I  
must believe.

VI

Then, welcome each rebuff  
That turns earth's smoothness  
rough,  
Each sting that bids nor sit nor stand but  
go!  
'Be our joys three-parts pain!  
Strive, and hold cheap the strain;  
I earn, nor account the pang; dare, never  
grudge the throe!

VII

For thence,—a paradox  
Which comforts while it mocks,—  
Shall life succeed in that it seems to fail:  
What I aspired to be,  
And was not, comforts me:  
A brute I might have been, but would not  
sink i' the scale.

VIII

What is he but a brute  
Whose flesh has soul to suit,  
Whose spirit works lest arms and legs want  
play?  
To man, propose this test—  
Thy body at its best,  
How far can that project thy soul on its  
lone way?

IX

Yet gifts should prove their use:  
I own the Past profuse  
Of power each side, perfection every turn:  
Eyes, ears took in their dole,  
Brain treasured up the whole;  
Should not the heart beat once 'How good  
to live and learn?'

X

Not once beat 'Praise be Thine!  
'I see the whole design,  
'I, who saw power, see now love perfect  
too:  
'Perfect I call Thy plan:  
'Thanks that I was a man!  
'Maker, remake, complete,—I trust what  
Thou shalt do!'

XI

For pleasant is this flesh;  
Our soul, in its rose-mesh  
Pulled ever to the earth, still yearns for  
rest;  
Would we some prize might hold  
To match those manifold  
Possessions of the brute,—gain most, as  
we did best!

XII

Let us not always say  
'Spite of this flesh to-day  
'I strove, made head, gained ground upon  
the whole!'

## RABBI BEN EZRA

As the bird wings and sings,  
Let us cry 'All good things  
Are ours, nor soul helps flesh more, now,  
than flesh helps soul!'

### xiii

Therefore I summon age  
To grant youth's heritage,  
Life's struggle having so far reached its  
term:  
Thence shall I pass, approved  
A man, for aye removed  
From the developed brute; a god though  
in the germ.

### xiv

And I shall thereupon  
Take rest, ere I be gone  
Once more on my adventure brave and  
new:  
Fearless and unperplexed,  
When I wage battle next,  
What weapons to select, what armour to  
indue.

### xv

Youth ended, I shall try  
My gain or loss thereby;  
Leave the fire ashes, what survives is gold:  
And I shall weigh the same,  
Give life its praise or blame:  
Young, all lay in dispute; I shall know,  
being old.

### xvi

For note, when evening shuts,  
A certain moment cuts  
The deed off, calls the glory from the grey:  
A whisper from the west  
Shoots—'Add this to the rest,  
'Take it and try its worth: here dies  
another day.'

### xvii

So, still within this life,  
Though lifted o'er its strife,  
Let me discern, compare, pronounce at  
last,  
'This rage was right i' the main,  
'That acquiescence vain:  
'The Future I may face now I have proved  
the Past.'

### xviii

For more is not reserved  
To man, with soul just nerved  
To act to-morrow what he learns to-day:  
Here, work enough to watch  
The Master work, and catch  
Hints of the proper craft, tricks of the  
tool's true play.

### xix

As it was better, youth  
Should strive, through acts un-  
couth,  
Toward making, than repose on aught  
found made:

So, better, age, exempt  
From strife, should know, than  
tempt

Further. Thou waitedest age: wait death  
nor be afraid!

### xx

Enough now, if the Right  
And Good and Infinite  
Be named here, as thou callest thy hand  
thine own,  
With knowledge absolute,  
Subject to no dispute  
From fools that crowded youth, nor let  
thee feel alone.

### xxi

Be there, for once and all,  
Severed great minds from small,  
Announced to each his station in the  
Past!  
Was I, the world arraigned,  
Were they, my soul disdained,  
Right? Let age speak the truth and give  
us peace at last!

### xxii

Now, who shall arbitrate?  
Ten men love what I hate,  
Shun what I follow, slight what I receive;  
Ten, who in ears and eyes  
Match me: we all surmise,  
They this thing, and I that: whom shall  
my soul believe?

### xxiii

Not on the vulgar mass  
Called 'work,' must sentence pass,  
Things done, that took the eye and had  
the price;  
O'er which, from level stand,  
The low world laid its hand,  
Found straightway to its mind, could  
value in a trice:

### xxiv

But all, the world's coarse thumb  
And finger failed to plumb,  
So passed in making up the main account;  
All instincts immature,  
All purposes unsure,  
That weighed not as his work, yet swelled  
the man's amount:

### xxv

Thoughts hardly to be packed  
Into a narrow act,  
Fancies that broke through language and  
escaped;  
All I could never be,  
All, men ignored in me,  
This, I was worth to God, whose wheel the  
pitcher shaped.

XXVI

Ay, note that Potter's wheel,  
That metaphor! and feel  
Why time spins fast, why passive lies our  
clay,—

Thou, to whom fools propound,  
When the wine makes its round,  
Since life fleets, all is change; the Past  
gone, seize to-day!

XXVII

Fool! All that is, at all,  
Lasts ever, past recall;  
Earth changes, but thy soul and God stand  
sure:

What entered into thee,  
That was, is, and shall be:  
Time's wheel runs back or stops: Potter  
and clay endure.

XXVIII

He fixed thee mid this dance  
Of plastic circumstance,  
This Present, thou, forsooth, wouldst fain  
arrest:

Machinery just meant  
To give thy soul its bent,  
Try thee and turn thee forth, sufficiently  
impressed.

XXIX

What though the earlier grooves  
Which ran the laughing loves  
Around thy base, no longer pause and  
press?

What though, about thy rim,  
Skull-things in order grim  
Grow out, in graver mood, obey the sterner  
stress?

XXX

Look not thou down but up!  
To uses of a cup,  
The festal board, lamp's flash and trum-  
pet's peal,

The new wine's foaming flow,  
The Master's lips a-glow!  
Thou, heaven's consummate cup, what  
need'st thou with earth's wheel?

XXXI

But I need, now as then,  
Thee, God, who moulded men;  
And since, not even while the whirl was  
worst,

Did I,—to the wheel of life  
With shapes and colours rife,  
Bound dizzily,—mistake my end, to slake  
Thy thirst:

XXXII

So, take and use Thy work:  
Amend what flaws may lurk,  
What strain o' the stuff, what warpings  
past the aim!

My times be in Thy hand!  
Perfect the cup as planned!

Let age approve of youth, and death com-  
plete the same!

A DEATH IN THE DESERT

[SUPPOSED of Pamphylax the Antiochene:  
It is a parchment, of my rolls the fifth,  
Hath three skins glued together, is all  
Greek

And goeth from *Epsilon* down to *Mu*:  
Lies second in the surnamed Chosen  
Chest,

Stained and conserved with juice of tere-  
binth,  
Covered with cloth of hair, and lettered *Xi*,  
From Xanthus, my wife's uncle, now at  
peace:

*Mu* and *Epsilon* stand for my own name.  
I may not write it, but I make a cross  
To show I wait His coming, with the rest,  
And leave off here: beginneth Pamphylax.]

I said, 'If one should wet his lips with wine,  
'And slip the broadest plantain-leaf we  
find,

'Or else the lappet of a linen robe,  
'Into the water-vessel, lay it right,  
'And cool his forehead just above the eyes,  
'The while a brother, kneeling either side,  
'Should chafe each hand and try to make  
it warm,—

'He is not so far gone but he might speak.'

This did not happen in the outer cave,  
Nor in the secret chamber of the rock  
Where, sixty days since the decree was out,  
We had him, bedded on a camel-skin,  
And waited for his dying all the while;  
But in the midmost grotto: since noon's  
light

Reached there a little, and we would not  
lose

The last of what might happen on his face.

I at the head, and Xanthus at the feet,  
With Valens and the Boy, had lifted him,  
And brought him from the chamber in the  
depths,

And laid him in the light where we might  
see:

For certain smiles began about his mouth,  
And his lids moved, presageful of the end.

Beyond and half way up the mouth o' the  
cave,

The Bactrian convert, having his desire,  
Kept watch, and made pretence to graze a  
goat

That gave us milk, on rags of various herb,  
Plantain and quitch, the rocks' hard  
keens alive:

So that if any thief or soldier passed,  
(Because the persecution was aware)

## A DEATH IN THE DESERT

Yielding the goat up promptly with his life,  
Such man might pass on, joyful at a prize,  
Nor care to pry into the cool o' the cave.  
Outside was all noon and the burning blue.

'Here is wine,' answered Xanthus,—  
dropped a drop;  
I stooped and placed the lap of 'cloth  
aright,  
Then chafed his right hand, and the Boy  
his left:  
But Valens had bethought him, and produced  
And broke a ball of nard, and made perfume.  
Only, he did—not so much wake, as—turn  
And smile a little, as a sleeper does  
If any dear one call him, touch his face—  
And smiles and loves, but will not be disturbed.

Then Xanthus said a prayer, but still he  
slept:  
It is the Xanthus that escaped to Rome,  
Was burned, and could not write the  
chronicle.

Then the Boy sprang up from his knees,  
and ran,  
Stung by the splendour of a sudden  
thought,  
And fetched the seventh plate of graven  
lead  
Out of the secret chamber, found a place,  
Pressing with finger on the deeper dints,  
And spoke, as 'twere his mouth proclaim-  
ing first,  
'I am the Resurrection and the Life.'

Whereat he opened his eyes wide at once,  
And sat up of himself, and looked at us;  
And thenceforth nobody pronounced a  
word:

Only, outside, the Bactrian cried his cry  
Like the lone desert-bird that wears the  
ruff,  
As signal we were safe, from time to time.

First he said, 'If a friend declared to me,  
'This my son Valens, this my other son,  
'Were James and Peter,—nay, declared as  
well

'This lad was very John,—I could believe!  
—Could, for a moment, doubtlessly be-  
lieve:

'So is myself withdrawn into my depths,  
'The soul retreated from the perished brain  
'Whence it was wont to feel and use the  
world

'Through these dull members, done with  
long ago.

'Yet I myself remain; I feel myself:  
'And there is nothing lost. Let be, awhile!'

[This is the doctrine he was wont to teach,  
How divers persons witness in each man,

Three souls which make up one soul: first,  
to wit,

A soul of each and all the bodily parts,  
Seated therein, which works, and is what  
Does,

And has the use of earth, and ends the man  
Downward: but, tending upward for ad-  
vice,

Grows into, and again is grown into  
By the next soul, which, seated in the brain,  
Useth the first with its collected use,  
And feebleth, thinketh, willeth,—is what  
Knows:

Which, duly tending upward in its turn,  
Grows into, and again is grown into  
By the last soul, that uses both the first,  
Subsisting whether they assist or no,  
And, constituting man's self, is what Is—  
And leans upon the former, makes it play,  
As that played off the first: and, tending up,  
Holds, is upheld by, God, and ends the  
man

Upward in that dread point of intercourse,  
Nor needs a place, for it returns to Him.  
What Does, what Knows, what Is; three  
souls, one man.

I give the glossa of Theotypas.]

And then, 'A stick, once fire from end to  
end;

'Now, ashes save the tip that holds a spark!  
'Yet, blow the spark, it runs back, spreads  
itself

'A little where the fire was: thus I urge  
'The soul that served me, till it task once  
more

'What ashes of my brain have kept their  
shape,

'And these make effort on the last o' the  
flesh,

'Trying to taste again the truth of things—'  
(He smiled)—'their very superficial truth;

'As that ye are my sons, that it is long  
'Since James and Peter had release by  
death,

'And I am only he, your brother John,  
'Who saw and heard, and could remember  
all.

'Remember all! It is not much to say.  
'What if the truth broke on me from above

'As once and oft-times? Such might hap  
again:

'Doubtlessly He might stand in presence  
here,

'With head wool-white, eyes flame, and  
feet like brass,

'The sword and the seven stars, as I have  
seen—

'I who now shudder only and surmise  
"How did your brother bear that sight  
and live?"

'If I live yet, it is for good, more love  
'Through me to men: be nought but ashes  
here

## A DEATH IN THE DESERT

- 'That keep awhile my semblance, who was John,—  
 'Still, when they scatter, there is left on earth  
 'No one alive who knew (consider this!)  
 '—Saw with his eyes and handled with his hands  
 'That which was from the first, the Word of Life.  
 'How will it be when none more saith "I saw"?
- 'Such ever was love's way: to rise, it stoops.  
 'Since I, whom Christ's mouth taught, was bidden teach,  
 'I went, for many years, about the world,  
 'Saying "It was so; so I heard and saw,"  
 'Speaking as the case asked: and men believed.  
 'Afterward came the message to myself  
 'In Patmos isle; I was not bidden teach,  
 'But simply listen, take a book and write,  
 'Nor set down other than the given word,  
 'With nothing left to my arbitrament  
 'To choose or change: I wrote, and men believed.  
 'Then, for my time grew brief, no message more,  
 'No call to write again, I found a way,  
 'And, reasoning from my knowledge, merely taught  
 'Men should, for love's sake, in love's strength believe;  
 'Or I would pen a letter to a friend  
 'And urge the same as friend, nor less nor more;  
 'Friends said I reasoned rightly, and believed.  
 'But at the last, why, I seemed left alive  
 'Like a sea-jelly weak on Patmos strand,  
 'To tell dry sea-beach gazers how I fared  
 'When there was mid-sea, and the mighty things;  
 'Left to repeat, "I saw, I heard, I knew,"  
 'And go all over the old ground again,  
 'With Antichrist already in the world,  
 'And many Antichrists, who answered prompt  
 '"Am I not Jasper as thyself art John?"  
 '"Nay, young, whereas through age thou mayest forget;  
 '"Wherefore, explain, or how shall we believe?"  
 'I never thought to call down fire on such,  
 'Or, as in wonderful and early days,  
 'Pick up the scorpion, tread the serpent dumb;  
 'But patient stated much of the Lord's life  
 'Forgotten or misdelivered, and let it work:  
 'Since much that at the first, in deed and word,  
 'Lay simply and sufficiently exposed,
- 'Had grown (or else my soul was grown to match,  
 'Fed through such years, familiar with such light,  
 'Guarded and guided still to see and speak)  
 'Of new significance and fresh result;  
 'What first were guessed as points, I now knew stars,  
 'And named them in the Gospel I have writ.  
 'For men said, "It is getting long ago:  
 '"Where is the promise of His coming?"—asked  
 'These young ones in their strength, as loth to wait,  
 'Of me who, when their sires were born, was old.  
 'I, for I loved them, answered, joyfully,  
 'Since I was there, and helpful in my age;  
 'And, in the main, I think such men believed.  
 'Finally, thus endeavouring, I fell sick,  
 'Ye brought me here, and I supposed the end,  
 'And went to sleep with one thought that, at least,  
 'Though the whole earth should lie in wickedness,  
 'We had the truth, might leave the rest to God.  
 'Yet now I wake in such decrepitude  
 'As I had slidden down and fallen afar,  
 'Past even the presence of my former self,  
 'Grasping the while for stay at facts which snap,  
 'Till I am found away from my own world,  
 'Feeling for foot-hold through a blank profound,  
 'Along with unborn people in strange lands,  
 'Who say—I hear said or conceive they say—  
 '"Was John at all, and did he say he saw?"  
 '"Assure us, ere we ask what he might see!"  
 'And how shall I assure them? Can they share  
 '—They, who have flesh, a veil of youth and strength  
 'About each spirit, that needs must bide its time,  
 'Living and learning still as years assist  
 'Which wear the thickness thin, and let man see—  
 'With me who hardly am withheld at all,  
 'But shudderingly, scarce a shred between,  
 'Lie bare to the universal prick of light?  
 'Is it for nothing we grow old and weak,  
 'We whom God loves? When pain ends, gain ends too.  
 'To me, that story—ay, that Life and Death  
 'Of which I wrote "it was"—to me, it is;



## A DEATH IN THE DESERT

- '—Is, here and now: I apprehend nought else.  
 'Is not God now i' the world His power first made?  
 'Is not His love at issue still with sin,  
 'Visibly when a wrong is done on earth?  
 'Love, wrong, and pain, what see I else around?  
 'Yea, and the Resurrection and Uprise  
 'To the right hand of the throne—what is it beside,  
 'When such truth, breaking bounds, o'er-floods my soul,  
 'And, as I saw the sin and death, even so  
 'See I the need yet transiency of both,  
 'The good and glory consummated thence?  
 'I saw the power; I see the Love, once weak,  
 'Resume the Power: and in this word "I see,"  
 'Lo, there is recognized the Spirit of both  
 'That moving o'er the spirit of man, un-blinds  
 'His eye and bids him look. These are, I see;  
 'But ye, the children, His beloved ones too,  
 'Ye need,—as I should use an optic glass  
 'I wondered at erewhile, somewhere i' the world,  
 'It had been given a crafty smith to make;  
 'A tube, he turned on objects brought too close,  
 'Lying confusedly in subordinate  
 'For the unassisted eye to master once:  
 'Look through his tube, at distance now they lay,  
 'Become succinct, distinct, so small, so clear!  
 'Just thus, ye needs must apprehend what truth  
 'I see, reduced to plain historic fact,  
 'Diminished into clearness, proved a point  
 'And far away: ye would withdraw your sense  
 'From out eternity, strain it upon time,  
 'Then stand before that fact, that Life and Death,  
 'Stay there at gaze, till it dispart, disspread,  
 'As though a star should open out, all sides,  
 'Grow the world on you, as it is my world.  
 'For life, with all it yields of joy and woe,  
 'And hope and fear,—believe the aged friend,—  
 'Is just our chance o' the prize of learning love,  
 'How love might be, hath been indeed, and is;  
 'And that we hold thenceforth to the uttermost  
 'Such prize despite the envy of the world,  
 'And, having gained truth, keep truth: that is all.
- 'But see the double way wherein we are led,  
 'How the soul learns diversely from the flesh!  
 'With flesh, that hath so little time to stay,  
 'And yields mere basement for the soul's emprise,  
 'Expect prompt teaching. Helpful was the light,  
 'And warmth was cherishing and food was choice  
 'To every man's flesh, thousand years ago,  
 'As now to yours and mine; the body sprang  
 'At once to the height, and stayed: but the soul,—no!  
 'Since sages who, this noontide, meditate  
 'In Rome or Athens, may descry some point  
 'Of the eternal power, hid yestereve;  
 'And, as thereby the power's whole mass extends,  
 'So much extends the æther floating o'er,  
 'The love that tops the might, the Christ in God.  
 'Then, as new lessons shall be learned in these  
 'Till earth's work stop and useless time run out,  
 'So duly, daily, needs provision be  
 'For keeping the soul's prowess possible,  
 'Building new barriers as the old decay,  
 'Saving us from evasion of life's proof,  
 'Putting the question ever, "Does God love,  
 '"And will ye hold that truth against the world?"  
 'Ye know there needs no second proof with good  
 'Gained for our flesh from any earthly source:  
 'We might go freezing, ages,—give us fire,  
 'Thereafter we judge fire at its full worth,  
 'And guard it safe through every chance, ye know!  
 'That fable of Prometheus and his theft,  
 'How mortals gained Jove's fiery flower, grows old  
 '(I have been used to hear the pagans own)  
 'And out of mind; but fire, howe'er its birth,  
 'Here is it, precious to the sophist now  
 'Who laughs the myth of Æschylus to scorn,  
 'As precious to those satyrs of his play,  
 'Who touched it in gay wonder at the thing.  
 'While were it so with the soul,—this gift of truth  
 'Once grasped, were this our soul's gain safe, and sure  
 'To prosper as the body's gain is wont,—  
 'Why, man's probation would conclude, his earth

## A DEATH IN THE DESERT

- 'Crumble; for he both reasons and decides,  
 'Weighs first, then chooses: will he give up fire  
 'For gold or purple once he knows its worth?  
 'Could he give Christ up were His worth as plain?  
 'Therefore, I say, to test man, the proofs shift,  
 'Nor may he grasp that fact like other fact,  
 'And straightway in his life acknowledge it,  
 'As, say, the indubitable bliss of fire.  
 'Sigh ye, "It had been easier once than now"?  
 'To give you answer I am left alive;  
 'Look at me who was present from the first!  
 'Ye know what things I saw; then came a test,  
 'My first, befitting me who so had seen;  
 '"Forsake the Christ thou sawest transfigured, Him  
 '"Who trod the sea and brought the dead to life?  
 '"What should wring this from thee!"—ye laugh and ask.  
 'What wrung it? Even a torchlight and a noise,  
 'The sudden Roman faces, violent hands,  
 'And fear of what the Jews might do! Just that,  
 'And it is written, "I forsook and fled":  
 'There was my trial, and it ended thus.  
 'Ay, but my soul had gained its truth, could grow:  
 'Another year or two,—what little child,  
 'What tender woman that had seen no least  
 'Of all my sights, but barely heard them told,  
 'Who did not clasp the cross with a light laugh,  
 'Or wrap the burning robe round, thanking God?  
 'Well, was truth safe for ever, then? Not so.  
 'Already had begun the silent work  
 'Whereby truth, deadened of its absolute blaze,  
 'Might need love's eye to pierce the o'er-stretched doubt.  
 'Teachers were busy, whispering "All is true  
 '"As the aged ones report; but youth can reach  
 '"Where age gropes dimly, weak with stir and strain,  
 '"And the full doctrine slumbers till to-day."  
 'Thus, what the Roman's lowered spear was found,
- 'A bar to me who touched and handled truth,  
 'Now proved the glozing of some new shrewd tongue,  
 'This Ebion, this Cerinthus or their mates,  
 'Till imminent was the outcry "Save our Christ!"  
 'Whereon I stated much of the Lord's life  
 'Forgotten or misdelivered, and let it work  
 'Such work done, as it will be, what comes next?  
 'What do I hear say, or conceive men say,  
 '"Was John at all, and did he say he saw?"  
 '"Assure us, ere we ask what he might see!"  
 'Is this indeed a burthen for late days,  
 'And may I help to bear it with you all,  
 'Using my weakness which becomes your strength?  
 'For if a babe were born inside this grot,  
 'Grew to a boy here, heard us praise the sun,  
 'Yet had but yon sole glimmer in light's place,—  
 'One loving him and wishful he should learn,  
 'Would much rejoice himself was blinded first  
 'Month by month here, so made to understand  
 'How eyes, born darkling, apprehend amiss:  
 'To think I could explain to such a child  
 'There was more glow outside than gleams he caught,  
 'Ay, nor need urge "I saw it, so believe!"  
 'It is a heavy burthen you shall bear  
 'In latter days, new lands, or old grown strange,  
 'Left without me, which must be very soon.  
 'What is the doubt, my brothers? Quick with it!  
 'I see you stand conversing, each new face,  
 'Either in fields, of yellow summer eves  
 'On islets yet unnamed amid the sea;  
 'Or pace for shelter 'neath a portico  
 'Out of the crowd in some enormous town  
 'Where now the larks sing in a solitude;  
 'Or muse upon blank heaps of stone and sand  
 'Idly conjectured to be Ephesus:  
 'And no one asks his fellow any more  
 '"Where is the promise of His coming?" but  
 '"Was he revealed in any of His lives,  
 '"As Power, as Love, as Influencing Soul?"  
 'Quick, for time presses, tell the whole mind out,  
 'And let us ask and answer and be saved!  
 'My book speaks on, because it cannot pass;

## A DEATH IN THE DESERT

- 'One listens quietly, nor scoffs but pleads  
 'Here is a tale of things done ages since;  
 'What truth was ever told the second day?  
 'Wonders, that would prove doctrine, go for nought.  
 'Remains the doctrine, love; well, we must love,  
 'And what we love most, power and love in one,  
 'Let us acknowledge on the record here,  
 'Accepting these in Christ: must Christ then be?  
 'Has He been? Did not we ourselves make Him?  
 'Our mind receives but what it holds, no more.  
 'First of the love, then; we acknowledge Christ—  
 'A proof we comprehend His love, a proof  
 'We had such love already in ourselves,  
 'Knew first what else we should not recognize.  
 'Tis mere projection from man's inmost mind,  
 'And, what he loves, thus falls reflected back,  
 'Becomes accounted somewhat out of of him;  
 'He throws it up in air, it drops down earth's,  
 'With shape, name, story added, man's old way.  
 'How prove you Christ came otherwise at least?  
 'Next try the power: He made and rules the world:  
 'Certes there is a world once made, now ruled,  
 'Unless things have been ever as we see.  
 'Our sires declared a charioteer's yoked steeds  
 'Brought the sun up the east and down the west,  
 'Which only of itself now rises, sets,  
 'As if a hand impelled it and a will,—  
 'Thus they long thought, they who had will and hands:  
 'But the new question's whisper is distinct,  
 'Wherefore must all force needs be like ourselves?  
 'We have the hands, the will; what made and drives  
 'The sun is force, is law, is named, not known,  
 'While will and love we do know; marks of these,  
 'Eye-witnesses attest, so books declare—  
 'As that, to punish or reward our race,  
 'The sun at undue times arose or set  
 'Or else stood still: what do not men affirm?  
 'But earth requires as urgently reward  
 'Or punishment to-day as years ago,  
 'And none expects the sun will interpose:  
 'Therefore it was mere passion and mistake,  
 'Or erring zeal for right, which changed the truth.  
 'Go back, far, farther, to the birth of things;  
 'Ever the will, the intelligence, the love,  
 'Man's!—which he gives, supposing he but finds,  
 'As late he gave head, body, hands and feet,  
 'To help these in what forms he called his gods.  
 'First, Jove's brow, Juno's eyes were swept away,  
 'But Jove's wrath, Juno's pride continued long;  
 'As last, will, power, and love discarded these,  
 'So law in turn discards power, love, and will.  
 'What proveth God is otherwise at least?  
 'All else, projection from the mind of man!  
 'Nay, do not give me wine, for I am strong,  
 'But place my gospel where I put my hands.  
 'I say that man was made to grow, not stop;  
 'That help, he needed once, and needs no more,  
 'Having grown but an inch by, is withdrawn:  
 'For he hath new needs, and new helps to these.  
 'This imports solely, man should mount on each  
 'New height in view; the help whereby he mounts,  
 'The ladder-rung his foot has left, may fall,  
 'Since all things suffer change save God the Truth.  
 'Man apprehends Him newly at each stage  
 'Whereat earth's ladder drops, its service done;  
 'And nothing shall prove twice what once was proved.  
 'You stick a garden-plot with ordered twigs  
 'To show inside lie germs of herbs unborn,  
 'And check the careless step would spoil their birth;  
 'But when herbs wave, the guardian twigs may go,  
 'Since should ye doubt of virtues, question kinds,  
 'It is no longer for old twigs ye look,  
 'Which proved once underneath lay store of seed,

## A DEATH IN THE DESERT

- 'But to the herb's self, by what light ye  
     boast,  
 'For what fruit's signs are. This book's  
     fruit is plain,  
 'Nor miracles need prove it any more.  
 'Doth the fruit show? Then miracles bade  
     'ware  
 'At first of root and stem, saved both till  
     now  
 'From trampling ox, rough boar and  
     wanton goat.  
 'What? Was man made a wheelwork to  
     wind up,  
 'And be discharged, and straight wound  
     up anew?  
 'No!—grown, his growth lasts; taught, he  
     ne'er forgets:  
 'May learn a thousand things, not twice  
     the same.  
 'This might be pagan teaching: now hear  
     mine.  
 'I say, that as the babe, you feed awhile,  
 'Becomes a boy and fit to feed himself,  
 'So, minds at first must be spoon-fed with  
     truth:  
 'When they can eat, babe's-nurture is  
     withdrawn.  
 'I fed the babe whether it would or no:  
 'I bid the boy or feed himself or starve.  
 'I cried once, "That ye may believe in  
     Christ,  
 "'Behold this blind man shall receive his  
     sight!"  
 'I cry now, "Urgest thou, *for I am shrewd*  
 "'And smile at stories how John's word  
     could cure—  
 "'Repeat that miracle and take my faith?"  
 'I say, that miracle was duly wrought  
 'When, save for it, no faith was possible.  
 'Whether a change were wrought i' the  
     shows o' the world,  
 'Whether the change came from our minds  
     which see  
 'Of shows o' the world so much as and no  
     more  
 'Than God wills for His purpose,—(what  
     do I  
 'See now, suppose you, there where you  
     see rock  
 'Round us?—)I know not; such was the  
     effect,  
 'So faith grew, making void more miracles  
 'Because too much: they would compel,  
     not help.  
 'I say, the acknowledgment of God in  
     Christ  
 'Accepted by thy reason, solves for thee  
 'All questions in the earth and out of it,  
 'And has so far advanced thee to be wise.  
 'Wouldst thou unprove this to re-prove  
     the proved?  
 'In life's mere minute, with power to use  
     that proof,
- 'Leave knowledge and revert to how it  
     sprung?  
 'Thou hast it; use it and forthwith, or die!  
 'For I say, this is death and the sole death,  
 'When a man's loss comes to him from his  
     gain,  
 'Darkness from light, from knowledge  
     ignorance,  
 'And lack of love from love made manifest;  
 'A lamp's death when, replete with oil, it  
     chokes;  
 'A stomach's when, surcharged with food,  
     it starves.  
 'With ignorance was surety of a cure.  
 'When man, appalled at nature, ques-  
     tioned first  
 "'What if there lurk a might behind this  
     might?"  
 'He needed satisfaction God could give,  
 'And did give, as ye have the written word:  
 'But when he finds might still redouble  
     might,  
 'Yet asks, "Since all is might, what use of  
     will?"  
 '—Will, the one source of might,—he  
     being man  
 'With a man's will and a man's might, to  
     teach  
 'In little how the two combine in large,—  
 'That man has turned round on himself  
     and stands,  
 'Which in the course of nature is, to die.  
 'And when man questioned, "What if  
     there be love  
 "'Behind the will and might, as real as  
     they?"—  
 'He needed satisfaction God could give,  
 'And did give, as ye have the written word:  
 'But when, beholding that love every-  
     where,  
 'He reasons, "Since such love is every-  
     where,  
 "'And since ourselves can love and would  
     be loved,  
 "'We ourselves make the love, and Christ  
     was not,"—  
 'How shall ye help this man who knows  
     himself,  
 'That he must love and would be loved  
     again,  
 'Yet, owning his own love that proveth  
     Christ,  
 'Rejecteth Christ through very need of  
     Him?  
 'The lamp o'erswims with oil, the stomach  
     flags  
 'Loaded with nurture, and that man's soul  
     dies.  
 'If he rejoice, "But this was all the while  
 "'A trick; the fault was, first of all, in  
     thee,  
 "'Thy story of the places, names and dates,

## A DEATH IN THE DESERT

- "Where, when and how the ultimate truth had rise,  
 "—"Thy prior truth, at last discovered none,  
 "Whence now the second suffers detriment.  
 "What good of giving knowledge if, because  
 "O' the manner of the gift, its profit fail?  
 "And why refuse what modicum of help  
 "Had stopped the after-doubt, impossible  
 "'I' the face of truth—truth absolute, uniform?  
 "'Why must I hit of this and miss of that,  
 "'Distinguish just as I be weak or strong,  
 "'And not ask of thee and have answer prompt,  
 "'Was this once, was it not once?—then and now  
 "'And evermore, plain truth from man to man.  
 "'Is John's procedure just the heathen bard's?  
 "'Put question of his famous play again  
 "'How for the ephemerals' sake Jove's fire was filched,  
 "'And carried in a cane and brought to earth:  
 "'*The fact is in the fable, cry the wise,*  
 "'*Mortals obtained the boon, so much is fact,*  
 "'*Though fire be spirit and produced on earth.*  
 "'As with the Titan's, so now with thy tale:  
 "'Why breed in us perplexity, mistake,  
 "'Nor tell the whole truth in the proper words?"
- "I answer, Have ye yet to argue out  
 "The very primal thesis, plainest law,  
 "—Man is not God but hath God's end to serve,  
 "A master to obey, a course to take,  
 "Somewhat to cast off, somewhat to become?  
 "Grant this, then man must pass from old to new,  
 "From vain to real, from mistake to fact,  
 "From what once seemed good, to what now proves best.  
 "How could man have progression otherwise?  
 "Before the point was mooted "What is God?"  
 "No savage man inquired "What am myself?"  
 "Much less replied, "First, last, and best of things."  
 "Man takes that title now if he believes  
 "Might can exist with neither will nor love,  
 "In God's case—what he names now Nature's Law—
- "While in himself he recognizes love  
 "No less than might and will: and rightly takes.  
 "Since if man prove the sole existent thing  
 "Where these combine, whatever their degree,  
 "However weak the might or will or love,  
 "So they be found there, put in evidence,—  
 "He is as surely higher in the scale  
 "Than any might with neither love nor will,  
 "As life, apparent in the poorest midge,  
 "(When the faint dust-speck flits, ye guess its wing)  
 "Is marvellous beyond dead Atlas' self—  
 "Given to the nobler midge for resting-place!  
 "Thus, man proves best and highest—God, in fine,  
 "And thus the victory leads but to defeat,  
 "The gain to loss, best rise to the worst fall,  
 "His life becomes impossible, which is death.
- "But if, appealing thence, he cower, avouch  
 "He is mere man, and in humility  
 "Neither may know God nor mistake himself;  
 "I point to the immediate consequence  
 "And say, by such confession straight he falls  
 "Into man's place, a thing nor God nor beast,  
 "Made to know that he can know and not more:  
 "Lower than God who knows all and can all,  
 "Higher than beasts which know and can so far  
 "As each beast's limit, perfect to an end,  
 "Nor conscious that they know, nor craving more;  
 "While man knows partly but conceives beside,  
 "Creeps ever on from fancies to the fact,  
 "And in this striving, this converting air  
 "Into a solid he may grasp and use,  
 "Finds progress, man's distinctive mark alone,  
 "Not God's, and not the beasts': God is, they are,  
 "Man partly is and wholly hopes to be.  
 "Such progress could no more attend his soul  
 "Were all it struggles after found at first  
 "And guesses changed to knowledge absolute,  
 "Than motion wait his body, were all else  
 "Than it the solid earth on every side,  
 "Where now through space he moves from rest to rest.  
 "Man, therefore, thus conditioned, must expect

## A DEATH IN THE DESERT

'He could not, what he knows now, know  
 at first;  
 'What he considers that he knows to-day,  
 'Come but to-morrow, he will find mis-  
 known;  
 'Getting increase of knowledge, since he  
 learns  
 'Because he lives, which is to be a man,  
 'Set to instruct himself by his past self:  
 'First, like the brute, obliged by facts to  
 learn,  
 'Next, as man may, obliged by his own  
 mind,  
 'Bent, habit, nature, knowledge turned to  
 law.  
 'God's gift was that man should conceive  
 of truth  
 'And yearn to gain it, catching at mistake,  
 'As midway help till he reach fact indeed.  
 'The statuary ere he mould a shape  
 'Boasts a like gift, the shape's idea, and  
 next  
 'The aspiration to produce the same;  
 'So, taking clay, he calls his shape there-  
 out,  
 'Cries ever "Now I have the thing I see":  
 'Yet all the while goes changing what was  
 wrought,  
 'From falsehood like the truth, to truth it-  
 self.  
 'How were it had he cried "I see no face,  
 "No breast, no feet i' the ineffectual  
 clay"?  
 'Rather commend him that he clapped  
 his hands,  
 'And laughed "It is my shape and lives  
 again!"  
 'Enjoyed the falsehood, touched it on to  
 truth,  
 'Until yourselves applaud the flesh indeed  
 'In what is still flesh-imitating clay.  
 'Right in you, right in him, such way be  
 man's!  
 'God only makes the live shape at a jet.  
 'Will ye renounce this pact of creature-  
 ship?  
 'The pattern on the Mount subsists no  
 more,  
 'Seemed awhile, then returned to nothing-  
 ness;  
 'But copies, Moses strove to make there-  
 by,  
 'Serve still and are replaced as time re-  
 quires:  
 'By these, make newest vessels, reach the  
 type!  
 'If ye demur, this judgment on your head,  
 'Never to reach the ultimate, angel's law,  
 'Indulging every instinct of the soul  
 'There where law, life, joy, impulse are  
 one thing!  
 'Such is the burthen of the latest time.  
 'I have survived to hear it with my ears,

'Answer it with my lips: does this suffice?  
 'For if there be a further woe than such,  
 'Wherein my brothers struggling need a  
 hand,  
 'So long as any pulse is left in mine,  
 'May I be absent even longer yet,  
 'Plucking the blind ones back from the  
 abyss,  
 'Though I should tarry a new hundred  
 years!'

But he was dead; 'twas about noon, the  
 day  
 Somewhat declining: we five buried him  
 That eve, and then, dividing, went five  
 ways,  
 And I, disguised, returned to Ephesus.

By this, the cave's mouth must be filled  
 with sand.

Valens is lost, I know not of his trace;  
 The Bactrian was but a wild childish man,  
 And could not write nor speak, but only  
 loved:

So, lest the memory of this go quite,  
 Seeing that I to-morrow fight the beasts,  
 I tell the same to Phœbas, whom believe!  
 For many look again to find that face,  
 Beloved John's to whom I ministered,  
 Somewhere in life about the world; they  
 err:

Either mistaking what was darkly spoke  
 At ending of his book, as he relates,  
 Or misconceiving somewhat of this speech  
 Scattered from mouth to mouth, as I sup-  
 pose.

Believe ye will not see him any more  
 About the world with his divine regard!  
 For all was as I say, and now the man  
 Lies as he lay once, breast to breast with  
 God.

[Cerinthus read and mused; one added  
 this:

'If Christ, as thou affirmest, be of men  
 'Mere man, the first and best but nothing  
 more,—

'Account Him, for reward of what He was,  
 'Now and for ever, wretchedest of all.  
 'For see; Himself conceived of life as love,  
 'Conceived of love as what must enter in,  
 'Fill up, make one with His each soul He  
 loved:

'Thus much for man's joy, all men's joy  
 for Him.

'Well, He is gone, thou sayest, to fit reward.  
 'But by this time are many souls set free,  
 'And very many still retained alive:  
 'Nay, should His coming be delayed  
 awhile,

'Say, ten years longer (twelve years, some  
 compute)

## A DEATH IN THE DESERT

'See if, for every finger of thy hands,  
'There be not found, that day the world  
shall end,  
'Hundreds of souls, each holding by  
Christ's word  
'That He will grow incorporate with all,  
'With me as Pamphylax, with him as  
John,  
'Groom for each bride! Can a mere man  
do this?  
'Yet Christ saith, this He lived and died  
to do.  
'Call Christ, then, the illimitable God,  
'Or lost!'

But 'twas Cerinthus that is lost.]

## CALIBAN UPON SETEBOS; OR, NATURAL THEOLOGY IN THE ISLAND.

'Thou thoughtest that I was altogether such  
a one as thyself.'

[WILL sprawl, now that the heat of day is  
best,  
Flat on his belly in the pit's much mire,  
With elbows wide, fists clenched to prop  
his chin.  
And, while he kicks both feet in the cool  
slush,  
And feels about his spine small eft-things  
course,  
Run in and out each arm, and make him  
laugh:  
And while above his head a pompion-  
plant,  
Coating the cave-top as a brow its eye,  
Creeps down to touch and tickle hair and  
beard,  
And now a flower drops with a bee inside,  
And now a fruit to snap at, catch and  
crunch.—  
He looks out o'er yon sea which sunbeams  
cross  
And recross till they weave a spider-web  
(Meshes of fire, some great fish breaks at  
times)  
And talks to his own self, howe'er he  
please,  
Touching that other, whom his dam called  
God.  
Because to talk about Him, vexes—ha,  
Could He but know! and time to vex is  
now,  
When talk is safer than in winter-time.  
Moreover Prosper and Miranda sleep  
In confidence he drudges at their task,  
And it is good to cheat the pair, and gibe,  
Letting the rank tongue blossom into  
speech.]

Setebos, Setebos, and Setebos!

'Thinketh, He dwelleth i' the cold o' the  
moon.

'Thinketh He made it, with the sun to  
match,  
But not the stars; the stars come other-  
wise;  
Only made clouds, winds, meteors, such  
as that:  
Also this isle, what lives and grows thereon,  
And snaky sea which rounds and ends the  
same.

'Thinketh, it came of being ill at ease:  
He hated that He cannot change His cold,  
Nor cure its ache. 'Hath spied an icy fish  
That longed to 'scape the rock-stream  
where she lived,  
And thaw herself within the lukewarm  
brine  
O' the lazy sea her stream thrusts far amid,  
A crystal spike 'twixt two warm walls of  
wave;  
Only, she ever sickened, found repulse  
At the other kind of water, not her life,  
(Green-dense and dim-delicious, bred o'  
the sun)  
Flounced back from bliss she was not born  
to breathe,  
And in her old bounds buried her despair,  
Hating and loving warmth alike: so He.

'Thinketh, He made thereat the sun, this  
isle,  
Trees and the fowls here, beast and creep-  
ing thing.  
Yon otter, sleek-wet, black, lithe as a leech;  
Yon auk, one fire-eye in a ball of foam,  
That floats and feeds; a certain badger  
brown  
He hath watched hunt with that slant  
white-wedged eye  
By moonlight; and the pie with the long  
tongue  
That pricks deep into oakwarts for a  
worm,  
And says a plain word when she finds her  
prize,  
But will not eat the ants; the ants them-  
selves  
That build a wall of seeds and settled stalks  
About their hole—He made all these and  
more,  
Made all we see, and us, in spite: how else?  
He could not, Himself, make a second self  
To be His mate; as well have made Him-  
self:  
He would not make what he mislikes or  
slights,  
An eyesore to Him, or not worth His  
pains:  
But did, in envy, listlessness or sport,  
Make what Himself would fain, in a  
manner, be—  
Weaker in most points, stronger in a few.  
Worthy, and yet mere playthings all the  
while,

## CALIBAN UPON SETEBOS

Things He admires and mocks too,—that  
 is it.  
 Because, so brave, so better though they  
 be,  
 It nothing skills if He begin to plague.  
 Look now, I melt a gourd-fruit into mash,  
 Add honeycomb and pods, I have per-  
 ceived,  
 Which bite like finches when they bill and  
 kiss,—  
 Then, when froth rises bladdery, drink up  
 all,  
 Quick, quick, till maggots scamper  
 through my brain;  
 Last, throw me on my back i' the seeded  
 thyme,  
 And wanton, wishing I were born a bird.  
 Put case, unable to be what I wish,  
 I yet could make a live bird out of clay:  
 Would not I take clay, pinch my Caliban  
 Able to fly?—for, there, see, he hath  
 wings,  
 And great comb like the hoopoe's to ad-  
 mire,  
 And there, a sting to do his foes offence,  
 There, and I will that he begin to live,  
 Fly to yon rock-top, nip me off the horns  
 Of grigs high up that make the merry din,  
 Saucy through their veined wings, and  
 mind me not.  
 In which feat, if his leg snapped, brittle  
 clay,  
 And he lay stupid-like,—why, I should  
 laugh;  
 And if he, spying me, should fall to weep,  
 Beseech me to be good, repair his wrong,  
 Bid his poor leg smart less or grow again,—  
 Well, as the chance were, this might take  
 or else  
 Not take my fancy: I might hear his cry,  
 And give the manikin three sound legs for  
 one,  
 Or pluck the other off, leave him like an  
 egg,  
 And lessoned he was mine and merely  
 clay.  
 Were this no pleasure, lying in the thyme,  
 Drinking the mash, with brain become  
 alive,  
 Making and marring clay at will? So He.  
 'Thinketh, such shows nor right nor wrong  
 in Him,  
 Nor kind, nor cruel: He is strong and  
 Lord.  
 'Am strong myself compared to yonder  
 crabs  
 That march now from the mountain to  
 the sea;  
 'Let twenty pass, and stone the twenty-  
 first,  
 Loving not, hating not, just choosing so.  
 'Say, the first straggler that boasts purple  
 spots

Shall join the file, one pincer twisted off;  
 'Say, this bruised fellow shall receive a  
 worm,  
 And two worms he whose nippers end in  
 red;  
 As it likes me each time, I do: so He.  
 Well then, 'supposeth He is good i' the  
 main,  
 Placable if His mind and ways were  
 guessed,  
 But rougher than His handiwork, be sure!  
 Oh, He hath made things worthier than  
 Himself,  
 And envieth that, so helped, such things  
 do more  
 Than He who made them! What consoles  
 but this?  
 That they, unless through Him, do nought  
 at all,  
 And must submit: what other use in  
 things?  
 'Hath cut a pipe of pithless elder-joint  
 That, blown through, gives exact the  
 scream o' the jay  
 When from her wing you twitch the  
 feathers blue:  
 Sound this, and little birds that hate the  
 jay  
 Flock within stone's throw, glad their foe  
 is hurt:  
 Put case such pipe could prattle and boast  
 forsooth  
 'I catch the birds, I am the crafty thing,  
 'I make the cry my maker cannot make  
 'With his great round mouth; he must  
 blow through mine!'  
 Would not I smash it with my foot? So He.  
 But wherefore rough, why cold and ill at  
 ease?  
 Aha, that is a question! Ask, for that,  
 What knows,—the something over  
 Setebos  
 That made Him, or He, may be, found and  
 fought,  
 Worsted, drove off and did to nothing,  
 perchance.  
 There may be something quiet o'er His  
 head,  
 Out of His reach, that feels nor joy nor  
 grief,  
 Since both derive from weakness in some  
 way.  
 I joy because the quails come; would not  
 joy  
 Could I bring quails here when I have a  
 mind:  
 This Quiet, all it hath a mind to, doth.  
 'Esteemeth stars the outposts of its couch,  
 But never spends much thought nor care  
 that way.  
 It may look up, work up,—the worse for  
 those



## CALIBAN UPON SETEBOS

It works on! 'Careth but for Setebos  
The many-handed as a cuttle-fish,  
Who, making Himself feared through  
what He does,

Looks up, first, and perceives he cannot  
soar

To what is quiet and hath happy life;  
Next looks down here, and out of very  
spite

Makes this a bauble-world to ape yon real,  
These good things to match those as hips  
do grapes.

'Tis solace making baubles, ay, and sport.  
Himself peeped late, eyed Prosper at his  
books

Careless and lofty, lord now of the isle:  
Vexed, 'stitched a book of broad leaves,  
arrow-shaped,

Wrote thereon, he knows what, prodigious  
words;

Has peeled a wand and called it by a name;  
Weareth at whiles for an enchanter's robe  
The eyed skin of a supple oncelot;

And hath an ounce sleeker than youngling  
mole,

A four-legged serpent he makes cower and  
couch,

Now snarl, now hold its breath and mind  
his eye,

And saith she is Miranda and my wife:  
'Keeps for his Ariel a tall pouch-bill crane  
He bids go wade for fish and straight dis-  
gorge;

Also a sea-beast, lumpish, which he snared,  
Blinded the eyes of, and brought some-  
what tame,

And split its toe-webs, and now pens the  
drudge

In a hole o' the rock and calls him Caliban;  
A bitter heart that bides its time and tites.

'Plays thus at being Prosper in a way,  
Taketsh his mirth with make-believes: so  
He.

His dam held that the Quiet made all things  
Which Setebos vexed only: 'holds not so.  
Who made them weak, meant weakness  
He might vex.

Had He meant other, while His Hand was  
in,

Why not make horny eyes no thorn could  
prick,

Or plate my scalp with bone against the  
snow,

Or overscale my flesh 'neath joint and  
joint,

Like an orc's armour? Ay,—so spoil His  
sport!

He is the One now: only He doth all.

'Saith, He may like, perchance, what  
profits Him.

Ay, himself loves what does him good;  
but why?

'Gets good no otherwise. This blinded  
beast

Loves whoso places flesh-meat on his nose.  
But, had he eyes, would want no help, but  
hate

Or love, just as it liked him: He hath eyes.  
Also it pleaseth Setebos to work,

Use all His hands, and exercise much craft,  
By no means for the love of what is worked.

'Tasteth, himself, no finer good i' the  
world

When all goes right, in this safe summer-  
time,

And he wants little, hungers, aches not  
much,

Than trying what to do with wit and  
strength.

'Falls to make something: 'piled yon pile  
of turfs,

And squared and stuck there squares of  
soft white chalk,

And, with a fish-tooth, scratched a moon  
on each,

And set up endwise certain spikes of tree,  
And crowned the whole with a sloth's

skull a-top,  
Found dead i' the woods, too hard for one  
to kill.

No use at all i' the work, for work's sole  
sake;

'Shall some day knock it down again: so  
He.

'Saith He is terrible: watch His feats in  
proof!

One hurricane will spoil six good months'  
hope.

He hath a spite against me, that I know,  
Just as He favours Prosper, who knows  
why?

So it is, all the same, as well I find.  
'Wove wattles half the winter, fenced  
them firm

With stone and stake to stop she-tortoises  
Crawling to lay their eggs here: well, one  
wave,

Feeling the foot of Him upon its neck,  
Gaped as a snake does, lolled out its large  
tongue,

And licked the whole labour flat: so much  
for spite.

'Saw a ball flame down late (yonder it lies)  
Where, half an hour before, I slept i' the  
shade:

Often they scatter sparkles: there is force!  
'Dug up a newt He may have envied once

And turned to stone, shut up inside a stone.  
Please Him and hinder this?—What  
Prosper does?

Aha, if He would tell me how! Not He!  
There is the sport: discover how or die!

All need not die, for of the things o' the isle  
Some flee afar, some dive, some run up  
trees;

## CALIBAN UPON SETEBOS

Those at His mercy,—why, they please  
 Him most  
 When . . . when . . . well, never try the same  
 way twice!  
 Repeat what act has pleased, He may grow  
 wroth.  
 You must not know His ways, and play  
 Him off,  
 Sure of the issue. 'Doth the like himself:  
 'Spareth a squirrel that it nothing fears  
 But steals the nut from underneath my  
 thumb,  
 And when I threat, bites stoutly in defence:  
 'Spareth an urchin that contrariwise,  
 Curls up into a ball, pretending death  
 For fright at my approach: the two ways  
 please.  
 But what would move my choler more  
 than this,  
 That either creature counted on its life  
 To-morrow and next day and all days to  
 come,  
 Saying, forsooth, in the inmost of its heart,  
 'Because he did so yesterday with me,  
 'And otherwise with such another brute,  
 'So must he do henceforth and always.'—  
 Ay?  
 Would teach the reasoning couple what  
 'must' means!  
 'Doth as he likes, or wherefore Lord? So  
 He.  
 'Conceiveth all things will continue thus,  
 And we shall have to live in fear of Him  
 So long as He lives, keeps His strength: no  
 change,  
 If He have done His best, make no new  
 world  
 To please Him more, so leave off watching  
 this,—  
 If He surprise not even the Quiet's self  
 Some strange day,—or, suppose, grow  
 into it  
 As grubs grow butterflies: else, here are we,  
 And there is He, and nowhere help at all.  
 'Believeth with the life, the pain shall stop.  
 His dam held different, that after death  
 He both plagued enemies and feasted  
 friends:  
 Idly! He doth His worst in this our life,  
 Giving just respite lest we die through  
 pain,  
 Saving last pain for worst,—with which,  
 an end.  
 Meanwhile, the best way to escape His ire  
 Is, not to seem too happy. 'Sees, himself,  
 Yonder two flies, with purple films and  
 pink,  
 Bask on the pompion-bell above: kills  
 both.  
 'Sees two black painful beetles roll their  
 ball  
 On head and tail as if to save their lives:

Moves them the stick away they strive to  
 clear.

Even so, 'would have Him misconceive,  
 suppose  
 This Caliban strives hard and ails no less,  
 And always, above all else, envies Him;  
 Wherefore he mainly dances on dark  
 nights,  
 Moans in the sun, gets under holes to  
 laugh,  
 And never speaks his mind save housed  
 as now:  
 Outside, 'groans, curses. If He caught me  
 here,  
 O'erheard this speech, and asked 'What  
 chucklest at?'  
 'Would, to appease Him, cut a finger off,  
 Or of my three kid yearlings burn the best,  
 Or let the toothsome apples rot on tree,  
 Or push my tame beast for the orc to taste:  
 While myself lit a fire, and made a song  
 And sung it, 'What I hate, be consecrate  
 'To celebrate Thee and Thy state, no mate  
 'For Thee; what see for envy in poor me?'  
 Hoping the while, since evils sometimes  
 mend,  
 Warts rub away and sores are cured with  
 slime,  
 That some strange day, will either the  
 Quiet catch  
 And conquer Setebos, or likelier He  
 Decrepit may doze, doze, as good as die.

[What, what? A curtain o'er the world at  
 once!  
 Crickets stop hissing; not a bird—or, yes,  
 There scuds His raven that has told Him  
 all!  
 It was fool's play, this prattling! Ha! The  
 wind  
 Shoulders the pillared dust, death's house  
 o' the move,  
 And fast invading fires begin! White  
 blaze—  
 A tree's head snaps—and there, there,  
 there, there, there,  
 His thunder follows! Fool to gibe at Him!  
 Lo! 'Lieth flat and loveth Setebos!  
 'Maketh his teeth meet through his upper  
 lip,  
 Will let those quails fly, will not eat this  
 month  
 One little mess of whelks, so he may  
 'scape!]

## CONFESSIONS

I

WHAT is he buzzing in my ears?  
 'Now that I come to die,  
 'Do I view the world as a vale of tears?'  
 Ah, reverend sir, not I

## CONFESSIONS

### II

What I viewed there once, what I view  
again  
Where the physic bottles stand  
On the table's edge,—is a suburb lane,  
With a wall to my bedside hand.

### III

That lane sloped, much as the bottles do,  
From a house you could descry  
O'er the garden-wall: is the curtain blue  
Or green to a healthy eye?

### IV

To mine, it serves for the old June weather  
Blue above lane and wall;  
And that farthest bottle labelled 'Ether'  
Is the house o'ertopping all.

### V

At a terrace, somewhere near the stopper,  
There watched for me, one June,  
A girl: I know, sir, it's improper,  
My poor mind's out of tune.

### VI

Only, there was a way . . . you crept  
Close by the side, to dodge  
Eyes in the house, two eyes except:  
They styled their house 'The Lodge.'

### VII

What right had a lounge up their lanc?  
But, by creeping very close,  
With the good wall's help,—their eyes  
might strain  
And stretch themselves to Oes,

### VIII

Yet never catch her and me together,  
As she left the attic, there,  
By the rim of the bottle labelled 'Ether,'  
And stole from stair to stair,

### IX

And stood by the rose-wreathed gate.  
Alas,  
We loved, sir—used to meet:  
How sad and bad and mad it was—  
But then, how it was sweet!

## MAY AND DEATH

### I

I wish that when you died last May,  
Charles, there had died along with you  
Three parts of spring's delightful things;  
Ay, and, for me, the fourth part too.

### II

A foolish thought, and worse, perhaps!  
There must be many a pair of friends  
Who, arm in arm, deserve the warm  
Moon-births and the long evening-ends.

### III

So, for their sake, be May still May!  
Let their new time, as mine of old,  
Do all it did for me: I bid  
Sweet sights and sounds throng mani-  
fold.

### IV

Only, one little sight, one plant,  
Woods have in May, that starts up green  
Save a sole streak which, so to speak,  
Is spring's blood, spilt its leaves be-  
tween,—

### V

That, they might spare; a certain wood  
Might miss the plant; their loss were  
small:  
But I,—where'er the leaf grows there,  
Its drop comes from my heart, that's all.

## DEAF AND DUMB

### A GROUP BY WOOLNER

ONLY the prism's obstruction shows aright  
The secret of a sunbeam, breaks its light  
Into the jewelled bow from blankest white;  
So may a glory from defect arise:  
Only by Deafness may the vexed Love  
wreak  
Its insuppressible sense on brow and cheek,  
Only by Dumbness adequately speak  
Asfavoured mouth could never, through  
the eyes.

## PROSPICE

FEAR death?—to feel the fog in my throat,  
The mist in my face,  
When the snows begin, and the blasts de-  
note  
I am nearing the place,  
The power of the night, the press of the  
storm,  
The post of the foe;  
Where he stands, the Arch Fear in a visible  
form,  
Yet the strong man must go:  
For the journey is done and the summit  
attained,  
And the barriers fall,  
Though a battle's to fight ere the guerdon  
be gained,  
The reward of it all.  
I was ever a fighter, so—one fight more,  
The best and the last!  
I would hate that death bandaged my eyes,  
and forebore,  
And bade me creep past.  
No! let me taste the whole of it, fare like  
my peers  
The heroes of old,  
Bear the brunt, in a minute pay glad life's  
arrears  
Of pain, darkness and cold.

For sudden the worst turns the best to the brave,

The black minute's at end,  
And the elements' rage, the fiend-voices  
that rave,

Shall dwindle, shall blend,  
Shall change, shall become first a peace  
out of pain,

Then a light, then thy breast,  
O thou soul of my soul! I shall clasp thee  
again,  
And with God be the rest!

## EURYDICE TO ORPHEUS

A PICTURE BY LEIGHTON

BUT give them me, the mouth, the eyes, the  
brow!

Let them once more absorb me! One look  
now

Will lap me round for ever, not to pass  
Out of its light, though darkness lie be-  
yond:

Hold me but safe again within the bond  
Of one immortal look! All woe that  
was,

Forgotten, and all terror that may be,  
Defied,—no past is mine, no future: look  
at me!

## YOUTH AND ART

I

It once might have been, once only:

We lodged in a street together,  
You, a sparrow on the housetop lonely,  
I, a lone she-bird of his feather.

II

Your trade was with sticks and clay,  
You thumbed, thrust, patted and  
polished,  
Then laughed 'They will see some day  
'Smith made, and Gibson demolished.'

III

My business was song, song, song;  
I chirped, cheeped, trilled and twittered,  
'Kate Brown's on the boards ere long,  
'And Grisi's existence embittered!'

IV

I earned no more by a warble  
Than you by a sketch in plaster;  
You wanted a piece of marble,  
I needed a music-master.

V

We studied hard in our styles,  
Chipped each at a crust like Hindoos,  
For air looked out on the tiles,  
For fun watched each other's windows.

VI

You lounged, like a boy of the South,  
Cap and blouse—nay, a bit of beard  
too;

Or you got it, rubbing your mouth  
With fingers the clay adhered to.

VII

And I—soon managed to find  
Weak points in the flower-fence facing,  
Was forced to put up a blind  
And be safe in my corset-lacing.

VIII

No harm! It was not my fault  
If you never turned your eye's tail up  
As I shook upon *E in alt*,  
Or ran the chromatic scale up:

IX

For spring bade the sparrows pair,  
And the boys and girls gave guesses,  
And stalls in our street looked rare  
With bulrush and watercresses.

X

Why did not you pinch a flower  
In a pellet of clay and fling it?  
Why did not I put a power  
Of thanks in a look, or sing it?

XI

I did look, sharp as a lynx,  
(And yet the memory rankles)  
When models arrived, some minx  
Tripped up-stairs, she and her ankles.

XII

But I think I gave you as good!  
'That foreign fellow,—who can know  
'How she pays, in a playful mood,  
'For his tuning her that piano?'

XIII

Could you say so, and never say  
'Suppose we join hands and fortunes,  
'And I fetch her from over the way,  
'Her piano, and long tunes and short  
tunes?'

XIV

No, no: you would not be rash,  
Nor I rasher and something over:  
You've to settle yet Gibson's hash,  
And Grisi yet lives in clover.

XV

But you meet the Prince at the Board,  
I'm queen myself at *bals-paré*,  
I've married a rich old lord,  
And you're dubbed knight and an R.A.

XVI

Each life unfulfilled, you see;  
It hangs still, patchy and scrappy:  
We have not sighed deep, laughed free,  
Starved, feasted, despaired,—been  
happy.

## YOUTH AND ART

xvii

And nobody calls you a dunce,  
And people suppose me clever:  
This could but have happened once,  
And we missed it, lost it for ever.

### A FACE

If one could have that little head of hers  
Painted upon a background of pale gold,  
Such as the Tuscan's early art prefers:  
No shade encroaching on the matchless  
mould

Of those two lips, which should be opening  
soft

In the pure profile; not as when she  
laughs,  
For that spoils all; but rather as if aloft  
Yon hyacinth, she loves so, leaned its  
staff's

Burthen of honey-coloured buds to kiss  
And capture 'twixt the lips apart for this.  
Then her lithe neck, three fingers might  
surround,

How it should waver on the pale gold  
ground

Up to the fruit-shaped, perfect chin it lifts!  
I know, Correggio loves to mass, in rifts  
Of heaven, his angel faces, orb on orb  
Breaking its outline, burning shades ab-  
sorb:

But these are only massed there, I should  
think,

Waiting to see some wonder momentarily  
Grow out, stand full, fade slow against  
the sky

(That's the pale ground you'd see this  
sweet face by),

All heaven, meanwhile, condensed into  
one eye

Which fears to lose the wonder, should it  
wink.

### A LIKENESS

SOME people hang portraits up  
In a room where they dine or sup:

And the wife clinks tea-things under,  
And her cousin, he stirs his cup,

Asks, 'Who was the lady, I wonder?'

'Tis a daub John bought at a sale,  
Quoth the wife,—looks black as thun-  
der:

'What a shade beneath her nose!  
'Snuff-taking, I suppose,—'

Adds the cousin, while John's corns ail.  
Or else, there's no wife in the case,

But the portrait's queen of the place,  
Alone 'mid the other spoils

Of youth,—masks, gloves and foils,  
And pipe-sticks, rose, cherry-tree, jasmine,

And the long whip, the tandem-lasher,  
And the cast from a fist ('not, alas! mine,

'But my master's, the Tipton Slasher'),  
And the cards where pistol-balls mark ace,

And a satin shoe used for cigar-case,

And the chamois-horns ('shot in the  
Chablais')

And prints—Rarey drumming on Crui-  
ser,

And Sayers, our champion, the bruiser,  
And the little edition of Rabelais:

Where a friend, with both hands in his  
pockets,

May saunter up close to examine it,  
And remark a good deal of Jane Lamb

in it,  
'But the eyes are half out of their sockets;

'That hair's not so bad, where the gloss is,  
'But they've made the girl's nose a pro-  
boscis:

'Jane Lamb, that we danced with at Vichy!  
'What, is not she Jane? Then, who is she?'

All that I own is a print,  
An etching, a mezzotint;

'Tis a study, a fancy, a fiction,  
Yet a fact (take my conviction)

Because it has more than a hint  
Of a certain face, I never

Saw elsewhere touch or trace of  
In women I've seen the face of:

Just an etching, and, so far, clever.

I keep my prints, an imbroglio,  
Fifty in one portfolio.

When somebody tries my claret,  
We turn round chairs to the fire,

Chirp over days in a garret,  
Chuckle o'er increase of salary,

Taste the good fruits of our leisure,  
Talk about pencil and lyre,

And the National Portrait Gallery:  
Then I exhibit my treasure.

After we've turned over twenty,  
And the debt of wonder my crony owes

Is paid to my Marc Antonios,  
He stops me—'*Festina lente!*

'What's that sweet thing there, the etch-  
ing?'

How my waistcoat-strings want stretching,  
How my cheeks grow red as tomatoes,

How my heart leaps! But hearts, after  
leaps, ache.

'By the by, you must take, for a keepsake,  
'That other, you praised, of Volnato's.'

The fool! would he try a flight further and  
say—

He never saw, never before to-day,  
What was able to take his breath away,

A face to lose youth for, to occupy age  
With the dream of, meet death with,—

why, I'll not engage  
But that, half in a rapture and half in a

rage,  
I should toss him the thing's self—'Tis

only a duplicate,  
'A thing of no value! Take it, I suppli-  
cate!'

### MR. SLUDGE, 'THE MEDIUM'

Now, don't, sir! Don't expose me! Just this once!

This was the first and only time, I'll swear,—

Look at me,—see, I kneel,—the only time, I swear, I ever cheated,—yes, by the soul Of Her who hears—(your sainted mother, sir!)

All, except this last accident, was truth—This little kind of slip!—and even this, It was your own wine, sir, the good champagne,

(I took it for Catawba, you're so kind) Which put the folly in my head!

'Get up?'

You still inflict on me that terrible face? You show no mercy?—Not for Her dear sake,

The sainted spirit's, whose soft breath even now

Blows on my cheek—(don't you feel some-thing, sir?)

You'll tell?

Go tell, then! Who the devil cares What such a rowdy chooses to . . .

Aie—aie—aie!

Please, sir! your thumbs are through my windpipe, sir!

Ch—ch!

Well, sir, I hope you've done it now! Oh Lord! I little thought, sir, yesterday, When your departed mother spoke those words

Of peace through me, and moved you, sir, so much,

You gave me—(very kind it was of you) These shirt-studs—(better take them back again,

Please, sir)—yes, little did I think so soon A trifle of trick, all through a glass too much

Of his own champagne, would change my best of friends

Into an angry gentleman!

Though, 'twas wrong.

I don't contest the point; your anger's just:

Whatever put such folly in my head, I know 'twas wicked of me. There's a thick Dusk undeveloped spirit (I've observed) Owes me a grudge—a negro's, I should say,

Or else an Irish emigrant's; yourself Explained the case so well last Sunday, sir, When we had summoned Franklin to clear up

A point about those shares i' the telegraph: Ay, and he swore . . . or might it be Tom Paine? . . .

### MR. SLUDGE, 'THE MEDIUM'

Thumping the table close by where I crouched,

He'd do me soon a mischief: that's come true!

Why, now your face clears! I was sure it would!

Then, this one time . . . don't take your hand away,

Through your's I surely kiss your mother's hand . . .

You'll promise to forgive me?—or, at least,

Tell nobody of this? Consider, sir! What harm can mercy do? Would but the shade

Of the venerable dead—one just vouchsafe A rap or tip! What bit of paper's here?

Suppose we take a pencil, let her write, Make the least sign, she urges on her child

Forgiveness? There now! Eh? Oh! 'Twas your foot,

And not a natural creak, sir?

Answer, then!

Once, twice, thrice . . . see, I'm waiting to say 'thrice!'

All to no use? No sort of hope for me?

It's all to post to Greeley's newspaper?

What? If I told you all about the tricks? Upon my soul!—the whole truth, and

nought else, And how there's been some falsehood—

for your part, Will you engage to pay my passage out,

And hold your tongue until I'm safe on board?

England's the place, not Boston—no offence!

I see what makes you hesitate: don't fear! I mean to change my trade and cheat no

more, Yes, this time really it's upon my soul!

Be my salvation!—under Heaven, of course.

I'll tell some queer things. Sixty Vs must do.

A trifle, though, to start with! We'll refer The question to this table?

How you're changed!

Then split the difference; thirty more, we'll say.

Ay, but you leave my presents! Else I'll swear

'Twas all through those: you wanted yours again,

So, picked a quarrel with me, to get them back!

Tread on a worm, it turns, sir! If I turn, Your fault! 'Tis you'll have forced me!

Who's obliged To give up life yet try no self-defence?

At all events, I'll run the risk. Eh?

## MR. SLUDGE, 'THE MEDIUM'

Done!  
 May I sit, sir? This dear old table, now!  
 Please, sir, a parting egg-nogg and cigar!  
 I've been so happy with you! Nice stuffed  
 chairs,  
 And sympathetic sideboards; what an end  
 To all the instructive evenings! (It's  
 alight.)  
 Well, nothing lasts, as Bacon came and  
 said.  
 Here goes,—but keep your temper, or I'll  
 scream!

Fol-lol-the-rido-liddle-iddle-ol!  
 You see, sir, it's your own fault more than  
 mine;  
 It's all your fault, you curious gentlefolk!  
 You're prigs,—excuse me,—like to look  
 so spry,  
 So clever, while you cling by half a claw  
 To the perch whereon you puff yourselves  
 at roost,  
 Such piece of self-conceit as serves for  
 perch  
 Because you chose it, so it must be safe.  
 Oh, otherwise you're sharp enough! You  
 spy  
 Who slips, who slides, who holds by help  
 of wing,  
 Wanting real foothold,—who can't keep  
 upright  
 On the other perch, your neighbour chose,  
 not you:  
 There's no outwitting you respecting him!  
 For instance, men love money—that, you  
 know  
 And what men do to gain it: well, suppose  
 A poor lad, say a help's son in your house,  
 Listening at keyholes, hears the company  
 Talk grand of dollars, V-notes, and so  
 forth,  
 How hard they are to get, how good to  
 hold,  
 How much they buy,—if, suddenly, in  
 pops he—  
 'I've got a V-note!'—what do you say to  
 him?  
 What's your first word which follows your  
 last kick?  
 'Where did you steal it, rascal?' That's  
 because  
 He finds you, fain would fool you, off your  
 perch,  
 Not on the special piece of nonsense, sir,  
 Elected your parade-ground: let him try  
 Lies to the end of the list,—'He picked it  
 up,  
 'His cousin died and left it him by will,  
 'The President flung it to him, riding by,  
 'An actress trucked it for a curl of his hair,  
 'He dreamed of luck and found his shoe  
 enriched,  
 'He dug up clay, and out of clay made  
 gold—

How would you treat such possibilities?  
 Would not you, prompt, investigate the  
 case  
 With cow-hide? 'Lies, lies, lies,' you'd  
 shout: and why?  
 Which of the stories might not prove mere  
 truth?  
 This last, perhaps, that clay was turned to  
 coin!  
 Let's see, now, give him me to speak for  
 him!  
 How many of your rare philosophers,  
 In plaguy books I've had to dip into,  
 Believed gold could be made thus, saw it  
 made  
 And made it? Oh, with such philosophers  
 You're on your best behaviour! While the  
 lad—  
 With him, in a trice, you settle likelihoods,  
 Nor doubt a moment how he got his prize:  
 In his case, you hear, judge and execute,  
 All in a breath: so would most men of  
 " sense.

But let the same lad hear you talk as grand  
 At the same keyhole, you and company,  
 Of signs and wonders, the invisible world;  
 How wisdom scouts our vulgar unbelief  
 More than our vilest credulity:  
 How good men have desired to see a ghost,  
 What Johnson used to say, what Wesley  
 did,  
 Mother Goose thought, and fiddle-diddle-  
 dee:—  
 If he break in with, 'Sir, I saw a ghost!'  
 Ah, the ways change! He finds you  
 perched and prim;  
 It's a conceit of yours that ghosts may be:  
 There's no talk now of cow-hide. 'Tell it  
 out!  
 'Don't fear us! Take your time and re-  
 collect!  
 'Sit down first: try a glass of wine, my boy!  
 'And, David, (is not that your Christian  
 name?)  
 'Of all things, should this happen twice—  
 it may—  
 'Be sure, while fresh in mind, you let us  
 know!  
 Does the boy blunder, blurt out this, blab  
 that,  
 Break down in the other, as beginners will?  
 All's candour, all's considerateness—'No  
 haste!  
 'Pause and collect yourself! We under-  
 stand!  
 'That's the bad memory, or the natural  
 shock,  
 'Or the unexplained *phenomena*!'

Egad,  
 The boy takes heart of grace; finds, never  
 fear,  
 The readiest way to ope yo'r own heart  
 wide,

## MR. SLUDGE, 'THE MEDIUM'

Show—what I call your peacock-porch,  
pet post  
To strut, and spread the tail, and squawk  
upon!  
'Just as you thought, much as you might  
expect!  
'There be more things in heaven and earth,  
Horatio.' . . .  
And so on. Shall not David take the hint,  
Grow bolder, stroke you down at quick-  
ened rate?  
If he ruffle a feather, it's 'Gently, patiently!  
'Manifestations are so weak at first!  
'Doubting, moreover, kills them, cuts all  
short,  
'Cures with a vengeance!'

There, sir, that's your style!  
You and your boy—such pains bestowed  
on him,  
Or any headpiece of the average worth,  
To teach, say, Greek, would perfect him  
apace,  
Make him a Person ('Porson?' thank you,  
sir!)  
Much more, proficient in the art of lies.  
You never leave the lesson! Fire alight,  
Catch you permitting it to die! You've  
friends;  
There's no withholding knowledge,—  
least from those  
Apt to look elsewhere for their souls'  
supply:  
Why should not you parade your lawful  
prize?  
Who finds a picture, digs a medal up,  
Hits on a first edition,—he henceforth  
Gives it his name, grows notable: how  
much more,  
Who ferrets out a 'medium'? 'David's  
yours,  
'You highly-favoured man? Then, pity  
souls  
'Less privileged! Allow us share your luck!  
So, David holds the circle, rules the roast,  
Narrates the vision, peeps in the glass ball,  
Sets-to the spirit-writing, hears the raps,  
As the case may be.

Now mark! To be precise—  
Though I say, 'lies' all these, at this first  
stage,  
'Tis just for science' sake: I call such grubs  
By the name of what they'll turn to,  
dragonflies.  
Strictly, it's what good people style un-  
truth;  
But yet, so far, not quite the full-grown  
thing:  
It's fancying, fable-making, nonsense-  
work—  
What never meant to be so very bad—  
The knack of story-telling, brightening up  
Each dull old bit of fact that drops its shine.

One does see somewhat when one shuts  
one's eyes,  
If only spots and streaks; tables do tip  
In the oddest way of themselves: and pens,  
good Lord,  
Who knows if you drive them or they drive  
you?  
'Tis but a foot in the water and out again;  
Not that duck-under which decides your  
dive.  
Note this, for it's important: listen why.

I'll prove, you push on David till he dives  
And ends the shivering. Here's your  
circle, now:  
Two-thirds of them, with heads like you  
their host,  
Turn up their eyes, and cry, as you expect,  
'Lord, who'd have thought it!' But  
there's always one  
Looks wise, compassionately smiles, sub-  
mits  
'Of your veracity no kind of doubt,  
'But—do you feel so certain of that boy's?  
'Really, I wonder! I confess myself  
'More chary of my faith!' That's galling,  
sir!  
What, he the investigator, he the sage,  
When all's done? Then, you just have  
shut your eyes,  
Opened your mouth, and gulped down  
David whole,  
You! Terrible were such catastrophe!  
So, evidence is redoubled, doubled again,  
And doubled besides; once more, 'He  
heard, we heard,  
'You and they heard, your mother and  
your wife,  
'Your children and the stranger in your  
gates:  
'Did they or did they not?' So much for  
him,  
The black sheep, guest without the wed-  
ding-garb,  
The doubting Thomas! Now's your turn  
to crow:  
'He's kind to think you such a fool: Sludge  
cheats?  
'Leave you alone to take precautions!'

Straight  
The rest join chorus. Thomas stands  
abashed,  
Sips silent some such beverage as this,  
Considers if it be harder, shutting eyes  
And gulping David in good fellowship,  
Than going elsewhere, getting, in ex-  
change,  
With no egg-nogg to lubricate the food,  
Some just as tough a morsel. Over the  
way,  
Holds Captain Sparks his court: is it better  
there?  
Have not you hunting-stories, scalping-  
scenes,



## MR. SLUDGE, 'THE MEDIUM'

And Mexican War exploits to swallow  
plump

If you'd be free o' the stove-side, rocking-  
chair,

And trio of affable daughters?  
Doubt succumbs!

Victory! All your circle's yours again!  
Out of the clubbing of submissive wicks,

David's performance rounds, each chink  
gets patched,

Every protrusion of a point's filed fine,  
All's fit to set a-rolling round the world,

And then return to David finally,  
Lies seven-feet thick about his first half-  
inch.

Here's a choice birth o' the supernatural,  
Poor David's pledged to! You've em-  
ployed no tool

That laws exclaim at, save the devil's own,  
Yet screwed him into henceforth gulling  
you

To the top o' your bent,—all out of one  
half-lie!

You hold, if there's one half or a hundredth  
part

Of a lie, that's his fault,—his be the  
penalty!

I dare say! You'd prove firmer in his  
place?

You'd find the courage,—that first flurry  
over,

That mild bit of romancing-work at end,—  
To interpose with 'It gets serious, this;

'Must stop here. Sir, I saw no ghost at all.  
'Inform your friends I made . . . well,

fools of them,  
'And found you ready-made. I've lived  
in clover

'These three weeks: take it out in kicks  
of me!'

I doubt it. Ask your conscience! Let me  
know,

Twelve months hence, with how few em-  
bellishments

You've told almighty Boston of this pas-  
sage

Of arms between us, your first taste o' the  
foil

From Sludge who could not fence, sir!  
Sludge, your boy!

I lied, sir,—there! I got up from my gorge  
On offal in the gutter, and preferred  
Your canvas-backs: I took their carver's  
size,

Measured his modicum of intelligence,  
Tickled him on the cockles of his heart  
With a raven feather, and next week found  
myself

Sweet and clean, dining daintily, dizen'd  
smart,

Set on a stool buttressed by ladies' knees,  
Every soft smiler calling me her pet,  
Encouraging my story to uncoil

And creep out from its hole, inch after  
inch,

'How last night, I no sooner snug in bed,  
'Tucked up, just as they left me,—than  
came raps!

'While a light whisked'; . . . 'Shaped  
somewhat like a star?'

'Well, like some sort of stars, ma'am.'—  
'So we thought!

'And any voice? Not yet? Try hard,  
next time,

'If you can't hear a voice; we think you  
may:

'At least, the Pennsylvanian "mediums"  
did.'

Oh, next time comes the voice! 'Just as  
we hoped!'

Are not the hoppers proud now, pleased,  
profuse

O' the natural acknowledgment?  
Of course!

So, off we push, illy-oh-yo, trim the boat,  
On we sweep with a cataract ahead,

We're midway to the Horseshoe: stop,  
who can,

The dance of bubbles gay about our prow!  
Experiences become worth waiting for,

Spirits now speak up, tell their inmost  
mind,

And compliment the 'medium' properly,  
Concern themselves about his Sunday  
coat,

See rings on his hand with pleasure. Ask  
yourself

How you'd receive a course of treats like  
these!

Why, take the quietest hack and stall him  
up,

Cram him with corn a month, then out  
with him

Among his mates on a bright April morn,  
With the turf to tread; see if you find or no  
A caper in him, if he bucks or bolts!

Much more a youth whose fancies sprout  
as rank

As toadstool-clump from melon-bed. 'Tis  
soon,

'Sirrah, you spirit, come, go, fetch and  
carry,

'Read, write, rap, rub-a-dub, and hang  
yourself!'

I'm spared all further trouble; all's ar-  
ranged;

Your circle does my business; I may rave  
Like an epileptic dervish in the books,

Foam, fling myself flat, rend my clothes  
to shreds;

No matter: lovers, friends and country-  
men

Will lay down spiritual laws, read wrong  
things right

By the rule o' reverse. If Francis Veru-  
lam

## MR. SLUDGE, 'THE MEDIUM'

Styles himself Bacon, spells the name  
beside

With a *y* and a *k*, says he drew breath in  
York,

Gave up the ghost in Wales when Crom-  
well reigned,

(As, sir, we somewhat fear he was apt to  
say,

Before I found the useful book that knows)  
Why, what harm's done? The circle smiles

apace,

'It was not Bacon, after all, you see!

'We understand; the trick's but natural:

'Such spirits' individuality

'Is hard to put in evidence: they incline

'To gibe and jeer, these undeveloped sorts.

'You see, their world's much like a jail  
broke loose,

'While this of ours remains shut, bolted,  
barred,

'With a single window to it. Sludge, our  
friend,

'Serves as this window, whether thin or  
thick,

'Or stained or stainless; he's the medium-  
pane

'Through which, to see us and be seen,  
they peep:

'They crowd each other, hustle for a  
chance,

'Tread on their neighbour's kibes, play  
tricks enough!

'Does Bacon, tired of waiting, swerve  
aside?

'Up in his place jumps Barnum—"I'm  
your man,

"I'll answer you for Bacon!" Try once  
more!

Or else it's—"What's a "medium"? He's  
a means,

'Good, bad, indifferent, still the only  
means

'Spirits can speak by; he may misconceive,

'Stutter and stammer,—he's their Sludge  
and drudge,

'Take him or leave him; they must hold  
their peace,

'Or else, put up with having knowledge  
strained

'To half-expression through his ignor-  
ance.

'Suppose, the spirit Beethoven wants to  
shed

'New music he's brimful of; why, he turns

'The handle of this organ, grinds with  
Sludge,

'And what he poured in at the mouth o' the  
mill

'As a Thirty-third Sonata, (fancy now!)

'Comes from the hopper as bran-new  
Sludge, nought else,

'The Shakers' Hymn in G, with a natural  
F,

'Or the "Stars and Stripes" set to conse-  
cutive fourths.'

Sir, where's the scrape you did not help  
me through,

You that are wise? And for the fools, the  
folk

Who came to see,—the guests, (observe  
that word!)

Pray do you find guests criticize your wine,  
Your furniture, your grammar, or your

nose?

Then, why your 'medium'? What's the  
difference?

Prove your madeira red-ink and gam-  
boge,—

Your Sludge, a cheat—then, somebody's  
a goose

For vaunting both as genuine. 'Guests!'  
Don't fear!

They'll make a wry face, nor too much of  
that,

And leave you in your glory.

'No, sometimes

'They doubt and say as much!' Ay,  
doubt they do!

And what's the consequence? 'Of course  
they doubt'—

(You triumph) 'that explains the hitch at  
once!

'Doubt posed our "medium," puddled  
his pure mind;

'He gave them back their rubbish: pitch  
chaff in,

'Could flour come out o' the honest mill?'

So, prompt

Applaud the faithful: cases flock in point,  
'How, when a mocker willed a "medium,"

once

'Should name a spirit James whose name  
was George,

"James" cried the "medium,"—'twas  
the test of truth!

In short, a hit proves much, a miss proves  
more.

Does this convince? The better: does it  
fall?

Time for the double-shotted broadside,  
then—

The grand means, last resource. Look  
black and big!

'You style us idiots, therefore—why stop  
short?

'Accomplices in rascality: this we hear  
'In our own house, from our invited guest

'Found brave enough to outrage a poor  
boy

'Exposed by our good faith! Have you  
been heard?

'Now, then, hear us; one man's not quite  
worth twelve.

'You see a cheat? Here's some twelve see  
an ass

## MR. SLUDGE, 'THE MEDIUM'

'Excuse me if I calculate: good day!'  
Out slinks the sceptic, all the laughs ex-  
plode.  
Sludge waves his hat in triumph!

Or—he don't.  
There's something in real truth (explain  
who can!)  
One casts a wistful eye at, like the horse  
Who mopes beneath stuffed hay-racks and  
won't munch  
Because he spies a corn-bag: hang that  
truth,  
It spoils all dainties proffered in its place!  
I've felt at times when, cockered, cosseted  
And coddled by the aforesaid company,  
Bidden enjoy their bullying,—never fear,  
But o'er their shoulders spit at the flying  
man,—  
I've felt a child; only, a fractious child  
That, dandled soft by nurse, aunt, grand-  
mother,  
Who keep him from the kennel, sun and  
wind,  
Good fun and wholesome mud,—enjoined  
be sweet,  
And comely and superior,—eyes askance  
The ragged sons o' the gutter at their  
game,  
Fain would be down with them i' the thick  
o' the filth,  
Making dirt-pies, laughing free, speaking  
plain,  
And calling granny the grey old cat she is.  
I've felt a spite, I say, at you, at them,  
Huggings and humbug—gnashed my teeth  
to mark  
A decent dog pass! It's too bad, I say,  
Ruining a soul so!

But what's 'so,' what's fixed,  
Where may one stop? Nowhere! The  
cheating's nursed  
Out of the lying, softly and surely spun  
To just your length, sir! I'd stop soon  
enough:  
But you're for progress. 'All old, nothing  
new?  
'Only the usual talking through the  
mouth,  
'Or writing by the hand? I own, I thought  
'This would develop, grow demonstrable,  
'Make doubt absurd, give figures we  
might see,  
'Flowers we might touch. There's no one  
doubts you, Sludge!  
'You dream the dreams, you see the  
spiritual sights,  
'The speeches come in your head, beyond  
dispute.  
'Still, for the sceptics' sake, to stop all  
mouths,  
'We want some outward manifestation!—  
well,

'The Pennsylvanians gained such; why  
not Sludge?  
'He may improve with time!'

Ay, that he may!  
He sees his lot: there's no avoiding fate.  
'Tis a trifle at first. 'Eh, David? Did you  
hear?

'You jogged the table, your foot caused  
the squeak,

'This time you're . . . joking, are you not,  
my boy?

'N-n-no!'—and I'm done for, bought and  
sold henceforth.

The old good easy jog-trot way, the . . . eh?  
The . . . not so very false, as falsehood goes,  
The spinning out and drawing fine, you  
know,—

Really mere novel-writing of a sort,  
Acting, or improvising, make-believe,  
Surely not downright cheaterly,—any how,  
'Tis done with and my lot cast; Cheat's  
my name:

The fatal dash of brandy in your tea  
Has settled what you'll have the sou-  
chong's smack:

The caddy gives way to the dram-bottle.

Then, it's so cruel easy! Oh, those tricks  
That can't be tricks, those feats by sleight  
of hand,

Clearly no common conjuror's!—no in-  
deed!

A conjuror? Choose me any craft i' the  
world

A man puts hand to; and with six months'  
pains

I'll play you twenty tricks miraculous  
To people untaught the trade: have you  
seen glass blown,

Pipes pierced? Why, just this biscuit that  
I chip,

Did you ever watch a baker toss one flat  
To the oven? Try and do it! Take my  
word,

Practise but half as much, while limbs are  
lithe,

To turn, shove, tilt a table, crack your  
joints,

Manage your feet, dispose your hands  
aright,

Work wires that twitch the curtains, play  
the glove

At end o' your slipper,—then put out the  
lights

And . . . there, there, all you want you'll  
get, I hope!

I found it slip, easy as an old shoe.

Now, lights on table again! I've done my  
part,

You take my place while I give thanks  
and rest.

'Well, Judge Humgruffin, what's your  
verdict, sir?

## MR. SLUDGE, 'THE MEDIUM'

'You, hardest head in the United States,—  
'Did you detect a cheat here? Wait! Let's  
see!

'Just an experiment first, for candour's  
sake!

'I'll try and cheat you, Judge! The table  
tilts:

'Is it I that move it? Write! I'll press your  
hand:

'Cry when I push, or guide your pencil,  
Judge!'

Sludge still triumphant! 'That a rap,  
indeed?

'That, the real writing? Very like a whale!

'Then, if, sir, you—a most distinguished  
man,

'And, were the Judge not here, I'd say, . . .  
no matter!

'Well, sir, if you fail, you can't take us  
in,—

'There's little fear that Sludge will!'

Won't he, ma'am?

But what if our distinguished host, like  
Sludge,

Bade God bear witness that he played no  
trick,

While you believed that what produced the  
raps

Was just a certain child who died, you  
know,

And whose last breath you thought your  
lips had felt?

Eh? That's a capital point, ma'am:  
Sludge begins

At your entreaty with your dearest dead,  
The little voice set lisping once again,

The tiny hand made feel for yours once  
more,

The poor lost image brought back, plain as  
dreams,

Which image, if a word had chanced recall,  
The customary cloud would cross your  
eyes,

Your heart return the old tick, pay its  
pang!

A right mood for investigation, this!

One's at one's ease with Saul and Jona-  
than,

Pompey and Cæsar: but one's own lost  
child . . .

I wonder, when you heard the first clod  
drop

From the spadeful at the grave-side, felt  
you free

To investigate who twitched your funeral  
scarf

Or brushed your flounces? Then, it came  
of course

You should be stunned and stupid; then,  
(how else?)

Your breath stopped with your blood,  
your brain struck work.

But now, such causes fail of such effects,

All's changed,—the little voice begins  
afresh,

Yet you, calm, consequent, can test and try  
And touch the truth. 'Tests? Didn't the  
creature tell

'Its nurse's name, and say it lived six years,  
'And rode a rocking-horse? Enough of  
tests!

'Sludge never could learn that!'

He could not, eh?

You compliment him. 'Could not?'

Speak for yourself!

I'd like to know the man I ever saw  
Once,—never mind where, how, why,

when,—once saw,  
Of whom I do not keep some matter in  
mind

He'd swear I 'could not' know, sagacious  
soul!

What? Do you live in this world's blow of  
blacks,

Palaver, gossipry, a single hour  
Nor find one smut has settled on your  
nose,

Of a smut's worth, no more, no less?—one  
fact

Out of the drift of facts, whereby you  
learn

What someone was, somewhere, some-  
when, somehow?

You don't tell folk—'See what has stuck  
to me!

'Judge Humgruffin, our most distin-  
guished man,

'Your uncle was a tailor, and your wife  
'Thought to have married Miggs, missed  
him, hit you!—

Do you, sir, though you see him twice  
a-week?

'No,' you reply, 'what use retailing it?  
'Why should I?' But, you see, one day  
you *should*,

Because one day there's much use,—when  
this fact

Brings you the Judge upon both gouty  
knees

Before the supernatural; proves that  
Sludge

Knows, as you say, a thing he 'could not'  
know:

Will not Sludge thenceforth keep an out-  
stretched face

The way the wind drives?

'Could not!' Look you now,  
I'll tell you a story! There's a whiskered  
chap,

A foreigner, that teaches music here  
And gets his bread,—knowing no better  
way:

He says, the fellow who informed of him  
And made him fly his country and fall  
West

## MR. SLUDGE, 'THE MEDIUM'

Was a hunchback cobbler, sat, stitched  
soles and sang,

In some outlandish place, the city Rome,  
In a cellar by their Broadway, all day long;  
Never asked questions, stopped to listen  
or look,

Nor lifted nose from lapstone; let the  
world

Roll round his three-legged stool, and  
news run in

The ears he hardly seemed to keep pricked  
up.

Well, that man went on Sundays, touched  
his pay,

And took his praise from government, you  
see;

For something like two dollars every week,  
He'd engage tell you some one little thing  
Of some one man, which led to many more,  
(Because one truth leads right to the  
world's end)

And make you that man's master—when  
he dined

And on what dish, where walked to keep  
his health

And to what street. His trade was, throw-  
ing thus

His sense out, like an ant-eater's long  
tongue,

Soft, innocent, warm, moist, impassible,  
And when 'twas crusted o'er with creatures  
—slick,

Their juice enriched his palate. 'Could not  
Sludge!'

I'll go yet a step further, and maintain,  
Once the imposture plunged its proper  
depth

I' the rotten of your natures, all of you,—  
(If one's not mad nor drunk, and hardly  
then)

It's impossible to cheat—that's, be found  
out!

Go tell your brotherhood this first slip of  
mine,

All to-day's tale, how you detected Sludge,  
Behaved unpleasantly, till he was fain  
confess,

And so has come to grief! You'll find, I  
think,

Why Sludge still snaps his fingers in your  
face.

There now, you've told them! What's  
their prompt reply?

'Sir, did that youth confess he had cheated  
me,

'I'd disbelieve him. He may cheat at  
times;

'That's in the "medium"-nature, thus  
they're made,

'Vain and vindictive, cowards, prone to  
scratch.

'And so all cats are; still, a cat's the  
beast

'You coax the strange electric sparks from  
out,

'By rubbing back its fur; not so a dog,  
'Nor lion, nor lamb: 'tis the cat's nature,  
sir!

'Why not the dog's? Ask God, who made  
them beasts!

'D'ye think the sound, the nicely-balanced  
man

'(Like me'—aside)—'like you yourself,'  
—(aloud)

'—He's stuff to make a "medium"? Bless  
your soul,

'Tis these hysteric, hybrid half-and-halves,  
'Equivocal, worthless vermin yield the fire!

'We take such as we find them, 'ware their  
tricks,

'Wanting their service. Sir, Sludge took  
in you—

'How, I can't say, not being there to  
watch:

'He was tried, was tempted by your easi-  
ness,—

'He did not take in me!'

Thank you for Sludge!

I'm to be grateful to such patrons, eh,  
When what you hear's my best word? 'Tis  
a challenge

'Snap at all strangers, half-tamed prairie-  
dog,

'So you cower duly at your keeper's beck!  
'Cat, show what claws were made for,

—muffling them

'Only to me! Cheat others if you can,  
'Me, if you dare!' And, my wise sir, I  
dared—

Did cheat you first, made you cheat others  
next,

And had the help o' your vaunted manli-  
ness

To bully the incredulous. You used me?  
Have not I used you, taken full revenge,

Persuaded folk they knew not their own  
name,

And straight they'd own the error! Who  
was the fool

When, to an awe-struck wide-eyed open-  
mouthed

Circle of sages, Sludge would introduce  
Milton composing baby-rhymes, and  
Locke

Reasoning in gibberish, Homer writing  
Greek

In noughts and crosses, Asaph setting  
psalms

To crotchet and quaver? I've made a spirit  
squeak

In sham voice for a minute, then outbroke  
Bold in my own, defying the imbeciles—

Have copied some ghost's pothooks, half  
a page,

Then ended with my own scrawl undis-  
guised.

## MR. SLUDGE, 'THE MEDIUM'

'All right! The ghost was merely using  
Sludge,  
'Sitting itself from his imperfect stock!'  
Don't talk of gratitude to me! For what?  
For being treated as a showman's ape,  
Encouraged to be wicked and make sport,  
Fret or sulk, grin or whimper, any mood  
So long as the ape be in it and no man—  
Because a nut pays every mood alike.  
Curse your superior, superintending sort,  
Who, since you hate smoke, send up boys  
that climb  
To cure your chimney, bid a 'medium' lie  
To sweep your truth down! Curse your  
women too,  
Your insolent wives and daughters, that  
fire up  
Or faint away if a male hand squeeze theirs,  
Yet, to encourage Sludge, may play with  
Sludge  
As only a 'medium,' only the kind of thing  
They must humour, fondle . . . oh, to mis-  
conceive  
Were too preposterous! But I've paid  
them out!  
They've had their wish—called for the  
naked truth,  
And in she tripped, sat down and bade  
them stare!  
They had to blush a little and forgive!  
'The fact is, children talk so; in next world  
'All our conventions are reversed,—per-  
haps  
'Made light of: something like old prints,  
my dear!  
'The Judge has one, he brought from Italy,  
'A metropolis in the background,—o'er a  
bridge,  
'A team of trotting roadsters,—cheerful  
groups  
'Of wayside travellers, peasants at their  
work,  
'And, full in front, quite unconcerned,  
why not?  
'Three nymphs conversing with a cavalier,  
'And never a rag among them: "fine," folk  
cry—  
'And heavenly manners seem not much  
unlike!  
'Let Sludge go on; we'll fancy it's in  
print!  
If such as came for wool, sir, went home  
shorn,  
Where is the wrong I did them? 'Twas  
their choice;  
They tried the adventure, ran the risk,  
tossed up  
And lost, as some one's sure to do in  
games;  
They fancied I was made to lose,—smoked  
glass  
Useful to spy the sun through, spare their  
eyes:  
And had I proved a red-hot iron plate

They thought to pierce, and, for their  
pains, grew blind,  
Whose were the fault but theirs? While,  
as things go,  
Their loss amounts to gain, the more's the  
shame!  
They've had their peep into the spirit-  
world,  
And all this world may know it! They've  
fed fat  
Their self-conceit which else had starved:  
what chance  
Save this, of cackling o'er a golden egg  
And compassing distinction from the  
flock,  
Friends of a feather? Well, they paid for it,  
And not prodigiously; the price o' the  
play,  
Not counting certain pleasant interludes,  
Was scarce a vulgar play's worth. When  
you buy  
The actor's talent, do you dare propose  
For his soul beside? Whereas my soul you  
buy!  
Sludge acts Macbeth, obliged to be Mac-  
beth,  
Or you'll not hear his first word! Just go  
through  
That slight formality, swear himself's the  
Thane,  
And thenceforth he may strut and fret his  
hour,  
Spout, spawl, or spin his target, no one  
cares!  
Why hadn't I leave to play tricks, Sludge as  
Sludge?  
Enough of it all! I've wiped out scores  
with you—  
Vented your fustian, let myself be streaked  
Like tom-fool with your ochre and car-  
mine,  
Worn patchwork your respectable fingers  
sewed  
To metamorphose somebody,—yes, I've  
earned  
My wages, swallowed down my bread of  
shame,  
And shake the crumbs off—where but in  
your face?  
As for religion—why, I served it, sir!  
I'll stick to that! With my *phenomena*  
I laid the atheist sprawling on his back,  
Propped up Saint Paul, or, at least,  
Swedenborg!  
In fact, it's just the proper way to baulk  
These troublesome fellows—liars, one and  
all,  
Are not these sceptics? Well, to baffle  
them,  
No use in being squeamish: lie yourself!  
Erect your buttress just as wide o' the line,  
Your side, as they build up the wall on  
theirs;

## MR. SLUDGE, 'THE MEDIUM'

Where both meet, midway in a point, is truth

High overhead: so, take your room, pile bricks,

Lie! Oh, there's titillation in all shame! What snow may lose in white, snow gains in rose!

Miss Stokes turns—Rahab,—nor a bad exchange!

Glory be on her, for the good she wrought, Breeding belief anew 'neath ribs of death, Browbeating now the unabashed before, Ridding us of their whole life's gathered straws

By a live coal from the altar! Why, of old, Great men spent years and years in writing books

To prove we've souls, and hardly proved it then:

Miss Stokes with her live coal, for you and me!

Surely, to this good issue, all was fair— Not only fondling Sludge, but, even suppose

He let escape some spice of knavery,— well,

In wisely being blind to it! Don't you praise

Nelson for setting spy-glass to blind eye And saying . . . what was it—that he could not see

The signal he was bothered with? Ay, indeed!

I'll go beyond: there's a real love of a lie, Liars find ready-made for lies they make, As hand for glove, or tongue for sugar-plum.

At best, 'tis never pure and full belief; Those furthest in the quagmire,—don't suppose

They strayed there with no warning, got no chance

Of a filth-speck in their face, which they clenched teeth,

Bent brow against! Be sure they had their doubts,

And fears, and fairest challenges to try The floor o' the seeming solid sand! But no! Their faith was pledged, acquaintance too appraised,

All but the last step ventured, kerchiefs waved,

And Sludge called 'pet': 'twas easier marching on

To the promised land; join those who, Thursday next,

Meant to meet Shakespeare; better follow Sludge—

Prudent, oh sure!—on the alert, how else?—

But making for the mid-bog, all the same! To hear your outcries, one would think I caught

Miss Stokes by the scruff o' the neck, and pitched her flat,

Foolish - face - foremost! Hear these simpletons,

That's all I beg, before my work's begun, Before I've touched them with my fingertip!

Thus they await me (do but listen, now! It's reasoning, this is,—I can't imitate

The baby voice, though) 'In so many tales 'Must be some truth, truth though a pinpoint big,

'Yet, some: a single man's deceived, perhaps—

'Hardly, a thousand: to suppose one cheat 'Can gull all these, were more miraculous far

'Than aught we should confess a miracle'—

And so on. Then the Judge sums up—(it's rare)—

Bids you respect the authorities that leap To the judgment-seat at once,—why don't you note

The limpid nature, the unblemished life, The spotless honour, indisputable sense

Of the first upstart with his story? What— Outrage a boy on whom you ne'er till now

Set eyes, because he finds raps trouble him?

Fools, these are: ay, and how of their opposites

Who never did, at bottom of their hearts, Believe for a moment?—Men emasculate,

Blank of belief, who played, as eunuchs use, With superstition safely,—cold of blood,

Who saw what made for them? the mystery,

Took their occasion, and supported Sludge

—As proselytes? No, thank you, far too shrewd!

—But promisers of fair play, encouragers O' the claimant; who in candour needs

must hoist Sludge up on Mars' Hill, get speech out of Sludge

To carry off, criticize, and cant about! Didn't Athens treat Saint Paul so?—at any rate,

It's 'a new thing' philosophy fumbles at. Then there's the other picker-out of pearl

From dung-heaps,—ay, your literary man, Who draws on his kid gloves to deal with Sludge

Daintily and discreetly,—shakes a dust O' the doctrine, flavours thence, he well

knows how, The narrative or the novel,—half-believes, All for the book's sake, and the public's

stare, And the cash that's God's sole solid in this world!

## MR. SLUDGE, 'THE MEDIUM'

Look at him! Try to be too bold, too gross  
For the master! Not you! He's the man  
for muck;

Shovel it forth, full-splash, he'll smooth  
your brown

Into artistic richness, never fear!  
Find him the crude stuff; when you're recog-  
nize

Your lie again, you'll doff your hat to it,  
Dressed out for company! 'For com-  
pany,'

I say, since there's the relish of success:  
Let all pay due respect, call the lie truth,  
Save the soft silent smirking gentleman  
Who ushered in the stranger: you must  
sigh

'How melancholy, he, the only one  
'Fails to perceive the bearing of the truth  
'Himself' gave birth to!'—There's the  
triumph's smack!

That man would choose to see the whole  
world roll

I' the slime o' the slough, so he might touch  
the tip

Of his brush with what I call the best of  
browns—

Tint ghost-tales, spirit-stories, past the  
power

Of the outworn umber and bistre!

Yet I think

There's a more hateful form of foolery—  
The social sage's, Solomon of saloons  
And philosophic diner-out, the fribble  
Who wants a doctrine for a chopping-  
block

To try the edge of his faculty upon,  
Prove how much common sense he'll hack  
and hew

I' the critical minute 'twixt the soup and  
fish!

These were my patrons: these, and the like  
of them

Who, rising in my soul now, sicken it,—  
These I have injured! Gratitude to these?  
The gratitude, forsooth, of a prostitute  
To the greenhorn and the bully—friends  
of hers,

From the wag that wants the queer jokes  
for his club,

To the snuff-box-decorator, honest man,  
Who just was at his wits' end where to find  
So genial a Pasiphae! All and each  
Pay, compliment, protect from the police:  
And how she hates them for their pains,  
like me!

So much for my remorse at thanklessness  
Toward a deserving public!

But, for God?

Ay, that's a question! Well, sir, since you  
press—

(How you do tease the whole thing out of  
me!

I don't mean you, you know, when I say  
'them':

Hate you, indeed! But that Miss Stokes,  
that Judge!

Enough, enough—with sugar: thank you,  
sir!)

Now for it, then! Will you believe me,  
though?

You've heard what I confess; I don't un-  
say

A single word: I cheated when I could,  
Rapped with my toe-joints, set sham hands  
at work,

Wrote down names weak in sympathetic  
ink,

Rubbed odic lights with ends of phosphor-  
match,

And all the rest; believe that: believe this,  
By the same token, though it seem to set  
The crooked straight again, unsay the said,  
Stick up what I've knocked down; I can't  
help that:

It's truth! I somehow vomit truth to-day.  
This trade of mine—I don't know, can't be  
sure

But there was something in it, tricks and  
all!

Really, I want to light up my own mind.  
They were tricks,—true, but what I mean  
to add

Is also true. First,—don't it strike you,  
sir?

Go back to the beginning,—the first fact  
We're taught is, there's a world beside this  
world,

With spirits, not mankind, for tenantry;  
That much within that world once so-  
journd here,

That all upon this world will visit there,  
And therefore that we, bodily here below,  
Must have exactly such an interest

In learning what may be the ways o' the  
world

Above us, as the disembodied folk  
Have (by all analogic likelihood)

In watching how things go in the old home  
With us, their sons, successors, and what  
not.

Oh yes, with added powers probably,  
Fit for the novel state,—old loves grown  
pure,

Old interests understood aright,—they  
watch!

Eyes to see, ears to hear, and hands to help,  
Proportionate to advancement: they're  
ahead,

That's all—do what we do, but noblier  
done—

Use plate, whereas we eat our meals off  
delf,

(To use a figure).

Concede that, and I ask

Next what may be the mode of intercourse



## MR. SLUDGE, 'THE MEDIUM'

Between us men here, and those once-men there?

First comes the Bible's speech; then, history

With the supernatural element,—you know—

All that we sucked in with our mothers' milk,

Grew up with, got inside of us at last, Till it's found bone of bone and flesh of flesh.

See now, we start with the miraculous, And know it used to be, at all events:

What's the first step we take, and can't but take,

In arguing from the known to the obscure? Why this: 'What was before, may be to-day.

'Since Samuel's ghost appeared to Saul, of course

'My brother's spirit may appear to me.' Go tell your teacher that! What's his reply?

What brings a shade of doubt for the first time

O'er his brow late so luminous with faith?

'Such things have been,' says he, 'and there's no doubt

'Such things may be: but I advise mistrust 'Of eyes, ears, stomach, and, more than all, your brain,

'Unless it be of your great-grandmother, 'Whenever they propose a ghost to you!

The end is, there's a composition struck; 'Tis settled, we've some way of inter-course

Just as in Saul's time; only, different: How, when and where, precisely,—find it out!

I want to know, then, what's so natural As that a person born into this world And seized on by such teaching, should begin

With firm expectancy and a frank look-out For his own allotment, his especial share

I' the secret,—his particular ghost, in fine? I mean, a person born to look that way,

Since natures differ: take the painter-sort. One man lives fifty years in ignorance

Whether grass be green or red,—'No kind of eye

'For colour,' say you; while another picks And puts away even pebbles, when a child,

Because of bluish spots and pinky veins— 'Give him forthwith a paint-box!' Just

the same Was I born . . . 'medium,' you won't let me say,—

Well, seer of the supernatural Everywhen, anyhow and everywhere,—

Will that do?

Only,—what in the rest you style their sense,

Instinct, blind reasoning but imperative, This, betimes, taught them the old world

had one law And ours another: 'New world, new laws,'

cried they: 'None but old laws, seen everywhere at work,'

Cried I, and by their help explained my life The Jews' way, still a working way to me.

Ghosts made the noises, fairies waved the lights,

Or Santa Claus slid down on New Year's Eve

And stuffed with cakes the stocking at my bed,

Changed the worn shoes, rubbed clean the fingered slate

O' the sum that came to grief the day before.

This could not last long: soon enough I found

Who had worked wonders thus, and to what end:

But did I find all easy, like my mates? Henceforth no supernatural any more?

Not a whit: what projects the billiard-balls?

'A cue,' you answer: 'Yes, a cue,' said I; 'But what hand, off the cushion, moved the cue?

'What unseen agency, outside the world, 'Prompted its puppets to do this and that,

'Put cakes and shoes and slates into their mind,

'These mothers and aunts, nay even schoolmasters?'

Thus high I sprang, and there have settled since.

Just so I reason, in sober earnest still, About the greater godsend, what you call

The serious gains and losses of my life. What do I know or care about your world

Which either is or seems to be? This snap O' my fingers, sir! My care is for myself;

Myself am whole and sole reality Inside a raree-show and a market-mob

Gathered about it: that's the use of things. 'Tis easy saying they serve vast purposes,

Advantage their grand selves: be it true or false,

Each thing may have two uses. What's a star?

A world, or a world's sun: doesn't it serve As taper also, time-piece, weather-glass,

And almanac? Are stars not set for signs When we should shear our sheep, sow

corn, prune trees? The Bible says so.

I and all such boys of course Started with the same stock of Bible-truth;

Well, I add one use To all the acknowledged uses, and declare

## MR. SLUDGE, 'THE MEDIUM'

If I spy Charles's Wain at twelve to-night,  
It warns me, 'Go, nor lose another day,  
'And have your hair cut, Sludge!' You  
laugh: and why?

Were such a sign too hard for God to give?  
No: but Sludge seems too little for such  
grace:

Thank you, sir! So you think, so does not  
Sludge!

When you and good men gape at Providence,

Go into history and bid us mark  
Not merely powder-plots prevented,  
crowns

Kept on kings' heads by miracle enough,  
But private mercies—oh, you've told me,  
sir,

Of such interpositions! How yourself  
Once, missing on a memorable day  
Your handkerchief—just setting out, you  
know,—

You must return to fetch it, lost the train,  
And saved your precious self from what,  
befell

The thirty-three whom Providence forgot.  
You tell, and ask me what I think of this?  
Well, sir, I think then, since you needs  
must know,

What matter had you and Boston city to  
boot

Sailed skyward, like burnt onion-peel-  
ings? Much

To you, no doubt: for me—undoubtedly  
The cutting of my hair concerns me more,  
Because, however sad the truth may seem,  
Sludge is of all-importance to himself.

You set apart that day in every year  
For special thanksgiving, were a heathen  
else:

Well, I who cannot boast the like escape,  
Suppose I said 'I don't thank Providence  
'For my part, owing it no gratitude'?

'Nay, but you owe as much'—you'd tutor  
me,

'You, every man alive, for blessings  
gained

'In every hour o' the day, could you but  
know!

'I saw my crowning mercy: all have such,  
'Could they but see!' Well, sir, why don't  
they see?

'Because they won't look,—or perhaps,  
they can't.'

Then, sir, suppose I can, and will, and do  
Look, microscopically as is right,  
Into each hour with its infinitude

Of influences at work to profit Sludge?  
For that's the case: I've sharpened up my  
sight

To spy a providence in the fire's going out,  
The kettle's boiling, the dime's sticking  
fast

Despite the hole i' the pocket. Call such  
facts

Fancies, too petty a work for Providence,  
And those same thanks which you exact  
from me

Prove too prodigious payment: thanks for  
what,

If nothing guards and guides us little men?  
No, no, sir! You must put away your  
pride,

Resolve to let Sludge into partnership!  
I live by signs and omens: looked at the  
roof

Where the pigeons settle—'If the further  
bird,

'The white, takes wing first, I'll confess  
when thrashed;

'Not, if the blue does'—so I said to myself  
Last week, lest you should take me by  
surprise:

Off flapped the white,—and I'm confess-  
ing, sir!

Perhaps 'tis Providence's whim and way  
With only me, i' the world: how can you  
tell?

'Because unlikely!' Was it likelier, now,  
That this our one out of all worlds be-  
side,

The what-d'you-call-'em millions, should  
be just

Precisely chosen to make Adam for,  
And the rest o' the tale? Yet the tale's  
true, you know:

Such undeserving clod was graced so once;  
Why not graced likewise undeserving  
Sludge?

Are we merit-mongers, flaunt we filthy  
rags?

All you can bring against my privilege  
Is, that another way was taken with you,—  
Which I don't question. It's pure grace,  
my luck:

I'm broken to the way of nods and winks,  
And need no formal summoning. You've  
a help;

Holloa his name or whistle, clap your  
hands,

Stamp with your foot or pull the bell: all's  
one,

He understands you want him, here he  
comes.

Just so, I come at the knocking: you, sir,  
wait

The tongue o' the bell, nor stir before you  
catch

Reason's clear tingle, nature's clapper  
brisk,

Or that traditional peal was wont to cheer  
Your mother's face turned heavenward:

short of these  
There's no authentic intimation, eh?

Well, when you hear, you'll answer them,  
start up

And stride into the presence, top of toe,  
And there find Sludge beforehand, Sludge  
that sprang

## MR. SLUDGE, 'THE MEDIUM'

At noise o' the knuckle on the partition-wall!

I think myself the more religious man.  
Religion's all or nothing; it's no mere smile

O' contentment, sigh of aspiration, sir—  
No quality o' the finelier-tempered clay  
Like its whiteness or its lightness; rather, stuff

O' the very stuff, life of life, and self of self.  
I tell you, men won't notice; when they do,  
They'll understand. I notice nothing else:  
I'm eyes, ears, mouth of me, one gaze and gape,

Nothing eludes me, everything's a hint,  
Handle and help. It's all absurd, and yet  
There's something in it all, I know: how much?

No answer! What does that prove?  
Man's still man,

Still meant for a poor blundering piece of work

When all's done; but, if somewhat's done, like this,

Or not done, is the case the same? Suppose  
I blunder in my guess at the true sense

O' the knuckle-summons, nine times out of ten,—

What if the tenth guess happen to be right?  
If the tenth shovel-load of powdered quartz

Yield me the nugget? I gather, crush, sift all,

Pass o'er the failure, pounce on the success.  
To give you a notion, now—(let who wins, laugh!)

When first I see a man, what do I first?  
Why, count the letters which make up his name,

And as their number chances, even or odd,  
Arrive at my conclusion, trim my course:  
Hiram H. Horsefall is your honoured name,

And haven't I found a patron, sir, in you?  
'Shall I cheat this stranger?' I take apple-pips,

Stick one in either canthus of my eye,  
And if the left drops first—(your left, sir, stuck)

I'm warned, I let the trick alone this time.  
You, sir, who smile, superior to such trash,  
You judge of character by other rules:  
Don't your rules sometimes fail you?

Pray, what rule  
Have you judged Sludge by hitherto?

Oh, be sure,  
You, everybody blunders, just as I,  
In simpler things than these by far! For see:

I knew two farmers,—one, a wiseacre  
Who studied seasons, rummaged almanacs,

Quoted the dew-point, registered the frost,

And then declared, for outcome of his pains,

Next summer must be dampish: 'twas a drought.

His neighbour prophesied such drought would fall,

Saved hay and corn, made cent. per cent. thereby,

And proved a sage indeed: how came his lore?

Because one brindled heifer, late in March,  
Stiffened her tail of evenings, and somehow

He got into his head that drought was meant!

I don't expect all men can do as much:  
Such kissing goes by favour. You must take

A certain turn of mind for this,—a twist  
I' the flesh, as well. Be lazily alive,  
Open-mouthed, like my friend the ant-eater,

Letting all nature's loosely-guarded motes  
Settle and, slick, be swallowed! Think yourself

The one i' the world, the one for whom the world

Was made, expect it tickling at your mouth!

Then will the swarm of busy buzzing flies,  
Clouds of coincidence, break egg-shell, thrive,

Breed, multiply, and bring you food enough.

I can't pretend to mind your smiling, sir!  
Oh, what you mean is this! Such intimate way,

Close converse, frank exchange of offices,  
Strict sympathy of the immeasurably great  
With the infinitely small, betokened here  
By a course of signs and omens, raps and sparks,—

How does it suit the dread traditional text  
O' the 'Great and Terrible Name'? Shall the Heaven of Heavens

Stoop to such child's play?

Please, sir, go with me  
A moment, and I'll try to answer you.

The '*Magnum et terribile*' (is that right?)  
Well, folk began with this in the early day:

And all the acts they recognized in proof  
Were thunders, lightnings, earthquakes, whirlwinds, dealt

Indisputably on men whose death they caused.

There, and there only, folk saw Providence  
At work,—and seeing it, 'twas right enough

All heads should tremble, hands wring hands amain,

And knees knock hard together at the breath

## MR. SLUDGE, 'THE MEDIUM'

O' the Name's first letter; why, the Jews,  
I'm told,  
Won't write it down, no, to this very hour,  
Nor speak aloud: you know best if't be so.  
Each agree-fit of fear at end, they crept  
(Because somehow people once born must  
live)

Out of the sound, sight, swing and sway o'  
the Name,

Into a corner, the dark rest of the world,  
And safe space where as yet no fear had  
reached;

'Twas there they looked about them,  
breathed again,

And felt indeed at home, as we might say.  
The current o' common things, the daily  
life,

This had their due contempt; no Name  
pursued

Man from the mountain-top where fires  
abide,

To his particular mouse-hole at its foot  
Where he ate, drank, digested, lived in,  
short:

Such was man's vulgar business, far too  
small

To be worth thunder: 'small,' folk kept on,  
'small,'

With much complacency in those great  
days!

A mote of sand, you know, a blade of  
grass—

What was so despicable as mere grass,  
Except perhaps the life o' the worm or fly  
Which fed there? These were 'small' and  
men were great.

Well, sir, the old way's altered somewhat  
since,

And the world wears another aspect now:  
Somebody turns our spyglass round, or  
else

Puts a new lens in it: grass, worm, fly grow  
big:

We find great things are made of little  
things,

And little things go lessening till at last  
Comes God behind them. Talk of moun-  
tains now?

We talk of mould that heaps the mountain,  
mites

That throng the mould, and God that  
makes the mites.

The Name comes close behind a stomach-  
cyst,

The simplest of creations, just a sac  
That's mouth, heart, legs and belly at  
once, yet lives

And feels, and could do neither, we con-  
clude,

If simplified still further one degree:  
The small becomes the dreadful and im-  
mense!

Lightning, forsooth? No word more upon  
that!

A tin-foil bottle, a strip of greasy silk,  
With a bit of wire and knob of brass, and  
there's

Your dollar's-worth of lightning! But the  
cyst—

The life of the least of the little things?

•

No, no!  
Preachers and teachers try another tack,  
Come near the truth this time: they put  
aside

Thunder and lightning: 'That's mistake,'  
they cry,

'Thunderbolts fall for neither fright nor  
sport,

'But do appreciable good, like tides,  
'Changes o' the wind, and other natural  
facts—

“‘Good’ meaning good to man, his body  
or soul.

'Mediate, immediate, all things minister  
'To man,—that's settled: be our future  
text

“‘We are His children!’” So, they now  
harangue

About the intention, the contrivance, all  
That keeps up an incessant play of love,—  
See the Bridgewater book.

Amen to it!

Well, sir, I put this question: I'm a child?  
I lose no time, but take you at your word:  
How shall I act a child's part properly?  
Your sainted mother, sir,—used you to  
live

With such a thought as this a-worrying  
you?

'She has it in her power to throttle me,  
'Or stab or poison: she may turn me out,  
'Or lock me in,—nor stop at this, to-day,  
'But cut me off to-morrow from the estate

'I look for'—(long may you enjoy it, sir!)  
'In brief, she may unchild the child I am.'

You never had such crotchets? Nor have I!  
Who, frank confessing childship from the  
first,

Cannot both fear and take my ease at once,  
So, don't fear,—know what might be, well  
enough,

But know too, child-like, that it will not be,  
At least in my case, mine, the son and heir

O' the kingdom, as yourself proclaim my  
style.

But do you fancy I stop short at this?  
Wonder if suit and service, son and heir

Needs must expect, I dare pretend to find?  
If, looking for signs proper to such an one,

I straight perceive them irresistible?  
Concede that homage is a son's plain right,

And, never mind the nods and raps and  
winks,

'Tis the pure obvious supernatural  
Steps forward, does its duty: why, of  
course!

## MR. SLUDGE, 'THE MEDIUM'

I have presentiments; my dreams come true:

I fancy a friend stands whistling all in white

Blithe as a boblink, and he's dead I learn.

I take dislike to a dog my favourite long,  
And sell him; he goes mad next week and snaps.

I guess that stranger will turn up to-day  
I have not seen these three years; there's his knock.

I wager 'sixty peaches on that tree!'—  
That I pick up a dollar in my walk,  
That your wife's brother's cousin's name  
was George—

And win on all points. Oh, you wince at this?

You'd fain distinguish between gift and gift,

Washington's oracle and Sludge's itch  
O' the elbow when at whist! he ought to trump?

With Sludge it's too absurd? *Fine, draw the line*  
*Somewhere, but, sir, your somewhere is not mine!*

Bless us, I'm turning poet! It's time to end.

How you have drawn me out, sir! All I ask

Is—am I heir or not heir? If I'm he,  
Then, sir, remember, that same personage  
(To judge by what we read i' the news-  
paper)

Requires, beside one nobleman in gold  
To carry up and down his coronet,  
Another servant, probably a duke,  
To hold egg-nogg in readiness: why want  
Attendance, sir, when helps in his father's  
house

Abound, I'd like to know?

Enough of talk!

My fault is that I tell too plain a truth.  
Why, which of those who say they dis-  
believe,

Your clever people, but has dreamed his  
dream,

Caught his coincidence, stumbled on his  
fact

He can't explain, (he'll tell you smilingly)  
Which he's too much of a philosopher

To count as supernatural, indeed,  
So calls a puzzle and problem, proud of it:  
Bidding you still be on your guard, you  
know,

Because one fact don't make a system  
stand,

Nor prove this an occasional escape  
Of spirit beneath the matter: that's the  
way!

Just so wild Indians picked up, piece by  
piece,

The fact in California, the fine gold  
That underlay the gravel—hoarded these,  
But never made a system stand, nor dug!  
So wise men hold out in each hollowed  
palm

A handful of experience, sparkling fact  
They can't explain; and since their rest of  
life

Is all explainable, what proof in this?  
Whereas I take the fact, the grain of gold,  
And fling away the dirty rest of life,  
And add this grain to the grain each fool  
has found

O' the million other such philosophers,—  
Till I see gold, all gold and only gold,  
Truth questionless though unexplainable,  
And the miraculous proved the common-  
place!

The other fools believed in mud, no  
doubt—

Failed to know gold they saw: was that so  
strange?

Are all men born to play Bach's fiddle-  
fugues,

'Time' with the foil in carte, jump their  
own height,

Cut the mutton with the broadsword,  
skate a five,

Make the red hazard with the cue, clip  
nails

While swimming, in five minutes row a  
mile,

Pull themselves three feet up with the left  
arm,

Do sums of fifty figures in their head,  
And so on, by the scores of instances?

The Sludge with luck, who sees the spiri-  
tual facts

His fellows strive and fail to see, may rank  
With these, and share the advantage.

Ay, but share

The drawback! Think it over by yourself;  
I have not heart, sir, and the fire's gone  
grey.

Defect somewhere compensates for suc-  
cess,

Everyone knows that. Oh, we're equals,  
sir!

The big-legged fellow has a little arm  
And a less brain, though big legs win the  
race:

Do you suppose I 'scape the common lot?  
Say, I was born with flesh so sensitive,

Soul so alert, that, practice helping both,  
I guess what's going on outside the veil,  
Just as a prisoned crane feels pairing-time  
In the islands where his kind are, so must  
fall

To capering by himself some shiny night,  
As if your back-yard were a plot of spice—

Thus am I 'ware o' the spirit-world: while  
you,

Blind as a beetle that way,—for amends,

## MR. SLUDGE, 'THE MEDIUM'

Why, you can double fist and floor me, sir!  
Ride that hot hardmouthed horrid horse  
of yours,  
Laugh while it lightens, play with the great  
dog,  
Speak your mind though it vex some friend  
to hear,  
Never brag, never bluster, never blush,—  
In short, you've pluck, when I'm a coward  
—there!

I know it, I can't help it,—folly or no,  
I'm paralyzed, my hand 's no more a hand,  
Nor my head a head, in danger: you can  
smile

And change the pipe in your cheek. Your  
gift 's not mine.

Would you swap for mine? No! but you'd  
add my gift

To yours: I dare say! I too sigh at times,  
Wish I were stouter, could tell truth nor  
flinch,

Kept cool when threatened, did not mind  
so much

Being dressed gaily, making strangers  
stare,

Eating nice things; when I'd amuse my-  
self,

I shut my eyes and fancy in my brain  
I'm—now the President, now Jenny Lind,

Now Emerson, now the Benicia Boy—  
With all the civilized world a-wondering

And worshipping. I know it's folly and  
worse;

I feel such tricks sap, honeycomb the soul,  
But I can't cure myself: despond, despair,

And then, hey, presto, there 's a turn o' the  
wheel,

Under comes uppermost, fate makes full  
amends;

Sludge knows and sees and hears a hun-  
dred things

You all are blind to,—I've my taste of truth,  
Likewise my touch of falsehood,—vice no

doubt,  
But you've your vices also: I'm content.

What, sir? You won't shake hands? 'Be-  
cause I cheat!'

'You've found me out in cheating!'  
That's enough

To make an apostle swear! Why, when I  
cheat,

*Mean to cheat, do cheat, and am caught in  
the act,*

*Are you, or, rather, am I sure o' the fact?*  
(There's verse again, but I'm inspired  
somehow.)

Well then I'm not sure! I may be, perhaps,  
Free as a babe from cheating; how it began,

My gift,—no matter; what 'tis got to be  
In the end now, that's the question;

answer that!

Had I seen, perhaps, what hand was hold-  
ing mine,

Leading me whither, I had died of fright:  
So, I was made believe I led myself.

If I should lay a six-inch plank from roof  
To roof, you would not cross the street, one

step,  
Even at your mother's summons: but,

being shrewd,  
If I paste paper on each side the plank

And swear 'tis solid pavement, why, you'll  
cross

Humming a tune the while, in ignorance  
Beacon Street stretches a hundred feet

below:  
I walked thus, took the paper-cheat for

stone.  
Some impulse made me set a thing o' the

move  
Which, started once, ran really by itself;

Beer flows thus, suck the siphon; toss the  
kite,

It takes the wind and floats of its own force.  
Don't let truth's lump rot stagnant for the

lack  
Of a timely helpful lie to leaven it!

Put a chalk-egg beneath the clucking hen,  
She'll lay a real one, laudably deceived,

Daily for weeks to come. I've told my lie,  
And seen truth follow, marvels none of

mine;  
All was not cheating, sir, I'm positive!

I don't know if I move your hand some-  
times

When the spontaneous writing spreads so  
far,

If my knee lifts the table all that height,  
Why the inkstand don't fall off the desk

a-tilt,  
Why the accordian plays a prettier waltz

Than I can pick out on the piano-forte,  
Why I speak so much more than I intend,

Describe so many things I never saw.  
I tell you, sir, in one sense, I believe

Nothing at all,—that everybody can,  
Will, and does cheat: but in another sense

I'm ready to believe my very self—  
That every cheat 's inspired, and every lie

Quick with a germ of truth.

You ask perhaps  
Why I should condescend to trick at all

If I know a way without it? This is why!  
There's a strange secret sweet self-sacrifice

In any desecration of one's soul  
To a worthy end,—isn't it Herodotus

(I wish I could read Latin!) who describes  
The single gift o' the land's virginity,

Demanded in those old Egyptian rites,  
(I've but a hazy notion—help me, sir!)

For one purpose in the world, one day in a  
life,

One hour in a day—thereafter, purity,  
And a veil thrown o'er the past for ever-

more!  
Well, now, they understand a many things

## MR. SLUDGE, 'THE MEDIUM'

Down by Nile city, or wherever it was!  
I've always vowed, after the minute's lie,  
And the end's gain,—truth should be mine  
henceforth.

This goes to the root o' the matter, sir,—  
this plain

Plump fact: accept it and unlock with it  
The wards of many a puzzle!

Or, finally,  
Why should I set so fine a gloss on things?  
What need I care? I cheat in self-defence,  
And there's my answer to a world of  
cheats!

Cheat? To be sure, sir! What's the world  
worth else?

Who takes it as he finds, and thanks his  
stars?

Don't it want trimming, turning, furbish-  
ing up

And polishing over? Your so-styled great  
men,

Do they accept one truth as truth is found,  
Or try their skill at tinkering? What's  
your world?

Here are you born, who are, I'll say at  
once,

Of the luckiest kind, whether in head and  
heart,

Body and soul, or all that helps them both.  
Well, now, look back: what faculty of  
yours

Came to its full, had ample justice done  
By growing when rain fell, biding its time,

Solidifying growth when earth was dead,  
Spiring up, broadening wide, in seasons  
due?

Never! You shot up and frost nipped you  
off,

Settled to sleep when sunshine bade you  
sprout;

One faculty thwarted its fellow: at the end,  
All you boast is 'I had proved a topping  
tree

'In other climes'—yet this was the right  
clime

Had you foreknown the seasons. Young,  
you've force

Wasted like well-streams: old,—oh, then  
indeed,

Behold a labyrinth of hydraulic pipes  
Through which you'd play off wondrous  
waterwork;

Only, no water's left to feed their play.  
Young,—you've a hope, an aim, a love:  
it's tossed

And crossed and lost: you struggle on,  
some spark

Shut in your heart against the puffs  
around,

Through cold and pain; these in due time  
subside,

Now then for age's triumph, the hoarded  
light

You mean to loose on the altered face of  
things,—

Up with it on the tripod! It's extinct.  
Spend your life's remnant asking, which  
was best,

Light smothered up that never peeped  
forth once,

Or the cold cresset with full leave to shine?  
Well, accept this too,—seek the fruit of it  
Not in enjoyment, proved a dream on  
earth,

But knowledge, useful for a second chance,  
Another life,—you've lost this world—  
you've gained

Its knowledge for the next. What know-  
ledge, sir,

Except that you know nothing? Nay, you  
doubt

Whether 'twere better have made you man  
or brute,

If aught be true, if good and evil clash.  
No foul, no fair, no inside, no outside,  
There's your world!

Give it me! I slap it brisk  
With harlequin's pasteboard sceptre:  
what's it now?

Changed like a rock-flat, rough with rusty  
weed,

At first wash-over o' the returning wave!  
All the dry dead impracticable stuff  
Starts into life and light again; this world  
Pervaded by the influx from the next.

I cheat, and what's the happy conse-  
quence?

You find full justice straightway dealt you  
out,

Each want supplied, each ignorance set at  
ease,

Each folly fooled. No life-long labour now  
As the price of worse than nothing! No  
mere film

Holding you chained in iron, as it seems,  
Against the outstretch of your very arms  
And legs i' the sunshine moralists forbid!

What would you have? Just speak and,  
there, you see!

You're supplemented, made a whole at  
last,

Bacon advises, Shakespeare writes you  
songs,

And Mary Queen of Scots embraces you.  
Thus it goes on, not quite like life perhaps,  
But so near, that the very difference piques,  
Shows that e'en better than this best will  
be—

This passing entertainment in a hut  
Whose bare walls take your taste since, one  
stage more,

And you arrive at the palace: all half real,  
And you, to suit it, less than real beside,  
In a dream, lethargic kind of death in life,  
That helps the interchange of natures,  
flesh

## MR. SLUDGE, 'THE MEDIUM'

Transfused by souls, and such souls! Oh,  
'tis choice!

And if at whiles the bubble, blown too  
thin,

Seem nigh on bursting,—if you nearly see  
The real world through the false,—what  
do you see?

Is the old so ruined? You find you're in a  
flock

O' the youthful, earnest, passionate—  
genius, beauty,

Rank and wealth also, if you care for  
these:

And all depose their natural rights, hail  
you,

(That's me, sir) as their mate and yoke-  
fellow,

Participate in Sludgehood—nay, grow  
mine,

I veritably possess them—banish doubt,  
And reticence and modesty alike!

Why, here's the Golden Age, old Paradise  
Or new Eutopia! Here's true life indeed,

And the world well won now, mine for the  
first time!

And all this might be, may be, and with  
good help

Of a little lying shall be: so, Sludge lies!  
Why, he's at worst your poet who sings

how Greeks  
That never were, in Troy which never was,

Did this or the other impossible great  
thing!

He's Lowell—it's a world (you smile  
applause)

Of his own invention—wondrous Long-  
fellow,

Surprising Hawthorne! Sludge does more  
than they,

And acts the books they write: the more his  
praise!

But why do I mount to poets? Take plain  
prose—

Dealers in common sense, set these at  
work,

What can they do without their helpful  
lies?

Each states the law and fact and face o' the  
thing

Just as he'd have them, finds what he  
thinks fit,

Is blind to what missuits him, just records  
What makes his case out, quite ignores the

rest.  
It's a History of the World, the Lizard

Age,  
The Early Indians, the Old Country War,

Jerome Napoleon, whatsoever you please,  
All as the author wants it. Such a scribe

You pay and praise for putting life in  
stones,

Fire into fog, making the past your world.

There's plenty of 'How did you contrive  
to grasp

'The thread which led you through this  
labyrinth?

'How build such solid fabric out of air?  
'How on so slight foundation found this

tale,  
'Biography, narrative?' or, in other

words,  
'How many lies did it require to make

'The portly truth you here present us  
with?'

'Oh,' quoth the penman, purring at your  
praise,

'Tis fancy all; no particle of fact:  
'I was poor and threadbare when I wrote

that book  
"Bliss in the Golden City." I, at Thebes?

'We writers paint out of our heads, you  
see!'

'—Ah, the more wonderful the gift in  
you,

'The more creativeness and godlike craft!'  
But I, do I present you with my piece,

It's 'What, Sludge? When my sainted  
mother spoke

'The verses Lady Jane Grey last com-  
posed

'About the rosy bower in the seventh  
heaven

'Where she and Queen Elizabeth keep  
house,—

'You made the raps? 'Twas your inven-  
tion that?

'Cur, slave and devil!'—eight fingers and  
two thumbs

Stuck in my throat!

Well, if the marks seem gone,  
'Tis because stiffish cock-tail, taken in

time,  
Is better for a bruise than arnica.

There, sir! I bear no malice: 'tisn't in me.  
I know I acted wrongly: still, I've tried

What I could say in my excuse,—to show  
The devil's not all devil... I don't pretend,

He's angel, much less such a gentleman  
As you, sir! And I've lost you, lost myself,

Lost all-l-l-l- . . .

No—are you in earnest, sir?  
O yours, sir, is an angel's part! I know

What prejudice prompts, and what's the  
common course

Men take to soothe their ruffled self-con-  
ceit:

Only you rise superior to it all!  
No, sir, it don't hurt much; it's speaking

long  
That makes me choke a little: the marks

will go!  
What? Twenty V-notes more, and outfit

too,  
And not a word to Greeley? One—one kiss



## MR. SLUDGE, 'THE MEDIUM'

O' the hand that saves me! You'll not let  
me speak,  
I well know, and I've lost the right, too  
true!  
But I must say, sir, if She hears (she does)  
Your sainted . . . Well, sir,—be it so!  
That's, I think,  
My bed-room candle. Good-night!  
Bl-l-less you, sir!

R-r-r, you brute-beast and blackguard!  
Cowardly scamp!  
I only wish I dared burn down the house  
And spoil your sniggering! Oh what,  
you're the man?  
You're satisfied at last? You've found out  
Sludge?  
We'll see that presently: my turn, sir, next!  
I too can tell my story: brute,—do you  
hear?  
You throttled your sainted mother, that  
old hag,  
In just such a fit of passion: no, it was . . .  
To get this house of hers, and many a note  
Like these . . . I'll pocket them, however  
. . . five,  
Ten, fifteen . . . ay, you gave her throat  
the twist,  
Or else you poisoned her! Confound the  
cuss!  
Where was my head? I ought to have pro-  
phesied  
He'll die in a year and join her: that's the  
way.

I don't know where my head is: what had  
I done?  
How did it all go? I said he poisoned her,  
And hoped he'd have grace given him to  
repent,  
Whereon he picked this quarrel, bullied  
me  
And called me cheat: I thrashed him,—  
who could help?  
He howled for mercy, prayed me on his  
knees  
To cut and run and save him from dis-  
grace:  
I do so, and once off, he slanders me.  
An end of him! Begin elsewhere anew!  
Boston's a hole, the herring-pond is wide,  
V-notes are something, liberty still more.  
Beside, is he the only fool in the world?

## APPARENT FAILURE

'We shall soon lose a celebrated building.' *Paris  
Newspaper.*

### I

No, for I'll save it! Seven years since,  
I passed through Paris, stopped a day  
To see the baptism of your Prince;  
Saw, made my bow, and went my way:

Walking the heat and headache off,  
I took the Seine-side, you surmise,  
Thought of the Congress, Gortschakoff,  
Cavour's appeal and Buol's replies,  
So sauntered till—what met my eyes?

### II

Only the Doric little Morgue!  
The dead-house where you show your  
drowned:  
Petrarch's Vauclose makes proud the  
Sorgue,  
Your Morgue has made the Seine re-  
nowned.  
One pays one's debt in such a case;  
I plucked up heart and entered,—  
stalked,  
Keeping a tolerable face  
Compared with some whose cheeks  
were chalked:  
Let them! No Briton's to be baulked!

### III

First came the silent gazers; next,  
A screen of glass, we're thankful for;  
Last, the sight's self, the sermon's text,  
The three men who did most abhor  
Their life in Paris yesterday,  
So killed themselves: and now, en-  
throned  
Each on his copper couch, they lay  
Fronting me, waiting to be owned.  
I thought, and think, their sin's atoned.

### IV

Poor men, God made, and all for that!  
The reverence struck me; o'er each head  
Religiously was hung its hat,  
Each coat dripped by the owner's bed,  
Sacred from touch: each had his berth,  
His bounds, his proper place of rest,  
Who last night tenanted on earth  
Some arch, where twelve such slept  
abreast,—  
Unless the plain asphalté seemed best.

### V

How did it happen, my poor boy?  
You wanted to be Buonaparte  
And have the Tuileries for toy,  
And could not, so it broke your heart?  
You, old one by his side, I judge,  
Were, red as blood, a socialist,  
A leveller! Does the Empire grudge  
You've gained what no Republic  
missed?  
Be quiet, and unclench your fist!

### VI

And this—why, he was red in vain,  
Or black,—poor fellow that is blue!  
What fancy was it turned your brain?  
Oh, women were the prize for you!

## APPARENT FAILURE

Money gets women, cards and dice  
Get money, and ill-luck gets just  
The copper couch and one clear nice  
Cool squirt of water o'er your bust,  
The right thing to extinguish lust!

### VII

It's wiser being good than bad;  
It's safer being meek than fierce:  
It's fitter being sane than mad.  
My own hope is, a sun will pierce  
The thickest cloud earth ever stretched;  
That, after Last, returns the First,  
Though a wide compass round be fetched;  
That what began best, can't end worst,  
Nor what God blessed once, prove accurst.

## EPILOGUE

FIRST SPEAKER, *as David*.

### I

ON the first of the Feast of Feasts,  
The Dedication Day,  
When the Levites joined the Priests  
At the Altar in robed array,  
Gave signal to sound and say,—

### II

When the thousands, rear and van,  
Swarming with one accord  
Became as a single man  
(Look, gesture, thought and word)  
In praising and thanking the Lord,—

### III

When the singers lift up their voice,  
And the trumpets made endeavour,  
Sounding, 'In God rejoice!'  
Saying, 'In Him rejoice  
'Whose mercy endureth for ever!'

### IV

Then the Temple filled with a cloud,  
Even the House of the Lord;  
Porch bent and pillar bowed:  
For the presence of the Lord,  
In the glory of His cloud,  
Had filled the House of the Lord.

SECOND SPEAKER, *as Renan*.

Gone now! All gone across the dark so  
far,  
Sharpening fast, shuddering ever, shut-  
ting still,  
Dwindling into the distance, dies that star  
Which came, stood, opened once! We  
gazed our fill  
With upturned faces on as real a Face  
That, stooping from grave music and  
mild fire,  
Took in our homage, made a visible place  
Through many a depth of glory, gyre on  
gyre,

For the dim human tribute. Was this true?  
Could man indeed avail, mere praise of  
his,

To help by rapture God's own rapture too,  
Thrill with a heart's red tinge that pure  
pale bliss?

Why did it end? Who failed to beat the  
breast,

And shriek, and throw the arms protest-  
ing wide,

When a first shadow showed the star  
addressed

Itself to motion, and on either side  
The rims contracted as the rays retired;

The music, like a fountain's sickening  
pulse,

Subsided on itself; awhile transpired  
Some vestige of a Face no pangs con-  
vulse,

No prayers retard; then even this was  
gone,

Lost in the night at last. We, lone and  
left

\* Silent through centuries, ever and anon  
Venture to probe again the vault bereft

Of all now save the lesser lights, a mist  
Of multitudinous points, yet suns, men

say—

And this leaps ruby, this lurks amethyst,  
But where may hide what came and

loved our clay?

How shall the sage detect in yon expanse  
The star which chose to stoop and stay

for us?

Unroll the records! Hailed ye such ad-  
vance

Indeed, and did your hope vanish thus?  
Watchers of twilight, is the worst averred?

We shall not look up, know ourselves  
are seen,

Speak, and be sure that we again are heard,  
Acting or suffering, have the disk's

serene

Reflect our life, absorb an earthly flame,  
Nor doubt that, were mankind inert

and numb,

Its core had never crimsoned all the same,  
Nor, missing ours, its music fallen

dumb?

Oh, dread succession to a dizzy post,  
Sad sway of sceptre whose mere touch

appals,

Ghastly dethronement, cursed by those  
the most

On whose repugnant brow the crown  
next falls!

THIRD SPEAKER.

### I

Witless alike of will and way divine,  
How heaven's high with earth's low should

intertwine!

Friends, I have seen through your eyes:  
now use mine!

## EPILOGUE

### II

Take the least man of all mankind, as I;  
Look at his head and heart, find how and  
why  
He differs from his fellows utterly:

### III

Then, like me, watch when nature by de-  
grees  
Grows alive round him, as in Arctic seas  
(They said of old) the instinctive water  
flees

### IV

Toward some elected point of central rock,  
As though, for its sake only, roamed the  
flock  
Of waves about the waste: awhile they  
mock

### V

With radiance caught for the occasion,—  
hues  
Of blackest hell now, now such reds and  
blues  
As only heaven could fitly interfuse,—

### VI

The mimic monarch of the whirlpool, king  
O' the current for a minute: then they  
wring  
Up by the roots and oversweep the thing,

### VII

And hasten off, to play again elsewhere  
The same part, choose another peak as  
bare.  
They find and flatter, feast and finish there.

### VIII

When you see what I tell you,—nature  
dance  
About each man of us, retire, advance,  
As though the pageant's end were to en-  
hance

### IX

His worth, and—once the life, his product,  
gained—  
Roll away elsewhere, keep the strife sus-  
tained,  
And show thus real, a thing the North but  
feigned—

### X

When you acknowledge that one world  
could do  
All the diverse work, old yet ever new,  
Divide us, each from other, me from  
you,—

### XI

Why, where's the need of Temple, when  
the walls  
O' the world are that? What use of swells  
and falls  
From Levites' choir, Priests' cries, and  
trumpet-calls?

### XII

That one Face, far from vanish, rather  
grows,  
Or decomposes but to recompose,  
Become my universe that feels and knows.

## From 'FIFINE AT THE FAIR'

1872

### PROLOGUE

#### AMPHIBIAN

### I

THE fancy I had to-day,  
Fancy which turned a fear!  
I swam far out in the bay,  
Since waves laughed warm and clear.

### II

I lay and looked at the sun,  
The noon-sun looked at me:  
Between us two, no one  
Live creature, that I could see.

### III

Yes! There came floating by  
Me, who lay floating too,  
Such a strange butterfly!  
Creature as dear as new:

### IV

Because the membraned wings  
So wonderful, so wide,  
So sun-suffused, were things  
Like soul and nought beside.

### V

A handbreadth over head!  
All of the sea my own,  
It owned the sky instead;  
Both of us were alone.

### VI

I never shall join its flight,  
For, nought buoys flesh in air.  
If it touch the sea—good night!  
Death sure and swift waits there.

### VII

Can the insect feel the better  
For watching the uncouth play  
Of limbs that slip the fetter,  
Pretend as they were not clay?

VIII

Undoubtedly I rejoice  
That the air comports so well  
With a creature which had the choice  
Of the land once. Who can tell?

IX

What if a certain soul  
Which early slipped its sheath,  
And has for its home the whole  
Of heaven, thus look beneath,

X

Thus watch one who, in the world,  
Both lives and likes life's way,  
Nor wishes the wings unfurled  
That sleep in the worm, they say?

XI

But sometimes when the weather  
Is blue, and warm waves tempt  
To free oneself of tether,  
And try a life exempt

XII

From worldly noise and dust,  
In the sphere which overbrims  
With passion and thought,—why, just  
Unable to fly, one swims!

XIII

By passion and thought upborne,  
One smiles to oneself—'They fare  
Scarce better, they need not scorn  
Our sea, who live in the air!'

XIV

Emancipate through passion  
And thought, with sea for sky,  
We substitute, in a fashion,  
For heaven—poetry:

XV

Which sea, to all intent,  
Gives flesh such noon-disport  
As a finer element  
Affords the spirit-sort.

XVI

Whatever they are, we seem:  
Imagine the thing they know;  
All deeds they do, we dream;  
Can heaven be else but so?

XVII

And meantime, yonder streak  
Meets the horizon's verge;  
That is the land, to seek  
If we tire or dread the surge:

XVIII

Land the solid and safe—  
To welcome again (confess!)  
When, high and dry, we chafe  
The body, and don the dress.

XIX

Does she look, pity, wonder  
At one who mimics flight,  
Swims—heaven above, sea under,  
Yet always earth in sight?

EPILOGUE

THE HOUSEHOLDER

I

**SAVAGE** I was sitting in my house, late, lone:  
Dreary, weary with the long day's work:  
Head of me, heart of me, stupid as a stone:  
Tongue-tied now, now blaspheming like  
a Turk;  
When, in a moment, just a knock, call, cry,  
Half a pang and all a rapture, there  
again were we!—  
'What, and is it really you again?' quoth I:  
'I again, what else did you expect?'  
quoth She.

II

'Never mind, hie away from this old  
house—  
Every crumbling brick embrowned with  
sin and shame!  
Quick, in its corners ere certain shapes  
arouse!  
Let them—every devil of the night—lay  
claim,  
Make and mend, or rap and rend, for me!  
Good-bye!  
God be their guard from disturbance at  
their glee,  
Till, crash, comes down the carcass in a  
heap!' quoth I:  
'Nay, but there's a decency required!'  
quoth She.

III

'Ah, but if you knew how time has  
dragged, days, nights!  
All the neighbour-talk with man and  
maid—such men!  
All the fuss and trouble of street-sounds,  
window-sights:  
All the worry of flapping door and echo-  
ing roof; and then,  
All the fancies . . . Who were they had  
leave, dared try  
Darker arts that almost struck despair  
in me?  
If you knew but how I dwelt down here!'  
quoth I:  
'And was I so better off up there?'  
quoth She.

IV

'Help and get it over! *Re-united to his wife*  
(How draw up the paper lets the parish-  
people know?)  
*Lies M., or N., departed from this life,*  
*Day the this or that, month and year the*  
*so and so.*  
What is the way of final flourish? Prose,  
verse? Try!  
*Affliction sore long time he bore, or, what*  
*is it to be?*  
*Till God did please to grant him ease. Do*  
*end!*' quoth I:  
'I end with—Love is all and Death is  
nought!' quoth She.

# PACCHIAROTTO

AND  
HOW HE WORKED IN DISTEMPER

ET CETERA

1876

## PROLOGUE

### I

O THE old wall here! How I could pass  
Life in a long Midsummer day,  
My feet confined to a plot of grass,  
My eyes from a wall not once away!

### II

And lush and lithe do the creepers clothe  
Yon wall I watch, with a wealth of  
green:  
Its bald red bricks draped, nothing loth,  
In lappets of tangle they laugh between.

### III

Now, what is it makes pulsate the robe?  
Why tremble the sprays? What life o'er-  
brims  
The body,—the house, no eye can  
probe,—  
Divined as, beneath a robe, the limbs?

### IV

And there again! But my heart may guess  
Who tripped behind; and she sang per-  
haps:  
So, the old wall throbbed, and its life's  
excess  
Died out and away in the leafy wraps.

### V

Wall upon wall are between us: life  
And song should away from heart to  
heart.  
I—prison-bird, with a ruddy strife  
At breast, and a lip whence storm-notes  
start—

### VI

Hold on, hope hard in the subtle thing  
That's spirit: though cloistered fast,  
soar free;  
Account as wood, brick, stone, this ring  
Of the rueful neighbours, and—forth to  
thee!

## OF PACCHIAROTTO, AND HOW HE WORKED IN DISTEMPER

### I

QUERY: was ever a quainter  
Crotchet than this of the painter  
Giacomo Pacchiarotto  
Who took 'Reform' for his motto?

### II

He, pupil of old Fungaio,  
Is always confounded (heigho!)  
With Pacchia, contemporaneous  
No question, but how extraneous  
In the grace of soul, the power  
Of hand,—undoubted dower  
Of Pacchia who decked (as we know,  
My Kirkup!) San Bernardino,  
Turning the small! dark Oratory  
To Siena's Art-laboratory,  
As he made its straitness roomy  
And glorified its gloomy,  
With Bazzi and Beccafumi.  
(Another heigho for Bazzi:  
How people miscall him Razzi!)

### III

This Painter was of opinion  
Our earth should be his dominion  
Whose Art could correct to pattern  
What Nature had slurred—the slattern!  
And since, beneath the heavens,  
Things lay now at sixes and sevens,  
Or, as he said, *sopra-sotto*—  
Thought the painter Pacchiarotto  
Things wanted reforming, therefore.  
'Wanted it'—ay, but wherefore?  
When earth held onc so ready  
As he to step forth, stand steady  
In the middle of God's creation  
And prove to demonstration  
What the dark is, what the light is,  
What the wrong is, what the right is,  
What the ugly, what the beautiful,  
What the restive, what the dutiful,  
In Mankind profuse around him?  
Man, devil as now he found him,  
Would presently soar up angel  
At the summons of such evangel,  
And owe—what would Man *not* owe  
To the painter Pacchiarotto?  
Ay, look to thy laurels, Giotto!

### IV

But Man, he perceived, was stubborn,  
Grew regular brute, once cub born;  
And it struck him as expedient—  
Ere he tried to make obedient  
The wolf, fox, bear and monkey,  
By piping advice in one key—  
That his pipe should play a prelude  
To something heaven-tinged not hell-  
hued,

Something not harsh but docile,  
Man-liquid, not Man-fossil—  
Not fact, in short, but fancy.  
By a laudable necromancy  
He would conjure up ghosts—a circle  
Deprived of the means to work ill  
Should his music prove distasteful .  
And pearls to the swine go wasteful.  
To be rent of swine—that *was* hard!  
With fancy he ran no hazard:  
Fact might knock him o'er the mazzard.

V

So, the painter Pacchiarotto  
Constructed himself a grotto  
In the quarter of Stalloreggi—  
As authors of note allege ye.  
And on each of the whitewashed sides  
of it

He painted—(none far and wide so fit  
As he to perform in fresco)—  
He painted nor cried *quiesco*  
Till he peopled its every square foot  
With Man—from the Beggar barefoot  
To the Noble in cap and feather:  
All sorts and conditions together.  
The Soldier in breastplate and helmet  
Stood frowningly—hail fellow well met—  
By the Priest armed with bell, book and  
candles.

Nor did he omit to handle  
The Fair Sex, our brave distemperer:  
Not merely King, Clown, Pope, Em-  
peror—  
He diversified too his Hades  
Of all forms, pinched Labour and paid  
Ease,  
With as mixed an assemblage of Ladies.

VI

Which work done, dry,—he rested him,  
Cleaned pallet, washed brush, divested  
him

Of the apron that suits *frescanti*,  
And, bonnet on ear stuck jaunty,  
This hand upon hip well planted,  
That, free to wave as it wanted,  
He addressed in a choice oration  
His folk of each name and nation,  
Taught its duty to every station.  
The Pope was declared an arrant  
Impostor at once, I warrant.  
The Emperor—truth might tax him  
With ignorance of the maxim  
'Shear sheep but nowise flay them!'  
And the Vulgar that obey them,  
The Ruled, well-matched with the Ruling,  
They failed not of wholesome schooling  
On their knavery and their fooling.  
As for Art—where's decorum? Pooh-  
poohed it is  
By Poets that plague us with lewd ditties,  
And Painters that pester with nudities!

VII

Now, your rater and debater  
Is balked by a mere spectator  
Who simply stares and listens  
Tongue-tied, while eye nor glistens  
Nor brow grows hot and twitchy,  
Nor mouth, for a combat itchy,  
Quivers with some convincing  
Reply—that sets him wincing?  
Nay, rather—reply that furnishes  
Your debater with just what burnishes  
The crest of him, all one triumph,  
As you see him rise, hear him cry 'Humph!  
Convinced am I? This confutes me?  
Receive the rejoinder that suits me!  
Confutation of vassal for prince meet—  
Wherein all the powers that convince meet,  
And mash my opponent to mincemeat!'

VIII

So, off from his head flies the bonnet,  
His hip loses hand planted on it,  
While t'other hand, frequent in gesture,  
Slinks modestly back beneath vesture,  
As,—hop, skip and jump,—he's along  
with  
Those weak ones he late proved so strong  
with!

Pope, Emperor, lo, he's beside them,  
Friendly now, who late could not abide  
them,  
King, Clown, Soldier, Priest, Noble, Bur-  
gess;

And his voice, that out-roared Boanerges,  
How minikin-mildly it urges  
In accents how gentle and gingered  
Its word in defence of the injured!  
'O call him not culprit, this Pontiff!  
Be hard on this Kaiser ye won't if  
Ye take into con-si-der-ation  
What dangers attend elevation!  
The Priest—who expects him to descant  
On duty with more zeal and less cant?  
He preaches but rubbish he's reared in.  
The Soldier, grown deaf (by the mere din  
Of battle) to mercy, learned tipling  
And what not of vice while a stripling.  
The Lawyer—his lies are conventional.  
And as for the Poor Sort—why mention all  
Obstructions that leave barred and bolted  
Access to the brains of each dolt-head?'

IX

He ended, you wager? Not half! A bet?  
Precedence to males in the alphabet!  
Still, disposed of Man's A, B, C, there's

X,

Y, Z, want assistance,—the Fair Sex!  
How much may be said in excuse of  
Those vanities—males see no use of—  
From silk shoe on heel to laced poll's-  
hood!  
What's their frailty beside our own false-  
hood?

## PACCHIAROTTO

The boldest, most brazen of . . . trumpets,  
How kind can they be to their dumb pets!  
Of their charms—how are most frank,  
how few venal!

While as for those charges of Juvenal—  
*Quæ nemo dixisset in toto*  
*Nisi (ædepol) ore illoto*—  
He dismissed every charge with an  
'Apage!'

### x

Then, cocking (in Scotch phrase) his cap  
a-gee,  
Right hand disengaged from the doublet  
—Like landlord, in house he had sub-let  
Resuming of guardianship gestion,  
To call tenants' conduct in question—  
Hop, skip, jump, to inside from outside  
Of chamber, he lords, ladies, louts eyed  
With such transformation of visage  
As fitted the censor of this age.  
No longer an advocate tepid  
Of frailty, but champion intrepid  
Of strength, not of falsehood but verity,  
He, one after one, with asperity  
Stripped bare all the cant-clothed abuses,  
Disposed of sophistic excuses,  
Forced folly each shift to abandon,  
And left vice with no leg to stand on.  
So crushing the force he exerted,  
That Man at his foot lay converted!

### xii

True—Man bred of paint-pot and  
mortal!  
But why suppose folks of this sort are  
More likely to hear and be tractable  
Than folks all alive and, in fact, able  
To testify promptly by action  
Their ardour, and make satisfaction  
For misdeeds *non verbis sed factis*?  
'With folk all alive be my practice  
Henceforward! O mortal, paint-pot O,  
Farewell to ye!' cried Pacchiarotto,  
'Let only occasion interpose!'

### xiii

It did so: for, pat to the purpose  
Through causes I need not examine,  
There fell upon Siena a famine.  
In vain did the magistrates busily  
Seek succour, fetch grain out of Sicily,  
Nay, throw mill and bakehouse wide  
open—  
Such misery followed as no pen  
Of mine shall depict ye. Faint, fainter  
Waxed hope of relief: so, our painter,  
Emboldened by triumph of recency,  
How could he do other with decency  
Than rush in this strait to the rescue,  
Play schoolmaster, point as with fescue  
To each and all slips in Man's spelling  
The law of the land?—slips now telling  
With monstrous effect on the city,  
Whose magistrates moved him to pity

As, bound to read law to the letter,  
They minded their hornbook no better.

### xiii

I ought to have told you, at starting,  
How certain, who itched to be carting  
Abuses away clean and thorough  
From Siena, both province and borough,  
Had formed themselves into a company  
Whose swallow could bolt in a lump any  
Obstruction of scruple, provoking  
The nicer throat's coughing and choking:  
Fit Club, by as fit a name dignified  
Of 'Freed Ones'—'*Bardotti*'—which sig-  
nified  
'Spare-Horses' that walk by the waggon  
The team has to drudge for and drag on.  
This notable club Pacchiarotto  
Had joined long since, paid scot and lot  
to,  
As free and accepted '*Bardotto*.'  
The Bailiwick watched with no quiet eye  
The outrage thus done to society,  
And noted the advent especially  
Of Pacchiarotto their fresh ally.

### xiv

These Spare-Horses forthwith as-  
sembled:  
Neighed words whereat citizens trembled  
As oft as the chiefs, in the Square by  
The Duomo, proposed a way whereby  
The city were cured of disaster.  
'Just substitute servant for master,  
Make Poverty Wealth and Wealth  
Poverty,  
Unloose Man from overt and covert tie,  
And straight out of social confusion  
True Order would spring!' Brave illu-  
sion—  
Aims heavenly attained by means earthy!

### xv

Off to these at full speed rushed our  
worthy,—  
Brain practised and tongue no less tutored,  
In argument's armour accoutred,—  
Sprang forth, mounted rostrum and es-  
sayed  
Proposals like those to which 'Yes' said  
So glibly each personage painted  
O' the wall-side wherewith you're ac-  
quainted.  
He harangued on the faults of the Baili-  
wick:  
'Red soon were our State-candle's paly  
wick,  
If wealth would become but interfluous,  
Fill voids up with just the superfluous;  
If ignorance gave way to knowledge  
—Not pedantry picked up at college  
From Doctors, Professors *et cætera*—  
(They say: "*kai ta loipa*")—like better a

## PACCHIAROTTO

Long Greek string of *kappas*, *taus*, *lamb-*  
*das*,

Tacked on to the tail of each damned  
ass)—

No knowledge we want of this quality,  
But knowledge indeed—practicality  
Through insight's fine universality!  
If you shout "*Bailiffs, out on ye all! Fie,*  
*Thou Chief of our forces, Amalfi,*  
*Who shieldest the rogue and the clotpoll!*"  
If you pounce on and poke out, with what  
pole

I leave ye to fancy, our Siena's  
Beast-litter of sloths and hyenas—'  
(Whoever to scan this is ill able  
Forgets the town's name's a dissyllable)  
'If, this done, ye did—as ye might—place  
For once the right man in the right place,  
If you listened to me . . .'

### XVI

At which last 'If'  
There flew at his throat like a mastiff  
One Spare-Horse—another and another!  
Such outbreak of tumult and pother,  
Horse-faces a-laughing and fleering,  
Horse-voices a-mocking and jeering,  
Horse-hands raised to collar the caitiff  
Whose impudence ventured the late 'If'—  
That, had not fear sent Pacchiarotto  
Off tramping, as fast as could trot toe,  
Away from the scene of discomfiture—  
Had he stood there stock-still in a dumb  
fit—sure

Am I he had paid in his person  
Till his mother might fail to know her son,  
Though she gazed on him never so wistful,  
In the figure so tattered and tristful.  
Each mouth full of curses, each fist full  
Of cuffings—behold, Pacchiarotto,  
The pass which thy project has got to,  
Of trusting, nigh ashes still hot—tow!  
(The paraphrase—which I much need—is  
From Horace '*per ignes incedis*.')

### XVII

Right and left did he dash helter-skelter  
In agonized search of a shelter.  
No purlieu so blocked and no alley  
So blind as allowed him to rally  
His spirits and see—nothing hampered  
His steps if he trudged and not scampered  
Up here and down there in a city  
That's all ups and downs, more the pity  
For folk who would outrun the constable.  
At last he stopped short at the one stable  
And sure place of refuge that's offered  
Humanity. Lately was coffered  
A corpse in its sepulchre, situate  
By St. John's Observance. 'Habituate  
Thyself to the strangest of bedfellows,  
And, kicked by the live, kiss the dead  
fellows!'

So Misery counselled the craven.  
At once he crept safely to haven

Through a hole left unbricked in the struc-  
ture.

Ay, Misery, in have you tucked your  
Poor client and left him conterminous  
With—pah!—the thing fetid and vermi-  
nous!

(I gladly would spare you the detail,  
But History writes what I retail.)

### XVIII

Two days did he groan in his domicile:  
'Good Saints, set me free and I promise I'll  
Abjure all ambition of preaching  
Change, whether to minds touched by  
teaching  
—The smooth folk of fancy, mere fig-  
ments  
Created by plaster and pigments,—  
Or to minds that receive with such rude-  
ness  
Dissuasion from pride, greed and lewd-  
ness,

—The rough folk of fact, life's true  
specimens  
Of mind—"haud in posse sed esse mens"  
As it was, is, and shall be for ever  
Despite of my utmost endeavour.  
O live foes I thought to illumine,  
Henceforth lie untroubled your gloom in!  
I need my own light, every spark, as  
I couch with this sole friend—a carcase!'

### XIX

Two days thus he maundered and  
rambled;  
Then, starved back to sanity, scrambled  
From out his receptacle loathsome.  
'A spectre!'—declared upon oath some  
Who saw him emerge and (appalling  
To mention) his garments a-crawling  
With plagues far beyond the Egyptian.  
He gained, in a state past description,  
A convent of monks, the Observancy.

### XX

Thus far is a fact: I reserve fancy  
For Fancy's more proper employment:  
And now she waves wing with enjoyment,  
To tell ye how preached the Superior  
When somewhat our painter's exterior  
Was sweetened. He needed (no mincing  
The matter) much soaking and rinsing,  
Nay, rubbing with drugs odoniferous,  
Till, rid of his garments pestiferous  
And robbed by the help of the Brotherhood  
In odds and ends,—this gown and t'other  
hood,—  
His empty inside first well-garnished,—  
He delivered a tale round, unvarnished.

### XXI

'Ah, Youth!' ran the Abbot's ad-  
monishment,  
'Thine error scarce moves my astonish-  
ment,



## PACCHIAROTTO

For—why shall I shrink from asserting?—  
Myself have had hopes of converting  
The foolish to wisdom, till, sober,  
My life found its May grow October.  
I talked and I wrote, but, one morning,  
Life's Autumn bore fruit in this warning:  
"Let tongue rest, and quiet thy quill be!  
Earth is earth and not heaven, and ne'er  
will be."

Man's work is to labour and heaven—  
As best he may—earth here with heaven;  
'Tis work for work's sake that he's need-  
ing:

Let him work on and on as if speeding  
Work's end, but not dream of succeeding!  
Because if success were intended,  
Why, heaven would begin ere earth ended.  
A Spare-Horse? Be rather a thill-horse,  
Or—what's the plain truth—just a mill-  
horse!

Earth's a mill where we grind and wear  
mufflers:

A whip awaits shirkers and shufflers  
Who slacken their pace, sick of lugging  
At what don't advance for their tugging.  
Though round goes the mill, we must still  
post

On and on as if moving the mill-post.  
So, grind away, mouth-wise and pen-wise,  
Do all that we can to make men wise!  
And if men prefer to be foolish,  
Ourselves have proved horse-like not  
mulish:

Sent grist, a good sackful, to hopper,  
And worked as the Master thought proper.  
Tongue I wag, pen I ply, who am Abbot;  
Stick thou, Son, to daub-brush and dab-  
pot!

But, soft! I scratch hard on the scab hot?  
Though cured of thy plague, there may  
linger

A pimple I fray with rough finger?  
So soon could my homily transmute  
Thy brass into gold? Why, the man's  
mute!

### XXI

'Ay, Father, I'm mute with admiring  
How Nature's indulgence untiring  
Still bids us turn deaf ear to Reason's  
Best rhetoric—clutch at all seasons  
And hold fast to what's proved untenable!  
Thy maxim is—Man's not amenable  
To argument: whereof by consequence—  
Thine arguments reach me: a non-  
sequence!

Yet blush not discouraged, O Father!  
I stand unconverted, the rather  
That nowise I need a conversion.  
No live man (I cap thy assertion)  
By argument ever could take hold  
Of me. 'Twas the dead thing, the clay-  
cold,

Which grinned "Art thou so in a hurry  
That out of warm light thou must skurry

And join me down here in the dungeon  
Because, above, one's Jack and one—John,  
One's swift in the race, one—a hobbler,  
One's a crowned king, and one—a capped  
cobbler,

Rich and poor, sage and fool, virtuous,  
vicious?

Why complain? Art thou so unsuspicious  
That all's for an hour of essaying  
Who's fit and who's unfit for playing  
His part in the after-construction?  
—Heaven's Piece whereof Earth's the  
Induction?

Things rarely go smooth at Rehearsal  
Wait patient the change universal,  
And act, and let act, in existence!  
For, as thou art clapped hence or hissed  
hence,

Thou hast thy promotion or otherwise.  
And why must wise thou have thy brother  
wise

Because in rehearsal thy cue be  
To shine by the side of a booby?  
No polishing garnet to ruby!  
All's well that ends well—through Art's  
magic

Some end, whether comic or tragic,  
The Artist has purposed, be certain!  
Explained at the fall of the curtain—  
In showing thy wisdom at odds with  
That folly: he tries men and gods with  
No problem for weak wits to solve meant,  
But one worth such Author's evolvment.  
So, back nor disturb play's production  
By giving thy brother instruction  
To throw up his fool's-part allotted!  
Lest haply thyself prove besotted  
When stript, for thy pains, of that costume  
Of sage, which has bred the imposthume  
I prick to relieve thee of,—Vanity!"

### XXIII

'So, Father, behold me in sanity!  
I'm back to the palette and mahlstick:  
And as for Man—let each and all stick  
To what was prescribed them at starting!  
Once planted as fools—no departing  
From folly one inch, *seculorum*  
In *secula*! Pass me the jorum,  
And push me the platter—my stomach  
Retains, through its fasting, still some  
ache—  
And then, with your kind *Benedicite*,  
Good-bye!"

### XXIV

I have told with simplicity  
My tale, dropped those harsh analytics,  
And tried to content you, my critics,  
Who greeted my early uprising!  
I knew you through all the disguising,  
Droll dogs, as I jumped up, cried 'Heyday!  
This Monday is—what else but May-day?  
And these in the drabs, blues and yellows,  
Are surely the privileged fellows.

So, saltbox and bones, tongs and bellows,  
(I threw up the window) 'your pleasure?'

XXV

Then he who directed the measure—  
An old friend—put leg forward nimbly,  
'We critics as sweeps out your chimbley!  
Much soot to remove from your flue, sir!  
Who spares coal in kitchen an't you, sir!  
And neighbours complain it's no joke, sir,  
—You ought to consume your own smoke,  
sir!'

XXVI

Ah, rogues, but my housemaid suspects  
you—

Is confident oft she detects you  
In bringing more filth into my house  
Than ever you found there! I'm pious  
However: 'twas God made you dingy  
And me—with no need to be stingy  
Of soap, when 'tis sixpence the packet.  
So, dance away, boys, dust my jacket,  
Bang drum and blow fife—ay, and rattle  
Your brushes, for that's half the battle!  
Don't trample the grass,—hocus-pocus  
With grime my Spring snowdrop and  
crocus,—

And, what with your rattling and tinkling,  
Who knows but you give me an inkling  
How music sounds, thanks to the jangle  
Of regular drum and triangle?  
Whereby, tap-tap, chink-chink, 'tis proven  
I break rule as bad as Beethoven.  
'That chord now—a groan or a grunt is'?  
Schumann's self was no worse contra-  
punctist.  
No ear! or if ear, so tough-gristled—  
He thought that he sung while he  
whistled!'

XXVII

So, this time I whistle, not sing at all,  
My story, the largess I fling at all  
And every the rough there whose *aubade*  
Did its best to amuse me,—nor so bad!  
Take my thanks, pick up largess, and  
scamper  
Off free, ere your mirth gets a damper!  
You've Monday, your one day, your fun-  
day,  
While mine is a year that's all Sunday.  
I've seen you, times—who knows how  
many?—  
Dance in here, strike up, play the zany,  
Make mouths at the tenant, hoot warning  
You'll find him decamped next May-  
morning;  
Then scuttle away, glad to 'scape hence  
With—kicks? no, but laughter and ha-  
pence!  
Mine's freehold, by grace of the grand  
Lord  
Who lets out the ground here,—my land-  
lord:

To him I pay quit-rent—devotion;  
Nor hence shall I budge, I've a notion,  
Nay, here shall my whistling and singing  
Set all his street's echoes a-ringing  
Long after the last of your number  
Has ceased my front-court to encumber  
While, treading down rose and ranunculus,  
You *Tommy-make-room-for-your-Uncle*  
us!

Troop, all of you—man or homunculus,  
Quick march! for Xanthippe, my house-  
maid,

If once on your pates she a souse made  
With what, pan or pot, bowl or *skoramis*  
First comes to her hand—things were  
more amiss!

I would not for worlds be your place in—  
Recipient of slops from the basin!  
You, Jack-in-the-Green, leaf-and-twig-  
gishness

Won't save a dry thread on your priggish-  
ness!

While as for Quilp-Hop-o'-my-thumb  
there,  
Banjo-Byron that twangs the strum-strum  
there—

He'll think, as the pickle he curses,  
I've discharged on his pate his own verses!  
'Dwarfs are saucy,' says Dickens: so,  
sauced in

Your own sauce, . . .<sup>1</sup>

XXVIII

But, back to my Knight of the Pencil,  
Dismissed to his fresco and stencil!  
Whose story—begun with a chuckle,  
And throughout timed by raps of the  
knuckle,—

To small enough purpose were studied  
If it ends with crown cracked or nose  
bloodied.

Come, critics,—not shake hands, excuse  
me!

But—say have you grudged to amuse me  
This once in the forty-and-over  
Long years since you trampled my clover  
And scared from my house-eaves each  
sparrow

I never once harmed by that arrow  
Of song, *karterotaton belos*,  
(Which Pindar declares the true *melos*)  
I was forging and filing and finishing,  
And no whit my labours diminishing  
Because, though high up in a chamber  
Where none of your kidney may clamber  
Your hullabaloo would approach me?  
Was it 'grammar' wherein you would  
'coach' me—

You,—pacing in even that paddock  
Of language allotted you *ad hoc*,

<sup>1</sup> No, please! For

'Who would be satirical  
On a thing so very small?'

—Printer's Devil.

## PACCHIAROTTO

With a clog at your fetlocks,—you—  
scorners

Of me free of all its four corners?

Was it 'clearness of words which convey  
thought'?

Ay, if words never needed enswathe aught  
But ignorance, impudence, envy  
And malice—what word-swathe would  
then vie

With yours for a clearness crystalline?  
But had you to put in one small line  
Some thought big and bouncing—as  
noddle

Of goose, born to cackle and waddle  
And bite at man's heel as goose-wont is,  
Never felt plague its puny *os frontis*—  
You'd know, as you hissed, spat and  
spattered,

Clear cackle is easily uttered!

### XXIX

Lo, I've laughed out my laugh on this  
mirth-day!

Beside, at week's end, dawns my birth-day,  
That *hebdoma, hieron emar*—  
(More things in a day than you deem are!)

—*Tei gar Apollona chrusaora*  
*Egeinato Leto*. So, gray or ray

Betide me, six days hence, I'm vexed here  
By no sweep, that's certain, till next year!  
'Vexed?'—roused from what else were  
insipid ease!

Leave snoring a-bed to Pheidippides!  
We'll up and work! won't we, Euripides?

## AT THE 'MERMAID'

The figure that thou here seest . . . Tut!  
Was it for gentle Shakespeare put?

B. JONSON, (*Adapted*.)

### I

I—'Next Poet?' No, my hearties,  
I nor am nor fain would be!  
Choose your chiefs and pick your parties,  
Not one soul revolt to me!

I, forsooth, sow song-sedition?

I, a schism in verse provoke?

I, blown up by bard's ambition,  
Burst—your bubble-king? You joke.

### II

Come, be grave! The sherris mantling  
Still about each mouth, mayhap,  
Breeds you insight—just a scantling—  
Brings me truth out—just a scrap.

Look and tell me! Written, spoken,  
Here's my life-long work: and where  
—Where's your warrant or my token  
I'm the dead king's son and heir?

### III

Here's my work: does work discover—  
What was rest from work—my life?  
Did I live man's hater, lover?  
Leave the world at peace, at strife?

Call earth ugliness or beauty?

See things there in large or small?

Use to pay its Lord my duty?

Use to own a lord at all?

### IV

Blank of such a record, truly  
Here's the work I hand, this scroll,  
Yours to take or leave; as duly,  
Mine remains the unproffered soul.  
So much, no whit more, my debtors—  
How should one like me lay claim  
To that largess elders, betters  
Sell you cheap their souls for—fame?

### V

Which of you did I enable  
Once to slip inside my breast,  
There to catalogue and label  
What I like least, what love best,  
Hope and fear, believe and doubt of,  
Seek and shun, respect—deride?  
Who has right to make a rout of  
Rarities he found inside?

### VI

Rarities or, as he'd rather,  
Rubbish such as stocks his own:  
Need and greed (O strange) the Father  
Fashioned not for him alone!  
Whence—the comfort set a-strutting,  
Whence—the outcry 'Haste, behold!  
Bard's breast open wide, past shutting,  
Shows what brass we took for gold!'

### VII

Friends, I doubt not he'd display you  
Brass—myself call orichalc,—  
Furnish much amusement; pray you  
Therefore, be content I baulk  
Him and you, and bar my portal!  
Here's my work outside: opine  
What's inside me mean and mortal!  
Take your pleasure, leave me mine!

### VIII

Which is—not to buy your laurel  
As last king did, nothing loth.  
Tale adorned and pointed moral  
Gained him praise and pity both.  
Out rushed sighs and groans by dozens,  
Forth by scores oaths, curses flew:  
Proving you were cater-cousins,  
Kith and kindred, king and you!

### IX

Whereas do I ne'er so little  
(Thanks to sherris) leave ajar  
Bosom's gate—no jot nor tittle  
Grow we nearer than we are.  
Sinning, sorrowing, despairing,  
Body-ruined, spirit-wrecked,—  
Should I give my woes an airing,—  
Where's one plague that claims respect?

## AT THE 'MERMAID'

X  
Have you found your life distasteful?  
My life did, and does, smack sweet.  
Was your youth of pleasure wasteful?  
Mine I saved and hold complete.  
Do your joys with age diminish?  
When mine fail me, I'll complain.  
Must in death your daylight finish?  
My sun sets to rise again.

XI  
What, like you, he proved—your Pilgrim—  
This our world a wilderness,  
Earth still grey and heaven still grim,  
Not a hand there his might press,  
Not a heart his own might throb to,  
Men all rogues and women—say,  
Dolls which boys' heads duck and bob to,  
Grown folk drop or throw away?

XII  
My experience being other,  
How should I contribute verse  
Worthy of your king and brother?  
Balaam-like I bless, not curse.  
I find earth not grey but rosy,  
Heaven not grim but fair of hue.  
Do I stoop? I pluck a posy.  
Do I stand and stare? All's blue.

XIII  
Doubtless I am pushed and shoved by  
Rogues and fools enough: the more  
Good luck mine, I love, am loved by  
Some few honest to the core.  
Scan the near high, scout the far low!  
'But the low come close:' what then?  
Simpletons? My match is Marlowe;  
Sciolists? My mate is Ben.

XIV  
Womankind—'the cat-like nature,  
False and fickle, vain and weak'—  
What of this sad nomenclature  
Suits my tongue, if I must speak?  
Does the sex invite, repulse so,  
Tempt, betray, by fits and starts?  
So becalm but to convulse so,  
Decking heads and breaking hearts?

XV  
Well may you blaspheme at fortune!  
I 'threw Venus'<sup>1</sup> (Ben, expound!)  
Never did I need importune  
Her, of all the Olympian round.  
Blessings on my benefactress!  
Cursings suit—for aught I know—  
Those who twitched her by the back tress,  
Tugged and thought to turn her—so!

XVI  
Therefore, since no leg to stand on  
Thus I'm left with,—joy or grief  
Be the issue,—I abandon  
Hope or care you name me Chief!

<sup>1</sup> The best cast in dice (three sixes) is called Venus.

Chief and king and Lord's anointed,  
I?—who never once have wished  
Death before the day appointed:  
Lived and liked, not poohed and pished!

XVII  
'Ah, but so I shall not enter,  
Scroll in hand, the common heart—  
Stopped at surface: since at centre  
Song should reach *Welt-schmerz*, world-smart!  
'Enter in the heart?' Its shelly  
Cuirass guard mine, fore and aft!  
Such song 'enters in the belly  
And is cast out in the draught.'

XVIII  
Back then to our sherris-brewage!  
'Kingship' quotha? I shall wait—  
Waive the present time: some new age...  
But let fools anticipate!  
Meanwhile greet me—'friend, good fellow,  
Gentle Will,' my merry men!  
As for making Envy yellow  
With 'Next Poet'—(Manners, Ben!)

## HOUSE

I  
SHALL I sonnet-sing you about myself?  
Do I live in a house you would like to see?  
Is it scant of gear, has it store of pelf?  
'Unlock my heart with a sonnet-key?'

II  
Invite the world, as my betters have done?  
'Take notice: this building remains on view,  
Its suites of reception every one,  
Its private apartment and bedroom too;

III  
'For a ticket, apply to the Publisher.'  
No: thanking the public, I must decline.  
A peep through my window, if folk prefer;  
But, please you, no foot over threshold of mine!

IV  
I have mixed with a crowd and heard free talk  
In a foreign land where an earthquake  
chanced:  
And a house stood gaping, nought to baulk  
Man's eye wherever he gazed or glanced.

V  
The whole of the frontage shaven sheer,  
The inside gaped: exposed to day,  
Right and wrong and common and queer,  
Bare, as the palm of your hand, it lay.

## HOUSE

### VI

The owner? Oh, he had been crushed, no doubt!  
 'Odd tables and chairs for a man of wealth!  
 What a parcel of musty old books about!  
 He smoked,—no wonder he lost his health!

### VII

'I doubt if he bathed before he dressed.  
 A brasier?—the pagan, he burned perfumes!  
 You see it is proved, what the neighbours guessed:  
 His wife and himself had separate rooms.'

### VIII

Friends, the goodman of the house at least  
 Kept house to himself till an earthquake came:  
 'Tis the fall of its frontage permits you feast  
 On the inside arrangement you praise or blame.

### IX

Outside should suffice for evidence:  
 And whoso desires to penetrate  
 Deeper, must dive by the spirit-sense—  
 No optics like yours, at any rate!

### X

'Hoity toity! A street to explore,  
 Your house the exception! "*With this same key*  
*Shakespeare unlocked his heart,*" once more!  
 Did Shakespeare? If so, the less Shakespeare he!

## SHOP

### I

So, friend, your shop was all your house!  
 Its front, astonishing the street,  
 Invited view from man and mouse  
 To what diversity of treat  
 Behind its glass—the single sheet!

### II

What gimcracks, genuine Japanese:  
 Gape-jaw and goggle-eye, the frog;  
 Dragons, owls, monkeys, beetles, geese;  
 Some crush-nosed human-hearted dog:  
 Queer names, too, such a catalogue!

### III

I thought 'And he who owns the wealth  
 Which blocks the window's vastitude,  
 —Ah, could I peep at him by stealth  
 Behind his ware, pass shop, intrude  
 On house itself, what scenes were viewed!

### IV

'If wide and showy thus the shop,  
 What must the habitation prove?  
 The true house with no name a-top—  
 The mansion, distant one remove,  
 Once get him off his traffic-groove!

### V

'Pictures he likes, or books perhaps;  
 And as for buying most and best,  
 Commend me to these City chaps!  
 Or else he's social, takes his rest  
 On Sundays, with a Lord for guest.

### VI

'Some suburb-palace, parked about  
 And gated grandly, built last year:  
 The four-mile walk to keep off gout;  
 Or big seat sold by bankrupt peer:  
 But then he takes the rail, that's clear.

### VII

'Or, stop! I wager, taste selects  
 Some out o' the way, some all-unknown  
 Retreat: the neighbourhood suspects  
 Little that he who rambles lone  
 Makes Rothschild tremble on his throne!'

### VIII

Nowise! Nor Mayfair residence  
 Fit to receive and entertain,—  
 Nor Hampstead villa's kind defence  
 From noise and crowd, from dust and drain,—  
 Nor country-box was soul's domain!

### IX

Nowise! At back of all that spread  
 Of merchandize, woe's me, I find  
 A hole i' the wall where, heels by head,  
 The owner couched, his ware behind,  
 —In cupboard suited to his mind.

### X

For why? He saw no use of life  
 But, while he drove a roaring trade,  
 To chuckle 'Customers are rife!'  
 To chafe 'So much hard cash outlaid  
 Yet zero in my profits made!

### XI

'This novelty costs pains, but—takes?  
 Cumbers my counter! Stock no more!  
 This article, no such great shakes,  
 Fizzes like wildfire? Underscore  
 The cheap thing—thousands to the fore!'

### XII

'Twas lodging best to live most nigh  
 (Cramp, coffinlike as crib might be)  
 Receipt of Custom; ear and eye  
 Wanted no outworld: 'Hear and see  
 The bustle in the shop!' quoth he.

## XIII

My fancy of a merchant-prince  
Was different. Through his wares we  
groped  
Our dorkling way to—not to mince  
The matter—no black den where mope  
The master if we interloped!

## XIV

Shop was shop only: household-stuff?  
What did he want with comforts there?  
'Walls, ceiling, floor, stay blank and  
rough,  
So goods on sale show rich and rare!  
"Sell and scud home" be shop's affair!'

## XV

What might he deal in? Gems, suppose!  
Since somehow business must be done  
At cost of trouble,—see, he throws  
You choice of jewels, everyone,  
Good, better, best, star, moon and sun!

## XVI

Which lies within your power of purse?  
This ruby that would tip aright  
Solomon's sceptre? Oh, your nurse  
Wants simply coral, the delight  
Of teething baby,—stuff to bite!

## XVII

Howe'er your choice fell, straight you took  
Your purchase, prompt your money  
rang  
On counter,—scarce the man forsook  
His study of the 'Times,' just swang  
Till-ward his hand that stopped the  
clang,—

## XVIII

Then off made buyer with a prize,  
Then seller to his 'Times' returned;  
And so did day wear, wear, till eyes  
Brightened apace, for rest was earned:  
He locked door long ere candle burned.

## XIX

And whither went he? Ask himself,  
Not me! To change of scene, I think.  
Once sold the ware and pursed the pelf,  
Chaffer was scarce his meat and drink,  
Nor all his music—money-chink.

## XX

Because a man has shop to mind  
In time and place, since flesh must live,  
Needs spirit lack all life behind,  
All stray thoughts, fancies fugitive,  
All loves except what trade can give?

## XXI

I want to know a butcher paints,  
A baker rhymes for his pursuit,  
Candlestick-maker much acquaints  
His soul with song, or, haply mute,  
Blows out his brains upon the flute!

## XXII

But—shop each day and all day long!  
Friend, your good angel slept, your star  
Suffered eclipse, fate did you wrong!  
From where these sorts of treasures are,  
There should our hearts be—Christ,  
how far!

## PISGAH-SIGHTS. I

I  
OVER the ball of it,  
Peering and prying,  
How I see all of it,  
Life there, outlying!  
Roughness and smoothness,  
Shine and defilement,  
Grace and uncouthness:  
One reconciliation.

II  
Orbed as appointed,  
Sister with brother  
Joins, ne'er disjointed  
One from the other.  
All's lend-and-borrow;  
Good, see, wants evil,  
Joy demands sorrow,  
Angel weds devil!

III  
'Which things must—why be?'  
Vain our endeavour!  
So shall things aye be  
As they were ever.  
'Such things should *so* be!'  
Sage our desistence!  
Rough-smooth let globe be,  
Mixed—man's existence!

IV  
Man—wise and foolish,  
Lover and scorner,  
Docile and mulish—  
Keep each his corner!  
Honey yet gall of it!  
There's the life lying,  
And I see all of it,  
Only, I'm dying!

## PISGAH-SIGHTS. II

I  
COULD I but live again,  
Twice my life over,  
Would I once strive again?  
Would not I cover  
Quietly all of it—  
Greed and ambition—  
So, from the pall of it,  
Pass to fruition?

II  
'Soft!' I'd say, 'Soul mine!  
Three-score and ten years,  
Let the blind mole mine  
Digging out deniers!

## PISGAH-SIGHTS

Let the dazed hawk soar,  
Claim the sun's rights too!  
Turf 'tis thy walk's o'er,  
Foliage thy flight's to.'

### III

Only a learner,  
Quick one or slow one,  
Just a discernor,  
I would teach no one.  
I am earth's native:  
No rearranging it!  
I be creative,  
Chopping and changing it?

### IV

March, men, my fellows!  
Those who, above me,  
(Distance so mellows)  
Fancy you love me:  
Those who, below me,  
(Distance makes great so)  
Free to forego me,  
Fancy you hate so!

### V

Praising, reviling,  
Worst head and best head,  
Past me defiling,  
Never arrested,  
Wanters, abounders,  
March, in gay mixture,  
Men, my surrounders!  
I am the fixture.

### VI

So shall I fear thee,  
Mightiness yonder!  
Mock-sun—more near thee,  
What is to wonder?  
So shall I love thee,  
Down in the dark,—lest  
Glowworm I prove thee,  
Star that now sparklest!

## FEARS AND SCRUPLES

### I

HERE's my case. Of old I used to love him  
This same unseen friend, before I knew:  
Dream that were was none like him, none  
above him,—  
Wake to hope and trust my dream was  
true.

### II

Loved I not his letters full of beauty?  
Not his actions famous far and wide?  
Absent, he would know I vowed him duty;  
Present, he would find me at his side.

### III

Pleasant fancy! for I had but letters,  
Only knew of actions by hearsay:  
He himself was busied with my betters;  
What of that? My turn must come some  
day.

### IV

'Some day' proving—no day! Here's the  
puzzle.  
Passed and passed my turn is. Why  
complain?  
He's so busied! If I could but muzzle  
People's foolish mouths that give me  
pain!

### V

'Letters?' (hear them!) 'You a judge of  
writing?  
Ask the experts!—How they shake the  
head  
O'er these characters, your friend's in-  
diting—  
Call them forgery from A to Z!

### VI

'Actions? Where's your certain proof'  
(they bother)  
'He, of all you find so great and good,  
He, he only, claims this, that, the other  
'Action—claimed by men, a multitude?'

### VII

I can simply wish I might refute you,  
Wish my friend would,—by a word, a  
wink,—  
Bid me stop that foolish mouth,—you  
brute you!  
He keeps absent,—why, I cannot think.

### VIII

Never mind! Though foolishness may  
flout me,  
One thing's sure enough: 'tis neither  
frost,  
No, nor fire, shall freeze or burn from  
out me  
Thanks for truth—though falsehood,  
gained—though lost.

### IX

All my days, I'll go the softer, sadder,  
For that dream's sake! How forget the  
thrill  
Through and through me as I thought  
'The gladlier  
Lives my friend because I love him still!'

### X

Ah, but there's a menace someone utters!  
'What and if your friend at home plays  
tricks?  
Peep at hide-and-seek behind the shutters?  
Mean your eyes should pierce through  
solid bricks?

### XI

'What and if he, frowning, wake you,  
dreamy?  
Lay on you the blame that bricks—  
conceal?  
Say "At least I saw who did not see me,  
Does see now, and presently shall feel!"'

## FEARS AND SCRUPLES

### BIFURCATION

#### XII

'Why, that makes your friend a monster!' say you:  
'Had his house no window? At first  
nod,  
Would you not have hailed him?' Hush,  
I pray you!  
What if this friend happen to be—God?

### NATURAL MAGIC

#### I

ALL I can say is—I saw it!  
The room was as bare as your hand.  
I locked in the swarth little lady,—I swear,  
From the head to the foot of her—well,  
quite as bare!  
'No Nautch shall cheat me,' said I, 'taking  
my stand  
At this bolt which I draw!' And this bolt  
—I withdraw it,  
And there laughs the lady, not bare, but  
embowered  
With—who knows what verdure, o'er-  
fruited, o'erflowered?  
Impossible! Only—I saw it!

#### II

All I can sing is—I feel it!  
This life was as blank as that room;  
I let you pass in here. Precaution, indeed?  
Walls, ceiling and floor,—not a chance for  
a weed!  
Wide opens the entrance: where's cold  
now, where's gloom?  
No May to sow seed here, no June to re-  
veal it,  
Behold you enshrined in these blooms of  
your bringing,  
These fruits of your bearing—nay, birds  
of your winging!  
A fairy-tale! Only—I feel it!

### MAGICAL NATURE

#### I

FLOWER—I never fancied, jewel—I pro-  
fess you!  
Bright I see and soft I feel the outside of  
a flower.  
Save but glow inside and—jewel, I should  
guess you,  
Dim to sight and rough to touch: the  
glory is the dower.

#### II

You, forsooth, a flower? Nay, my love, a  
jewel—  
Jewel at no mercy of a moment in your  
prime!  
Time may fray the flower-face: kind be  
time or cruel,  
Jewel, from each facet, flash your laugh  
at time!

We were two lovers; let me lie by her,  
My tomb beside her tomb. On hers in-  
scribe—

'I loved him; but my reason bade prefer  
Duty to love, reject the tempter's bribe  
Of rose and lily when each path diverged,  
And either I must pace to life's far end  
As love should lead me, or, as duty urged,  
Plod the worn causeway arm-in-arm with  
friend.

So, truth turned falsehood: "*How I loathe  
a flower,*

*How prize the pavement!*" still caressed  
his ear—

The deafish friend's—through life's day,  
hour by hour,  
As he laughed (coughing) "*Ay, it would  
appear!*"

But deep within my heart of hearts there hid  
Ever the confidence, amends for all,  
That heaven repairs what wrong earth's  
journey did,  
When love from life-long exile comes at  
call.

Duty and love, one Broadway, were the  
best—  
Who doubts? But one or other was to  
choose.

I chose the darkling half, and wait the rest  
In that new world where light and dark-  
ness fuse.'

Inscribe on mine—'I loved her: love's  
track lay

O'er sand and pebble, as all travellers  
know.

Duty led through a smiling country, gay  
With greensward where the rose and lily  
blow.

"*Our roads are diverse: farewell, love!*"  
said she;

"*'Tis duty I abide by: homely sward  
And not the rock-rough picturesque for me!  
Above, where both roads join, I wait reward.  
Be you as constant to the path whereon  
I leave you planted!*" But man needs must

move,  
Keep moving—whither, when the star is  
gone

Whereby he steps secure nor strays from  
love?

No stone but I was tripped by, stumbling-  
block

But brought me to confusion. Where I fell,  
There I lay flat, if moss disguised the rock,  
Thence, if flint pierced, I rose and cried  
"*All's well!*"

*Duty be mine to tread in that high sphere  
Where love from duty ne'er disparts, I trust,  
And two halves make that whole, whereof  
—since here*

*One must suffice a man—why, this one  
must!"*



## BIFURCATION

Inscribe each tomb thus: then, some sage  
acquaint  
The simple—which holds sinner, which  
holds saint!

### NUMPHOLEPTOS

STILL you stand, still you listen, still you  
smile!

Still melts your moonbeam through me,  
white awhile,

Softening, sweetening, till sweet and soft  
Increase so round this heart of mine, that  
oft

I could believe your moonbeam-smile has  
past

The pallid limit, lies, transformed at last  
To sunlight and salvation—warms the soul  
It sweetens, softens! Would you pass that  
goal,

Gain love's birth at the limit's happier  
verge,

And, where an iridescence lurks, but urge  
The hesitating pallor on to prime  
Of dawn!—true blood-streaked, sun-

warmth, action-time,  
By heart-pulse ripened to a ruddy glow  
Of gold above my clay—I scarce should

know  
From gold's self, thus suffused! For gold  
means love.

What means the sad slow silver smile  
above

My clay but pity, pardon?—at the best,  
But acquiescence that I take my rest,

Contented to be clay, while in your heaven  
The sun reserves love for the Spirit—Seven  
Companions God's throne they lamp

before,  
—Leaves earth a mute waste only wan-

dered o'er  
By that pale soft sweet disempathioned  
moon

Which smiles me slow forgiveness! Such  
the boon

I beg? Nay, dear, submit to this—just this  
Supreme endeavour! As my lips now

kiss  
Your feet, my arms convulse your shroud-

ing robe,  
My eyes, acquainted with the dust, dare

probe  
Your eyes above for—what, if born, would

blind  
Mine with redundant bliss, as flash may

find  
The inert nerve, sting awake the palsied  
limb,

Bid with life's ecstasy sense overbrim  
And suck back death in the resurging joy—

Love, the love whole and sole without  
alloy!

Vainly! The promise withers! I employ

Lips, arms, eyes, pray the prayer which  
finds the word,

Make the appeal which must be felt, not  
heard,

And none the more is changed your calm  
regard:

Rather, its sweet and soft grow harsh and  
hard—

Forbearance, then repulsion, then disdain.  
Avert the rest! I rise, see!—make, again

Once more, the old departure for some  
track

Untried yet through a world which brings  
me back

Ever thus fruitlessly to find your feet,  
To fix your eyes, to pray the soft and sweet

Which smile there—take from his new pil-  
grimage

Your outcast, once your inmate, and  
assuage

With love—not placid pardon now—his  
thirst

For a mere drop from out the ocean erst  
He drank at! Well, the quest shall be re-

newed.  
Fear nothing! Though I linger, unembued  
With any drop, my lips thus close. I go!

So did I leave you, I have found you so,  
And doubtlessly, if fated to return,

So shall my pleading persevere and earn  
Pardon—not love—in that same smile, I

learn,  
And lose the meaning of, to learn once

more,  
Vainly!

What fairy track do I explore?

What magic hall return to, like the gem  
Centuply-angled o'er a diadem?

You dwell there, hearted; from your mid-  
most home

Rays forth—through that fantastic world  
I roam

Ever—from centre to circumference,  
Shaft upon coloured shaft: this crimsons

thence,  
That purples out its precinct through the

waste.  
Surely I had your sanction when I faced,  
Fared forth upon that untried yellow ray

Whence I retrack my steps? They end to-  
day

Where they began—before your feet, be-  
neath

Your eyes, your smile: the blade is shut in  
sheath,

Fire quenched in flint; irradiation, late  
Triumphant through the distance, finds

its fate,  
Merged in your blank pure soul, alike the

source  
And tomb of that prismatic glow: divorce  
Absolute, all-conclusive! Forth I fared,

Treading the lambent flamelet: little cared

If now its flickering took the topaz tint,  
 If now my dull-caked path gave sulphury  
 hint  
 Of subterranean rage—no stay nor stint  
 To yellow, since you sanctioned that I  
 bathe,  
 Burnish me, soul and body, swim and  
 swathe  
 In yellow license. Here I reek suffused  
 With crocus, saffron, orange, as I used  
 With scarlet, purple, every dye o' the bow  
 Born' of the storm-cloud. As before, you  
 show  
 Scarce recognition, no approval, some  
 Mistrust, more wonder at a man become  
 Monstrous in garb, nay—flesh disguised  
 as well,  
 Through his adventure. Whatso'er befell,  
 I followed, wheresoe'er it wound, that vein  
 You authorized should leave your white-  
 ness, stain  
 Earth's sombre stretch beyond your mid-  
 most place  
 Of vantage,—trode that tinct whereof the  
 trace  
 On garb and flesh repel you! Yes, I plead  
 Your own permission—your command,  
 indeed,  
 That who would worthily retain the love  
 Must share the knowledge shrined those  
 eyes above,  
 Go boldly on adventure, break through  
 bounds  
 O' the quintessential whiteness that sur-  
 rounds  
 Your feet, obtain experience of each tinge  
 That bickers forth to broaden out, impinge  
 Plainer his foot its pathway all distinct  
 From every other. Ah, the wonder, linked  
 With fear, as exploration manifests  
 What agency it was first tipped the crests  
 Of unnamed wildflower, soon protruding  
 grew  
 Portentous mid the sands, as when his hue  
 Betrays him and the burrowing snake  
 gleams through;  
 Till, last . . . but why parade more shame  
 and pain?  
 Are not the proofs upon me? Here again  
 I pass into your presence, I receive  
 Your smile of pity, pardon, and I leave . . .  
 No, not this last of times I leave you, mute,  
 Submitted to my penance, so my foot  
 May yet again adventure, tread, from  
 source  
 To issue, onemore ray of rays which course  
 Each other, at your bidding, from the  
 sphere  
 Silver and sweet, their birthplace, down  
 that drear  
 Dark of the world,—you promise shall  
 return  
 Your pilgrim jewelled as with drops o' the  
 urn

The rainbow paints from, and no smatch  
 at all  
 Of ghastliness at edge of some cloud-pall  
 Heaven cowers before, as earth awaits the  
 fall  
 O' the bolt and flash of doom. Who trusts  
 your word  
 Tries the adventure: and returns—absurd  
 As frightful—in that sulphur-steeped dis-  
 guise  
 Mocking the priestly cloth-of-gold, sole  
 prize  
 The arch-heretic was wont to bear away  
 Until he reached the burning. No, I say:  
 No fresh adventure! No more seeking  
 love  
 At end of toil, and finding, calm above  
 My passion, the old statuesque regard,  
 The sad petrific smile!

O you—less hard  
 And hateful than mistaken and obtuse  
 Unreason of a she-intelligence!  
 You very woman with the pert pretence  
 To match the male achievement! Like  
 enough!  
 Ay, you were easy victors, did the rough  
 Straightway efface itself to smooth, the  
 gruff  
 Grind down and grow a whisper,—did  
 man's truth  
 Subdue, for sake of chivalry and ruth,  
 Its rapier-edge to suit the bulrush-spear  
 Womanly falsehood fights with! O that  
 ear  
 All fact pricks rudely, that thrice-superfine  
 Femininity of sense, with right divine  
 To waive all process, take result stain-free  
 From out the very muck wherein . . .

Ah me!  
 The true slave's querulous outbreak! All  
 the rest  
 Be resignation! Forth at your behest  
 I fare. Who knows but this—the crimson-  
 quest—  
 May deepen to a sunrise, not decay  
 To that cold sad sweet smile?—which I  
 obey.

## APPEARANCES

### I

AND so you found that poor room dull,  
 Dark, hardly to your taste, my dear?  
 Its features seemed unbeautiful:  
 But this I know—'twas there, not here,  
 You plighted troth to me, the word  
 Which—ask that poor room how it heard.

### II

And this rich room obtains your praise  
 Unqualified,—so bright, so fair,  
 So all whereat perfection stays?

## APPEARANCES

Ay, but remember—here, not there,  
The other word was spoken! Ask  
This rich room how you dropped the  
mask!

### ST. MARTIN'S SUMMER

#### I

No protesting, dearest!  
Hardly kisses even!  
Don't we both know how it ends?  
How the greenest leaf turns serest,  
Bluest outbreak—blankest heaven,  
Lovers—friends?

#### II

You would build a mansion,  
I would weave a bower  
—Want the heart for enterprise.  
Walls admit of no expansion:  
Trellis-work may haply flower  
Twice the size.

#### III

What makes glad Life's Winter?  
New buds, old blooms after.  
Sad the sighing 'How suspect  
Beams would ere mid-Autumn splinter,  
Roof-tree scarce support a rafter,  
Walls lie wrecked?'

#### IV

You are young, my princess!  
I am hardly older:  
Yet—I steal a glance behind.  
Dare I tell you what convinces  
Timid me that you, if bolder,  
Bold—are blind?

#### V

Where we plan our dwelling  
Glooms a graveyard surely!  
Headstone, footstone moss may  
drape,—  
Name, date, violets hide from spelling,—  
But, though corpses rot obscurely,  
Ghosts escape.

#### VI

Ghosts! O breathing Beauty,  
Give my frank word pardon!  
What if I—somehow, somewhere—  
Pledged my soul to endless duty  
Many a time and oft? Be hard on  
Love—laid there?

#### VII

Nay, blame grief that's fickle,  
Time that proves a traitor,  
Chance, change, all that purpose  
warps,—  
Death who spares to thrust the sickle  
Laid Love low, through flowers which  
later  
Shroud the corpse!

#### VIII

And you, my winsome lady,  
Whisper with like frankness!  
Lies nothing buried long ago?  
Are you—which shimmer mid the shady  
Where moss and violet run to rank-  
ness—  
Tombs or no?

#### IX

Who taxes you with murder?  
My hands are clean—or nearly!  
Love being mortal needs must pass.  
Repentance? Nothing were absurder.  
Enough: we felt Love's loss severely;  
Though now—alas!

#### X

Love's corpse lies quiet therefore,  
Only Love's ghost plays truant,  
And warns us have in wholesome awe  
Durable mansionry; that's wherefore  
I weave but trellis-work, pursuant  
—Life, to law.

#### XI

The solid, not the fragile,  
Tempt rain and hail and thunder.  
If bower stand firm at Autumn's close,  
Beyond my hope,—why, boughs were  
agile;  
If bower fall flat, we scarce need wonder  
Wreathing—rose!

#### XII

So, truce to the protesting,  
So, muffled be the kisses!  
For, would we but avow the truth,  
Sober is genuine joy. No jesting!  
Ask else Penelope, Ulysses—  
Old in youth!

#### XIII

For why should ghosts feel angered?  
Let all their interference  
Be faint march-music in the air!  
'Up! Join the rear of us the vanguard!  
Up, lovers, dead to all appearance,  
Laggard pair!'

#### XIV

The while you clasp me closer,  
The while I press you deeper,  
As safe we chuckle,—under breath,  
Yet all the slyer, the jocosier,—  
'So, life can boast its day, like leap-year,  
Stolen from death!'

#### XV

Ah me—the sudden terror!  
Hence quick—avaunt, avoid me,  
You cheat, the ghostly flesh-disguised!  
Nay, all the ghosts in one! Strange error!  
So, 'twas Death's self that clipped and  
cloyed me,  
Loved—and lied!

## ST. MARTIN'S SUMMER

### XVI

Ay, dead loves are the potent!  
Like any cloud they used you,  
Mere semblance you, but substance  
they!  
Build we no mansion, weave we no tent!  
Mere flesh—their spirit interfused you!  
Hence, I say!

### XVII

All theirs, none yours the glamour!  
Theirs each low word that won me,  
Soft look that found me Love's, and  
left  
What else but you—the tears and clamour  
That's all your very own! Undone me—  
Ghost-bereft!

## HERVÉ RIEL

### I

ON the sea and at the Hogue, sixteen hun-  
dred ninety-two,  
Did the English fight the French,—woe  
to France!  
And, the thirty-first of May, helter-skelter  
through the blue,  
Like a crowd of frightened porpoises a  
shoal of sharks pursue,  
Came crowding ship on ship to Saint-  
Malo on the Rance,  
With the English fleet in view.

### II

'Twas the squadron that escaped, with the  
victor in full chase;  
First and foremost of the drove, in his  
great ship, Damfreville;  
Close on him fled, great and small,  
Twenty-two good ships in all;  
And they signalled to the place  
'Help the winners of a race!  
Get us guidance, give us harbour, take  
us quick—or, quicker still,  
Here's the English can and will!'

### III

Then the pilots of the place put out brisk  
and leapt on board;  
'Why, what hope or chance have ships  
like these to pass?' laughed they:  
'Rocks to starboard, rocks to port, all the  
passage scarred and scored,—  
Shall the "Formidable" here, with her  
twelve and eighty guns,  
Think to make the river-mouth by the  
single narrow way,  
Trust to enter—where 'tis ticklish for a  
craft of twenty tons,  
And with flow at full beside?  
Now, 'tis slackest ebb of tide.  
Reach the mooring? Rather say,  
While rock stands or water runs,  
Not a ship will leave the bay!'

### IV

Then was called a council straight.  
Brief and bitter the debate:  
'Here's the English at our heels; would  
you have them take in tow  
All that's left us of the fleet, linked together  
stern and bow,  
For a prize to Plymouth Sound?  
Better run the ships aground!'  
(Ended Damfreville his speech.)  
'Not a minute more to wait!  
Let the Captains all and each  
Shove ashore, then blow up, burn the  
vessels on the beach!  
France must undergo her fate.

### V

Give the word!' But no such word  
Was ever spoke or heard;  
For up stood, for out stepped, for in  
struck amid all these  
—A Captain? A Lieutenant? A Mate—  
first, second, third?  
No such man of mark, and meet  
With his betters to compete!  
But a simple Breton sailor pressed by  
Tourville for the fleet,  
A poor coasting-pilot he, Hervé Riel the  
Croisickese.

### VI

And 'What mockery or malice have we  
here?' cries Hervé Riel:  
'Are you mad, you Malouins? Are you  
cowards, fools, or rogues?  
Talk to me of rocks and shoals, me who  
took the soundings, tell  
On my fingers every bank, every shallow,  
every swell  
'Twixt the offing here and Grève where  
the river disembogues?  
Are you bought by English gold? Is it love  
the lying's for?  
Morn and eve, night and day,  
Have I piloted your bay,  
Entered free and anchored fast at the foot  
of Solidor.  
Burn the fleet and ruin France? That  
were worse than fifty Hagues!  
Sirs, they know I speak the truth!  
Sirs, believe me there's a way!  
Only let me lead the line,  
Have the biggest ship to steer,  
Get this "Formidable" clear,  
Make the others follow mine,  
And I lead them, most and least, by a  
passage I know well,  
Right to Solidor past Grève,  
And there lay them safe and sound;  
And if one ship misbehave,—  
—Keel so much as grate the ground,  
Why, I've nothing but my life,—here's my  
head!' cries Hervé Riel.

## HERVÉ RIEL

### VII

Not a minute more to wait.  
 'Steer us in, then, small and great!  
 Take the helm, lead the line, save the  
 squadron!' cried its chief.  
 Captains, give the sailor place!  
 He is Admiral, in brief.  
 Still the north-wind, by God's grace!  
 See the noble fellow's face  
 As the big ship, with a bound,  
 Clears the entry like a hound,  
 Keeps the passage, as its inch of way were  
 the wide sea's profound!  
 See, safe thro' shoal and rock,  
 How they follow in a flock,  
 Not a ship that misbehaves, not a keel that  
 grates the ground,  
 Not a spar that comes to grief!  
 The peril, see, is past.  
 All are harboured to the last,  
 And just as Hervé Riel hollas 'Anchor!'—  
 sure as fate,  
 Up the English come,—too late!

### VIII

So, the storm subsides to calm:  
 They see the green trees wave  
 On the heights o'erlooking Grève.  
 Hearts that bled are stanch'd with balm.  
 'Just our rapture to enhance,  
 Let the English rake the bay,  
 Gnash their teeth and glare askance  
 As they cannonade away!  
 'Neath rampired Solidor pleasant riding  
 on the Rance!  
 How hope succeeds despair on each Cap-  
 tain's countenance!  
 Out burst all with one accord,  
 'This is Paradise for Hell!  
 Let France, let France's King  
 Thank the man that did the thing!  
 What a shout, and all one word,  
 'Hervé Riel!  
 As he stepped in front once more,  
 Not a symptom of surprise  
 In the frank blue Breton eyes,  
 Just the same man as before.

### IX

Then said Damfreville, 'My friend,  
 I must speak out at the end,  
 Though I find the speaking hard.  
 Praise is deeper than the lips:  
 You have saved the King his ships,  
 You must name your own reward.  
 'Faith, our sun was near eclipse!  
 Demand whate'er you will,  
 France remains your debtor still.  
 Ask to heart's content and have! or my  
 name's not Damfreville.'

### X

Then a beam of fun outbroke  
 On the bearded mouth that spoke,

As the honest heart laughed through  
 Those frank eyes of Breton blue:  
 'Since I needs must say my say,  
 Since on board the duty's done,  
 And from Malo Roads to Croisic Point,  
 what is it but a run?—  
 Since 'tis ask and have, I may—  
 Since the others go ashore—  
 Come! A good whole holiday!  
 Leave to go and see my wife, whom I call  
 the Belle Aurore!  
 That he asked and that he got,—nothing  
 more.

### XI

Name and deed alike are lost:  
 Not a pillar nor a post  
 In his Croisic keeps alive the feat as it  
 befell;  
 Not a head in white and black  
 On a single fishing-smack,  
 In memory of the man but for whom had  
 gone to wrack  
 All that France saved from the fight  
 whence England bore the bell.  
 Go to Paris. rank on rank  
 Search the heroes flung pell-mell  
 On the Louvre, face and flank!  
 You shall look long enough ere you  
 come to Hervé Riel.  
 So, for better and for worse,  
 Hervé Riel, accept my verse!  
 In my verse, Hervé Riel, do thou once  
 more  
 Save the squadron, honour France, love  
 thy wife the Belle Aurore!

## A FORGIVENESS

I AM indeed the personage you know.  
 As for my wife,—what happened long  
 ago,—  
 You have a right to question me, as I  
 Am bound to answer.

('Son, a fit reply!'

The monk half spoke, half ground through  
 his clenched teeth,  
 At the confession-grate I knelt beneath.)

Thus then all happened, Father! Power  
 and place

I had as still I nave. I ran life's race,  
 With the whole world to see, as only strains  
 His strength some athlete whose prodi-  
 gious gains

Of good appal him: happy to excess,—  
 Work freely done should balance happi-  
 ness

Fully enjoyed; and, since beneath my roof  
 Housed she who made home heaven, in  
 heaven's behoof

I went forth every day, and all day long  
 Worked for the world. Look, how the  
 labourer's song

## A FORGIVENESS

Cheers him! Thus sang my soul, at each sharp throe  
Of labouring flesh and blood—'She loves me so!'

One day, perhaps such song so knit the nerve  
That work grew play and vanished. 'I deserve

Haply my heaven an hour before the time!' I laughed, as silverly the clockhouse-chime  
Surprised me passing through the postern-gate

—Not the main entry where the menials wait

And wonder why the world's affairs allow  
The master sudden leisure. That was how I took the private garden-way for once.

Forth from the alcove, I saw start, ensconce  
Himself behind the porphyry vase, a man.  
My fancies in the natural order ran:

'A spy,—perhaps a foe in ambushade,—  
A thief,—more like, a sweetheart of some maid  
Who pitched on the alcove for tryst perhaps.'

'Stand there!' I bid.

Whereat my man but wraps  
His face the closelier with uplifted arm  
Whereon the cloak lies, strikes in blind alarm

This and that pedestal as,—stretch and stoop,—

Now in, now out of sight, he thrids the group

Of statues, marble god and goddess ranged  
Each side the pathway, till the gate's exchanged

For safety: one step thence, the street, you know!

Thus far I followed with my gaze. Then, slow,

Near on admiringly, I breathed again,  
And—back to that last fancy of the train—  
'A danger risked for hope of just a word  
With—which of all my nest may be the bird

This poacher covets for her plumage, pray?  
Carmen? Juana? Carmen seems too gay  
For such adventure, while Juana's grave  
—Would scorn the folly. I applaud the knave!

He had the eye, could single from my brood

His proper fledgeling!

As I turned, there stood  
In face of me, my wife stone-still stone-white.

Whether one bound had brought her,—  
at first sight

Of what she judged the encounter, sure to be

Next moment, of the venturesome man and me,—

Brought her to clutch and keep me from my prey:

Whether impelled because her death no day

Could come so absolutely opportune  
As now at joy's height, like a year in June  
Stayed at the fall of its first ripened rose:  
Or whether hungry for my hate—who knows?—

Eager to end an irksome lie, and taste  
Our tingling true relation, hate embraced

By hate one naked moment:—anyhow  
There stone-still stone-white stood my wife, but now

The woman who made heaven within my house.

Ay, she who faced me was my very spouse  
As well as love—you are to recollect!

'Stay!' she said. 'Keep at least one soul unspecked

With crime, that's spotless hitherto—your own!

Kill me who court the blessing, who alone  
Was, am, and shall be guilty, first to last!

The man lay helpless in the toils I cast  
About him, helpless as the statue there

Against that strangling bell-flower's bondage: tear

Away and tread to dust the parasite,  
But do the passive marble no despite!

I love him as I hate you. Kill me! Strike  
At one blow both infinitudes alike

Out of existence—hate and love! Whence love?

That's safe inside my heart, nor will remove

For any searching of your steel, I think.  
Whence hate? The secret lay on lip, at brink

Of speech, in one fierce tremble to escape,  
At every form wherein your love took shape,

At each new provocation of your kiss.  
Kill me!

We went in.

Next day after this,  
I felt as if the speech might come. I spoke—  
Easily, after all.

'The lifted cloak  
Was screen sufficient: I concern myself  
Hardly with laying hands on who for pelf—

Whate'er the ignoble kind—may prowl  
and brave

Cuffing and kicking proper to a knave

## A FORGIVENESS

Detected by my household's vigilance.  
Enough of such! As for my love-  
romance—

I, like our good Hidalgo, rub my eyes  
And wake and wonder how the film could  
rise

Which changed for me a barber's basin  
straight

Into—Mambrino's helm? I hesitate  
Nowise to say—God's sacramental cup!  
Why should I blame the brass which, bur-  
nished up,

Will blaze, to all but me, as good as gold?  
To me—a warning I was overbold

In judging metals. The Hidalgo waked  
Only to die, if I remember,—staked  
His life upon the basin's worth, and lost:  
While I confess torpidity at most

In here and there a limb; but, lame and halt,  
Still should I work on, still repair my fault  
Ere I took rest in death,—no fear at all!  
Now, work—no word before the curtain  
fall!

The 'curtain'? That of death on life, I  
meant:

My 'word,' permissible in death's event,  
Would be—truth, soul to soul; for, other-  
wise,

Day by day, three years long, there had to  
rise

And, night by night, to fall upon our  
stage—

Ours, doomed to public play by heritage—  
Another curtain, when the world, perforce  
Our critical assembly, in due course  
Came and went, witnessing, gave praise or  
blame

To art-mimetic. It had spoiled the game  
If, suffered to set foot behind our scene,  
The world had witnessed how stage-king  
and queen,

Gallant and lady, but a minute since  
Enarming each the other, would evince

No sign of recognition as they took  
His way and her way to whatever nook  
Waited them in the darkness either side  
Of that bright stage where lately groom  
and bride

Had fired the audience to a frenzy-fit  
Of sympathetic rapture—every whit  
Earned as the curtain fell on her and me,  
—Actors. Three whole years, nothing was  
to see

But calm and concord; where a speech was  
due

There came the speech: when smiles were  
wanted too

Smiles were as ready. In a place like mine,  
Where foreign and domestic cares com-  
bine,

There's audience every day and all day  
long;

But finally the last of the whole throng

Who linger lets one see his back. For her—  
Why, liberty and liking: I aver,  
Liking and liberty! For me—I breathed,  
Let my face rest from every wrinkle  
wreathed

Smile-like about the mouth, unlearned my  
task

Of personation till next day bade mask,  
And quietly betook me from that world  
To the real world, not pageant: there un-  
furled

In work, its wings, my soul, the "fretted  
power.

Three years I worked, each minute of each  
hour

Not claimed by acting:—work I may dis-  
pense

With talk about, since work in evidence,  
Perhaps in history; who knows or cares?

After three years, this way, all unawares,  
Our acting ended. She and I, at close  
Of a loud night-feast, led, between two  
rows

Of bending male and female loyalty,  
Our lord the king down staircase, while,  
held high

At arm's length did the twisted tapers' flare  
Herald his passage from our palace, where  
Such visiting left glory evermore.

Again the ascent in public, till at door  
As we two stood by the saloon—now blank  
And disencumbered of its guests—there  
sank

A whisper in my ear, so low and yet  
So unmistakable!

'I half forget

The chamber you repair to, and I want  
Occasion for one short word—if you grant  
That grace—within a certain room you  
called

Our "Study," for you wrote there while I  
scrawled

Some paper full of faces for my sport.  
That room I can remember. Just one short  
Word with you there, for the remem-  
brance' sake!

'Follow me thither!' I replied.

We break

The gloom a little, as with guiding lamp  
I lead the way, leave warmth and cheer, by  
damp

Blind disused serpentine ways afar  
From where the habitable chambers are,  
Ascend, descend stairs tunnelled through  
the stone,—

Always in silence,—till I reach the lone  
Chamber sepulchred for my very own  
Out of the palace-quarry. When a boy,  
Here was my fortress, stronghold from  
annoy,

## A FORGIVENESS

Proof-positive of ownership; in youth  
I garnered up my gleanings here—uncouth  
But precious relics of vain hopes, vain  
fears;

Finally, this became in after years  
My closet of entrenchment to withstand  
Invasion of the foe on every hand—  
The multifarious herd in bower and hall,  
State-room,—rooms whatsoe'er the style,  
which call

On masters to be mindful that, before  
Men, they must look like men and some-  
thing more.

Here,—when our lord the king's bestow-  
ment ceased  
To deck me on the day that, golden-fleeced,  
I touched ambition's height,—'twas here,  
released

From glory (always symbolled by a chain!)  
No sooner was I privileged to gain  
My secret domicile than glad I flung  
That last toy on the table—gazed where  
hung

On hook my father's gift, the arquebuss—  
And asked myself 'Shall I envisage thus  
The new prize and the old prize, when I  
reach

Another year's experience?—own that each  
Equalled advantage—sportsman's—states-  
man's tool?

That brought me down an eagle, this—a  
fool!

Into which room on entry, I set down  
The lamp, and turning saw whose rustled  
gown

Had told me my wife followed, pace for  
pace.

Each of us looked the other in the face.  
She spoke. 'Since I could die now . . .'

(To explain

Why that first struck me, know—not once  
again

Since the adventure at the porphyry's edge  
Three years before, which sundered like a  
wedge

Her soul from mine,—though daily, smile  
to smile,

We stood before the public,—all the while  
Not once had I distinguished, in that face  
I paid observance to, the faintest trace  
Of feature more than requisite for eyes  
To do their duty by and recognize:

So did I force mine to obey my will  
And pry no further. There exists such  
skill,—

Those know who need it. What physician  
shrinks

From needful contact with a corpse? He  
drinks

No plague so long as thirst for knowledge  
—not

An idler impulse—prompts inquiry.  
What,

And will you disbelieve in power to bid  
Our spirit back to bounds, as though we  
chid

A child from scrutiny that's just and right  
In manhood? Sense, not soul, accom-  
plished sight,

Reported daily she it was—not how  
Nor why a change had come to cheek and  
brow.)

'Since I could die now of the truth con-  
cealed,

Yet dare not, must not die—so seems re-  
vealed

The Virgin's mind to me—for death means  
peace,

Wherein no lawful part have I, whose lease  
Of life and punishment the truth avowed  
May haply lengthen,—let me push the  
shroud

Away, that steals to muffle ere is just  
My penance-fire in snow! I dare—I must  
Live, by avowal of the truth—this truth—  
I loved you! Thanks for the fresh serpent's  
tooth

That, by a prompt new pang more exquisite  
Than all preceding torture, proves me  
right!

I loved you yet I lost you! May I go  
Burn to the ashes, now my shame you  
know?'

I think there never was such—how ex-  
press?—

Horror coquetting with voluptuousness,  
As in those arms of Eastern workman-  
ship—

Yataghan, kandjar, things that rend and  
rip,

Gash rough, slash smooth, help hate so  
many ways,

Yet ever keep a beauty that betrays  
Love still at work with the artificer

Throughout his quaint devising. Why  
prefer,

Except for love's sake, that a blade should  
writhe

And bicker like a flame?—now play the  
scythe

As if some broad neck tempted,—now  
contract

And needle off into a fineness lacked  
For just that puncture which the heart de-  
mands?

Then, such adornment! Wherefore need  
our hands

Enclose not ivory alone, nor gold  
Roughened for use, but jewels? Nay, be-  
hold!

Fancy my favourite—which I seem to  
grasp

While I describe the luxury. No asp  
Is diaped more delicate round throat  
Than this below the handle! These denote



## A FORGIVENESS

—These mazy lines meandering, to end  
Only in flesh they open—what intend  
They else but water-purlings—pale con-  
trast

With the life-crimson where they blend at  
last?

And mark the handle's dim pellucid green,  
Carved, the hard jadestone, as you pinch  
a bean,

Into a sort of parrot-bird! He pecks  
A grape-bunch; his two eyes are ruby-  
specks

Pure from the mine: seen this way,—glassy  
blank,

But turn them,—lo the inmost fire, that  
shrank

From sparkling, sends a red dart right to  
aim!

Why did I choose such toys? Perhaps the  
game

Of peaceful men is warlike, just as men  
War-wearied get amusement from that  
pen

And paper we grow sick of—statesfolk  
tired

Of merely (when such measures are re-  
quired)

Dealing out doom to people by three  
words,

A signature and seal: we play with swords  
Suggestive of quick process. That is how  
I came to like the toys described you now,  
Store of which glittered on the walls and  
strewed

The table, even, while my wife pursued  
Her purpose to its ending. 'Now you  
know

This shame, my three years' torture, let  
me go,

Burn to the very ashes! You—I lost,  
Yet you—I loved!

The thing I pity most  
In men is—action prompted by surprise  
Of anger: men? nay, bulls—whose onset  
lies

At instance of the firework and the goad!  
Once the foe prostrate,—trampling once  
bestowed,—

Prompt follows placability, regret,  
Atonement. Trust me, blood-warmth  
never yet

Betokened strong will! As no leap of pulse  
Pricked me, that first time, so did none  
convulse

My veins at this occasion for resolve.  
Had that devolved which did not then de-  
volve

Upon me, I had done—what now to do  
Was quietly apparent.

'Tell me who  
The man was, crouching by the porphyry  
vase!'

'No, never! All was folly in his case,  
All guilt in mine. I tempted, he complied.'

'And yet you loved me?'

'Loved you. Double-dyed  
In folly and in guilt, I thought you gave  
Your heart and soul away from me to slave  
At statecraft. Since my right in you  
seemed lost,

I stung myself to teach you, to your cost,  
What you rejected could be prized beyond  
Life, heaven, by the first fool I threw a fond  
Look on, a fatal word to.'

'And you still  
Love me? Do I conjecture well or ill?'

'Conjecture—well or ill! I had three years  
To spend in learning you.'

'We both are peers  
In knowledge, therefore: since three years  
are spent

'Ere thus much of yourself I learn—who  
went

Back to the house, that day, and brought  
my mind

To bear upon your action, uncombined  
Motive from motive, till the dross, de-  
prived

Of every purer particle, survived  
At last in native simple hideousness,  
Utter contemptibility, nor less  
Nor more. Contemptibility—exempt  
How could I, from its proper due—con-  
tempt?

I have too much despised you to divert  
My life from its set course by help or hurt  
Of your all-despicable life—perturb  
The calm, I work in, by—men's mouths  
to curb,

Which at such news were clamorous  
enough—

Men's eyes to shut before my broidered  
stuff

With the huge hole there, my emblazoned  
wall

Blank where a scutcheon hung,—by,  
worse than all,

Each day's procession, my paraded life  
Robbed and impoverished through the  
wanting wife

—Now that my life (which means—my  
work) was grown

Riches indeed! Once, just this worth alone  
Seemed work to have, that profit gained  
thereby

Of good and praise would—how reward-  
ingly!—

Fall at your feet,—a crown I hoped to cast  
Before your love, my love should crown  
at last.

No love remaining to cast crown before,  
My love stopped work now: but contempt  
the more

## A FORGIVENESS

Impelled me task as ever head and hand,  
Because the very fiends weave ropes of  
sand

Rather than taste pure hell in idleness.  
Therefore I kept my memory down by  
stress

Of daily work I had no mind to stay  
For the world's wonder at the wife away.  
Oh, it was easy all of it, believe,  
For I despised you! But your words re-  
trieve

Importantly the past. No hate assumed  
The mask of love at any time! There  
gloomed

A moment when love took hate's sem-  
blance, urged  
By causes you declare; but love's self  
purged

Away a fancied wrong I did both loves  
—Yours and my own: by no hate's help,  
it proves,

Purgation was attempted. Then, you rise  
High by how many a grade! I did despise—  
I do but hate you. Let hate's punishment  
Replace contempt's! First step to which  
ascent—

Write down your own words I re-utter  
you!

*"I loved my husband and I hated—who  
He was, I took up as my first chance, mere  
Mud-ball to fling and make love foul with!"*

Here  
Lies paper!"

'Would my blood for ink suffice!'

'It may: this minion from a land of spice,  
Silk, feather—every bird of jewelled  
breast—

This poignant's beauty, ne'er so lightly  
prest

Above your heart there . . .'

'Thus?'

'It flows, I see.  
Dip there the point and write!'

'Dictate to me!

Nay, I remember.'

And she wrote the words.  
I read them. Then—'Since love, in you,  
affords

License for hate, in me, to quench (I say)  
Contempt—why, hate itself has passed  
away

In vengeance—foreign to contempt. De-  
part

Peacefully to that death which Eastern art  
Imbued this weapon with, if tales be true!  
Love will succeed to hate. I pardon you—  
Dead in our chamber!'

True as truth the tale.  
She died ere morning: then, I saw how pale

Her cheek was ere it wore day's paint-  
disguise,

And what a hollow darkened 'neath her  
eyes,

Now that I used my own. She sleeps, as  
erst

Beloved, in this your church: ay, yours!

Immersed

In thought so deeply, Father? Sad, per-  
haps?

For whose sake, hers or mine or his who  
wraps

—Still plain I seem to see!—about his  
head

The idle cloak,—about his heart (instead  
Of cuirass) some fond hope he may elude  
My vengeance in the cloister's solitude?  
Hardly, I think! As little helped his brow  
The cloak then, Father—as your grate  
helps now!

## CENCIAJA

Ogni cencio vuol entrare in bucato.  
—*Italian Proverb.*

MAY I print, Shelley, how it came to pass  
That when your Beatrice seemed—by  
lapse

Of many a long month since her sentence  
fell—

Assured of pardon for the parricide,—  
By intercession of staunch friends, or, say,  
By certain pricks of conscience in the Pope  
Conniver at Francesco Cenci's guilt,—  
Suddenly all things changed and Clement  
grew

'Stern,' as you state, 'nor to be moved nor  
bent,

But said these three words coldly "*She  
must die:*"

Subjoining "*Pardon? Paolo Santa Croce  
Murdered his mother also yestereve,  
And he is fled: she shall not flee at least!*"

—So, to the letter, sentence was fulfilled?  
Shelley, may I condense verbosity

Tha lies before me, into some few words  
Of English, and illustrate your superb

Achievement by a rescued anecdote,  
No great things, only new and true beside?

As if some mere familiar of a house  
Should venture to accost the group at gaze

Before its Titian, famed the wide world  
through,

And supplement such pictured master-  
piece

By whisper 'Searching in the archives here,  
I found the reason of the Lady's fate,

And how by accident it came to pass  
She wears the halo and displays the palm:

Who, haply, else had never suffered—no,  
Nor graced our gallery, by consequence.'

Who loved the work would like the little  
news

## CENCIAJA

Who lauds your poem lends an ear to me  
 Relating how the penalty was paid  
 By one Marchese dell' Oriolo, called  
 Onofrio Santa Croce otherwise,  
 For his complicity in matricide  
 With Paolo his own brother,—he whose  
 crime  
 And flight induced 'those three words—  
 She must die.'  
 Thus I unroll you then the manuscript.

'God's justice'—(of the multiplicity  
 Of such communications extant still,  
 Recording, each, injustice done by God  
 In person of his Vicar-upon-earth,  
 Scarce one but leads off to the self-same  
 tune)—  
 'God's justice, tardy though it prove per-  
 chance,  
 Rests never on the track until it reach  
 Delinquency. In proof I cite the case  
 Of Paolo Santa Croce.'

Many times  
 The youngster,—having been importunate  
 That Marchesine Costanza, who remained  
 His widowed mother, should supplant the  
 heir  
 Her elder son, and substitute himself  
 In sole possession of her faculty,—  
 And meeting just as often with rebuff,—  
 Blinded by so exorbitant a lust  
 Of gold, the youngster straightway tasked  
 his wits,  
 Casting about to kill the lady—thus.

He first, to cover his iniquity,  
 Writes to Onofrio Santa Croce, then  
 Authoritative lord, acquainting him  
 Their mother was contamination—  
 wrought  
 Like hell-fire in the beauty of their House  
 By dissoluteness and abandonment  
 Of soul and body to impure delight.  
 Moreover, since she suffered from disease,  
 Those symptoms which her death made  
 manifest  
 Hydropic, he affirmed were fruits of sin  
 About to bring confusion and disgrace  
 Upon the ancient lineage and high fame  
 O' the family, when published. Duty  
 bound,  
 He asked his brother—what a son should  
 do?

Which when Marchese dell' Oriolo  
 heard  
 By letter, being absent at his land  
 Oriolo, he made answer, this, no more:  
 'It must behove a son,—things haply so,—  
 To act as honour prompts a cavalier  
 And son, perform his duty to all three,  
 Mother and brothers'—here advice broke  
 off.

By which advice informed and fortified,  
 As he professed himself—since bound by  
 birth  
 To hear God's voice in primogeniture—  
 Paolo, who kept his mother company  
 In her domain Subiaco, straightway dared  
 His whole enormity of enterprise  
 And, falling on her, stabbed the lady dead;  
 Whose death demonstrated her innocence,  
 And happened,—by the way,—since Jesus  
 Christ  
 Died to save man, just sixteen hundred  
 years.  
 Costanza was of aspect beautiful  
 Exceedingly, and seemed, although in age  
 Sixty about, to far surpass her peers  
 The coëtaneous dames, in youth and grace.

Done the misdeed, its author takes to  
 flight,  
 Foiling thereby the justice of the world:  
 Not God's however,—God, be sure,  
 knows well  
 The way to clutch a culprit. Witness here!  
 The present sinner, when he least expects,  
 Snug-cornered somewhere i' the Basilicate,  
 Stumbles upon his death by violence.  
 A man of blood assaults a man of blood  
 And slays him somehow. This was after-  
 ward:  
 Enough, he promptly met with his deserts,  
 And, ending thus, permits we end with  
 him,  
 And push forthwith to this important  
 point—  
 His matricide fell out, of all the days,  
 Precisely when the law-procedure closed  
 Respecting Count Francesco Cenci's death  
 Chargeable on his daughter, sons and wife.  
 'Thus patricide was matched with matri-  
 cide,'  
 A poet not inelegantly rhymed:  
 Nay, fratricide—those Princes Massimi!—  
 Which so disturbed the spirit of the Pope  
 That all the likelihood Rome entertained  
 Of Beatrice's pardon vanished straight,  
 And she endured the piteous death.

Now see  
 The sequel—what effect commandment  
 had  
 For strict inquiry into this last case,  
 When Cardinal Aldobrandini (great  
 His efficacy—nephew to the Pope)  
 Was bidden crush—ay, though his very  
 hand  
 Got soil i' the act—crime spawning every-  
 where!  
 Because, when all endeavour had been  
 used  
 To catch the aforesaid Paolo, all in vain—  
 'Make perquisition' quoth our Eminence,  
 'Throughout his now deserted domicile!  
 Ransack the palace, roof and floor, to find

If haply any scrap of writing, hid  
In nook or corner, may convict—who  
knows?—

Brother Onofrio of intelligence  
With brother Paolo, as in brotherhood  
Is but too likely: crime spawns every-  
where.'

And, every cranny searched accord-  
ingly,  
There comes to light—O lynx-eyed Car-  
dinal!—

Onofrio's unconsidered writing-scrap,  
The letter in reply to Paolo's prayer.  
The word of counsel that—things proving  
so,

Paolo should act the proper knightly part,  
And do as was incumbent on a son,  
A brother—and a man of birth, be sure!

Whereat immediately the officers  
Proceeded to arrest Onofrio—found  
At foot-ball, child's play, unaware of harm,  
Safe with his friends, the Orsini, at their  
seat

Monte Giordano; as he left the house  
He came upon the watch in wait for him  
Set by the Barigel,—was caught and caged.

News of which capture being, that same  
hour,  
Conveyed to Rome, forthwith our Emi-  
nence,

Commands Taverna, Governor and Judge,  
To have the process in especial care,  
Be, first to last, not only president  
In person, but inquisitor as well,  
Nor trust the by-work to a substitute:  
Bids him not, squeamish, keep the bench,  
but scrub

The floor of Justice, so to speak,—go try  
His best in prison with the criminal:  
Promising, as reward for by-work done  
Fairly on all-fours, that, success obtained  
And crime avowed, or such connivency  
With crime as should procure a decent  
death—

Himself will humbly beg—which means,  
procure—

The Hat and Purple from his relative  
The Pope, and so repay a diligence  
Which, meritorious in the Cenci-case,  
Mounts plainly here to Purple and the Hat.

Whereupon did my lord the Governor  
So masterfully exercise the task  
Enjoined him, that he, day by day, and  
week

By week, and month by month, from first  
to last

Toiled for the prize: now, punctual at his  
place,

Played Judge, and now, assiduous at his  
post,

Inquisitor—pressed cushion and scoured  
plank,

Early and late. Noon's fervour and night's  
chill,

Nought moved whom morn would,  
purpling, make amends!

So that observers laughed as, many a day,  
He left home, in July when day is flame,

Posted to Tordinona-prison, plunged  
Into a vault where daylong night is ice,

There passed his eight hours on a stretch,  
content,

Examining Onofrio: all the stress  
Of all examination steadily

Converging into one pin-point,—he  
pushed

Tentative now of head and now of heart.  
As when the nuthatch tars and tries the nut

This side and that side till the kernel  
sound,—

So did he press the sole and single point  
—What was the very meaning of the  
phrase

*'Do as beseems an honoured cavalier'?*

Which one persistent question-torture,  
—plied

Day by day, week by week, and month by  
month,

Morn, noon and night,—fatigued away a  
mind

Grown imbecile by darkness, solitude,  
And one vivacious memory gnawing there

As when a corpse is coffined with a snake  
—Fatigued Onofrio into what might seem

Admission that perchance his judgment  
groped

So blindly, feeling for an issue—aught  
With semblance of an issue from the toils

Cast of a sudden round feet late so free,  
He possibly might have envisaged, scarce

Recoiled from—even were the issue death  
—Even her death whose life was death

and worse!

Always provided that the charge of crime,  
Each jot and tittle of the charge were true.

In such a sense, belike, he might advise  
His brother to expurgate crime with . . .  
well,

With blood, if blood must follow on '*the  
course*

*Taken as might beseem a cavalier.'*

Whereupon process ended, and report  
Was made without a minute of delay

To Clement who, because of those two  
crimes

O' the Massimi and Cenci flagrant late,  
Must needs impatiently desire result.

Result obtained, he bade the Governor  
Summon the Congregation and despatch.

Summons made, sentence passed accord-  
ingly

## CENCIAJA

—Death by beheading. When his death-decree

Was intimated to Onofrio, all  
Man could do—that did he to save himself.  
'Twas much, the having gained for his  
defence

The Advocate o'the Poor, with natural help  
Of many noble friendly persons fain  
To disengage a man of family,  
So young too, from his grim entangle-  
ment:

But Cardinal Aldobrandini ruled  
There must be no diversion of the law.  
Justice is justice, and the magistrate  
Bears not the sword in vain. Who sins  
must die.

So, the Marchese had his head cut off,  
With Rome to see, a concourse infinite,  
In Place Saint Angelo beside the Bridge:  
Where, demonstrating magnanimity  
Adequate to his birth and breed,—poor  
boy!—

He made the people the accustomed  
speech,

Exhorted them to true faith, honest works,  
And special good behaviour as regards  
A parent of no matter what the sex,  
Bidding each son take warning from him-  
self.

Truly, it was considered in the boy  
Stark staring lunacy, no less, to snap  
So plain a bait, be hooked and hauled  
ashore

By such an angler as the Cardinal!  
Why make confession of his privity  
To Paolo's enterprise? Mere sealing lips—  
Or, better, saying 'When I counselled him  
"To do as might beseem a cavalier,"  
What could I mean but "*Hide our parent's*  
*shame*

*As Christian ought, by aid of Holy Church!*  
*Bury it in a convent—ay, beneath*  
*Enough dotation to prevent its ghost*  
*From troubling earth!"* Mere saying thus,  
—'tis plain,

Not only were his life the recompense,  
But he had manifestly proved himself  
True Christian, and in lieu of punishment  
Got praise of all men. So the populace.

Anyhow, when the Pope made promise  
good

(That of Aldobrandini, near and dear)  
And gave Taverna, who had toiled so  
much,

A Cardinal's equipment, some such word  
As this from mouth to ear went saucily:  
'Taverna's cap is dyed in what he drew  
From Santa Croce's veins!' So joked the  
world.

I add: Onofrio left one child behind,  
A daughter named Valeria, dowered with  
grace

Abundantly of soul and body, doomed  
To life the shorter for her father's fate.  
By death of her, the Marquisate returned  
To that Orsini House from whence it  
came:

Oriolo, having passed as donative  
To Santa Croce from their ancestors.

And no word more? By all means!  
Would you know

The authoritative answer, when folk urged  
'What made Aldobrandini, hound-like  
staunch,

Hunt out of life a harmless simpleton?'  
The answer was—'Hatred implacable,  
By reason they were rivals in their love.'  
The Cardinal's desire was to a dame  
Whose favour was Onofrio's. Pricked with  
pride,

The simpleton must ostentatiously  
Display a ring, the Cardinal's love-gift,  
Given to Onofrio as the lady's gage;  
Which ring on finger, as he put forth hand  
To draw a tapestry, the Cardinal  
Saw and knew, gift and owner, old and  
young;

Whereon a fury entered him—the fire  
He quenched with what could quench fire  
only—blood.

Nay, more: there want not who affirm to  
boot,

The unwise boy, a certain festal eve,  
Feigned ignorance of who the wight might  
be

That pressed too closely on him with a  
crowd.

He struck the Cardinal a blow: and then,  
To put a face upon the incident,  
Dared next day, smug as ever, go pay court  
I' the Cardinal's antechamber. Mark and  
mend,

Ye youth, by this example how may greed  
Vainglorious operate in worldly souls!'

So ends the chronicler, beginning with  
'God's justice, tardy though it prove re-  
chance,

Rests never till it reach delinquency.'  
Ay, or how otherwise had come to pass  
That Victor rules, this present year, in  
Rome?

## FILIPPO BALDINUCCI ON THE PRIVILEGE OF BURIAL

A REMINISCENCE OF A.D. 1676

I

'No, boy, we must not'—so began  
My Uncle (he's with God long since)  
A-petting me, the good old man!

'We must not'—and he seemed to  
wince,

## FILIPPO BALDINUCCI ON THE PRIVILEGE OF BURIAL

And lost that laugh whereto had grown  
His chuckle at my piece of news,  
How cleverly I aimed my stone—  
'I fear we must not pelt the Jews!

### II

'When I was young indeed,—ah, faith  
Was young and strong in Florence too!  
We Christians never dreamed of scathe  
Because we cursed or kicked the crew.  
But now—well, well! The olive-crops  
Weighed double then, and Arno's  
pranks  
Would always spare religious shops  
Whenever he o'erflowed his banks!

### III

'I'll tell you'—and his eye regained  
Its twinkle—'tell you something  
choice!  
Something may help you keep unstained  
Your honest zeal to stop the voice  
Of unbelief with stone-throw—spite  
Of laws, which modern fools enact,  
That we must suffer Jews in sight  
Go wholly unmolested! Fact!

### IV

'There was, then, in my youth, and yet  
Is, by our San Frediano, just  
Below the Blessed Olivet,  
A wayside ground wherein they thrust  
Their dead,—these Jews,—the more our  
shame!  
Except that, so they will but die,  
Christians perchance incur no blame  
In giving hogs a hoist to styte.

### V

'There, anyhow, Jews stow away  
Their dead; and,—such their inso-  
lence,—  
Slink at odd times to sing and pray  
As Christians do—all make-pretence!—  
Which wickedness they perpetrate  
Because they think no Christians see.  
They reckoned here, at any rate,  
'Without their host: ha, ha, he, he!

### VI

'For, what should join their plot of ground  
But a good Farmer's Christian field?  
The Jews had hedged their corner round  
With bramble-bush to keep concealed  
Their doings: for the public road  
Ran betwixt this their ground and that  
The Farmer's, where he ploughed and  
sowed,  
Grew corn for barn and grapes for  
vat.

### VII

'So, properly to guard his store  
And gall the unbelievers too,  
He builds a shrine and, what is more,  
Procures a painter whom I knew,

One Buti (he's with God) to paint  
A holy picture there—no less  
Than Virgin Mary free from taint  
Borne to the sky by angels: yes!

### VIII

Which shrine he fixed,—who says him  
nay?—  
A-facing with its picture-side  
Not, as you'd think, the public way.  
But just where sought these hounds to  
hide  
Their carrion from that very truth  
Of Mary's triumph: not a hound  
Could act his mummeries uncouth  
But Mary shamed the pack all round!

### IX

'Now, if it was amusing, judge!  
—To see the company arrive,  
Each Jew intent to end his trudge  
And take his pleasure (though alive)  
With all his Jewish kith and kin  
Below ground, have his venom out,  
Sharpen his wits for next day's sin,  
Curse Christians, and so home, no  
doubt!

### X

'Whereas, each phyz upturned beholds  
Mary, I warrant, soaring brave!  
And in a trice, beneath the folds  
Of filthy garb which gowns each knave,  
Down drops it—there to hide grimace,  
Contortion of the mouth and nose  
At finding Mary in the place  
They'd keep for Pilate, I suppose!

### XI

'At last, they will not brook—not they!—  
Longer such outrage on their tribe:  
So, in some hole and corner, lay  
Their heads together—how to bribe  
The meritorious Farmer's self  
To straight undo his work, restore  
Their chance to meet and muse on self-  
Pretending sorrow, as before!

### XII

'Forthwith, a posse, if you please,  
Of Rabbi This and Rabbi That  
Almost go down upon their knees  
To get him lay the picture flat.  
The spokesman, eighty years of age,  
Grey as a badger, with a goat's  
Not only beard but bleat, 'gins wage  
War with our Mary. Thus he dotes:—

### XIII

*"Friends, grant a grace! How Hebrews  
toil  
Through life in Florence—why relate  
To those who lay the burden, spoil  
Our paths of peace? We bear our fate,*

## FILIPPO BALDINUCCI ON THE PRIVILEGE OF BURIAL

*But when with life the long toil ends,  
Why must you—the expression craves  
Pardon, but truth compels me, friends!—  
Why must you plague us in our graves?*

### XIV

*“Thoughtlessly plague, I would believe!  
For how can you—the lords of ease  
By nurture, birthright—e’en conceive  
Our luxury to lie with trees  
And turf,—the cricket and the bird  
Left for our last companionship:  
No harsh deed, no unkindly word,  
No frowning brow nor scornful lip!*

### XV

*“Death’s luxury, we now rehearse  
While, living, through your streets we  
fare  
And take your hatred: nothing worse  
Have we, once dead and safe, to bear!  
So we refresh our souls, fulfil  
Our works, our daily tasks; and thus  
Gather you grain—earth’s harvest—still  
The wheat for you, the straw for us.*

### XVI

*“‘What flouting in a face, what harm,  
In just a lady borne from bier  
By boys’ heads, wings for leg and arm?’  
You question. Friends, the harm is  
here—  
That just when our last sigh is heaved,  
And we would fain thank God and you  
For labour done and peace achieved,  
Back comes the Past in full review!*

### XVII

*“At sight of just that simple flag,  
Starts the foe-feeling serpent-like  
From slumber. Leave it lulled, nor drag—  
Though fangless—forth, what needs must  
strike  
When stricken sore, though stroke be vain  
Against the mailed oppressor! Give  
Play to our fancy that we gain  
Life’s rights when once we cease to live!*

### XVIII

*“Thus much to courtesy, to kind,  
To conscience! Now to Florence folk!  
There’s core beneath this apple-rind,  
Beneath this white-of-egg there’s yolk!  
Beneath this prayer to courtesy,  
Kind, conscience—there’s a sum to  
pouch!  
How many ducats down will buy  
Our shame’s removal, sirs? Avouch!*

### XIX

*“Removal, not destruction, sirs!  
Just turn your picture! Let it front  
The public path! Or memory errs,  
Or that same public path is wont*

*To witness many a chance befall  
Of lust, theft, bloodshed—sins enough,  
Wherein our Hebrew part is small.  
Convert yourselves!”—he cut up rough*

### XX

*“Look you, how soon a service paid  
Religion yields the servant fruit!  
A prompt reply our Farmer made  
So following: “Sirs, to grant your suit  
Involves much danger! How? Transpose  
Our Lady? Stop the chastisement,  
All for your good, herself bestows?  
What wonder if I grudge consent?*

### XXI

*“—Yet grant it: since, what cash I take  
Is so much saved from wicked use.  
We know you! And, for Mary’s sake,  
A hundred ducats shall induce  
Concession to your prayer. One day  
Suffices: Master Buti’s brush  
Turns Mary round the other way,  
And deluges your side with slush.*

### XXII

*“Down with the ducats therefore!” Dump,  
Dump, dump it falls, each counted  
piece,  
Hard gold. Then out of door they stump,  
These dogs, each brisk as with new lease  
Of life, I warrant,—glad he’ll die  
Henceforward just as he may choose,  
Be buried and in clover lie!  
Well said Esaias—“stiff-necked Jews!”*

### XXIII

*“Off posts without a minute’s loss  
Our Farmer, once the cash in poke,  
And summons Buti—ere its floss  
Have time to fade from off the joke—  
To chop and change his werk, undo  
The done side, make the side, now  
blank,  
Recipient of our Lady—who,  
Displaced thus, had these dogs to thank!*

### XXIV

*“Now, boy, you’re hardly to instruct  
In technicalities of Art!  
My nephew’s childhood sure has sucked  
Along with mother’s-milk some part  
Of painter’s-practice—learned, at least,  
How expeditiously is plied  
A work in fresco—never ceased  
When once begun—a day, each side.*

### XXV

*“So, Buti—(he’s with God)—begins:  
First covers up the shrine all round  
With hoarding; then, as like as twins,  
Paints, t’other side the burial-ground,  
New Mary, every point the same;  
Next, sluices over, as agreed,  
The old; and last—but, spoil the game  
By telling you? Not I, indeed!*

# FILIPPO BALDINUCCI ON THE PRIVILEGE OF BURIAL

XXVI

'Well, ere the week was half at end,  
Out came the object of this zeal,  
This fine alacrity to spend  
Hard money for mere dead men's weal!  
How think you? That old spokesman  
Jew  
Was High Priest, and he had a wife  
As old, and she was dying too,  
And wished to end in peace her life!

XXVII

'And he must humour dying whims,  
And soothe her with the idle hope  
They'd say their prayers and sing their  
hymns  
As if her husband were the Pope!  
And she did die—believing just  
This privilege was purchased! Dead  
In comfort through her foolish trust!  
"Stiff-necked ones," well Esaias said!

XXVIII

'So, Sabbath morning, out of gate  
And on to way, what sees our arch  
Good Farmer? Why, they hoist their  
freight—  
The corpse—on shoulder, and so,  
march!  
"Now for it, Buti!" In the nick  
Of time 'tis pully-haully, hence  
With hoarding! O'er the wayside quick  
There's Mary plain in evidence!

XXIX

And here's the convoy halting: right!  
O they are bent on howling psalms  
And growling prayers, when opposite!  
And yet they glance, for all their qualms,  
Approve that promptitude of his,  
The Farmer's—duly at his post  
To take due thanks from every phyz,  
Sour smirk—nay, surly smile almost!

XXX

Then earthward drops each brow again;  
The solemn task's resumed; they reach  
Their holy field—the unholy train:  
Enter its precinct, all and each,  
Wrapt somehow in their godless rites;  
Till, rites at end, up-waking, lo  
They lift their faces! What delights  
The mourners as they turn to go?

XXXI

'Ha, ha, he, he! On just the side  
They drew their purse-strings to make  
quit  
Of Mary,—Christ the Crucified  
Fronted them now—these biters bit!  
Never was such a hiss and snort,  
Such screwing nose and shooting lip!  
Their purchase—honey in report—  
Proved gall and verjuice at first sip!

XXXII

'Out they break, on they bustle, where,  
A-top of wall, the Farmer waits  
With Buti: never fun so rare!  
The Farmer has the best: he rates  
The rascal, as the old High Priest  
Takes on himself to sermonize—  
Nay; sneer "*We Jews supposed, at least,  
Theft was a crime in Christian eyes!*"

XXXIII

"Theft?" cries the Farmer. "*Eat your  
words!*  
*Show me what constitutes a breach  
Of faith in aught was said or heard!*  
*I promised you in plainest speech  
I'd take the thing you count disgrace  
And put it here—and here 'tis put!*  
*Did you suppose I'd leave the place  
Blank, therefore, just your rage to ghat?*

XXXIV

"*I guess you dared not stipulate  
For such a damned impertinence!*  
*So, quick, my greybeard, out of gate  
And in at Ghetto! Haste you hence!*  
*As long as I have house and land,  
To spite you irreligious chaps  
Here shall the Crucifixion stand—  
Unless you down with cash, perhaps!"*

XXXV

'So snickered he and Buti both.  
The Jews said nothing, interchanged  
A glance or two, renewed their oath  
To keep ears stopped and hearts es-  
tranged  
From grace, for all our Church can do;  
Then off they scuttle: sullen jog  
Homewards, against our Church to brew  
Fresh mischief in their synagogue.

XXXVI

'But next day—see what happened, boy!  
See why I bid you have a care  
How you pelt Jews! The knaves employ  
Such methods of revenge, forbear  
No outrage on our faith, when free  
To wreak their malice! Here they took  
So base a method—plague o' me  
If I record it in my Book!

XXXVII

'For, next day, while the Farmer sat  
Laughing with Buti, in his shop,  
At their successful joke,—rat-tat,—  
Door opens, and they're like to drop  
Down to the floor as in there stalks  
A six-feet-high herculean-built  
Young he-Jew with a beard that baulks  
Description. "*Help ere blood be spilt!*"

XXXVIII

—'Screamed Buti: for he recognized  
Whom but the son, no less no more,  
Of that High Priest his work surprised  
So pleasantly the day before!



# FILIPPO BALDINUCCI ON THE PRIVILEGE OF BURIAL

Son of the mother, then, whereof  
The bier he lent a shoulder to,  
And made the moans about, dared scoff  
At sober Christian grief—the Jew!

## XXXIX

“Sirs, I salute you! Never rise!  
No apprehension!” (Buti, white  
And trembling like a tub of size,  
Had tried to smuggle out of sight  
The picture’s self—the thing in oils,  
You know, from which a fresco’s  
dashed  
Which courage speeds while caution  
spoils)

“Stay and be praised, sir, unabashed!

## XL

“Praised,—ay, and paid too: for I come  
To buy that very work of yours.  
My poor abode, which boasts—well, some  
Few specimens of Art, secures  
Haply, a masterpiece indeed  
If I should find my humble means  
Suffice the outlay. So, proceed!  
Propose—ere prudence intervenes!”

## XLI

‘On Buti, cowering like a child,  
These words descended from aloft,  
In tone so ominously mild,  
With smile terrifically soft  
To that degree—could Buti dare  
(Poor fellow) use his brains, think  
twice?  
He asked, thus taken unaware,  
No more than just the proper price!

## XLII

“Done!” cries the monster. “I disburse  
Forthwith your moderate demand.  
Count on my custom—if no worse  
Your future work be, understand,  
Than this I carry off! No aid!  
My arm, sir, lacks nor bone nor thews:  
The burden’s easy, and we’re made,  
Easy or hard, to bear—we Jews!”

## XLIII

‘Crossing himself at such escape,  
Buti by turns the money eyes  
And, timidly, the stalwart shape  
Now moving doorwards; but, more  
wise,  
The Farmer,—who, though dumb, this  
while  
Had watched advantage,—straight con-  
ceived  
A reason for that tone and smile  
So mild and soft! The Jew—believed!

## XLIV

‘Mary in triumph borne to deck  
A Hebrew household! Pictured where  
No one was used to bend the neck  
In praise or bow the knee in prayer!

Borne to that domicile by whom?  
The son of the High Priest! Through  
what?  
An insult done his mother’s tomb!  
Saul changed to Paul—the case came  
pat!

## XLV

“Stay, dog Jew . . . gentle sir, that is!  
Resolve me! Can it be, she crowned,—  
Mary, by miracle,—Oh bliss!—  
My present to your burial ground?  
Certain, a ray of light has burst  
Your veil of darkness! Had you else,  
Only for Mary’s sake, unpursed  
So much hard money? Tell—oh, tell ’s!”

## XLVI

‘Round—like a serpent that we took  
For worm and trod on—turns his bulk  
About the Jew. First dreadful look  
Sends Buti in a trice to skulk  
Out of sight somewhere, safe—alack!  
But our good Farmer faith made bold:  
And firm (with Florence at his back)  
He stood, while gruff the gutturals  
rolled—

## XLVII

“Ay, sir, a miracle was worked,  
By quite another power, I trow,  
Than ever yet in canvases lurked,  
Or you would scarcely face me now!  
A certain impulse did suggest  
A certain grasp with this right-hand,  
Which probably had put to rest  
Our quarrel,—thus your throat once  
spanned!

## XLVIII

“But I remembered me, subdued  
That impulse, and you face me still!  
And soon a philosophic mood  
Succeeding (hear it, if you will!)  
Has altogether changed my views  
Concerning Art. Blind prejudice!  
Well may you Christians tax us Jews  
With scrupulosity too nice!

## XLIX

“For, don’t I see,—let’s issue join!—  
Whenever I’m allowed pollute  
(I—and my little bag of coin)  
Some Christian palace of repute,—  
Don’t I see stuck up everywhere  
Abundant proof that cultured taste  
Has Beauty for its only care,  
And upon Truth no thought to waste?

## L

“Jew, since it must be, take in pledge  
Of payment ‘—so a Cardinal  
Has sighed to me as if a wedge  
Entered his heart—’ this best of all  
My treasures!’ Leda, Ganymede  
Or Antiope: swan, eagle, ape,  
(Or what’s the beast of what’s the breed)  
And Jupiter in every shape!

## FILIPPO BALDINUCCI ON THE PRIVILEGE OF BURIAL

### LI

"Whereat if I presume to ask  
 'But, Eminence, though Titian's whisk  
 Of brush have well performed its task,  
 How comes it these false godships frisk  
 In presence of—what yonder frame  
 Pretends to image? Surely, odd'  
 It seems, you let confront The Name  
 Each beast the heathen called his god!"

### LII

"*Bertignant smiles me pity straight*  
*The Cardinal.* 'Tis Truth, we prize!  
 Art's the sole question in debate!  
 These subjects are so many lies.  
 We treat them with a proper scorn  
 When we turn lies—called gods for-  
 sooth—  
 To lies' fit use, now Christ is born.  
 Drawing and colouring are Truth.

### LIII

"Think you I honour lies so much  
 As scruple to parade the charms  
 Of Leda—Titian, every touch—  
 Because the thing within her arms  
 Means Jupiter who had the praise  
 And prayer of a benighted world?  
 He would have mine too, if, in days  
 Of light, I kept the canvas furled!"

### LIV

"So ending, with some easy gibe,  
*What power has logic! I, at once,*  
*Acknowledged error in our tribe*  
*So squeamish that, when friends ensconce*  
*A pretty picture in its niche*  
*To do us honour, deck our graves,*  
*We fret and fume and have an itch*  
*To strangle folk—ungrateful knaves!"*

### LIV

"No, sir! Be sure that—what's its style,  
 Your picture?—shall possess ungrudged  
 A place among my rank and file  
 Of Leda's and what not—be judged  
 Just as a picture! and (because  
 I fear me much I scarce have bought  
 A Titian) Master Buti's flaws  
 Found there, will have the laugh flaws  
 ought!"

### LVI

"So, with a scowl, it darkens door—  
 This bulk—no longer! Buti makes  
 Prompt glad re-entry; there's a score  
 Of oaths, as the good Farmer wakes  
 From what must needs have been a trance,  
 Or he had struck (he swears) to ground  
 The bold bad mouth that dared advance  
 Such doctrine the reverse of sound!"

### LVII

"Was magic here? Most like! For, since,  
 Somehow our city's faith grows still  
 More and more lukewarm, and our Prince  
 Or loses heart or wants the will

To check increase of cold. 'Tis "Live  
 And let live! Languidly repress  
 The Dissident! In short,—contrive  
 Christians must bear with Jews: no less!"

### LVIII

The end seems, any Israelite  
 Wants any picture,—pishes, poohs,  
 Purchases, hangs it full in sight  
 In any chamber he may choose!  
 In Christ's crown, one more thorn we rue!  
 In Mary's bosom, one more sword!  
 No, boy, you must not pelt a Jew!  
 O Lord, how long? How long, O  
 Lord?"

## EPILOGUE

μεστοι . . .  
 οι δ' ἀμφοτέρῃς οἶνον μέλανος ἀνδοσμίον

### I

"The poets pour us wine—"  
 Said the dearest poet I ever knew,  
 Dearest and greatest and best to me.  
 You clamour athirst for poetry—  
 We pour. 'But when shall a vintage be'—  
 You cry—'strong grape, squeezed gold  
 from screw,  
 Yet sweet juice, flavoured flowery-fine?  
 That were indeed the wine!"

### II

One pours your cup—stark strength,  
 Meat for a man; and you eye the pulp  
 Strained, turbid still, from the viscous  
 blood  
 Of the snaky bough: and you grumble  
 'Good!  
 For it swells resolve, breeds hardihood;  
 Despatch it, then, in a single gulp!"  
 So, down, with a wry face, goes at length  
 The liquor: stuff for strength.

### III

One pours your cup—sheer sweet,  
 The fragrant fumes of a year condensed:  
 Suspicion of all that's ripe or rathe,  
 From the bud on branch to the grass in  
 swathe.  
 'We suck mere milk of the seasons,' saith  
 A curl of each nostril—"dew, dispensed  
 Nowise for nerving man to feat:  
 Boys sip such honeyed sweet!"

### IV

And thus who wants wine strong,  
 Waves each sweet smell of the year  
 away;  
 Who likes to swoon as the sweets suffuse  
 His brain with a mixture of beams and  
 dews  
 Turned syrupy drink—rough strength  
 eschews:  
 'What though in our veins your wine-  
 stock stay?  
 The lack of the bloom does our palate  
 wrong.  
 Give us wine sweet, not strong!"

## EPILOGUE

### V

Yet wine is—some affirm—  
 Prime wine is found in the world some-  
 where,  
 Of potable strength with sweet to match.  
 You double your heart its dose, yet  
 catch—  
 As the draught descends—a violet-smatch,  
 Softness—however it came there,  
 Through drops expressed by the fire and  
 worm:  
 Strong sweet wine—some affirm.

### VI

Body and bouquet both?  
 'Tis easy to ticket a bottle so;  
 But what was the case in the cask, my  
 friends?  
 Cask? Nay, the vat—where the maker  
 mends  
 His strong with his sweet (you suppose)  
 and blends  
 His rough with his smooth, till none can  
 know  
 How it comes you may tittle, nothing loth,  
 Body and bouquet both.

### VII

'You' being just—the world.  
 No poets—who turn, themselves, the  
 winch  
 Of the press; no critics—I'll even say,  
 (Being flustered and easy of faith to-day)  
 Who for love of the work have learned the  
 way  
 Till themselves produce home-made, at  
 a pinch:  
 No! You are the world, and wine ne'er  
 purled  
 Except to please the world!

### VIII

'For, oh the common heart!  
 And, ah the irremissible sin  
 Of poets who please themselves, not us!  
 Strong wine yet sweet wine pouring thus,  
 How please still—Pindar and Æschylus!—  
 Drink—dipt into by the bearded chin  
 Alike and the bloomy lip—no part  
 Denied the common heart!

### IX

'And might we get such grace,  
 And did you moderns but stock our  
 vault  
 With the true half-brandied half-attar-gul,  
 How would seniors indulge at a hearty  
 pull  
 While juniors tossed off their thimbleful!  
 Our Shakespeare and Milton escaped  
 your fault,  
 So, they reign supreme o'er the weaker  
 race  
 That wants the ancient grace!'

### X

If I paid myself with words  
 (As the French say well) I were dupe  
 indeed!  
 I were found in belief that you quaffed and  
 bowed  
 At your Shakespeare the whole day long,  
 caroused,  
 In your Milton pottle-deep nor drowsed  
 A moment of night—toped on, took  
 heed  
 Of nothing like modern cream-and-curd.  
 Pay me with deeds, not words!

### XI

For—see your cellarage!  
 There are forty barrels with Shake-  
 speare's brand.  
 Some five or six are abroad: the rest  
 Stand spigoted, fauceted. Try and test  
 What yourselves call best of the very best!  
 How comes it that still untouched they  
 stand?  
 Why don't you try tap, advance a stage  
 With the rest in cellarage?

### XII

For—see your cellarage!  
 There are four big butts of Milton's  
 brew.  
 How comes it you make old drips and  
 drops  
 Do duty, and there devotion stops?  
 Leave such an abyss of malt and hops  
 Embellied in butts which bungs still  
 glue?  
 You hate your bard! A fig for your rage!  
 Free him from cellarage!

### XIII

'Tis said I brew stiff drink,  
 But the deuce a flavour of grape is there.  
 Hardly a May-go-down, 'tis just  
 A sort of a gruff Go-down-it-must—  
 No Merry-go-down, no gracious gust  
 Commingles the racy with Springtide's  
 rare!  
 'What wonder,' say you 'that we cough,  
 and blink  
 At Autumn's heady drink?'

### XIV

Is it a fancy, friends?  
 Mighty and mellow are never mixed,  
 Though mighty and mellow be born at  
 once,  
 Sweet for the future,—strong for the  
 nonce!  
 Stuff you should stow away, ensconce  
 In the deep and dark, to be found fast-  
 fixed  
 At the century's close: such time strength  
 spends  
 A-sweetening for my friends!

## EPILOGUE

### XV

And then—why, what you quaff  
 With a smack of lip and a cluck of  
 tongue,  
 Is leakage and leavings—just what haps  
 From the tun some learned taster, taps  
 With a promise 'Prepare your watery  
 chaps!  
 Here's properest wine for old and  
 young!  
 Dispute its perfection—you make us  
 laugh!  
 Have faith, give thanks, but—quaff!'

### XVI

Leakage, I say, or—worse—  
 Leavings suffice pot-valiant souls.  
 Somebody, brimful, long ago,  
 Frothed flagon he drained to the dregs;  
 and lo,  
 Down whisker and beard what an over-  
 flow!  
 Lick spilt that has trickled from classic  
 jowls,  
 Sup the single scene, sip the only verse—  
 Old wine, not new and worse!

### XVII

I grant you: worse by much!  
 Renounce that new where you never  
 gained  
 One glow at heart, one gleam at head,  
 And stick to the warrant of age instead!  
 No dwarf's-lap! Fatten, by giants fed!  
 You fatten, with oceans of drink un-  
 drained?  
 You feed—who would choke did a cob-  
 web smutch  
 The Age you love so much?

### XVIII

A mine's beneath a moor:  
 Acres of moor roof fathoms of mine  
 Which diamonds dot where you please to  
 dig;  
 Yet who plies spade for the bright and  
 big?  
 Your product is—truffles, you hunt with  
 a pig!  
 Since bright-and-big, when a man would  
 dine,  
 Suits badly: and therefore the Koh-i-noor  
 May sleep in mine 'neath moor!

### XIX

Wine, pulse in might from me!  
 It may never emerge in must from vat,  
 Never fill cask nor furnish can.  
 Never end sweet, which strong began—  
 God's gift to gladden the heart of man;  
 But spirit's at proof, I promise that!  
 No sparing of juice spoils what should be  
 Fit brewage—mine for me.

### XX

Man's thoughts and loves and hates!  
 Earth is my vineyard, these grew there:  
 From grape of the ground, I made or  
 marred  
 My vintage; easy the task or hard,  
 Whq set it—his praise be my reward!  
 Earth's yield! Who yearn for the Dark  
 Blue Sea's,  
 Let them 'lay, pray, bray'—the addle-  
 pates!  
 Mine be Man's thoughts, loves, hates!

### XXI

But someone says 'Good Sir!'  
 ('Tis a worthy versed in what concerns  
 The making such labour turn out well)  
 'You don't suppose that the nosegay-  
 smell  
 Needs always come from the grape?  
 Each bell  
 At your foot, each bud that your culture  
 spurns,  
 The very cowslip would act like myrrh  
 On the stiffest brew—good Sir!

### XXII

'Cowslips, abundant birth  
 O'er meadow and hillside, vineyard  
 too,  
 —Like a schoolboy's scrawlings in and  
 out  
 Distasteful lesson-book—all about  
 Greece and Rome, victory and rout—  
 Love-verses instead of such vain ado!  
 So, fancies frolic it o'er the earth  
 Where thoughts have rightlier birth.

### XXIII

'Nay, thoughtlings they themselves:  
 Loves, hates—in little and less and  
 least!  
 Thoughts? "*What is a man beside a  
 mount!*"  
 Loves? "*Absent—poor lovers the minutes  
 count!*"  
 Hates? "*Fie—Pope's letters to Martha  
 Blount!*"  
 These furnish a wine for a children's-  
 feast:  
 Insipid to man, they suit the elves  
 Like thoughts, loves, hates themselves.'

### XXIV

And, friends, beyond dispute  
 I too have the cowslips dewy and dear.  
 Punctual as Springtide forth peep they:  
 I leave them to make my meadow gay.  
 But I ought to pluck and impound them,  
 eh?  
 Not let them alone, but deftly shear  
 And shred and reduce to—what may suit  
 Children, beyond dispute?

## EPILOGUE

### XXV

And, here's May-month, all bloom,  
 All bounty: what if I sacrifice?  
 If I out with shears and shear, nor stop  
 Shearing till prostrate, lo, the crop?  
 And will you prefer it to ginger-pop  
 When I've made you wine of the  
 memories  
 Which leave as bare as a churchyard tomb  
 My meadow, late all bloom?

### XXVI

Nay, what ingratitude  
 Should I hesitate to amuse the wits  
 That have pulled so long at my flask, nor  
 grudged  
 The headache that paid their pains, nor  
 budged  
 From bunghole before they sighed and  
 judged  
 'Too rough for our taste, to-day, befits  
 The racy and right when the years con-  
 clude!'  
 Out on ingratitude!

### XXVII

Grateful or ingrate—none,  
 No cowlip of all my fairy crew  
 Shall help to concoct what makes you  
 wink  
 And goes to your head till you think you  
 think!  
 I like them alive: the printer's ink  
 'Would sensibly tell on the perfume too.  
 I may use up my nettles, ere I've done;  
 But of cowlips—friends get none!'

### XXVIII

Don't nettles make a broth  
 Wholesome for blood grown lazy and  
 thick?  
 Maws out of sorts make mouths out of  
 taste.  
 My Thirty-four Port—no need to waste  
 On a tongue that's fur and a palate—  
 paste!  
 A magnum for friends who are sound!  
 The sick—  
 I'll posset and cosset them, nothing loth,  
 Henceforward with nettle-broth!

## LA SAISIAZ

1878

### I

GOOD, to forgive;  
 Best, to forget!  
 Living, we fret;  
 Dying, we live.  
 Fretless and free,  
 Soul, clap thy pinion!  
 Earth have dominion,  
 Body, o'er thee!

### II

Wander at will,  
 Day after day,—  
 Wander away,  
 Wandering still—  
 Soul that canst soar!  
 Body may slumber:  
 Body shall cumber  
 Soul-flight no more.

### III

Waft of soul's wing!  
 What lies above?  
 Sunshine and Love,  
 Skyblue and Spring!  
 Body hides—where?  
 Ferns of all feather,  
 Mosses and heather,  
 Yours be the care!

### LA SAISIAZ

A. E. S. SEPTEMBER 14, 1877

DARED and done: at last I stand upon the  
 summit, Dear and True!  
 Singly dared and done; the climbing both  
 of us were bound to do.  
 Petty feat and yet prodigious: every side  
 my glance was bent  
 O'er the grandeur and the beauty lavished  
 through the whole ascent.  
 Ledge by ledge, out broke new marvels,  
 now minute and now immense:  
 Earth's most exquisite disclosure, heaven's  
 own God in evidence!  
 And no berry in its hiding, no blue space  
 in its outspread,  
 Pleaded to escape my footstep, challenged  
 my emerging head,  
 (As I climbed or paused from climbing,  
 now o'erbranched by shrub and tree,  
 Now built round by rock and boulder,  
 now at just a turn set free,  
 Stationed face to face with—Nature?  
 rather with Infinitude)  
 —No revelation of them all, as singly I  
 my path pursued,  
 But a bitter touched its sweetness, for the  
 thought stung 'Even so  
 Both of us had loved and wondered just  
 the same, five days ago!'

Five short days, sufficient hardly to entice, from out its den  
 Splintered in the slab, this pink perfection of the cyclamen;  
 Scarce enough to heal and coat with amber gum the sloe-tree's gash,  
 Bronze the clustered wilding apple, redden ripe the mountain ash:  
 Yet of might to place between us—Oh the barrier! Yon Profound  
 Shrinks beside it, proves a pin-point: barrier this, without a bound!  
 Boundless though it be, I reach you: somehow seem to have you here  
 —Who are there. Yes, there you dwell now, plain the four low walls appear;  
 Those are vineyards they enclose from; and the little spire which points  
 —That's Collonge, henceforth your dwelling. All the same, howe'er disjoins  
 Past from present, no less certain you are here, not there: have dared,  
 Done the feat of mountain-climbing,—five days since, we both prepared  
 Daring, doing, arm in arm, if other help should haply fail.  
 For you asked, as forth we sallied to see sunset from the vale,  
 'Why not try for once the mountain,—take a foretaste, snatch by stealth  
 Sight and sound, some unconsidered fragment of the hoarded wealth?  
 Six weeks at its base, yet never once have we together won  
 Sight or sound by honest climbing: let us two have dared and done  
 Just so much of twilight journey as may prove to-morrow's jaunt  
 Not the only mode of wayfare—wheeled to reach the eagle's haunt!'  
 So, we turned from the low grass-path you were pleased to call 'your own,'  
 Set our faces to the rose-bloom o'er the summit's front of stone  
 Where Salève obtains, from Jura and the sunken sun she hides,  
 Due return of blushing 'Good Night,' rosy as a borne-off bride's,  
 For his masculine 'Good Morrow' when, with sunrise still in hold,  
 Gay he hails her, and, magnific, thrilled her black length burns to gold.  
 Up and up we went, how careless—nay, how joyous! All was new,  
 All was strange. 'Call progress toilsome? that were just insulting you!  
 How the trees must temper noontide! Ah, the thicket's sudden break!  
 What will be the morning glory, when at dusk thus gleams the lake?  
 Light by light puts forth Geneva: what a land—and, of the land,  
 Can there be a lovelier station than this spot where now we stand?

Is it late, and wrong to linger? True, to-morrow makes amends.  
 Toilsome progress? child's play, call it—specially when one descends!  
 There, the dread descent is over—hardly our adventure, though!  
 Take the vale where late we left it, pace the grass-path, "mine," you know!  
 Proud completion of achievement!' And we paced it, praising still  
 That soft tread on velvet verdure as it wound through hill and hill;  
 And at very end there met us, coming from Collonge, the pair  
 —All our people of the Chalet—two, enough and none to spare.  
 So, we made for home together, and we reached it as the stars  
 One by one came lamping—chiefly that prepotency of Mars—  
 And your last word was 'I owe you this enjoyment!'—met with 'Nay:  
 With yourself it rests to have a month of morrows like to-day!'  
 Then the meal, with talk and laughter, and the news of that rare nook  
 Yet untroubled by the tourist, touched on by no travel-book,  
 All the same—though latent—patent, hybrid birth of land and sea,  
 And (our travelled friend assured you)—if such miracle might be—  
 Comparable for completeness of both blessings—all around  
 Nature, and, inside her circle, safety from world's sight and sound—  
 Comparable to our Saisiaz. 'Hold it fast and guard it well!  
 Go and see and vouch for certain, then come back and never tell  
 Living soul but us; and haply, prove our sky from cloud as clear,  
 There may we four meet, praise fortune just as now, another year!'  
 Thus you charged him on departure: not without the final charge  
 'Mind to-morrow's early meeting! We must leave our journey marge  
 Ample for the wayside wonders: there's the stoppage at the inn  
 Three-parts up the mountain, where the hardships of the track begin;  
 There's the convent worth a visit; but, the triumph crowning all—  
 There's Salève's own platform facing glory which strikes greatness small,  
 —Blanc, supreme above his earth-brood, needles red and white and green,  
 Horns of silver, fangs of crystal set on edge in his demesne.  
 So, some three weeks since, we saw them: so, to-morrow we intend

## LA SAISIAZ

You shall see them likewise; therefore  
Good Night till to-morrow, friend!  
Last, the nothings that extinguish embers  
of a vivid day:

'What might be the Marshal's next move,  
what Gambetta's counter-play?'

Till the landing on the staircase saw escape  
the latest spark:

'Sleep you well!' 'Sleep but as well, you!'  
—lazy love quenched, all was dark.

Nothing dark next day at sundown! Up  
I rose and forth I fared:

Took my plunge within the bath-pool,  
pacified the watch-dog scared,

Saw proceed the transmutation—Jura's  
black to one gold glow,

Trod your level path that let me drink the  
morning deep and slow,

Reached the little quarry—ravage recom-  
pensed by shrub and fern—

Till the overflowing ardours told me time  
was for return.

So, return I did, and gaily. But, for once,  
from no far mound

Waved salute a tall white figure. 'Has  
her sleep been so profound?

Foresight, rather, prudent saving strength  
for day's expenditure!

Ay, the chamber-window's open: out and  
on the terrace, sure!'

No, the terrace showed no figure, tall,  
white, leaning through the wreaths,

Tangle-twine of leaf and bloom that inter-  
cept the air one breathes,

Interpose between one's love and Nature's  
loving, hill and dale

Down to where the blue lake's wrinkle  
marks the river's inrush pale

—Mazy Arve: whereon no vessel but goes  
sliding white and plain,

Not a steamboat pants from harbour but  
one hears pulsate amain,

Past the city's congregated peace of homes  
and pomp of spires

—Man's mild protest that there's some-  
thing more than Nature, man re-  
quires,

And that, useful as is Nature to attract the  
tourist's foot,

Quiet slow sure money-making proves the  
matter's very root,—

Need for body,—while the spirit also  
needs a comfort reached

By no help of lake or mountain, but the  
texts whence Calvin preached.

'Here's the veil withdrawn from land-  
scape: up to Jura and beyond,

All awaits us ranged and ready; yet she  
violates the bond,

Neither leans nor looks nor listens: why is  
this?' A turn of eye

Took the whole sole answer, gave the un-  
disputed reason 'why!'

This dread way you had your summons!  
No premonitory touch,

As you talked and laughed ('tis told me)  
scarce a minute ere the clutch

Captured you in cold forever. Cold? nay,  
warm you were as life

When I raised you, while the others used,  
in passionate poor strife,

All the means that seemed to promise any  
aid, and all in vain.

Gone you were, and I shall never see that  
earnest face again

Grow transparent, grow transfigured with  
the sudden light that leapt,

At the first word's provocation, from the  
heart-deeps where it slept.

Therefore, paying piteous duty, what  
seemed You have we consigned

Peacefully to—what I think were, of all  
earthbeds, to your mind

Most the choice for quiet, yonder: low  
walls stop the vines' approach,

Lovingly Salève protects you; village  
sports will ne'er encroach

On the stranger lady's silence, whom  
friends bore so kind and well

Thither 'just for love's sake,'—such their  
own word was: and who can tell?

You supposed that few or none had known  
and loved you in the world:

May be! flower that's full-blown tempts  
the butterfly, not flower that's furled.

But more learned sense unlocked you,  
loosed the sheath and let expand

Bud to bell and outspread flower-shape at  
the least warm touch of hand

—Maybe, throb of heart, beneath which,  
—quickenings farther than it knew,—

Treasure oft was disembosomed, scent  
all strange and unguessed hue.

Disembosomed, re-embosomed,—must  
one memory suffice,

Prove I knew an Alpine-rose which all  
beside named Edelweiss?

Rare thing, red or white, you rest now:  
two days slumbered through; and  
since

One day more will see me rid of this same  
scene whereat I wince,

Tetchy at all sights and sounds and pettish  
at each idle charm

Proffered me who pace now singly where  
we two went arm in arm,—

I have turned upon my weakness: asked  
'And what, forsooth, prevents

That, this latest day allowed me, I fulfil of  
her intents

One she had the most at heart—that we  
should thus again survey

From Salève Mont Blanc together?'  
Therefore,—dared and done to-day

Climbing,—here I stand: but you—  
where?

If a spirit of the place  
Broke the silence, bade me question,  
promised answer,—what disgrace  
Did I stipulate 'Provided answer suit my  
hopes, not fears!'  
Would I shrink to learn my life-time's  
limit—days, weeks, months or years?  
Would I shirk assurance on each point  
whereat I can but guess—  
'Does the soul survive the body? Is there  
God's self, no or yes?'  
If I know my mood, 'twere constant—  
come in whatsoe'er uncouth  
Shape it should, nay, formidable—so the  
answer were but truth.

Well, and wherefore shall it daunt me,  
when 'tis I myself am tasked,  
When, by weakness weakness questioned,  
weakly answers—weakly asked?  
Weakness never needs be falseness: truth  
is truth in each degree  
—Thunderpealed by God to Nature,  
whispered by my soul to me.  
Nay, the weakness turns to strength and  
triumphs in a truth beyond:  
'Mine is but man's truest answer—how  
were it did God respond?'  
I shall no more dare to mimic such re-  
sponse in futile speech,  
Pass off human lisp as echo of the sphere-  
song out of reach,  
Than,—because it well may happen yon-  
der, where the far snows blanch  
Mute Mont Blanc, that who stands near  
them sees and hears an avalanche,—  
I shall pick a clod and throw,—cry 'Such  
the sight and such the sound!  
What though I nor see nor hear them?  
Others do, the proofs abound!'  
Can I make my eye an eagle's, sharpen ear  
to recognize  
Sound o'er league and league of silence?  
Can I know, who but surmise?  
If I dared no self-deception when, a week  
since, I and you  
Walked and talked along the grass-path,  
passing lightly in review  
What seemed hits and what seemed misses  
in a certain fence-play,—strife  
Sundry minds of mark engaged in 'On the  
Soul and Future Life,'—  
If I ventured estimating what was come of  
parried thrust,  
Subtle stroke, and, rightly, wrongly, esti-  
mating could be just  
—Just, though life so seemed abundant in  
the form which moved by mine,  
I might well have played at feigning, fool-  
ing,—laughed 'What need opine  
Pleasure must succeed to pleasure, else  
past pleasure turns to pain,  
And this first life claims a second, else I  
count its good no gain?'

Much less have I heart to palter when the  
matter to decide  
Now becomes 'Was ending ending once  
and always, when you died?'  
Did the face, the form I lifted as it lay,  
reveal the loss  
Not alone of life but soul? A tribute to  
yon flowers and moss,  
What of you remains beside? A memory!  
Easy to attest  
'Certainly from out the world that one  
believes who knew her best  
Such was good in her, such fair, which  
fair and good were great perchance  
Had but fortune favoured, bidden each  
shy faculty advance;  
After all—who knows another? Only as  
I know, I speak.'  
So much of you lives within me while I  
live my year or week.  
Then my fellow takes the tale up, not un-  
willing to aver  
Duly in his turn 'I knew him best of all, as  
he knew her:  
Such he was, and such he was not, and  
such other might have been  
But that somehow every actor, some-  
where in this earthly scene,  
Fails.' And so both memories dwindle,  
yours and mine together linked,  
Till there is but left for comfort, when the  
last spark proves extinct,  
This—that somewhere new existence led  
by men and women new  
Possibly attains perfection coveted by me  
and you;  
While ourselves, the only witness to what  
work our life evolved,  
Only to ourselves proposing problems  
proper to be solved  
By ourselves alone,—who working ne'er  
shall know if work bear fruit  
Others reap and garner, heedless how  
produced by stalk and root,—  
We who, darkling, timed the day's birth,  
—struggling, testified to peace,—  
Earned, by dint of failure, triumph,—we,  
creative thought, must cease  
In created word, thought's echo, due to  
impulse long since sped!  
Why repine? There's ever someone lives  
although ourselves be dead!

Well, what signifies repugnance? Truth is  
truth howe'er it strike.  
Fair or foul the lot apportioned life on  
earth, we bear alike.  
Stalwart body idly yoked to stunted spirit,  
powers, that fain  
Else would soar, condemned to grovel,  
groundlings through the fleshly  
chain,—  
Help that hinders, hindrance proved but  
help disguised when all too late,—



## LA SAISIAZ

Hindrance is the fact acknowledged, how-  
soever explained as Fate,  
Fortune, Providence: we bear, own life a  
burthen more or less.

Life thus owned unhappy, is there supple-  
mental happiness

Possible and probable in life to come? or  
must we count

Life a curse and not a blessing, summed-  
up in its whole amount,

Help and hindrance, joy and sorrow?

Why should I want courage here?

I will ask and have an answer,—with no  
favour, with no fear,—

From myself. How much, how little, do  
I inwardly believe

True that controverted doctrine? Is it  
fact to which I cleave,

Is it fancy I but cherish, when I take upon  
my lips

Phrase the solemn Tuscan fashioned, and  
declare the soul's eclipse

Not the soul's extinction? take his 'I be-  
lieve and I declare—

Certain am I—from this life I pass into a  
better, there

Where that lady lives of whom enamoured  
was my soul'—where this

Other lady, my companion dear and true,  
she also is?

I have questioned and am answered.

Question, answer presuppose

Two points: that the thing itself which  
questions, answers,—is, it knows;

As it also knows the thing perceived out-  
side itself,—a force

Actual ere its own beginning, operative  
through its course,

Unaffected by its end,—that this thing  
likewise needs must be;

Call this—God, then, call that—soul, and  
both—the only facts for me.

Prove them facts? that they o'erpass my  
power of proving, proves them  
such:

Fact it is I know I know not something  
which is fact as much.

What before caused all the causes, what  
effect of all effects

Haply follows,—these are fancy. Ask the  
rush if it suspects

Whence and how the stream which floats  
it had a rise, and where and how

Falls or flows on still! What answer  
makes the rush except that now

Certainly it floats and is, and, no less  
certain than itself,

Is the everyway external stream that now  
through shoal and shelf

Floats it onward, leaves it—may be—  
wrecked at last, or lands on shore

There to root again and grow and flourish  
stable evermore.

—May be! mere surmise not knowledge:  
much conjecture styled belief,

What the rush conceives the stream means  
through the voyage blind and brief.

Why, because I doubtless am, shall I as  
doubtless be? 'Because

God seems good and wise.' Yet under  
this our life's apparent laws

Reigns a wrong which, righted once,  
would give quite other laws to life.

'He seems potent.' Potent here, then why  
are right and wrong at strife?

Has in life the wrong the better? Happily  
life ends so soon!

Right predominates in life? Then why  
two lives and double boon?

'Anyhow, we want it: wherefore want?'  
Because, without the want,

Life, now human, would be brutish: just  
that hope, however scant,

Makes the actual life worth leading; take  
the hope therein away,

All we have to do is surely not endure  
another day.

This life has its hopes for this life, hopes  
that promise joy: life done—

Out of all the hopes, how many had com-  
plete fulfilment? none.

'But the soul is not the body:' and the  
breath is not the flute;

Both together make the music: either  
marred and all is mute.

Truce to such old sad contention whence,  
according as we share

Most of hope or most of fear, we issue in  
a half-escape:

'We believe' is sighed. I take the cup of  
comfort proffered thus,

Taste and try each soft ingredient, sweet  
infusion, and discuss

What their blending may accomplish for  
the cure of doubt, till—slow,

Sorrowful, but how decided! needs must  
I o'erturn it—so!

Cause before, effect behind me—blanks!  
The midway point I am,

Caused, itself—itself efficient: in that  
narrow space must cram

All experience—out of which there crowds  
conjecture manifold,

But, as knowledge, this comes only—  
things may be as I behold,

Or may not be, but, without me and above  
me, things there are;

I myself am what I know not—ignorance  
which proves no bar

To the knowledge that I am, and, since I  
am, can recognize

What to me is pain and pleasure: this is  
sure, the rest—surmise.

If my fellows are or are not, what may  
please them and what pain,—

Mere surmise: my own experience—that  
is knowledge, once again!

I have lived, then, done and suffered,  
 loved and hated, learnt and taught  
 This—there is no reconciling wisdom with  
 a world distraught,  
 Goodness with triumphant evil, power  
 with failure in the aim,  
 If—(to my own sense, remember! though  
 none other feel the same!)—  
 If you bar me from assuming earth to be  
 a pupil's place,  
 And life, time,—with all their chances,  
 changes,—just probation-space,  
 Mine, for me. But those apparent other  
 mortals—theirs, for them?  
 Knowledge stands on my experience: all  
 outside its narrow hem,  
 Free surmise may sport and welcome!  
 Pleasures, pains affect mankind  
 Just as they affect myself? Why, here's  
 my neighbour colour-blind,  
 Eyes like mine to all appearance: 'green  
 as grass' do I affirm?  
 'Red as grass' he contradicts me: which  
 employs the proper term?  
 Were we two the earth's sole tenants, with  
 no third for referee,  
 How should I distinguish? Just so, God  
 must judge 'twixt man and me.  
 To each mortal peradventure earth be-  
 comes a new machine,  
 Pain and pleasure no more tally in our  
 sense than red and green;  
 Still, without what seems such mortal's  
 pleasure, pain, my life were lost  
 —Life, my whole sole chance to prove—  
 although at man's apparent cost—  
 What is beauteous and what ugly, right to  
 strive for, right to shun,  
 Fit to help and fit to hinder,—prove my  
 forces everyone,  
 Good and evil,—learn life's lesson, hate  
 of evil, love of good,  
 As 'tis set me, understand so much as may  
 be understood—  
 Solve the problem: 'From thine appren-  
 dended scheme of things, deduce  
 Praise or blame of its contriver, shown a  
 niggard or profuse  
 In each good or evil issue! nor miscalcu-  
 late alike  
 Counting one the other in the final  
 balance, which to strike,  
 Soul was born and life allotted: ay, the  
 show of things unfurled  
 For thy summing-up and judgment,—  
 thine, no other mortal's world!'

What though fancy scarce may grapple  
 with the complex and immense  
 —'His own world for every mortal?'  
 Postulate omnipotence!  
 Limit power, and simple grows the com-  
 plex: shrunk to atom size,

That which loomed immense to fancy low  
 before my reason lies,—  
 I survey it and pronounce it work like  
 other work: success  
 Here and there, the workman's glory,—  
 here and there, his shame no less.  
 Failure as conspicuous. Taunt not  
 'Human work ape work divine?'  
 As the power, expect performance! God's  
 be God's as mine is mine!  
 God whose power made man and made  
 man's wants, and made, to meet those  
 wants,  
 Heaven and earth which, through the  
 body, prove the spirit's ministrants,  
 Excellently all,—did He lack power or  
 was the will in fault  
 When He let blue heaven be shrouded  
 o'er by vapours of the vault,  
 Gay earth drop her garlands shrivelled at  
 the first infecting breath  
 Of the serpent pains which herald, swarm-  
 ing in, the dragon death?  
 What, no way but this that man may learn  
 and lay to heart how rife  
 Life were with delights would only death  
 allow their taste to life?  
 Must the rose sigh 'Pluck—I perish!'—  
 must the eve weep 'Gaze—I  
 fade!'—  
 —Every sweet warn 'Ware my bitter!'—  
 every shine bid 'Wait my shade?'  
 Can we love but on condition, that the  
 thing we love must die?  
 Needs there groan a world in anguish just  
 to teach us sympathy—  
 Multitudinously wretched that we,  
 wretched too, may guess  
 What a preferable state were universal  
 happiness?  
 Hardly do I so conceive the outcome of  
 that power which went  
 To the making of the worm there in yon  
 clod its tenement,  
 Any more than I distinguish aught of that  
 which, wise and good,  
 Framed the leaf, its plain of pasture,  
 dropped the dew, its finless food.  
 Nay, were fancy fact, were earth and all it  
 holds illusion mere,  
 Only a machine for teaching love and hate  
 and hope and fear  
 To myself, the sole existence, single truth  
 mid falsehood,—well!  
 If the harsh throes of the prelude die not  
 off into the swell  
 Of that perfect piece they sting me to be-  
 come a-strain for,—if  
 Roughness of the long rock-clamber lead  
 not to the last of cliff,  
 First of level country where is sward my  
 pilgrim-foot can prize,—  
 Plainlier! if this life's conception new life  
 fail to realize,—

## LA SAISIAZ

Though earth burst and proved a bubble  
 glassing hues of hell, one huge  
 Reflex of the devil's doings—God's work  
 by no subterfuge—  
 (So death's kindly touch informed me as  
 it broke the glamour, gave  
 Soul and body both release from life's  
 long nightmare in the grave)  
 Still,—with no more Nature, no more  
 Man as riddle to be read,  
 Only my own joys and sorrows now to  
 reckon real instead,—  
 I must say—or choke in silence—'How-  
 soever came my fate,  
 Sorrow did and joy did nowise,—life well  
 weighed,—preponderate.'  
 By necessity ordained thus? I shall bear  
 as best I can;  
 By a cause all-good, all-wise, all-potent?  
 No, as I am man!  
 Such were God: and was it goodness that  
 the good within my range  
 Or had evil in admixture or grew evil's  
 self by change?  
 Wisdom—that becoming wise meant  
 making slow and sure advance  
 From a knowledge proved in error to  
 acknowledged ignorance?  
 Power? 'tis just the main assumption  
 reason most revolts at! power  
 Unavailing for bestowment on its creature  
 of an hour,  
 Man, of so much proper action rightly  
 aimed and reaching aim,  
 So much passion,—no defect there, no  
 excess, but still the same,—  
 As what constitutes existence, pure per-  
 fection bright as brief  
 For yon worm, man's fellow-creature, on  
 yon happier world—its leaf!  
 No, as I am man, I mourn the poverty  
 I must impute:  
 Goodness, wisdom, power, all bounded,  
 each a human attribute!

But, O world outspread beneath me! only  
 for myself I speak,  
 Nowise dare to play the spokesman for  
 my brothers strong and weak,  
 Full and empty, wise and foolish, good  
 and bad, in every age,  
 Every clime, I turn my eyes from, as in  
 one or other stage  
 Of a torture writhe they, Job-like couched  
 on dung and crazed with blains  
 —Wherefore? whereto? ask the whirl-  
 wind what the dread voice thence ex-  
 plains!  
 I shall 'vindicate no way of God's to  
 man,' nor stand apart,  
 'Laugh, be caught!' while I watch it  
 traversing the human heart.  
 Traversed heart must tell its story un-  
 commented on: no less

Mine results in 'Only grant a second life,  
 I acquiesce  
 In this present life as failure, count mis-  
 fortune's worst assaults  
 Triumph, not defeat, assured that loss so  
 much the more exalts  
 Gain about to be. For at what moment  
 did I so advance  
 Near to knowledge as when frustrate of  
 escape from ignorance?  
 Did not beauty prove most precious when  
 its opposite obtained  
 Rule, and truth seem more than ever po-  
 tent because falsehood reigned?  
 While for love—Oh how but, losing love,  
 does whoso loves succeed  
 By the death-pang to the birth-throe—  
 learning what is love indeed?  
 Only grant my soul may carry high  
 through death her cup unspilled,  
 Brimming though it be with knowledge,  
 life's loss drop by drop distilled,  
 I shall boast it mine—the balsam, bless  
 each kindly wrench that wrung  
 From life's tree its inmost virtue, tapped  
 the root whence pleasure sprung,  
 Barked the bole, and broke the bough,  
 and bruised the berry, left all grace  
 Ashes in death's stern alembic, loosed  
 elixir in its place!

Witness, Dear and True, how little I was  
 'ware of—not your worth  
 —That I knew, my heart assures me—but  
 of what a shade on earth  
 Would the passage from my presence of  
 the tall white figure throw  
 O'er the ways we walked together! Some-  
 what narrow, somewhat slow  
 Used to seem the ways, the walking;  
 narrow ways are well to tread  
 When there's moss beneath the footstep,  
 honeysuckle overhead:  
 Walking slow to beating bosom surest  
 solace soonest gives,  
 Liberates the brain o'erloaded—best of  
 all restoratives.  
 Nay, do I forget the open vast where soon  
 or late converged  
 Ways though winding?—world-wide  
 heaven-high sea where music slept  
 or surged  
 As the angel had ascendant, and Beet-  
 hoven's Titan mace  
 Smote the immense to storm Mozart  
 would by a finger's lifting chase?  
 Yes, I knew—but not with knowledge  
 such as thrills me while I view  
 Yonder precinct which henceforward  
 holds and hides the Dear and True.  
 Grant me (once again) assurance we shall  
 each meet each some day,  
 Walk—but with how bold a footstep! on  
 a way—but what a way!

—Worst were best, defeat were triumph,  
utter loss were utmost gain.  
Can it be, and must, and will it?

Silence! Out of fact's domain,  
Just surmise prepared to mutter hope,  
and also fear—dispute  
Fact's inexorable ruling 'Outside fact,  
surmise be mute!'  
Well!

Ay, well and best, if fact's self I  
may force the answer from!  
'Tis surmise I stop the mouth of. Not  
above in yonder dome  
All a rapture with its rose-glow,—not  
around, where pile and peak  
Strainingly await the sun's fall,—not be-  
neath, where crickets creak,  
Birds assemble for their bed-time, soft the  
tree-top swell subsides,—  
No, nor yet within my deepest sentient  
self the knowledge hides.  
Aspiration, reminiscence, plausibilities of  
trust  
—Now the ready 'Man were wronged  
else,' now the rash 'and God un-  
just'—  
None of these I need. Take thou, my  
soul, thy solitary stand,  
Umpire to the champions Fancy, Reason,  
as on either hand  
Amicable war they wage and play the foe  
in thy behoof!  
Fancy thrust and Reason parry! Thine  
the prize who stand aloof.

## FANCY

I concede the thing refused: henceforth  
no certainty more plain  
Than this mere surmise that after body  
dies soul lives again.  
Two, the only facts acknowledged late,  
are now increased to three—  
God is, and the soul is, and, as certain,  
after death shall be.  
Put this third to use in life, the time for  
using fact!

## REASON

I do:  
Find it promises advantage, coupled with  
the other two.  
Life to come will be improvement on the  
life that's now; destroy  
Body's thwartings, there's no longer  
screen betwixt soul and soul's joy.  
Why should we expect new hindrance,  
novel tether? In this first  
Life, I see the good of evil, why our world  
began at worst:  
Since time means amelioration, tardily  
enough displayed,  
Yet a mainly onward moving, never  
wholly retrograde.

We know more though we know little, we  
grow stronger though still weak,  
Partly see though all too purblind, stam-  
mer though we cannot speak.  
There is no such grudge in God as scared  
the ancient Greek, no fresh  
Substitute of trap for dragnet, once a  
breakage in the mesh.  
Dragons were, and serpents are, and  
blindworms will be: ne'er emerged  
Any new-created python for man's plague  
since earth was purged.  
Failing proof, then, of invented trouble  
to replace the old,  
O'er this life the next presents advantage  
much and manifold:  
Which advantage—in the absence of a  
fourth and farther fact  
Now conceivably surmised, of harm to  
follow from the act—  
I pronounce for man's obtaining at this  
moment. Why delay?  
Is he happy? happiness will change: anti-  
cipate the day!  
Is he sad? there's ready refuge: of all sad-  
ness death's prompt cure!  
Is he both, in mingled measure? cease a  
burthen to endure!  
Pains with sorry compensations, pleasures  
stinted in the dole,  
Power that sinks and pettiness that soars,  
all halved and nothing whole,  
Idle hopes that lure man onward, forced  
back by as idle fears—  
What a load he stumbles under through  
his glad sad seventy years,  
When a touch sets right the turmoil, lifts  
his spirit where, flesh-freed,  
Knowledge shall be rightly named so, all  
that seems be truth indeed!  
Grant his forces no accession, nay, no  
faculty's increase,  
Only let what now exists continue, let him  
prove in peace  
Power whereof the interrupted unper-  
fected play enticed  
Man through darkness, which to lighten  
any spark of hope sufficed,—  
What shall then deter his dying out of  
darkness into light?  
Death itself perchance, brief pain that's  
pang, condensed and infinite?  
But at worst, he needs must brave it one  
day, while, at best, he laughs—  
Drops a drop within his chalice, sleep not  
death his science quaffs!  
Any moment claims more courage when,  
by crossing cold and gloom,  
Manfully man quits discomfort, makes  
for the provided room  
Where the old friends want their fellow,  
where the new acquaintance wait,  
Probably for talk assembled, possibly to  
sup in state!

## LA SAISIAZ

I affirm and re-affirm it therefore: only  
make as plain  
As that man now lives, that, after dying,  
man will live again,—  
Make as plain the absence, also, of a law  
to contravene  
Voluntary passage from this life to that  
by change of scene,—  
And I bid him—at suspicion of first cloud  
athwart his sky,  
Flower's departure, frost's arrival—never  
hesitate, but die!

### FANCY

Then I double my concession: grant,  
along with new life sure,  
This same law found lacking now: ordain  
that, whether rich or poor  
Present life is judged in aught man counts  
advantage—be it hope,  
Be it fear that brightens, blackens most or  
least his horoscope,—  
He, by absolute compulsion such as made  
him live at all,  
Go on living to the fated end of life what-  
e'er befall.  
What though, as on earth he darkling  
grovels, man descry the sphere,  
Next life's—call it, heaven of freedom,  
close above and crystal-clear?  
He shall find—say, hell to punish who in  
aught curtails the term,  
Fain would act the butterfly before he has  
played out the worm.  
God, soul, earth, heaven, hell,—five facts  
now: what is to desiderate?

### REASON

Nothing! Henceforth man's existence  
bows to the monition 'Wait!  
Take the joys and bear the sorrows—  
neither with extreme concern!  
Living here means nescience simply: 'tis  
next life that helps to learn.  
Shut those eyes, next life will open,—stop  
those ears, next life will teach  
Hearing's office,—close those lips, next  
life will give the power of speech!  
Or, if action more amuse thee than the  
passive attitude,  
Bravely bustle through thy being, busy  
thee for ill or good,  
Reap this life's success or failure! Soon  
shall things be unperplexed  
And the right and wrong, now tangled, lie  
unravell'd in the next.'

### FANCY

Not so fast! Still more concession! not  
alone do I declare  
Life must needs be borne,—I also will  
that man become aware  
Life has worth incalculable, every moment  
that he spends

So much gain or loss for that next life  
which on this life depends.  
Good, done here, be there rewarded,—  
evil, worked here, there amerced!  
Six facts now, and all established, plain  
to man the last as first.

### REASON

There was good and evil, then, defined to  
man by this decree?  
Was—for at its promulgation both 'alike  
have ceased to be.  
Prior to this last announcement 'Cer-  
tainly as God exists,  
As He made man's soul, as soul is quench-  
less by the deathly mists,  
Yet is, all the same, forbidden premature  
escape from time  
To eternity's provided purer air and  
brighter clime,—  
Just so certainly depends it on the use to  
which man turns  
Earth, the good or evil done there, whether  
after death he earns  
Life eternal,—heaven, the phrase be, or  
eternal death,—say, hell.  
As his deeds, so proves his portion, doing  
ill or doing well!  
—Prior to this last announcement, earth  
was man's probation-place:  
Liberty of doing evil gave his doing good  
a grace;  
Once lay down the law, with Nature's  
simple 'Such effects succeed  
Causes such, and heaven or hell depends  
upon man's earthly deed  
Just as surely as depends the straight or  
else the crooked line  
On his making point meet point or with  
or else without incline,'—  
Thenceforth neither good nor evil does  
man, doing what he must.  
Lay but down that law as stringent  
'Wouldst thou live again, be just!'  
As this other 'Wouldst thou live now,  
regularly draw thy breath!  
For, suspend the operation, straight law's  
breach results in death—'  
And (provided always, man, addressed  
this mode, be sound and sane)  
Prompt and absolute obedience, never  
doubt, will law obtain!  
Tell not me 'Look round us! nothing each  
side but acknowledged law,  
Now styled God's—now Nature's edict!'  
Where's obedience without flaw  
Paid to either? What's the adage rife in  
man's mouth? Why, 'The best  
I both see and praise, the worst I follow'  
—which, despite professed  
Seeing, praising, all the same he follows,  
since he disbelieves  
In the heart of him that edict which for  
truth his head receives.

There's evading and persuading and much  
 making law amends  
 Somehow, there's the nice distinction  
 'twixt fast foes and faulty friends,  
 —Any consequence except inevitable  
 death when 'Die,  
 Whoso breaks our law!' they publish,  
 God and Nature equally.  
 Law that's kept or broken—subject to  
 man's will and pleasure! Whence?  
 How comes law to bear eluding? Not  
 because of impotence:  
 Certain laws exist already which to hear  
 means to obey;  
 Therefore not without a purpose these  
 man must, while those man may  
 Keep and, for the keeping, haply gain  
 approval and reward.  
 Break through this last superstructure, all  
 is empty air—no sword  
 Firm like my first fact to stand on 'God  
 there is, and soul there is,'  
 And soul's earthly life-allotment: where-  
 in, by hypothesis,  
 Soul is bound to pass probation, prove its  
 powers, and exercise  
 Sense and thought on fact, and then, from  
 fact educing fit surmise,  
 Ask itself, and of itself have solely answer,  
 'Does the scope  
 Earth afford of fact to judge by warrant  
 future fear or hope?'

Thus have we come back full circle:  
 fancy's footsteps one by one  
 Go their round conducting reason to the  
 point where they begun,  
 Left where we were left so lately, Dear  
 and True! When, half a week  
 Since, we walked and talked and thus I  
 told you, how suffused a cheek  
 You had turned me had I sudden brought  
 the blush into the smile  
 By some word like 'Idly argued! you  
 know better all the while!'  
 Now, from me—Oh not a blush but, how  
 much more, a joyous glow,  
 Laugh triumphant, would it strike did  
 your 'Yes, better I do know'  
 Break, my warrant for assurance! which  
 assurance may not be  
 If, supplanting hope, assurance needs  
 must change this life to me.  
 So, I hope—no more than hope, but  
 hope—no less than hope, because  
 I can fathom, by no plumb-line sunk in  
 life's apparent laws,  
 How I may in any instance fix where  
 change should meetly fall  
 Nor involve, by one revival, abrogation  
 of them all:  
 —Which again involves as utter change  
 in life thus law-released,

Whence the good of goodness vanished  
 when the ill of evil ceased.  
 Whereas, life and laws apparent re-  
 instated,—all we know,  
 All we know not,—o'er our heaven again  
 cloud closes, until, lo—  
 Hope the arrowy, just as constant, comes  
 to pierce its gloom, compelled  
 By a power and by a purpose which, if no  
 one else beheld,  
 I behold in life, so—hope!

Sad summing-up of all to say!  
*Athanasius contra mundum*, why should he  
 hope more than they?  
 So are men made notwithstanding, such  
 magnetic virtue darts  
 From each head their fancy haloes to their  
 unresisting hearts!

Here I stand, methinks a stone's throw  
 from yon village I this morn  
 Traversed for the sake of looking one last  
 look at its forlorn  
 Tenement's ignoble fortune: through a  
 crevice, plain its floor  
 Piled with provender for cattle, while a  
 dung-heap blocked the door.  
 In that squalid Bossex, under that ob-  
 scene red roof, arose,  
 Like a fiery flying serpent from its egg, a  
 soul—Rousseau's.  
 Turn thence! Is it Diodati joins the glim-  
 mer of the lake?  
 There I plucked a leaf, one week since,—  
 ivy, plucked for Byron's sake.  
 Famed unfortunates! And yet, because  
 of that phosphoric fame  
 Swathing blackness' self with brightness  
 till putridity looked flame,  
 All the world was witched: and where-  
 fore? what could lie beneath, allure  
 Heart of man to let corruption serve  
 man's head as cynosure?  
 Was the magic in the dictum 'All that's  
 good is gone and past;  
 Bad and worse still grows the present, and  
 the worst of all comes last:  
 Which believe—for I believe it?' So  
 preached one his gospel-news;  
 While melodious moaned the other  
 'Dying day with dolphin-hues!  
 Storm, for loveliness and darkness like a  
 woman's eye! Ye mounts  
 Where I climb to 'scape my fellow, and  
 thou sea wherein he counts  
 Not one inch of vile dominion! What  
 were your especial wraith  
 Failed ye to enforce the maxim "Of all  
 objects found on earth  
 Man is meanest, much too honoured  
 when compared with—what by odds  
 Beats him—any dog: so, let him go a-  
 howling to his gods!"

## LA SAISIAZ

Which believe—for I believe it!—such the  
comfort man received  
Sadly since perforce he must: for why?  
the famous bard believed!

Fame! Then, give me fame, a moment!  
As I gather at a glance  
Human glory after glory vivifying yon  
expanse,  
Let me grasp them all together, hold on  
high and brandish well  
Beacon-like above the rapt world ready,  
whether heaven or hell  
Send the dazzling summons earthward,  
to submit itself the same,  
Take on trust the hope or else despair  
flashed full on face by—Fame!  
Thanks, thou pine-tree of Makistos, wide  
thy giant torch I wave!  
Know ye whence I plucked the pillar, late  
with sky for architrave?  
This the trunk, the central solid Know-  
ledge, kindled core, began  
Tugging earth-deeps, trying heaven-  
heights, rooted yonder at Lausanne.  
This which flits and spits, the aspic,—  
sparkles in and out the boughs  
Now, and now condensed, the python,  
coiling round and round allows  
Scarce the bole its due effulgence, dulled  
by flake on flake of Wit—  
Laughter so beweels Learning,—what  
but Ferney nourished it?  
Nay, nor fear—since very resin feeds the  
flame—that I dispense  
With yon Bossex terebinth-tree's all-  
explosive Eloquence:  
No, be sure! nor, any more than thy re-  
splendancy, Jean-Jacques,  
Dare I want thine, Diodati! What though  
monkeys and macaques  
Gibber 'Byron'? Byron's ivy rears a  
branch beyond the crew,  
Green for ever, no deciduous trash ma-  
caques and monkeys chew!  
As Rousseau, then, eloquent, as Byron  
prime in poet's power,—  
Detonations, fulgurations, smiles—the  
rainbow, tears—the shower,—  
Lo, I lift the coruscating marvel—Fame!  
and, famed, declare

—Learned for the nonce as Gibbon, witty  
as wit's self Voltaire . . .  
O the sorriest of conclusions to whatever  
man of sense  
Mid the millions stands the unit, takes no  
flare for evidence!  
Yet the millions have their portion, live  
their calm or troublous day,  
Find significance in fireworks: so, by help  
of mine, they may  
Confidently lay to heart and lock in head  
their life long—this:  
'He there with the brand flamboyant,  
broad o'er night's forlorn abyss,  
Crowned by prose and verse; and wield-  
ing, with Wit's bauble, Learning's  
rod . . .  
Well? Why, he at least believed in Soul,  
was very sure of God.'

So the poor smile played, that evening:  
pallid smile long since extinct  
Here in London's mid-November! Not  
so loosely thoughts were linked,  
Six weeks since as I, descending in the  
sunset from Salève,  
Found the chain, I seemed to forge there,  
flawless till it reached your grave,—  
Not so filmy was the texture, but I bore it  
in my breast  
Safe thus far. And since I found a some-  
thing in me would not rest  
Till I, link by link, unravelled any tangle  
of the chain,  
—Here it lies, for much or little! I have  
lived all o'er again  
That last pregnant hour: I saved it, just as  
I could save a root  
Disinterred for re-interment when the  
time best helps to shoot.  
Life is stocked with germs of torpid life:  
but may I never wake  
Those of mine whose resurrection could  
not be without earthquake!  
Rest all such, unraised forever! Be this,  
sad yet sweet, the sole  
Memory evoked from slumber! Least  
part this: then what the whole?

# THE TWO POETS OF CROISIC

1878

I  
SUCH a starved bank of moss  
Till that May-morn,  
Blue ran the flash across:  
Violets were born!

II  
Sky—what a scowl of cloud  
Till, near and far,  
Ray on ray split the shroud:  
Splendid, a star!

III  
World—how it walled about  
Life with disgrace  
Till God's own smile came out:  
That was thy face!

## THE TWO POETS OF CROISIC .

I  
'FAME!' Yes, I said it and you read it. First,  
Praise the good log-fire! Winter howls  
without.  
Crowd closer, let us! Ha, the secret nursed  
Inside yon hollow, crusted roundabout  
With copper where the clamp was,—how  
the burst  
Vindicates flame the stealthy feeder!  
Spout  
Thy splendidest—a minute and no more?  
So soon again all sobered as before?

II  
Nay, for I need to see your face! One  
stroke  
Adroitly dealt, and lo, the pomp re-  
vealed!  
Fire in his pandemonium, heart of oak  
Palatial, where he wrought the works  
concealed  
Beneath the solid-seeming roof I broke,  
As redly up and out and off they reeled  
Like disconcerted imps, those thousand  
sparks  
From fire's slow tunnelling of vaults and  
arcs!

III  
Up, out, and off, see! Were you never  
used,—  
You now, in childish days or rather  
nights,—  
As I was, to watch sparks fly? not amused  
By that old nurse-taught game which  
gave the sprites  
Each one his title and career,—confused  
Belief 'twas all long over with the flights  
From earth to heaven of hero, sage and  
bard,  
And bade them once more strive for  
ame's award?

IV  
New long bright life! and happy chance  
'befell—  
That I know—when some prematurely  
lost  
Child of disaster bore away the bell  
From some too-pampered son of for-  
tune, crossed  
Never before my chimney broke the spell!  
Octogenarian Keats gave up the ghost,  
While—never mind Who was it cumbered  
earth—  
Sank stifled, span-long brightness, in the  
birth.

V  
Well, try a variation of the game!  
Our log is old ship-timber, broken bulk.  
There's sea-brine spirits up the brimstone  
flame,  
That crimson-curly spiral proves the  
hulk  
Was saturate with—ask the chloride's  
name  
From somebody who knows! I shall  
not sulk  
If yonder greenish tonguelet licked from  
brass  
Its life, I thought was fed on copperas.

VI  
Anyhow, there they flutter! What may be  
The style and prowess of that purple  
one?  
Who is the hero other eyes shall see  
Than yours and mine? That yellow,  
deep to dun—  
Conjecture how the sage glows, whom not  
we  
But those unborn are to get warmth by!  
Son  
O' the coal,—as Job and Hebrew name a  
spark,—  
What bard, in thy red soaring, scares the  
dark?

VII  
Oh and the lesser lights, the dearer still  
That they elude a vulgar eye, give ours  
The glimpse repaying astronomic skill  
Which searched sky deeper, passed  
those patent powers  
Constellate proudly,—swords, scrolls,  
harps, that fill  
The vulgar eye to surfeit,—found best  
flowers  
Hid deepest in the dark,—named un-  
plucked grace  
Of soul, ungathered beauty, form or face!



## THE TWO POETS OF CROISIC

### VIII

Up with thee, mouldering ash men never  
 knew,  
 But I know! flash thou forth, and figure  
 bold,  
 Calm and columnar as yon flame I view!  
 Oh and I bid thee,—to whom fortune  
 doled  
 Scantly all other gifts out—bicker blue,  
 Beauty for all to see, zinc's uncontrolled  
 Flake-brilliance! Not my fault if these  
 were shown,  
 Grandeur and beauty both, to me alone.

### IX

No! as the first was boy's play, this proves  
 mere  
 Stripling's amusement: manhood's  
 sport be grave!  
 Choose rather sparkles quenched in mid  
 career,  
 Their boldness and their brightness  
 could not save  
 (In some old night of time on some lone  
 drear  
 Sea-coast, monopolized by crag or cave)  
 —Save from ignoble exit into smoke,  
 Silence, oblivion, all death-damps that  
 choke!

### X

Launched by our ship-wood, float we,  
 once adrift  
 In fancy to that land-strip waters wash,  
 We both know well! Where uncouth  
 tribes made shift  
 Long since to just keep life in, billows  
 dash  
 Nigh over folk who shudder at each lift  
 Of the old tyrant tempest's whirlwind-  
 lash  
 Though they have built the serviceable  
 town  
 Tempests but tease now, billows drench,  
 not drown.

### XI

Croisic, the spit of sandy rock which juts  
 Spitefully northward, bears nor tree nor  
 shrub  
 To tempt the ocean, show what Guérande  
 shuts  
 Behind her, past wild Batz whose  
 Saxons grub  
 The ground for crystals grown where  
 ocean gluts  
 Their promontory's breadth with salt:  
 all stub  
 Of rock and stretch of sand, the land's last  
 strife  
 To rescue a poor remnant for dear life.

### XII

And what life! Here was, from the world  
 to choose,  
 The Druids' chosen chief of homes:  
 they reared

—Only their women,—mid the slush and  
 ooze  
 Of yon low islet,—to their sun, revered  
 In strange stone guise,—a temple. May-  
 dawn dews  
 Saw the old structure levelled; when  
 there peered  
 May's earliest eve-star, high and wide once  
 more  
 Up towered the new pile perfect as before:

### XIII

Seeing that priestesses—and all were  
 such—  
 Unbuilt and then rebuilt it every May,  
 Each alike helping—well, if not too much!  
 For, mid their eagerness to outstrip day  
 And get work done, if any loosed her  
 clutch  
 And let a single stone drop, straight a  
 prey  
 Herself fell, torn to pieces, limb from limb,  
 By sisters in full chorus glad and grim.

### XIV

And still so much remains of that grey cult,  
 That even now, of nights, do women  
 steal  
 To the sole Menhir standing, and insult  
 The antagonistic church-spire by appeal  
 To power discrowned in vain, since each  
 adult  
 Believes the gruesome thing she clasps  
 may heal  
 Whatever plague no priestly help can cure:  
 Kiss but the cold stone, the event is sure!

### XV

Nay more: on May-morns, that primeval  
 rite  
 Of temple-building, with its punishment  
 For rash precipitation, lingers, spite  
 Of all remonstrance; vainly are they  
 shent,  
 Those girls who form a ring and, dressed  
 in white,  
 Dance round it, till some sister's strength  
 be spent:  
 Touch but the Menhir, straight the rest  
 turn roughs  
 From gentles, fall on her with fisticuffs.

### XVI

Oh and, for their part, boys from door to  
 door  
 Sing unintelligible words to tunes  
 As obsolete: 'scraps of Druidic lore,'  
 Sigh scholars, as each pale man impor-  
 tunes  
 Vainly the mumbling to speak plain once  
 more.  
 Enough of this old worship, rounds and  
 runes!  
 They serve my purpose, which is but to  
 show  
 Croisic to-day and Croisic long ago.

## THE TWO POETS OF CROISIC

### XXVII

What have we sailed to see, then, wafted  
there  
By fancy from the log that ends its days  
Of much adventure 'neath skies foul or  
fair,  
On waters rough or smooth, in this good  
blaze  
We two crouch round so closely, bidding  
care  
Keep outside with the snow-storm?  
Something says  
'Fit time for story-telling!' I begin—  
Why not at Croisic, port we first put in?

### XXVIII

Anywhere serves: for point me out the  
place  
Wherever man has made himself a home,  
And there I find the story of our race  
In little, just at Croisic as at Rome.  
What matters the degree? the kind I trace.  
Druids their temple, Christians have  
their dome:  
So with mankind; and Croisic, I'll engage,  
With Rome yields sort for sort, in age for  
age.

### XXIX

No doubt, men vastly differ: and we need  
Some strange exceptional benevolence  
Of nature's sunshine to develop seed  
So well, in the less-favoured clime, that  
thence  
We may discern how shrub means tree  
indeed  
Though dwarfed till scarcely shrub in  
evidence.  
Man in the ice-house or the hot-house  
ranks  
With beasts or gods: stove-forced, give  
warmth the thanks!

### XX

While, is there any ice-checked? Such  
shall learn  
I am thankworthy, who propose to slake  
His thirst for tasting how it feels to turn  
Cedar from hyssop-on-the-wall. I wake  
No memories of what is harsh and stern  
In ancient Croisic-nature, much less  
rake  
The ashes of her last warmth till out leaps  
Live Hervé Riel, the single spark she  
keeps.

### XXI

Take these two, see, each outbreak,—spirit  
and spirit  
Of fire from our brave billet's either  
edge  
Which—call maternal Croisic ocean-girt!  
These two shall thoroughly redeem my  
pledge.

One flames fierce gules, its feebler rival—  
vert,  
Heralds would tell you: heroes, I allege,  
They both were: soldiers, sailors, states-  
men, priests,  
Lawyers, physicians—guess what gods or  
beasts!

### XXII

None of them all, but—poets, if you  
please!  
'What, even there, endowed with knack  
of rhyme,  
Did two among the aborigines  
Of that rough region pass the ungracious  
time  
Suiting, to rumble-tumble of the sea's,  
The songs forbidden a serener clime?  
Or had they universal audience—that's  
To say, the folk of Croisic, ay and Batz?'

### XXIII

Open your ears! Each poet in his day  
Had such a mighty moment of success  
As pinnaced him straight, in full display,  
For the whole world to worship—  
nothing less!  
Was not the whole polite world Paris,  
pray?  
And did not Paris, for one moment—  
yes,  
Worship these poet-flames, our red and  
green,  
One at a time, a century between?

### XXIV

And yet you never heard their names!  
Assist,  
Clio, Historic Muse, while I record  
Great deeds! Let fact, not fancy, break  
the mist  
And bid each sun emerge, in turn play  
lord  
Of day, one moment! Hear the annalist  
Tell a strange story, true to the least  
word!  
At Croisic, sixteen hundred years and ten  
Since Christ, forth flamed yon liquid ruby,  
then.

### XXV

Know him henceforth as René Gentil-  
homme  
—Appropriate appellation! noble birth  
And knightly blazon, the device where-  
from  
Was 'Better do than say'! In Croisic's  
dearth  
Why prison his career while Christendom  
Lay open to reward acknowledged  
worth?  
He therefore left it at the proper age  
And got to be the Prince of Condé's page.

## THE TWO POETS OF CROISIC

XXVI

Which Prince of Condé, whom men called  
 'The Duke,'  
 —Failing the king, his cousin, of an heir,  
 (As one might hold would hap, without  
 rebuke,  
 Since Anne of Austria, all the world was  
 'ware,  
 Twenty-three years long sterile, scarce  
 could look  
 For issue)—failing Louis of so rare  
 A godsend, it was natural the Prince  
 Should hear men call him 'Next King'  
 too, nor wince.

XXVII

Now, as this reasonable hope, by growth  
 Of years, nay, tens of years, looked  
 plump almost  
 To bursting,—would the brothers, child-  
 less both,  
 Louis and Gaston, give but up the  
 ghost—  
 Condé, called 'Duke' and 'Next King,'  
 nothing loth  
 Awaited his appointment to the post,  
 And wiled away the time, as best he might,  
 Till Providence should settle things aright.

XXVIII

So, at a certain pleasure-house, withdrawn  
 From cities where a whisper breeds of ef-  
 fence,  
 He sat him down to watch the streak of  
 dawn  
 Testify to first stir of Providence;  
 And, since dull country life makes  
 courtiers yawn,  
 There wanted not a poet to dispense  
 Song's remedy for spleen-fits all and some,  
 Which poet was Page René Gentilhomme.

XXIX

A poet born and bred, his very sire  
 A poet also, author of a piece  
 Printed and published, 'Ladies—their  
 attire':  
 Therefore the son, just born at his de-  
 cease,  
 Was bound to keep alive the sacred fire,  
 And kept it, yielding moderate increase  
 Of songs and sonnets, madrigals, and  
 much  
 Rhyming thought poetry and praised as  
 such.

XXX

Rubbish unutterable (bear in mind!)  
 Rubbish not wholly without value,  
 though,  
 Being to compliment the Duke designed  
 And bring the complimenter credit so,—  
 Pleasure with profit happily combined.  
 Thus René Gentilhomme rhymed,  
 rhymed till—lo,  
 This happened, as he sat in an alcove  
 Elaborating rhyme for 'love'—not 'dove.'

XXXI

He was alone: silence and solitude  
 Befit the votary of the Muse. Around,  
 Nature—not our new picturesque and  
 rude,  
 But trim tree-cinctured stately garden-  
 ground—  
 Breathed polish and politeness. All-  
 imbued  
 With these, he sat absorbed in one pro-  
 found  
 Excogitation 'Were it best to hint  
 Or boldly boast "She loves me,—Ara-  
 minte"?'

XXXII

When suddenly flashed lightning, searing  
 sight  
 Almost, so close to eyes; then, quick on  
 flash,  
 Followed the thunder, splitting earth  
 downright  
 Where René sat a-rhyming: with huge  
 crash  
 Of marble into atoms infinite—  
 Marble which, stately, dared the world  
 to dash  
 The stone-thing proud, high-pillared, from  
 its place:  
 One flash, and dust was all that lay at base.

XXXIII

So, when the horrible confusion loosed  
 Its wrappage round his senses, and, with  
 breath,  
 Seeing and hearing by degrees induced  
 Conviction what he felt was life, not  
 death—  
 His fluttered faculties came back to roost  
 One after one, as fowls do: ay, beneath,  
 About his very feet there, lay in dust  
 Earthly presumption paid by heaven's  
 disgust.

XXXIV

For, what might be the thunder-smitten  
 thing  
 But, pillared high and proud, in marble  
 guise,  
 A ducal crown—which meant 'Now  
 Duke: Next, King'?  
 Since such the Prince was, not in his  
 own eyes  
 Alone, but all the world's. Pebble from  
 sling  
 Prostrates a giant; so can pulverize  
 Marble pretension—how much more,  
 make moul't  
 A peacock-prince his plume—God's thun-  
 derbolt.

XXXV

That was enough for René, that first fact  
 Thus flashed into him. Up he looked:  
 all blue

## THE TWO POETS OF CROISIC

And bright the sky above; earth firm, compact  
 Beneath his footing, lay apparent too;  
 Opposite stood the pillar: nothing lacked  
 There, but the Duke's crown: see, its  
 fragments strew  
 The earth,—about his feet lie atoms fine  
 Where he sat nursing late his fourteenth  
 line!

### XXXVI

So, for the moment, all the universe  
 Being abolished, all 'twixt God and  
 him,—  
 Earth's praise or blame, its blessing or its  
 curse,  
 Of one and the same value,—to the brim  
 Flooded with truth for better or for  
 worse,—  
 He pounces on the writing-paper, prim,  
 Keeping its place on table: not a dint  
 Nor speck had damaged 'Ode to Ara-  
 minte.'

### XXXVII

And over the neat crowquill calligraph  
 His pen goes blotting, blurring, as an ox  
 Tramples a flower-bed in a garden,—laugh  
 You may!—so does not he, whose quick  
 heart knocks  
 Audibly at his breast: an epitaph  
 On earth's break-up, amid the falling  
 rocks,  
 He might be penning in a wild dismay,  
 Caught with his work half-done on Judg-  
 ment Day.

### XXXVIII

And what is it so terribly he pens,  
 Ruining 'Cupid, Venus, wile and smile,  
 Hearts, darts,' and all his day's *divinior*  
*mens*  
 Judged necessary to a perfect style?  
 Little reck's René, with a breast to cleanse,  
 Of Rhadamanthine law that reigned  
 erewhile:  
 Brimful of truth, truth's outburst will con-  
 vince  
 (Style or no style) who bears truth's brunt  
 —the Prince.

### XXXIX

'Condé, called "Duke," be called just  
 "Duke," not more  
 To life's end! "Next King" thou for-  
 sooth wilt be?  
 Ay, when this bauble, as it decked before  
 Thy pillar, shall again, for France to see,  
 Take its proud station there! Let France  
 adore  
 No longer an illusive mock-sun—thee—  
 But keep her homage for Sol's self, about  
 To rise and put pretenders to the rout!

### XL

'What? France so God-abandoned that  
 her root  
 Regal, though many a Spring it gave no  
 sign,  
 Lacks power to make the bole, now  
 branchless, shoot  
 Greenly as ever? Nature, though be-  
 nign,  
 Thwarts ever the ambitious and astute.  
 In store for such is punishment condign:  
 Sure as thy Duke's crown to the earth was  
 hurled,  
 So sure, next year, a Dauphin glads the  
 world!'

### XLI

Which penned—some forty lines to this  
 effect—  
 Our René folds his paper, marches brave  
 Back to the mansion, luminous, erect,  
 Triumphant, an emancipated slave.  
 There stands the Prince. 'How now? My  
 Duke's crown wrecked?  
 What may this mean?' The answer  
 René gave  
 Was—handing him the verses, with the  
 due  
 Incline of body: 'Sir, God's word to you!'

### XLII

The Prince read, paled, was silent; all  
 around,  
 The courtier-company, to whom he  
 passed  
 The paper, read, in equal silence bound.  
 René grew also by degrees aghast  
 At his own fit of courage—palely found  
 Way of retreat from that pale presence:  
 classed  
 Once more among the cony-kind. 'Oh,  
 son,  
 It is a feeble folk!' saith Solomon.

### XLIII

Vainly he apprehended evil: since,  
 When, at the year's end, even as foretold,  
 Forth came the Dauphin who discrowned  
 the Prince  
 Of that long-craved mere visionary  
 gold,  
 'Twas no fit time for envy to evince  
 Malice, besure! The timidest grew bold:  
 Of all that courtier-company not one  
 But left the semblance for the actual sun.

### XLIV

And all sorts and conditions that stood by  
 At René's burning moment, bright  
 escape  
 Of soul, bore witness to the prophecy.  
 Which witness took the customary  
 shape

## THE TWO POETS OF CROISIC

Of verse; a score of poets in full cry  
Hailed the inspired one. Nantes and  
Tours agape,  
Soon Paris caught the infection; gaining  
strength,  
How could it fail to reach the Court at  
length?

XLV

'O poet!' smiled King Louis, 'and besides,  
O prophet! Sure, by miracle announced,  
My babe will prove a prodigy. Who chides  
Henceforth the unchilded monarch shall  
be trounced

For irreligion: since the fool derides  
Plain miracle by which this prophet  
pounced

Exactly on the moment I should lift  
Like Simeon, in my arms, a babe, "God's  
gift!"

XLVI

'So call the boy! and call this bard and seer  
By a new title! him I raise to rank  
Of "Royal Poet": poet without peer!

Whose fellows only have themselves to  
thank

If humbly they must follow in the rear  
My René. He's the master: they must  
clank

Their chains of song, confessed his slaves;  
for why?

They poetize, while he can prophesy!'

XLVII

So said, so done; our René rose august,  
'The Royal Poet'; straightway put in  
type

His poem-prophecy, and (fair and just  
Procedure) added,—now that time was  
ripe

For proving friends did well his word to  
trust,—

Those attestations, tuned to lyre or  
pipe,

Which friends broke out with when he  
dared foretell

The Dauphin's birth: friends trusted, and  
did well.

XLVIII

Moreover he got painted by Du Pré,  
Engraved by Daret also, and prefixed  
The portrait to his book: a crown of bay  
Circled his brows, with rose and myrtle  
mixed;

And Latin verses, lovely in their way,  
Described him as 'the biforked hill be-  
twixt:

Since he hath scaled Parnassus at one  
jump,

Joining the Delphic quill and Getic trump.'

XLIX

Whereof came . . . What, it lasts, our spirt,  
thus long

—The red fire? That's the reason must  
excuse

My letting flicker René's prophet-song  
No longer; for its pertinacious hues  
Must fade before its fellow joins the throng  
Of sparks departed up the chimney,  
dues  
To dark oblivion. At the word, it winks,  
Rallies; relapses, dwindles, deathward  
sinks!

L

So does our poet. All this burst of fame,  
Fury of favour, Royal Poetship,  
Prophetship, book, verse, picture—there-  
of came

—Nothing! That's why I would not let  
outstrip

Red his green rival flamelet: just the same  
Ending in smoke waits both! In vain  
we rip

The past, no further faintest trace remains  
Of René to reward our pious pains.

LI

Somebody saw a portrait framed and  
glazed.

At Croisic, 'Who may be this glorified  
Mortal unheard-of hitherto?' amazed

That person asked the owner by his side,  
Who proved as ignorant. The question  
raised

Provoked inquiry; key by key was tried  
On Croisic's portrait-puzzle, till back flew  
The wards at one key's touch, which key  
was—Who?

LII

The other famous poet! Wait thy turn,  
Thou green, our red's competitor!

Enough  
Just now to note 'twas he that itched to  
learn

(A hundred years ago) how fate could  
puff

Heaven-high (a hundred years before)  
then spurn

To suds so big a bubble in some huff:  
Since green too found red's portrait,—  
having heard

Hitherto of red's rare self not one word.

LIII

And he with zeal addressed him to the task  
Of hunting out, by all and any means,  
—Who might the brilliant bard be, born to  
bask

Butterfly-like in shine which kings and  
queens

And baby-dauphins shed? Much need to  
ask!

Is fame so fickle that what perks and  
preens

The eyed wing, one imperial minute, dips  
Next sudden moment into blind eclipse?

## THE TWO POETS OF CROISIC

### LIV

After a vast expenditure of pains,  
Our second poet found the prize he  
sought:  
Urged in his search by something that  
restrains  
From undue triumph famed ones who  
have fought,  
Or simply, poetizing, taxed their brains:  
Something that tells such—dear is  
triumph bought  
If it means only basking in the midst  
Of fame's brief sunshine, as thou, René,  
didst.

### LIV

For, what did searching find at last but  
this?  
Quoth somebody 'I somehow some-  
where seem  
To think I heard one old De Chevaye is  
Or was possessed of René's works!'—  
which gleam  
Of light from out the dark proved not  
amiss  
To track, by correspondence on the  
theme;  
And soon the twilight broadened into day,  
For thus to question answered De Che-  
vaye.

### LVI

'True it is, I did once possess the works  
You want account of—works—to call  
them so,—  
Comprised in one small book: the volume  
lurks  
(Some fifty leaves in *duodecimo*)  
'Neath certain ashes which my soul it irks  
Still to remember, because long ago  
That and my other rare shelf-occupants  
Perished by burning of my house at  
Nantes.

### LVII

'Yet of that book one strange particular  
Still stays in mind with me'—and there-  
upon  
Followed the story. 'Few the poems are;  
The book was two-thirds filled up with  
this one,  
And sundry witnesses from near and far  
That here at least was prophesying done  
By prophet, so as to preclude all doubt,  
Before the thing he prophesied about.'

### LVIII

That's all he knew, and all the poet learned,  
And all that you and I are like to hear  
Of René; since not only book is burned  
But memory extinguished,—nay, I fear,  
Portrait is gone too: nowhere I discerned  
A trace of it at Croisic. 'Must a tear  
Needs fall for that?' you smile. 'How  
fortune fares  
With such a mediocrity, who cares?'

### LIX

Well, I care—intimately care to have  
Experience how a human creature felt  
In after-life, who bore the burden grave  
Of certainly believing God had dealt  
For once directly with him: did not rave  
—A maniac, did not find his reason melt  
—Ah! idiot, but went on, in peace or strife,  
The world's way, lived an ordinary life.

### LX

How many problems that one fact would  
solve!  
An ordinary soul, no more, no less,  
About whose life earth's common sights  
revolve,  
On whom is brought to bear, by thunder-  
stress,  
This fact—God tasks him, and will not  
absolve  
Task's negligent performer! Can you  
guess  
How such a soul,—the task performed to  
point,—  
Goes back to life nor finds things out of  
joint?

### LXI

Does he stand stock-like henceforth? or  
proceed  
Dizzily, yet with course straightforward  
still,  
Down-trampling vulgar hindrance?—as  
the reed  
Is crushed beneath its tramp when that  
blind will  
Hatched in some old-world beast's brain  
bids it speed  
Where the sun wants brute-presence to  
fulfil  
Life's purpose in a new far zone, ere ice  
Enwomb the pasture-tract its fortalice.

### LXII

I think no such direct plain truth consists  
With actual sense and thought and what  
they take  
To be the solid walls of life: mere mists—  
How such would, at that truth's first  
piercing, break  
Into the nullity they are!—slight lists  
Wherein the puppet-champions wage,  
for sake  
Of some mock-mistress, mimic war: laid  
low  
At trumpet-blast, there's shown the world,  
one foe!

### LXIII

No, we must play the pageant out, observe  
The tourney-regulations, and regard  
Success—to meet the blunted spear nor  
swerve,  
Failure—to break no bones yet fall on  
sward;

## THE TWO POETS OF CROISIC

Must prove we have—not courage? well  
then,—nerve!  
And, at the day's end, boast the crown's  
award—  
Be warranted as promising to wield  
Weapons, no sham, in a true battle-field.

### LXIV

Meantime, our simulated thunderclaps  
Which tell us counterfeited truths—  
these same  
Are—sound, when music storms the soul,  
perhaps?  
—Sight, beauty, every dart of every aim  
That touches just, then seems, by strange  
relapse,  
To fall effectless from the soul it came  
As if to fix its own, but simply smote  
And startled to vague beauty more remote?

### LXV

So do we gain enough—yet not too much—  
Acquaintance with that outer element  
Wherein there's operation (call it such!)  
Quite of another kind than we the pent  
On earth are proper to receive. Our hutch  
Lights up at the least chink: let roof be  
rent—  
How inmates huddle, blinded at first  
spasm,  
Cognizant of the sun's self through the  
chasm!

### LXVI

Therefore, who knows if this our René's  
quick  
Subsidence from as sudden noise and  
glare  
Into oblivion was impolitic?  
No doubt his soul became at once aware  
That, after prophecy, the rhyming-trick  
Is poor employment: human praises  
scare  
Rather than soothe ears all a-tingle yet  
With tones few hear and live, but none  
forget.

### LXVII

There's our first famous poet. Step thou  
forth,  
Second consummate songster! See, the  
tongue  
Of fire that typifies thee, owns thy worth  
In yellow, purple mixed its green among,  
No pure and simple resin from the North,  
But composite with virtues that belong  
To Southern culture! Love not more than  
hate  
Helped to a blaze . . . But I anticipate.

### LXVIII

Prepare to witness a combustion rich  
And riotously splendid, far beyond  
Poor René's lambent little streamer which  
Only played candle to a Court grown  
fond

By baby-birth: this soared to such a pitch,  
Alternately such colours doffed and  
donned,  
That when I say it dazzled Paris—please  
Know that it brought Voltaire upon his  
knees!

### LXIX

Who did it, was a dapper gentleman,  
Paul Desforges Maillard, Croisickese  
by birth,  
Whose birth that century ended which  
began  
By similar bestowment on our earth  
Of the aforesaid René. Cease to scan  
The ways of Providence! See Croisic's  
dearth—  
Not Paris in its plenitude—suffice  
To furnish France with her best poet twice

### LXX

Till he was thirty years of age, the vein  
Poetic yielded rhyme by drops and  
spirits:  
In verses of society had lain  
His talent chiefly; but the Muse asserts  
Privilege most by treating with disdain  
Epics the bard mouths out, or odes he  
blurts  
Spasmodically forth. Have people time  
And patience nowadays for thought in  
rhyme?

### LXXI

So, his achievements were the quatrain's  
inch  
Of homage, or at most the sonnet's ell  
Of admiration: welded lines with clinch  
Of ending word and word, to every belle  
In Croisic's bounds; these, brisk as any  
finch,  
He twittered till his fame had reached as  
well  
Guérande as Batz; but there fame stopped,  
for—curse  
On fortune—outside lay the universe!

### LXXII

That's Paris. Well,—why not break  
bounds, and send  
Song onward till it echo at the gates:  
Of Paris whither all ambitions tend,  
And end too, seeing that success there  
sates  
The soul which hungers most for fame?  
Why spend  
A minute in deciding, while, by Fate's  
Decree, there happens to be just the prize  
Proposed there, suiting souls that poetize?

### LXXIII

A prize indeed, the Academy's own self  
Proposes to what bard shall best indite  
A piece describing how, through shoal and  
shelf,  
The Art of Navigation, steered aright,

## THE TWO POETS OF CROISIC

Has, in our last king's reign,—the lucky elf,—

Reached, one may say, Perfection's haven quite,  
And there cast anchor. At a glance one sees  
The subject's crowd of capabilities!

### LXXIV

Neptune and Amphitrité! Thetis, who  
Is either Tethys or as good—both tag!  
Triton can shove along a vessel too:  
It's Virgil! Then the winds that blow or lag,—

De Maille, Vendôme, Vermandois! Toulouse blew

Longest, we reckon: he must puff the flag  
To fullest outflare; while our lacking nymph  
Be Anne of Austria, Regent o'er the lymph!

### LXXV

Promised, performed! Since *irritabilis gens*

Holds of the feverish impotence that strives

To stay an itch by prompt resource to pen's  
Scratching itself on paper; placid lives,  
Leisurely works mark the *divinior mens*;

Bees brood above the honey in their hives;

Gnats are the busy bustlers. Splash and scrawl,—

Completed lay thy piece, swift penman Paul!

### LXXVI

To Paris with the product! This despatched,

One had to wait the Forty's slow and sure

Verdict, as best one might. Our penman scratched

Away perforce the itch that knows no cure

But daily paper-friction: more than matched

His first feat by a second—tribute pure  
And heartfelt to the Forty when their voice

Should peal with one accord 'Be Paul our choice!'

### LXXVII

Scratch, scratch went much laudation of that sane

And sound Tribunal, delegates august  
Of Phœbus and the Muses' sacred train—

Whom every poetaster tries to thrust  
From where, high-throned, they dominate the Seine:

Fruitless endeavour,—fail it shall and must!

Whereof in witness have not one and all  
The Forty voices pealed 'Our choice be Paul'?

### LXXVIII

Thus Paul discounted his applause. Alack  
For human expectation! Scarcely ink  
Was dry when, lo, the perfect piece came back

Rejected, shamed! Some other poet's clink

'Thetis and Tethys' had seduced the pack  
Of pedants to declare perfection's pink  
A singularly poor production. 'Whew!  
The Forty are stark fools, I always knew.'

### LXXIX

First fury over (for Paul's race—to-wit,  
Brain-vibrios—wriggle clear of protoplasm

Into minute life that's one fury-fit),  
'These fools shall find a bard's enthusiasm

Comports with what should counter-balance it—

Some knowledge of the world! No doubt, orgasm

Effects the birth of verse which, born, demands

Prosaic ministration, swaddling-bands!

### LXXX

'Verse must be cared for at this early stage,  
Handled, nay dandled even. I should play

Their game indeed if, till it grew of age,  
I meekly let these dotards frown away

My bantling from the rightful heritage  
Of smiles and kisses! Let the public say

If it be worthy praises or rebukes,  
My poem, from these Forty old perukes!'

### LXXXI

So, by a friend, who boasts himself in grace  
With no less than the Chevalier La

Roque,—  
Eminent in those days for pride of place,

Seeing he had it in his power to block  
The way or smooth the road to all the race

Of literators trudging up to knock  
At Fame's exalted temple-door—for why?

He edited the Paris 'Mercury':—

### LXXXII

By this friend's help the Chevalier receives  
Paul's poem, prefaced by the due appeal

To Cæsar from the Jews. As duly heaves  
A sigh the Chevalier, about to deal

With case so customary—turns the leaves,  
Finds nothing there to borrow, beg or steal—

Then brightens up the critic's brow deep-lined.

'The thing may be so cleverly declined!'



## THE TWO POETS OF CROISIC

LXXXIII

Down to desk, out with paper, up with quill,  
Dip and indite! 'Sir, gratitude immense  
For this true draught from the Pierian rill!  
Our Academic clodpoles must be dense  
Indeed to stand unirrigated still.  
No less, we critics dare not give offence  
To grantees like the Forty: while we mock,  
We grin and bear. So, here's your piece!  
La Roque.'

LXXXIV

There now!' cries Paul: 'the fellow can't avoid  
Confessing that my piece deserves the palm;  
And yet he dares not grant me space enjoyed  
By every scribbler he permits embalm  
His crambo in the Journal's corner!  
Cloyed  
With stuff like theirs, no wonder if a qualm  
Be caused by verse like mine: though that's no cause  
For his defrauding me of just applause.

LXXXV

Aha, he fears the Forty, this poltroon?  
First let him fear *me*! Change smooth speech to rough!  
I'll speak my mind out, show the fellow soon  
Who is the foe to dread: insist enough  
On my own merits till, as clear as noon,  
He sees I am no man to take rebuff  
As patiently as scribblers may and must!  
Quick to the onslaught, out sword, cut and thrust!

LXXXVI

And thereupon a fierce epistle flings  
Its challenge in the critic's face. Alack!  
Our bard mistakes his man! The gauntlet rings  
On brazen visor proof against attack.  
Prompt from his editorial throne up springs  
The insulted magnate, and his mace falls, thwack,  
On Paul's devoted brainpan,—quite away  
From common courtesies of fencing-play!

LXXXVII

Sir, will you have the truth? This piece of yours  
Is simply execrable past belief.  
I shrink from saying so; but, since nought cures  
Conceit but truth, truth's at your service! Brief,  
Just so long as 'The Mercury' endures,  
So long are you excluded by its Chief

From corner, nay, from cranny! Play the cock  
O' the roost, henceforth, at Croisic!' wrote  
La Roque.

LXXXVIII

Paul yellowed, whitened, as his wrath from red  
Waxed incandescent. Now, this man of rhyme  
Was merely foolish, faulty in the head  
Not heart of him: conceit's a venial crime.  
'Oh by no means malicious!' cousins said:  
Fussily feeble,—harmless all the time,  
Piddling at so-called satire—well-advised  
He held in most awe whom he satirized.

LXXXIX

Accordingly his kith and kin—removed  
From emulation of the poet's gift  
By power and will—these rather liked,  
'nay, loved  
The man who gave his family a lift  
Out of the Croisic level; 'disapproved  
Satire so trenchant.' Thus our poet sniffed  
Home-ince, though too churlish to un-  
lock  
'The Mercury's' box of ointment was La Roque.

XC

But when Paul's visage grew from red to white,  
And from his lips a sort of mumbling fell  
Of who was to be kicked,—'And serve him right!'  
A gay voice interposed—'did kicking well  
Answer the purpose! Only—if I might  
Suggest as much—a far more potent spell  
Lies in another kind of treatment. Oh,  
Women are ready at resource, you know!

XCI

'Talent should minister to genius! Good:  
The proper and superior smile returns.  
Hear me with patience! Have you understood  
The only method whereby genius earns  
Fit guerdon nowadays? In knightly mood  
You entered lists with visor up; one learns  
Too late that, had you mounted Roland's crest,  
'Room!' they had roared—La Roque with all the rest!

XCH

'Why did you first of all transmit your piece  
To those same priggish Forty unpre-  
pared

## THE TWO POETS OF CROISIC

Whether to rank you with the swans or geese

By friendly intervention? If they dared  
Count you a cackler,—wonders never  
cease!

I think it still more wondrous that you  
bared

Your brow (my earlier image) as if praise  
Were gained by simple fighting nowadays!

### XCIII

'Your next step showed a touch of the true  
means

Whereby desert is crowned: not force  
but wile

Came to the rescue. "Get behind the  
scenes!"

Your friend advised: he writes, sets  
forth your style

And title, to such purpose intervenes  
That you get velvet-compliment three-  
pile;

And, though "The Mercury" said "nay,"  
nor stock

Nor stone did his refusal prove La Roque.

### XCIV

'Why must you needs revert to the high  
hand,

Imperative procedure—what you call  
"Taking on merit your exclusive stand"?

Stand, with a vengeance! Soon you  
went to wall,

You and your merit! Only fools command  
When folk are free to disobey them,  
Paul!

You've learnt your lesson, found out  
what's o'clock,

By this uncivil answer of La Roque.

### XCv

'Now let me counsel! Lay this piece on  
shelf

—Masterpiece though it be! From out  
your desk

Hand me some lighter sample, verse the elf  
Cupid inspired you with, no god gro-  
tesque

Presiding o'er the Navy! I myself  
Hand-write what's legible yet pictur-  
esque;

I'll copy fair and femininely frock  
Your poem masculine that courts La

Roque!

### XCVI

'Deïdamia he—Achilles thou!  
Ha, ha, these ancient stories come so  
apt!

My sex, my youth, my rank I next avow  
In a neat prayer for kind perusal.

Sapped  
I see the walls which stand so stoutly now!

I see the toils about the game entrapped

By honest cunning! Chains of lady's-  
smock,  
Not thorn and thistle, tether fast La  
Roque!

### XCvII

Now, who might be the speaker sweet and  
arch

That laughed above Paul's shoulder as  
it heaved

With the indignant heart?—bade steal a  
march

And not continue charging? Who con-  
ceived

This plan which set our Paul, like pea you  
parch

On fire-shovel, skipping, of a load re-  
lieved,

From arm-chair moodiness to *escritoire*  
Sacred to Phœbus and the tuneful choir?

### XCvIII

Who but Paul's sister! named of course  
like him

'Desforges'; but, mark you, in those  
days a queer

Custom obtained,—who knows whence  
grew the whim?—

That people could not read their title  
clear

To reverence till their own true names,  
made dim

By daily mouthing, pleased to disappear,  
Replaced by brand-new bright ones:

Arouet,  
For instance, grew Voltaire; Desforges—  
Malcraï.

### XCIX

'Demoiselle Malcraï de la Vigne'—be-  
cause

The family possessed at Brederac  
A vineyard,—few grapes, many hips-and-  
haws,—

Still a nice Breton name. As breast and  
back

Of this vivacious beauty gleamed through  
gauze,

So did her sprightly nature nowise lack  
Lustre when draped, the fashionable way,

In 'Malcraï de la Vigne'—more short,  
'Malcraï.'

### C

Out from Paul's *escritoire* behold escape  
The hoarded treasure! verse falls thick  
and fast,

Sonnets and songs of every size and shape.  
The lady ponders on her prize; at last

Selects one which—Oh angel and yet  
ape!—

Her malice thinks is probably surpassed  
In badness by no fellow of the flock,

Copies it fair, and 'Now for my La  
Roque!'

## THE TWO POETS OF CROISIC

### CI

So, to him goes, with the neat manuscript,  
The soft petitionary letter. 'Grant  
A fledgling novice that with wing unclipt  
She soar her little circuit, habitant  
Of an old manor; buried in which crypt,  
How can the youthful châtelaine but  
pant  
For disemprisonment by one *ad hoc*  
Appointed "Mercury's" Editor, La  
Roque?'

### CII

'Twas an epistle that might move the  
Turk!  
More certainly it moved our middle-  
aged  
Pen-driver drudging at his weary work,  
Raked the old ashes up and disengaged  
The sparks of gallantry which always lurk  
Somehow in literary breasts, assuaged  
In no degree by compliments on style;  
Are Forty wagging beards worth one girl's  
smile?

### CIII

In trips the lady's poem, takes its place  
Of honour in the gratified Gazette,  
With due acknowledgment of power and  
grace;  
Prognostication, too, that higher yet  
The Breton Muse will soar: fresh youth,  
high race,  
Beauty and wealth have amicably met  
That Demoiselle Malcrais may fill the  
chair  
Left vacant by the loss of Deshoulières.

### CIV

'There!' cried the lively lady. 'Who was  
right—  
You in the dumps, or I the merry maid  
Who know a trick or two can baffle spite  
Tenfold the force of this old fool's?  
Afraid  
Of Editor La Roque? But come! next  
flight  
Shall outsoar—Deshoulières alone?  
My blade,  
Sappho herself shall you confess outstrip!  
Quick, Paul, another dose of manuscript!'

### CV

And so, once well a-foot, advanced the  
game:  
More and more verses, corresponding  
gush  
On gush of praise, till everywhere acclaim  
Rose to the pitch of uproar. 'Sappho?  
Tush!  
Sure "Malcrais on her Parrot" puts to  
shame  
Deshoulières' pastoral, clay not worth  
a rush

Beside this find of treasure, gold in crock,  
Unearthed in Brittany,—nay, ask La  
Roque!'

### CVI

Such was the Paris tribute. 'Yes,' you  
sneer,  
'Ninnies stock Noodledom, but folk  
more sage  
Resist contagious folly, never fear!'  
Do they? Permit me to detach one page  
From the huge Album which from far and  
near  
Poetic praises blackened in a rage  
Of rapture! and that page shall be—who  
stares  
Confounded now, I ask you?—just Vol-  
taire's!

### CVII

Ay, sharpest shrewdest steel that ever  
stabbed  
To death Imposture through the  
amour-joints!  
How did it happen that gross Humbug  
grabbed  
Thy weapons, gouged thine eyes out?  
Fate appoints  
That pride shall have a fall, or I had  
blabbed  
Hardly that Humbug, whom thy soul  
aroints,  
Could thus cross-buttock thee caught un-  
aware,  
And dismalest of tumbles proved—Vol-  
taire's!

### CVIII

See his epistle extant yet, wherewith  
'Henri' in verse and 'Charles' in prose  
he sent  
To do her suit and service! Here's the pith  
Of half a dozen stanzas—stones which  
went  
To build that simulated monolith—  
Sham love in due degree with homage  
blent  
As sham—which in the vast of volumes  
scares  
The traveller still: 'That stucco-heap—  
Voltaire's?'

### CIX

'Oh thou, whose clarion-voice has over-  
flown  
The wilds to startle Paris that's one ear!  
Thou who such strange capacity hast  
shown  
For joining all that's grand with all  
that's dear,  
Knowledge with power to please—Des-  
houlières grown  
Learned as Dacier in thy person! mere  
Weak fruits of idle hours, these crabs of  
mine  
I dare lay at thy feet, O Muse divine!

## THE TWO POETS OF CROISIC

CX

'Charles was my taskwork only; Henri  
trod  
My hero erst; and now, my heroine—  
she  
Shall be thyself! True—is it true, great  
God?  
Certainly love henceforward must not  
be!  
Yet all the crowd of Fine Arts fail—how  
odd!—  
Tried turn by turn, to fill a void in me!  
There's no replacing love with these, alas!  
Yet all I can I do to prove no ass.

CXI

'I labour to amuse my freedom; but  
Should any sweet young creature slavery  
preach,  
And—borrowing thy vivacious charm, the  
slut!—  
Make me, in thy engaging words, a  
speech,  
Soon should I see myself in prison shut  
With all imaginable pleasure.' Reach  
The washhand-basin for admirers!  
There's  
A stomach-moving tribute—and Vol-  
taire's!

CXII

Suppose it a fantastic billet-doux,  
Adulatory flourish, not worth frown!  
What say you to the Fathers of Trévoux?  
These in their Dictionary have her down  
Under the heading 'Author': 'Malcrais,  
too,  
Is "Author" of much verse that claims  
renown.'  
While Jean-Baptiste Rousseau . . . but why  
proceed?  
Enough of this—something too much,  
indeed!

CXIII

At last La Roque, unwilling to be left  
Behindhand in the rivalry, broke bounds  
Of figurative passion; hilt and heft,  
Plunged his huge downright love  
through what surrounds  
The literary female bosom; reft  
Away its veil of coy reserve with  
'Zounds!  
I love thee, Breton Beauty! All's no use!  
Body and soul I love,—the big word's  
loose!

CXIV

*He's greatest now and to de-structi-on*  
*Nearest. Attend the solemn word I*  
*quote,*  
O Paul! *There's no pause at per-fec-ti-on.*  
Thus knolls thy knell the Doctor's  
bronzed throat!

*Greatness a period hath, no sta-ti-on!*

Better and truer verse none ever wrote  
(Despite the antique outstretched *a-i-on*)  
Than thou, revered and magisterial  
Donne!

CXV

Flat on his face, La Roque, and,—pressed  
to heart  
His dexter hand,—Voltaire with bended  
knee!  
Paul sat and sucked-in triumph; just apart  
Leaned over him his sister. 'Well!'  
smirks he,  
And 'Well?' she answers, smiling—  
woman's art  
To let a man's own mouth, not hers,  
decree  
What shall be next move which decides the  
game:  
Success? She said so. Failure? His the  
blame.

CXVI

'Well!' this time forth affirmatively comes  
With smack of lip, and long-drawn sigh  
through teeth  
Close clenched o'er satisfaction, as the  
gums  
Were tickled by a sweetmeat teased be-  
neath  
Palate by lubricating tongue: 'Well!  
crumbs  
Of comfort these, undoubtedly! no  
death  
Likely from famine at Fame's feast! 'tis  
clear  
I may put claim in for my pittance, Dear!

CXVII

'La Roque, Voltaire, my lovers! Then  
disguise  
Has served its turn, grows idle; let it  
drop!  
I shall to Paris, flaunt there in men's eyes  
My proper manly garb and mount a-top  
The pedestal that waits me, take the prize  
Awarded Hercules. He threw a sop  
To Cerberus who let him pass, you know,  
Then, following, licked his heels: exactly  
so!

CXVIII

'I like the prospect—their astonishment,  
Confusion: wounded vanity, no doubt,  
Mixed motives; how I see the brows quick  
bent!  
"What, sir, yourself, none other,  
brought about  
This change of estimation? Phœbus sent  
His shafts as from Diana?" Critic pout  
Turns courtier smile: "Lo, him we took  
for her!  
Pleasant mistake! You bear no malice,  
sir?"

## THE TWO POETS OF CROISIC

### CXIX

'Eh, my Diana?' But Diana kept  
Smilingly silent with fixed needle-sharp  
Much-meaning eyes that seemed to intercept

Paul's very thoughts ere they had time  
to warp  
From earnest into sport the words they  
leapt  
To life with—changed as when maltreated harp  
Renders in tinkle what some player-prig  
Means for a grave tune though it proves a  
jig.

### CXX

'What, Paul, and are my pains thus thrown  
away,  
My lessons end in loss?' at length fall  
slow  
The pitying syllables, her lips allay  
The satire of by keeping in full flow,  
Above their coral reef, bright smiles at  
play:  
'Can it be, Paul thus fails to rightly  
know  
And altogether estimate applause  
As just so many asinine hee-haws?

### CXXI

'I thought to show you' . . . 'Show me,'  
Paul in-broke,  
'My poetry is rubbish, and the world  
That rings with my renown a sorry joke!  
What fairer test of worth than that,  
form furred,  
I entered the arena? Yet you croak  
Just as if Phœbé and not Phœbus hurled  
The dart and struck the Python! What, he  
crawls  
Humbly in dust before your feet, not  
Paul's?

### CXXII

'Nay, 'tis no laughing matter though absurd  
If there's an end of honesty on earth!  
La Roque sends letters, lying every word!  
Voltaire makes verse, and of himself  
makes mirth  
To the remotest age! Rousseau's the third  
Who, driven to despair amid such  
dearth  
Of people that want praising, finds no one  
More fit to praise than Paul the simpleton!

### CXXIII

'Somebody says—if a man writes at all  
It is to show the writer's kith and kin  
He was unjustly thought a natural;  
And truly, sister, I have yet to win  
Your favourable word, it seems, for Paul  
Whose poetry you count not worth a pin

Though well enough esteemed by these  
Voltaires,  
Rousseaus and suchlike: let them quack,  
who cares?'

### CXXIV

'—To 'Paris with you, Paul! Not one  
word's waste  
Further: my scrupulosity was vain!  
Go triumph! Be my foolish fears effaced  
From memory's record! Go, to come  
again  
With glory crowned,—by sister re-  
embraced,  
Cured of that strange delusion of her  
brain  
Which led her to suspect that Paris gloats  
On male limbs mostly when in petticoats!'

### CXXV

So laughed her last word, with the little  
touch  
'Of malice proper to the outraged pride  
Of any artist in a work too much  
Shorn of its merits. 'By all means be  
tried  
The opposite procedure! Cast your crutch  
Away, no longer crippled, nor divide  
The credit of your march to the World's  
Fair  
With sister Cherry-cheeks who helped you  
there!'

### CXXVI

Crippled, forsooth! what courser spright-  
lier pranced  
Paris-ward than did Paul? Nay, dreams  
lent wings:  
He flew, or seemed to fly, by dreams en-  
tranced.  
Dreams? wide-awake realities: no  
things  
Dreamed merely were the missives that  
advanced  
The claim of Malcrais to consort with  
kings  
Crowned by Apollo—not to say with  
queens  
Cinctured by Venus for Idalian scenes.

### CXXVII

Soon he arrives, forthwith is found before  
The outer gate of glory. Bold tic-toc  
Announces there's a giant at the door.  
'Ay, sir, here dwells the Chevalier La  
Roque.'  
'Lackey! Malcrais,—mind, no word less  
nor more!—  
Desires his presence. I've unearthed  
the brock:  
Now, to transfix him!' There stands Paul  
erect,  
Inched out his uttermost, for more effect.

## THE TWO POETS OF CROISIC

### CXXVIII

A bustling entrance: 'Idol of my flame!  
Can it be that my heart attains at last  
Its longing? that you stand, the very same  
As in my visions? . . . Ha! hey, how?'  
aghast

Stops short the rapture. 'Oh, my boy's to  
blame!

You merely are the messenger! Too fast  
My fancy rushed to a conclusion. Pooh!  
Well, sir, the lady's substitute is—who?'

### CXXIX

Then Paul's smirk grows inordinate.  
'Shake hands!

Friendship not love awaits you, master  
mine,  
Though nor Malcrais nor any mistress  
stands

To meet your ardour! So, you don't  
divine

Who wrote the verses wherewith ring the  
land's

Whole length and breadth? Just he  
whereof no line

Had ever leave to blot your Journal—eh?  
Paul Desforges Maillard—otherwise Mal-  
crais!'

### CXXX

And there the two stood, stare confronting  
smirk,

Awhile uncertain which should yield the  
*pas*.

In vain the Chevalier beat brain for quirk  
To help in this conjuncture; at length  
'Bah!

Boh! Since I've made myself a fool, why  
shirk

The punishment of folly? Ha, ha, ha,  
Let me return your handshake!' Comic  
sock

For tragic buskin prompt thus changed  
La Roque.

### CXXXI

'I'm nobody—a wren-like journalist;

You've flown at higher game and winged  
your bird,

The golden eagle! That's the grand  
'acquist!

Voltaire's sly Muse, the tiger-cat, has  
purred

Prettily round your feet; but if she missed  
Priority of stroking, soon were stirred

The dormant spit-fire. To Voltaire! away,  
Paul Desforges Maillard, otherwise Mal-  
crais!'

### CXXXII

Whereupon, arm in arm, and head in air,  
The two begin their journey. Need I say,

La Roque had felt the talon of Voltaire,  
Had a long-standing little debt to pay,

And pounced, you may depend, on such a  
rare

Occasion for its due discharge? So, gay  
And grenadier-like, marching to assault,  
They reach the enemy's abode, there halt.

### CXXXIII

'I'll be announcer!' quoth La Roque: 'I  
know,

Better than you, perhaps, my Breton  
bard,

How to procure an audience! He's not  
slow

To smell a rat, this scamp Voltaire!  
Discard

The petticoats too soon,—you'll never  
show

Your *haut-de-chausses* and all they've  
made or marred

In your true person. Here's his servant.  
Pray,

Will the great man see Demoiselle Mal-  
crais?'

### CXXXIV

Now, the great man was also, no whit less,  
The man of self-respect,—more great  
man he!

And bowed to social usage, dressed the  
dress,

And decorated to the fit degree  
His person; 'twas enough to bear the stress

Of battle in the field, without, when free  
From outside foes, inviting friends' attack

By—sword in hand? No,—ill-made coat  
on back!

### CXXXV

And, since the announcement of his visitor  
Surprised him at his toilet,—never glass

Had such solicitation! 'Black, now—or  
Brown be the killing wig to wear? Alas,

Where's the rouge gone, this cheek were  
better for

A tender touch of? Melted to a mass,  
All my pomatum! There's at all events

A devil—for he's got among my scents!'

### CXXXVI

So, 'barbered ten times o'er,' as Antony  
Paced to his Cleopatra, did at last

Voltaire proceed to the fair presence: high  
In colour, proud in port, as if a blast

Of trumpet bade the world 'Take note!  
draws nigh

To Beauty, Power! Behold the Icono-  
clast,

The Poet, the Philosopher, the Rod  
Of iron for imposture! Ah my God!'

### CXXXVII

For there stands smirking Paul, and—  
what lights fierce

The situation as with sulphur flash—

## THE TWO POETS OF CROISIC

There grinning stands La Roque! No  
carte-and-tierce  
Observes the grinning fencer, but, full  
dash  
From breast to shoulderblade, the thrusts  
transpierce  
That armour against which so idly clash  
The swords of priests and pedants! Vic-  
tors there,  
Two smirk and grin who have befooled—  
Voltaire!

### CXXXVIII

A moment's horror; then quick turn-  
about  
On high-heeled shoe,—flurry of ruffles,  
flounce  
Of wig-ties and of coat-tails,—and so out  
Of door banged wrathfully behind, goes  
—bounce—  
Voltaire in tragic exit! vows, no doubt,  
Vengeance upon the couple. Did he  
trounce  
Either, in point of fact? His anger's flash  
Subsided if a culprit craved his cash.

### CXXXIX

As for La Roque, he having laughed his  
laugh  
To heart's content,—the joke defunct  
at once,  
Dead in the birth, you see,—its epitaph  
Was sober earnest. 'Well, sir, for the  
nonce,  
You've gained the laurel; never hope to  
graff  
A second sprig of triumph there! En-  
sconce  
Yourself again at Croisic: let it be  
Enough you mastered both Voltaire and  
—me!

### CXL

'Don't linger here in Paris to parade  
Your victory, and have the very boys  
Point at you! "There's the little mouse  
which made  
Believe those two big lions that its noise,  
Nibbling away behind the hedge, conveyed  
Intelligence that—portent which de-  
stroys  
All courage in the lion's heart, with horn  
That's fable—there lay couched the uni-  
corn!"

### CXLI

'Beware us, now we've found who fooled  
us! Quick  
To cover! "In proportion to men's  
fright,  
Expect their fright's revenge!" quoth  
politic  
Old Macchiavelli. As for me,—all's  
right:

I'm but a journalist. But no pin's prick  
The tooth leaves when Voltaire is roused  
to bite!  
So, keep your counsel, I advise! Adieu!  
Good journey! Ha, ha, ha, Malcraiz was  
—you!

### CXLII

'—Yes, I'm Malcraiz, and somebody be-  
side,  
You snickering monkey!' thus winds  
up the tale  
Our hero, safe at home, to that black-eyed  
Cherry-cheeked sister, as she soothes  
the pale  
Mortified poet. 'Let their worst be tried,  
I'm their match henceforth—very man  
and male!  
Don't talk to me of knocking-under! man  
And male must end what petticoats began!

### CXLIII

'How woman-like it is to apprehend  
The world will eat its words! why, words  
transfix  
To stone, they stare at you in print,—at  
end,  
Each writer's style and title! Choose  
betwixt  
Fool and knave for his name, who should  
intend  
To perpetrate a baseness so unmixed  
With prospect of advantage! What is writ  
Is writ: they've praised me, there's an end  
of it.

### CXLIV

'No, Dear, allow me! I shall print these  
same  
Pieces, with no omitted line, as Paul's.  
Malcraiz no longer, let me see folk blame  
What they—praised simply?—placed  
on pedestals,  
Each piece a statue in the House of Fame!  
Fast will they stand there, though their  
presence galls  
The envious crew: such show their teeth,  
perhaps,  
And snarl, but never bite! I know the  
chaps!'

### CXLV

Oh Paul, oh piteously deluded! Pace  
Thy sad sterility of Croisic flats,  
Watch, from their southern edge, the  
foamy race  
Of high-tide as it leaves the drowning  
mats  
Of yellow-berried web-growth from their  
place,  
The rock-ridge, when, rolling as far as  
Batz,  
One broadside crashes on it, and the crags,  
That needle under, stream with weedy  
rags!

## THE TWO POETS OF CROISIC

### CXLVI

Or, if thou wilt, at inland Bergerac,  
Rude heritage but recognized domain,  
Do as two here are doing: make hearth  
crack

With logs until thy chimney roar again  
Jolly with fire-glow! Let its angle lack  
No grace of Cherry-checks thy sister,  
fain  
To do a sister's office and laugh smooth  
Thy corrugated brow—that scowls for-  
sooth!

### CXLVII

Wherefore? Who does not know how  
these La Roques,  
Voltaires, can say and unsay, praise and  
blame,  
Prove black white, white black, play at  
paradox  
And, when they seem to lose it, win the  
game?

Care not thou what this badger, and that  
fox,  
His fellow in rascality, call 'fame!'  
Fiddlepin's end! Thou hadst it,—quack,  
quack, quack!  
Have quietude from geese at Bergerac!

### CXLVIII

Quietude! For, be very sure of this!  
A twelvemonth hence, and men shall  
know or care

As much for what to-day they clap or hiss  
As for the fashion of the wigs they wear,  
Then wonder at. There's fame which, bale  
or bliss,—

Got by no gracious word of great Vol-  
taire  
Or not-so-great La Roque,—is taken back  
By neither, any more than Bergerac!

### CXLIX

Too true! or rather, true as ought to be!  
No more of Paul the man, Malcraais the  
maid,

Thenceforth for ever! One or two, I see,  
Stuck by their poet: who the longest  
stayed

Was Jean-Baptiste Rousseau, and even he  
Seemingly saddened as perforce he paid  
A rhyming tribute 'After death, survive—  
He hoped he should; and died while yet  
alive!'

### CL

No, he hoped nothing of the kind, or held  
His peace and died in silent good old  
age.

Him it was, curiosity impelled  
To seek if there were extant still some  
page

Of his great predecessor, rat who belled  
The cat once, and would never deign  
engage

In after-combat with mere mice,—saved  
from  
More sonnetteering,—René Gentil-  
homme.

### CLI

Paul's story furnished forth that famous  
play

Of Piron's 'Métromanie': there you'll  
find

He's Francaleu, while Demoiselle Mal-  
craais

Is Demoiselle No-end-of-names-be-  
hind!

As for Voltaire, he's Damis. Good and gay  
The plot and dialogue, and all's de-  
signed

To spite Voltaire: at 'Something' such the  
laugh

Of simply 'Nothing!' (see his epitaph).

### CLII

But truth, truth, that's the gold! and all  
the good

I find in fancy is, it serves to set  
Gold's inmost glint free, gold which comes  
up rude

And rayless from the mine. All fume  
and fret

Of artistry beyond this point pursued  
Brings out another sort of burnish: yet

Always the ingot has its very own  
Value, a sparkle struck from truth alone.

### CLIII

Now, take this sparkle and the other spirt  
Of fitful flame,—twin births of our grey  
brand

That's sinking fast to ashes! I assert,  
As sparkles want but fuel to expand

Into a conflagration no mere squirt  
Will quench too quickly, so might

Croisic strand,  
Had fortune pleased posterity to chowse,  
Boast of her brace of beacons luminous.

### CLIV

Did earlier Agamemmons lack their bard?  
But later bards lacked Agamemnon too!

How often frustrate they of fame's award  
Just because Fortune, as she listed, blew

Some slight bark's sails to belling, mauled  
and marred

And forced to put about the First-rate!  
True,

Such tacks but for a time: still—small-  
craft ride

At anchor, rot while Beddoes breasts the  
tide!

### CLV

Dear, shall I tell you? There's a simple  
test

Would serve, when people take on them  
to weigh



## THE TWO POETS OF CROISIC

The worth of poets, 'Who was better, best,  
This, that, the other bard?' (bards none  
gainsay  
As good, observe! no matter for the rest)  
'What quality preponderating may  
Turn the scale as it trembles?' End the  
strife  
By asking 'Which one led a happy life?'

### CLVI

If one did, over his antagonist  
That yelled or shrieked or sobbed or  
wept or wailed  
Or simply had the dumps,—dispute who  
list,—  
I count him victor. Where his fellow  
failed,  
Mastered by his own means of might,—  
acquist  
Of necessary sorrows,—he prevailed,  
A strong since joyful man who stood distinct  
Above slave-sorrows to his chariot linked.

### CLVII

Was not his lot to feel more? What meant  
'feel'  
Unless to suffer! Not, to see more?  
Sight—  
What helped it but to watch the drunken  
reel  
Of vice and folly round him, left and  
right,  
One dance of rogues and idiots! Not, to  
deal  
More with things lovely? What provoked the spite  
Of filth incarnate, like the poet's need  
Of other nutriment than strife and greed!

### CLVIII

Who knows most, doubts most; entertaining hope,  
Means recognizing fear; the keener  
sense  
Of all comprised within our actual scope  
Recoils from aught beyond earth's dim  
and dense.  
Who, grown familiar with the sky, will  
grope  
Henceforward among groundlings?  
That's offence  
Just as indubitably: stars abound  
O'erhead, but then—what flowers make  
glad the ground!

### CLIX

So, force is sorrow, and each sorrow,  
force:  
What then? since Swiftness gives the  
charioteer  
The palm, his hope be in the vivid horse  
Whose neck God clothed with thunder,  
not the steer

Sluggish and safe! Yoke Hatred, Crime,  
Remorse,  
Despair: but ever mid the whirling fear,  
Let, through the tumult, break the poet's  
face  
Radiant, assured his wild slaves win the  
race!

### CLX

Therefore I say . . . no, shall not say, but  
think,  
And save my breath for better purpose.  
White  
From grey our log has burned to: just one  
blink  
That quivers, loth to leave it, as a sprite  
The outworn body. Ere your eyelids' wink  
Punish who scaled so deep into the night  
Your mouth up, for two poets dead so  
long,—  
Here pleads a live pretender: right your  
wrong!

### I

What a pretty tale you told me  
Once upon a time  
—Said you found it somewhere (scold  
me!)  
Was it prose or was it rhyme,  
Greek or Latin? Greek, you said,  
While your shoulder propped my head.

### II

Anyhow there's no forgetting  
This much if no more,  
That a poet (pray, no petting!)  
Yes, a bard, sir, famed of yore,  
Went where suchlike used to go,  
Singing for a prize, you know.

### III

Well, he had to sing, nor merely  
Sing but play the lyre;  
Playing was important clearly  
Quite as singing: I desire,  
Sir, you keep the fact in mind  
For a purpose that's behind.

### IV

There stood he, while deep attention  
Held the judges round,  
—Judges able, I should mention,  
To detect the slightest sound  
Sung or played amiss: such ears  
Had old judges, it appears!

### V

None the less he sang out boldly,  
Played in time and tune,  
Till the judges, weighing coldly  
Each note's worth, seemed, late or soon,  
Sure to smile 'In vain one tries  
Picking faults out: take the prize!'

## THE TWO POETS OF CROISIC

### VI

When, a mischief! Were they seven  
Strings the lyre possessed?  
Oh, and afterwards eleven,  
Thank you! Well, sir,—who had  
guessed  
Such ill luck in store?—it happed  
One of those same seven strings snapped.

### VII

All was lost, then! No! a cricket  
(What 'cicada'? Pooh!)  
—Some mad thing that left its thicket  
For mere love of music—flew  
With its little heart on fire,  
Lighted on the crippled lyre.

### VIII

So that when (ah joy!) our singer  
For his truant string  
Feels with disconcerted finger,  
What does cricket else but fling  
Fiery heart forth, sound the note  
Wanted by the throbbing throat?

### IX

Ay and, ever to the ending,  
Cricket chirps at need,  
Executes the hand's intending,  
Promptly, perfectly,—indeed  
Saves the singer from defeat  
With her chirrup low and sweet.

### X

Till, at ending, all the judges  
Cry with one assent  
'Take the prize—a prize who grudges  
Such a voice and instrument?  
Why, we took your lyre for harp,  
So it shrilled us forth F sharp!'

### XI

Did the conqueror spurn the creature,  
Once its service done?  
That's no such uncommon feature  
In the case when Music's son  
Finds his Lotte's power too spent  
For aiding soul-development.

### XII

No! This other, on returning  
Homeward, prize in hand,  
Satisfied his bosom's yearning:  
(Sir, I hope you understand!)  
—Said 'Some record there must be  
Of this cricket's help to me!'

### XIII

So, he made himself a statue:  
Marble stood, life-size;  
On the lyre, he pointed at you,  
Perched his partner in the prize;  
Never more apart you found  
Her, he throned, from him, she crowned.

### XIV

That's the tale: its application?  
Somebody I know  
Hopes one day for reputation  
Through his poetry that's—Oh,  
All so learned and so wise  
And deserving of a prize!

### XV

If he gains one, will some ticket,  
When his statue's built,  
Tell the gazer "'Twas a cricket  
Helped my crippled lyre, whose lilt  
Sweet and low, when strength usurped  
Softness' place i' the scale, she chirped?

### XVI

'For as victory was nighest,  
While I sang and played,—  
With my lyre at lowest, highest,  
Right alike,—one string that made  
'Love' sound soft was snapt in twain,  
Never to be heard again,—

### XVII

'Had not a kind cricket fluttered,  
Perched upon the place  
Vacant left, and duly uttered  
"Love, Love, Love," where'er the bass  
Asked the treble to atone  
For its somewhat sombre drone.'

### XVIII

But you don't know music! Wherefore  
Keep on casting pearls  
To a—poet? All I care for  
Is—to tell him that a girl's  
'Love' comes aptly in when gruff  
Grows his singing. (There, enough!)

# DRAMATIC IDYLS

## FIRST SERIES

1879

### MARTIN RELPH

*My grandfather says he remembers he saw,  
when a youngster long ago,  
On a bright May day, a strange old man,  
with a beard as white as snow,  
Stand on the hill outside our town like a  
monument of woe,  
And, striking his bare bald head the while,  
sob out the reason—so!*

If I last as long as Methuselah I shall never  
forgive myself:

But—God forgive me, that I pray, un-  
happy Martin Relph,  
As coward, coward I call him—him, yes,  
him! Away from me!

Get you behind the man I am now, you  
man that I used to be!

What can have sewed my mouth up, set  
me a-stare, all eyes, no tongue?

People have urged 'You visit a scare too  
hard on a lad so young!

You were taken aback, poor boy,' they  
urge, 'no time to regain your wits:  
Besides it had maybe cost you life.' Ay,  
there is the cap which fits!

So, cap me, the coward,—thus! No fear!  
A cuff on the brow does good:

The feel of it hinders a worm inside which  
bores at the brain for food.

See now, there certainly seems excuse: for  
a moment, I trust, dear friends,  
The fault was but folly, no fault of mine,  
or if mine, I have made amends!

For, every day that is first of May, on the  
hill-top, ~~here~~ stand I,  
Martin Relph, and I strike my brow, and  
publish the reason why,

When there gathers a crowd to mock the  
fool. No fool, friends, since the bite  
Of a worm inside is worse to bear: pray  
God I have baulked him quite!

I'll tell you. Certainly much excuse! It  
came of the way they cooped  
Us peasantry up in a ring just here, close  
huddling because tight-hooped  
By the red-coats round us villagers all:  
they meant we should see the sight  
And take the example,—see, not speak,  
for speech was the Captain's right.

'You clowns on the slope, beware!' cried  
he: 'This woman about to die  
Gives by her fate fair warning to such  
acquaintance as play the spy.

Henceforth who meddle with matters of  
state above them perhaps will learn  
That peasants should stick to their plough-  
tail, leave to the King the King's con-  
cern.

'Here's a quarrel that sets the land on fire,  
between King George and his foes:  
What call has a man of your kind—much  
less, a woman—to interpose?

Yet you needs must be meddling, folk like  
you, not foes—so much the worse!  
The many and loyal should keep them-  
selves unmixed with the few perverse.

'Is the counsel hard to follow? I gave it  
you plainly a month ago,  
And where was the good? The rebels  
have learned just all that they need  
to know.

Not a month since in we quietly marched:  
a week, and they had the news,  
From a list complete of our rank and file  
to a note of our caps and shoes.

'All about all we did and all we were  
doing and like to do!  
Only, I catch a letter by luck, and capture  
who wrote it, too.

Some of you men look black enough, but  
the milk-white face demure  
Betokens the finger foul with ink: 'tis a  
woman who writes, be sure!

'Is it "Dearie, how much I miss your  
mouth!"—good natural stuff, she  
pens?

Some sprinkle of that, for a blind, of  
course: with talk about cocks and  
hens.

How "robin has built on the apple-tree,  
and our creeper which came to grief  
Through the frost, we feared, is twining  
afresh round casement in famous  
leaf."

'But all for a blind! She soon glides frank  
into "Horrid the place is grown  
With Officers here and Privates there, no  
nook we may call our own:  
And Farmer Giles has a tribe to house,  
and lodging will be to seek  
For the second Company sure to come  
( 'tis whispered) on Monday week."

'And so to the end of the chapter! There!  
The murder, you see, was out:  
Easy to guess how the change of mind in  
the rebels was brought about!

Safe in the trap would they now lie snug,  
had treachery made no sign;  
But treachery meets a just reward, no  
matter if fools malign!

'That traitors had played us false, was  
proved—sent news which fell so pat:  
And the murder was out—this letter of  
love, the sender of this sent that!  
'Tis an ugly job, though, all the same—  
a hateful, to have to deal  
With a case of the kind, when a woman's  
in fault: we soldiers need nerves of  
steel!

'So, I gave her a chance, despatched post-  
haste a message to Vincent Parkes  
Whom she wrote to; easy to find he was,  
since one of the King's own clerks,  
Ay, kept by the King's own gold in the  
town close by where the rebels camp:  
A sort of a lawyer, just the man to betray  
our sort—the scamp!

"If her writing is simple and honest and  
only the lover-like stuff it looks,  
And if you yourself are a loyalist, nor  
down in the rebels' books,  
Come quick," said I, "and in person prove  
you are each of you clear of crime,  
Or martial law must take its course: this  
day next week's the time!"

'Next week is now: does he come? Not  
he! Clean gone, our clerk, in a trice!  
He has left his sweetheart here in the  
lurch: no need of a warning twice!  
His own neck free, but his partner's fast  
in the noose still, here she stands  
To pay for her fault. 'Tis an ugly job: but  
soldiers obey commands.

'And hearken wherefore I make a speech!  
Should any acquaintance share  
The folly that led to the fault that is now  
to be punished, let fools beware!  
Look black, if you please, but keep hands  
white: and, above all else, keep  
wives—  
Or sweethearts or what they may be—  
from ink! Not a word now, on your  
lives!

Black? but the Pit's own pitch was white  
to the Captain's face—the brute  
With the bloated cheeks and the bulgy  
nose and the bloodshot eyes to suit!  
He was muddled with wine, they say:  
more like, he was out of his wits with  
fear;  
He had but a handful of men, that's true,  
—a riot might cost him dear.

And all that time stood Rosamund Page,  
with pinioned arms and face  
Banded about, on the turf marked out  
for the party's firing-place.

I hope she was wholly with God: I hope  
'twas His angel stretched a hand  
To steady her so, like the shape of stone  
you see in our church-aisle stand.

I hope there was no vain fancy pierced the  
bandage to vex her eyes,  
No face within which she missed without,  
no questions and no replies—  
'Why did you leave me to die?'—'Because  
... ' Oh, fiends, too soon you grin  
At merely a moment of hell, like that—  
such heaven as hell ended in!

Let mine end too! He gave the word, up  
went the guns in a line.  
Those heaped on the hill were blind as  
dumb,—for, of all eyes, only mine  
Looked over the heads of the foremost  
rank. Some fell on their knees in  
prayer,  
Some sank to the earth, but all shut eyes,  
with a sole exception there.

That was myself, who had stolen up last,  
had sidled behind the group:  
I am highest of all on the hill-top, there  
stand fixed while the others stoop!  
From head to foot in a serpent's twine am  
I tightened: / touch ground?  
No more than a gibbet's rigid corpse  
which the fetters rust around!

Can I speak, can I breathe, can I burst—  
aught else but see, see, only see?  
And see I do—for there comes in sight—a  
man, it sure must be!—  
Who staggeringly, stumblingly rises, falls,  
rises, at random flings his weight  
On and on, anyhow onward—a man  
that's mad he arrives too late!

Else why does he wave a something white  
high-flourished above his head?  
Why does not he call, cry,—curse the  
fool!—why throw up his arms in-  
stead?  
O take this fist in your own face, fool!  
Why does not yourself shout 'Stay!  
Here's a man comes rushing, might and  
main, with something he's mad to  
say'?

And a minute, only a moment, to have  
hell-fire boil up in your brain,  
And ere you can judge things right,  
choose heaven,—time's over, repen-  
tance vain!  
They level: a volley, a smoke and the  
clearing of smoke: I see no more  
Of the man smoke hid, nor his frantic arms,  
nor the something white he bore.

But stretched on the field, some half-mile  
off, is an object. Surely dumb,  
Deaf, blind were we struck, that nobody  
heard, not one of us saw him come!

## MARTIN RELPH

Has he fainted through fright? One may well believe! What is it he holds so fast?

Turn him over, examine the face! Hey-day! What, Vincent Parkes at last?

Dead! dead as she, by the self-same shot: one bullet has ended both,

Her in the body and him in the soul. They laugh at our plighted troth.

'Till death us do part'? Till death us do join past parting—that sounds like Betrothal indeed! O Vincent Parkes, what need has my fist to strike?

I helped you: thus were you dead and wed: one bound, and your soul reached hers!

There is clench in your hand the thing, signed, sealed, the paper which plain avers

She is innocent, innocent, plain as print, with the King's Arms broad engraved:

No one can hear, but if anyone high on the hill can see, she's saved!

And torn his garb and bloody his lips with heart-break—plain it grew

How the week's delay had been brought about: each guess at the end proved true.

It was hard to get at the folk in power: such waste of time! and then

Such pleading and praying, with, all the while, his lamb in the lions' den!

And at length when he wrung their pardon out, no end to the stupid forms—

The licence and leave: I make no doubt—what wonder if passion warms

The pulse in a man if you play with his heart?—he was something hasty in speech;

Anyhow, none would quicken the work: he had to beseech, beseech!

And the thing once signed, sealed, safe in his grasp,—what followed but fresh delays?

For the floods were out, he was forced to take such a roundabout of ways!

And 'twas 'Halt there!' at every turn of the road, since he had to cross the thick

Of the red-coats: what did they care for him and his 'Quick, for God's sake, quick!'

Horse? but he had one: had it how long? till the first knave smirked 'You brag

Yourself a friend of the King's? then lend to a King's friend here your nag!'

Money to buy another? Why, piece by piece they plundered him still,

With their 'Wait you must,—no help: if aught can help you, a guinea will!'

And a borough there was—I forget the name—whose Mayor must have the bench

Of Justices ranged to clear a doubt: for 'Vincent,' thinks he, sounds French!

It well may have driven him daft, God knows! all man can certainly know

Is—rushing and falling and rising, at last he arrived in a horror—so!

When a word, cry, gasp, would have rescued both! Ay bite me! The worm begins

At his work once more. Had cowardice proved—that only—my sin of sins!

Friends, look you here! Suppose . . . suppose . . . But mad I am, needs must be!

Judas the Damned would never have dared such a sin as I dream! For, see!

Suppose I had sneakingly loved her myself, my wretched self, and dreamed

In the heart of me 'She were better dead than happy and his!'

A light from hell as I spied the pair in a perfectest embrace,

He the saviour and she the saved,—bliss born of the very murder-place!

No! Say I was scared, friends! Call me fool and coward, but nothing worse!

Jeer at the fool and gibe at the coward! 'Twas ever the coward's curse

That fear breeds fancies in such: such take their shadow for substance still,

—A fiend at their back. I liked poor Parkes,—loved Vincent, if you will!

And her—why, I said 'Good morrow' to her, 'Good even,' and nothing more:

The neighbourly way! She was just to me as fifty had been before.

So, coward it is and coward shall be! There's a friend, now! Thanks!

A drink  
Of water I wanted: and now I can walk, get home by myself, I think.

## PHEIDIPPIDES

*Χαίρετε, νικάμεν.*

FIRST I salute this soil of the blessed, river and rock!

Gods of my birthplace, dæmons and heroes, honour to all!

Then I name thee, claim thee for our patron, co-equal in praise

—Ay, with Zeus the Defender, with Her of the ægis and spear!

Also, ye of the bow and the buskin, praised be your peer,

Now, henceforth and forever,—O latest to whom I upraise

## PHEIDIPPIDES

Hand and heart and voice! For Athens,  
leave pasture and flock!  
Present to help, potent to save, Pan—  
patron I call!

Archons of Athens, topped by the tettix,  
see, I return!  
See, 'tis myself here standing alive, no  
spectre that speaks!  
Crowned with the myrtle, did you com-  
mand me, Athens and you,  
'Run, Pheidippides, run and race, reach  
Sparta for aid!  
Persia has come, we are here, where is  
She?' Your command I obeyed,  
Ran and raced: like stubble, some field  
which a fire runs through,  
Was the space between city and city: two  
days, two nights did I burn  
Over the hills, under the dales, down pits  
and up peaks.

Into their midst I broke: breath served  
but for 'Persia has come!  
Persia bids Athens proffer slaves'-tribute,  
water and earth;  
Razed to the ground is Eretria—but  
Athens, shall Athens sink,  
Drop into dust and die—the flower of  
Hellas utterly die,  
Die, with the wide world spitting at  
Sparta, the stupid, the stander-by?  
Answer me quick, what help, what hand  
do you stretch o'er destruction's  
brink?  
How,—when? No care for my limbs!—  
there's lightning in all and some—  
Fresh and fit your message to bear, once  
lips give it birth!

O my Athens—Sparta love thee? Did  
Sparta respond?  
Every face of her leered in a furrow of  
envy, mistrust,  
Malice,—each eye of her gave me its  
glitter of gratified hate!  
Gravey they turned to take counsel, to  
cast for excuses. I stood  
Quivering,—the limbs of me fretting as  
fire frets, an inch from dry wood:  
'Persia has come, Athens asks aid, and  
still they debate?  
Thunder, thou Zeus! Athené, are Spar-  
tans a quarry beyond  
Swing of the spear? Phoibos and Arte-  
mis, clang them "Ye must!"'

No bolt launched from Olumpus! Lo,  
their answer at last!  
'Has Persia come,—does Athens ask aid,  
—may Sparta befriend?  
Nowise precipitate judgment—too  
weighty the issue at stake!

Count we no time lost time which lags  
through respect to the Gods!

Ponder that precept of old, "No warfare,  
whatever the odds

In your favour, so long as the moon, half-  
orbed, is unable to take

Full-circle her state in the sky!" Already  
she rounds to it fast:

Athens must wait, patient as we—who  
judgment suspend.'

Athens,—except for that sparkle,—thy  
name, I had mouldered to ash!

That sent a blaze through my blood; off,  
off and away was I back,

—Not one word to waste, one look to  
lose on the false and the vile!

Yet 'O Gods of my land! I cried, as each  
hillock and plain,

Wood and stream, I knew, I named,  
rushing past them again,

'Have ye kept faith, proved mindful of  
honours we paid you erewhile?

Vain was the filleted victim, the fulsome  
libation! Too rash

Love in its choice, paid you so largely  
service so slack!

'Oak and olive and bay,—I bid you cease  
to enwreath

Brows made bold by your leaf! Fade at  
the Persian's foot,

You that, our patrons were pledged,  
should never adorn a slave!

Rather I hail thee, Parnes,—trust to thy  
wild waste tract!

Treeless, herbless, lifeless mountain!  
What matter if slack'd

My speed may hardly be, for homage to  
crag and to cave

No deity deigns to drape with verdure?—  
at least I can breathe,

Fear in thee no fraud from the blind, no  
lie from the mute!'

Such my cry as, rapid, I ran over Parnes'  
ridge;

Gully and gap I clambered and cleared  
till, sudden, a bar

Jutted, a stoppage of stone against me,  
blocking the way.

Right! for I minded the hollow to tra-  
verse, the fissure across:

'Where I could enter, there I depart by!  
Night in the fosse?

Athens at day? Though the dive were  
through Erebos, thus I obey—

Out of the day dive, into the day as bravely  
arise! No bridge

Better!—when—ha! what was it I came  
on, of wonders that are?

There, in the cool of a cleft, sat he—  
majestical Pan!

Ivy drooped wanton, kissed his head,  
moss cushioned his hoof:

## PHEIDIPPIDES

All the great God was good in the eyes  
grave-kindly—the curl

Carved on the bearded cheek, amused at  
a mortal's awe,

As, under the human trunk, the goat-  
thighs grand I saw.

'Halt, Pheidippides!'—halt I did, my  
brain of a whirl!

'Hither to me! Why pale in my presence?'  
he gracious began:

'How is it,—Athens, only in Hellas, holds  
me aloof?

'Athens, she only, rears me no fane,  
makes me no feast!

Wherefore? Than I what godship to  
Athens more helpful of old?

Ay, and still, and forever her friend! Test  
Pan, trust me!

Go, bid Athens take heart, laugh Persia  
to scorn, have faith

In the temples and tombs! Go, say to  
Athens, "The Goat-God saith:

When Persia—so much as strews not the  
soil—is cast in the sea,

Then praise Pan who fought in the ranks  
with your most and least,

Goat-thigh to greaved-thigh, made one  
cause with the free and the bold!"

'Say Pan saith: "Let this, foreshowing  
the place, be the pledge!"

(Gay, the liberal hand held out this  
herbage I bear

—Fennel—I grasped it a-tremble with  
dew—whatever it bode)

'While, as for thee . . . ' But enough! He  
was gone. If I ran hitherto—

Be sure that, the rest of my journey, I ran  
no longer, but flew.

Parnes to Athens—earth no more, the air  
was my road:

Here am I back. Praise Pan, we stand no  
more on the razor's edge!

Pan for Athens, Pan for me! I too have a  
guerdon rare!

Then spoke Miltiades. 'And thee, best  
runner of Greece,

Whose limbs did duty indeed,—what gift  
is promised thyself?

Tell it us straightway,—Athens the mother  
demands of her son!"

Rosily blushed the youth: he paused: but,  
lifting at length

His eyes from the ground, it seemed as he  
gathered the rest of his strength

Into the utterance—"Pan spoke thus:  
"For what thou hast done

Count on a worthy reward! Henceforth  
be allowed thee release

From the racer's toil, no vulgar reward  
in praise or in self!"

'I am bold to believe, Pan means reward  
the most to my mind!

Fight I shall, with our foremost, wherever  
this fennel may grow,—

Pound—Pan helping us—Persia to dust,  
and, under the deep,

Whelm her away for ever; and then,—no  
Athens to save,—

Marry a certain maid, I know keeps faith  
to the brave,—

Hie to my house and home: and, when  
my children shall creep

Close to my knees,—recount how the  
God was awful yet kind,

Promised their sire reward to the full—  
rewarding him—so!"

Unforeseeing one! Yes, he fought on the  
Marathon day:

So, when Persia was dust, all cried 'To  
Akropolis!

Run, Pheidippides, one race more! the  
meed is thy due!

"Athens is saved, thank Pan," go shout!'—  
He flung down his shield,

Ran like fire once more: and the space  
'twixt the Fennel-field

And Athens was stubble again, a field  
which a fire runs through,

Till in he broke: 'Rejoice, we conquer!'—  
Like wine through clay,

Joy in his blood bursting his heart, he  
died—the bliss!

So, to this day, when friend meets friend,  
the word of salute

Is still 'Rejoice!'—his word which brought  
rejoicing indeed.

So is Pheidippides happy for ever,—the  
noble strong man

Who could race like a God, bear the face  
of a God, whom a God loved so well;

He saw the land saved he had helped to  
save, and was suffered to tell

Such tidings, yet never decline, but,  
gloriously as he began,

So to end gloriously—once to shout,  
thereafter be mute:

'Athens is saved!'—Pheidippides dies in  
the shout for his meed.

## HALBERT AND HOB

HERE is a thing that happened. Like wild  
beasts whelped, for den,

In a wild part of North England, there  
lived once two wild men

Inhabiting one homestead, neither a hovel  
nor hut,

Time out of mind their birthright: father  
and son, these—but—

Such a son, such a father! Most wildness  
by degrees

Softens away: yet, last of their line, the  
wildest and worse were these.

Criminals, then? Why, no: they did not murder and rob;  
But, give them a word, they returned a blow—old Halbert as young Hob:  
Harsh and fierce of word, rough and savage of deed,  
Hated or feared the more—who knows?—the genuine wild-beast breed.

Thus were they found by the few sparse folk of the country-side;  
But how fared each with other? E'en beasts couch, hide by hide,  
In a growling, grugged agreement: so, father and son aye curled  
The closelier up in their den because the last of their kind in the world.

Still, beast irks beast on occasion. One Christmas night of snow,  
Came father and son to words—such words! more cruel because the blow  
To crown each word was wanting, while taunt matched gibe, and curse  
Competed with oath in wager, like pastime in hell,—nay, worse:  
For pastime turned to earnest, as up there sprang at last  
The son at the throat of the father, seized him and held him fast.

'Out of this house you go!'—(there followed a hideous oath)—  
'This oven where now we bake, too hot to hold us both!  
If there's snow outside, there's coolness: out with you, bide a spell  
In the drift and save the sexton the charge of a parish shell!'

Now, the old trunk was tough, was solid as stump of oak  
Untouched at the core by a thousand years: much less had its seventy broke  
One whipcord nerve in the muscly mass from neck to shoulder-blade  
Of the mountainous man, whereon his child's rash hand like a feather weighed.

Nevertheless at once did the mammoth shut his eyes,  
Drop chin to breast, drop hands to sides, stand stiffened—arms and thighs  
All of a piece—struck mute, much as a sentry stands,  
Patient to take the enemy's fire: his captain so commands.

Whereat the son's wrath flew to fury at such sheer scorn  
Of his puny strength by the giant eld thus acting the babe new-born:  
And 'Neither will this turn serve!' yelled he. 'Out with you! Trundle, log!  
If you cannot tramp and trudge like a man, try all-fours like a dog!'

Still the old man stood mute. So, log-wise,—down to floor  
Pulled from his fireside place, dragged on from hearth to door,—  
Was he pushed, a very log, staircase along, until  
A certain turn in the steps was reached, a yard from the house-door-sill.

Then the father opened eyes—each spark of their rage extinct,—  
Temples, late black, dead-blanced,—right-hand with left-hand linked,—  
He faced his son submissive; when slow the accents came,  
They were strangely mild though his son's rash hand on his neck lay all the same.

'Hob, on just such a night of a Christmas long ago,  
For such a cause, with such a gesture, did I drag—so—  
My father down thus far: but, softening here, I heard  
A voice in my heart, and stopped: you wait for an outer word.

'For your own sake, not mine, soften you too! Untrod  
Leave this last step we reach, nor brave the finger of God!  
I dared not pass its lifting: I did well. I nor blame  
Nor praise you. I stopped here: and, Hob, do you the same!'

Straightway the son relaxed his hold of the father's throat.  
They mounted, side by side, to the room again: no note  
Took either of each, no sign made each to either: last  
As first, in absolute silence, their Christmas-night they passed.

At dawn, the father sate on, dead, in the self-same place,  
With an outburst blackening still the old bad fighting-face;  
But the son crouched all a-tremble like any lamb new-yeaned.

When he went to the burial, someone's staff he borrowed—tattered and leaned.  
But his lips were loose, not locked,—kept muttering, mumbling. 'There!  
At his cursing and swearing!' the youngsters cried: but the elders thought 'In prayer.'  
A boy threw stones: he picked them up and stored them in his vest.



## HALBERT AND HOB

So tottered, muttered, mumbled he, till he died, perhaps found rest.  
'Is there a reason in nature for these hard hearts?' O Lear,  
That a reason out of nature must turn them soft, seems clear!

### IVÀN IVÀNOVITCH

'THEY tell me, your carpenters,' quoth I to my friend the Russ,  
'Make a simple hatchet serve as a tool-box serves with us.  
Arm but each man with his axe, 'tis a hammer and saw and plane  
And chisel, and—what know I else? We should imitate in vain  
The mastery wherewithal, by a flourish of just the adze,  
He cleaves, clamps, dovetails in,—no need of our nails and brads,—  
The manageable pine: 'tis said he could shave himself  
With the axe,—so all adroit, now a giant and now an elf,  
Does he work and play at once!'  
Quoth my friend the Russ to me,  
'Ay, that and more beside on occasion! It scarce may be  
You never heard tell a tale told children, time out of mind,  
By father and mother and nurse, for a moral that's behind,  
Which children quickly seize. If the incident happened at all,  
We place it in Peter's time when hearts were great not small,  
Germanized, Frenchified. I wager 'tis old to you  
As the story of Adam and Eve, and possibly quite as true.'

In the deep of our land, 'tis said, a village from out the woods  
Emerged on the great main-road 'twixt two great solitudes.  
Through forestry right and left, black verst and verst of pine,  
From village to village runs the road's long wide bare line.  
Clearance and clearance break the else-unconquered growth  
Of pine and all that breeds and broods there, leaving loth  
Man's inch of masterdom,—spot of life, spirit of fire,—  
To star the dark and dread, lest right and rule expire  
Throughout the monstrous wild, a-hungry to resume  
Its ancient sway, suck back the world into its womb:

Defrauded by man's craft which clove from North to South  
This highway broad and straight e'en from the Neva's mouth  
To Moscow's gates of gold. So, spot of life and spirit  
Of fire aforesaid, burn, each village death-begirt  
By wall and wall of pine—unprobed undreamed abyss.  
Early one winter morn, in such a village as this,  
Snow-whitened everywhere except the middle road  
Ice-roughed by track of sledge, there worked by his abode  
Ivàn Ivànovitch, the carpenter, employed On a huge shipmast trunk; his axe now trimmed and toyed  
With branch and twig, and now some chop athwart the bole  
Changed bole to billets, bared at once the sap and soul.  
About him, watched the work his neighbours sheepskin-clad;  
Each bearded mouth puffed steam, each grey eye twinkled glad  
To see the sturdy arm which, never stopping play,  
Proved strong man's blood still boils, freeze winter as he may.  
Sudden, a burst of bells. Out of the road, on edge  
Of the hamlet—horse's hoofs galloping.  
'How, a sledge?  
What's here?' cried all as—in, up to the open space,  
Workyard and market-ground, folk's common meeting-place,—  
Stumbled on, till he fell, in one last bound for life,  
A horse: and, at his heels, a sledge held —  
'Dmitri's wife!  
Back without Dmitri too! and children — where are they?  
Only a frozen corpse!'

They drew it forth: then—'Nay, Not dead, though like to die! Gone hence a month ago:  
Home again, this rough jaunt—alone through night and snow—  
What can the cause be? Hark—Droug, old horse, how he groans:  
His day's done! Chafe away, keep chafing, for she moans:  
She's coming to! Give here: see, mother-kin, your friends!  
Cheer up, all safe at home! Warm inside makes amends  
For outside cold,—sup quick! Don't look as we were bears!  
What is it startles you? What strange adventure stares

## IVÀN IVÀNOVITCH

Up at us in your face? You know friends  
—which is which?  
I'm Vassili, he's Sergei, Ivàn Ivànovitch  
...

At the word, the woman's eyes, slow-  
wandering till they neared  
The blue eyes o'er the bush of honey-  
coloured beard,  
Took in full light and sense and—torn to  
rags, some dream  
Which hid the naked truth—O loud and  
long the scream  
She gave, as if all power of voice within  
her throat  
Poured itself wild away to waste in one  
dread note!  
Then followed gasps and sobs, and then  
the steady flow  
Of kindly tears: the brain was saved, a man  
might know.  
Down fell her face upon the good friend's  
propping knee;  
His broad hands smoothed her head, as  
fain to brush it free  
From fancies, swarms that stung like bees  
unhived. He soothed—  
'Loukèria, Louscha!'—still he, fondling,  
smoothed and smoothed.  
At last her lips formed speech.

'Ivàn, dear—you indeed!  
You, just the same dear you! While I...  
O intercede,  
Sweet Mother, with thy Son Almighty—  
let his might  
Bring yesterday once more, undo all done  
last night!  
But this time yesterday, Ivàn, I sat like you,  
A child on either knee, and, dearer than  
the two,  
A babe inside my arms, close to my heart  
—that's lost  
In morsels o'er the snow! Father, Son,  
Holy Ghost,  
Cannot you bring again my blessed yester-  
day?'

When no more tears would flow, she told  
her tale: this way.

'Maybe, a month ago,—was it not?—  
news came here,  
They wanted, deeper down, good work-  
men fit to rear  
A church and roof it in. "We'll go," my  
husband said:  
"None understands like me to melt and  
mould their lead."  
So, friends here helped us off—Ivàn, dear,  
you the first!  
How gay we jingled forth, all five—(my  
heart will burst)—  
While Dmitri shook the reins, urged  
Droug upon his track!

'Well, soon the month ran out, we just  
were coming back,  
When yesterday—behold, the village was  
on fire!  
Fire ran from house to house. What help,  
as, nigh and nigher,  
The flames came furious? "Haste," cried  
Dmitri, "men must do  
The little good man may: to sledge and in  
with you,  
You and our three! We check the fire by  
laying flat  
Each building in its path,—I needs must  
stay for that,—  
But you... no time for talk! Wrap round  
you every rug,  
Cover the couple close,—you'll have the  
babe to hug.  
No care to guide old Droug, he knows his  
way, by guess,  
Once start him on the road: but chirrup,  
none the less!  
The snow lies glib as glass and hard as  
steel, and soon  
You'll have rise, fine and full, a marvel of  
a moon.  
Hold straight up, all the same, this lighted  
twist of pitch!  
Once home and with our friend Ivàn  
Ivànovitch,  
All's safe: I have my pay in pouch, all's  
right with me,  
So I but find as safe you and our precious  
three!  
Off, Droug!"—because the flames had  
reached us, and the men  
Shouted "But lend a hand, Dmitri—as  
good as ten!"

'So, in we bundled—I, and those God gave  
me once;  
Old Droug, that's stiff at first, seemed  
youthful for the nonce:  
He understood the case, galloping straight  
ahead.  
Out came the moon: my twist soon  
dwindled, feebly red  
In that unnatural day—yes, daylight, bred  
between  
Moon-light and snow-light, lamped those  
grotto-depths which screen  
Such devils from God's eye. Ah, pines,  
how straight you grow  
Nor bend one pitying branch, true breed  
of brutal snow!  
Some undergrowth had served to keep the  
devils blind  
While we escaped outside their border!

'Was that—wind?  
Anyhow, Droug starts, stops, back go his  
ears, he snuffs,  
Snorts,—never such a snort! then plunges,  
knows the sough's

## IVAN IVANOVITCH

Only the wind: yet, no—our breath goes  
up too straight!  
Still the low sound,—less low, loud,  
louder, at a rate  
There's no mistaking more! Shall I lean  
out—look—learn  
The truth whatever it be? Pad, pad! At  
last, I turn—

'Tis the regular pad of the wolves in pur-  
suit of the life in the sledge!  
An army they are: close-packed they press  
like the thrust of a wedge:  
They increase as they hunt: for I see,  
through the pine-trunks ranged each  
side,  
Slip forth new fiend and fiend, make wider  
and still more wide  
The four-footed steady advance. The  
foremost—none may pass:  
They are elders and lead the line, eye and  
eye—green-glowing brass!  
But a long way distant still. Droug, save  
us! He does his best:  
Yet they gain on us, gain, till they reach,  
—one reaches . . . How utter the  
rest?

O that Satan-faced first of the band! How  
he lolls out the length of his tongue,  
How he laughs and lets gleam his white  
teeth! He is on me, his paws pry  
among  
The wraps and the rugs! O my pair, my  
twin-pigeons, lie still and seem dead!  
Stepàn, he shall never have you for a meal,  
—here's your mother instead!  
No, he will not be counselled—must cry,  
poor Stiòpka, so foolish! though first  
Of my boy-brood, he was not the best:  
nay, neighbours have called him the  
worst:

He was puny, an undersized slip,—a dar-  
ling to me, all the same!  
But little there was to be praised in the boy,  
and a plenty to blame.

I loved him with heart and soul, yes—but,  
deal him a blow for a fault,  
He would sulk for whole days. "Foolish  
boy! lie still or the villain will vault,  
Will snatch you from over my head!" No  
use! he cries, screams,—who can  
hold

Fast a boy in a frenzy of fear! It follows—  
as I foretold!

The Satan-face snatched and snapped: I  
tugged, I tore—and then  
His brother too needs must shriek! If one  
must go, 'tis men

The Tsar needs, so we hear, not ailing  
boys! Perhaps

My hands relaxed their grasp, got tangled  
in the wraps:

God, he was gone! I looked: there tumbled  
the cursed crew,

Each fighting for a share: too busy to pur-  
sue!

That's so far gain at least: Droug, gallop  
another verst,

Or two, or three—God sends we beat  
them, arrive the first!

A mother who boasts two boys was ever  
accounted rich:

Some have not a boy: some have, but lose  
him,—God knows which

Is worse: how pitiful to see your weakling  
pine

And pale and pass away! Strong brats,  
this pair of mine!

'O misery! for while I settle to what near  
seems

Content, I am 'ware again of the tramp,  
and again there gleams—

Point and point—the line, eyes, levelled  
green brassy fire!

So soon is resumed your chase? Will  
nothing appease, nought tire

The furies? And yet I think—I am certain  
the race is slack,

And the numbers are nothing like. Not a  
quarter of the pack!

Feasters and those full-fed are staying be-  
hind . . . Ah why?

We'll sorrow for that too soon! Now,—  
gallop, reach home, and cie,

Nor ever again leave house, to trust our  
life in the trap

For life—we call a sledge! Teriòscha, in  
my lap!

Yes, I'll lie down upon you, tight-tie you  
with the strings

Here—of my heart! No fear, this time,  
your mother flings . . .

Flings? I flung? Never! but think!—a  
woman, after all

Contending with a wolf! Save you I must  
and shall,

Terentii!

'How now? What, you still head  
the race,

Your eyes and tongue and teeth crave fresh  
food, Satan-face?

There and there! Plain I struck green fire  
out! Flash again?

All a poor fist can do to damage eyes  
proves vain!

My fist—why not crunch that? He is wan-  
ton for . . . O God,

Why give this wolf his taste? Common  
wolves scrape and prod

The earth till out they scratch some corpse  
—mere putrid flesh!

Why must this glutton leave the faded,  
choose the fresh?

Terentii—God, feel!—his neck keeps fast  
thy bag

Of holy things, saints' bones, this Satan-  
face will drag

Forth, and devour along with him, our  
Pope declared  
The relics were to save from danger!

‘Spurned, not spared!  
’Twas through my arms, crossed arms,  
he—nuzzling now with snout,  
Now ripping, tooth and claw—plucked,  
pulled Terentii out,  
A prize indeed! I saw—how could I else  
but see?—  
My precious one—I bit to hold back—  
pulled from me!  
Up came the others, fell to dancing—did  
the imps!—  
Skipped as they scampered round. There’s  
one is grey, and limps:  
Who knows but old bad Märpha,—she  
always owed me spite  
And envied me my births,—skulks out of  
doors at night  
And turns into a wolf, and joins the sister-  
hood,  
And laps the youthful life, then slinks from  
out the wood,  
Squats down at door by dawn, spins there  
demure as erst  
—No strength, old crone,—not she!—to  
crawl forth half a verst!

‘Well, I escaped with one: ’twixt one and  
none there lies  
The space ’twixt heaven and hell. And see,  
a rose-light dyes  
The endmost snow: ’tis dawn, ’tis day, ’tis  
safe at home!  
We have outwitted you! Ay, monsters,  
snarl and foam,  
Fight each the other fiend, disputing for a  
share,—  
Forgetful, in your greed, our finest off we  
bear,  
Tough Droug and I,—my babe, my boy  
that shall be man,  
My man that shall be more, do all a hunter  
can  
To trace and follow and find and catch and  
crucify  
Wolves, wolfkins, all your crew! A thou-  
sand deaths shall die  
The whimperingest cub that ever squeezed  
the teat!  
“Take that!” we’ll stab you with,—“the  
tenderness we met  
When, wretches, you danced round—not  
this, thank God—not this!  
Hellhounds, we baulk you!”

‘But—Ah, God above!—Bliss, bliss—  
Not the band, no! And yet—yes, for  
Droug knows him! One—  
This only of them all has said “She saves  
a son!”

His fellows disbelieve such luck: but he  
believes,  
He lets them pick the bones, laugh at him  
in their sleeves:  
He’s off and after us,—one speck, one  
spot, one ball  
Grows bigger, bound on bound,—one  
wolf as good as all!  
Oh but I know the trick! Have at the  
snaky tongue!  
That’s the right way with wolves! Go, tell  
your mates I wrung  
The panting morsel out, left you to howl  
your worst!  
Now for it—now! Ah me! I know him—  
thrice-accurst  
Satan-face,—him to the end my foe!

‘All fight’s in vain:  
This time the green brass points pierce to  
my very brain.  
I fall—fall as I ought—quite on the babe  
I guard:  
I overspread with flesh the whole of him.  
Too hard  
To die this way, torn piecemeal? Move  
hence? Not I—one inch!  
Gnaw through me, through and through:  
flat thus I lie nor flinch!  
O God, the feel of the fang furrowing my  
shoulder!—see  
It grinds—it grates the bone. O Kirill  
under me,  
Could I do more? Besides he knew wolf’s  
way to win:  
I clung, closed round like wax: yet in he  
wedged and in,  
Past my neck, past my breasts, my heart,  
until . . . how feels  
The onion-bulb your knife parts, pushing  
through its peels,  
Till out you scoop its clove wherein lie  
stalk and leaf  
And bloom and seed unborn?

‘That slew me: yes, in brief,  
I died then, dead I lay doubtlessly till  
Droug stopped  
Here, I suppose. I come to life, I find me  
propped  
Thus—how or when or why,—I know not.  
Tell me, friends,  
All was a dream: laugh quick and say the  
nightmare ends!  
Soon I shall find my house: ’tis over there:  
in proof,  
Save for that chimney heaped with snow,  
you’d see the roof  
Which holds my three—my two—my one  
—not one?

‘Life’s mixed  
With misery, yet we live—must live. The  
Satan fixed

## IVÀN IVÀNOVITCH

His face on mine so fast, I took its print as  
pitch  
Takes what it cools beneath. Ivàn Ivàno-  
vitch,  
'Tis you unhardened me, you thaw, disperse  
the thing!  
Only keep looking kind, the horror will  
not cling.  
Your face smooths fast away each print  
of Satan. Tears  
—What good they do! Life's sweet, and  
all its after-years,  
Ivàn Ivànovitch, I owe you! Yours am I!  
May God reward you, dear!

Down she sank. Solemnly  
Ivàn rose, raised his axe,—for fitly, as she  
knelt,  
Her head lay: well-apart, each side, her  
arms hung,—dealt  
Lightning-swift thunder-strong one blow  
—no need of more!  
Headless she knelt on still; that pine was  
sound at core  
(Neighbours were used to say)—cast-  
iron-kernelled—which  
Taxed for a second stroke Ivàn Ivànovitch.

The man was scant of words as strokes.  
'It had to be:  
I could no other: God it was bade "Act  
for me!"'  
Then stooping, peering round—what is it  
now he lacks?  
A proper strip of bark wherewith to wipe  
his axe.  
Which done, he turns, goes in, closes the  
door behind.

The others mute remain, watching the  
blood-snake wind  
Into a hiding-place among the splinter-  
heaps.

At length, still mute, all move: one lifts,—  
from where it steeps  
Redder each ruddy rag of pine,—the head:  
two more  
Take up the dripping body: then, mute  
still as before,  
Move in a sort of march, march on till  
marching ends  
Opposite to the church; where halting,—  
who suspends,  
By its long hair, the thing, deposits in its  
place  
The piteous head: once more the body  
shows no trace  
Of harm done: there lies whole the  
Louscha, maid and wife  
And mother, loved until this latest of her  
life.  
Then all sit on the bank of snow which  
bounds a space  
Kept free before the porch for judgment:  
just the place!

Presently all the souls, man, woman, child,  
which make  
The village up, are found assembling for  
the sake  
Of what is to be done. The very Jews are  
there:  
A Gipsy-troop, though bound with horses  
for the Fair,  
Squats with the rest. Each heart with its  
conception seethes  
And simmers, but no tongue speaks: one  
may say,—none breathes.

Anon from out the church totters the Pope  
—the priest—  
Hardly alive, so old, a hundred years at  
least.  
With him, the Commune's head, a hoary  
senior too,  
Stàrosta, that's his style,—like Equity  
Judge with you,—  
Natural Jurisconsult: then, fenced about  
with furs,  
Pomeschik,—Lord of the Land, who  
wields—and none demurs—  
A power of life and death. They stoop,  
survey the corpse.

Then, straightened on his staff, the Stà-  
rosta—the thorp's  
Sagaciousest old man—hears what you  
just have heard,  
From Droug's first inrush, all, up to Ivàn's  
last word  
'God bade me act for him: I dared not  
disobey!'

Silence—the Pomeschik broke with 'A  
wild wrong way  
Of righting wrong—if wrong there were,  
such wrath to rouse!  
Why was not law observed? What article  
allows  
Whoso may please to play the judge, and,  
judgment dealt,  
Play executioner, as promptly as we pelt  
To death, without appeal, the vermin  
whose sole fault  
Has been—it dared to leave the darkness  
of its vault,  
Intrude upon our day! Too sudden and  
too rash!  
What was this woman's crime? Suppose  
the church should crash  
Down where I stand, your lord: bound are  
my serfs to dare  
Their utmost that I 'scape: yet, if the  
crashing scare  
My children,—as you are,—if sons fly, one  
and all,  
Leave father to his fate,—poor cowards  
though I call  
The runaways, I pause before I claim their  
life

Because they prized it more than mine. I  
would each wife  
Died for her husband's sake, each son to  
save his sire:  
'Tis glory, I applaud—scarce duty, I re-  
quire.  
Ivan Ivanovitch has done a deed that's  
named  
Murder by law and me: who doubts, may  
speak unblamed!

All turned to the old Pope. 'Ay, children,  
I am old—  
How old, myself have got to know no  
longer. Rolled  
Quite round, my orb of life, from infancy  
to age,  
Seems passing back again to youth. A  
certain stage  
At least I reach, or dream I reach, where I  
discern  
Truer truths, laws behold more lawlike  
than we learn  
When first we set our foot to tread the  
course I trod  
With man to guide my steps: who leads  
me now is God.  
"Your young men shall see visions:" and  
in my youth I saw  
And paid obedience to man's visionary  
law:  
"Your old men shall dream dreams:" and,  
in my age, a hand  
Conducts me through the cloud round law  
to where I stand  
Firm on its base,—know cause, who, be-  
fore, knew effect.

'The world lies under me: and nowhere I  
detect  
So great a gift as this—God's own—of  
human life.  
"Shall the dead praise thee?" No! "The  
whole live world is rife,  
God, with thy glory," rather! Life then,  
God's best of gifts,  
For what shall man exchange? For life—  
when so he shifts  
The weight and turns the scale, lets life for  
life restore  
God's balance, sacrifice the less to gain the  
more,  
Substitute—for low life, another's or his  
own—  
Life large and liker God's who gave it:  
thus alone  
May life extinguish life that life may trulier  
be!  
How low this law descends on earth, is not  
for me  
To trace: complexed becomes the simple,  
intricate  
The plain, when I pursue law's winding.  
'Tis the straight

Outflow of law I know and name: to law,  
the fount  
Fresh from God's footstool, friends, fol-  
low while I remount.

'A mother bears a child: perfection is  
complete  
So far in such a birth. Enabled to repeat  
The miracle of life,—herself was born so  
just  
A type of womankind, that God sees fit to  
trust  
Her with the holy task of giving life in  
turn.  
Crowned by this crowning pride,—how  
say you, should she spurn  
Regality—discrowned, unchilded, by her  
choice  
Of barrenness exchanged for fruit which  
made rejoice  
Creation, though life's self were lost in  
giving birth  
To life more fresh and fit to glorify God's  
earth?  
How say you, should the hand God trusted  
with life's torch  
Kindled to light the world—aware of  
sparks that scorch,  
Let fall the same? Forsooth, her flesh a  
fire-flake stings:  
The mother drops the child! Among what  
monstrous things  
Shall she be classed? Because of mother-  
hood, each male  
Yields to his partner place, sinks proudly  
in the scale:  
His strength owned weakness, wit—folly,  
and courage—fear,  
Beside the female proved male's mistress  
—only here.  
The fox-dam, hunger-pined, will slay the  
felon sire  
Who dares assault her whelp: the beaver,  
stretched on fire,  
Will die without a groan: no pang avails  
to wrest  
Her young from where they hide—her  
sanctuary breast.  
What's here then? Answer me, thou dead  
one, as, I trow,  
Standing at God's own bar, he bids thee  
answer now!  
Thrice crowned wast thou—each crown  
of pride, a child—thy charge!  
Where are they? Lost? Enough: no need  
that thou enlarge  
On how or why the loss: life left to utter  
"lost",  
Condemns itself beyond appeal. The sol-  
dier's post  
Guards from the foe's attack the camp he  
sentinels:  
That he no traitor proved, this and this  
only tells—

## IVÀN IVÀNOVITCH

Over the corpse of him trod foe to foe's  
success.

Yet—one by one thy crowns torn from  
thee—thou no less

To scare the world, shame God,—livedst!  
I hold He saw

The unexampled sin, ordained the novel  
law,

Whereof first instrument was first intelli-  
gence

Found loyal here. I hold that, failing  
human sense,

The very earth had oped, sky fallen, to  
efface

Humanity's new wrong, motherhood's  
first disgrace.

Earth oped not, neither fell the sky, for  
prompt was found

A man and man enough, head-sober and  
heart-sound,

Ready to hear God's voice, resolute to  
obey.

Ivàn Ivànovitch, I hold, has done, this day,  
No otherwise than did, in ages long ago,  
Moses when he made known the purport  
of that flow

Of fire athwart the law's twain-tables! I  
proclaim

Ivàn Ivànovitch God's servant!

At which name

Uprose that creepy whisper from out the  
crowd, is wont

To swell and surge and sink when fellow-  
men confront

A punishment that falls on fellow flesh  
and blood,

Appallingly beheld—shudderingly under-  
stood,

No less, to be the right, the just, the merciful.

'God's servant!' hissed the crowd.

When that Amen grew dull  
And died away and left acquittal plain  
adjudged,

'Amen!' last sighed the lord. 'There's  
none shall say I grudged

Escape from punishment in such a novel  
case.

Deferring to old age and holy life,—be  
grace

Granted! say I. No less, scruples might  
shake a sense

Firmer than I boast mine. Law's law, and  
evidence

Of breach therein lies plain,—blood-red-  
bright,—all may see!

Yet all absolve the deed: absolved the deed  
must be!

'And next—as mercy rules the hour—  
methinks 'twere well

You signify forthwith its sentence, and  
dispel

The doubts and fears, I judge, which busy  
now the head

Law puts a halter round—a halo—you,  
instead!

Ivàn Ivànovitch—what think you he ex-  
pects

Will follow from his feat? Go, tell him—  
law protects

Murder, for once: no need he longer keep  
behind

The Sacred Pictures—where skulks Inno-  
cence enshrined,

Or I missay! Go, some! You others, haste  
and hide

The dismal object there: get done, what-  
e'er betide!

So, while the youngers raised the corpse,  
the elders trooped

Silently to the house: where halting, some-  
one stooped,

Listened beside the door; all there was  
silent too.

Then they held counsel; then pushed door  
and, passing through,

Stood in the murderer's presence.

Ivàn Ivànovitch

Knelt, building on the floor that Kremlin  
rare and rich

He deftly cut and carved on lazy winter  
nights.

Some five young faces watched, breath-  
lessly, as, to rights,

Piece upon piece, he reared the fabric nigh  
complete.

Stèscha, Ivàn's old mother, sat spinning  
by the heat

Of the oven where his wife Kàtia stood  
baking bread.

Ivàn's self, as he turned his honey-col-  
oured head,

Was just in act to drop, 'twixt fir-cones,—  
each a dome,—

The scooped-out yellow gourd presum-  
ably the home

Of Kolokol the Big: the bell, therein to  
hitch,

—An acorn-cup—was ready: Ivàn Ivàno-  
vitch

Turned with it in his mouth.

They told him he was free

As air to walk abroad. 'How otherwise?'  
asked he.

## TRAY

SING me a hero! Quench my thirst  
Of soul, ye bards!

Quoth Bard the first:

'Sir Olaf, the good knight, did don  
His helm and eke his habergeon . . .'

Sir Olaf and his bard—!

'That sin-scathed brow' (quoth Bard the second)

'That eye wide ope as though Fate beckoned

My hero to some steep, beneath  
Which precipice smiled tempting death...'  
You too without your host have reckoned!

'A beggar-child' (let's hear this third!)  
'Sat on a quay's edge: like a bird  
Sang to herself at careless play,  
And fell into the stream. "Dismay!  
Help, you the standers-by!" None stirred.

'Bystanders reason, think of wives  
And children ere they risk their lives.  
Over the balustrade has bounced  
A mere instinctive dog, and pounced  
Plumb on the prize. "How well he dives!

"Up he comes with the child, see, tight  
In mouth, alive too, clutched from quite  
A depth of ten feet—twelve, I bet!  
Good dog! What, off again? There's yet  
Another child to save? All right!

"How strange we saw no other fall!  
It's instinct in the animal.  
Good dog! But he's a long while under:  
If he got drowned I should not wonder—  
Strong current, that against the wall!

"Here he comes, holds in mouth this time  
—What may the thing be? Well, that's  
prime!  
Now, did you ever? Reason reigns  
In man alone, since all Tray's pains  
Have fished—the child's doll from the  
slime!"

'And so, amid the laughter gay,  
Trotted my hero off,—old Tray,—  
Till somebody, prerogated  
With reason, reasoned: "Why he dived,  
His brain would show us, I should say.

"John, go and catch—or, if needs be,  
Purchase—that animal for me!  
By vivisection, at expense  
Of half-an-hour and eighteenpence,  
How brain secretes dog's soul, we'll see!"

### NED BRATTS

'Twas Bedford Special Assize, one daft  
Midsummer's Day:

A broiling blasting June,—was never its  
like, men say.

Corn stood sheaf-ripe already, and trees  
looked yellow as that;

Ponds drained dust-dry, the cattle lay  
foaming around each flat.

Inside town, dogs went mad, and folk kept  
bibbing beer

While the parsons prayed for rain. 'Twas  
horrible, yes—but queer:

Queer—for the sun laughed gay, yet no-  
body moved a hand

To work one stroke at his trade: as given  
' to understand

That all was come to a stop, work and such  
worldly ways,

And the world's old self about to end in a  
merry blaze.

Midsummer's Day moreover was the first  
of Bedford Fair,

With Bedford Town's tag-rag and bobtail  
a-bowing there.

But the Court House, Quality crammed:  
through doors ope, windows wide,

High on the Bench you saw sit Lordships  
side by side.

There frowned Chief Justice Jukes, fumed  
learned Brother Small,

And fretted their fellow Judge: like  
threshers, one and all,

Of a reek with laying down the law in a  
furnace. Why?

Because their lungs breathed flame—the  
regular crowd forbye—

From gentry pouring in—quite a nosegay,  
to be sure!

How else could they pass the time, six  
mortal hours endure

Till night should extinguish day, when  
matters might haply mend?

Meanwhile no bad resource was—watch-  
ing begin and end

Some trial for life and death, in a brisk five  
minutes' space,

And betting which knave would 'scape,  
which hang, from his sort of face.

So, their Lordships toiled and moiled, and  
a deal of work was done

(I warrant) to justify the mirth of the crazy  
sun

As this and t'other lout, struck dumb at  
the sudden show

Of red robes and white wigs, boggled nor  
answered 'Boh!'

When asked why he, Tom Styles, should  
not—because Jack Nokes

Had stolen the horse—be hanged: for  
Judges must have their jokes,

And louts must make allowance—let's  
say, for some blue fly

Which punctured a dewy scalp where the  
frizzles stuck awry—

Else Tom had fleeced scot-free, so nearly  
over and done

Was the main of the job. Full-measure,  
the gentles enjoyed their fun,

As a twenty-five were tried, rank puritans  
caught at prayer



## NED BRATTS

In a cow-house and laid by the heels,—  
have at 'em, devil may care!—  
And ten were prescribed the whip, and ten  
a brand on the cheek,  
And five a slit of the nose—just leaving  
enough to tweak.

Well, things at jolly high-tide, amusement  
steeped in fire,  
While noon smote fierce the roof's red tiles  
to heart's desire,  
The Court a-simmer with smoke, one ferment  
of oozy flesh,  
One spirituous humming musk mount-  
mounting until its mesh  
Entoiled all heads in a fluster, and Serjeant  
Postlethwayte  
—Dashing the wig oblique as he mopped  
his oily pate—  
Cried 'Silence, or I grow grease! No  
loophole lets in air?  
Jurymen,—Guilty, Death! Gainsay me if  
you dare!'  
—Things at this pitch, I say,—what hub-  
bub without the doors?  
What laughs, shrieks, hoots and yells,  
what rudest of uproars?

Bounce through the barrier throng a bulk  
comes rolling vast!  
Thumps, kicks,—no manner of use!—  
spite of them rolls at last  
Into the midst a ball which, bursting,  
brings to view  
Publican Black Ned Bratts and Tabby his  
big wife too:  
Both in a muck-sweat, both . . . were never  
such eyes uplift  
At the sight of yawning hell, such nostrils  
—snouts that sniffed  
Sulphur, such mouths a-gape ready to  
swallow flame!  
Horrid, hideous, frank fiend-faces! yet,  
all the same,  
Mixed with a certain . . . eh? how shall I  
dare style—mirth  
The desperate grin of the guess that, could  
they break from earth,  
Heaven was above, and hell might rage in  
impotence  
Below the saved, the saved!

'Confound you! (no offence!)  
Out of our way,—push, wife! Yonder  
their Worship be!'  
Ned Bratts has reached the bar, and 'Hey,  
my Lords,' roars he,  
'A Jury of life and death, Judges the prime  
of the land,  
Constables, javelineers,—all met, if I under-  
stand,  
To decide so knotty a point as whether  
'twas Jack or Joan

Robbed the henroost, pinched the pig, hit  
the King's Arms with a stone,  
Dropped the baby down the well, left the  
tithesman in the lurch,  
Or, three whole Sundays running, not once  
attended church!  
What a pother—do these deserve the  
parish-stocks or whip,  
More or less brow to brand, much or little  
nose to snip,—  
When, in our Public, plain stand we—  
that's we stand here,  
I and my Tab, brass-bolt, brick-built of  
beef and beer,  
—Do not we, slut? Step forth and show  
your beauty, jade!  
Wife of my bosom—that's the word now!  
What a trade  
We drove! None said us nay: nobody  
loved his life  
So little as wag a tongue against us,—did  
they, wife?  
Yet they knew us all the while, in their  
hearts, for what we are  
—Worst couple, rogue and quean, un-  
hanged—search near and far!  
Eh, Tab? The pedlar, now—o'er his nog-  
gin—who warned a mate  
To cut and run, nor risk his pack where its  
loss of weight  
Was the least to dread,—aha, how we two  
laughed a-good  
As, stealing round the midden, he came on  
where I stood  
With billet poised and raised,—you, ready  
with the rope,—  
Ah, but that's past, that's sin repented of,  
we hope!  
Men knew us for that same, yet safe and  
sound stood we!  
The lily-livered knaves knew too (I've  
balked a d—)  
Our keeping the "Pied Bull" was just a  
mere pretence:  
Too slow the pounds make food, drink,  
lodging, from out the pence!  
There's not a stoppage to travel has  
chanced, this ten long year,  
No break into hall or grange, no lifting of  
nag or steer,  
Not a single roguery, from the clipping of  
a purse  
To the cutting of a throat, but paid us toll.  
Od's curse!  
When Gipsy Smouch made bold to cheat  
us of our due,  
—Eh, Tab? the Squire's strong-box we  
helped the rascal to—  
I think he pulled a face, next Sessions'  
swinging-time!  
He danced the jig that needs no floor,—  
and, here's the prime,  
'Twas Scroggs that houghed the mare!  
Ay, those were busy days!

'Well, there we flourished brave, like scripture-trees called bays,  
Faring high, drinking hard, in money up to head  
—Not to say, boots and shoes, when . . .  
Zounds, I nearly said—  
Lord, to unlearn one's language! How shall we labour, wife?  
Have you, fast hold, the Book? Grasp, grip it, for your life!  
See, sirs, here's life, salvation! Here's—hold but out my breath—  
When did I speak so long without once swearing? 'Sdeath,  
No, nor unhelped by ale since man and boy! And yet  
All yesterday I had to keep my whistle wet  
While reading Tab this Book: book? don't say "book"—they're plays,  
Songs, ballads and the like: here's no such strawy blaze,  
But sky wide ope, sun, moon, and seven stars out full-flare!  
Tab, help and tell! I'm hoarse. A mug or—no, a prayer!  
Dip for one out of the Book! Who wrote it in the Jail  
—He plied his pen unhelped by beer, sirs, I'll be bail!

'I've got my second wind. In trundles she—that's Tab.  
"Why, Gammer, what's come now, that—bobbing like a crab  
On Yule-tide bowl—your head's a-work and both your eyes  
Break loose? Afeard, you fool? As if the dead can rise!  
Say—Bagman Dick was found last May with fuddling-cap  
Stuffed in his mouth: to choke's a natural mishap!"  
"Gaffer, be—blessed," cries she, "and Bagman Dick as well!  
I, you, and he are damned: this Public is our hell:  
We live in fire: live coals don't feel!—once quenched, they learn—  
Cinders do, to what dust they moulder while they burn!"

"If you don't speak straight out," says I—belike I swore—  
"A knobstick, well you know the taste of, shall, once more,  
Teach you to talk, my maid!" She ups with such a face,  
Heart sunk inside me. "Well, pad on, my prate-apace!"

"I've been about those laces we need for . . . never mind!

If henceforth they tie hands, 'tis mine they'll have to bind.  
You know who makes them best—the Tinker in our cage,  
Pulled-up for gospelling, twelve years ago: no age  
To try another trade,—yet, so he scorned to take  
Money he did not earn, he taught himself the make  
Of laces, tagged and tough—Dick Bagman found them so!  
Good customers were we! Well, last week, you must know  
His girl,—the blind young chit, who hawks about his wares,—  
She takes it in her head to come no more—such airs  
These hussies have! Yet, since we need a stoutish lace,—  
'I'll to the jail-bird father, abuse her to his face!'  
So, first I filled a jug to give me heart, and then,  
Primed to the proper pitch, I posted to their den—  
*Patmore*—they style their prison! I tip the turnkey, catch  
My heart up, fix my face, and fearless lift the latch—  
Both arms a-kimbo, in bounce with a good round oath  
Ready for rapping out: no 'Lawks' nor 'By my troth!'

"There sat my man, the father. He looked up: what one feels  
When heart that leapt to mouth drops down again to heels!  
He raised his hand . . . Hast seen, when drinking out the night,  
And in, the day, earth grow another something quite  
Under the sun's first stare? I stood a very stone.

"'Woman!' (a fiery tear he put in every tone),  
'How should my child frequent your house where lust is sport,  
Violence—trade? Too true! I trust no vague report.  
Her angel's hand, which stops the sight of sin, leaves clear  
The other gate of sense, lets outrage through the ear.  
What has she heard!—which, heard shall never be again.  
Better lack food than feast, a Dives in the—wain  
Or reign or train—of Charles!' (His language was not ours:  
'Tis my belief, God spoke: no tinker has such powers.)

## NED BRATTS

'Bread, only bread they bring—my laces:  
if we broke  
Your lump of leavened sin, the loaf's first  
crumb would choke!'

"Down on my marrow-bones! Then all  
at once rose he:  
His brown hair burst a-spread, his eyes  
were suns to see:  
Up went his hands: 'Through flesh, I  
reach, I read thy soul!  
So may some stricken tree look blasted,  
bough and bole,  
Champed by the fire-tooth, charred with-  
out, and yet, thrice-bound  
With deriment about, within may life be  
found,  
A prisoned power to branch and blossom  
as before,  
Could but the gardener cleave the cloister,  
reach the core,  
Loosen the vital sap: yet where shall help  
be found?  
Who says "How save it?"—nor "Why  
cumbers it the ground?"  
Woman, that tree art thou! All sloughed  
about with scurf,  
Thy stag-horns fright the sky, thy snake-  
roots sting the turf!  
Drunkenness, wantonness, theft, murder  
gnash and gnarl  
Thine outward, case thy soul with coating  
like the marle  
Satan stamps flat upon each head beneath  
his hoof!  
And how deliver such? The strong men  
keep aloof,  
Lover and friend stand far, the mocking  
ones pass by,  
Tophet gapes wide for prey: lost soul,  
despair and die!  
What then? "Look unto me and be ye  
saved!" saith God:  
"I strike the rock, outtreats the life-  
stream at my rod!  
Be your sins scarlet, wool shall they seem  
like,—although  
As crimson red, yet turn white as the driven  
snow!"

"There, there, there! All I seem to  
somehow understand  
Is—that, if I reached home, 'twas through  
the guiding hand  
Of his blind girl which led and led me  
through the streets  
And out of town and up to door again.  
What greets  
First thing my eye, as limbs recover from  
their swoon?  
A book—this Book she gave at parting.  
'Father's boon—  
The Book he wrote: it reads as if he spoke  
himself;

He cannot preach in bonds, so,—take it  
down from shelf  
When you want counsel,—think you hear  
his very voice!'

"Wicked dear Husband, first despair and  
then rejoice!  
Dear wicked Husband, waste no tick of  
moment more,  
Be saved like me, bald trunk! There's  
greenness yet at core,  
Sap under slough! Read, read!"

'Let me take breath, my lords!  
I'd like to know, are these—hers, mine, or  
Bunyan's words?  
I'm 'wildered—scarce with drink,—no-  
wise with drink alone!  
You'll say, with heat: but heat's no stuff  
to split a stone  
Like this black boulder—this flint heart  
of mine: the Book—  
That dealt the crashing blow! Sirs, here's  
the fist that shook  
His beard till Wrestler Jem howled like a  
just-lugged bear!  
You had brained me with a feather: at  
once I grew aware  
Christian was meant for me. A burden at  
your back,  
Good Master Christmas? Nay,—yours  
was that Joseph's sack,  
—Or whose it was,—which held the cup,  
—compared with mine!  
Robbery loads my loins, perjury cracks  
my chine,  
Adultery . . . nay, Tab, you pitched me as  
I flung!  
One word, I'll up with fist . . . No, sweet  
spouse, hold your tongue!

'I'm hasting to the end. The Book, sir—  
take and read!  
You have my history in a nutshell,—ay,  
indeed!  
It must off, my burden! See,—slack straps  
and into pit,  
Roll, reach the bottom, rest, rot there—a  
plague on it!  
For a mountain's sure to fall and bury  
Bedford Town,  
"Destruction"—that's the name, and fire  
shall burn it down!  
O'scape the wrath in time! Time's now, if  
not too late.  
How can I pilgrimage up to the wicket-  
gate?  
Next comes Despond the slough: not that  
I fear to pull  
Through mud, and dry my clothes at brave  
House Beautiful—  
But it's late in the day, I reckon: had I left  
years ago  
Town, wife, and children dear . . . Well,  
Christmas did, you know!—

Soon I had met in the valley and tried my  
cudgel's strength  
On the enemy horned and winged, a-  
straddle across its length!  
Have at his horns, thwack—thwack: they  
snap, see! Hoof and hoof—  
Bang, break the fetlock-bones! For love's  
sake, keep aloof  
Angels! I'm man and match,—this cudgel  
for my flail,—  
To thresh him, hoofs and horns, bat's wing  
and serpent's tail!  
A chance gone by! But then, what else  
does Hopeful ding  
Into the deafest ear except—hope, hope's  
the thing?  
Too late i' the day for me to thrud the  
windings: but  
There's still a way to win the race by  
death's short cut!  
Did Master Faithful need climb the De-  
lightful Mounts?  
No, straight to Vanity Fair,—a fair, by all  
accounts,  
Such as is held outside,—lords, ladies,  
grand and gay,—  
Says he in the face of them, just what you  
hear me say.  
And the Judges brought him in guilty, and  
brought him out  
To die in the market-place—St. Peter's  
Green's about  
The same thing: there they flogged, flayed,  
buffeted, lanced with knives,  
Pricked him with swords,—I'll swear, he'd  
full a cat's nine lives,—  
So to his end at last came Faithful,—ha,  
ha, he!  
Who holds the highest card? for there  
stands hid, you see,  
Behind the rabble-rout, a chariot, pair and  
all:  
He's in, he's off, he's up, through clouds,  
at trumpet-call,  
Carried the nearest way to Heaven-gate!  
Odds my life—  
Has nobody a sword to spare? not even a  
knife?  
Then hang me, draw and quarter! Tab—  
do the same by her!  
O Master Worldly-Wiseman . . . that's  
Master Interpreter,  
Take the will, not the deed! Our gibbet's  
handy close:  
Forefall Last Judgment-Day! Be kindly,  
not morose!  
There wants no earthly judge-and-jurying:  
here we stand—  
Sentence our guilty selves: so, hang us out  
of hand!  
Make haste for pity's sake! A single  
moment's loss  
Means—Satan's lord once more: his whis-  
per shoots across

All singing in my heart, all praying in my  
brain,  
"It comes of heat and beer!"—hark how  
he guffaws plain!  
"To-morrow you'll wake bright, and, in  
a safe skin, hug  
Your sound selves, Tab and you, over a  
foaming jug!  
You've had such qualms before, time out  
of mind!" He's right!  
Did not we kick and cuff and curse away,  
that night  
When home we blindly reeled, and left  
poor humpback Joe  
I' the lurch to pay for what . . . somebody  
did, you know!  
Both of us maundered then "Lame hump-  
back,—never more  
Will he come limping, drain his tankard  
at our door!  
He'll swing, while—somebody . . ." Says  
Tab, "No, for I'll peach!"  
"I'm for you, Tab," cries I, "there's rope  
enough for each!"  
So blubbered we, and bussed, and went to  
bed upon  
The grace of Tab's good thought: by  
morning, all was gone!  
We laughed—"What's life to him, a  
cripple of no account?"  
Oh, waves increase around—I feel them  
mount and mount!  
Hang us! To-morrow brings Tom Bear-  
ward with his bears:  
One new black-muzzled brute beats  
Sackerson, he swears:  
(Sackerson, for my money!) And, baiting  
o'er, the Brawl  
They lead on Turner's Patch,—lads, lasses,  
up tails all,—  
I'm i' the thick o' the throng! That means  
the Iron Cage,  
—Means the Lost Man inside! Where's  
hope for such as wage  
War against light? Light's left, light's  
here, I hold light still,  
So does Tab—make but haste to hang us  
both! You will?'  
I promise, when he stopped you might  
have heard a mouse  
Squeak, such a death-like hush sealed up  
the old Mote House.  
But when the mass of man sank meek  
upon his knees,  
While Tab, alongside, wheezed a hoarse  
'Do hang us, please!'  
Why, then the waters rose, no eye but ran  
with tears,  
Hearts heaved, heads thumped, until, pay-  
ing all past arrears  
Of pity and sorrow, at last a regular scream  
outbroke  
Of triumph, joy and praise.

## NED BRATTS

My Lord Chief Justice spoke,  
First mopping brow and cheek, where still,  
for one that budged,  
Another bead broke fresh: 'What Judge,  
that ever judged  
Since first the world began, judged such a  
case as this?  
Why, Master Bratts, long since, folk smelt  
you out, I wis!  
I had my doubts, i' faith, each time you  
played the fox  
Convicting geese of crime in yonder wit-  
ness-box—  
Yea, much did I misdoubt, the thief that  
stole her eggs  
Was hardly goosey's self at Reynard's  
game, i' feggs!  
Yet thus much was to praise—you spoke  
to point, direct—  
Swore you heard, saw the theft: no jury  
could suspect—  
Dared to suspect,—I'll say,—a spot in  
white so clear:  
Goosey was throttled, true: but thereof  
godly fear  
Came of example set, much as our laws  
intend;  
And, though a fox confessed, you proved  
the Judge's friend.  
What if I had my doubts? Suppose I gave  
them breath,  
Brought you to bar: what work to do, ere  
"Guilty, Death,"—  
Had paid our pains! What heaps of wit-  
nesses to drag  
From holes and corners, paid from out  
the County's bag!  
Trial three dog-days long! *Amicus Curie*  
—that's  
Your title, no dispute—truth-telling Mas-  
ter Bratts!  
Thank you, too, Mistress Tab! Why  
doubt one word you say?  
Hanging you both deserve, hanged both  
shall be this day!

The tinker needs must be a proper man.  
I've heard  
He lies in Jail long since: if Quality's good  
word  
Warrants me letting loose,—some house-  
holder, I mean—  
Freeholder, better still,—I don't say but  
—between  
Now and next Sessions . . . Well! Con-  
sider of his case,  
I promise to, at least: we owe him so much  
grace.  
Not that—no, God forbid!—I lean to  
think, as you,  
The grace that such repent is any jail-bird's  
due:  
I rather see the fruit of twelve years' pious  
reign—  
Astræa Redux, Charles restored his rights  
again!  
—Of which, another time! I somehow  
feel a peace  
Stealing across the world. May deeds like  
this increase! .  
So, Master Sheriff, stay that sentence I  
pronounced  
On those two dozen odd: deserving to be  
trounced  
Soundly, and yet . . . well, well, at all  
events despatch  
This pair of—shall I say, sinner-saints?—  
ere we catch  
Their jail-distemper too. Stop tears, or  
I'll indite  
All weeping Bedfordshire for turning Bun-  
yanite!

So, forms were galloped through. If Jus-  
tice, on the spur,  
Proved somewhat expeditious, would  
Quality demur?  
And happily hanged were they,—why  
lengthen out my tale?—  
Where Bunyan's Statue stands facing  
where stood his Jail.

# DRAMATIC IDYLS

## SECOND SERIES

1880 .

'You are sick, that's sure'—they say:  
'Sick of what?'—they disagree.  
'Tis the brain'—thinks Doctor A;  
'Tis the heart'—holds Doctor B;  
'The liver—my life I'd lay!'  
'The lungs!' 'The lights!'

Ah me!

So ignorant of man's whole  
Of bodily organs plain to see—  
So sage and certain, frank and free,  
About what's under lock and key—  
Man's soul!

### ECHELOS

HERE is a story shall stir you! Stand up,  
Greeks dead and gone,  
Who breasted, beat Barbarians, stemmed  
Persia rolling on,  
Did the deed and saved the world, for the  
day was Marathon!

No man but did his manliest, kept rank  
and fought away  
In his tribe and file: up, back, out, down  
—was the spear-arm play:  
Like a wind-whipt branchy wood, all  
spear-arms a-swing that day!

But one man kept no rank and his sole arm  
plied no spear,  
As a flashing came and went, and a form  
i' the van, the rear,  
Brightened the battle up, for he blazed  
now there, now here.

Nor helmed nor shielded, he! but, a goat-  
skin all his wear,  
Like a tiller of the soil, with a clown's limbs  
broad and bare,  
Went he ploughing on and on: he pushed  
with a ploughman's share.

Did the weak mid-line give way, as tunnies  
on whom the shark  
Precipitates his bulk? Did the right-wing  
halt when, stark  
On his heap of slain lay stretched Kalli-  
machos Polemarch?

Did the steady phalanx falter? To the  
rescue, at the need,  
The clown was ploughing Persia, clearing  
Greek earth of weed,  
As he routed through the Sakian and  
rooted up the Mede.

But the deed done, battle won,—nowhere  
to be descried

On the meadow, by the stream, at the  
marsh,—look far and wide  
From the foot of the mountain, no, to the  
last blood-plashed seaside,—

Not anywhere on view blazed the large  
limbs thonged and brown,  
Shearing and clearing still with the share  
before which—down

To the dust went Persia's pomp, as he  
ploughed for Greece, that clown!

How spake the Oracle? 'Care for no  
name at all!

Say but just this: "We praise one helpful  
whom we call

The Holder of the Ploughshare." The  
great deed ne'er grows small."

Not the great name! Sing—woe for the  
great name Miltiades

And its end at Paros isle! Woe for The-  
mistokles

—Satrap in Sardis court! Name not the  
clown like these!

### CLIVE

I AND Clive were friends—and why not?  
Friends! I think you laugh, my lad.

Clive it was gave England India, while  
your father gives—egad,

England nothing but the graceless boy  
who lures him on to speak—

'Well, Sir, you and Clive were com-  
rades—' with a tongue thrust in your  
cheek!

Very true: in my eyes, your eyes, all the  
world's eyes, Clive was man,

I was, am and ever shall be—mouse, nay,  
mouse of all its clan

Sorriest sample, if you take the kitchen's  
estimate for fame;

While the man Clive—he fought Plassy,  
spoiled the clever foreign game,  
Conquered and annexed and Englished!

Never mind! As o'er my punch  
(You away) I sit of evenings,—silence,  
save for biscuit-crunch,

Black, unbroken,—thought grows busy,  
thrills each pathway of old years,

Notes this forthright, that meander, till the  
long-past life appears

Like an outspread map of country plodded  
through, each mile and rood,

Once, and well remembered still: I'm  
startled in my solitude

## CLIVE

Ever and anon by—what's the sudden  
mocking light that breaks  
On me as I slap the table till no rummer-  
glass but shakes

While I ask—aloud, I do believe, God help  
me!—Was it thus?

Can it be that so I faltered, stopped when  
just one step for us—

(Us,—you were not born, I grant, but  
surely some day born would be)

'—One bold step had gained a province'  
(figurative talk, you see)

'Got no end of wealth and honour,—yet I  
stood stock still no less?'

—'For I was not Clive,' you comment:  
but it needs no Clive to guess

Wealth were handy, honour ticklish, did  
no writing on the wall

Warn me 'Trespasser, 'ware man-traps!'—  
Him who braves that notice—call

Hero! none of such heroics suit myself  
who read plain words,

Doff my hat, and leap no barrier. Scrip-  
ture says the land's the Lord's:

Louts then—what avail the thousand,  
noisy in a smock-frocked ring,

All-agog to have me trespass, clear the  
fence, be Clive their king?

Higher warrant must you show me ere I  
set one foot before

T'other in that dark direction, though I  
stand for evermore

Poor as Job and meek as Moses. Ever-  
more? No! By-and-by

Job grows rich and Moses valiant, Clive  
turns out less wise than I.

Don't object 'Why call him friend, then?'

Power is power, my boy, and still  
Marks a man,—God's gift magnific, exer-  
cised for good or ill.

You've your boot now on my hearth-rug,  
tread what was a tiger's skin:

Rarely such a royal monster as I lodged  
the bullet in!

True, he murdered half a village, so his  
own death came to pass;

Still, for size and beauty, cunning, courage  
—ah, the brute he was!

Why, that Clive,—that youth, that green-  
horn, that quill-driving clerk, in  
fine,—

He sustained a siege in Arcot. . . . But the  
world knows! Pass the wine.

Where did I break off at? How bring Clive  
in? Oh, you mentioned 'fear'!

Just so: and, said I, that minds me of a  
story you shall hear.

We were friends then, Clive and I: so,  
when the clouds, about the orb

Late supreme, encroaching slowly, surely,  
threatened to absorb

Ray by ray its noontide brilliance,—  
friendship might, with steadier eye

Drawing near, bear what had burned else,  
now no blaze—all majesty.

Too much bee's-wing floats my figure?  
Well, suppose a castle's new:

None presume to climb its ramparts, none  
find foothold sure for shoe

'Twixt those squares and squares of  
granite plating the impervious pile

As his scale-mail's warty iron cuirasses a  
crocodile.

Reels that castle thunder-smitten, storm-  
dismantled? From without

Scrambling up by crack and crevice, every  
cockney prates about

Towers—the heap he kicks now! turrets  
—just the measure of his cane!

Will that do? Observe moreover—(same  
similitude again)—

Such a castle seldom crumbles by sheer  
stress of cannonade:

'Tis when foes are foiled and fighting's  
finished that vile rains invade,

Grass o'ergrows, o'ergrows till night-  
birds congregating find no holes

Fit to build in like the topmost sockets  
made for banner-poles.

So Clive crumbled slow in London—  
crashed at last.

A week before,  
Dining with him,—after trying church-  
yard-chat of days of yore,—

Both of us stopped, tired as tombstones,  
head-piece, foot-piece, when they  
lean

Each to other, drowsed in fog-smoke, o'er  
a confined Past between.

As I saw his head sink heavy, guessed the  
soul's extinguishment

By the glazing eyeball, noticed how the  
furtive fingers went

Where a drug-box skulked behind the  
honest liquor,—'One more throw

Try for Clive!' thought I: 'Let's venture  
some good rattling question!' So—

'Come, Clive, tell us'—out I blurted—  
'what to tell in turn, yours hence,

When my boy—suppose I have one—asks  
me on what evidence

I maintain my friend of Plassy proved a  
warrior every whit

Worth your Alexanders, Cæsars, Marl-  
boroughs and—what said Pitt?—

Frederick the Fierce himself! Clive told  
me once—I want to say—

'Which feat out of all those famous doings  
bore the bell away

—In his own calm estimation, mark you,  
not the mob's rough guess—

Which stood foremost as evincing what  
Clive called courageousness!

Come! what moment of the minute, what speck-centre in the wide  
Circle of the action saw your mortal fairly deified?

(Let alone that filthy sleep-stuff, swallow bold this wholesome Port!)

If a friend has leave to question,—when were you most brave, in short?’

Up he arched his brows o’ the instant—formidably Clive again.

‘When was I most brave? I’d answer, were the instance half as plain

As another instance that’s a brain-lodged crystal—curse it!—here

Freezing when my memory touches—ugh!—the time I felt most fear.

Ugh! I cannot say for certain if I showed fear—anyhow,

Fear I felt, and, very likely, shuddered, since I shiver now.’

‘Fear!’ smiled I. ‘Well, that’s the rarer: that’s a specimen to seek,

Ticket up in one’s museum, *Mind-Freaks*, *Lord Clive’s Fear, Unique!*’

Down his brows dropped. On the table painfully he pored as though

Tracing, in the stains and streaks there, thoughts encrusted long ago.

When he spoke ’twas like a lawyer reading word by word some will,

Some blind jungle of a statement,—beating on and on until

Out there leaps fierce life to fight with.

‘This fell in my factor-days. Desk-drudge, slaving at St. David’s, one must game, or drink, or craze.

I chos gaming; and,—because your high-flown gamesters hardly take

Umbrage at a factor’s elbow if the factor pays his stake,—

I was winked at in a circle where the company was choice,

Captain This and Major That, men high of colour, loud of voice,

Yet indulgent, condescending to the modest juvenile

Who not merely risked but lost his hard-earned guineas with a smile.

‘Down I sat to cards, one evening,—had for my antagonist

Somebody whose name’s a secret—you’ll know why—so, if you list,

Call him Cock o’ the Walk, my scarlet son of Mars from head to heel!

Play commenced: and, whether Cocky fancied that a clerk must feel

Quite sufficient honour came of bending over one green baize,

I the scribe with him the warrior,—guessed no penman dared to raise

Shadow of objection should the honour stay but playing end

More or less abruptly,—whether disinclined he grew to spend

Practice strictly scientific on a booby born to stare

At—not ask of—lace-and-ruffles if the hand they hide plays fair,—

Anyhow, I marked a movement when he bade me “Cut!”

‘I rose. “Such the new manœuvre, Captain? I’m a novice: knowledge grows.

What, you force a card, you cheat, Sir?”

‘Never did a thunder-clap Cause emotion, startle Thyrsis locked with

Chloe in his lap,

As my word and gesture (down I flung my cards to join the pack)

Fired the man of arms, whose visage, simply red before, turned black.

‘When he found his voice, he stammered “That expression once again!”

“Well, you forced a card and cheated!”

“Possibly a factor’s brain, Busied with his all-important balance of

accounts, may deem Weighing words superfluous trouble:

*cheat* to clerklly ears may seem Just the joke for friends to venture: but we

are not friends, you see! When a gentleman is joked with,—if he’s

good at repartee, He rejoins, as do I—Sirrah, on your knees,

withdraw in full! Beg my pardon, or be sure a kindly bullet

Lets in light and teaches manners to what brain it finds! Choose quick—

Have your life snuffed out or, kneeling, pray me trim yon candle-wick!”

“Well, you cheated!”

‘Then outbroke a howl from all the friends around.

To his feet sprang each in fury, fists were clenched and teeth were ground.

“End it! no time like the present! Captain, yours were our disgrace!

No delay, begin and finish! Stand back, leave the pair a space!

Let civilians be instructed: henceforth simply ply the pen,

Fly the sword! This clerk’s no swordsmen? Suit him with a pistol, then!

Even odds! A dozen paces ’twixt the most and least expert

Make a dwarf a giant’s equal: nay, the dwarf, if he’s alert,

Likelier hits the broader target!”



## CLIVE

'Up we stood accordingly. As they handed me the weapon, such was my soul's thirst to try Then and there conclusions with this bully, tread on and stamp out Every spark of his existence, that,—crept close to, curled about By that toying tempting teasing fool-finger's middle joint,— Don't you guess?—the trigger yielded. Gone my chance! and at the point Of such prime success moreover: scarce an inch above his head Went my ball to hit the wainscot. He was living, I was dead.

'Up he marched in flaming triumph— 'twas his right, mind!—up, within Just an arm's length. "Now, my clerkling," chuckled Cocky with a grin As the levelled piece quite touched me, "Now, Sir Counting-House, repeat That expression which I told you proved bad manners! Did I cheat?"

"Cheat you did, you knew you cheated, and, this moment, know as well. As for me, my homely breeding bids you—fire and go to Hell!"

'Twice the muzzle touched my forehead. Heavy barrel, flurried wrist, Either spoils a steady lifting. Thrice: then, "Laugh at Hell who list, I can't! God's no fable either. Did this boy's eye wink once? No! There's no standing him and Hell and God all three against me,—so, I did cheat!"

'And down he threw the pistol, out rushed—by the door Possibly, but, as for knowledge if by chimney, roof or floor, He effected disappearance—I'll engage no glance was sent That way by a single starer, such a blank astonishment Swallowed up their senses: as for speaking—mute they stood as mice.

'Mute not long, though! Such reaction, such a hubbub in a trice! "Rogue and rascal! Who'd have thought it? What's to be expected next, When His Majesty's Commission serves a sharper as pretext For . . . But where's the need of wasting time now? Nought requires delay: Punishment the Service cries for: let disgrace be winned away Publicly, in good broad daylight! Resignation? No, indeed Drum and fife must play the Rogue's March, rank and file be free to speed

Tardy marching on the rogue's part by appliance in the rear —Kicks administered shall right this wronged civilian,—never fear, Mister Clive, for—though a clerk—you bore yourself—suppose we say— Just as would beseem a soldier!"

"Gentlemen, attention—pray! First, one word!"

"I passed each speaker severally in review. When I had precise their number, names and styles, and fully knew Over whom my supervision thenceforth must extend,—why, then—

"Some five minutes since, my life lay—as you all saw, gentlemen— At the mercy of your friend there. Not a single voice was raised In arrest of judgment, not one tongue— before my powder blazed— Ventured 'Can it be the youngster blundered, really seemed to mark Some irregular proceeding? We conjecture in the dark, Guess at random,—still, for sake of fair play—what if for a freak, In a fit of absence,—such things have been!—if our friend proved weak —What's the phrase?—corrected fortune! Look into the case, at least!' Who dared interpose between the altar's victim and the priest? Yet he spared me! You eleven! Whosoever, all or each, To the disadvantage of the man who spared me, utters speech —To his face, behind his back,—that speaker has to do with me: Me who promise, if positions change and mine the chance should be, Not to imitate your friend and waive advantage!"

'Twenty-five Years ago this matter happened: and 'tis certain,' added Clive, 'Never, to my knowledge, did Sir Cocky have a single breath Breathed against him: lips were closed throughout his life, or since his death, For if he be dead or living I can tell no more than you. All I know is—Cocky had one chance more; how he used it,—grew Out of such unlucky habits, or relapsed, and back again Brought the late-ejected devil with a score more in his train,— That's for you to judge. Reprieval I procured, at any rate. Ugh—the memory of that minute's fear makes gooseflesh rise! Why prate

Longer? You've my story, there's your instance: fear I did, you see!

'Well'—I hardly kept from laughing—  
'if I see it, thanks must be  
Wholly to your Lordship's candour. Not  
that—in a common case—  
When a bully caught at cheating thrusts a  
pistol in one's face,  
I should underrate, believe me, such a trial  
to the nerve!

'Tis no joke, at one-and-twenty, for a  
youth to stand nor swerve.  
Fear I naturally look for—unless, of all  
men alive,

I am forced to make exception when I  
come to Robert Clive.  
Since at Arcot, Plassy, elsewhere, he and  
death—the whole world knows—  
Came to somewhat closer quarters.'

Quarters? Had we come to blows,  
Clive and I, you had not wondered—up  
he sprang so, out he rapped  
Such a round of oaths—no matter! I'll  
endeavour to adapt

To our modern usage words he—well,  
'twas friendly licence—flung

At me like so many fire-balls, fast as he  
could wag his tongue.

'You—a soldier? You—at Plassy? Yours  
the faculty to nick  
Instantaneously occasion when your foe,  
if lightning-quick,  
—At his mercy, at his malice,—has you,  
through some stupid inch  
Undefended in your bulwark? Thus laid  
open,—not to flinch

—That needs courage, you'll concede me.  
Then, look here! Suppose the man,  
Checking his advance, his weapon still  
extended, not a span

Distant from my temple,—curse him!—  
quietly had bade me "There!  
Keep your life, calumniator!—worthless  
life I freely spare:

Mine you freely would have taken—mur-  
dered me and my good fame  
Both at once—and all the better! Go, and  
thank your own bad aim

Which permits me to forgive you! What  
if, with such words as these,  
He had cast away his weapon? How  
should I have borne me, please?

Nay, I'll spare you pains and tell you.  
This, and only this, remained—  
Pick his weapon up and use it on myself.  
I so had gained

Sleep the earlier, leaving England prob-  
ably to pay on still  
Rent and taxes for half India, tenant at the  
Frenchman's will.'

'Such the turn,' said I, 'the matter takes  
with you? Then I abate

—No, by not one jot nor tittle,—of your  
act my estimate.

Fear—I wish I could detect there: courage  
fronts me, plain enough—

Call it desperation, madness—never mind!  
for here's in rough

Why, had mine been such a trial, fear had  
overcome disgrace.

True, disgrace were hard to bear: but such  
a rush against God's face

—None of that for me, Lord Plassy, since  
I go to church at times,

Say the creed my mother taught me!  
Many years in foreign climes

Rub some marks away—not all, though!  
We poor sinners reach life's brink,

Overlook what rolls beneath it, recklessly  
enough, but think

There's advantage in what's left us—  
ground to stand on, time to call

"Lord, have mercy!" ere we topple over  
—do not leap, that's all!

Oh, he made no answer,—re-absorbed  
into his cloud. I caught

Something like 'Yes—courage: only fools  
will call it fear.'

If aught  
Comfort you, my great unhappy hero  
Clive, in that I heard,

Next week, how your own hand dealt  
you doom, and uttered just the word

'Fearfully courageous!—this, be sure,  
and nothing else I groaned.

I'm no Clive, nor parson either: Clive's  
worst deed—we'll hope condoned.

### MULÉYKEH

If a stranger passed the tent of Hóseyñ, he  
cried 'A churl's!'

Or haply 'God help the man who has  
neither salt nor bread!'

—'Nay,' would a friend exclaim, 'he needs  
nor pity nor scorn

More than who spends small thought on  
the shore-sand, picking pearls,

—Holds but in light esteem the seed-sort,  
bears instead

On his breast a moon-like prize, some orb  
which of night makes morn.

'What if no flocks and herds enrich the son  
of Sinán?

They went when his tribe was mulct, ten  
thousand camels the due,

Blood-value paid perforce for a murder  
done of old.

"God gave them, let them go! But never  
since time began,

Muléykeh, peerless mare, owned master  
the match of you,

And you are my prize, my Pearl: I laugh  
at men's land and gold!"

## MULÉYKEH

'So in the pride of his soul laughs Hóseyn  
—and right, I say.

Do the ten steeds run a race of glory? Out-  
stripping all,

Ever Muléykeh stands first steed at the  
victor's staff.

Who started, the owner's hope, gets  
shamed and named, that day.

"Silence," or, last but one, is "The  
Cuffed," as we use to call

Whom the paddock's lord thrusts forth.  
Right, Hóseyn, I say, to laugh!

'Boasts he Muléykeh the Pearl?' the  
stranger replies: 'Be sure

On him I waste nor scorn nor pity, but  
lavish both

On Duhl the son of Sheybán, who withers  
away in heart

For envy of Hóseyn's luck. Such sickness  
admits no cure.

A certain poet has sung, and sealed the  
same with an oath,

"For the vulgar—flocks and herds! The  
Pearl is a prize apart."

Lo, Duhl the son of Sheybán comes riding  
to Hóseyn's tent,

And he casts his saddle down, and enters  
and 'Peace!' bids he.

'You are poor, I know the cause: my  
plenty shall mend the wrong.

'Tis said of your Pearl—the price of a  
hundred camels spent

In her purchase were scarce ill paid: such  
prudence is far from me

Who proffer a thousand. Speak! Long  
parley may last too long.'

Said Hóseyn 'You feed young beasts a  
many, of famous breed,

Slit-eared, unblemished, fat, true offspring  
of Múzenem:

There stumbles no weak-eyed she in the  
line as it climbs the hill,

But I love Muléykeh's face: her forefront  
whitens indeed

Like a yellowish wave's cream-crest. Your  
camels—go gaze on them!

Her fetlock is foam-splashed too. Myself  
am the richer still.'

A year goes by: lo, back to the tent again  
rides Duhl.

'You are open-hearted, ay—moist-handed,  
a very prince.

Why should I speak of sale? Be the mare  
your simple gift!

My son is pined to death for her beauty:  
my wife prompts "Fool,

Beg for his sake the Pearl! Be God the  
rewarder, since

God pays debts seven for one: who squan-  
ders on Him shows thrift."

Said Hóseyn 'God gives each man one life,  
like a lamp, then gives

That lamp due measure of oil: lamp  
lighted—hold high, wave wide

Its comfort for others to share! once  
quench it, what help is left?

The oil of your lamp is your son: I shine  
while Muléykeh lives.

Would I beg your son to cheer my dark if  
Muléykeh died?

It is life against life; what good avails to  
the life-bereft?'

Another year, and—hist! What craft is it  
Duhl designs?

He alights not at the door of the tent as he  
did last time,

But, creeping behind, he gropes his stealthy  
way by the trench

Half-round till he finds the flap in the  
folding, for night combines

With the robber—and such is he: Duhl,  
covetous up to crime,

Must wring from Hóseyn's grasp the  
Pearl, by whatever the wrench.

'He was hunger-bitten, I heard: I tempted  
with half my store,

And a gibe was all my thanks. Is he  
generous like Spring dew?

Account the fault to me who chaffered  
with such an one!

He has killed, to feast chance comers, the  
creature he rode: nay, more—

For a couple of singing-girls his robe has  
he torn in two:

I will beg! Yet I nowise gained by the tale  
of my wife and son.

'I swear by the Holy House, my head will  
I never wash

Till I filch his Pearl away. Fair dealing I  
tried, then guile,

And now I resort to force. He said we  
must live or die:

Let him die, then,—let me live! Be bold—  
but not too rash!

I have found me a peeping-place: breast,  
bury your breathing while

I explore for myself! Now, breathe! He  
deceived me not, the spy!

'As he said—there lies in peace Hóseyn—  
how happy! Beside

Stands tethered the Pearl: thrice winds her  
headstall about his wrist:

'Tis therefore he sleeps so sound—the  
moon through the roof reveals.

And, loose on his left, stands too that  
other, known far and wide,

Buhéyseh, her sister born: fleet is she yet  
ever missed

The winning tail's fire-flash a-stream past  
the thunderous heels.

'No less she stands saddled and bridled,  
this second, in case some thief  
Should enter and seize and fly with the  
first, as I mean to do.  
What then? The Pearl is the Pearl: once  
mount her we both escape.'  
Through the skirt-fold in glides Duhl,—  
so a serpent disturbs no leaf  
In a bush as he parts the twigs entwining a  
nest: clean through,  
He is noiselessly at his work: as he  
planned, he performs the rape.

He has set the tent-door wide, has buckled  
the girth, has clipped  
The headstall away from the wrist he  
leaves thrice bound as before,  
He springs on the Pearl, is launched on the  
desert like bolt from bow.  
Up starts our plundered man: from his  
breast though the heart be ripped,  
Yet his mind has the mastery: behold, in  
a minute more,  
He is out and off and away on Buhéyseh,  
whose worth we know!

And Hóseyn—his blood turns flame, he  
has learned long since to ride,  
And Buhéyseh does her part,—they gain  
—they are gaining fast  
On the fugitive pair, and Duhl has Ed-  
Dárraj to cross and quit,  
And to reach the ridge El-Sabán,—no  
safety till that be spied!  
And Buhéyseh is, bound by bound, but a  
horse-length off at last,  
For the Pearl has missed the tap of the heel,  
the touch of the bit.

She shortens her stride, she chafes at her  
rider the strange and queer:  
Buhéyseh is mad with hope—beat sister  
she shall and must  
Though Duhl, of the hand and heel so  
clumsy, she has to thank.  
She is near now, nose by tail—they are  
neck by croup—joy! fear!  
What folly makes Hóseyn shout 'Dog  
Duhl, Damned son of the Dust,  
Touch the right ear and press with your  
foot my Pearl's left flank!'

And Duhl was wise at the word, and  
Muléykeh as prompt perceived  
Who was urging redoubled pace, and to  
hear him was to obey,  
And a leap indeed gave she, and vanished  
for evermore.  
And Hóseyn looked one long last look as  
who, all bereaved,  
Looks, fain to follow the dead so far as the  
living may:  
Then he turned Buhéyseh's neck slow  
homeward, weeping sore.

And, lo, in the sunrise, still sat Hóseyn  
upon the ground  
Weeping: and neighbours came, the  
tribesmen of Bénu-Asád  
In the vale of green Er-Rass, and they  
questioned him of his grief;  
And he told from first to last how, serpent-  
like, Duhl had wound  
His way to the nest, and how Duhl rode  
like an ape, so bad!  
And how Buhéyseh did wonders, yet Pearl  
remained with the thief.

And they jeered him, one and all: 'Poor  
Hóseyn is crazed past hope!  
How else had he wrought himself his ruin,  
in fortune's spite?  
To have simply held the tongue were a task  
for a boy or girl,  
And here were Muléykeh again, the eyed  
like an antelope,  
The child of his heart by day, the wife of  
his breast by night!'  
'And the beaten in speed!' wept Hóseyn:  
'You never have loved my Pearl.'

## PIETRO OF ABANO

*Petrus Aponensis*—there was a magician!  
When that strange adventure happened,  
which I mean to tell my hearers,  
Nearly had he tried all trades—beside  
physician,  
Architect, astronomer, astrologer,—or  
worse:  
How else, as the old books warrant, was  
he able,  
All at once, through all the world, to prove  
the promptest of appearers  
Where was prince to cure, tower to build  
as high as Babel,  
Star to name or sky-sign read,—yet pouch,  
for pains, a curse?

—Curse: for when a vagrant,—foot-sore,  
travel-tattered,  
Now a young man, now an old man, Turk  
or Arab, Jew or Gipsy,—  
Proffered folk in passing—O for pay, what  
mattered?—  
'I'll be doctor, I'll play builder, star I'll  
name—sign read!  
Soon as prince was cured, tower built, and  
fate predicted,  
'Who may you be?' came the question;  
when he answered, '*Petrus ipse*,'  
'Just as we divined!' cried folk—'A wretch  
convicted  
Long ago of dealing with the devil—you  
indeed!'

So, they cursed him roundly, all his  
labour's payment,  
Motioned him—the convalescent prince  
would—to vacate the presence:

## PIETRO OF ABANO

Babylonians plucked his beard and tore  
his raiment,  
Drove him from that tower he built: while,  
had he peered at stars,  
Town howled 'Stone the quack who styles  
our Dog-star—Sirius!'  
Country yelled 'Aroint the churl who pro-  
phesies we take no pleasure  
Under vine and fig-tree, since the year's  
delirious,  
Bears no crop of any kind,—all through  
the planet Mars!'

Straightway would the whilom youngster  
grow a grisard,  
Or, as case might hap, the hoary eld drop  
off and show a stripling.  
Town and country groaned—indebted to  
a wizard!  
'Curse—nay, kick and cuff him—fit re-  
quital of his pains!  
Gratitude in word or deed were wasted  
truly!  
Rather make the Church amends by cry-  
ing out on, cramping, crippling  
One who, on pretence of serving man,  
serves duly  
Man's arch foe: not ours, be sure, but  
Satan's—his the gains!'

Peter grinned and bore it, such disgraceful  
usage:  
Somehow, cuffs and kicks and curses  
seem ordained his like to suffer:  
Prophet's pay with Christians, now as in  
the Jew's age,  
Still is—stoning: so, he meekly took his  
wage and went,  
—Safe again was found ensconced in those  
old quarters,  
Padua's blackest blindest by-street,—none  
the worse, nay, somewhat tougher:  
'Calculating,' quoth he, 'soon I join the  
martyrs,  
Since, who magnify my lore on burning me  
are bent.'

Therefore, on a certain evening, to his  
alley  
Peter slunk, all bruised and broken, sore  
in body, sick in spirit,  
Just escaped from Cairo where he launched  
a galley  
Needing neither sails nor oars nor help of  
wind or tide,

<sup>1</sup> 'Studiando le mie cifre col compasso,  
Rilevo che sarò presto sotterra,  
Perchè del mio saper si fa gran chiasso,  
E gl'ignoranti m'hanno mosso guerra.'

Said to have been found in a well at Abano in the  
last century. They were extemporaneously Englished  
thus: not as Father Prout chose to prefer them:—

Studying my ciphers with the compass,  
I reckon—I soon shall be below-ground;  
Because of my lore folk make great rumpus,  
And war on myself makes each dull rogue  
round.—R. B.

—Needing but the fume of fire to set  
a-flying  
Wheels like mad which whirled you quick  
—North, South, where'er you pleased  
require it,—  
That is—would have done so had not  
priests come prying,  
Broke his engine up and bastinadoed him  
beside.

As he reached his lodging, stopped there  
unmolested,  
(Neighbours feared him, urchins fled him,  
few were bold enough to follow)  
While his fumbling fingers tried the lock  
and tested  
Once again the queer key's virtue, oped the  
sullen door,—  
Someone plucked his sleeve, cried 'Master,  
pray your pardon!  
Grant a word to me who patient wait you  
in your archway's hollow!  
Hard on you men's hearts are: be not your  
heart hard on  
Me who kiss your garment's hem, O Lord  
of magic lore!

'Mage—say I, who no less, scorning tittle-  
tattle,  
To the vulgar give no credence when they  
prate of Peter's magic,  
Deem his art brews tempest, hurts the  
crops and cattle,  
Hinders fowls from laying eggs and worms  
from spinning silk,  
Rides upon a he-goat, mounts at need a  
broomstick:  
While the price he pays for this (so turns to  
comic what was tragic)  
Is—he may not drink—dreads like the  
Day of Doom's tick—  
One poor drop of sustenance ordained  
mere men—that's milk!

'Tell such tales to Padua! Think me no  
such dullard!  
Not from these benighted parts did I  
derive my breath and being!  
I am from a land whose cloudless skies are  
coloured  
Livelier, suns orb largelier, airs seem in-  
cense,—while, on earth—  
What, instead of grass, our fingers and our  
thumbs cull,  
Proves true moly! sounds and sights there  
help the body's hearing, seeing,  
Till the soul grows godlike: brief,—you  
front no numbscull  
Shaming by ineptitude the Greece that  
gave him birth!

'Mark within my eye its iris mystic-  
lettered—  
That's my name! and note my ear—its  
swan-shaped cavity, my emblem!

Mine's the swan-like nature born to fly  
unfettered  
Over land and sea in search of knowledge  
—food for song.  
Art denied the vulgar! Geese grow fat on  
barley,  
Swans require ethereal provend, undesir-  
ous to resemble 'em—  
Soar to seek Apollo,—favoured with a  
parley  
Such as, Master, you grant me—who will  
not hold you long.

'Leave to learn to sing—for that your  
swan petitions:  
Master, who possess the secret, say not  
nay to such a suitor!  
All I ask is—bless mine, purest of ambi-  
tions!  
Grant me leave to make my kind wise, free,  
and happy! How?  
Just by making me—as you are mine—  
their model!  
Geese have goose-thoughts: make a swan  
their teacher first, then co-adjutor,—  
Let him introduce swan-notions to each  
noddle,—  
Geese will soon grow swans, and men  
become what I am now!

'That's the only magic—had but fools  
discernment,  
Could they probe and pass into the solid  
through the soft and seeming!  
Teach me such true magic—now and no  
adjournment!  
Teach your art of making fools subserve  
the man of mind!  
Magic is the power we men of mind should  
practise,  
Draw fools to become our drudges, docile  
henceforth, never dreaming—  
While they do our hests for fancied gain—  
the fact is  
What they toil and toil to get proves false-  
hood: truth's behind!

'See now! you conceive some fabric—say,  
a mansion  
Meet for monarch's pride and pleasure:  
this is truth—a thought has fired you,  
Made you fain to give some cramped con-  
cept expansion,  
Put your faculty to proof, fulfil your  
nature's task.  
First you fascinate the monarch's self: he  
fancies  
He it was devised the scheme you execute  
as he inspired you:  
He in turn sets slaving insignificances  
Toiling, moiling till your structure stands  
there—all you ask!

'Soon the monarch's known for what he  
was—a ninny:  
Soon the rabble-rout leave labour, take  
their work-day wage and vanish:  
Soon the late puffed bladder, pricked,  
shows lank and skinny—  
"Who was its inflator?" ask we, "whose  
the giant lungs?"  
*Petri en pulmones!* What though men  
prove ingrates?  
Let them—so they stop at crucifixion—  
buffet, ban and banish!  
Peter's power's apparent: human praise  
—its din grates  
Harsh as blame on ear unused to aught  
save angels' tongues.

'Ay, there have been always, since our  
world existed,  
Mages who possessed the secret—needed  
but to stand still, fix eye  
On the foolish mortal: straight was he  
enlisted  
Soldier, scholar, servant, slave—no matter  
for the style!  
Only through illusion; ever what seemed  
profit—  
Love or lucre—justified obedience to the  
*Ipse dixi:*  
Work done—palace reared from pave-  
ment up to soffit—  
Was it strange if builders smelt out cheat-  
ing all the while?

'Let them pelt and pound, bruise, bray  
you in a mortar!  
What's the odds to you who seek reward  
of quite another nature?  
You've enrolled your name where sages  
of your sort are,  
—Michael of Constantinople, Hans of  
Halberstadt!  
Nay and were you nameless, still you've  
your conviction  
You it was and only you—what signifies  
the nomenclature?—  
Ruled the world in fact, though how you  
ruled be fiction  
Fit for fools: true wisdom's magic you—  
if e'er man—had't!

'But perhaps you ask me "Since each  
ignoramus  
While he profits by such magic persecutes  
the benefactor,  
What should I expect but—once I render  
famous  
You as Michael, Hans and Peter—just one  
ingrate more?  
If the vulgar prove thus, whatsoe'er the  
pelf be,  
Pouched through my beneficence—and  
doom me dungeoned, chained, or  
racked, or

## PIETRO OF ABANO

Fairly burned outright—how grateful will  
yourself be  
When, his secret gained, you match your  
—master just before?"

'That's where I await you! Please, revert  
a little!  
What do folk report about you if not this  
—which, though chimeric,  
Still, as figurative, suits you to a tittle—  
That,—although the elements obey your  
nod and wink,  
Fades or flowers the herb you chance to  
smile or sigh at,  
While your frown bids earth quake palled  
by obscuration atmospheric,—  
Brief, although through nature nought  
resists your *fiat*,  
There's yet one poor substance mocks  
you—milk you may not drink!

'Figurative language! Take my explana-  
tion!  
Fame with fear, and hate with homage,  
these your art procures in plenty.  
All's but daily dry bread: what makes  
moist the ration?  
Love, the milk that sweetens man his  
meal—alas, you lack:  
I am he who, since he fears you not, can  
love you.  
Love is born of heart not mind, *de corde  
natus haud de mente*;  
Touch my heart and love's yours, sure as  
shines above you  
Sun by day and star by night though earth  
should go to wrack!

'Stage by stage you lift me—kiss by kiss I  
hallow  
Whose but your dear hand my helper,  
punctual as at each new impulse  
I approach my aim? Shell chipped, the  
eaglet callow  
Needs a parent's pinion-push to quit the  
eyrie's edge:  
But once fairly launched forth, denizen of  
ether,  
While each effort sunward bids the blood  
more freely through each limb pulse,  
Sure the parent feels, as gay they soar to-  
gether,  
Fully are all pains repaid when love re-  
deems its pledge!

Then did Peter's tristful visage lighten  
somewhat,  
Vent a watery smile as though inveterate  
mistrust were thawing.  
'Well, who knows?' he slow broke silence.  
'Mortals—come what  
Come there may—are still the dupes of  
hope there's luck in store.

Many scholars seek me, promise mounts  
and marvels:

Here stand I to witness how they step  
'twixt me and clapperclawing!  
Dry bread,—that I've gained me: truly I  
should starve else:  
But of milk, no drop was mine! Well,  
shuffle cards once more!

At the word of promise thus implied, our  
stranger—  
What can he but cast his arms, in rapture  
of embrace, round Peter?  
'Hold! I choke!' the mage grunts. 'Shall  
I in the manger  
Any longer play the dog? Approach, my  
calf, and feed!  
*Bene* . . . won't you wait for grace?' But  
sudden incense  
Wool-white, serpent-solid, curled up—  
perfume growing sweet and sweeter  
Till it reached the young man's nose and  
seemed to win sense  
Soul and all from out his brain through  
nostril: yes, indeed!

Presently the young man rubbed his eyes.  
'Where am I?  
Too much bother over books! Some  
reverie has proved amusing.  
What did Peter prate of? 'Faith, my brow  
is clammy!  
How my head throbs, how my heart  
thumps! Can it be I swooned?  
Oh, I spoke my speech out—cribbed from  
Plato's tractate,  
Dosed him with "the Fair and Good,"  
swore—Dog of Egypt—I was choos-  
ing  
Plato's way to serve men! What's the  
hour? Exact eight!  
Home now, and to-morrow never mind  
how Plato mooned!

'Peter has the secret! Fair and Good are  
products  
(So he said) of Foul and Evil: one must  
bring to pass the other.  
Just as poisons grow drugs, steal through  
sundry odd ducts  
Doctors name, and ultimately issue safe  
and changed.  
You'd abolish poisons, treat disease with  
dainties  
Such as suit the sound and sane? With all  
such kickshaws vain you potter!  
Arsenic's the stuff puts force into the faint  
eyes,  
Opium sets the brain to rights—by cark  
and care deranged.

'What, he's safe within door?—would  
escape—no question—  
Thanks, since thanks and more I owe, and  
mean to pay in time befitting.

What most presses now is—after night's digestion,  
 Peter, of thy precepts!—promptest practice of the same.  
 Let me see! The wise man, first of all, scorns riches:  
 But to scorn them must obtain them: none believes in his permitting  
 Gold to lie ungathered: who picks up, then pitches  
 Gold away—philosophizes: none disputes his claim.

'So with worldly honours: 'tis by abdicating,  
 Incontestably he proves he could have kept the crown discarded.  
 Sulla cuts a figure, leaving off dictating: Simpletons laud private life? "The grapes are sour," laugh we.  
 So, again—but why continue? All's tumultuous  
 Here: my head's a-whirl with knowledge! Speedily shall be rewarded  
 He who taught me! Greeks prove ingrates? So insult you us?  
 When your teaching bears its first-fruits, Peter—wait and see!'

As the word, the deed proved; ere a brief year's passage,  
 Fop—that fool he made the jokes on—now he made the jokes for, *gratias*:  
 Hunks—that hoarder, long left lonely in his crass age—  
 Found now one appreciative deferential friend:  
 Powder-paint-and-patch, Hag Jezebel—recovered,  
 Strange to say, the power to please, got courtship till she cried *Jam satis*!  
 Fop be-flattered, Hunks be-friended, Hag be-lovered—  
 Nobody o'erlooked, save God—he soon attained his end.

As he lounged at ease one morning in his villa,  
 (Hag's the dowry) estimated (Hunks' bequest) his coin in coffer,  
 Mused on how a fool's good word (Fop's word) could fill a  
 Social circle with his praise, promote him man of mark,—  
 All at once—'An old friend fain would see your Highness!'  
 There stood Peter, skeleton and scarecrow, plain writ *Phi-lo-so-pher*  
 In the woe-worn face—for yellowness and dryness,  
 Parchment—with a pair of eyes—one hope their feeble spark.

'Did I counsel rightly? Have you, in accordance,  
 Prospered greatly, dear my pupil? Sure, at just the stage I find you,  
 When your hand may draw me forth from the mad war-dance  
 Savages are leading round your master—'down, not dead.  
 Padua wants to burn me: baulk them, let me linger  
 Life out—rueful though its remnant—hid in some safe hole behind you!  
 Prostrate here I lie: quick, help with but a finger  
 Lest I house in safety's self—a tombstone o'er my head!

'Lodging, bite and sup, with—now and then—a copper  
 —Alms for any poorer still, if such there be,—is all my asking.  
 Take me for your bedesman,—nay, if you think proper,  
 Menial merely,—such my perfect passion for repose!  
 Yes, from out your plenty Peter craves a pittance  
 —Leave to thaw his frozen hands before the fire whereat you're basking!  
 Double though your debt were, grant this boon—remittance  
 He proclaims of obligation: 'tis himself that owes!'

'Venerated Master—can it be, such treatment  
 Learning meets with, magic fails to guard you from, by all appearance?  
 Strange! for, as you entered,—what the famous feat meant,  
 I was full of,—why you reared that fabric, Padua's boast.  
 Nowise for man's pride, man's pleasure, did you slyly  
 Raise it, but man's seat of rule whereby the world should soon have clearance  
 (Happy world) from such a rout as now so vilely  
 Handles you—and hampers me, for which I grieve the most.

'Since if it got wind you now were my familiar,  
 How could I protect you—nay, defend myself against the rabble?  
 Wait until the mob, now masters, willy-nilly are  
 Servants as they should be: then has gratitude full play!  
 Surely this experience shows how unbecomingly  
 'Tis that minds like mine should rot in ease and plenty. Geese may gabble,



## PIETRO OF ABANO

Gorge, and keep the ground: but swans  
are soon for quitting  
Earthly fare—as fain would I, your swan,  
if taught the way.

‘Teach me, then, to rule men, have them  
at my pleasure!

Solely for their good, of course,—impart  
a secret worth rewarding,  
Since the proper life’s-prize! Tantalus’s  
treasure

Aught beside proves, vanishes and leaves  
no trace at all.

Wait awhile, nor press for payment pre-  
maturely!

Over-haste defrauds you. Thanks! since,  
—even while I speak,—discarding

Sloth and vain delights, I learn how—  
swiftly, surely,—

Magic sways the sceptre, wears the crown  
and wields the ball!

‘Gone again—what, is he? ‘Faith, he’s  
soon disposed of!

Peter’s precepts work already, put within  
my lump their leaven!

Ay, we needs must don glove would we  
pluck the rose—doff

Silken garment would we climb the tree  
and take its fruit.

Why sharp thorn, rough rind? To keep  
unviolated

Either prize! We garland us, we mount  
from earth to feast in heaven,

Just because exist what once we estimated  
Hindrances which, better taught, as helps  
we now compute.

‘Foolishly I turned disgusted from my  
fellows!

Pits of ignorance—to fill, and heaps of  
prejudice—to level—

Multitudes in motley, whites and blacks  
and yellows—

What a hopeless task it seemed to disci-  
pline the host!

Now I see my error. Vices act like virtues  
—Not alone because they guard—sharp

thorns—the rose we first dishevel,  
Not because they scrape, scratch—rough

rind—through the dirt-shoes  
Bare feet cling to bole with, while the half-  
moon’d boot we boast.

‘No, my aim is nobler, more disinterested!  
Man shall keep what seemed to thwart

him, since it proves his true assistance,  
Leads to ascertaining which head is the

best head,  
Would he crown his body, rule its mem-  
bers—lawless else.

Ignorant the horse stares, by deficient  
vision

Takes a man to be a monster, lets him  
mount, then, twice the distance

Horse could trot unriden, gallops—  
dream Elysian!—

Dreaming that his dwarfish guide’s a  
giant,—jockeys tell’s.’

Brief, so worked the spell, he promptly had  
a riddance:

Heart and brain no longer felt the pricks  
which passed for conscience-scruples:

Free henceforth his feet,—*Per Bacco*, how  
they did dance

Merrily through lets and checks that  
stopped the way before!

Politics the prize now,—such adroit ad-  
viser,

Opportune suggester, with the tact that  
triples and quadruples

Merit in each measure,—never did the  
Kaiser

Boast a subject such a statesman, friend,  
and something more!

As he, up and down, one noonday, paced  
his closet

—Council o’er, each spark (his hint) blown  
flame, by colleagues’ breath ap-  
plauded,

Strokes of statecraft hailed with ‘*Salomo  
si nösset!*’

(His the nostrum)—every throw for luck  
come double-six,—

As he, pacing, hugged himself in satisfac-  
tion,

Thump—the door went. ‘What, the Kai-  
ser? By none else were I defrauded

Thus of well-earned solace. Since ’tis  
fate’s exaction,—

Enter, Liege my Lord! Ha, Peter, you  
here? *Teneor vix!*’

‘Ah, Sir, none the less, contain you, nor  
wax irate!

You so lofty, I so lowly,—vast the space  
which yawns between us!

Still, methinks, you—more than ever—at  
a high rate

Needs must prize poor Peter’s secret since  
it lifts you thus.

Grant me now the boon whereat before  
you boggled!

Ten long years your march has moved—  
one triumph—(though e’s short)—

*hacténus*,

While I down and down disastrously have  
joggled

Till I pitch against Death’s door, the true  
*Nec Ultra Plus*.

‘Years ago—some ten ’tis—since I sought  
for shelter,

Craved in your whole house a closet, out  
of all your means a comfort.

Now you soar above these: as is gold to  
spelter

So is power—you urged with reason—  
paramount to wealth.

Power you boast in plenty: let it grant me  
refuge!

Houseroom now is out of question: find  
for me some stronghold—some fort—

Privacy wherein, immured, shall this blind  
deaf huge

Monster of a mob let stay the soul I'd save  
by stealth!

'Ay, for all too much with magic have I  
tampered!

—Lost the world, and gained, I fear, a  
certain place I'm to describe loth!

Still, if prayer and fasting tame the pride  
long pampered,

Mercy may be mine: amendment never  
comes too late.

How can I amend beset by cursers,  
kickers?

Pluck this brand from out the burning!  
Once away, I take my Bible-oath,

Never more—so long as life's weak lamp-  
flame flickers—

No, not once I'll tease you, but in silence  
bear my fate!

'Gently, good my Genius, Oracle un-  
erring!

Strange now! can you guess on what—as  
in you peeped—it was I pondered?

You and I are both of one mind in pre-  
ferring

Power to wealth, but—here's the point—  
what sort of power, I ask?

Ruling men is vulgar, easy and ignoble:  
Rid yourself of conscience, quick you have

at beck and call the fond herd.

But who wields the crozier, down may  
fling the crow-bill:

That's the power I covet now; soul's sway  
o'er souls—my task!

“Well but,” you object, “you have it,  
who by glamour

Dress up lies to look like truths, mask folly  
in the garb of reason:

Your soul acts on theirs, sure, when the  
people clamour,

Hold their peace, now fight now fondle,—  
earwigged through the brains.”

Possibly! but still the operation's mun-  
dane,

Grosser than a taste demands which—  
craving manna—kecks at peason—

Power o'er men by wants material: why  
should one deign

Rule by sordid hopes and fears—a grunt  
for all one's pains?

'No, if men must praise me, let them praise  
to purpose!

Would we move the world, not earth but  
heaven must be our fulcrum—*pou-  
sto!*

Thus I seek to move it: Master, why inter-  
pose—

Baulk my climbing close on what's the  
ladder's topmost round?

Statecraft 'tis I step from: when by priest-  
craft hoisted

Up to where my foot may touch the highest  
rung which fate allows toe,

Then indeed ask favour! On you shall be  
foisted

No excuse: I'll pay my debt, each penny  
of the pound!

'Ho, my knaves without there! Lead this  
worthy downstairs!

No farewell, good Paul—nay, Peter—  
what's your name remembered

rightly?

Come, he's humble: out another would  
have founced—airs

Suitors often give themselves when our  
sort bow them forth.

Did I touch his rags? He surely kept his  
distance:

Yet, there somehow passed to me from  
him—where'er the virtue might lie—

Something that inspires my soul—Oh, by  
assistance

Doubtlessly of Peter!—still, he's worth  
just what he's worth!

“'Tis my own soul soars now: soaring—  
how? By crawling!

I'll to Rome, before Rome's feet the tem-  
poral-supreme lay prostrate!

“Hands” (I'll say) “proficient once in  
pulling, hauling

This and that way men as I was minded  
—feet now clasp!”

Ay, the Kaiser's self has wrung them in  
his fervour!

Now—they only sue to slave for Rome,  
nor at one doit the cost rate.

Rome's adopted child—no bone, no  
muscle, nerve or

Sinew of me but I'll strain, though out my  
life I gasp!

As he stood one evening proudly—(he had  
traversed

Rome on horseback—peerless pageant!—  
claimed the Lateran as new Pope)—

Thinking 'All's attained now! Pontiff!  
Who could have erst

Dreamed of my advance so far when, some  
ten years ago,

I embraced devotion, grew from priest to  
bishop,

Gained the Purple, bribed the Conclave,  
got the Two-thirds, saw my coop ope,

Came out—what Rome hails me! O were  
there a wish-shop,

Not one wish more would I purchase—  
lord of all below!

## PIETRO OF ABANO

'Ha!—who dares intrude now—puts aside the arras?

What, old Peter, here again, at such a time, in such a presence?

Satan sends this plague back merely to embarrass

Me who enter on my office—little needing you!

'Faith, I'm touched myself by age, but you look Tithon!

Were it vain to seek of you the sole prize left—rejuvenescence?

Well, since flesh is grass which Time must lay his scythe on,

Say your say and so depart and make no more ado!

Peter faltered—coughing first by way of prologue—

'Holiness, your help comes late: a death at ninety little matters.

Padua, build poor Peter's pyre now, on log roll log,

Burn away—I've lived my day! Yet here's the sting in death—

I've an author's pride: I want my Book's survival:

See, I've hid it in my breast to warm me mid the rags and tatters!

Save it—tell next age your Master had no rival!

Scholar's debt discharged in full, be "Thanks" my latest breath!

'Faugh, the frowzy bundle—scribblings harum-scarum

Scattered o'er a dozen sheepskins! What's the name of this farrago?

Ha—"Conciliator Differentiarum"—

Man and book may burn together, cause the world no loss!

Stop—what else? A tractate—eh, "*De Speciebus*

*Ceremonialis Ma-gi-æ*?" I dream sure!

Hence, away, go, Wizard,—quick avoid me! Vain you clasp my knee, buss

Hand that bears the Fisher's ring or foot that boasts the Cross!

'Help! The old magician clings like an octopus!

Ah, you rise now—fuming, fretting, frowning, if I read your features!

Frown, who cares? We're Pope—once Pope, you can't unpope us!

Good—you muster up a smile: that's better! Still so brisk?

All at once grown youthful? But the case is plain! Ass—

Here I dally with the fiend, yet know the Word—compels all creatures

Earthly, heavenly, hellish. *Apagē, Sathanas! Dicam verbum Salomonis—*

When—whisk!—

What was changed? The stranger gave his eyes a rubbing:

There smiled Peter's face turned back a moment at him o'er the shoulder,

As the black door shut, bang! 'So he 'scapes a drubbing!'

(Quoth a boy who, unespied, had stopped to hear the talk.)

'That's the way to thank these wizards when they bid men

*Benedicite!* What ails you? You, a man, and yet no bolder?

Foreign Sir, you look but foolish!' '*Idmen, idmen!*'

Groaned the Greek. 'O Peter, cheese at last I know from chalk!'

Peter lived his life out, menaced yet no martyr,

Knew himself the mighty man he was—such knowledge all his guerdon,

Left the world a big book—people but in part err

When they style a true *Scientia Com-pen-di-um*:

'*Admirationem incutit*' they sourly Smile, as fast they shut the folio which

myself was somehow spurred on

Once to ope: but love—life's milk which daily, hourly,

Blockheads lap—O Peter, still thy taste of love's to come!

Greek, was your ambition likewise doomed to failure?

True, I find no record you wore purple, walked with axe and fasces,

Played some antipope's part: still, friend, don't turn tail, you're

Certain, with but these two gifts, to gain earth's prize in time!

Cleverness uncurbed by conscience—if you ransacked

Peter's book you'd find no potent spell like these to rule the masses;

Nor should want example, had I not to transact

Other business. Go your ways, you'll thrive! So ends my rhyme.

When these parts Tiberius,—not yet Cæsar,—travelled,

Passing Padua, he consulted Padua's Oracle of Geryon

(God three-headed, thrice wise) just to get unravelled

Certain tangles of his future. 'Fling at Abano

Golden dice,' it answered: 'dropt within the fount there,

Note what sum the pips present!' And still we see each die, the very one,

Turn up, through the crystal,—read the whole account there  
Where 'tis told by Suetonius,—each its highest throw.

Scarce the sportive fancy-dice I fling show  
'Venus:'  
Still—for love of that dear land which I so oft in dreams revisit—  
I have—oh, not sung! but lilted (as—between us—  
Grows my lazy custom) this its legend.  
What the lilt?



DOCTOR —

A RABBI told me: On the day allowed  
Satan for carping at God's rule, he came,  
Fresh from our earth, to brave the angel-crowd.

'What is the fault now?' 'This I find to blame:  
Many and various are the tongues below,  
Yet all agree in one speech, all proclaim  
"Hell has no might to match what earth can show:  
Death is the strongest-born of Hell, and yet  
Stronger than Death is a Bad Wife, we know."

'Is it a wonder if I fume and fret—  
Robbed of my rights, since Death am I,  
' and mine  
The style of Strongest? Men pay Nature's debt

'Because they must at my demand; decline  
To pay it henceforth surely men will please,  
Provided husbands with bad wives combine

'To baffle Death. Judge between me and these!'

'Thyself shalt judge. Descend to earth in shape  
Of mortal, marry, drain from froth to lees

'The bitter draught, then see if thou escape  
Concluding, with men sorrowful and sage,  
A Bad Wife's strength Death's self in vain would ape!'

How Satan entered on his pilgrimage,  
Conformed himself to earthly ordinance,  
Wived and played husband well from youth to age

Intrepidly—I leave untold, advance  
Through many a married year until I reach  
A day when—of his father's countenance

The very image, like him too in speech  
As well as thought and deed,—the union's fruit  
Attained maturity. 'I needs must teach

'My son a trade: but trade, such son to suit,  
Needs seeking after. He a man of war?  
Too cowardly! A lawyer wins repute—

'Having to toil and moil, though—both which are  
Beyond this sluggard. There's Divinity:  
No, that's my own bread-winner—that be far

'From my poor offspring! Physic? Ha, we'll try  
If this be practicable. Where's my wit?  
Asleep?—since, now I come to think . . .  
Ay, ay!

'Hither, my son! Exactly have I hit  
On a profession for thee. *Medicus*—  
Behold, thou art appointed! Yea, I spit

'Upon thine eyes, bestow a virtue thus  
That henceforth not this human form I wear

Shalt thou perceive alone, but—one of us

'By privilege—thy fleshly sight shall bear  
Me in my spirit-person as I walk  
The world and take my prey appointed there.

'Doctor once dubbed—what ignorance shall baulk  
Thy march triumphant? Diagnose the gout  
As cholic, and prescribe it cheese for chalk—

'No matter! All's one: cure shall come about  
And win thee wealth—fees paid with such a roar  
Of thanks and praise alike from lord and lout

'As never stunned man's ears on earth before.

"How may this be?" Why, that's my sceptic! Soon  
Truth will corrupt thee, soon thou doubt'st no more!

## DOCTOR —

'Why is it I bestow on thee the boon  
Of recognizing me the while I go  
Invisibly among men, morning, noon

'And night, from house to house, and—  
quick or slow—  
Take my appointed prey? They summon  
thee  
For help, suppose: obey the summons!  
so!

'Enter, look round! Where's Death?  
Know—I am he,  
Satan who work all evil: I who bring  
Pain to the patient in whate'er degree.

'I, then, am there: first glance thine eye  
shall fling  
Will find me—whether distant or at hand,  
As I am free to do my spiriting.

'At such mere first glance thou shalt under-  
stand  
Wherefore I reach no higher up the room  
Than door or window, when my form is  
scanned.

'How'er friends' faces please to gather  
gloom,  
Bent o'er the sick,—how'er himself de-  
sponds,—  
In such case Death is not the sufferer's  
doom.

'Contrariwise, do friends rejoice my bonds  
Are broken, does the captive in his turn  
Crow "Life shall conquer"? Nip these  
foolish fronds

'Of hope a-sprout, if haply thou discern  
Me at the head—my victim's head, be  
sure!  
Forth now! This taught thee, little else to  
learn!'

And forth he went. Folk heard him ask  
demure  
'How do you style this ailment? (There  
he peeps,  
My father, through the arras!) Sirs, the  
cure

'Is plain as A. B. C.! Experience steeps  
Blossoms of pennyroyal half an hour  
In sherris. *Sumat!*—Lo, how sound he  
sleeps—

'The subject you presumed was past the  
power  
Of Galen to relieve! Or else 'How's  
this?  
Why call for help so tardily? Clouds lour  
'Portentously indeed, Sirs! (Nought's  
amiss:  
He's at the bed-foot merely.) Still, the  
storm  
May pass averted—not by quacks, I wis

'Like you, my masters! You, forsooth,  
perform  
A miracle? Stand, sciolists, aside!  
Blood, ne'er so cold, at ignorance grows  
warm!'

Which boasting by result was justified,  
Big as might words be: whether drugged  
or left  
Drugless, the patient always lived, not  
died.

Great the heir's gratitude, so nigh bereft  
Of all he prized in this world: sweet the  
smile  
Of disconcerted rivals: 'Cure?—say, theft  
'From Nature in despite of Art—so style  
This off-hand kill-or-cure work! You did  
much,  
I had done more: folk cannot wait awhile!'

But did the case change? was it—'Scarcely  
such  
The symptoms as to warrant our recourse  
To your skill, Doctor! Yet since just a  
touch

'Of pulse, a taste of breath, has all the force  
With you of long investigation claimed  
By others,—tracks an ailment to its source

'Intuitively,—may we ask unblamed  
What from this pimple you prognosti-  
cate?'

'Death!' was the answer, as he saw and  
named

The coucher by the sick man's head. 'Too  
late  
You send for my assistance. I am bold  
Only by Nature's leave, and bow to Fate!

'Besides, you have my rivals: lavish gold!  
How comfortably quick shall life depart  
Cosseted by attentions manifold!

'One day, one hour ago, perchance my art  
Had done some service. Since you have  
yourselves  
Chosen—before the horse—to put the  
cart,

'Why, Sirs, the sooner that the sexton  
delves  
Your patient's grave, the better! How you  
stare  
—Shallow, for all the deep books on your  
shelves!

'Fare you well, fumlbers!' Do I need  
declare  
What name and fame, what riches recom-  
pensed  
The Doctor's practice? Never anywhere  
Such an adept as daily evidenced  
Each new vaticination! Oh, not he  
Like dolts who dallied with their scruples  
fenced

With subterfuge, nor gave out frank and free

Something decisive! If he said 'I save  
The patient,' saved he was: if 'Death will  
be

'His portion,' you might count him dead.

Thus brave,  
Behold our worthy, sans competitor  
Throughout the country, on the architrave

Of Glory's temple golden-lettered for  
Machaon *redivivus*! So, it fell  
That, of a sudden, when the Emperor

Was smit by sore disease, I need not tell  
If any other Doctor's aid was sought  
To come and forthwith make the sick  
Prince well.

'He will reward thee as a monarch ought.  
Not much imports the malady; but then,  
He clings to life and cries like one dis-  
traught

'For thee—who, from a simple citizen,  
Mayst look to rise in rank,—nay, haply  
wear

A medal with his portrait,—always when

'Recovery is quite accomplished. There!  
Pass to the presence!' Hardly has he  
crossed

The chamber's threshold when he halts,  
aware

Of who stands sentry by the head. All's  
lost.

'Sire, nought avails my art: you near the  
goal,

And end the race by giving up the ghost.'

'How?' cried the monarch: 'Names upon  
your roll

Of half my subjects rescued by your skill—  
Old and young, rich and poor—crowd  
cheek by jowl

'And yet no room for mine? Be saved I  
will!

Why else am I earth's foremost potentate?  
Add me to these and take as fee your fill

'Of gold—that point admits of no debate  
Between us: save me, as you can and  
must,—

Gold, till your gown's pouch cracks be-  
neath the weight!

This touched the Doctor. 'Truly a home-  
thrust,

Parent, you will not parry! Have I dared  
Entreat that you forego the meal of dust

'—Man that is snake's meat—when I saw  
prepared

Your daily portion? Never! Just this once,  
Go from his head, then,—let his life be  
spared!'

Whisper met whisper in the gruff response  
'Fool, I must have my prey: no inch I  
budge

From where thou see'st me thus myself  
ensconce.'

'Ah,' moaned the sufferer, 'by thy look I  
judge

Wealth fails to tempt thee: what if honours  
prove

More efficacious? Nought to him I grudge

'Who saves me. Only keep my head above  
The cloud that's creeping round it—I'll  
divide

My empire with thee! No? What's left  
but—love?

'Does love allure thee? Well then, take  
as bride

My only daughter, fair beyond belief!  
Save me—to-morrow shall the knot be  
tied!'

'Father, you hear him! Respite ne'er so  
brief

Is all I beg: go now and come again  
Next day, for aught I care: respect the grief

'Mine will be if thy first-born sues in vain!'  
'Fool, I must have my prey!' was all he  
got

In answer. But a fancy crossed his brain.

'I have it! Sire, methinks a meteor shot  
Just now across the heavens and neutral-  
ized

Jove's salutary influence: 'neath the blot

'Plumb are you placed now: well that I  
surmised

The cause of failure! Knaves, reverse the  
bed!'

'Stay!' groaned the monarch, 'I shall be  
capsized—

'Jolt—jolt—my heels uplift where late my  
head

Was lying—sure I'm turned right round at  
last!

What do you say now, Doctor?' Nought  
he said:

For why? With one brisk leap the Antic  
passed

From couch-foot back to pillow,—as be-  
fore,

Lord of the situation. Long agast

The Doctor gazed, then 'Yet one trial  
more

Is left me' inwardly he uttered. 'Shame  
Upon thy flinty heart! Do I implore

'This trifling favour in the idle name  
Of mercy to the moribund? I plead  
The cause of all thou dost affect: my aim

## DOCTOR —

'Befits my author! Why would I succeed?  
Simply that by success I may promote  
The growth of thy pet virtues—pride and  
greed.

'But keep thy favours!—curse thee! I  
devote

Henceforth my service to the other side.  
No time to lose: the rattle's in his throat.

'So,—not to leave one last resource un-  
tried,—

Run to my house with all haste, some-  
body!

Bring me that knobstick thence, so often  
plied

'With profit by the astrologer—shall I  
Disdain its help, the mystic Jacob's-Staff?  
Sire, do but have the courage not to die

'Till this arrive! Let none of you dare  
laugh!

Though rugged its exterior, I have seen  
That implement work wonders, send the  
chaff

'Quick and thick flying from the wheat—  
I mean,

By metaphor, a human sheaf it thrashed  
Flail-like. Go fetch it! Or—a word be-  
tween

'Just you and me, friend!—go bid, un-  
abashed,

My mother, whom you'll find there, bring  
the stick

Herself—herself, mind!' Out the lackey  
dashed

Zealous upon the errand. Craft and trick  
Are meat and drink to Satan: and he  
grinned

—How else?—at an excuse so politic

For failure: scarce would Jacob's-Staff  
rescind

Fate's firm decree! And ever as he neared  
The agonizing one, his breath like wind

Froze to the marrow, while his eye-flash  
seared

Sense in the brain up: closelier and more  
close

Pressing his prey, when at the door ap-  
peared

—Who but his Wife the Bad? Whereof  
one dose,

One grain, one mite of the medicament,  
Sufficed him. Up he sprang. One word,  
too gross

To soil my lips with,—and through ceiling  
went

Somehow the Husband. 'That a storm's  
dispersed

We know for certain by the sulphury scent!

'Hail to the Doctor! Who but one so  
versed

In all Dame Nature's secrets had pre-  
scribed

The staff thus opportunely? Style him  
first

'And foremost of physicians!' 'I've im-  
bibed

Elixir surely,' smiled the prince,—'have  
gained

New lease of life. Dear Doctor, how you  
bribed

'Death to forego me, boots not: you've  
obtained

My daughter and her dowry. Death, I've  
heard,

Was still on earth the strongest power that  
reigned,

'Except a Bad Wife!' Whereunto de-  
murred

Nowise the Doctor, so refused the fee  
—No dowry, no bad wife!

'You think absurd  
This tale?'—the Rabbi added: 'True, our  
Talmud

Boasts sundry such: yet—have our elders  
erred

In thinking there's some water there, not  
all mud?'

I tell it, as the Rabbi told it me.

## PAN AND LUNA

*Si credere dignum est.*—*Georgic.* iii. 390.

O WORTHY of belief I hold it was,  
Virgil, your legend in those strange three  
lines!

No question, that adventure came to pass  
One black night in Arcadia: yes, the pines,  
Mountains and valleys mingling made one

mass

Of black with void black heaven: the  
earth's confines,

The sky's embrace, — below, above,  
around,

All hardened into black without a bound.

Fill up a swart stone chalice to the brim  
With fresh-squeezed yet fast-thickening

poppy-juice:  
See how the sluggish jelly, late a-swim,  
Turns marble to the touch of who would

loose

The solid smooth, grown jet from rim to  
rim,

By turning round the bowl! So night can  
fuse

Earth with her all-comprising sky. No  
less,

Light, the least spark, shows air and  
emptiness.

And thus it proved when—diving into space,

Strip of all vapour, from each web of mist  
Utterly film-free—entered on her race

The naked Moon, full-orbed antagonist  
Of night and dark, night's dowry: peak to base,

Upstart mountains, and each valley,  
kissed

To sudden life, lay silver-bright: in air  
Flew she revealed, Maid-Moon with limbs  
all bare.

Still as she fled, each depth—where refuge  
seemed—

Opening a lone pale chamber, left distinct  
Those limbs: mid still-retreating blue, she  
teemed

Herself with whiteness,—virginal, uncinct  
By any halo save what finely gleamed

To outline not disguise her: heaven was  
linked

In one accord with earth to quaff the joy,  
Drain beauty to the dregs without alloy.

Whereof she grew aware. What help?  
When, lo,

A succourable cloud with sleep lay dense:  
Some pine-tree-top had caught it sailing  
slow,

And tethered for a prize: in evidence  
Captive lay fleece on fleece of piled-up  
snow

Drowsily patient: flake-heaped how or  
whence,

The structure of that succourable cloud,  
What matter? Shamed she plunged into  
its shroud.

Orbed—so the woman-figure poets call  
Because of rounds on rounds—that apple-  
shaped

Head which its hair binds close into a ball  
Each side the curving ears—that pure un-  
draned

Pout of the sister paps—that . . . Once for  
all,

Say—her consummate circle thus escaped  
With its innumerable circlelets, sank ab-  
sorbed,

Safe in the cloud—O naked Moon full-  
orbed!

But what means this? The downy swathes  
combine,

Conglobe, the smothery coy-caressing  
stuff

Curdles about her! Vain each twist and  
twine

Those lithe limbs try, encroached on by  
a fluff

Fitting as close as fits the dented spine  
Its flexile ivory outside-flesh: enough!

The plumy drifts contract, condense, con-  
stringe,

Till she is swallowed by the feathery  
springe.

As when a pearl slips lost in the thin foam  
Churned on a sea-shore, and, o'er-frothed,  
conceits

Herself safe-housed in Amphitrite's  
dome,—

If, through the bladdery wave-worked  
yeast, she meets

What most she loathes and leaps from,—  
elf from gnome

No glazier,—finds that safest of retreats  
Bubble about a treacherous hand wide  
ope

To grasp her—(divers who pick pearls so  
grope)—

So lay this Maid-Moon clasped around  
and caught

By rough red Pan, the god of all that tract:  
He it was schemed the snare thus subtly  
wrought

With simulated earth-breath, — wool-  
tufts packed

Into a billowy wrappage. Sheep far-  
sought

For spotless shearings yield such: take the  
fact

As learned Virgil gives it,—how the breed  
Whitens itself for ever: yes, indeed!

If one forefather ram, though pure as  
chalk

From tinge on fleece, should still display  
a tongue

Black 'neath the beast's moist palate,  
prompt men baulk

The propagating plague: he gets no young:  
They rather slay him,—sell his hide to  
caulk

Ships with, first steeped in pitch,—nor  
hands are wrung

In sorrow for his fate: protected thus,  
The purity we love is gained for us.

So did Girl-moon, by just her attribute  
Of unmatched modesty betrayed, lie  
trapped,

Bruised to the breast of Pan, half-god half-  
brute,

Raked by his bristly boar-sword while he  
lapped

—Never say, kissed her! that were to pol-  
lute

Love's language—which moreover proves  
unapt

To tell how she recoiled—as who finds  
thorns

Where she sought flowers—when, feeling,  
she touched—horns!



## PAN AND LUNA

Then—does the legend say?—first moon-  
eclipse  
Happened, first swooning-fit which  
puzzled sore  
The early sages? Is that why she dips  
Into the dark, a minute and no more,  
Only so long as serves her while she rips  
The cloud's womb through and, faultless  
as before,  
Pursues her way? No lesson for a maid  
Left she, a maid herself thus trapped, be-  
trayed?

Ha, Virgil? Tell the rest, you! 'To the  
deep  
Of his domain the wildwood, Pan forth-  
with  
Called her, and so she followed'—in her  
sleep,  
Surely?—'by no means spurning him.'  
The myth  
Explain who may! Let all else go, I keep  
—As of a ruin just a monolith—

Thus much, one verse of five words, each  
a boon:  
Arcadia, night, a cloud, Pan, and the  
moon.

'TOUCH him ne'er so lightly, into song he  
broke:  
Soil so quick-receptive,—not one feather-  
seed,  
Not one flower-dust fell but straight its  
fall awoke  
Vitalizing virtue: song would song succeed  
Sudden as spontaneous—prove a poet-  
soul!'

Indeed?  
Rock's the song-soil rather, surface hard  
and bare:  
Sun and dew their mildness, storm and  
frost their rage  
Vainly both expend,—few flowers awaken  
there:  
Quiet in its cleft broods—what the after age  
Knows and names a pine, a nation's heri-  
tage.

## JOCOSERIA

1883

WANTING is—what?  
Summer redundant,  
Blueness abundant,  
—Where is the blot?

Beamy the world, yet a blank all the same,  
—Framework which waits for a picture to  
frame:

What of the leafage, what of the flower?  
Roses embowering with nought they em-  
bower!  
Come then, complete incompleteness, O  
corner,  
Pant through the blueness, perfect the  
summer!

Breathe but one breath  
Rose-beauty above,  
And all that was death  
Grows life, grows love,  
Grows love!

### DONALD

'WILL you hear my story also,  
—Huge Sport, brave adventure in  
plenty?'  
The boys were a band from Oxford,  
The oldest of whom was twenty.

The bothy we held carouse in  
Was bright with fire and candle;  
Tale followed tale like a merry-go-round  
Whereof Sport turned the handle.

In our eyes and noses—turf-smoke:  
In our ears a tune from the trivet,  
Whence 'Boiling, boiling,' the kettle sang,  
'And ready for fresh Glenlivet.'

So, feat capped feat, with a vengeance:  
Truths, though,—the lads were loyal:  
'Grouse, five score brace to the bag!  
Deer, ten hours' stalk of the Royal!'

Of boasting, not one bit, boys!  
Only there seemed to settle  
Somehow above your curly heads,  
—Plain through the singing kettle,

Palpable through the cloud,  
As each new-puffed Havanna  
Rewarded the teller's well-told tale,  
This vaunt 'To Sport—Hosanna!

'Hunt, fish, shoot,  
Would a man fulfil life's duty!  
Not to the bodily frame alone  
Does Sport give strength and beauty.

'But character gains in—courage?  
Ay, Sir, and much beside it!  
You don't sport, more's the pity:  
You soon would find, if you tried it,

'Good sportsman means good fellow,  
Sound-hearted he, to the centre;  
Your mealy-mouthed mild milksops  
—There's where the rot can enter!

'There's where the dirt will breed,  
The shabbiness Sport would banish!  
Oh no, Sir, no! In your honoured case  
All such objections vanish.

'Tis known how hard you studied:  
A Double-First—what, the jigger!  
Give me but half your Latin and Greek,  
I'll never again touch trigger!

'Still, tastes are tastes, allow me!  
Allow, too, where there's keenness  
For Sport, there's little likelihood  
Of a man's displaying meanness!'

So, put on my mettle, I interposed.  
'Will you hear my story?' quoth I.

'Never mind how long since it happened,  
I sat, as we sit, in a bothy;

'With as merry a band of mates, too,  
Undergrads all on a level:  
(One's a Bishop, one's gone to the Bench,  
And one's gone—well, to the Devil.)

'When, lo, a scratching and tapping!  
In hobbled a ghastly visitor.  
Listen to just what he told us himself  
—No need of our playing inquisitor!'

Do you happen to know in Ross-shire  
Mount . . . Ben . . . but the name scarce  
matters:  
Of the naked fact I am sure enough,  
Though I clothe it in rags and tatters.

You may recognise Ben by description;  
Behind him—a moor's immenseness:  
Up goes the middle mount of a range,  
Fringed with its firs in denseness.

Rimming the edge, its fir-fringe, mind!  
For an edge there is, though narrow;  
From end to end of the range, a stripe  
Of path runs straight as an arrow.

And the mountaineer who takes that path  
Saves himself miles of journey  
He has to plod if he crosses the moor  
Through heather, peat and burnie.

But a mountaineer he needs must be,  
For, look you, right in the middle  
Projects bluff Ben—with an end in *icht*—  
Why planted there, is a riddle:

Since all Ben's brothers little and big  
Keep rank, set shoulder to shoulder,  
And only this burliest out must bulge  
Till it seems—to the beholder

From down in the gully,—as if Ben's  
breast  
To a sudden spike diminished,  
Would signify to the boldest foot  
'All further passage finished!'

Yet the mountaineer who sidles on  
And on to the very bending,  
Discovers, if heart and brain be proof,  
No necessary ending.

Foot up, foot down, to the turn abrupt  
Having trod, he, there arriving,  
Finds—what he took for a point was  
breadth,  
A mercy of Nature's contriving.

So, he rounds what, when 'tis reached,  
proves straight,  
From one side gains the other:  
The wee path widens—resume the march,  
And he foils you, Ben my brother!

But Donald—(that name, I hope, will  
do)—  
I wrong him if I call 'foiling'  
The tramp of the callant, whistling the  
while  
As blithe as our kettle's boiling.

He had dared the danger from boyhood  
up,  
And now,—when perchance was wait-  
ing  
A lass at the brig below,—'twixt mount  
And moor would he stand debating?

Moreover this Donald was twenty-five,  
A glory of bone and muscle:  
Did a fiend dispute the right of way,  
Donald would try a tussle.

Lightsomely marched he out of the broad  
On to the narrow and narrow;  
A step more, rounding the angular rock,  
Reached the front straight as an arrow.

He stepped it, safe on the ledge he stood,  
When—whom found he full-facing?  
What fellow in courage and wariness too,  
Had scouted ignoble pacing,

And left low safety to timid mates,  
And made for the dread dear danger,  
And gained the height where—who could  
guess  
He would meet with a rival ranger?

'Twas a gold-red stag that stood and  
stared,  
Gigantic and magnific,  
By the wonder—ay, and the peril—struck  
Intelligent and pacific:

For a red deer is no fallow deer  
Grown cowardly through park-feeding;  
He batters you like a thunderbolt  
If you brave his haunts unheeding.

I doubt he could hardly perform *volte-face*  
Had valour advised discretion:  
You may walk on a rope, but to turn on a  
rope  
No Blondin makes profession.

## DONALD

Yet Donald must turn, would pride permit,  
Though pride ill brooks retiring:

Each eyed each—mute man, motionless beast—  
Less fearing than admiring.

These are the moments when quite few sense,

To meet some need as novel,  
Springs up in the brain: it inspired resource:

—'Nor advance nor retreat but—grovel!'

And slowly, surely, never a whit  
Relaxing the steady tension  
Of eye-stare which binds man to beast,—  
By an inch and inch declension,

Sank Donald sidewise down and down:  
Till flat, breast upwards, lying  
At his six-foot length, no corpse more still,  
—'If he cross me! The trick's worth trying.'

Minutes were an eternity;  
But a new sense was created  
In the stag's brain too; he resolves! Slow,  
sure,  
With eye-stare unabated,

Feelingly he extends a foot  
Which tastes the way ere it touches  
Earth's solid and just escapes man's soft,  
Nor hold of the same unclutches

Till its fellow foot, light as a feather whisk,  
Lands itself no less finely:  
So a mother removes a fly from the face  
Of her babe asleep supinely.

And now 'tis the haunch and hind foot's turn  
—That's hard: can the beast quite raise it?

Yes, traversing half the prostrate length,  
His hoof-tip does not graze it.

Just one more lift! But Donald, you see,  
Was sportsman first, man after:  
A fancy lightened his caution through,  
—He well-nigh broke into laughter.

'It were nothing short of a miracle!  
Unrivalled, unexampled—  
All sporting feats with this feat matched  
Were down and dead and trampled!'

The last of the legs as tenderly  
Follows the rest: or never  
Or now is the time! His knife in reach,  
And his right-hand loose—how clever!

For this can stab up the stomach's soft,  
While the left-hand grasps the pastern.  
A rise on the elbow, and—now's the time  
Or never: this turn's the last turn!

I shall dare to place myself by God  
Who scanned—for He does—each  
feature  
Of the face thrown up in appeal to Him  
By the agonizing creature.

Nay, I hear plain words: 'Thy gift brings this!'

Up he sprang, back he staggered,  
Over he fell, and with him our friend  
—At following game no laggard.

Yet he was not dead when they picked next day

From the gully's depth the wreck of him;

His fall had been stayed by the stag beneath  
Who cushioned and saved the neck of him.

But the rest of his body—why, doctors said,  
Whatever could break was broken;  
Legs, arms, ribs, all of him looked like a toast

In a tumbler of port-wine soaked.

'That your life is left you, thank the stag!'  
Said they when—the slow cure ended—  
They opened the hospital door, and thence  
—Strapped, spliced, main fractures mended,

And minor damage left wisely alone,—  
Like an old shoe clouted and cobbled,  
Out—what went in a Goliath well-nigh,—  
Some half of a David hobbled.

'You must ask an alms from house to house:

Sell the stag's head for a bracket,  
With its grand twelve times—I'd buy it myself—  
And use the skin for a jacket!'

He was wiser, made both head and hide  
His win-penny: hands and knees on,  
Would manage to crawl—poor crab—by the roads  
In the misty stalking-season.

And if he discovered a bothy like this,  
Why, harvest was sure: folk listened.  
He told his tale to the lovers of Sport:  
Lips twitched, cheeks glowed, eyes glistened.

And when he had come to the close, and spread

His spoils for the gazers' wonder,  
With 'Gentlemen, here's the skull of the stag

I was over, thank God, not under!'

The company broke out in applause;  
'By Jingo, a lucky cripple!

Have a munch of grouse and a hunk of bread,

And a tug, besides, at our tippie!

And 'There's my pay for your pluck!' cried This,  
 'And mine for your jolly story!' Cried That, while T'other—but he was drunk—  
 Hiccapped 'A trump, a Tory!' I hope I gave twice as much as the rest;  
 For, as Homer would say, 'within grate  
 Though teeth kept tongue,' my whole soul growled  
 'Rightly rewarded,—Ingrate!'

## SOLOMON AND BALKIS

SOLOMON King of the Jews and the Queen of Sheba Balkis  
 Talk on the ivory throne, and we well may conjecture their talk is  
 Solely of things sublime: why else has she sought Mount Zion,  
 Climbed the six golden steps, and sat betwixt lion and lion?

She proves him with hard questions: before she has reached the middle  
 He smiling supplies the end, straight solves them riddle by riddle;  
 Until, dead-beaten at last, there is left no spirit in her,  
 And thus would she close the game whereof she was first beginner:

'O wisest thou of the wise, world's marvel and well-nigh monster,  
 One crabbed question more to construe or *vulgo* conster!  
 Who are those, of all mankind, a monarch of perfect wisdom  
 Should open to, when they knock at *spheteron do*—that's his dome?'

The King makes tart reply: 'Whom else but the wise his equals  
 Should he welcome with heart and voice?—since, king though he be, such weak walls  
 Of circumstance—power and pomp—divide souls each from other  
 That whoso proves kingly in craft I needs must acknowledge my brother.

'Come poet, come painter, come sculptor, come builder—whate'er his condition,  
 Is he prime in his art? We are peers! My insight has pierced the partition  
 And hails—for the poem, the picture, the statue, the building—my fellow!  
 Gold's gold though dim in the dust: court-polish soon turns it yellow.

'But tell me in turn, O thou to thy weakling sex superior,  
 That for knowledge has travelled so far yet seemest no whit the wearier,—

Who are those, of all mankind, a queen like thyself, consummate  
 In wisdom, should call to her side with an affable "Up hither, come, mate!"'

'The Good are my mates—how else? 'Why doubt it?' the Queen upbided:  
 'Sure even above the Wise,—or in travel my eyes have idled,—  
 I see the Good stand plain: be they rich, poor, shrewd or simple,  
 If Good they only are. . . . Permit me to drop my wimple!'

And in that bashful jerk of her body, she—peace, thou scoffer!—  
 Jostled the King's right-hand stretched courteously help to proffer,  
 And so disclosed a portent: all unaware the Prince eyed  
 The Ring which bore the Name—turned outside now from inside!

The truth-compelling Name!—and at once 'I greet the Wise—Oh,  
 Certainly welcome such to my court—with this proviso:  
 The building must be my temple, my person stand forth the statue,  
 The picture my portrait prove, and the poem my praise—you cat, you!'

But Solomon nonplussed? Nay! 'Be truthful in turn!' so bade he:  
 'See the Name, obey its hest!' And at once subjoins the lady  
 —'Provided the Good are the young, men strong and tall and proper,  
 Such servants I straightway enlist,—which means . . . ' but the blushes stop her.

'Ah, Soul,' the Monarch sighed, 'that wouldst soar yet ever crawlst,  
 How comes it thou canst discern the greatest yet choose the smallest,  
 Unless because heaven is far, where wings find fit expansion,  
 While creeping on all-fours suits, suffices the earthly mansion?

'Aspire to the Best! But which? There are Bests and Bests so many,  
 With a *habitat* each for each, earth's Best as much Best as any!  
 On Lebanon roots the cedar—soil lofty, yet stony and sandy—  
 While hyssop, of worth in its way, on the wall grows low but handy.

'Above may the Soul spread wing, spurn body and sense beneath her;  
 Below she must condescend to plodding unbuoyed by aether.

## SOLOMON AND BALKIS

In heaven I yearn for knowledge, account  
all else inanity;  
On earth I confess an itch for the praise of  
fools—that's Vanity.

'It is nought, it will go, it can never pre-  
sume above to trouble me;  
But here,—why, it toys and tickles and  
teases, how'er I redouble me  
In a doggedest of endeavours to play the  
indifferent. Therefore,  
Suppose we resume discourse? Thou hast  
travelled thus far; but wherefore?

'Solely for Solomon's sake, to see whom  
earth styles Sagest?'  
Through her blushes laughed the Queen.  
'For the sake of a Sage? The gay jest!  
On high, be communion with Mind—  
there, Body concerns not Balkis:  
Down here,—do I make too bold? Sage  
Solomon,—one fool's small kiss!'

## CRISTINA AND MONALDESCHI

Ah, but how each loved each, Marquis!  
Here's the gallery they trod  
Both together, he her god,  
She his idol,—lend your rod,  
Chamberlain!—ay, there they are—'*Quis  
Separabit?*'—plain those two  
Touching words come into view,  
Apposite for me and you:

Since they witness to incessant  
Love like ours: King Francis, he—  
Diane the adored one, she—  
Prototypes of you and me.  
Everywhere is carved her Crescent  
With his Salamander-sign—  
Flame-fed creature: flame benign  
To itself or, if malign,

Only to the meddling curious,  
—So, be warned, Sir! Where's my  
head?  
How it wanders! What I said  
Merely meant—the creature, fed  
Thus on flame, was scarce injurious  
Save to fools who woke its ire,  
Thinking fit to play with fire,  
'Tis the Crescent you admire?

Then, be Diane! I'll be Francis.  
Crescents change,—true!—wax and  
wane,  
Woman-like: male hearts retain  
Heat nor, once warm, cool again.  
So, we figure—such our chance is—  
I as man and you as . . . What?  
Take offence? My Love forgot  
He plays woman, I do not?

I—the woman? See my habit,  
Ask my people! Anyhow,  
Be we what we may, one vow  
Binds us, male or female. Now,—  
Stand, Sir! Read! '*Quis separabit?*'  
Half a mile of pictured way  
Past these palace-walls to-day  
Traversed, this I came to say.

You must needs begin to love me;  
First I hated, then, at best,  
—Have it so!—I acquiesced;  
Pure compassion did the rest.  
From below thus raised above me,  
Would you, step by step, descend,  
Pity me, become my friend,  
Like me, like less, loathe at end?

That's the ladder's round you rose by!  
That—my own foot kicked away,  
Having raised you: let it stay,  
Serve you for retreating? Nay.  
Close to me you climbed: as close by,  
Keep your station, though the peak  
Reached proves somewhat bare and  
bleak!  
Woman's strong if man is weak.

Keep here, loving me forever!  
Love's lock, gesture, speech, I claim;  
Act love, lie love, all the same—  
Play as earnest were our game!  
Lonely I stood long: 'twas clever  
When you climbed, before men's eyes,  
Spurned the earth and scaled the skies,  
Gained my peak and grasped your prize.

Here you stood, then, to men's wonder;  
Here you tire of standing? Kneel!  
Cure what giddiness you feel,  
This way! Do your senses reel?  
Not unlikely! What rolls under?  
Yawning death in yon abyss  
Where the waters whirl and hiss  
Round more frightful peaks than this.

Should my buffet dash you thither . . .  
But be sage! No watery grave  
Needs await you: seeming brave  
Kneel on safe, dear timid slave!  
You surmised, when you climbed hither,  
Just as easy were retreat  
Should you tire, conceive unmeet  
Longer patience at my feet?

Me as standing, you as stooping,—  
Who arranged for each the pose?  
Lest men think us friends turned foes,  
Keep the attitude you chose!  
Men are used to this same grouping—  
I and you like statues seen.  
You and I, no third between,  
Kneel and stand! That makes the scene.

## CRISTINA AND MONALDESCHI

### MARY WOLLSTONECRAFT AND FUSELI

Mar it—and one buffet . . . Pardon!  
Needless warmth—wise words in waste!  
'Twas prostration that replaced  
Kneeling, then? A proof of taste.  
Crouch, not kneel, while I mount guard on  
Prostrate love—become no wail,  
No estray to waves that chafe  
Disappointed—love's so safe!

Waves that chafe? The idlest fancy!  
Peaks that scare? I think we know  
Walls enclose our sculpture: so  
Grouped, we pose in Fontainebleau.  
Up now! Wherefore hesitancy?  
Arm in arm and cheek by cheek,  
Laugh with me at waves and peak!  
Silent still? Why, pictures speak.

See, where Juno strikes Ixion,  
Primate speaks plainly! Pooh—  
Rather, Florentine Le Roux!  
I've lost head for who is who—  
So it swims and wanders! Fie on  
What still proves the female! Here,  
By the staircase!—for we near  
That dark 'Gallery of the Deer.'

Look me in the eyes once! Steady!  
Are you faithful now as erst  
On that eve when we two first  
Vowed at Avon, blessed and cursed  
Faith and falsehood? Pale already?  
Forward! Must my hand compel  
Entrance—this way? Exit—well,  
Somehow, somewhere. Who can tell?

What if to the self-same place in  
Rustic Avon, at the door  
Of the village church once more,  
Where a tombstone paves the floor  
By that holy-water basin  
You appealed to—'As, below,  
This stone hides its corpse, e'en so  
I your secrets hide'? What ho!

Friends, my four! You, Priest, confess  
him!  
I have judged the culprit there:  
Execute my sentence! Care  
For no mail such cowards wear!  
Done, Priest? Then, absolve and bless  
him!  
Now—you three, stab thick and fast,  
Deep and deeper! Dead at last?  
Thanks, friends—Father, thanks!  
Aghast?

What one word of his confession  
Would you tell me, though I lured  
With that royal crown abjured  
Just because its bars immured  
Love too much? Love burst compression,  
Fled free, finally confessed  
All its secrets to that breast  
Whence . . . let Avon tell the rest!

OH but is it not hard, Dear?

Mine are the nerves to quake at a mouse:  
If a spider drops I shrink with fear:  
I should die outright in a haunted house;  
While for you—did the danger dared bring  
help—

From a lion's den I could steal his whelp,  
With a serpent round me, stand stock-still,  
Go sleep in a churchyard,—so would will  
Give me the power to dare and do  
Valiantly—just for you!

Much amiss in the head, Dear,  
I toil at a language, tax my brain  
Attempting to draw—the scratches here!  
I play, play, practise and all in vain:  
But for you—if my triumph brought you  
pride,

I would grapple with Greek Plays till I  
died,  
Paint a portrait of you—who can tell?  
Work my fingers off for your 'Pretty well':  
Language and painting and music too,  
Easily done—for you!

Strong and fierce in the heart, Dear,  
With—more than a will—what seems  
a power

To pounce on my prey, love outbroke here  
In flame devouring and to devour.  
Such love has laboured its best and worst  
To win me a lover; yet, last as first,  
I have not quickened his pulse one beat,  
Fixed a moment's fancy, bitter or sweet:  
Yet the strong fierce heart's love's labour's  
due,  
Utterly lost, was—you!

### ADAM, LILITH, AND EVE

ONE day it thundered and lightened.  
Two women, fairly frightened,  
Sank to their knees, transformed, trans-  
fixed,  
At the feet of the man who sat betwixt;  
And 'Mercy!' cried each—if I tell the  
truth  
Of a passage in my youth!

Said This: 'Do you mind the morning  
I met your love with scorning?  
As the worst of the venom left my lips,  
I thought "If, despite this lie, he strips  
The mask from my soul with a kiss—I  
crawl  
His slave,—soul, body and all!"'

Said That: 'We stood to be married;  
The priest, or someone, tarried;  
"If Paradise-door prove locked?" smiled  
you;  
I thought, as I nodded, smiling too,  
"Did one, that's away, arrive—nor late  
Nor soon should unlock Hell's gate!"'

## ADAM, LILITH, AND EVE

It ceased to lighten and thunder.  
Up started both in wonder,  
Looked round and saw that the sky was  
clear,  
Then laughed 'Confess you believed us,  
Dear!'  
'I saw through the joke!' the man replied  
They re-seated themselves beside.

## IXION

HIGH in the dome, suspended, of Hell, sad  
triumph, behold us!  
Here the revenge of a God, there the  
amends of a Man.  
Whirling forever in torment, flesh once  
mortal, immortal  
Made—for a purpose of hate—able to  
die and revive,  
Pays to the uttermost pang, then, newly  
for payment replenished,  
Doles out—old yet young—agonies  
ever afresh;  
Whence the result above me: torment is  
bridged by a rainbow,—  
Tears, sweat, blood,—each spasm,  
ghastly once, glorified now.  
Wrung, by the rush of the wheel ordained  
my place of reposing,  
Off in a sparklike spray,—flesh become  
vapour thro' pain,—  
Flies the bestowment of Zeus, soul's  
vaunted bodily vesture,  
Made that his feats observed gain the  
approval of Man,—  
Flesh that he fashioned with sense of the  
earth and the sky and the ocean,  
Framed should pierce to the star, fitted  
to pore on the plant,—  
All, for a purpose of hate, re-framed, re-  
fashioned, re-fitted  
Till, consummate at length,—lo, the  
employment of sense!  
Pain's mere minister now to the soul, once  
pledged to her pleasure—  
Soul, if untrammelled by flesh, unappre-  
hensive of pain!  
Body, professed soul's slave, which serv-  
ing beguiled and betrayed her,  
Made things false seem true, cheated  
thro' eye and thro' ear,  
Lured thus heart and brain to believe in  
the lying reported,—  
Spurn but the traitorous slave, utter-  
most atom, away,  
What should obstruct soul's rush on the  
real, the only apparent?  
Say I have erred,—how else? Was I  
Ixion or Zeus?  
Foiled by my senses I dreamed; I doubt-  
less awaken in wonder:  
This proves shine, that—shade? Good  
was the evil that seemed?

Shall I, with sight thus gained, by torture  
be taught I was blind once?  
Sisuphos, teaches thy stone—Tantalos,  
teaches thy thirst  
Aught which unaided sense, purged pure,  
less plainly demonstrates?  
No, for the past was dream: now that  
the dreamers awake,  
Sisuphos scouts low fraud, and to Tantalos  
treason is folly.  
Ask of myself, whose form melts on the  
murderous wheel,  
What is the sin which throe and throe  
prove sin to the sinner!  
Say the false charge was true,—thus do  
I expiate, say,  
Arrogant thought, word, deed,—mere  
man who conceived me godlike,  
Sat beside Zeus, my friend—knelt be-  
fore Herè, my love!  
What were the need but of pitying power  
to touch and disperse it,  
\* Film-work—eye's and ear's—all the  
distraction of sense?  
How should the soul not see, not hear,—  
perceive and as plainly  
Render, in thought, word, deed, back  
again truth—not a lie?  
'Ay, but the pain is to punish thee!' Zeus,  
once more, for a pastime,  
Play the familiar, the frank! Speak and  
have speech in return!  
I was of Thessaly king, there ruled and a  
people obeyed me:  
Mine to establish the law, theirs to obey  
it or die:  
Wherefore? Because of the good to the  
people, because of the honour  
Thence accruing to me, king, the king's  
law was supreme.  
What of the weakling, the ignorant crimi-  
nal? Not who, excuseless,  
Breaking my law braved death, know-  
ing his deed and its due—  
Nay, but the feeble and foolish, the poor  
transgressor, of purpose  
No whit more than a tree, born to erect-  
ness of bole,  
Palm or plane or pine, we laud if lofty,  
columnar—  
Loathe if athwart, askew,—leave to the  
axe and the flame!  
Where is the vision may penetrate earth  
and beholding acknowledge  
Just one pebble at root ruined the  
straightness of stem?  
Whose fine vigilance follows the sapling,  
accounts for the failure,  
—Here blew wind, so it bent: there the  
snow lodged, so it broke?  
Also the tooth of the beast, bird's bill,  
mere bite of the insect  
Gnawed, gnarled, warped their worst:  
passive it lay to offence.

King—I was man, no more: what I recognized faulty I punished,  
 Laying it prone: be sure, more than a man had I proved,  
 Watch and ward o'er the sapling at birth-time had saved it, nor simply  
 Owned the distortion's excuse,—hindered it wholly: nay, more—  
 Even a man, as I sat in my place to do judgment, and pallid  
 Criminals passing to doom shuddered away at my foot,  
 Could I have probed thro' the face to the heart, read plain a repentance,  
 Crime confessed fools' play, virtue ascribed to the wise,  
 Had I not stayed the consignment to doom, not dealt the renewed ones  
 Life to retrace the past, light to retrieve the misdeed?  
 Thus had I done, and thus to have done much more it behoves thee,  
 Zeus who madest man—flawless or faulty, thy work!  
 What if the charge were true, as thou moutheest,—Ixion the cherished  
 Minion of Zeus grew vain, vied with the godships and fell,  
 Forfeit thro' arrogance? Stranger! I clothed, with the grace of our human,  
 Inhumanity—gods, natures I likened to ours.  
 Man among men I had borne me till gods forsooth must regard me  
 —Nay, must approve, applaud, claim as a comrade at last,  
 Summoned to enter their circle, I sat—their equal, how other?  
 Love should be absolute love, faith is in fulness or nought.  
 'I am thy friend, be mine!' smiled Zeus: 'If Heré attract thee,'  
 Blushed the imperial cheek, 'then—as thy heart may suggest!'  
 Faith in me sprang to the faith, my love hailed love as its fellow,  
 'Zeus, we are friends—how fast! Heré, my heart for thy heart!'  
 Then broke smile into fury of frown, and the thunder of 'Hence, fool!'  
 Then thro' the kiss laughed scorn 'Limbs or a cloud was to clasp?'  
 Then from Olympus to Erebus, then from the rapture to torment,  
 Then from the fellow of gods—misery's mate, to the man!  
 —Man henceforth and forever, who lent from the glow of his nature  
 Warmth to the cold, with light coloured the black and the blank.  
 So did a man conceive of your passion, you passion-protesters!  
 So did he trust, so love—being the truth of your lie!

You to aspire to be Man! Man made you who vainly would ape him:  
 You are the hollowness, he—filling you, falsifies void.  
 Even as—witness the emblem, Hell's sad triumph suspended,  
 Born of my tears, sweat, blood—bursting to vapour above—  
 Arching my torment, an iris ghostlike startles the darkness,  
 Cold white—jewelry quenched—justifies, glorifies pain.  
 Strive, mankind, though strife endure through endless obstruction,  
 Stage after stage, each rise marred by as certain a fall!  
 Baffled forever—yet never so baffled but, e'en in the baffling,  
 When Man's strength proves weak, checked in the body or soul—  
 Whatsoever the medium, flesh or essence, —Ixion's  
 Made for a purpose of hate,—clothing the entity Thou,  
 —Medium whence that entity strives for the Not-Thou beyond it,  
 Fire elemental, free, frame unencumbered, the All,—  
 Never so baffled but—when, on the verge of an alien existence,  
 Heartened to press, by pangs burst to the infinite Pure,  
 Nothing is reached but the ancient weakness still that arrests strength,  
 Circumambient still, still the poor human array,  
 Pride and revenge and hate and cruelty—all it has burst through,  
 Thought to escape,—fresh formed, found in the fashion it fled,—  
 Never so baffled but—when Man pays the price of endeavour,  
 Thunderstruck, downthrust, Tartaros—doomed to the wheel,—  
 Then, ay, then, from the tears and sweat and blood of his torment,  
 E'en from the triumph of Hell, up let him look and rejoice!  
 What is the influence, high o'er Hell, that turns to a rapture  
 Pain—and despair's murky mists blends in a rainbow of hope?  
 What is beyond the obstruction, stage by stage tho' it baffle?  
 Back must I fall, confess 'Ever the weakness I fled?'  
 No, for beyond, far, far is a Purity all-unobstructed!  
 Zeus was Zeus—not Man: wrecked by his weakness, I whirl.  
 Out of the wreck I rise—past Zeus to the Potency o'er him!  
 I—to have hailed him my friend! I—to have clasped her—my love!



## IXION

Pallid birth of my pain,—where light,  
where light is, aspiring  
Thither I rise, whilst thou—Zeus, keep  
the godship and sink!

### JOCHANAN HAKKADOSH

'THIS now, this other story makes amends  
And justifies our Mishna,' quoth the Jew  
Aforesaid. 'Tell it, learnedest of friends!'

A certain morn broke beautiful and blue  
O'er Schiphaz city, bringing joy and mirth,  
—So had ye deemed; while the reverse  
was true,

Since one small house there gave a sorrow  
birth  
In such black sort that, to each faithful eye,  
Midnight, not morning settled on the  
earth.

How else, when it grew certain thou  
wouldst die  
Our much-enlightened master, Israel's  
prop,  
Eximious Jochanan Ben Sabbathai?

Old, yea but, undiminished of a drop,  
The vital essence pulsed through heart and  
brain;

Time left unsickled yet the plenteous crop  
On poll and chin and cheek, whereof a skein  
Handmaids might weave—hairs silk-soft,  
silver-white,  
Such as the wool-plant's; none the less in  
vain

Had Physic striven her best against the  
spite  
Of fell disease; the Rabbi must succumb;  
And, round the couch whereon in piteous  
plight

He lay a-dying, scholars,—awe-struck,  
dumb

Throughout the night-watch,—roused  
themselves and spoke  
One to the other: 'Ere death's touch be-  
numb

'His active sense,—while yet 'neath  
Reason's yoke  
Obedient toils his tongue,—befits we claim  
The fruit of long experience, bid this oak

'Shed us an acorn which may, all the same,  
Grow to a temple-pillar,—dear that day!—  
When Israel's scattered seed finds place  
and name

'Among the envious nations. Lamp us,  
pray,

Thou the Enlightener! Partest hence in  
peace?

Halest without regret—much less, dis-  
may—

'The hour of thine approximate release  
From fleshly bondage soul hath found  
obstruct?  
Calmly envisage the sure increase

'Of knowledge? Eden's tree must hold  
unplucked

Some apple, sure, has never tried thy tooth,  
Juicy with sapience thou hast sought, not  
sucked?

'Say, does age acquiesce in vanished  
youth?

Still towers thy purity above—as erst—  
Our pleasant follies? Be thy last word—  
truth!'

The Rabbi groaned; then, grimly, 'Last  
as first

The truth speak I—in boyhood who began  
Striving to live an angel, and, amerced

'For such presumption, die now hardly  
man.

What have I proved of life? To live, in-  
deed,

That much I learned: but here lies  
Jochanan

'More luckless than stood David when, to  
speed

His fighting with the Philistine, they  
brought

Saul's harness forth: whereat, "Alack, I  
need

"Armour to arm me, but have never  
fought

With sword and spear, nor tried to manage  
shield,

Proving arms' use, as well-trained warrior  
ought.

"Only a sling and pebbles can I wield!"  
So he: while I, contrariwise, "No trick  
Of weapon helpful on the battle-field

"Comes unfamiliar to my theoretic:  
But, bid me put in practice what I know,  
Give me a sword—it stings like Moses'  
stick,

"A serpent I let drop apace." E'en so,  
I,—able to comport me at each stage  
Of human life as never here below

'Man played his part,—since mine the  
heritage

Of wisdom carried to that perfect pitch,  
Ye rightly praise,—I, therefore, who, thus  
sage,

'Could sure act man triumphantly, enrich  
Life's annals with example how I played  
Lover, Bard, Soldier, Statist,—(all of  
which

## JOCHANAN HAKKADOSH

'Parts in presentment failing, cries invade  
The world's ear—"Ah, the Past, the pearl-  
gift thrown

To hogs, time's opportunity we made

"So light of, only recognized when flown!  
Had we been wise!"—in fine, I—wise  
enough,—

What profit brings me wisdom never  
shown

'Just when its showing would from each  
rebuff

Shelter weak virtue, threaten back to  
bounds

Encroaching vice, tread smooth each track  
too rough

'For youth's unsteady footstep, climb the  
rounds

Of life's long ladder, one by slippery one,  
Yet make no stumble? Me hard fate con-  
founds

'With that same crowd of wailers I outrun  
By promising to teach another cry  
Of more hilarious mood than theirs, the  
sun

'I look my last at is insulted by.  
What cry,—ye ask? Give ear on every  
side!

Witness yon Lover! "How entrapped  
am I!

"Methought, because a virgin's rose-lip  
vied

With ripe Khubbezh's, needs must  
beauty mate

With meekness and discretion in a bride:

"Bride she became to me who wail—too  
late—

*Unwise I loved!*" That's one cry. "Mind's  
my gift:

I might have loaded me with lore, full  
weight

"Pressed down and running over at each  
rift

O' the brain-bag where the famished clung  
and fed.

I filled it with what rubbish!—would not  
sift

"The wheat from chaff, sound grain from  
musty—shed

Poison abroad as oft as nutriment—  
And sighing say but as my fellows said,

"*Unwise I learned!*" That's two. "In  
dwarf's-play spent

Was giant's prowess: warrior all unversed  
In war's right waging, I struck brand, was  
lent

"For steel's fit service, on mere stone—  
and cursed

Alike the shocked limb and the shivered  
steel,

Seeing too late the blade's true use which  
erst

"How was I blind to! My cry swells the  
peal—

*Unwise I fought!*" That's three. But  
wherefore waste

Breath on the wailings longer? Why reveal

'A root of bitterness whereof the taste  
Is noisome to Humanity at large?

First we get Power, but Power absurdly  
placed

'In Folly's keeping, who resigns her charge  
To Wisdom when all Power grows nothing  
worth:

Bones marrowless are mocked with helm  
and targe

'When, like your Master's, soon below the  
earth

With worms shall warfare only be. Fare  
well,

Children! I die a failure since my birth!"

'Not so!' arose a protest as, pell-mell,  
They pattered from his chamber to the  
street,

Bent on a last resource. Our Targums tell

That such resource there is. Put case, there  
meet

The Nine Points of Perfection—rarest  
chance—

Within some saintly teacher whom the  
flee

Years, in their blind implacable advance,  
O'ertake before fit teaching born of these  
Have magnified his scholars' counte-  
nance,—

If haply folk compassionating please  
To render up—according to his store,

Each one—a portion of the life he sees

Hardly worth saving when 'tis set before  
Earth's benefit should the Saint, Hakka-

dosh,  
Favoured thereby, attain to full four-

score—

If such contribute (Scoffer, spare thy  
'Bosh!')

A year, a month, a day, an hour—to eke  
Life out,—in him away the gift shall wash

That much of ill-spent time recorded,  
streak

The twilight of the so-assisted sage  
With a new sunrise: truth, though strange  
to speak!

## JOCHANAN HAKKADOSH

Quick to the doorway, then, where youth  
and age,  
All Israel, thronging, waited for the last  
News of the loved one. 'Tis the final  
stage:

'Art's utmost done, the Rabbi's feet tread  
fast  
The way of all flesh!' So announced that  
apt  
Olive-branch Tsaddik: 'Yet, O Brethren,  
cast

'No eye to earthward! Look where heaven  
has clapped  
Morning's extinguisher—yon ray-shot  
robe  
Of sun-threads—on the constellation  
mapped

'And mentioned by our Elders,—yea,  
from Job  
Down to Satam,—as figuring forth—  
what?  
Perpend a mystery! Ye call it *Dob*—

""The Bear": I trow, a wiser name than that  
Were *Aisch*—"The Bier": a corpse those  
four stars hold,  
Which—are not those Three Daughters  
weeping at,

'*Banoth*? I judge so: list while I unfold  
The reason. As in twice twelve hours this  
Bier  
Goes and returns, about the East-cone  
rolled,

'So may a setting luminary here  
Be rescued from extinction, rolled anew  
Upon its track of labour, strong and clear,

'About the Pole—that Salem, every Jew  
Helps to build up when thus he saves some  
Saint

Ordained its architect. Ye grasp the clue

'To all ye seek? The Rabbi's lamp-flame  
faint  
Sinks: would ye raise it? Lend then life  
from yours,  
Spare each his oil-drop! Do I need ac-  
quaint

'The Chosen how self-sacrifice ensures  
Ten-fold requital?—urge ye emulate  
The fame of those Old Just Ones death  
procures

'Such praise for, that 'tis now men's sole  
debate  
Which of the Ten who volunteered at Rome  
To die for glory to our Race, was great

'Beyond his fellows? Was it thou—the  
comb  
Of iron carded, flesh from bone, away,  
While thy lips sputtered thro' their bloody  
foam

'Without a stoppage (O brave Akiba!)  
"Hear, Israel, our Lord God is One"? Or  
thou,  
Jischab?—who smiledst, burning, since  
there lay,

'Burning along with thee, our Law! I  
trow,  
Such martyrdom might tax flesh to afford:  
While that for which I make petition now,

'To what amounts it? Youngster, wilt  
thou hoard  
Each minute of long years thou look'st to  
spend  
In dalliance with thy spouse? Hast thou  
so soared,

'Singer of songs, all out of sight of friend  
And teacher, warbling like a woodland  
bird,  
There's left no Selah, 'twixt two psalms,  
to lend

'Our late-so-tuneful quirist? Thou,  
averred  
The fighter born to plant our lion-flag  
Once more on Zion's mount,—doth, all-  
unheard,

'My pleading fail to move thee? Toss  
some rag  
Shall staunch our wound, some minute  
never missed  
From swordsman's lustihood like thine!  
Wilt lag

'In liberal bestowment, show close fist  
When open palm we look for,—thou,  
wide-known  
For statecraft? whom, 'tis said, an if thou  
list,

'The Shah himself would seat beside his  
throne,  
So valued were advice from thee' . . . But  
here  
He stopped short: such a hubbub! Not  
alone

From those addressed, but, far as well as  
near,  
The crowd broke into clamour: 'Mine,  
mine, mine—  
Lop from my life the excrescence, never  
fear!

'At me thou lookedst, markedst me!  
Assign  
To me that privilege of granting life—  
Mine, mine!' Then he: 'Be patient! I  
combine

'The needful portions only, wage no strife  
With Nature's law nor seek to lengthen  
out  
The Rabbi's day unduly. 'Tis the knife

## JOCHANAN HAKKADOSH

'I stop,—would cut its thread too short.  
About

As much as helps life last the proper term,  
The appointed Fourscore,—that I crave  
and scout

'A too-prolonged existence. Let the worm  
Change at fit season to the butterfly!  
And here a story strikes me, to confirm

'This judgment. Of our worthies, none  
ranks high  
As Perida who kept the famous school:  
None rivalled him in patience: none! For  
why?

'In lecturing it was his constant rule,  
Whatever he expounded, to repeat  
—Ay, and keep on repeating, lest some fool

'Should fail to understand him fully—  
(feat  
Unparalleled, Uzzean!)—do ye mark?—  
Five hundred times! So might he entrance  
beat

'For knowledge into howsoever dark  
And dense the brain-pan. Yet it happened,  
at close  
Of one especial lecture, not one spark

'Of light was found to have illumed the  
rows  
Of pupils round their pedagogue. "What,  
still  
Impenetrable to me? Then—here goes!"

'And for a second time he sets the rill  
Of knowledge running, and five hundred  
times  
More re-repeats the matter—and gains *nil*.

'Out broke a voice from heaven: "Thy  
patience climbs  
Even thus high. Choose! Wilt thou,  
rather, quick  
Ascend to bliss—or, since thy zeal sub-  
limes

"Such drudgery, will thy back still bear  
its crick,  
Bent o'er thy class,—thy voice drone spite  
of drouth,—  
Five hundred years more at thy desk wilt  
stick?"

"To heaven with me!" was in the good  
man's mouth,  
When all his scholars,—cruel-kind were  
they!—  
Stopped utterance, from East, West, North  
and South,

'Rendering the welkin with their shout of  
"Nay—  
No heaven as yet for our instructor! Grant  
Five hundred years on earth for Perida!"

'And so long did he keep instructing!  
Want

Our Master no such misery! I but take  
Three months of life marital. Ministrant

'Be thou of so much, Poet! Bold I make,  
Swordsman, with thy frank offer!—and  
• conclude,  
Statist, with thine! One year,—ye will not  
shake

'My purpose to accept no more. So rude?  
The very boys and girls, forsooth, must  
press  
And proffer their addition? Thanks! The  
mood

'Is laudable, but I reject, no less,  
One month, week, day of life more. Leave  
my gown,  
Ye overbold ones! Your life's gift, you  
guess,

'Were good as any? Rudesby, get thee  
down!  
Set my feet free, or fear my staff! Farewell,  
Seniors and saviours, sharers of renown

'With Jochanan henceforward!' Straight-  
way fell  
Sleep on the sufferer; who awoke in health,  
Hale everyway, so potent was the spell.

O the rare Spring-time! Who is he by  
stealth  
Approaches Jochanan?—embowered that  
sits  
Under his vine and figtree mid the wealth  
Of garden-sights and sounds, since inter-  
mits  
Never the turtle's coo, nor stays nor stints  
The rose her smell. In homage that befits

The musing Master, Tsaddik, see, imprints  
A kiss on the extended foot, low bends  
Forehead to earth, then, all-obsequious,  
hints

'What if it should be time? A period  
ends—  
That of the Lover's gift—his quarter-year  
Of lustihood: 'tis just thou make amends,

'Return that loan with usury: so, here  
Come I, of thy Disciples delegate,  
Claiming our lesson from thee. Make ap-  
pear

'Thy profit from experience! Plainly state  
How men should Love!' Thus he: and to  
him thus  
The Rabbi: 'Love, ye call it?—rather,  
Hate!

## JOCHANAN HAKKADOSH

'What wouldst thou? Is it needful I dis-  
cuss  
Wherefore new sweet wine, poured in  
bottles caked  
With old strong wine's deposit, offers us

'Spoilt liquor we recoil from, thirst-un-  
slaked?  
Like earth-smoke from a crevice, out there  
wound  
Languors and yearnings: not a sense but  
ached

'Weighed on by fancied form and feature,  
sound  
Of silver word and sight of sunny smile:  
No beckoning of a flower-branch, no pro-  
found

'Purple of noon-oppression, no light wile  
O' the West wind, but transformed itself  
till—brief—  
Before me stood the phantasy ye style

'Youth's love, the joy that shall not come  
to grief,  
Born to endure, eternal, unimpaired  
By custom the accloyer, time the thief.

'Had Age's hard cold knowledge only  
spared  
That ignorance of Youth! But now the  
dream,  
Fresh as from Paradise, alighting fared

'As fares the pigeon, finding what may  
seem  
Her nest's safe hollow holds a snake inside  
Coiled to enclasp her. See, Eve stands  
supreme

'In youth and beauty! Take her for thy  
bride!  
What Youth deemed crystal, Age finds out  
was dew  
Morn set a-sparkle, but which noon quick  
dried

'While Youth bent gazing at its red and  
blue  
Supposed perennial,—never dreamed the  
sun  
Which kindled the display would quench  
it too.

'Graces of shape and colour—everyone  
With its appointed period of decay  
When ripe to purpose! "Still, these dead  
and done,

"Survives the woman-nature—the soft  
sway  
Of undefinable omnipotence  
O'er our strong male-stuff, we of Adam's  
clay."

'Ay, if my physics taught not why and  
whence  
The attraction! Am I like the simple steer  
Who, from his pasture lured inside the  
fence

'Where yoke and goad wait him, holds  
that mere  
Kindliness prompts extension of the hand  
Hollowed for barley, which drew near and  
near

'His nose—in proof that, of the horned  
band,  
The farmer best affected him? Beside,  
Steer, since his calfhood, got to under-  
stand

'Farmers a many in the world so wide  
Were ready with a handful just as choice  
Or choicer—maize and cummin, treats  
untried.

'Shall I wed wife, and all my days rejoice  
I gained the peacock? 'Las me, round I  
look,  
And lo—"With me thou wouldst have  
blamed no voice

"Like hers that daily deafens like a rook:  
I am the phoenix!"—"I, the lark, the dove,  
—The owl," for aught knows he who  
blindly took

'Peacock for partner, while the vale, the  
grove,  
The plain held bird-mates in abundance.  
There!  
Youth, try fresh capture! Age has found  
out Love

'Long ago. War seems better worth man's  
care.  
But leave me! Disappointment finds a  
balm  
Haply in slumber.' 'This first step o' the  
stair

'To knowledge fails me, but the victor's  
palm  
Lies on the next to tempt him overleap  
A stumbling-block. Experienced, gather  
calm,

'Thou excellence of Judah, cured by sleep  
Which ushers in the Warrior, to replace  
The Lover! At due season I shall reap

'Fruit of my planting!' So, with length-  
ened face,  
Departed Tsaddik: and three moons more  
waxed  
And waned, and not until the Summer-  
space

Waned likewise, any second visit taxed  
The Rabbi's patience. But at three  
months' end,  
Behold, supine beneath a rock, relaxed

## JOCHANAN HAKKADOSH

The sage lay musing till the noon should  
spend  
Its ardour. Up comes Tsaddik, who but  
he,  
With 'Master, may I warn thee, nor of-  
fend,

'That time comes round again? We look  
to see  
Sprout from the old branch—not the  
youngling twig—  
But fruit of sycamine: deliver me,

'To share among my fellows, some plump  
fig,  
Juicy as seedy! That same man of war,  
Who, with a scantling of his store, made  
big

'Thy starveling nature, caused thee, safe  
from scar,  
To share his gains by long acquaintance-  
ship  
With bump and bruise and all the knocks  
that are

'Of battle dowry,—he bids loose thy lip,  
Explain the good of battle! Since thou  
know'st,  
Let us know likewise! Fast the moments  
slip,

'More need that we improve them!—  
'Ay, we boast,

We warriors in our youth, that with the  
sword  
Man goes the swiftest to the uttermost—

'Takes the straight way thro' lands yet un-  
explored

To absolute Right and Good,—may so  
obtain  
God's glory and man's weal too long ig-  
nored,

'Too late attained by preachments all in  
vain—

The passive process. Knots get tangled  
worse  
By toying with: does cut cord close again?

'Moreover there is blessing in the curse  
Peace-praisers call war. What so sure  
evolves

All the capacities of soul, proves nurse

'Of that self-sacrifice in men which solves  
The riddle—*Wherein differs Man from  
beast?*

Foxes boast cleverness and courage  
wolves:

'Nowhere but in mankind is found the  
least

Touch of an impulse "To our fellows—  
good

I' the highest!—not diminished but in-  
creased

"By the condition plainly understood  
—Such good shall be attained at price of  
hurt  
I' the highest to ourselves!" Fine sparks,  
that brood

'Confusedly in Man, 'tis war bids spurt  
Forth into flame: as fares the meteor-  
mass,

Whereof no particle but holds inert

'Some seed of light and heat, however  
crass

The enclosure, yet avails not to discharge  
Its radiant birth before there come to pass

'Some push external,—strong to set at  
large

Those dormant fire-seeds, whirl them in a  
trice

Through heaven and light up earth from  
marge to marge:

'Since force by motion makes—what erst  
was ice—

Crash into fervency and so expire,  
Because some Djinn has hit on a device

'For proving the full prettiness of fire!  
Ay, thus we prattle—youth: but old—  
why, first,

Where's that same Right and Good—(the  
wise inquire)—

'So absolute, it warrants the outburst  
Of blood, tears, all war's woeful conse-  
quence,

That comes of the fine flaring? Which  
plague cursed

'The more your benefited Man—offence,  
Or what suppressed the offender? Say it  
did—

Show us the evil cured by violence,

'Submission cures not also! Lift the lid  
From the maturing crucible, we find  
Its slow sure coaxing-out of virtue hid

'In that same meteor-mass, hath uncom-  
bined

Those particles and, yielding for result  
Gold, not mere flame, by so much leaves  
behind

'The heroic product. E'en the simple cult  
Of Edom's children wisely bids them turn  
Cheek to the smiter with "*Sic Jesus vult.*"

'Say there's a tyrant by whose death we  
earn

Freedom, and justify a war to wage:  
Good!—were we only able to discern

'Exactly how to reach and catch and cage  
Him only and no innocent beside!

Whereas the folk whereon war wreaks its  
rage

## JOCHANAN HAKKADOSH

'—How shared they his ill-doing? Far  
and wide  
The victims of our warfare strew the plain,  
Ten thousand dead, whereof not one but  
died

'In faith that vassals owed their suzerain  
Life: therefore each paid tribute,—hopest  
soul,—  
To that same Right and Good ourselves  
are fain

'To call exclusively our end. From bole  
(Since ye accept in me a sycamine)  
Pluck, eat, digest a fable—yea, the sole

'Fig I afford you! "Dost thou dwarf my  
vine?"

(So did a certain husbandman address  
The tree which faced his field,) "Receive  
condign

"Punishment, prompt removal by the  
stress

Of axe I forthwith lay unto thy root!"  
Long did he hack and hew, the root no less

'As long defied him, for its tough strings  
shoot

As deep down as the boughs above aspire:  
All that he did was—shake to the tree's  
foot

'Leafage and fruitage, things we most re-  
quire

For shadow and refreshment: which good  
deed

Thoroughly done, behold the axe-haft tires  
'His hand, and he desisting leaves unfreed

The vine he hacked and hewed for. Comes  
a frost,

One natural night's work, and there's little  
need

'Of hacking, hewing: lo, the tree's a ghost!  
Perished it starves, black death from top-  
most bough

To farthest-reaching fibre! Shall I boast

'My rough work,—warfare,—helped  
more? Loving, now—

That, by comparison, seems wiser, since  
The loving fool was able to avow

'He could effect his purpose, just evince  
Love's willingness,—once 'ware of what  
she lacked,

His loved one,—to go work for that, nor  
wince

'At self-expenditure: he neither hacked  
Nor hewed, but when the lady of his field  
Required defence because the sun at-  
tacked,

'He, failing to obtain a fitter shield,  
Would interpose his body, and so blaze,  
Blest in the burning. Ah, were mine to  
wield

'The intellectual weapon—poet-lays,—  
How preferably had I sung one song  
Which . . . but my sadness sinks me: go  
your ways!

'I sleep out disappointment.' 'Come  
along,

Never lose heart! There's still as much  
again

Of our bestowment left to right the wrong

'Done by its earlier moiety—explain  
Wherefore, who may! The Poet's mood  
comes next.

Was he not wishful the poetic vein

'Should pulse within him? Jochanan,  
thou reck'st

Little of what a generous flood shall soon  
Float thy clogged spirit free and unper-  
plexed

'Above dry dubitation! Song's the boon  
Shall make amends for my untoward mis-  
take

That Joshua-like thou couldst bid sun and  
moon—

'Fighter and Lover,—which for most men  
make

All they descry in heaven,—stand both  
stock-still

And lend assistance. Poet shalt thou  
wake!

Autumn brings Tsaddik. 'Ay, there speeds  
the rill

Loaded with leaves: a scowling sky, be-  
side:

The wind makes olive-trees up yonder hill

'Whiten and shudder—symptoms far and  
wide

Of gleaning-time's approach; and glean  
good store

May I presume to trust we shall, thou tried

'And ripe experimenter! Three months  
more

Have ministered to growth of Song: that  
graft

Into thy sterile stock has found at core

'Moisture, I warrant, hitherto unquaffed  
By boughs, however florid, wanting sap

Of prose-experience which provides the  
draught

'Which song-sprouts, wanting, wither:  
vain we tap

A youngling stem all green and immature:  
Experience must secrete the stuff, our hap

'Will be to quench Man's thirst with, glad  
and sure

That fancy wells up through corrective  
fact:

Missing which test of truth, though flowers  
allure

## JOCHANAN HAKKADOSH

- 'The goodman's eye with promise, soon  
the pact  
Is broken, and 'tis flowers,—mere words,  
—he finds  
When things,—that's fruit,—he looked  
for. Well, once cracked
- 'The nut, how glad my tooth the kernel  
grinds!  
Song may henceforth boast substance!  
Therefore, hail  
Proser and poet, perfect in both kinds!
- 'Thou from whose eye hath dropped the  
envious scale  
Which hides the truth of things and substi-  
tutes  
Deceptive show, unaided optics fail
- 'To transpirece,—hast entrusted to the  
lute's  
Soft but sure guardianship some unre-  
vealed  
Secret shall lift mankind above the brutes  
'As only knowledge can?' 'A fount un-  
sealed'  
(Sighed Jochanan) 'should seek the heaven  
in leaps  
To die in dew-gems—not find death, con-  
gealed
- 'By contact with the cavern's nether deeps,  
Earth's secretest foundation where, en-  
swathed  
In dark and fear, primæval mystery  
sleeps—
- 'Petrific fount wherein my fancies bathed  
And straight turned ice. My dreams of  
good and fair  
In soaring upwards had dissolved, un-  
scathed
- 'By any influence of the kindly air,  
Singing, as each took flight, The Future—  
that's  
Our destination, mists turn rainbows  
there,
- 'Which sink to fog, confounded in the flats  
O' the Present! Day's the song-time for  
the lark,  
Night for her music boasts but owls and  
bats.
- 'And what's the Past but night—the deep  
and dark  
Ice-spring I speak of, corpse-thick with  
its drowned  
Dead fancies which no sooner touched the  
mark
- 'They aimed at—fact—than all at once  
they found  
Their film-wings freeze, henceforth unfit  
to reach  
And roll in æther, revel—robed and  
crowned
- 'As truths, confirmed by falsehood all  
and each—  
Sovereign and absolute and ultimate!  
Up with them, skyward, Youth, ere Age  
impeach
- 'Thy least of promises to re-instate  
Adam in Eden! Sing on, ever sing,  
Chirp till thou burst!—the fool cicada's  
fate,
- 'Who holds that after Summer next comes  
Spring,  
Than Summer's self sun-warmed, spice-  
scented more.  
Fighting was better! There, no fancy-fling
- 'Pitches you past the point was reached  
of yore  
By Sampsons, Abners, Joabs, Judases,  
The mighty men of valour who, before
- 'Our little day, did wonders none profess  
To doubt were fable and not fact, so trust  
By fancy-flights to emulate much less.
- 'Were I a Statesman, now! Why, that  
were just  
To pinnacle my soul, mankind above,  
A-top the universe: no vulgar lust
- 'To gratify—fame, greed, at this remove  
Looked down upon so far—or overlooked  
So largely, rather—that mine eye should  
rove
- 'World-wide and rummage earth, the  
many-nooked,  
Yet find no unit of the human flock  
Caught straying but straight comes back  
hooked and crooked
- 'By the strong shepherd who, from out his  
stock  
Of aids proceeds to treat each ailing fleece,  
Here stimulate to growth, curtail and dock
- 'There, baldness or excrescence,—that,  
with grease,  
This, with up-grubbing of the bristly patch  
Born of the tick-bite. How supreme a  
peace
- 'Steals o'er the Statist,—while, in wit, a  
match  
For shrewd Ahitophel, in wisdom . . . well,  
His name escapes me—somebody, at  
watch
- 'And ward, the fellow of Ahithophel  
In guidance of the Chosen!'—at which  
word  
Eyes closed and fast asleep the Rabbi fell.
- 'Cold weather!' shivered Tsaddik. 'Yet  
the hoard  
Of the sagacious ant shows garnerer'  
grain,  
Ever abundant most when fields afford'



# JOCHANAN HAKKADOSH

'Least pasture, and alike disgrace the plain  
Tall tree and lowly shrub. 'Tis so with us  
Mortals: our age stores wealth ye seek in  
vain

'While busy youth culls just what we dis-  
cuss  
At leisure in the last days: and the last  
Truly are these for Jochanan, whom thus  
'I make one more appeal to! Thine  
amassed

Experience, now or never, let escape  
Some portion of! For I perceive aghast

'The end approaches, while they jeer and  
jape,  
These sons of Shimei: "Justify your boast!  
What have ye gained from Death by twelve  
months' rape?"

'Statesman, what cure hast thou for—  
least and most—

Popular grievances? What nostrum, say,  
Will make the Rich and Poor, expertly  
dosed,

'Forget disparity, bid each go gay  
That, with his bauble,—with his burden,  
this?

Propose an alkahest shall melt away

'Men's lacquer, show by prompt analysis  
Which is the metal, which the make-  
believe,  
So that no longer brass shall find, gold  
miss

'Coinage and currency? Make haste, re-  
trieve  
The precious moments, Master!' Where-  
unto

There snarls an 'Ever laughing in thy  
sleeve,

'Pert Tsaddik? Youth indeed sees plain a  
clue

To guide man where life's wood is intri-  
cate:

How shall he fail to thrid its thickest  
through

'When every oak-trunk takes the eye?  
Elate

He goes from bole to brushwood, plung-  
ing finds—

Smothered in briars—that the small's the  
great!

'All men are men: I would all minds were  
minds!

Whereas 'tis just the many's mindless mass  
That most needs helping: labourers and  
hinds

'We legislate for—not the cultured class  
Which law-makes for itself nor needs the  
whip

And bridle,—proper help for mule and ass,

'Did the brutes know! In vain our states-  
manship

Strives at contenting the rough multitude:  
Still the ox cries "'Tis me thou shouldst  
equip

"'With equine trappings!" or, in humbler  
mood,

"Cribful of corn for me! and, as for  
work—

Adequate rumination o'er my food!"

'Better remain a Poet! Needs it irk  
Such an one if light, kindled in his sphere,  
Fail to transuse the Mizraim cold and  
murk

'Round about Goshen? Though light dis-  
appear,

Shut inside,—temporary ignorance  
Got outside of, lo, light emerging clear

'Shows each astonished starrer the expanse  
Of heaven made bright with knowledge!

That's the way,  
The only way—I see it at a glance—

'To legislate for earth! As poet. . . Stay!  
What is . . . I would that . . . were it . . .

I had been . . .  
O sudden change, as if my arid clay

'Burst into bloom! . . . 'A change in-  
deed, I ween,

And change the last!' sighed Tsaddik as  
he kissed

The closing eyelids. 'Just as those serene

'Princes of Night apprised me! Our  
acquist

Of life is spent, since corners only four  
Hath Aisch, and each in turn was made  
desist

'In passage round the Pole (O Mishna's  
lore—

Little it profits here!) by strenuous tug  
Of friends who eked out thus to full four-  
score

'The Rabbi's years. I see each shoulder  
shrug!

What have we gained? Away the Bier may  
roll!

To-morrow, when the Master's grave is  
dug,

'In with his body I may pitch the scroll  
I hoped to glorify with, text and gloss,

My Science of Man's Life: one blank's the  
whole!

'Love, war, song, statesmanship—no gain,  
all loss,

The stars' bestowment! We on our return  
To-morrow merely find—not gold but  
dross,

## JOCHANAN HAKKADOSH

'The body not the soul. Come, friends,  
we learn  
At least thus much by our experiment—  
That—that . . . well, find what, whom it  
may concern!'

But next day through the city rumours  
went  
Of a new persecution; so, they fled  
All Israel, each man,—this time,—from  
his tent,

Tsaddik among the foremost. When, the  
dread  
Subsiding, Israel ventured back again  
Some three months after, to the cave they  
sped

Where lay the Sage,—a reverential train!  
Tsaddik first enters. 'What is this I view?  
The Rabbi still alive? No stars remain

'Of Aisch to stop within their courses.  
True,

I mind me, certain gamesome boys must  
urge  
Their offerings on me: can it be—one  
threw

'Life at him and it stuck? There needs the  
scourge

To teach that urchin manners! Prithee,  
grant

Forgiveness if we pretermitt thy dirge

'Just to explain no friend was ministrant,  
This time, of life to thee! Some jacka-  
napes,

I gather, has presumed to foist his scant

'Scurvy unripe existence—wilding grapes  
Grass-green and sorrel-sour—on that  
grand wine,

Mighty as mellow, which, so fancy shapes

'May fitly image forth this life of thine  
Fed on the last low fattening lees—con-  
densed

Elixir, no milk-mildness of the vine!

'Rightly with Tsaddik wert thou now in-  
censed

Had he been witting of the mischief  
wrought

When, for elixir, verjuice he dispensed!'

And slowly woke,—like Shushan's flower  
besought

By over-curious handling to unloose  
The curtained secrecy wherein she thought

Her captive bee, mid store of sweets to  
choose,

Would loll, in gold pavilioned lie unteased,  
Sucking on, sated never,—whose, O whose

Might seem that countenance, uplift, all  
eased

Of old distraction and bewilderment,  
Absurdly happy? 'How ye have appeased

'The strife within me, bred this whole con-  
tent,

This utter acquiescence in my past,  
Present and future life,—by whom was  
lent

'The power to work this miracle at last,—  
Exceeds my guess. Though—*ignorance*  
*confirmed*  
By *knowledge* sounds like paradox, I cast

'Vainly about to tell you—filier termed—  
Of calm struck by encountering opposites,  
Each nullifying either! Henceforth  
wormed

'From out my heart is every snake that  
bites

The dove that else would brood there:  
doubt, which kills

With hiss of "What if sorrows end de-  
lights?"

'Fear which stings ease with "Work the  
Master wills!"

Experience which coils round and strangles  
quick

Each hope with "Ask the Past if hoping  
skills

"To work accomplishment, or proves a  
trick

Wiling thee to endeavour! Strive, fool,  
stop

Nowise, so live, so die—that's law! why  
kick

"Against the pricks?" All out-wormed!  
Slumber, drop

Thy films once more and veil the bliss  
within!

Experience strangle hope? Hope waves  
a-top

'Her wings triumphant! Come what will,  
I win,

Whoever loses! Every dream's assured  
Of soberest fulfilment. Where's a sin

'Except in doubting that the light, which  
lured

The unwary into darkness, meant no  
wrong

Had I but marched on bold, nor paused  
immured

'By mists I should have pressed thro',  
passed along

My way henceforth rejoicing? Not the  
boy's

Passionate impulse he conceits so strong,

'Which, at first touch, truth, bubble-like,  
destroys,—

Not the man's slow conviction "Vanity  
Of vanities—alike my griefs and joys!"

## JOCHANAN HAKKADOSH

'Ice!—thawed (look up) each bird, each insect by—  
(Look round) by all the plants that break in bloom,  
(Look down) by every dead friend's memory

'That smiles "Am I the dust within my tomb?"

Not either, but both these—amalgam rare—

Mix in a product, not from Nature's womb,

'But stuff which He the Operant—who shall dare

Describe His operation?—strikes alive  
And thaumaturgic. I nor know nor care

'How from this tohu-bohu—hopes which dive,

And fears which soar—faith, ruined through and through

By doubt, and doubt, faith treads to dust—revive

'In some surprising sort,—as see, they do!—

Not merely foes no longer but fast friends.  
What does it mean unless—O strange and new

'Discovery!—this life proves a wine-press—blends

Evil and good, both fruits of Paradise,  
Into a novel drink which—who intends

'To quaff, must bear a brain for ecstasies  
Attempred, not this all-inadequate  
Organ which, quivering within me, dies

'—Nay, lives!—what, how,—too soon, or else too late—

I was—I am . . . ' ('He babbleth!' Tsaddik mused)

'O Thou Almighty who canst re-instate

'Truths in their primal clarity, confused  
By man's perception, which is man's and made

To suit his service,—how, once disabused

'Of reason which sees light half shine half shade,

Because of flesh, the medium that adjusts  
Purity to his visuals, both an aid

'And hindrance,—how to eyes earth's air encrusts,

When purged and perfect to receive truth's beam

Pouring itself on the new sense it trusts

'With all its plenitude of power,—how seen

The intricacies now, of shade and shine,  
Oppugnant natures—Right and Wrong,  
we deem

'Irreconcilable? O eyes of mine,  
Freed now of imperfection, ye avail  
To see the whole sight, nor may uncombine

'Henceforth what, erst divided, caused you quail—

So huge the chasm between the false and true,

The dream and the reality! All hail,

'Day of my soul's deliverance—day the new,

The never-ending! What though every shape

Whereon I wreaked my yearning to pursue

'Even to success each semblance of escape  
From my own bounded self to some all-fair

All-wise external fancy, proved a rape

'Like that old giant's, feigned of fools—on air,

Not solid flesh? How otherwise? To love—

That lesson was to learn not here—but there—

'On earth, not here! 'Tis there we learn,—there prove

Our parts upon the stuff we needs must spoil,

Striving at mastery, there bend above

'The spoiled clay potsherds, many a year of toil

Attests the potter tried his hand upon,  
Till sudden he arose, wiped free from soil

'His hand, cried "So much for attempt—anon

Performance! Taught to mould the living vase,

What matter the cracked pitchers dead and gone?"

'Could I impart and could thy mind embrace

The secret, Tsaddik! 'Secret none to me!'

Quoth Tsaddik, as the glory on the face

Of Jochanan was quenched. 'The truth I see

Of what that excellence of Judah wrote,  
Doughty Halaphta. This a case must be

'Wherein, though the last breath have passed the throat,

So that "The man is dead" we may pronounce,

Yet is the Ruach—(thus do we denote

'The imparted Spirit)—in no haste to bounce

From its entrusted Body,—some three days

Lingers ere it relinquish to the pounce

## JOCHANAN HAKKADOSH

'Of hawk-clawed Death his victim. Further says  
Halaphta, "Instances have been, and yet  
Again may be, when saints, whose earthly  
ways

"Tend to perfection, very nearly get  
To heaven while still on earth: and, as a  
fine  
Interval shows where waters pure have  
met

"Waves brackish, in a mixture, sweet  
with brine,  
That's neither sea nor river but a taste  
Of both—so meet the earthly and divine  
"And each is either." Thus I hold him  
graced—  
Dying on earth, half inside and half out,  
Wholly in heaven, who knows? My mind  
embraced

'Thy secret, Jochanan, how dare I doubt?  
Follow thy Ruach, let earth, all it can,  
Keep of the leavings!' Thus was brought  
about

The sepulture of Rabbi Jochanan:  
Thou hast him,—sinner-saint, live-dead,  
boy-man,—  
Schiphaz, on Bendimir, in Farzistan!

NOTE.—This story can have no better authority  
than that of the treatise, existing dispersedly in  
fragments of Rabbinical writing, **משך של רבים**  
**בדים**, from which I might have helped myself more  
liberally. Thus, instead of the simple reference to  
"Moses' stick",—but what if I make amends by  
attempting three illustrations, when some thirty  
might be composed on the same subject, equally  
justifying that pithy proverb **לא משה עד משה**  
**קם כמשה**.

### I

Moses the Meek was thirty cubits high,  
The staff he strode with—thirty cubits long:  
And when he leapt, so muscular and strong  
Was Moses that his leaping neared the sky  
By thirty cubits more. we learn thereby  
He reached full ninety cubits—am I wrong?—  
When, in a fight slurred o'er by sacred song,  
With staff outstretched he took a leap to try  
The just dimensions of the giant Og.  
And yet he barely touched—this marvel lacked  
Posterity to crown earth's catalogue  
Of marvels—barely touched—to be exact—  
The giant's ankle-bone, remained a frog  
That fain would match an ox in stature: fact!

### II

And this same fact has met with unbelief!  
How saith a certain traveller? 'Young, I  
chanced  
To come upon an object—if thou canst,  
Guess me its name and nature! 'Twas, in brief,  
White, hard, round, hollow, of such length, in  
chief,  
—And this is what especially enhanced  
My wonder—that it seemed, as I advanced,

Never to end. Bind up within thy sheaf  
Of marvels, this—Posterity! I walked  
From end to end,—four hours walked I, who go  
A goodly pace,—and found—I have not baulked  
Thine expectation, Stranger? Ay or No?  
'Twas but Og's thigh-bone, all the while. I stalked  
Alongside of: respect to Moses, though!

### III

Og's thigh-bone—if ye deem its measure strange,  
Myself can witness to much length of shank  
Even in birds. Upon a water's bank  
Once halting, I was minded to exchange  
Noon heat for cool. Quoth I 'On many a grange  
I have seen storks perch—legs both long and  
lank:  
Yon stork's must touch the bottom of this tank,  
Since on its top doth wet no plume derange  
Of the smooth breast. I'll bathe there!' 'Do not  
so!'  
Warned me a voice from heaven. 'A man let  
drop  
His axe into that shallow rivulet—  
As thou accountest—seventy years ago:  
It fell and fell and still without a stop  
Keeps falling, nor has reached the bottom yet.'

## NEVER THE TIME AND THE PLACE

NEVER the time and the place  
And the loved one all together!  
This path—how soft to pace!  
This May—what magic weather!  
Where is the loved one's face?  
In a dream that loved one's face meets  
mine,  
But the house is narrow, the place is  
bleak  
Where, outside, rain and wind combine  
With a furtive ear, if I strive to speak,  
With a hostile eye at my flushing cheek,  
With a malice that marks each word, each  
sign!  
O enemy sly and serpentine,  
Uncoil thee from the waking man!  
Do I hold the Past  
Thus firm and fast  
Yet doubt if the Future hold I can?  
This path so soft to pace shall lead  
Thro' the magic of May to herself indeed!  
Or narrow if needs the house must be,  
Outside are the storms and strangers:  
we—  
Oh, close, safe, warm sleep I and she,  
—I and she!

## PAMBO

SUPPOSE that we part (work done, comes  
play)  
With a grave tale told in crambo  
—As our hearty sires were wont to say—  
Whereof the hero is Pambo?  
Do you happen to know who Pambo was?  
Nor I—but this much have heard of  
him:  
He entered one day a college-class,  
And asked—was it so absurd of him?—

## PAMBO

'May Pambo learn wisdom ere practise it?  
In wisdom I fain would ground me:  
Since wisdom is centred in Holy Writ,  
Some psalm to the purpose expound  
me!'

'That psalm,' the Professor smiled, 'shall be  
Untroubled by doubt which dirtieth  
Pellucid streams when an ass like thee  
Would drink there—the Nine-and-  
thirtieth.

'Verse first: *I said I will look to my ways  
That I with my tongue offend not.*

How now? Why stare? Art struck in  
amaze?

Stop, stay! The smooth line hath an  
end knot!

'He's gone!—disgusted my text should  
prove

Too easy to need explaining?

Had he waited, the blockhead might find  
I move

To matter that pays remaining!'

Long years went by, when—'Ha, who's  
this?

Do I come on the restive scholar  
I had driven to Wisdom's goal, I wis,  
But that he slipped the collar?

'What? Arms crossed, brow bent,  
thought-immersed?

A student indeed! Why scruple

To own that the lesson proposed him first  
Scarce suited so apt a pupil?

'Come back! From the beggarly elements  
To a more recondite issue  
We pass till we reach, at all events,  
Some point that may puzzle . . . Why  
"pish" you?'

From the ground looked piteous up the  
head:

'Daily and nightly, Master,  
Your pupil plods thro' that text you read,  
Yet gets on never the faster.

'At the self-same stand,—now old, then  
young!

*I will look to my ways—were doing  
As easy as saying!—that I with my tongue  
Offend not—and 'scape pooh-poohing*

'From sage and simple, doctor and dunce?  
Ah, nowise! Still doubts so muddy  
The stream I would drink at once,—but  
once!

That—thus I resume my study!'

Brother, brother, I share the blame,  
*Arcades sumus ambo!*

Darkling, I keep my sunrise-aim,  
Lack not the critic's flambeau,  
And look to my ways, yet, much the  
same,  
*Offend with my tongue—like  
Pambo!*

## FERISHTAH'S FANCIES

1884

'His genius was jocular, but, when disposed, he could be very serious.'—Article 'Shakespear',  
JEREMY COLLIER'S *Historical &c. Dictionary*, 2nd edition, 1701.

'You, Sir, I entertain you for one of my Hundred; only, I do not like the fashion of your garments:  
you will say they are Persian: but let them be changed,'—*King Lear*, act iii. sc. 6.

### PROLOGUE

PRAY, Reader, have you eaten ortolans  
Ever in Italy?

Recall how cooks there cook them: for  
my plan's

To—Lyre with Spit ally.

They pluck the birds,—some dozen  
luscious lumps,

Or more or fewer,—

Then roast them, heads by heads and  
rumps by rumps,

Stuck on a skewer.

But first,—and here's the point I fain  
would press,—

Don't think I'm tattling!—

They interpose, to curb its lusciousness,

—What, 'twixt each fatling?

First comes plain bread, crisp, brown, a  
toasted square:

Then, a strong sage-leaf:

(So we find books with flowers dried here  
and there

Lest leaf engage leaf.)

First, food—then, piquancy—and last of  
all

Follows the thirdling:

Through wholesome hard, sharp soft,  
your tooth must bite

Ere reach the birdling.

Now, were there only crust to crunch,  
you'd wince

Unpalatable!

Sage-leaf is bitter-pungent—so's a quince:  
Eat each who's able!

But through all three bite boldly—lo, the  
gust!

Flavour—no fixture—

Flies, permeating flesh and leaf and crust  
In fine admixture.

So with your meal, my poem: masticate  
Sense, sight and song there!

## PROLOGUE

Digest these, and I praise your peptics'  
state,

Nothing found wrong there.  
Whence springs my illustration who can  
tell?

—The more surprising  
That here eggs, milk, cheese, fruit suffice  
so well

For gormandizing.  
A fancy-freak by contrast born of thee,  
Delightful Gressoney!

Who laughest 'Take what is, trust what  
may be!'

That's Life's true lesson,—eh?

MAISON DELAPIERRE,  
GRESSONEY ST. JEAN, VAL D'AOSTA,  
September 12, '83.

## THE EAGLE

DERVISH—(though yet un-dervished, call  
him so

No less beforehand: while he drudged our  
way,

Other his worldly name was: when he  
wrote

Those verses we Persians praise him for,  
—True fairy-work—Ferishtah grew his  
style—

Dervish Ferishtah walked the woods one  
eve,

And noted on a bough a raven's nest  
Whereof each youngling gaped with cal-  
low beak

Widened by want; for why? beneath the  
tree

Dead lay the mother-bird. 'A piteous  
chance!

'How shall they 'scape destruction?'  
sighed the sage

—Or sage about to be, though simple still.  
Responsive to which doubt, sudden there  
swooped

An eagle downward, and behold he bore  
(Great-hearted) in his talons flesh where-  
with

He stayed their craving, then resought the  
sky.

'Ah, foolish, faithless me!' the observer  
smiled,

'Who toil and moil to eke out life, when lo  
Providence cares for every hungry mouth!'

To profit by which lesson, home went he,  
And certain days sat musing,—neither  
meat

Nor drink would purchase by his handi-  
work.

Then,—for his head swam and his limbs  
grew faint,—

Sleep overtook the unwise one, whom in  
dream

God thus admonished: 'Hast thou marked  
my deed?

Which part assigned by providence dost  
judge

Was meant for man's example? Should  
he play

The helpless weakling, or the helpful  
strength

That captures prey and saves the perish-  
ing?

Sluggard, arise: work, eat, then feed who  
lack!'

Waking, 'I have arisen, work I will,  
Eat, and so following. Which lacks food

the more,  
Body or soul in me? I starve in soul:

So may mankind: and since men congre-  
gate

In towns, not woods,—to Ispahan forth-  
with!'

*Round us the wild creatures, overhead the  
trees,*

*Underfoot the moss-tracks,—life and love  
with these!*

*I to wear a fawn-skin, thou to dress in flowers:  
All the long lone Summer-day, that green-  
wood life of ours!*

*Rich-pavilioned, rather,—still the world  
without,—*

*Inside—gold-roofed silk-walled silence  
round about!*

*Queen it thou on purple,—I, at watch and  
ward*

*Couched beneath the columns, gaze, thy  
slave, love's guard!*

*So, for us no world? Let throngs press thee  
to me!*

*Up and down amid men, heart by heart fare  
we!*

*Welcome squalid vesture, harsh voice, hate-  
ful face!*

*God is soul, souls I and thou: with souls  
should souls have place.*

## THE MELON-SELLER

GOING his rounds one day in Ispahan,—  
Half-way on Dervishhood, not wholly  
there,—

Ferishtah, as he crossed a certain bridge,  
Came startled on a well-remembered face.

'Can it be? What, turned melon-seller—  
thou?

Clad in such sordid garb, thy seat yon step  
Where dogs brush by thee and express  
contempt?

Methinks, thy head-gear is some scooped-  
out gourd!

Nay, sunk to slicing up, for readier sale,  
One fruit whereof the whole scarce feeds a  
swine?

Wast thou the Shah's Prime Minister, men  
saw

## THE MELON-SELLER

Ride on his right-hand while a trumpet  
blew  
And Persia hailed the Favourite? Yea,  
twelve years  
Are past, I judge, since that transcendancy,  
And thou didst peculate and art abased;  
No less, twelve years since, thou didst hold  
in hand  
Persia, couldst halve and quarter, mince  
its pulp  
As pleased thee, and distribute—melon-  
like—  
Portions to whoso played the parasite,  
Or suck—thyself—each juicy morsel.  
How  
Enormous thy abjection,—hell from  
heaven,  
Made tenfold hell by contrast! Whisper  
me!  
Dost thou curse God for granting twelve  
years' bliss  
Only to prove this day's the direr lot?'  
Whereon the beggar raised a brow, once  
more  
Luminous and imperial, from the rags.  
'Fool, does thy folly think my foolishness  
Dwells rather on the fact that God ap-  
points  
A day of woe to the unworthy one,  
Than that the unworthy one, by God's  
award,  
Tasted joy twelve years long? Or buy a  
slice,  
Or go to school!'

To school Ferishtah went;  
And, schooling ended, passed from Ispa-  
han  
To Nishapur, that Elburz looks above  
—Where they dig turquoise: there kept  
school himself,  
The melon-seller's speech, his stock in  
trade.  
Some say a certain Jew adduced the word  
Out of their book, it sounds so much the  
same,  
את-הטוב ניבל מאת האלהים  
ואת-הרע לא נקבל: In Persian phrase,  
'Shall we receive good at the hand of God  
And evil not receive?' But great wits  
jump.

*Wish no word unspoken, want no look away!  
What if words were but mistake, and looks  
—too sudden, say!  
Be unjust for once, Love! Bear it—well I  
may!*

*Do me justice always? Bid my heart—their  
shrine—  
Render back its store of gifts, old looks and  
words of thine  
—Oh, so all unjust—the less deserved, the  
more divine?*

## SHAH ABBAS

ANYHOW, once full Dervish, youngsters  
came  
To gather up his own words, 'neath a rock  
Or else a palm, by pleasant Nishapur.  
Said someone, as Ferishtah paused abrupt,  
Reading a certain passage from the roll  
Wherein is treated of Lord Ali's life:  
'Master, explain this incongruity!  
When I dared question "It is beautiful,  
But is it true?"—thy answer was "In truth  
Lives beauty." I persisting—"Beauty—  
yes,  
In thy mind and in my mind, every mind  
That apprehends: but outside—so to  
speak—  
Did beauty live in deed as well as word,  
Was this life lived, was this death died—  
not dreamed?'  
"Many attested it for fact" saidst thou.  
"Many!" but mark, Sir! Half as long ago  
As such things were,—supposing that they  
were,—  
Reigned great Shah Abbas: he too lived  
and died  
—How say they? Why, so strong of arm,  
of foot  
So swift, he stayed a lion in his leap  
On a stag's haunch,—with one hand  
grasped the stag,  
With one struck down the lion: yet, no  
less,  
Himself, that same day, feasting after  
sport,  
Perceived a spider drop into his wine,  
Let fall the flagon, died of simple fear.  
So all say,—so dost thou say?'

'Wherefore not?'  
Ferishtah smiled: 'though strange, the  
story stands  
Clear-chronicled: none tells it otherwise:  
The fact's eye-witness bore the cup, be-  
side.'  
'And dost thou credit one cup-bearer's  
tale,  
False, very like, and futile certainly,  
Yet hesitate to trust what many tongues  
Combine to testify was beautiful  
In deed as well as word? No fool's report  
Of lion, stag and spider, but immense  
With meaning for mankind,—thy race,—  
thyself?'

Whereto the Dervish: 'First amend, my  
son,  
Thy faulty nomenclature, call belief  
Belief indeed, nor grace with such a name  
The easy acquiescence of mankind  
In matters nowise worth dispute, since life  
Lasts merely the allotted moment. Lo—  
That lion-stag-and-spider tale leaves fixed  
The fact for us that somewhen Abbas  
reigned,

Died, somehow slain,—a useful registry,—  
Which therefore we—"believe"? Stand  
forward, thou,

My Yakub, son of Yusuf, son of Zal!  
I advertise thee that our liege, the Shah  
Happily regnant, hath become assured,  
By opportune discovery, that thy sires,  
Son by the father upwards, track their line  
To—whom but that same bearer of the  
cup

Whose inadvertency was chargeable  
With what therefrom ensued, disgust and  
death

To Abbas Shah, the over-nice of soul?  
Whence he appoints thee,—such his clem-  
ency,—

Not death, thy due, but just a double tax  
To pay, on thy particular bed of reeds  
Which flower into the brush that makes a  
broom

Fit to sweep ceilings clear of vermin. Sure,  
Thou dost believe the story nor dispute  
That punishment should signalize its  
truth?

Down therefore with some twelve dinars!

Why start,  
—The stag's way with the lion hard on  
haunch?

"Believe the story?"—how thy words  
throng fast!—

"Who saw this, heard this, said this, wrote  
down this,

That and the other circumstance to prove  
So great a prodigy surprised the world?  
Needs must thou prove me fable can be  
fact

Or ere thou coax one piece from out my  
pouch!"

"There we agree, Sir: neither of us knows,  
Neither accepts that tale on evidence  
Worthy to warrant the large word—belief.  
Now I get near thee! Why didst pause  
abrupt,

Disabled by emotion at a tale  
Might match—be frank!—for credibility  
The figment of the spider and the cup?  
—To wit, thy roll's concerning Ali's life,  
Un evidenced—thine own word! Little  
boots

Our sympathy with fiction! When I read  
The annals and consider of Tahmasp  
And that sweet sun-surpassing star his  
love,

I weep like a cut vine-twig, though aware  
Zurah's sad fate is fiction, since the snake  
He saw devour her,—how could such exist,  
Having nine heads? No snake boasts more  
than three!

I weep, then laugh—both actions right  
alike.

But thou, Ferishtah, sapiency confessed,  
When at the Day of Judgment God shall  
ask

"Didst thou believe?"—what wilt thou  
plead? Thy tears?

(Nay, they fell fast and stain the parchment  
still)

What if thy tears meant love? Love lack-  
ing ground

—Belief,—avails thee as it would avail  
My own pretence to favour since, forsooth,  
I loved the lady—I, who needs must laugh  
To hear a snake boasts nine heads: they  
have three!"

'Thanks for the well-timed help that's  
born, behold,

Out of thy words, my son,—belief and  
love!

Hast heard of Ishak son of Absal? Ay,  
The very same we heard of, ten years since,  
Slain in the wars: he comes back safe and  
sound,—

Though twenty soldiers saw him die at  
Yezdt,—

Just as a single mule-and-baggage boy  
Declared 'twas like he some day would,—  
for why?

The twenty soldiers lied, he saw him stout,  
Cured of all wounds at once by smear of  
salve,

A Mubid's manufacture: such the tale.  
Now, when his pair of sons were thus ap-  
prised

Effect was twofold on them. "Hail!"  
crowed This:

"Dearer the news than dayspring after  
night!

The cure-reporting youngster warrants me  
Our father shall make glad our eyes once  
more,

For whom, had outpoured life of mine  
sufficed

To bring him back, free broached were  
every vein!"

"Avaunt, delusive tale-concocter, news  
Cruel as meteor simulating dawn!"

Whimpered the other: "Who believes this  
boy

Must disbelieve his twenty seniors: no,  
Return our father shall not! Might my  
death

Purchase his life, how promptly would the  
dole

Be paid as due!" Well, ten years pass,—  
aha,

Ishak is marching homeward,—doubts,  
not he,

Are dead and done with! So, our towns-  
folk straight

Must take on them to counsel. "Go thou  
gay,

Welcome thy father, thou of ready faith!  
Hide thee, contrariwise, thou faithless one,

Expect paternal frowning, blame and  
blows!"

So do our townfolk counsel: dost demur?"



## SHAH ABBAS

'Ferishtah like those simpletons—at loss  
In what is plain as pikestaff? Pish! Suppose

The trustful son had sighed "So much the worse!

Returning means—retaking heritage  
Enjoyed these ten years, who should, say  
me nay?"

How should such trust reward him?  
Trustlessness

—O' the other hand—were what procured  
most praise

To him who judged return impossible,  
Yet hated heritage procured thereby.

A fool were Ishak if he failed to prize  
Mere head's work less than heart's work:  
no fool he!

'Is God less wise? Resume the roll!'  
They did.

*You groped your way across my room i' the  
dear dark dead of night;*

*At each fresh step a stumble was: but, once  
your lamp alight,*

*Easy and plain you walked again: so soon  
all wrong grew right!*

*What lay on floor to trip your foot? Each  
object, late awry,*

*Looked fitly placed, nor proved offence to  
footing free—for why?*

*The lamp showed all, discordant late, grown  
simple symmetry.*

*Be love your light and trust your guide, with  
these explore my heart!*

*No obstacle to trip you then, strike hands and  
souls apart!*

*Since rooms and hearts are furnished so,—  
light shows you,—needs love start?*

### THE FAMILY

A CERTAIN neighbour lying sick to death,  
Ferishtah grieved beneath a palm-tree,  
whence

He rose at peace: whereat objected one  
'Gudarz our friend gasps in extremity.

Sure, thou art ignorant how close at hand  
Death presses, or the cloud, which fouled  
so late

Thy face, had deepened down not light-  
tened off.'

'I judge there will be respite, for I prayed.'

'Sir, let me understand, of charity!  
Yestereve, what was thine admonishment?

"All-wise, all-good, all-mighty—God is  
such!"

How then should man, the all-unworthy,  
dare

Propose to set aside a thing ordained?

To pray means—substitute man's will for  
God's:

Two best wills cannot be: by consequence,  
What is man bound to but—assent, say I?  
Rather to rapture of thanksgiving; since  
That which seems worst to man to God is  
best,

So, because God ordains it, best to man.  
Yet man—the foolish, weak and wicked  
—prays!

Urges "My best were better, didst Thou  
know"!

'List to a tale. A worthy householder  
Of Shiraz had three sons, beside a spouse

Whom, cutting gourds, a serpent bit,  
whereon

The offended limb swelled black from foot  
to fork.

The husband called in aid a leech renowned  
World-wide, confessed the lord of surgery,

And bade him dictate—who forthwith de-  
clared

"Sole remedy is amputation." Straight  
The husband sighed "Thou knowest: be  
it so!"

His three sons heard their mother sen-  
tenced: "Pause!"

Outbroke the elder: "Be precipitate  
Nowise, I pray thee! Take some gentler

way,  
Thou sage of much resource! I will not  
doubt

But science still may save foot, leg and  
thigh!"

The next in age snapped petulant: "Too  
rash!

No reason for this maiming! What, Sir  
Leech,

Our parent limps henceforward while we  
leap?

Shame on thee! Save the limb thou must  
and shalt!"

"Shame on yourselves, ye bold ones!"  
followed up

The brisk third brother, youngest, pertest  
too:

"The leech knows all things, we are ig-  
norant;

What he proposes, gratefully accept!  
For me, had I some unguent bound to heal

Hurts in a twinkling, hardly would I dare  
Essay its virtue and so cross the sage'

By cure his skill pronounces folly. Quick!  
No waiting longer! There the patient lies;

Out then with implements and operate!"

'Ah, the young devil!'

'Why, his reason chimed  
Right with the Hakim's.'

'Hakim's, ay—but chit's?

How? what the skilled eye saw and judged  
of weight

To overbear a heavy consequence,

That—shall a sciolist affect to see?

## THE FAMILY

All he saw—that is, all such oaf should see,  
Was just the mother's suffering.'

'In my tale,  
Be God the Hakim: in the husband's case,  
Call ready acquiescence—aptitude  
Angelic, understanding swift and sure:  
Call the first son—a wise humanity,  
Slow to conceive but duteous to adopt:  
See in the second son—humanity,  
Wrong-headed yet right-hearted, rash but  
kind.

Last comes the cackler of the brood, our  
chit

Who, aping wisdom all beyond his years,  
Thinks to discard humanity itself:  
Fares like the beast which should affect to  
fly

Because a bird with wings may spurn the  
ground,

So, missing heaven and losing earth—  
drops how

But hell-ward? No, be man and nothing  
more—

Man who, as man conceiving, hopes and  
fears,

And craves and deprecates, and loves, and  
loathes,

And bids God help him, till death touch  
his eyes

And show God granted most, denying all.'

*Man I am and man would be, Love—merest  
man and nothing more.*

*Bid me seem no other! Eagles boast of  
pinions—let them soar!*

*I may put forth angel's plumage, once un-  
manned, but not before.*

*Now on earth, to stand suffices,—nay, if  
kneeling serves, to kneel:*

*Here you front me, here I find the all of heaven  
that earth can feel:*

*Sense looks straight,—not over, under,—  
perfect sees beyond appeal.*

*Good you are and wise, full circle: what to  
me were more outside?*

*Wiser wisdom, better goodness? Ah, such  
want the angel's wide*

*Sense to take and hold and keep them! Mine  
at least has never tried.*

## THE SUN

'AND what might that bold man's an-  
nouncement be'—

Ferishtah questioned—'which so moved  
thine ire

That thou didst curse, nay, cuff and kick  
—in short,

Confute the announcer? Wipe those drops  
away

Which start afresh upon thy face at mere  
Mention of such enormity: now, speak!'

'He scrupled not to say—(thou warrant-  
est,

O patient Sir, that I unblamed repeat  
Abominable words which blister tongue?)

God once assumed on earth a human  
shape:

(Lo I have spitten!) Dared I ask the grace,  
Fain would I hear, of thy subtlety,  
From out what hole in man's corrupted  
heart

Creeps such a maggot: fancies verminous  
Breed in the clots there, but a monster born  
Of pride and folly like this pest—thyself  
Only canst trace to egg-shell it hath  
chipped.'

The sun rode high. 'During our igno-  
rance—

Began Ferishtah—'folk esteemed as God  
Yon orb: for argument, suppose him so,—

Be it the symbol, not the symbolized,  
I and thou safer take upon our lips.

Accordingly, yon orb that we adore  
—What is he? Author of all light and life:

Such one must needs be somewhere: this  
is he.

Like what? If I may trust my human eyes,  
A ball composed of spirit-fire, whence  
springs

—What, from this ball, my arms could  
circle round?

All I enjoy on earth. By consequence,  
Inspiring me with—what? Why, love and  
praise.

I eat a palatable fig—there's love  
In little: who first planted what I pluck,

Obtains my little praise, too: more of both  
Keeps due proportion with more cause for  
each:

So, more and ever more, till most of all  
Completes experience, and the orb, des-  
cended

Ultimate giver of all good, perforce  
Gathers unto himself all love, all praise,

Is worshipped—which means loved and  
praised at height.

Back to the first good: 'twas the gardener  
gave

Occasion to my palate's pleasure: grace,  
Plain on his part, demanded thanks on  
mine.

Go up above this giver,—step by step,  
Gain a conception of what—(how and  
why,

Matters not now)—occasioned him to  
give,

Appointed him the gardener of the  
ground,—

I mount by just progression slow and sure  
To some prime giver—here assumed yon  
orb—

Who takes my worship. Whom have I in  
mind,

Thus worshipping, unless a man, my like

## THE SUN

Howe'er above me? Man, I say—how  
 else,  
 I being man who worship? Here's my  
 hand  
 Lifts first a mustard-seed, then weight on  
 weight  
 Greater and ever greater, till at last,  
 It lifts a melon, I suppose, then stops—  
 Hand-strength expended wholly: so, my  
 love  
 First lauds the gardener for the fig his gift,  
 Then, looking higher, loves and lauds still  
 more,  
 Who hires the ground, who owns the  
 ground, Sheikh, Shah,  
 On and away, away and ever on,  
 Till, at the last, it loves and lauds the orb  
 Ultimate cause of all to laud and love.  
 Where is the break, the change of quality  
 In hand's power, soul's impulsion? Gift  
 was grace,  
 The greatest as the smallest. Had I stopped  
 Anywhere in the scale, stayed love and  
 praise  
 As so far only fit to follow gift,  
 Saying "I thanked the gardener for his gift,  
 But now that, lo, the Shah has filled my  
 purse  
 With tomans which avail to purchase me  
 A fig-tree forest, shall I pay the same  
 With love and praise, the gardener's proper  
 fee?"  
 Justly would whoso bears a brain object  
 "Giving is giving, gift claims gift's return,  
 Do thou thine own part, therefore: let the  
 Shah  
 Ask more from who has more to pay."  
 Perchance  
 He gave me from his treasure less by much  
 Than the soil's servant: let that be! My  
 part  
 Is plain—to meet and match the gift and  
 gift  
 With love and love, with praise and praise,  
 till both  
 Cry "All of us is thine, we can no more!"  
 So shall I do man's utmost—man to man:  
 For as our liege the Shah's sublime estate  
 Merely enhaloes, leaves him man the  
 same,  
 So must I count that orb I call a fire  
 (Keep to the language of our ignorance)  
 Something that's fire and more beside.  
 Mere fire  
 —Is it a force which, giving, knows it gives,  
 And wherefore, so may look for love and  
 praise  
 From me, fire's like so far, however less  
 In all beside? Prime cause this fire shall be,  
 Uncaused, all-causing: hence begin the  
 gifts,  
 Thither must go my love and praise—to  
 what?  
 Fire? Symbol fitly serves the symbolized

Herein,—that this same object of my  
 thanks,  
 While to my mind nowise conceivable  
 Except as mind no less than fire, refutes  
 Next moment mind's conception: fire is  
 fire—  
 While what I needs must thank, must  
 needs include  
 Purpose with power,—humanity like mine,  
 Imagined, for the dear necessity,  
 One moment in an object which the next  
 Confesses unimaginable. Power!  
 —What need of will, then? nought op-  
 poses power:  
 Why, purpose? any change must be for  
 worse:  
 And what occasion for beneficence  
 When all that is, so is and so must be?  
 Best being best now, change were for the  
 worse.  
 Accordingly discard these qualities  
 Proper to imperfection, take for type  
 Mere fire, eject the man, retain the orb,—  
 The perfect and, so, inconceivable,—  
 And what remains to love and praise? A  
 stone  
 Fair-coloured proves a solace to my eye,  
 Rolled by my tongue brings moisture cur-  
 ing drouth,  
 And struck by steel emits a useful spark:  
 Shall I return it thanks, the insentient  
 thing?  
 No,—man once, man for ever—man in  
 soul  
 As man in body: just as this can use  
 Its proper senses only, see and hear,  
 Taste, like or loathe according to its law  
 And not another creature's,—even so  
 Man's soul is moved by what, if it in turn  
 Must move, is kindred soul: receiving  
 good  
 —Man's way—must make man's due  
 acknowledgment,  
 No other, even while he reasons out  
 Plainly enough that, were the man un-  
 manned,  
 Made angel of, angelic every way,  
 The love and praise that rightly seek and  
 find  
 Their man-like object now,—instructed  
 more,  
 Would go forth idly, air to emptiness.  
 Our human flower, sun-ripened, proffers  
 scent  
 Though reason prove the sun lacks nose to  
 feed  
 On what himself made grateful: flower  
 and man,  
 Let each assume that scent and love alike  
 Being once born, must needs have use!  
 Man's part  
 Is plain—to send love forth,—astray, per-  
 haps:  
 No matter, he has done his part.'

## THE SUN

‘Wherefrom  
What is to follow—if I take thy sense—  
But that the sun—the inconceivable  
Confessed by man—comprises, all the  
same,  
Man’s every-day conception of himself—  
No less remaining unconceived!’

‘Agreed!’

‘Yet thou, insisting on the right of man  
To feel as man, not otherwise,—man,  
bound  
By man’s conditions neither less nor more,  
Obliged to estimate as fair or foul,  
Right, wrong, good, evil, what man’s  
faculty  
Adjudges such,—how canst thou,—plainly  
bound  
To take man’s truth for truth and only  
truth,—  
Dare to accept, in just one case, as truth  
Falshood confessed? Flesh simulating  
fire—  
Our fellow-man whom we his fellows  
know  
For dust—instinct with fire unknowable!  
Where’s thy man-needed truth—its  
proof, may print  
Of faintest passage on the tablets traced  
By man, termed knowledge? ‘Tis con-  
ceded thee,  
We lack such fancied union—fire with  
flesh:  
But even so, to lack is not to gain  
Our lack’s supplance: where’s the trace  
of such  
Recorded?’

‘What if such a tracing were?  
If some strange story stood,—whate’er its  
worth,—  
That the immensely yearned-for, once be-  
fell,  
—The sun was flesh once?—(keep the  
figure!)’

‘How?

An union inconceivable was fact?’

‘Son, if the stranger have convinced him-  
self  
Fancy is fact—the sun, besides a fire,  
Holds earthly substance somehow fire  
pervades  
And yet consumes not,—earth, he under-  
stands,  
With essence he remains a stranger to,—  
Fittier thou saidst “I stand appalled before  
Conception unattainable by me  
Who need it most”—than this—“What?  
boast he holds  
Conviction where I see conviction’s need,

Alas,—and nothing else? then what re-  
mains  
But that I straightway curse, cuff, kick the  
fool!’”

*Fire is in the flint: true, once a spark escapes,  
Fire forgets the kinship, soars till fancy  
shapes  
Some befitting cradle where the babe had  
birth—  
Wholly heaven’s the product, unallied to  
earth.  
Splendours recognized as perfect in the  
star!—  
In our flint their home was, housed as now  
they are.*

## MIHRAB SHAH

QUOTH an inquirer, ‘Praise the Merciful!  
My thumb which yesterday a scorpion  
nipped—  
(It swelled and blackened)—lo, is sound  
again!  
By application of a virtuous root  
The burning has abated: that is well:  
But now methinks I have a mind to ask,—  
Since this discomfort came of culling herbs  
Nor meaning harm,—why needs a scor-  
pion be?  
Yea, there began, from when my thumb  
last throbbed,  
Advance in question-framing, till I asked  
Wherefore should any evil hap to man—  
From ache of flesh to agony of soul—  
Since God’s All-mercy mates All-potency?  
Nay, why permits He evil to Himself—  
Man’s sin, accounted such? Suppose a  
world  
Purged of all pain, with fit inhabitant—  
Man pure of evil in thought, word and  
deed—  
Were it not well? Then, wherefore other-  
wise?  
Too good result? But He is wholly good!  
Hard to effect? Ay, were He impotent!  
Teach me, Ferishtah!’

Said the Dervish: ‘Friend,  
My chance, escaped to-day, was worse  
than thine:  
I, as I woke this morning, raised my head,  
Which never tumbled but stuck fast on  
neck.  
Was not I glad and thankful!’

‘How could head  
Tumble from neck, unchopped—inform  
me first!  
Unless we take Firdausi’s tale for truth,  
Who ever heard the like?’

‘The like might hap  
By natural law: I let my staff fall thus—

## MIHRAB SHAH

It goes to ground, I know not why. Suppose,  
Whene'er my hold was loosed, it skyward sprang  
As certainly, and all experience proved  
That, just as staves when unsupported sink,  
So, unconfined, they soar?'

'Let such be law—  
Why, a new chapter of sad accidents  
Were added to humanity's mischance,  
No doubt at all, and as a man's false step  
Now lays him prone on earth, contrariwise,  
Removal from his shoulder of a weight  
Might start him upwards to perdition. Ay!  
But, since such law exists in just thy brain,  
I shall not hesitate to doff my cap  
For fear my head take flight.'

'Nor feel relief  
Finding it firm on shoulder. Tell me, now!  
What were the bond 'twixt man and man,  
dost judge,  
Pain once abolished? Come, be true! Our  
Shah—  
How stands he in thy favour? Why that  
shrug?  
Is not he lord and ruler?'

'Easily!  
His mother bore him, first of those four  
wives  
Provided by his father, such his luck:  
Since when his business simply was to  
breathe  
And take each day's new bounty. There  
he stands—  
Where else had I stood, were his birth-star  
mine?  
No, to respect men's power, I needs must  
see  
Men's bare hands seek, find, grasp and  
wield the sword  
Nobody else can brandish! Bless his  
heart,  
'Tis said, he scarcely counts his fingers  
right!'

'Well, then—his princely doles! from  
every feast  
Off go the feasted with the dish they ate  
And cup they drank from,—nay, a change  
besides  
Of garments' . . .

'Sir, put case, for service done,—  
Or best, for love's sake,—such and such a  
slave  
Sold his allowance of sour lentil soup  
To therewith purchase me a pipe-stick,—  
nay,  
If he, by but one hour, cut short his sleep  
To clout my shoe,—that were a sacrifice!'

'All praise his gracious bearing.'

'All praise mine—  
Or would praise did they never make  
approach  
Except on all-fours, crawling till I bade  
"Now that with eyelids thou hast touched  
the earth,  
Come close and have no fear, poor  
nothingness!"  
What wonder that the lady-rose I woo  
And palisade about from every wind,  
Holds herself handsomely? The wilding,  
now,  
Ruffled outside at pleasure of the blast,  
That still lifts up with something of a smile  
Its poor attempt at bloom' . . .

'A blameless life,  
Where wrong might revel with impunity—  
Remember that!'

'The falcon on his fist—  
Reclaimed and trained and belled and  
beautified  
Till she believes herself the Simorgh's  
match—  
She only deigns destroy the antelope,  
Stoops at no carrion-crow: thou marvel-  
lest?'

'So be it, then! He wakes no love in thee  
For any one of divers attributes  
Commonly deemed lovable. All the  
same,  
I would he were not wasting, slow but sure,  
With that internal ulcer' . . .

'Say'st thou so?  
How should I guess? Alack, poor soul!  
But stay—  
Sure in the reach of art some remedy  
Must lie to hand: or if it lurk,—that leech  
Of fame in Tebriz, why not seek his aid?  
Couldst not thou, Dervish, counsel in the  
case?'

'My counsel might be—what imports a  
pang  
The more or less, which puts an end to one  
Odious in spite of every attribute  
Commonly deemed lovable?'

'Attributes?  
Faugh!—nay, Ferishtah,—'tis an ulcer,  
think!  
Attributes, quotha? Here's poor flesh and  
blood,  
Like thine and mine and every man's, a  
prey  
To hell-fire! Hast thou lost thy wits for  
once?'

'Friend, here they are to find and profit by!  
Put pain from out the world, what room  
were left

For thanks to God, for love to Man? Why thanks,—

Except for some escape, whate'er the style,  
From pain that might be, name it as thou mayst?

Why love,—when all thy kind, save me, suppose,

Thy father, and thy son, and...well, thy dog,  
To eke the decent number out—we few  
Who happen—like a handful of chance stars

From the unnumbered host—to shine o'erhead

And lend thee light,—our twinkle all thy store,—

We only take thy love! Mankind, for-sooth?

Who sympathizes with their general joy  
Foolish as undeserved? But pain—see God's

Wisdom at work!—man's heart is made to judge

Pain deserved nowhere by the common flesh

Our birthright,—bad and good deserve alike

No pain, to human apprehension! Lust, Greed, cruelty, injustice, crave (we hold)  
Due punishment from somebody, no doubt:

But ulcer in the midriff! that brings flesh  
Triumphant from the bar whereto arraigned

Soul quakes with reason. In the eye of God  
Pain may have purpose and be justified:  
Man's sense avails to only see, in pain,  
A hateful chance no man but would avert  
Or, failing, needs must pity. Thanks to God

And love to man,—from man take these away,

And what is man worth? Therefore, Mihrab Shah,

Tax me my bread and salt twice over, claim  
Laila my daughter for thy sport,—go on!  
Slay my son's self, maintain thy poetry  
Beats mine,—thou meritest a dozen deaths!

But—ulcer in the stomach,—ah, poor soul,  
Try a fig-plaster: may it ease thy pangs!

*So, the head aches and the limbs are faint!*

*Flesh is a burthen—even to you!*

*Can I force a smile with a fancy quaint?*

*Why are my ailments none or few?*

*In the soul of me sits sluggishness:*

*Body so strong and will so weak!*

*The slave stands fit for the labour—yes,*

*But the master's mandate is still to seek.*

*You, now—what if the outside clay*

*Helped, not hindered the inside flame?*

*My dim to-morrow—your plain to-day,*

*Yours the achievement, mine the aim?*

*So were it rightly, so shall it be!*

*Only, while earth we pace together*

*For the purpose apportioned you and me,  
Closer we tread for a common tether.*

*You shall sigh 'Wait for his sluggish soul!'*

*Shame he should lag, not lamed as I!*

*May not I smile 'Ungained her goal:*

*Body may reach her—by-and-by?'*

### A CAMEL-DRIVER

'How of his fate, the Pilgrims' soldier-guide

Condemned' (Ferishtah questioned), 'for he slew

The merchant whom he convoyed with his bales

—A special treachery?'

'Sir, the proofs were plain:  
Justice was satisfied: between two boards  
The rogue was sawn asunder, rightly served.'

'With all wise men's approval—mine at least.'

'Himself, indeed, confessed as much. "I die

Justly" (groaned he) "through over-greediness

Which tempted me to rob: but grieve the most

That he who quickened sin at slumber,—ay,

Prompted and pestered me till thought grew deed,—

The same is fled to Syria and is safe,  
Laughing at me thus left to pay for both.

My comfort is that God reserves for him Hell's hottest" . . .'

'Idle words.'

'Enlighten me!

Wherefore so idle? Punishment by man  
Has thy assent,—the word is on thy lips.

By parity of reason, punishment  
By God should likelier win thy thanks and praise.'

'Man acts as man must: God, as God be-seems.

A camel-driver, when his beast will bite,  
Thumps her athwart the muzzle: why?'

'How else

Instruct the creature—mouths should munch, not bite?'

'True, he is man, knows but man's trick to teach.

Suppose some plain word, told her first of all,

Had hindered any biting?'

## A CAMEL-DRIVER

'Find him such,  
And fit the beast with understanding first!  
No understanding animals like Rakhsh  
Nowadays, Master! Till they breed on  
earth,  
For teaching—blows must serve.'

'Who deals the blow—  
What if by some rare method,—magic,  
say,—  
He saw into the biter's very soul,  
And knew the fault was so repented of  
It could not happen twice?'

'That's something: still,  
I hear, methinks, the driver say "No less  
Take thy fault's due! Those long-necked  
sisters, see,  
Lean all a-stretch to know if biting meets  
Punishment or enjoys impunity.  
For their sakes—thwack!"'

'The journey home at end,  
The solitary beast safe-stabled now,  
In comes the driver to avenge a wrong  
Suffered from six months since,—apparent-  
ly  
With patience, nay, approval: when the  
jaws

Met i' the small of the arm, "Ha, Ladykin,  
Still at thy frolics, girl of gold?" laughed  
he:  
"Eat flesh? Rye-grass content thee rather  
with,  
Whereof accept a bundle!" Now,—what  
change!  
Laughter by no means! Now 'tis "Fiend,  
thy frisk  
Was fit to find thee provender, didst judge?  
Behold this red-hot twy-prong, thus I stick  
To hiss i' the soft of thee!"'

'Behold? behold  
A crazy noddle, rather! Sure the brute  
Might wellnigh have plain speech coaxed  
out of tongue,  
And grow as voluble as Rakhsh himself  
At such mad outrage. "Could I take thy  
mind,  
Guess thy desire? If biting was offence  
Wherefore the rye-grass bundle, why each  
day's  
Patting and petting, but to intimate  
My playfulness had pleased thee? Thou  
endowed  
With reason, truly!"'

'Reason aims to raise  
Some makeshift scaffold-vantage midway,  
whence  
Man dares, for life's brief moment, peer  
below:  
But ape omniscience? Nay! The ladder  
lent  
To climb by, step and step, until we reach

The little foothold-rise allowed mankind  
To mount on and thence guess the sun's  
survey—

Shall this avail to show us world-wide  
truth  
Stretched for the sun's descreying? Reason  
bids

"Teach, Man, thy beast his duty first of all  
Or last of all, with blows if blows must  
be,—

How else accomplish teaching?" Reason  
adds

"Before man's First, and after man's poor  
Last,  
God operated and will operate."

—Process of which man merely knows this  
much,—

That nowise it resembles man's at all,  
Teaching or punishing.'

'It follows, then,  
That any malefactor I would smite  
With God's allowance, God himself will  
spare  
Presumably. No scape-grace? Then, re-  
joice  
Thou snatch-grace safe in Syria!'

'Friend, such view  
Is but man's wonderful and wide mistake.  
Man lumps his kind i' the mass: God  
singles thence

Unit by unit. Thou and God exist—  
So think!—for certain: think the mass—  
mankind—

Disparts, disperses, leaves thyself alone!  
Ask thy lone soul what laws are plain to  
thee,—

Thee and no other,—stand or fall by them!  
That is the part for thee: regard all else  
For what it may be—Time's illusion. This  
Be sure of—ignorance that sins, is safe.  
No punishment like knowledge! Instance,  
now!

My father's choicest treasure was a book  
Wherein he, day by day and year by year,  
Recorded gains of wisdom for my sake  
When I should grow to manhood. While a  
child,

Coming upon the casket where it lay  
Unguarded,—what did I but toss the thing  
Into a fire to make more flame therewith,  
Meaning no harm? So acts man three-  
years old!

I grieve now at my loss by witlessness,  
But guilt was none to punish. Man  
mature—

Each word of his I lightly held, each look  
I turned from—wish that wished in vain  
—nay, will

That willed and yet went all to waste—'tis  
these

Rankle like fire. Forgiveness? rather  
grant

## A CAMEL-DRIVER

Forgetfulness! The past is past and lost.  
However near I stand in his regard,  
So much the nearer had I stood by steps  
Offered the feet which rashly spurned their  
help.

That I call Hell; why further punishment?'

*When I vexed you and you chid me,  
And I owned my fault and turned  
My cheek the way you bid me,  
And confessed the blow well earned,—*

*My comfort all the while was  
—Fault was faulty—near, not quite!  
Do you wonder why the smile was?  
O'erpunished wrong grew right.*

*But faults you ne'er suspected,  
Nay, praised, no faults at all,—  
Those would you had detected—  
Crushed eggs whence snakes could crawl!*

### TWO CAMELS

QUOTH one: 'Sir, solve a scruple! No  
true sage

I hear of, but instructs his scholar thus:  
"Wouldst thou be wise? Then mortify  
thyself!

Baulk of its craving every bestial sense!  
Say 'If I relish melons—so do swine!  
Horse, ass and mule consume their pro-  
vender

Nor leave a pea-pod: fasting feeds the  
soul."

Thus they admonish: while thyself, I note,  
Eatest thy ration with an appetite,  
Nor fallest foul of whoso licks his lips  
And sighs—"Well-saffroned was that bar-  
ley soup!"

Can wisdom co-exist with—gorge-and-  
swill,

I say not,—simply sensual preference  
For this or that fantastic meat and drink?  
Moreover, wind blows sharper than its  
wont

This morning, and thou hast already  
donned

Thy sheepskin over-garment: sure the  
sage

Is busied with conceits that soar above  
A petty change of season and its chance  
Of causing ordinary flesh to sneeze?  
I always thought, Sir' . . .

'Son,' Ferishtah said,  
'Truth ought to seem as never thought  
before.

How if I give it birth in parable?

A neighbour owns two camels, beasts of  
price

And promise, destined each to go, next  
week,

Swiftly and surely with his merchandise  
From Nishapur to Sebzevar, no truce

To tramp, but travel, spite of sands and  
drouth,

In days so many, lest they miss the Fair.  
Each falls to meditation o'er his crib  
Piled high with provender before the start.  
Quoth this: "My soul is set on winning

praise  
From goodman lord and master,—hump  
to hoof,

I dedicate me to his service. How?  
Grass, purslane, lupines and I know not  
what,

Crammed in my manger? Ha, I see—I  
see!

No, master, spare thy money! I shall  
trudge

The distance and yet cost thee not a doit  
Beyond my supper on this mouldy bran."

"Be magnified, O master, for the meal  
So opportunely liberal!" quoth that.

"What use of strength in me but to sur-  
mount

Sands and simooms, and bend beneath  
thy bales

No knee until I reach the glad bazaar?  
Thus I do justice to thy fare: no sprig

Of toothsome chervil must I leave un-  
chewed!

Too bitterly should I reproach myself  
Did I sink down in sight of Sebzevar,

Remembering how the merest mouthful  
more

Had heartened me to manage yet a mile!"  
And so it proved: the too-abstemious

brute

Midway broke down, his pack rejoiced  
the thieves,

His carcass fed the vultures: not so he  
The wisely thankful, who, good market-  
drudge,

Let down his lading in the market-place,  
No damage to a single pack. Which beast,

Think ye, had praise and patting and a  
brand

Of good-and-faithful-servant fixed on  
flank?

So, with thy squeamish scruple. What  
imports

Fasting or feasting? Do thy day's work,  
dare

Refuse no help thereto, since help refused  
Is hindrance sought and found. Win but

the race—  
Who shall object "He tossed three wine  
cups off,

And, just at starting, Lilith kissed his  
lips"?

'More soberly,—consider this, my Son.

Put case I never have myself enjoyed,  
Known by experience what enjoyment

means,  
How shall I—share enjoyment?—no,  
indeed!—



## TWO CAMELS

Supply it to my fellows,—ignorant,  
As so I should be of the thing they crave,  
How it affects them, works for good or ill.  
Style my enjoyment self-indulgence—  
sin—

Why should I labour to infect my kind  
With sin's occasion, bid them too enjoy,  
Who else might neither catch nor give  
again

Joy's plague, but live in righteous misery?  
Just as I cannot, till myself convinced,  
Impart conviction, so, to deal forth joy  
Adroitly, needs must I know joy myself.  
Renounce joy for my fellows' sake?

That's joy  
Beyond joy; but renounced for mine, not  
theirs?

Why, the physician called to help the sick,  
Cries "Let me, first of all, discard my  
health!"

No, Son: the richness hearted in such joy  
Is in the knowing what are gifts we give,  
Not in a vain endeavour not to know!  
Therefore, desire joy and thank God for it!  
The Adversary said,—a Jew reports,—

התם רא איוב אלהים  
In Persian phrase, "Does Job fear God for  
nought?"

Job's creatureship is not abjured, thou  
fool!

He nowise isolates himself and plays  
The independent equal, owns no more  
Than himself gave himself, so why thank  
God?

A proper speech were this מאלהים  
"Equals we are, Job, labour for thyself.  
Nor bid me help thee: bear, as best flesh  
may,

Pains I inflict not nor avail to cure:  
Beg of me nothing thou thyself mayst win  
By work, or waive with magnanimity,  
Since we are peers acknowledged,—  
scarcely peers,

Had I implanted any want of thine  
Only my power could meet and gratify."  
No: rather hear, at man's indifference—  
"Wherefore did I contrive for thee that ear  
Hungry for music, and direct thine eye  
To where I hold a seven-stringed instru-  
ment,

Unless I meant thee to beseech me play?"

Once I saw a chemist take a pinch of powder  
—Simple dust it seemed—and half-unstop  
a phial:

—Out dropped harmless dew. "Mixed  
nothings make"—quoth he—

"Something!" So they did: a thunderclap,  
but louder—

Lightning-flash, but fiercer—put spectators'  
nerves to trial:

Sure enough, we learned what was, imagined  
what might be.

Had I no experience how a lip's mere tremble,  
Look's half hesitation, cheek's just change  
of colour,

These effect a heartquake,—how should I  
conceive

What heaven there may be? Let it but re-  
semble

Earth myself have known! No bliss that's  
finer, fuller,

Only—bliss that lasts, they say, and fain  
would I believe.

## CHERRIES

'WHAT, I disturb thee at thy morning-  
meal:

Cherries so ripe already? Eat apace!  
I recollect thy lesson yesterday.

Yet—thanks, Sir, for thy leave to inter-  
rupt' . . .

'Friend, I have finished my repast, thank  
God!'

'There now, thy thanks for breaking fast  
on fruit!—

Thanks being praise, or tantamount  
thereto.

Prithee consider, have not things degree,  
Lofty and low? Are things not great and  
small,

Thence claiming praise and wonder more  
or less?

Shall we confuse them, with thy warrant  
too,

Whose doctrine otherwise begins and ends  
With just this precept "Never faith enough  
In man as weakness, God as potency"?.  
When I would pay soul's tribute to that  
same,

Why not look up in wonder, bid the stars  
Attest my praise of the All-mighty One?  
What are man's puny members and as  
mean

Requirements weighed with Star-King  
Mushtari?

There is the marvel!'

'Not to man—that's me.

List to what happened late, in fact or  
dream.

A certain stranger, bound from far away,  
Still the Shah's subject, found himself  
before

Ispahan palace-gate. As duty bade,  
He enters in the courts, will, if he may,  
See so much glory as befits a slave  
Who only comes, of mind to testify  
How great and good is shown our lord the  
Shah.

In he walks, round he casts his eye about,  
Looks up and down, admires to heart's  
content,

Ascends the gallery, tries door and door,  
None says his reverence nay: peeps in at  
each,

Wonders at all the unimagined use,  
Gold here and jewels there,—so vast, that  
hall—

So perfect yon pavilion!—lamps above  
Bidding look up from luxuries below,—  
Evermore wonder topping wonder,—  
last—

Sudden he comes upon a cosy nook,  
A nest-like little chamber, with his name,  
His own, yea, his and no mistake at all,  
Plain o'er the entry: what, and he describes  
Just those arrangements inside,—oh, the  
care!—

Suited to soul and body both,—so snug  
The cushion—nay, the pipe-stand fur-  
nished so!

Whereat he cries aloud,—what think'st  
thou, Friend?

“That these my slippers should be just my  
choice,

Even to the colour that I most affect,  
Is nothing: ah, that lamp, the central sun,  
What must it light within its minaret  
I scarce dare guess the good of! Who lives  
there?

That let me wonder at,—no slipper-toys  
Meant for the foot, forsooth, which kicks  
them—thus!”

“Never enough faith in omnipotence,—  
Never too much, by parity, of faith  
In impuissance, man's—which turns to  
strength

When once acknowledged weakness every  
way.

How? Hear the teaching of another tale.

“Two men once owed the Shah a mighty  
sum,

Beggars they both were: this one crossed  
his arms

And bowed his head,—“whereof,”—  
sighed he,—“each hair

Proved it a jewel, how the host's amount  
Were idly strewn for payment at thy feet!”

“Lord, here they lie, my havings poor and  
scant!

All of the berries on my currant-bush,  
What roots of garlic have escaped the  
mice,

And some five pippins from the seedling  
tree,—

Would they were half-a-dozen! anyhow;  
Accept my all, poor beggar that I am!”

“Received in full of all demands!” smiled  
back

The apportioner of every lot of ground  
From inch to acre. Littleless of love

Befits the littleless of loving thing.  
What if he boasted “Seeing I am great,

Great must my corresponding tribute be?”  
Mushtari,—well, suppose him seven times  
seven

The sun's superior, proved so by some  
sage:

Am I that sage? To me his twinkle blue  
Is all I know of him and thank him for,  
And therefore I have put the same in  
verse—

“Like yon blue twinkle, twink's thine eye,  
my Love!”

“Neither shalt thou be troubled overmuch  
Because thy offering,—littleness itself,—  
Is lessened by admixture sad and strange  
Of mere man's-motives,—praise with fear,  
and love

With looking after that same love's reward.  
Alas, Friend, what was free from this  
alloy,—

Some smatch thereof,—in best and purest  
love

Proffered thy earthly father? Dust thou art,  
Dust shalt be to the end. Thy father took  
The dust, and kindly called the handful—  
gold,

Nor cared to count what sparkled here and  
there,

Sagely unanalytic. Thank, praise, love  
(Sum up thus) for the lowest favours first,  
The commonest of comforts! aught beside  
Very omnipotence had overlooked  
Such needs, arranging for thy little life.

Nor waste thy power of love in wonder-  
ment

At what thou wiselier lettest shine unsoiled  
By breath of word. That this last cherry  
soothes

A roughness of my palate, that I know:  
His Maker knows why Mushtari was  
made.’

*Verse-making was least of my virtues: I  
viewed with despair*

*Wealth that never yet was but might be—  
all that verse-making were*

*If the life would but lengthen to wish, let the  
mind be laid bare.*

*So I said ‘To do little is bad, to do nothing is  
worse’—*

*And made verse.*

*Love-making,—how simple a matter! No  
depths to explore,*

*No heights in a life to ascend! No dis-  
heartening Before,*

*No affrighting Hereafter,—love now will be  
love evermore.*

*So I felt ‘To keep silence were folly:’—all  
language above,  
I made love.*

## PLOT-CULTURE

‘Ay, but, Ferishtah,’—a disciple  
smirked,—

‘That verse of thine “How twink's thine  
eye, my Love,

## PLOT-CULTURE

Blue as yon star-beam!" much arrides  
myself

Who haply may obtain a kiss therewith  
This eve from Laila where the palms  
abound—

My youth, my warrant—so the palms be  
close!

Suppose when thou art earnest in 'dis-  
course

Concerning high and holy things,—abrupt  
I out with—"Laila's lip, how honey-  
sweet!"—

What say'st thou, were it scandalous or  
no?

I feel thy shoe sent flying at my mouth  
For daring—prodigy of impudence—

Publish what, secret, were permissible.  
Well,—one slide further in the imagined

slough,—  
Knee-deep therein, (respect thy rever-  
ence!)

Suppose me well aware thy very self  
Stooped prying through the palm-screen,  
while I dared

Solace me with caressings all the same?  
Unutterable, nay—unthinkable,

Undreamable a deed of shame! Alack,  
How will it fare shouldst thou impress on

me  
That certainly an Eye is over all  
And each, to mark the minute's deed,

word, thought,  
As worthy of reward or punishment?

Shall I permit my sense an Eye-viewed  
shame,

Broad daylight perpetration,—so to  
speak,—

I had not dared to breathe within the Ear,  
With black night's help about me? Yet I  
stand

A man, no monster, made of flesh not  
cloud:

Why made so, if my making prove offence  
To Maker's eye and ear?

'Thou wouldst not stand  
Distinctly Man,'—Ferishtah made reply,  
'Not the mere creature,—did no limit-line

Round thee about, apportion thee thy  
place

Clean-cut from out and off the illimit-  
able,—

Minuteness severed from immensity.  
All of thee for the Maker,—for thyself,

Workings inside the circle that evolve  
Thine all,—the product of thy cultured

plot.  
So much of grain the ground's lord bids  
thee yield

Bring sacks to granary in Autumn! spare  
Daily intelligence of this manure,

That compost, how they tend to feed the  
soil:

There thou art master sole and absolute

—Only, remember doomsday! Twitt'st  
thou me

Because I turn away my outraged nose  
Shouldst thou obtrude thereon a shovelful

Of fertilizing kisses? Since thy sire  
Wills and obtains thy marriage with the

maid,  
Enough! Be reticent, I counsel thee,  
Nor venture to acquaint him, point by

point,  
What he procures thee. Is he so obtuse?  
Keep thy instruction to thyself! My ass—

Only from him expect acknowledgment  
The while he champs my gift, a thistle-

bunch,  
How much he loves the largess: of his love  
I only tolerate so much as tells

By wrinkling nose and inarticulate grunt,  
The meal, that heartens him to do my

work,  
Tickles his palate as I meant it should.'

*Not with my Soul, Love!—bid no Soul like  
mine*

*Lap thee around nor leave the poor Sense  
room!*

*Soul,—travel-worn, toil-weary,—would  
confine*

*Along with Soul, Soul's gains from glow  
and gloom,*

*Captures from soarings high and divings  
deep.*

*Spoil-laden Soul, how should such memories  
sleep?*

*Take Sense, too—let me love entire and  
whole—*

*Not with my Soul!*

*Eyes shall meet eyes and find no eyes be-  
tween,*

*Lips feed on lips, no other lips to fear!*

*No past, no future—so thine arms but screen  
The present from surprise! not there, 'tis*

*here—*

*Not then, 'tis now:—back, memories that  
intrude!*

*Make, Love, the universe our solitude,*

*And, over all the rest, oblivion roll—  
Sense quenching. Soul!*

## A PILLAR AT SEBZEVAR

'KNOWLEDGE deposed, then!'—groaned  
whom that most grieved

As foolishest of all the company.  
'What, knowledge, man's distinctive attri-

bute,  
He doffs that crown to emulate an ass  
Because the unknowing long-ears loves at

least  
Husked lupines, and belike the feeder's

self  
—Whose purpose in the dole what ass  
divines?'

## A PILLAR AT SEBZEVAR

'Friend,' quoth Ferishtah, 'all I seem to know  
Is—I know nothing save that love I can  
Boundlessly, endlessly. My curls were crowned  
In youth with knowledge,—off, alas, crown slipped  
Next moment, pushed by better knowledge still  
Which nowise proved more constant: gain, to-day,  
Was toppling loss to-morrow, lay at last  
—Knowledge, the golden?—lacquered ignorance!  
As gain—mistrust it! Not as means to gain:  
Lacquer we learn by: cast in fining-pot, We learn,—when what seemed ore assayed  
proves dross,—  
Surelier true gold's worth, guess how purity  
I' the lode were precious could one light on ore  
Clarified up to test of crucible.  
The prize is in the process: knowledge means  
Ever-renewed assurance by defeat  
That victory is somehow still to reach,  
But love is victory, the prize itself:  
Love—trust to! Be rewarded for the trust  
In trust's mere act. In love success is sure,  
Attainment—no delusion, whatsoe'er  
The prize be: apprehended as a prize,  
A prize it is. Thy child as surely grasps  
An orange as he fails to grasp the sun  
Assumed his capture. What if soon he finds  
The foolish fruit unworthy grasping? Joy  
In shape and colour,—that was joy as true—  
Worthy in its degree of love—as grasp  
Of sun were, which had singed his hand beside.  
What if he said the orange held no juice  
Since it was not that sun he hoped to suck?  
This constitutes the curse that spoils our life  
And sets man maundering of his misery.  
That there's no meanest atom he obtains  
Of what he counts for knowledge but he cries  
"Hold here,—I have the whole thing,—  
know, this time,  
Nor need search farther!" Whereas, strew  
his path  
With pleasures, and he scorns them while  
he stoops:  
"This fitly call'st thou pleasure, pick up  
this  
And praise it, truly? I reserve my thanks  
For something more substantial." Fool  
not thus  
In practising with life and its delights!  
Enjoy the present gift, nor wait to know

The unknowable. Enough to say "I feel  
Love's sure effect, and, being loved, must  
love  
The love its cause behind,—I can and do!"  
Nor turn to try thy brain-power on the  
fact,  
(Apart from as it strikes thee, here and  
now—  
Its how and why, i' the future and else-  
where)  
Except to—yet once more, and ever again,  
Confirm thee in thy utter ignorance:  
Assured that, whatsoe'er the quality  
Of love's cause, save that love was caused  
thereby,  
This—nigh upon revealment as it seemed  
A minute since—defies thy longing looks,  
Withdrawn into the unknowable once  
more.  
Wholly distrust thy knowledge, then, and  
trust  
As wholly love allied to ignorance!  
There lies thy truth and safety. Love is  
praise,  
And praise is love! Refine the same, con-  
trive  
An intellectual tribute—ignorance  
Appreciating ere approbative  
Of knowledge that is infinite? With us  
The small, who use the knowledge of our  
kind  
Greater than we, more wisely ignorance  
Restricts its apprehension, sees and knows  
No more than brain accepts in faith of  
sight,  
Takes first what comes first, only sure so  
far.  
By Sebzevar a certain pillar stands  
So aptly that its gnomon tells the hour;  
What if the townsmen said "Before we  
thank  
Who placed it, for his serviceable craft,  
And go to dinner since its shade tells noon,  
Needs must we have the craftsman's pur-  
pose clear  
On half a hundred more recondite points  
Than a mere summons to a vulgar meal!"  
Better they say "How opportune the help!  
Be loved and praised, thou kindly-hearted  
sage  
Whom Hudhud taught,—the gracious  
spirit-bird.—  
How to construct the pillar, teach the  
time!"  
So let us say—not "Since we know, we  
love,"  
But rather "Since we love, we know  
enough."  
Perhaps the pillar by a spell controlled  
Mushtari in his courses? Added grace  
Surely I count it that the sage devised,  
Beside celestial service, ministry  
To all the land, by one sharp shade at  
noon

## A PILLAR AT SEBZEVAR

Falling as folk foresee. Once more then,  
Friend—

(What ever in those careless ears of thine  
Withal I needs must round thee)—know-  
ledge doubt

Even wherein it seems demonstrable!  
Love,—in the claim for love, that's grati-  
tude

For apprehended pleasure, nowise doubt!  
Pay its due tribute,—sure that pleasure is,  
While knowledge may be, at the most.

See, now!

Eating my breakfast, I thanked God.—  
"For love

Shown in the cherries' flavour? Conse-  
crate

So petty an example?" There's the fault!  
We circumscribe omnipotence. Search  
sand

To unearth water: if first handful scooped  
Yields thee a draught, what need of dig-  
ging down

Full fifty fathoms deep to find a spring  
Whereof the pulse might deluge half the  
land?

Drain the sufficient drop, and praise what  
checks

The drouth that glues thy tongue,—what  
more would help

A brimful cistern? Ask the cistern's boon  
When thou wouldst solace camels: in thy  
case,

Relish the drop and love the loveable!"

'And what may be unloveable?

'Why, hate!

If out of sand comes sand and nought but  
sand,

Affect not to be quaffing at mirage,  
Nor nickname pain as pleasure. That,  
belike,

Constitutes just the trial of thy wit  
And worthiness to gain promotion,—  
hence,

Proves the true purpose of thine actual  
life.

Thy soul's environment of things per-  
ceived,

Things visible and things invisible,  
Fact, fancy—all was purposed to evolve  
This and this only—was thy wit of worth

To recognize the drop's use, love the same,  
And loyally declare against mirage  
Though all the world asseverated dust

Was good to drink? Say, "what made  
moist my lip,

That I acknowledged moisture:" thou art  
saved!

'For why? The creature and creator stand  
Rightly related so. Consider well!

Were knowledge all thy faculty, then God  
Must be ignored: love gains him by first  
leap.

Frankly accept the creatureship: ask good  
To love for: press bold to the tether's end  
Allotted to this life's intelligence!

"So we offend?" Will it offend thyself  
If,—impotence praying potency,—

Thy child beseech that thou command the  
sun

Rise bright to-morrow—thou, he thinks  
supreme

In power and goodness, why shouldst thou  
refuse?

Afterward, when the child matures, per-  
chance

The fault were greater if, with wit full-  
grown,

The stripling dared to ask for a dinar,  
Than that the boy cried "Pluck Sitara

down  
And give her me to play with!" 'Tis for  
him

To have no bounds to his belief in thee:  
For thee it also is to let her shine

Lustrous and lonely, so best serving him!"

*Ask not one least word of praise!*

*Words declare your eyes are bright?*

*What then meant that summer day's*

*Silence spent in one long gaze?*

*Was my silence wrong or right?*

*Words of praise were all to seek!*

*Face of you and form of you,*

*Did they find the praise so weak*

*When my lips just touched your cheek—*

*Touch which let my soul come through?*

## A BEAN-STRIPE: ALSO, APPLE- EATING

'LOOK, I strew beans' . . .

(Ferishtah, we premise,

Strove this way with a scholar's cavilment  
Who put the peevish question: 'Sir, be  
frank!

A good thing or a bad thing—Life is  
which?

Shine and shade, happiness and misery  
Battle it out there: which force beats, I

ask?  
If I pick beans from out a bushful—

This one, this other,—then demand of thee  
What colour names each justly in the

main,—  
"Black" I expect, and "White" ensues

reply:  
No hesitation for what speck, spot, splash

Of either colour's opposite, intrudes  
To modify thy judgment. Well, for beans

Substitute days,—show, ranged in order,  
Life—

Then, tell me its true colour! Time is short,  
Life's days compose a span,—as brief be  
speech!

## A BEAN-STRIPE : ALSO, APPLE-EATING

Black I pronounce for, like the Indian  
     Sage,—  
 Black—present, past and future, inter-  
     persed  
 With blanks, no doubt, which simple folk  
     style Good  
 Because not Evil: no, indeed? Forsooth  
 Black's shade on White is White too!  
     What's the worst  
 Of Evil but that, past, it overshades  
 The else-exempted present?—memory,  
 We call the plague! "Nay, but our  
     memory fades  
 And leaves the past unsullied!" Does it  
     so?  
 Why, straight the purpose of such breath-  
     ing-space,  
 Such respite from past ill, grows plain  
     enough!  
 What follows on remembrance of the past?  
 Fear of the future! Life, from birth to  
     death,  
 Means—either looking back on harm  
     escaped,  
 Or looking forward to that harm's return  
 With tenfold power of harming. Black,  
     not White,  
 Never the whole consummate quietude  
 Life should be, troubled by no fear!—nor  
     hope—  
 I'll say, since lamplight dies in noontide,  
     hope  
 Loses itself in certainty. Such lot  
 Man's might have been; I leave the conse-  
     quence  
 To bolder critics of the Primal Cause;  
 Such am not I: but, man—as man I speak:  
 Black is the bean-throw: evil is the Life!')  
  
 'Look, I strew beans'—resumed Ferish-  
     tah—'beans  
 Blackish and whitish; what they figure  
     forth  
 Shall be man's sum of moments, bad and  
     good,  
 That make up Life,—each moment when  
     he feels  
 Pleasure or pain, his poorest fact of sense,  
 Consciousness-anyhow: there's stand the  
     first;  
 Whence next advance shall be from points  
     to line,  
 Singulars to a series, parts to whole,  
 And moments to the Life. How look they  
     now,  
 Viewed in the large, those little joys and  
     griefs  
 Ranged duly all a-row at last, like beans  
 —These which I strew? This bean was  
     white, this—black,  
 Set by itself,—but see if, good and bad  
 Each following either in companionship,  
 Black have not grown less black and white  
     less white,

Till blackish seems but dun, and whitish  
     —grey,  
 And the whole line turns—well, or black  
     to thee  
 Or white belike to me—no matter which:  
 The main result is—both are modified  
 According to our eye's scope, power of  
     range  
 Before and after. Black dost call this  
     bean?  
 What, with a whiteness in its wake, which  
     —see—  
 Suffuses half its neighbour?—and, in turn,  
 Lowers its pearliness late absolute,  
 Frowned upon by the jet which follows  
     hard—  
 Else wholly white my bean were. Choose  
     a joy!  
 Bettered it was by sorrow gone before,  
 And sobered somewhat by the shadowy  
     sense  
 Of sorrow which came after or might  
     come.  
 Joy, sorrow,—by precedence, subse-  
     quence—  
 Either on each, make fusion, mix in Life  
 That's both and neither wholly: grey or  
     dun?  
 Dun thou decidest? grey prevails, say I:  
 Wherefore? Because my view is wide  
     enough,  
 Reaches from first to last nor winks at all:  
 Motion achieves it: stop short—fast we  
     stick,—  
 Probably at the bean that's blackest.

'Since—

Son, trust me,—this I know and only this—  
 I am in motion, and all things beside  
 That circle round my passage through  
     their midst,—  
 Motionless, these are, as regarding me:  
 —Which means, myself I solely recognize.  
 They too may recognize themselves, not  
     me,  
 For aught I know or care: but plain they  
     serve  
 This, if no other purpose—stuff to try  
 And test my power upon of raying light  
 And lending hue to all things as I go  
 Moonlike through vapour. Mark the fly-  
     ing orb!  
 Think'st thou the halo, painted still afresh  
 At each new cloud-fleece pierced and pas-  
     saged through,  
 This was and is and will be evermore  
 Coloured in permanence? The glory  
     swims  
 Girdling the glory-giver, swallowed  
     straight  
 By night's abysmal gloom, unglorified  
 Behind as erst before the advancer:  
     gloom?  
 Faced by the onward-faring, see, succeeds

## A BEAN-STRIPE: ALSO, APPLE-EATING

From the abandoned heaven a next surprise,  
 And where's the gloom now?—silver-smitten straight,  
 One glow and variegation! So with me,  
 Who move and make,—myself,—the black, the white,  
 The good, the bad, of life's environment.  
 Stand still! black stays black: start again! there's white  
 Asserts supremacy: the motion's all  
 That colours me my moment: seen as joy?  
 I have escaped from sorrow, or that was  
 Or might have been: as sorrow?—thence shall be  
 Escape as certain: white preceded black,  
 Black shall give way to white as duly,—so,  
 Deepest in black means white most imminent.  
 Stand still,—have no before, no after!—life  
 Proves death, existence grows impossible  
 To man like me. "What else is blessed sleep  
 But death, then?" Why, a rapture of release  
 From toil,—that's sleep's approach: as certainly,  
 The end of sleep means, toil is triumphed o'er:  
 These round the blank unconsciousness between  
 Brightness and brightness, either pushed to blaze  
 Just through that blank's interposition.  
 Hence  
 The use of things external: man—that's I—  
 Practise thereon my power of casting light,  
 And calling substance,—when the light I cast  
 Breaks into colour,—by its proper name  
 —A truth and yet a falsity: black, white,  
 Names each bean taken from what lay so close  
 And threw such tint: pain might mean pain indeed  
 Seen in the passage past it,—pleasure prove  
 No mere delusion while I paused to look,—  
 Though what an idle fancy was that fear  
 Which overhung and hindered pleasure's hue!  
 While how, again, pain's shade enhanced the shine  
 Of pleasure, else no pleasure! Such effects  
 Came of such causes. Passage at an end,—  
 Past, present, future pains and pleasures fused  
 So that one glance may gather blacks and whites  
 Into a life-time,—like my bean-streak there,

Why, white they whirl into, not black—for me!

'Ay, but for me? The indubitable blacks, Immeasurable miseries, here, there And everywhere i' the world—world outside thine

Paled off so opportunely,—body's plague, Torment of soul,—where's found thy fellowship

With wide humanity all round about Reeling beneath its burden? What's despair?

Behold that man, that woman, child—nay, brute!

Will any speck of white unblacken life Splashed, splotted, dyed hell-deep now from end to end

For him or her or it—who knows? Not I!'

'Nor I, Son! "It" shall stand for bird, beast, fish,

Reptile, and insect even: take the last! There's the palm-aphis, minute miracle As wondrous every whit as thou or I: Well, and his world's the palm-frond, there he's born,

Lives, breeds and dies in that circumference,

An inch of green for cradle, pasture-ground,

Purlieu and grave: the palm's use, ask of him!

"To furnish these," replies his wit: ask thine—

Who see the heaven above, the earth below,

Creation everywhere,—these, each and all Claim certain recognition from the tree For special service rendered branch and bole,

Top-tuft and tap-root:—for thyself, thus seen,

Palms furnish dates to eat, and leaves to shade,

—Maybe, thatch huts with,—have another use

Than strikes the aphis. So with me, my Son!

I know my own appointed patch i' the world,

What pleasures me or pains there: all outside—

How he, she, it, and even thou, Son, live, Are pleased or pained, is past conjecture, once

I pry beneath the semblance,—all that's fit, To practise with,—reach where the fact may lie

Fathom-deep lower. There's the first and last

Of my philosophy. Blacks blur thy white? Not mine! The aphis feeds, nor finds his leaf

## A BEAN-STRIPE : ALSO, APPLE-EATING

Untenable because a lance-thrust, nay,  
Lightning strikes ere a moss-patch close  
beside,

Where certain other aphids live and love.  
Restriction to his single inch of white,  
That's law for him, the aphid: but for me,  
The man, the larger-souled, beside my  
stretch

Of blacks and whites, I see a world of woe  
All round about me: one such burst of  
black

Intolerable o'er the life I count  
White in the main, and, yea—white's  
faintest trace

Were clean abolished once and evermore.  
Thus fare my fellows, swallowed up in  
gloom

So far as I discern: how far is that?  
God's care be God's! 'Tis mine—to boast  
no joy

Unsobered by such sorrows of my kind  
As sully with their shade my life that  
shines.

'Reflected possibilities of pain,  
Forsooth, just chasten pleasure! Pain it-  
self,—

Fact and not fancy, does not this affect  
The general colour?'

'Here and there a touch  
Taught me, betimes, the artifice of  
things—

That all about, external to myself,  
Was meant to be suspected,—not revealed  
Demonstrably a cheat,—but half seen  
through,

Lest white should rule unchecked along  
the line:

Therefore white may not triumph. All the  
same,

Of absolute and irretrievable  
And all-subduing black,—black's soul of  
black

Beyond white's power to disintensify,—  
Of that I saw no sample: such may wreck  
My life and ruin my philosophy

To-morrow, doubtless: hence the constant  
shade

Cast on life's shine,—the tremor that in-  
trudes

When firmest seems my faith in white.  
Dost ask

"Who is Ferishtah, hitherto exempt  
From black experience? Why, if God be  
just,

Were sundry fellow-mortals singled out  
To undergo experience for his sake,  
Just that the gift of pain, bestowed on  
them,

In him might temper to the due degree  
Joy's else-excessive largess?" Why, in-  
deed!

Back are we brought thus to the starting-  
point—

Man's impotency, God's omnipotence,  
These stop my answer. Aphis that I am,  
How leave my inch-allotment, pass at will  
Into my fellow's liberty of range,

Enter into his sense of black and white,  
As either, seen by me from outside, seems  
Predominatingly the colour? Life,

Lived by my fellow, shall I pass into  
And myself live there? No—no more than  
pass

From Persia, where in sun since birth I  
bask

Daily, to some ungracious land afar,  
Told of by travellers, where the might of  
snow

Smothers up day, and fluids lose them-  
selves

Frozen to marble. How I bear the sun,  
Beat though he may unduly, that I know:  
How blood once curdled ever creeps again,

Baffles conjecture: yet since people live  
Somehow, resist a clime would conquer  
me,

Somehow provided for their sake must  
dawn

Compensative resource. "No sun, no  
grapes,—

Then, no subsistence!"—were it wisely  
said?

Or this well-reasoned—"Do I dare feel  
warmth

And please my palate here with Persia's  
vine,

Though, over-mounts,—to trust the tra-  
veller,—

Snow, feather-thick, is falling while I feast?  
What if the cruel winter force his way  
Here also?" Son, the wise reply were this:

When cold from over-mounts spikes  
through and through

Blood, bone and marrow of Ferishtah,—  
then,

Time to look out for shelter—time, at  
least,

To wring the hands and cry "No shelter  
serves!"

Shelter, of some sort, no experienced chill  
Warrants that I despair to find.'

'No less,  
Doctors have differed here; thou say'st thy  
say;

Another man's experience masters thine,  
Flat controverted by the sourly-Sage,  
The Indian witness who, with faculty

Fine as Ferishtah's, found no white at all  
Chequer the world's predominating black,  
No good out evil from supremacy,

So that Life's best was that it led to death.  
How of his testimony?'

'Son, suppose  
My camel told me: "Threescore days and  
ten



## A BEAN-STRIFE : ALSO, APPLE-EATING

I traversed hill and dale, yet never found  
Food to stop hunger, drink to stay my  
drouth;

Yet, here I stand alive, which take in proof  
That to survive was found impossible!"  
"Nay, rather take thou, non-surviving  
beast"

(Reply were prompt), "on flank 'this  
thwack of staff"

Nowise affecting flesh that's dead and dry!  
Thou wincest? Take correction twice,  
amend

Next time thy nomenclature! Call white  
—white!"

The sourly-Sage, for whom life's best was  
death,

Lived out his seventy years, looked hale,  
laughed loud,

Liked—above all—his dinner,—lied, in  
short,'

'Lied is a rough phrase: say he fell from  
truth

In climbing towards it!—sure less faulty so  
Than had he sat him down and stayed content

With thy safe orthodoxy, "White, all  
white,

White everywhere for certain I should see  
Did I but understand how white is black,  
As clearer sense than mine would."

Clearer sense,—

Whose may that be? Mere human eyes I  
boast,

And such distinguish colours in the main,  
However any tongue, that's human too,  
Please to report the matter. Dost thou  
blame

A soul that strives but to see plain, speak  
true,

Truth at all hazards? Oh, this false for  
real,

This emptiness which feigns solidity,—  
Ever some grey that's white, and dun  
that's black,—

When shall we rest upon the thing itself  
Not on its semblance?—Soul—too weak,  
forsooth,

To cope with fact—wants fiction every-  
where!

Mine tires of falsehood: truth at any cost!'

'Take one and try conclusions—this, sup-  
pose!

God is all-good, all-wise, all-powerful:  
truth?

Take it and rest there. What is man? Not  
God:

None of these absolutes therefore,—yet  
himself,

A creature with a creature's qualities.  
Make them agree, these two conceptions!

Each

Abolishes the other. Is man weak,

Foolish and bad? He must be Ahriman,  
Co-equal with an Ormuzd, Bad with  
Good,

Or else a thing made at the Prime Sole Will,  
Doing a maker's pleasure—with results

Which—call, the wide world over, "what  
must be"—

But, from man's point of view, and only  
point

Possible to his powers, call—evidence  
Of goodness, wisdom, strength? we mock  
ourselves

In all that's best of us,—man's blind but  
sure

Craving for these in very deed not word,  
Reality and not illusion. Well,—

Since these nowhere exist—nor there  
where cause

Must have effect, nor here where craving  
means

Craving unfulfilled by fit consequence  
And full supply, aye sought for, never  
found—

These—what are they but man's own rule  
of right?

A scheme of goodness recognized by man,  
Although by man unrealizable,—

Not God's with whom to will were to per-  
form:

Nowise performed here, therefore never  
willed.

What follows but that God, who could the  
best,

Has willed the worst,—while man, with  
power to match

Will with performance, were deservedly  
Hailed the supreme—provided . . . here's  
the touch

That breaks the bubble . . . this concept of  
man's

Were man's own work, his birth of heart  
and brain,

His native grace, no alien gift at all.  
The bubble breaks here. Will of man  
create?

No more than this my hand which strewed  
the beans

Produced them also from its finger-tips.  
Back goes creation to its source, source  
prime

And ultimate, the single and the sole.'

'How reconcile discordancy,—unite  
Notion and notion—God that only can

Yet does not,—man that would indeed  
But just as surely cannot,—both in one?

What help occurs to thy intelligence?'

'Ah, the beans,—or,—example better  
yet,—

A carpet-web I saw once leave the loom  
And lie at gorgeous length in Ispahan!

The weaver plied his work with lengths of  
silk

## A BEAN-STRIPE : ALSO, APPLE-EATING

Dyed each to match some jewel as it might,  
And wove them, this by that. "How  
comes it, friend,"—

(Quoth I)—"that while, apart, this fiery  
hue,

That watery dimness, either shocks the  
eye,

So blinding bright, or else offends again  
By dulness,—yet the two, set each by each,  
Somehow produce a colour born of both,  
A medium profitable to the sight?"

"Such medium is the end whereat I  
aim,"—

Answered my craftsman: "there's no  
single tinct

Would satisfy the eye's desire to taste  
The secret of the diamond: join extremes,  
Results a serviceable medium-ghost,

The diamond's simulation." Even so  
I needs must blend the quality of man

With quality of God, and so assist  
Mere human sight to understand my Life,

What is, what should be,—understand  
thereby

Wherefore I hate the first and love the  
last,—

Understand why things so present them-  
selves

To me, placed here to prove I understand.  
Thus, from beginning runs the chain to  
end,

And binds me plain enough. By conse-  
quence,

I bade thee tolerate,—not kick and cuff  
The man who held that natures did in fact

Blend so, since so thyself must have them  
blend

In fancy, if it take a flight so far.'

'A power, confessed past knowledge, nay,  
past thought,

—Thus thought thus known!'

'To know of, think about—  
Is all man's sum of faculty effects

When exercised on earth's least atom,  
Son!

What was, what is, what may such atom  
be?

No answer! Still, what seems it to man's  
sense?

An atom with some certain properties  
Known about, thought of as occasion  
needs,

—Man's—but occasions of the universe?  
Unthinkable, unknowable to man.

Yet, since to think and know fire through  
and through

Exceeds man, is the warmth of fire un-  
known,

Its uses—are they so unthinkable?  
Pass from such obvious power to powers  
unseen,

Undreamed of save in their sure conse-  
quence:

Take that, we spoke of late, which draws  
to ground

The staff my hand lets fall: it draws, at  
least—

Thus much man thinks and knows, if  
nothing more.'

'Ay, but man puts no mind into such  
power!

He neither thanks it, when an apple drops,  
Nor prays it spare his pate while under-  
neath.

Does he thank Summer though it plumped  
the rind?

Why thank the other force—whate'er its  
name—

Which gave him teeth to bite and tongue to  
taste

And throat to let the pulp pass? Force and  
force,

No end of forces! Have they mind like  
man?'

'Suppose thou visit our lord Shalim-Shah,  
Bringing thy tribute as appointed. "Here  
Come I to pay my due!" Whereat one  
slave

Obsequious spreads a carpet for thy foot,  
His fellow offers sweetmeats, while a third  
Prepares a pipe: what thanks or praise  
have they?

Such as befit prompt service. Gratitude  
Goes past them to the Shah whose gra-  
cious nod

Set all the sweet civility at work;  
But for his ordinance, I much suspect,  
My scholar had been left to cool his heels  
Uncarpeted, or warm them—likelier still—  
With bastinado for intrusion. Slaves  
Needs must obey their master: "force and  
force,

No end of forces," act as bids some force  
Supreme o'er all and each: where find that  
one?

How recognize him? Simply as thou didst  
The Shah—by reasoning "Since I feel a  
debt,

Behoves me pay the same to one aware  
I have my duty, he his privilege."

Didst thou expect the slave who charged  
thy pipe

Would serve as well to take thy tribute-bag  
And save thee further trouble?'

'Be it so!  
The sense within me that I owe a debt  
Assures me—somewhere must be some-  
body

Ready to take his due. All comes to this—  
Where due is, there acceptance follows:  
find

## A BEAN-STRIPE: ALSO, APPLE-EATING

Him who accepts the due! and why look far?

Behold thy kindred compass thee about!  
Ere thou wast born and after thou shalt die,

Heroic man stands forth as Shahan-Shah.  
Rustem and Gew, Gudarz and all the rest,  
How come they short of lordship thats' to seek?

Dead worthies! but men live undoubtedly  
Gifted as Sindokht, sage Sulayman's match,

Valiant like Kawah: ay, and while earth lasts

Such heroes shall abound there—all for thee

Who profitest by all the present, past,  
And future operation of thy race.

Why, then, o'erburdened with a debt of thanks,

Look wistful for some hand from out the clouds

To take it, when, all round, a multitude  
Would ease thee in a trice?'

'Such tendered thanks

Would tumble back to who craved riddance, Son!

—Who but my sorry self? See! stars are out—

Stars which, unconscious of thy gaze beneath,

Go glorying, and glorify thee too  
—Those Seven Thrones, Zurah's beauty,

weird Parwin!

Whether shall love and praise to stars be paid

Or—say—some Mubid who, for good to thee

Blind at thy birth, by magic all his own  
Opened thine eyes, and gave the sightless sight,

Let the stars' glory enter? Say his charm  
Worked while thyself lay sleeping: as he went

Thou wakedst: "What a novel sense have I!  
Whom shall I love and praise?" "The

stars, each orb

Thou standest rapt beneath," proposes one:

"Do not they live their life, and please themselves,

And so please thee? What more is requisite?"

Make thou this answer: "If indeed no mage

Opened my eyes and worked a miracle,  
Then let the stars thank me who apprehend

That such an one is white, such other blue!  
But for my apprehension both were blank.

Cannot I close my eyes and bid my brain  
Make whites and blues, conceive without

stars' help,

New qualities of colour? were my sight  
Lost or misleading, would yon red—I

judge

A ruby's benefaction—stand for aught  
But green from vulgar glass? Myself

appraise

Lustre and lustre; should I overlook  
Fomalhaut and declare some fen-fire king,

Who shall correct me, lend me eyes he trusts

No more than I trust mine? My mage for me!

I never saw him: if he never was,  
I am the arbitrator!" No, my Son!

Let us sink down to thy similitude:  
I eat my apple, relish what is ripe—

The sunny side, admire its rarity  
Since half the tribe is wrinkled, and the

rest

Hide commonly a maggot in the core,—  
And down Zerdusht goes with due smack

of lips:

But—thank an apple? He who made my mouth

To masticate, my palate to approve,  
My maw to further the concoction—Him

I thank,—but for whose work, the orchard's wealth

Might prove so many gall-nuts—stocks or stones

For aught that I should think, or know, or care.'

'Why from the world,' Ferishtah smiled,  
'should thanks

Go to this work of mine? If worthy praise,  
Praised let it be and welcome: as verse ranks.

Soratemy verse: if good therein outweighs  
Aught faulty judged, judge justly! Justice

says:  
Be just to fact, or blaming or approving:  
But—generous? No, nor loving!

'Loving! what claim to love has work of mine?

Concede my life were emptied of its gains  
To furnish forth and fill work's strict confine,

Who works so for the world's sake—he complains

With cause when hate, not love, rewards his pains.

I looked beyond the world for truth and beauty:

Sought, found and did my duty.'

## EPILOGUE

OII, Love—no, Love! All the noise below,  
Love,

Groanings all and moanings—none of Life I lose!

All of Life's a cry just of weariness and woe, Love—

'Hear at least, thou happy one!' How can I, Love, but choose?

## EPILOGUE

Only, when I do hear, sudden circle round  
 me  
 —Much as when the moon's might frees  
 a space from cloud—  
 Iridescent splendours: gloom—would else  
 confound me—  
 Barrièred off and banished far—bright-  
 edged the blackest shroud!

Thronging through the cloud-rift, whose  
 are they, the faces  
 Faint revealed yet sure divined, the  
 famous ones of old?  
 'What'—they smile—'our names, our  
 deeds so soon erases  
 Time upon his tablet where Life's glory  
 lies enrolled?

'Was it for mere fool's-play, make-believe  
 and mummung,  
 So we battled it like men, not boylike  
 sulked or whined?  
 Each of us heard clang God's "Come!"  
 and each was coming:  
 Soldiers all, to forward-face, not sneaks  
 to lag behind!

'How of the field's fortune? That con-  
 cerned our Leader!  
 Led, we struck our stroke nor cared for  
 doings left and right:  
 Each as on his sole head, failer or suc-  
 ceeder,  
 Lay the blame or lit the praise: no care  
 for cowards: fight!

Then the cloud-rift broadens, spanning  
 earth that's under,  
 Wide our world displays its worth,  
 man's strife and strife's success:  
 All the good and beauty, wonder crowning  
 wonder,  
 Till my heart and soul applaud perfec-  
 tion, nothing less.

Only, at heart's utmost joy and triumph,  
 terror  
 Sudden turns the blood to ice: a chill  
 wind disencharms  
 All the late enchantment! What if all be  
 error—  
 If the halo irised round my head were,  
 Love, thine arms?

PALAZZO GIUSTINIAN-RECANATI,  
 VENICE: December 1, 1883.

## ASOLANDO

### FANCIES AND FACTS

1889

#### TO MRS. ARTHUR BRONSON

To whom but you, dear Friend, should I dedicate verses—some few written, all of them supervised, in the comfort of your presence, and with yet another experience of the gracious hospitality now bestowed on me since so many a year,—adding a charm even to my residences at Venice, and leaving me little regret for the surprise and delight at my visits to Asolo in bygone days?

I unite, you will see, the disconnected poems by a title-name popularly ascribed to the inventiveness of the ancient secretary of Queen Cornaro whose palace-tower still overlooks us: Asolare—'to disport in the open air, amuse oneself at random.' The objection that such a word nowhere occurs in the works of the Cardinal is hardly important—Bembo was too thorough a purist to conserve in print a term which in talk he might possibly toy with: but the word is more likely derived from a Spanish source. I use it for love of the place, and in requital of your pleasant assurance that an early poem of mine first attracted you thither—where and elsewhere, at La Mura as Cà Alvisi, may all happiness attend you!

Gratefully and affectionately yours,  
 R. B.

ASOLO: October 15, 1889.

#### PROLOGUE

'THE Poet's age is sad, for why?  
 In youth, the natural world could show  
 No common object but his eye  
 At once involved with alien glow—  
 His own soul's iris-bow.  
 'And now a flower is just a flower:  
 Man, bird, beast are but beast, bird,  
 man—  
 Simply themselves, uninct by dower  
 Of dyes which, when life's day began,  
 Round each in glory ran.'

Friend, did you need an optic glass,  
 Which were your choice? A lens to  
 drape  
 In ruby, emerald, chrysopras,  
 Each object—or reveal its shape  
 Clear outlined, past escape,  
 The naked very thing?—so clear  
 That, when you had the chance to gaze,  
 You found its inmost self appear  
 Through outer seeming—truth ablaze,  
 Not falsehood's fancy-haze?

## PROLOGUE

How many a year, my Asolo,  
Since—one step just from sea to land—  
I found you, loved yet feared you so—  
For natural objects seemed to stand  
Palpably fire-clothed! No—

No mastery of mine o'er these!  
Terror with beauty, like the Bush  
Burning but unconsumed. Bend knees,  
Drop eyes to earthward! Language?  
Tush!  
Silence 'tis awe decrees.

And now? The lambent flame is—where?  
Lost from the naked world: earth,  
sky,  
Hill, vale, tree, flower,—Italia's rare  
O'er-running beauty crowds the eye—  
But flame? The Bush is bare.

Hill, vale, tree, flower—they stand distinct,  
Nature to know and name. What then?  
A Voice spoke thence which straight unlinked  
Fancy from fact: see, all's in ken:  
Has once my eyelid winked?

No, for the purged ear apprehends  
Earth's import, not the eye late dazed:  
The Voice said 'Call my works thy friends!  
At Nature dost thou shrink amazed?  
God is it who transcends.'  
ASOLO: *Sept. 6, 1889.*

## ROSNY

Woe, he went galloping into the war,  
Clara, Clara!  
Let us two dream: shall he 'scape with a scar?  
Scarcely disfigurement, rather a grace  
Making for manhood which nowise we mar:

See, while I kiss it, the flush on his face—  
Rosny, Rosny!

Light does he laugh: 'With your love in my soul'—  
(Clara, Clara!)

'How could I other than—sound, safe and whole—  
Cleave who opposed me asunder, yet stand

Scatheless beside you, as, touching love's goal,  
Who won the race kneels, craves reward at your hand—  
Rosny, Rosny?'

Ay, but if certain who envied should see!  
Clara, Clara,  
Certain who sinner: 'The hero for me  
Hardly of life were so chary as miss

Death—death and fame—that's love's  
guerdon when She  
Boasts, proud bereaved one, her choice  
fell on this

Rosny, Rosny!'

So,—go on dreaming,—he lies mid a heap  
(Clara, Clara,)  
Of the slain by his hand: what is death but  
a sleep?  
Dead, with my portrait displayed on his  
breast:

Love wrought his undoing: 'No prudence  
could keep  
The love-maddened wretch from his  
fate.' That is best,  
Rosny, Rosny!

## DUBIETY

I WILL be happy if but for once:  
Only help me, Autumn weather,  
Me and my cares to screen, ensconce  
In luxury's sofa-lap of leather!

Sleep? Nay, comfort—with just a cloud  
Suffusing day too clear and bright:  
Eve's essence, the single drop allowed  
To sully, like milk, Noon's water-white.

Let gauziness shade, not shroud,—adjust,  
Dim and not deaden,—somehow  
sheathe  
Aught sharp in the rough world's busy  
thrust,  
If it reach me through dreaming's  
vapour-wreath.

Be life so, all things ever the same!  
For, what has disarmed the world?  
Outside,  
Quiet and peace: inside, nor blame  
Nor want, nor wish whate'er betide.

What is it like that has happened before?  
A dream? No dream, more real by  
much.

A vision? But fanciful days of yore  
Brought many: mere musing seems not  
such.

Perhaps but a memory, after all!  
—Of what came once when a woman  
leant  
To feel for my brow where her kiss might  
fall.

Truth ever, truth only the excellent!

## NOW

OUT of your whole life give but a moment!  
All of your life that has gone before,  
All to come after it,—so you ignore,  
So you make perfect the present,—condense,  
In a rapture of rage, for perfection's endowment,  
Thought and feeling and soul and sense—

Merged in a moment which gives me at last  
 You around me for once, you beneath me,  
 above me—  
 Me—sure that despite of time future, time  
 past,—  
 This tick of our life-time's one moment  
 you love me!  
 How long such suspension may linger?  
 Ah, Sweet—  
 The moment eternal—just that and no  
 more—  
 When ecstasy's utmost we clutch at the  
 core  
 While cheeks burn, arms open, eyes shut  
 and lips meet!

### HUMILITY

WHAT girl but, having gathered flowers,  
 Stript the beds and spoilt the bowers,  
 From the lapful light she carries  
 Drops a careless bud?—nor tarries  
 To regain the waif and stray:  
 'Store enough for home'—she'll say.  
 So say I too: give your lover  
 Heaps of loving—under, over,  
 Whelm him—make the one the wealthy!  
 Am I all so poor who—stealthy  
 Work it was!—picked up what fell:  
 Not the worst bud—who can tell?

### POETICS

'So say the foolish!' Say the foolish so,  
 Love?  
 'Flower she is, my rose'—or else 'My  
 very swan is she'—  
 Or perhaps 'Yon maid-moon, blessing  
 earth below, Love,  
 That art thou!'—to them, belike: no  
 such vain words from me.  
 'Hush, rose, blush! no balm like breath,'  
 I chide it:  
 'Bend thy neck its best, swan,—hers the  
 whiter curve!'  
 Be the moon the moon: my Love I place  
 beside it:  
 What is she? Her human self,—no  
 lower word will serve.

### SUMMUM BONUM

ALL the breath and the bloom of the year  
 in the bag of one bee:  
 All the wonder and wealth of the mine  
 in the heart of one gem:  
 In the core of one pearl all the shade and  
 the shine of the sea:  
 Breath and bloom, shade and shine,—  
 wonder, wealth, and—how far above  
 them—  
 Truth, that's brighter than gem,  
 Trust, that's purer than pearl,—  
 Brightest truth, purest trust in the uni-  
 verse—all were for me  
 In the kiss of one girl.

### A PEARL, A GIRL

A SIMPLE ring with a single stone  
 To the vulgar eye no stone of price:  
 Whisper the right word, that alone—  
 Forth starts a sprite, like fire from ice,  
 And lo, you are lord (says an Eastern  
 scroll)  
 Of heaven and earth, lord whole and sole  
 Through the power in a pearl.  
 A woman ('tis I this time that say)  
 With little the world counts worthy  
 praise  
 Utter the true word—out and away  
 Escapes her soul: I am wrapt in blaze,  
 Creation's lord, of heaven and earth  
 Lord whole and sole—by a minute's  
 birth—  
 Through the love in a girl!

### SPECULATIVE

OTHERS may need new life in Heaven—  
 Man, Nature, Art—made new, assume!  
 Man with new mind old sense to leaven,  
 Nature—new light to clear old gloom,  
 Art that breaks bounds, gets soaring-  
 room.  
 I shall pray: 'Fugitive as precious—  
 Minutes which passed,—return, re-  
 main!  
 Let earth's old life once more enmesh us,  
 You with old pleasure, me—old pain,  
 So we but meet nor part again!'

### WHITE WITCHCRAFT

IF you and I could change to beasts, what  
 beast should either be?  
 Shall you and I play Jove for once? Turn  
 fox then, I decree!  
 Shy wild sweet stealer of the grapes! Now  
 do your worst on me!  
 And thus you think to spite your friend—  
 turned loathsome? What, a toad?  
 So, all men shrink and shun me! Dear  
 men, pursue your road!  
 Leave but my crevice in the stone, a rep-  
 tile's fit abode!  
 Now say your worst, Canidia! 'He's  
 loathsome, I allow:  
 There may or may not lurk a pearl beneath  
 his puckered brow:  
 But see his eyes that follow mine—love  
 lasts there anyhow.'

### BAD DREAMS. I

LAST night I saw you in my sleep:  
 And how your charm of face was  
 changed!  
 I asked 'Some love, some faith you keep?'  
 You answered 'Faith gone, love  
 estranged.'

## BAD DREAMS. I

Whereat I woke—a twofold bliss:  
Waking was one, but next there came  
This other: 'Though I felt, for this,  
My heart break, I loved on the same.'

## BAD DREAMS. II

You in the flesh and here—  
Your very self! Now, wait!  
One word! May I hope or fear?  
Must I speak in love or hate?  
Stay while I ruminate!

The fact and each circumstance  
Dare you disown? Not you!  
That vast dome, that huge dance,  
And the gloom which overgrew  
A—possibly festive crew!

For why should men dance at all—  
Why women—a crowd of both—  
Unless they are gay? Strange ball—  
Hands and feet plighting troth,  
Yet partners enforced and loth!

Of who danced there, no shape  
Did I recognize: thwart, perverse,  
Each grasped each, past escape  
In a whirl or weary or worse:  
Man's sneer met woman's curse,

While he and she toiled as if  
Their guardian set galley-slaves  
To supple chained limbs grown stiff:  
Unmanacled trulls and knaves—  
The lash for who misbehaves!

And a gloom was, all the while,  
Deeper and deeper yet  
O'ergrowing the rank and file  
Of that army of haters—set  
To mimic love's fever-fret.

By the wall-side close I crept,  
Avoiding the livid maze,  
And, safely so far, outstepped  
On a chamber—a chapel, says  
My memory or betrays—

Closet-like, kept aloof  
From unseemly witnessing  
What sport made floor and roof  
Of the Devil's palace ring  
While his Damned amused their king.

Ay, for a low lamp burned,  
And a silence lay about  
What I, in the midst, discerned  
Though dimly till, past doubt,  
'Twas a sort of throne stood out—

High seat with steps, at least:  
And the topmost step was filled  
By—whom? What vested priest?  
A stranger to me,—his guild,  
His cult, unreconciled

To my knowledge how guild and cult  
Are clothed in this world of ours:  
I pondered, but no result  
Came to—unless that Giaours  
So worship the Lower Powers.

When suddenly who entered?  
Who knelt—did you guess I saw?  
Who—raising that face where centred  
Allegiance to love and law  
So lately—off-casting awe,

Down-treading reserve, away  
Thrusting respect . . . but mine  
Stands firm—firm still shall stay!  
Ask Satan! for I decline  
To tell—what I saw, in fine!

Yet here in the flesh you come—  
Your same self, form and face,—  
In the eyes, mirth still at home!  
On the lips, that commonplace  
Perfection of honest grace!

Yet your errand is—needs must be  
To palliate—well, explain,  
Expurgate in some degree  
Your soul of its ugly stain.  
Oh, you—the good in grain—

How was it your white took tinge?  
'A mere dream'—never object!  
Sleep leaves a door on hinge  
Whence soul, ere our flesh suspect,  
Is off and away: detect

Her vagaries when loose, who can!  
Be she pranksome, be she prude,  
Disguise with the day began:  
With the night—ah, what ensued  
From draughts of a drink hell-brewed?

Then She: 'What a queer wild dream!  
And perhaps the best fun is—  
Myself had its fellow—I seem  
Scarce awake from yet. 'Twas this—  
Shall I tell you? First, a kiss!

'For the fault was just your own,—  
'Tis myself expect apology:  
You warned me to let alone  
(Since our studies were mere philo-  
logy)  
That ticklish (you said) Anthology.

'So, I dreamed that I passed *exam*  
Till a question posed me sore:  
"Who translated this epigram  
By—an author we best ignore?"  
And I answered "Hannah More"!'

## BAD DREAMS. III

This was my dream: I saw a Forest  
Old as the earth, no track nor trace  
Of unmade man. Thou, Soul, explorest—  
Though in a trembling rapture—space

## BAD DREAMS. III

Immeasurable! Shrubs, turned trees,  
Trees that touch heaven, support its frieze  
Studded with sun and moon and star:  
While—oh, the enormous growths that  
bar

Mine eye from penetrating past  
Their tangled twine where lurks—nay,  
lives

Royally lone, some brute-type cast  
I' the rough, time cancels, man forgives.

On, Soul! I saw a lucid City

Of architectural device

Every way perfect. Pause for pity,

Lightning! nor leave a cicatrice  
On those bright marbles, dome and spire,  
Structures palatial,—streets which mire  
Dares not defile, paved all too fine  
For human footstep's smirch, not thine—  
Proud solitary traverser,

My Soul, of silent lengths of way—

With what ecstatic dread, aver,  
Lest life start sanctioned by thy stay!

Ah, but the last sight was the hideous!

A City, yes,—a Forest, true,—

But each devouring each. Perfidious

Snake-plants had strangled what I knew

Was a pavilion once: each oak

Held on his horns some spoil he broke

By surreptitiously beneath

Uphrusting: pavements, as with teeth,  
Gripped huge weed widening crack and split

In squares and circles stone-work erst.

Oh, Nature—good! Oh, Art—no whit

Less worthy! Both in one—accurst!

## BAD DREAMS. IV

It happened thus: my slab, though new,

Was getting weather-stained,—beside,

Herbage, balm, peppermint o'ergrew

Letter and letter: till you tried

Somewhat, the Name was scarce desried.

That strong stern man my lover came:

—Was he my lover? Call him, pray,

My life's cold critic bent on blame

Of all poor I could do or say

To make me worth his love one day—

One far day when, by diligent

And dutiful amending faults,

Foibles, all weaknesses which went

To challenge and excuse assaults

Of culture wronged by taste that halts—

Discrepancies should mar no plan

Symmetric of the qualities

Claiming respect from—say—a man

That's strong and stern. 'Once more he  
pries

Into me with those critic eyes!'

No question! so—'Conclude, condemn

Each failure my poor self avows!

Leave to its fate all you condemn!

There's Solomon's selected spouse:

Earth needs must hold such maids—  
choose them!'

Why, he was weeping! Surely gone

Sternness and strength: with eyes to  
ground

And voice a broken monotone—

'Only be as you were! Abound

In foibles, faults,—laugh, robed and  
crowned

'As Folly's veriest queen,—care I

One feather-fluff? Look pity, Love,

On prostrate me—your foot shall try

This forehead's use—mount thence  
above,

And reach what Heaven you dignify!'

Now, what could bring such change  
about?

The thought perplexed: till, following

His gaze upon the ground,—why, out

Came all the secret! So, a thing

Thus simple has deposed my king!

For, spite of weeds that strove to spoil

Plain reading on the lettered slab,

My name was clear enough—no soil

Effaced the date when one chance stab

Of scorn . . . if only ghosts might blab!

## INAPPREHENSIVENESS

WE two stood simply friend-like side by  
side,

Viewing a twilight country far and wide,  
Till she at length broke silence. 'How it

towers

Yonder, the ruin o'er this vale of ours!

The West's faint flare behind it so relieves

Its rugged outline—sight perhaps de-  
ceives,

Or I could almost fancy that I see

A branch wave plain—belike some wind-  
sown tree

Chance-rooted where a missing turret was.

What would I give for the perspective glass

At home, to make out if 'tis really so!

Has Ruskin noticed here at Asolo

That certain weed-growths on the ravaged  
wall

Seem' . . . something that I could not say  
at all,

My thought being rather—as absorbed  
she sent

Look onward after look from eyes distant

With longing to reach Heaven's gate left  
ajar—

'Oh, fancies that might be, oh, facts that  
are!



## INAPPREHENSIVENESS

What of a wilding? By you stands, and may  
So stand unnoticed till the Judgment Day,  
One who, if once aware that your regard  
Claimed what his heart holds,—woke, as  
from its sward

The flower, the dormant passion, so to  
speak—

Then what a rush of life would startling  
wreak

Revenge on your inapprehensive stare  
While, from the ruin and the West's faint  
flare,

You let your eyes meet mine, touch what  
you term

Quietude—that's an universe in germ—  
The dormant passion needing but a look  
To burst into immense life!

Which noticed how the wall-growths  
wave' said she

'Was not by Ruskin.'

I said 'Vernon Lee?'

### WHICH?

So, the three Court-ladies began

Their trial of who judged best

In esteeming the love of a man:

Who preferred with most reason was  
thereby confessed

Boy-Cupid's exemplary catcher and cager;  
An Abbé danced legs to decide on the

wager.

First the Duchesse: 'Mine for me—

Who were it but God's for Him,

And the King's for—who but he?

Both faithful and loyal, one grace more  
shall brim

His cup with perfection: a lady's true  
lover,

He holds—save his God and his king—  
none above her.'

'I require'—outspoke the Mar-  
quise—

'Pure thoughts, ay, but also fine  
deeds:

Play the paladin must he, to please

My whim, and—to prove my knight's  
service exceeds

Your saint's and your loyalist's praying  
and kneeling—

Show wounds, each wide mouth to my  
mercy appealing.'

Then the Comtesse: 'My choice be  
a wretch,

Mere losel in body and soul,

Thrice accurs! What care I, so he  
stretch

Arms to me his sole saviour, love's  
ultimate goal,

Out of earth and men's noise—names of  
"infidel," "traitor,"

Cast up at him? Crown me, crown's adju-  
dicator!'

And the Abbé uncrossed his legs,

Took snuff, a reflective pinch,

Broke silence: 'The question begs

Much pondering ere I pronounce. Shall  
I flinch?

The love which to one and one only has  
reference

Seems terribly like what perhaps gains  
God's preference.'

### THE CARDINAL AND THE DOG

CRESCENZIO, the Pope's Legate at the High  
Council, Trent,

— Year Fifteen hundred twenty-two,  
March Twenty-five—intent

On writing letters to the Pope till late into  
the night,

Rose, weary, to refresh himself, and saw  
a monstrous sight:

(I give mine Author's very words: he  
penned, I re-indite.)

A black Dog of vast bigness, eyes flaming,  
ears that hung

Down to the very ground almost, into the  
chamber sprung

And made directly for him, and laid him-  
self right under

The table where Crescenzo wrote—who  
called in fear and wonder

His servants in the ante-room, com-  
manded everyone

To look for and find out the beast: but,  
looking, they found none.

The Cardinal fell melancholy, then sick,  
soon after died:

And at Verona, as he lay on his death-bed,  
he cried

Aloud to drive away the Dog that leapt on  
his bed-side.

Heaven keep us Protestants from harm:  
the rest . . . no ill betide!

### THE POPE AND THE NET

WHAT, he on whom our voices unani-  
mously ran,

Made Pope at our last Conclave? Full low  
his life began:

His father earned the daily bread as just  
a fisherman.

So much the more his boy minds book,  
gives proof of mother-wit,

Becomes first Deacon, and the Priest, then  
Bishop: see him sit

No less than Cardinal ere long, while no  
one cries 'Unfit!'

## THE POPE AND THE NET

But someone smirks, some other smiles,  
jogs elbow and nods head:  
Each winks at each: 'I-faith, a rise!  
Saint Peter's net, instead  
Of sword and keys, is come in vogue!  
You think he blushes red?

Not he, of humble holy heart! 'Unworthy  
me!' he sighs:  
'From fisher's drudge to Church's prince  
—it is indeed a rise:  
So, here's my way to keep the fact for ever  
in my eyes!

And straightway in his palace-hall, where  
commonly is set  
Some coat-of-arms, some portraiture an-  
cestral, lo, we met  
His mean estate's remainder in his fisher-  
father's net!

Which step conciliates all and some, stops  
cavil in a trice:  
'The humble holy heart that holds of new-  
born pride no spice!  
He's just the saint to choose for Pope!  
Each adds 'Tis my advice.'

So, Pope he was: and when we flocked—  
its sacred slipper on—  
To kiss his foot, we lifted eyes, alack the  
thing was gone—  
That guarantee of lowlihead,—eclipsed  
that star which shone!

Each eyed his fellow, one and all kept  
silence. I cried 'Pish!  
I'll make me spokesman for the rest, ex-  
press the common wish.  
Why, Father, is the net removed?' 'Son,  
it hath caught the fish.'

## THE BEAN-FEAST

HE was the man—Pope Sixtus, that Fifth,  
that swineherd's son:  
He knew the right thing, did it, and  
thanked God when 'twas done:  
But of all he had to thank for, my fancy  
somehow leans  
To thinking, what most moved him was a  
certain meal on beans.

For one day, as his wont was, in just  
enough disguise  
As he went exploring wickedness,—to see  
with his own eyes  
If law had due observance in the city's  
entrail dark  
As well as where, i' the open, crime stood  
an obvious mark,—

He chanced, in a blind alley, on a tumble-  
down once house  
Now hovel, vilest structure in Rome the  
ruinous:

And, as his tact impelled him, Sixtus  
adventured bold,  
To learn how lowliest subjects bore hun-  
ger, toil, and cold.

There sat they at high-supper—man and  
wife, lad and lass,  
Poor as you please but cleanly all and care-  
free: pain that was  
—Forgotten, pain as sure to be let bide  
aloof its time,—  
Mightily munched the brave ones—what  
mattered gloom or grime?

Said Sixtus 'Feast, my children! who  
works hard needs eat well.  
I'm just a supervisor, would hear what you  
can tell.

Do any wrongs want righting? The Father  
tries his best,  
But, since he's only mortal, sends such as  
I to test

The truth of all that's told him—how folk  
like you may fare:  
Come!—only don't stop eating—when  
mouth has words to spare—

'You'—smiled he—'play the spokesman,  
bell-wether of the flock!  
Are times good, masters gentle? Your  
grievances unlock!  
How of your work and wages?—pleasures,  
if such may be—

Pains, as such are for certain.' Thus  
smiling questioned he.

But somehow, spite of smiling, awe stole  
upon the group—  
An inexpressible surmise: why should a  
priest thus stoop—  
Pry into what concerned folk? Each  
visage fell. Aware,  
Cries Sixtus interposing: 'Nay, children,  
have no care!

'Fear nothing! Who employs me requires  
the plain truth. Pelf  
Beguiles who should inform me: so, I  
inform myself.  
See!' And he threw his hood back, let  
the close vesture ope,  
Showed face, and where on tippet the cross  
lay: 'twas the Pope.

Imagine the joyful wonder! 'How shall  
the like of us—  
Poor souls—requite such blessing of our  
rude bean-feast?' 'Thus—  
Thus amply!' laughed Pope Sixtus. 'I  
early rise, sleep late:  
Who works may eat: they tempt me, your  
beans there: spare a plate!'

Down sat he on the door-step: 'twas they  
this time said grace:  
He ate up the last mouthful, wiped lips,  
and then, with face

## THE BEAN-FEAST

Turned heavenward, broke forth thankful: 'Not now, that earth obeys  
Thy word in mine, that through me the  
peoples know Thy ways—  
But that Thy care extendeth to Nature's  
homely wants,  
And, while man's mind is strengthened,  
Thy goodness nowise scants  
Man's body of its comfort,—that I whom  
kings and queens  
Crouch to, pick crumbs from off my table,  
relish beans!  
The thunders I but seem to launch, there  
plain Thy hand all see:  
That I have appetite, digest, and thrive—  
that boon's for me.'

### MUCKLE-MOUTH MEG

FROWNED the Laird on the Lord: 'So, red-  
handed I catch thee?  
Death-doomed by our Law of the Border!  
We've a gallows outside and a chiel to dis-  
patch thee:  
Who trespass—hangs: all's in order.'  
He met frown with smile, did the young  
English gallant:  
Then the Laird's dame: 'Nay, Husband,  
I beg!  
He's comely: be merciful! Grace for the  
callant  
—If he marries our Muckle-mouth  
Meg!'  
'No mile-wide-mouthed monster of yours  
do I marry:  
Grant rather the gallows!' laughed he.  
'Foul fare kith and kin of you—why do  
you tarry?'  
'To tame your fierce temper!' quoth  
she.  
'Shove him quick in the Hole, shut him  
fast for a week:  
Cold, darkness and hunger work won-  
ders:  
Who lion-like roars now, mouse-fashion  
will squeak,  
And "it rains" soon succeed to "it  
thunders."'  
A week did he bide in the cold and the dair:  
—Not hunger: for duly at morning  
In flitted a lass, and a voice like a lark  
Chirped 'Muckle-mouth Meg still ye're  
scorning?  
'Go hang, but here's parritch to hearten  
ye first!  
'Did Meg's muckle-mouth boast within  
some  
Such music as yours, mine should match  
it or burst:  
No frog-jaws! So tell folk, my Win-  
some!'

Soon week came to end, and, from Hole's  
door set wide,  
Out he marched, and there waited the  
lassie:  
'Yon gallows, or Muckle-mouth Meg for  
a bride!  
Consider! Sky's blue and turf's grassy:  
'Life's sweet: shall I say ye wed Muckle-  
mouth Meg?'  
'Not I' quoth the stout heart: 'too eerie  
The mouth that can swallow a bubbly-  
jock's egg:  
Shall I let it munch mine? Never,  
Dearie!'

'Not Muckle-mouth Meg? Wow, the  
obstinate man!  
Perhaps he would rather wed me!'  
'Ay, would he—with just for a dowry your  
can!'  
'I'm Muckle-mouth Meg' chirruped  
she.  
'Then so—so—so—so—' as he kissed her  
apace—  
'Will I wind thee out till thou turnest  
From Margaret Minnikin-mou', by God's  
grace,  
To Muckle-mouth Meg in good earn-  
est!'

### ARCADES AMBO

- A. You blame me that I ran away?  
Why, Sir, the enemy advanced:  
Balls flew about, and—who can say  
But one, if I stood firm, had glanced  
In my direction? Cowardice?  
I only know we don't live twice,  
Therefore—shun death, is my advice.
- B. Shun death at all risks? Well, at  
some!  
True, I myself, Sir, though I scold  
The cowardly, by no means come  
Under reproof as overbold  
—I, who would have no end of brutes  
Cut up alive to guess what suits  
My case and saves my toe from shoots.

### THE LADY AND THE PAINTER

She. Yet womanhood you reverence,  
So you profess!  
He. With heart and soul.  
She. Of which fact this is evidence!  
To help Art-study,—for some dole  
Of certain wretched shillings,—you  
Induce a woman—virgin too—  
To strip and stand stark-naked?  
He. True.  
She. Nor feel you so degrade her?  
He. What

## THE LADY AND THE PAINTER

—(Excuse the interruption)—clings  
*She.* Half-savage-like around your hat?  
 Ah, do they please you? Wild-  
 bird-wings

Next season,—Paris-prints assert,—  
 We must go feathered to the skirt:  
 My modiste keeps on the alert.

Owls, hawks, jays—swallows most  
 approve . . .

*He.* Dare I speak plainly?

*She.* Oh, I trust!

*He.* Then, Lady Blanche, it less would  
 move

In heart and soul of me disgust  
 Did you strip off those spoils you  
 wear,

And stand—for thanks, not shillings  
 —bare,

To help Art like my Model there.

*She* well knew what absolved her—  
 praise

In me for God's surpassing good,  
 Who granted to my reverent gaze  
 A type of purest womanhood.

*You*—clothed with murder of His  
 best

Of harmless beings—stand the test!  
 What is it *you* know?

*She.* That you jest!

### PONTE DELL' ANGELO, VENICE

STOP rowing! This one of our bye-canals  
 O'er a certain bridge you have to cross  
 That's named 'Of the Angel': listen why!  
 The name 'Of the Devil' too much appals  
 Venetian acquaintance, so—his the loss,  
 While the gain goes . . . look on high!

An angel visibly guards yon house:  
 Above each scutcheon—a pair—stands he,  
 Enfolds them with droop of either wing:  
 The family's fortune were perilous  
 Did he thence depart—you will soon  
 agree.

If I hitch into verse the thing.

For, once on a time, this house belonged  
 To a lawyer of note, with law and to spare,  
 But also with overmuch lust of gain:  
 In the matter of law you were nowise  
 wronged,

But alas for the lucre! He picked you bare  
 To the bone. Did folk complain?

'I exact' growled he 'work's rightful due:  
 'Tis folk seek me, not I seek them.

Advice at its price! They succeed or fail,  
 Get law in each case—and a lesson too:  
 Keep clear of the Courts—is advice *ad*  
*rem:*

They'll remember, I'll be bail!

So, he pocketed fee without a qualm.  
 What reason for squeamishness? Labour  
 done,

To play he betook him with lightened  
 heart,

Ate, drank and made merry with song or  
 psalm,

Since the yoke of the Church is an easy  
 one—

Fits neck nor causes smart.

Brief: never was such an extortionate  
 Rascal—the word has escaped my teeth  
 And yet—(all's down in a book no ass  
 Indited, believe me!)—this reprobate  
 Was punctual at prayer-time: gold lurked  
 beneath

Alloy of the rankest brass.

For, play the extortioner as he might,  
 Fleece folk each day and all day long,  
 There was this redeeming circumstance:  
 He never lay down to sleep at night  
 But he put up a prayer first, brief yet  
 strong,

'Our Lady avert mischance!'

Now it happened at close of a fructuous  
 week,

'I must ask' quoth he 'some Saint to dine:  
 I want that widow well out of my ears  
 With her ailing and wailing. Who bade  
 her seek

Redress at my hands? "She was  
 wronged!" Folk whine  
 If to Law wrong right appears.

'Matteo da Bascio—he's my man!  
 No less than Chief of the Capucins:  
 His presence will surely suffumigate  
 My house—fools think lies under a ban  
 If somebody loses what somebody wins.  
 Hark, there he knocks at the grate!

'Come in, thou blessed of Mother Church!  
 I go and prepare—to bid, that is,  
 My trusty and diligent servitor  
 Get all things in readiness. Vain the search  
 Through Venice for one to compare with  
 this

My model of ministrants: for—

'For—once again, nay, three times over,  
 My helpmate's an ape! so intelligent,  
 I train him to drudge at household work:  
 He toils and he moils, I live in clover:  
 Oh, you shall see! There's a goodly  
 scent—

From his cooking, or I'm a Turk!

'Scarce need to descend and supervise:  
 I'll do it, however: wait here awhile!'  
 So, down to the kitchen gaily scuttles  
 Our host, nor notes the alarmed surmise  
 Of the holy man. 'O depth of guile!  
 He blindly guzzles and guttles,

## PONTE DELL' ANGELO, VENICE

'While—who is it dresses the food and  
pours  
The liquor? Some fiend—I make no  
doubt—

In likeness of—which of the loathly  
brutes?

An ape! Where hides he? No bull that  
gores,

No bear that hugs—'tis the mock and flout  
Of an ape, fiend's face that suits.

'So—out with thee, creature, wherever  
thou hidest!

I charge thee, by virtue of . . . right do I  
judge!

There skulks he perdue, crouching under  
the bed.

Well done! What, forsooth, in beast's  
shape thou confidest?

I know and would name thee but that I  
begrudge

Breath spent on such carrion. Instead—

'I adjure thee by—' 'Stay!' laughed  
the portent that rose  
From floor up to ceiling: 'No need to  
adjure!

See Satan in person, late ape by command  
Of Him thou adjurest in vain. A saint's  
nose

Scents brimstone though incense be  
burned for a lure.

Yet, hence! for I'm safe, understand!

'Tis my charge to convey to fit punish-  
ment's place

This lawyer, my liegeman, for cruelty  
wrought

On his clients, the widow and orphan,  
poor souls

He has plagued by exactions which proved  
law's disgrace,

Made equity void and to nothingness  
brought

God's pity. Fiends, on with fresh coals!'

'Stay!' nowise confounded, withstands  
Hell its match:

'How comes it, were truth in this story of  
thine,

God's punishment suffered a minute's  
delay?

Weeks, months have elapsed since thou  
squattedst at watch

For a spring on thy victim: what caused  
thee decline

Advantage till challenged to-day?'

'That challenge I meet with contempt,'  
quothe the fiend.

'Thus much I acknowledge: the man's  
armed in mail:

I wait till a joint's loose, then quick ply my  
claws.

Thy friend's one good custom—he knows  
not—has screened

His flesh hitherto from what else would  
assail:

At "Save me, Madonna!" I pause.

'That prayer did the losel but once preter-  
mit,

My pounce were upon him. I keep me  
attent:

He's in safety but till he's caught napping.  
Enough!

'Ay, enough!' smiles the saint—'for the  
biter is bit,

The spy caught in somnolence. Vanish!  
I'm sent

To smooth up what fiends do in rough.'

'I vanish? Through wall or through  
roof?' the ripost

Grinned gaily. 'My orders were—"Leave  
not unharmed

The abode of this lawyer! Do damage to  
prove

'Twas for something thou quittedst the  
land of the lost—

To add to their number this unit!"  
Though charmed

From descent there, on earth that's above

'I may haply amerce him.' 'So do, and  
begone,

I command thee! For, look! Though  
there's doorway behind

And window before thee, go straight  
through the wall,

Leave a breach in the brickwork, a gap in  
the stone

For who passes to stare at!' 'Spare speech!  
I'm resigned:

Here goes!' roared the goblin, as all—

Wide bat-wings, spread arms and legs, tail  
out a-stream,

Crash obstacles went, right and left, as he  
soared

Or else sank, was clean gone through the  
hole anyhow.

The Saint returned thanks; then a satisfied  
gleam

On the bald polished pate showed that tri-  
umph was scored.

'To dinner with appetite now!'

Down he trips. 'In good time!' smirks  
the host. 'Didst thou scent

Rich savour of roast meat? Where hides  
he, my ape?

Look alive, be alert! He's away to wash  
plates.

Sit down, Saint! What's here? Dost ex-  
amine a rent

In the napkin thou twistest and twirlest?  
Agape . . .

Ha, blood is it drips nor abates

## PONTE DELL' ANGELO, VENICE

'From thy wringing a cloth, late was laved—  
dered fair?

What means such a marvel?' 'Just this  
does it mean:

I convince and convict thee of sin!' answers straight

The Saint, wringing on, wringing ever—  
O rare!—

Blood—blood from a napery snow not  
more clean.

'A miracle shows thee thy state!

'See—blood thy extortions have wrung  
from the flesh

Of thy clients who, sheep-like, arrived to  
be shorn

And left thee—or fleeced to the quick or  
so flayed

That, behold, their blood gurgles and  
grumbles afresh

To accuse thee! Ay, down on thy knees,  
get up sworn

To restore! Restitution once made,

'Sin no more! Dost thou promise? Absolved, then, arise!

Upstairs follow me! Art amazed at yon  
breach?

Who battered and shattered and scattered,  
escape

From thy purlieus obtaining? That Father  
of Lies

Thou wast wont to extol for his feats, all  
and each

The Devil's disguised as thine ape!'

Be sure that our lawyer was torn by remorse,  
Shed tears in a flood, vowed and swore so  
to alter

His ways that how else could our Saint but  
declare

He was cleansed of past sin? 'For sin  
future—fare worse

Thou undoubtedly wilt,' warned the Saint,  
'shouldst thou falter

One whit!' 'Oh, for that have no care!

'I am firm in my purposed amendment.  
But, prithee,

Must ever affront and affright me yon gap?  
Who made it for exit may find it of use

For entrance as easy. If, down in his  
smithy

He forges me fetters—when heated, mayhap,

He'll up with an armful! Broke loose—

'How bar him out henceforth?' 'Judiciously urged!'

Was the good man's reply. 'How to baulk  
him is plain.

There's nothing the Devil objects to so  
much,

So speedily flies from, as one of those  
purged

Of his presence, the angels who erst  
formed his train—

His, their emperor. Choose one of such!

'Get fashioned his likeness and set him on  
high

At back of the breach thus adroitly filled up:  
Display him as guard of two scutcheons,  
thy arms:

I warrant no devil attempts to get by  
And disturb thee so guarded. Eat, drink,  
dine and sup

In thy rectitude, safe from alarms!'

So said and so done. See, the angel has  
place

Where the Devil had passage! All's down  
in a book.

Gainsay me? Consult it! Still faithless?  
Trust me?

Trust Father Boverio who gave me the  
case

In his Annals—gets of it, by hook or by  
crook,

Two confirmative witnesses: three

Are surely enough to establish an act.

And thereby we learn—would we ascertain truth—

To trust wise tradition which took, at the  
time,

Note that served till slow history ventured  
on fact,

Though folk have their fling at tradition  
forsooth!

Row, boys, fore and aft, rhyme and chime!

## BEATRICE SIGNORINI

This strange thing happened to a painter  
once:

Viterbo boasts the man among her sons  
Of note, I seem to think: his ready tool

Picked up its precepts in Cortona's  
school—

That's Pietro Berretini, whom they call  
Cortona, these Italians: greatish-small,

Our painter was his pupil, by repute  
His match if not his master absolute,

Though whether he spoiled fresco more  
or less,

And what's its fortune, scarce repays your  
guess.

Still, for one circumstance, I save his name  
—Francesco Romanelli: do the same!

He went to Rome and painted: there he  
knew

A wonder of a woman painting too—  
For she, at least, was no Cortona's drudge:

Witness that ardent fancy-shape—I judge  
A semblance of her soul—she called 'De-

sire'  
With starry front for guide, where sits the  
fire

## BEATRICE SIGNORINI

She left to brighten Buonarroti's house.  
 If you see Florence, pay that piece your  
     vows,  
 Though blockhead Baldinucci's mind, im-  
     bued  
 With monkish morals, bade folk 'Drape  
     the nude  
 And stop the scandal!' quoth the record  
     prim  
 I borrow this of: hang his book and him!  
 At Rome, then, where these fated ones  
     met first,  
 The blossom of his life had hardly burst  
 While hers was blooming at full beauty's  
     stand:  
 No less Francesco—when half-ripe he  
     scanned  
 Consummate Artemisia—grew one want  
 To have her his and make her ministrant  
 With every gift of body and of soul  
 To him. In vain. Her sphery self was  
     whole—  
 Might only touch his orb at Art's sole  
     point.  
 Suppose he could persuade her to enjoin  
 Her life—past, present, future—all in his  
 At Art's sole point by some explosive  
     kiss  
 Of love through lips, would love's success  
     defeat  
 Artistry's haunting curse—the Incom-  
     plete?  
 Artists no doubt they both were,—what  
     beside  
 Was she? who, long had felt heart, soul  
     spread wide  
 Her life out, knowing much and loving  
     well,  
 On either side Art's narrow space where  
     fell  
 Reflection from his own speck: but the  
     germ  
 Of individual genius—what we term  
 The very self, the God-gift whence had  
     grown  
 Heart's life and soul's life,—how make  
     that his own?  
 Vainly his Art, reflected, smiled in small  
 On Art's one facet of her ampler ball;  
 The rest, touch-free, took in, gave back  
     heaven, earth,  
 All where he was not. Hope, well-nigh  
     ere birth  
 Came to Desire, died off all-unfulfilled.  
 'What though in Art I stand the abler-  
     skilled,'  
 (So he conceited: mediocrity  
 Turns on itself the self-transforming eye)  
 'If only Art were suing, mine would plead  
 To purpose: man—by nature I exceed  
 Woman the bounded: but how much be-  
     side  
 She boasts, would sue in turn and be  
     denied!

Love her? My own wife loves me in a sort  
 That suits us both: she takes the world's  
     report  
 Of what my work is worth, and, for the  
     rest,  
 Concedes that, while his consort keeps her  
     nest,  
 The eagle soars a licensed vagrant, lives  
 A wide free life which she at least forgives—  
 Good Beatrice Signorini! Well  
 And wisely did I choose her. But the spell  
 To subjugate this Artemisia—where?  
 She passionless?—she resolute to care  
 Nowise beyond the plain sufficiency  
 Of fact that she is she and I am I  
 —Acknowledged arbitrator for us both  
 In her life as in mine which she were loth  
 Even to learn the laws of? No, and no  
 Twenty times over! Ay, it must be so:  
 I for myself, alas!

Whereon, instead  
 Of the checked lover's-utterance—why, he  
     said  
 —Leaning above her easel: 'Flesh is red'  
 (Or some such just remark)—'by no means  
     white  
 As Guido's practice teaches: you are  
     right.'  
 Then came the better impulse: 'What if  
     pride  
 Were wisely trampled on, whate'er betide?  
 If I grow hers, not mine—join lives, con-  
     fuse  
 Bodies and spirits, gain not her but lose  
 Myself to Artemisia? That were love!  
 Of two souls—one must bend, one rule  
     above:  
 If I crouch under proudly, lord turned  
     slave,  
 Were it not worthier both than if she gave  
 Herself—in treason to herself—to me?'

And, all the while, he felt it could not be.  
 Such love were true love: love that way  
     who can!  
 Someone that's born half woman not  
     whole man:  
 For man, prescribed man better or man  
     worse,  
 Why, whether microcosm or universe,  
 What law prevails alike through great and  
     small,  
 The world and man—world's miniature  
     we call?  
 Male is the master. 'That way'—smiled  
     and sighed  
 Our true male estimator—'puts her pride  
 My wife in making me the outlet whence  
 She learns all Heaven allows: 'tis my pre-  
     terence  
 To paint: her lord should do what else but  
     paint?  
 Do I break brushes, cloister me turned  
     saint?

## BEATRICE SIGNORINI

Then, best of all suits sanctity her spouse  
Who acts for Heaven, allows and disallows  
At pleasure, past appeal, the right, the  
wrong

In all things. That's my wife's way. But  
this strong

Confident Artemisia—an adept  
In Art does she conceal herself? "Except  
In just this instance," tell her, "no one  
draws

More rigidly observant of the laws  
Of right design: 'yet here,—permit me  
hint,—

If the acromion had a deeper dint,  
That shoulder were perfection." What  
surprise

—Nay scorn, shoots black fire from those  
startled eyes!

She to be lessoned in design forsooth!  
I'm doomed and done for, since I spoke  
the truth.

Make my own work the subject of dispute—

Fails it of just perfection absolute  
Somewhere? Those motors, flexors,—  
don't I know

Ser Santi, styled "Tirititototo  
The pencil-prig," might blame them? Yet  
my wife—

Were he and his nicknamer brought to life,  
Tito and Titian, to pronounce again—

Ask her who knows more—I or the great  
Twain

Our colourist and draughtsman!

'I help her,  
Not she helps me; and neither shall demur  
Because my portion is——' he chose to  
think—

'Quite other than a woman's: I may drink  
At many waters, must repose by none—  
Rather arise and fare forth, having done  
Duty to one new excellence the more,  
Ablent thereby, though impotent before  
So much was gained of knowledge. Best  
depart

From this last lady I have learned by  
heart!'

Thus he concluded of himself—resigned  
To play the man and master: 'Man boasts  
mind:

Woman, man's sport calls mistress, to the  
same

Does body's suit and service. Would she  
claim

—My placid Beatrice-wife—pretence  
Even to blame her lord if, going hence,  
He wistfully regards one whom—did fate  
Concede—he might accept queen, abdi-  
cate

Kingship because of?—one of no meek  
sort

But masterful as he: man's match in  
short?

Oh, there's no secret I were best conceal!  
Bicé shall know; and should a stray tear  
steal

From out the blue eye, stain the rose cheek  
—bah!

A smile, a word's gay reassurance—ah,  
With kissing interspersed,—shall make  
• amends,

Turn pain to pleasure.'

'What, in truth so ends  
Abruptly, do you say, our intercourse?'

Next day, asked Artemisia: 'I'll divorce  
Husband and wife no longer. Go your  
ways,

Leave Rome! Viterbo owns no equal, says  
The bye-word, for fair women: you, no  
doubt,

May boast a paragon all specks without,  
Using the painter's privilege to choose

Among what's rarest. Will your wife refuse  
Acceptance from—no rival—of a gift?

You paint the human figure I make shift  
Humbly to reproduce: but, in my hours

Of idlesse, what I fain would paint is—  
flowers.

Look now!

She twitched aside a veiling cloth.  
'Here is my keepsake—frame and picture  
both:

Forsee, the frame is all of flowers festooned  
About an empty space,—left thus, to  
wound

No natural susceptibility:

How can I guess? 'Tis you must fill, not I,  
The central space with—her whom you  
like best!

That is your business, mine has been the  
rest.

But judge!'

How judge them? Each of  
us, in flowers,

Chooses his love, allies it with past hours,  
Old meetings, vanished forms and faces:  
no—

Here let each favourite unmolested blow  
For one heart's homage, no tongue's banal  
praise,

Whether the rose appealingly bade 'Gaze  
Your fill on me, sultana who dethrone

The gaudy tulip!' or 'twas 'Me alone  
Rather do homage to, who lily am,

No unabashed rose!' 'Do I vainly cram  
My cup with sweets, your jonquil?' 'Why

forget  
Vernal endearments with the violet?'

So they contested yet concerted, all  
As one, to circle round about, enthrall

Yet, self-forgetting, push to prominence  
The midmost wonder, gained no matter  
whence.

There's a tale extant, in a book I conned  
Long years ago, which treats of things  
beyond



## BEATRICE SIGNORINI

The common, antique times and countries  
queer  
And customs strange to match. 'Tis said,  
last year,'  
(Recounts my author,) 'that the King had

mind  
To view his kingdom—guessed at from  
behind  
A palace-window hitherto. Announced  
No sooner was such purpose than 'twas

pounced  
Upon by all the ladies of the land—  
Loyal but light of life: they formed a band  
Of loveliest ones but lithest also, since  
Proudly they all combined to bear their

prince.  
Backs joined to breasts,—arms, legs,—  
nay, ankles, wrists,  
Hands, feet, I know not by what turns and  
twists,  
So interwoven lay that you believed  
'Twas one sole beast of burden which re-

ceived  
The monarch on its back, of breadth not  
scant  
Since fifty girls made one white elephant.'  
So with the fifty flowers which shapes and  
hues  
Blent, as I tell, and made one fast yet

loose  
Mixture of beauties, composite, distinct  
No less in each combining flower that  
linked  
With flower to form a fit environment  
For—whom might be the painter's heart's  
intent

Thus, in the midst enhaloed, to enshrine?

'This glory-guarded middle space—is  
mine?  
For me to fill?'

'For you, my Friend! We part,  
Never perchance to meet again. Your

Art—  
What if I mean it—so to speak—shall wed  
My own, be witness of the life we led  
When sometimes it has seemed our souls  
near found

Each one the other as its mate—unbound  
Had yours been haply from the better  
choice  
—Beautiful Biccé: 'tis the common voice,  
The crowning verdict. Make whom you

like best  
Queen of the central space, and manifest  
Your predilection for what flower beyond  
All flowers find favour with you. I am

fond  
Of—say—yon rose's rich predominance,  
While you—what wonder?—more affect  
the glance

The gentler violet from its leafy screen  
Ventures: so—choose your flower and  
paint your queen!'

Oh but the man was ready, head as hand,  
Instructed and adroit. 'Just as you stand,  
Stay and be made—would Nature but  
relent—  
By Art immortal!'

Every implement  
In tempting reach—a palette primed, each  
squeeze  
Of oil-paint in its proper patch—with  
these,

Brushes, a veritable sheaf to grasp!  
He worked as he had never dared.  
'Unclasp  
My Art from yours who can!'

—he cried  
at length,  
As down he threw the pencil—'Grace  
from Strength  
Dissociate, from your flowery fringe de-

tach  
My face of whom it frames,—the feat will  
match  
With that of Time should Time from me  
extract  
Your memory, Artemisia!'

And in fact,—  
What with the pricking impulse, sudden  
glow  
Of soul—head, hand co-operated so  
That face was worthy of its frame, 'tis  
said—  
Perfect, suppose!

They parted. Soon instead  
Of Rome was home,—of Artemisia—well,  
The placid-perfect wife. And it befell  
That after the first incontestably  
Blessedest of all blisses (—wherefore try  
Your patience with embracings and the  
rest

Due from Calypso's all-unwilling guest  
To his Penelope?)—there somehow came  
The coolness which as duly follows flame.  
So, one day, 'What if we inspect the gifts  
My Art has gained us?'

Now the wife uplifts  
A casket-lid, now tries a medal's chain  
Round her own lithe neck, fits a ring in  
vain  
—Too loose on the fine finger,—vows and  
swears

The jewel with two pendent pearls like  
pears  
Bettors a lady's bosom—witness else!  
And so forth, while Ulysses smiles.

'Such spells  
Subdue such natures—sex must worship  
toys  
—Trinkets and trash: yet, ah, quite other  
joys

Must stir from sleep the passionate abyss  
Of—such an one as her I know—not this  
My gentle consort with the milk for blood!  
Why, did it chance that in a careless mood  
(In those old days, gone—never to return—  
When we talked—she to teach and I to  
learn)

## BEATRICE SIGNORINI

I dropped a word, a hint which might  
 imply  
 Consorts exist—how quick flashed fire  
 from eye,  
 Brow blackened; lip was pinched by  
 furious lip!  
 I needed no reminder of my slip:  
 One warning taught me wisdom. Whereas  
 here . . .  
 Aha, a sportive fancy! Eh, what fear  
 Of harm to follow? Just a whim indulged!

'My Beatrice, there's an undivulged  
 Surprise in store for you: the moment's fit  
 For letting loose a secret: out with it!  
 Tributes to worth, you rightly estimate  
 These gifts of Prince and Bishop, Church  
 and State:

Yet, may I tell you? Tastes so disagree!  
 There's one gift, preciouslest of all to me,  
 I doubt if you would value as well worth  
 The obvious sparkling gauds that men un-  
 earth

For toy-cult mainly of you womankind;  
 Such make you marvel, I concede: while  
 blind

The sex proves to the greater marvel here  
 I veil to baulk its envy. Be sincere!  
 Say, should you search creation far and  
 wide,  
 Was ever face like this?'

He drew aside

The veil, displayed the flower-framed por-  
 trait kept

For private delectation.

No adept

In florist's lore more accurately named  
 And praised or, as appropriately, blamed  
 Specimen after specimen of skull,  
 Than Biccé. 'Rightly placed the daffodil—  
 Scarcely so right the blue germander. Grey  
 Good mouse-ear! Hardly your auricula  
 Is powdered white enough. It seems to me  
 Scarlet not crimson, that anemone:  
 But there's amends in the pink saxifrage.  
 O darling dear ones, let me disengage  
 You innocents from what your harmless-  
 ness

Clasps lovingly! Out thou from their  
 caress;  
 Serpent!'

Whereat forth-flashing from her coils  
 On coils of hair, the *spilla* in its toils  
 Of yellow wealth, the dagger-plaything  
 kept

To pin its plaits together, life-like leapt  
 And—woe to all inside the coronal!  
 Stab followed stab,—cut, slash, she ruined  
 all

The masterpiece. Alack for eyes and  
 mouth

And dimples and endearment—North and  
 South,

East, West, the tatters in a fury flew:  
 There yawned the circlet. What remained  
 to do?

She flung the weapon, and, with folded  
 arms

And mien defiant of such low alarms  
 As death and doom beyond death, Biccé  
 stood

Passively statuesque, in quietude  
 Awaiting judgment.

And out judgment burst  
 With frank unloading of love's laughter,  
 first

Freed from its unsuspected source. Some  
 throe

Must needs unlock love's prison-bars, let  
 flow

The joyance.

'Then you ever were, still are,  
 And henceforth shall be—no occulted star  
 But my resplendent Eicé, sun-revealed,  
 Full-rondure! Woman-glory uncon-  
 cealed,

So front me, find and claim and take your  
 own—

My soul and body yours and yours alone,  
 As you are mine, mine wholly! Heart's  
 love, take—

Use your possession—stab or stay at will  
 Here—hating, saving—woman with the  
 skill

To make man beast or god!'

And so it proved:  
 For, as beseemed new godship, thus he  
 loved,

Past power to change, until his dying-  
 day,—

Good fellow! And I fain would hope—  
 some say

Indeed for certain—that our painter's toils  
 At fresco-splashing, finer stroke in oils,  
 Were not so mediocre after all;  
 Perhaps the work appears unduly small  
 From having loomed too large in old  
 esteem,

Patronized by late Papacy. I seem  
 Myself to have cast eyes on certain work  
 In sundry galleries, no judge needs shirk  
 From moderately praising. He designed  
 Correctly, nor in colour lagged behind  
 His age: but both in Florence and in Rome  
 The elder race so make themselves at home  
 That scarce we give a glance to ceilingfuls  
 Of such like as Francesco. Still, one culis  
 From out the heaped laudations of the time  
 The pretty incident I put in rhyme.

## FLUTE-MUSIC, WITH AN ACCOMPANIMENT

He. Ah, the bird-like fluting  
 Through the ash-tops yonder—  
 Bullfinch-bubbings, soft sounds  
 suiting

## FLUTE-MUSIC, WITH AN ACCOMPANIMENT

What sweet thoughts, I wonder?  
 Fine-pearled notes that surely  
 Gather, dewdrop-fashion,  
 Deep-down in some heart which  
 purely  
 Secrets globuled passion—  
 Passion insuppressive—  
 Such is piped, for certain;  
 Love, no doubt, nay, love excessive  
 'Tis, your ash-tops curtain.

Would your ash-tops open  
 We might spy the player—  
 Seek and find some sense which no  
 pen

Yet from singer, sayer,  
 Ever has extracted:  
 Never, to my knowledge,  
 Yet has pedantry enacted  
 That, in Cupid's College,  
 Just this variation  
 Of the old old yearning  
 Should by plain speech have salva-  
 tion,

Yield new men new learning.  
 'Love!' but what love, nicely  
 New from old departed,  
 Would the player teach precisely?  
 First of all, he started  
 In my brain Assurance—  
 Trust—entire Contentment—  
 Passion proved by much endurance;  
 Then came—not resentment,  
 No, but simply Sorrow:  
 What was seen had vanished:  
 Yesterday so blue! To-morrow  
 Blank, all sunshine banished.

Hark! 'Tis Hope resurges,  
 Struggling through obstruc-  
 tion—

Forces a poor smile which verges  
 On Joy's introduction.  
 Now, perhaps, mere Musing:  
 'Holds earth such a wonder?  
 Fairy-mortal, soul-sense-fusing  
 Past thought's power to sunder!'  
 What? calm Acquiescence?  
 'Daisied turf gives room to  
 Trefoil, plucked once in her pre-  
 sence—  
 Growing by her tomb too!'

*She.* All's your fancy-spinning!  
 Here's the fact: a neighbour  
 Never-ending, still beginning,  
 Recreates his labour:  
 Deep o'er desk he drudges,  
 Adds, divides, subtracts and  
 Multiplies, until he judges  
 Noonday-hour's exact sand  
 Shows the hourglass emptied:  
 Then comes lawful leisure,  
 Minutes rare from toil exempted,  
 Fit to spend in pleasure.

Out then with—what treatise?  
*Youth's Complete Instructor*  
*How to play the Flute. Quid petis?*  
 Follow Youth's conductor  
 On and on, through *Easy*,  
 Up to *Harder*, *Hardest*  
*Flute-piece*, till thou, flautist wheezy,  
 Possibly discarded  
 Tootlings hoarse and husky,  
 Mayst expend with courage  
 Breath—on tunes once bright now  
 dusky—  
 Meant to cool thy porridge.

That's an air of Tulou's  
 He maltreats persistent,  
 Till as lief I'd hear some Zulu's  
 Bone-piped bag, breath-distinct,  
 Madden native dances.  
 I'm the man's familiar:  
 Unexpectedness enhances  
 What your ear's auxiliiar  
 —Fancy—finds suggestive.  
 Listen! That's *legato*  
 Rightly played, his fingers restive  
 Touch as if *staccato*.

*He.* Ah, you trick-betrayer!  
 Telling tales, unwise one?  
 So the secret of the player  
 Was—he could surprise one  
 Well-nigh into trusting  
 Here was a musician  
 Skilled consummately, yet lusting  
 Through no vile ambition  
 After making captive  
 All the world,—rewarded  
 Amply by one stranger's rapture,  
 Common praise discarded.

So, without assistance  
 Such as music rightly  
 Needs and claims,—defying dis-  
 tance,  
 Overleaping lightly  
 Obstacles which hinder,—  
 He, for my approval,  
 All the same and all the kinder  
 Made mine what might move all  
 Earth to kneel adoring:  
 Took—while he piped Gounod's  
 Bit of passionate imploring—  
 Me for Juliet: who knows?

No! as you explain things,  
 All's mere repetition,  
 Practise-pother: of all vain things  
 Why waste pooh or pish on  
 Toilsome effort—never  
 Ending, still beginning—  
 After what should pay endeavour  
 —Right-performance? winning

## FLUTE-MUSIC, WITH AN ACCOMPANIMENT

Weariness from you who,  
Ready to admire some  
Owl's fresh hooting—Tu-whit, tu-  
who—  
Find stale thrush-songs tiresome.

*She.* Songs, Spring thought perfection,  
Summer criticizes:  
What in May escaped detection,  
August, past surprises,  
Notes, and names each blunder.  
You, the just-initiate,  
Praise to heart's content (what  
wonder?)  
Tootings I hear vitate  
Romeo's serenading—  
I who, times full twenty,  
Turned to ice—no ash-tops aiding—  
At his *caldamente*.

So, 'twas distance altered  
Sharps to flats? The missing  
Bar when syncopation faltered  
(You thought—paused for kiss-  
ing!)  
Ash-tops too felonious  
Intercepted? Rather  
Say—they well-nigh made cu-  
phonious  
Discord, helped to gather  
Phrase, by phrase, turn patches  
Into simulated  
Unity which botching matches,—  
Scraps reintegrated.

*He.* Sweet, are you suggestive  
Of an old suspicion  
Which has always found me restive  
To its admonition  
When it ventured whisper  
'Fool, the strifes and struggles  
Of your trembler—blusher—lisper  
Were so many juggles,  
Tricks tried—oh, so often!—  
Which once more do duty,  
Find again a heart to soften,  
Soul to snare with beauty.'

Birth-blush of the briar-rose,  
Mist-bloom of the hedge-sloe,  
Someone gains the prize: admire rose  
Would he, when noon's wedge—  
slow—

Sure, has pushed, expanded  
Rathe pink to raw redness?  
Would he covet sloe when sanded  
By road-dust to deadness?  
So—restore their value!  
Ply a water-sprinkle!  
Then guess sloe is fingered, shall  
you?  
Find in a rose a wrinkle?

Here what played Aquarius?  
Distance—ash-tops aiding,  
Reconciled scraps else contrarious,  
Brightened stuff fast fading.  
Distance—call your shyness:  
Was the fair one peevish?  
Coyness softened out of slyness.  
Was she cunning, thievish,  
All-but-proved impostor?  
Bear but one day's exile,  
Ugly traits were wholly lost or  
Screened by fancies flexible—

Ash-tops these, you take me?  
Fancies' interference  
Changed . . .  
But since I sleep, don't wake me!  
What if all's appearance?  
Is not outside seeming  
Real as substance inside?  
Both are facts, so leave me dreaming:  
If who loses wins I'd  
Ever lose,—conjecture,  
From one phrase trilled deftly,  
All the piece. So, end your lecture,  
Let who lied be left lie!

### 'IMPERANTE AUGUSTO NATUS EST—'

WHAT it was struck the terror into me?  
This, Publius: closer! while we wait our  
turn  
I'll tell you. Water's warm (they ring in-  
side)  
At the eighth hour, till when no use to  
bathe.

Here in the vestibule where now we sit,  
One scarce stood yesterday, the throng  
was such  
Of loyal gapers, folk all eye and ear  
While Lucius Varius Rufus<sup>1</sup> in their midst  
Read out that long-planned late-com-  
pleted piece,  
His Panegyric on the Emperor.  
'Nobody like him' little Flaccus<sup>2</sup> laughed  
'At leading forth an Epos with due pomp!  
Only, when godlike Cæsar swells the  
theme,  
How should mere mortals hope to praise  
aright?  
Tell me, thou offshoot of Etruscan kings!'  
Whereat Mæcenat smiling sighed assent.

I paid my quadrans,<sup>3</sup> left the Thermæ's  
roar  
Of rapture as the poet asked 'What place  
Among the godships Jove, for Cæsar's  
sake,  
Would bid its actual occupant vacate  
In favour of the new divinity?'

<sup>1</sup> Poet and friend of Virgil.  
<sup>2</sup> Roman coin of small value.

<sup>3</sup> Horace.

**'IMPERANTE AUGUSTO NATUS EST—'**

And got the expected answer 'Yield thine  
own!'—  
Jove thus dethroned, I somehow wanted  
air,  
And found myself a-pacing street and  
street,  
Letting the sunset, rosy over Rome,  
Clear my head dizzy with the hubbub—  
say  
As if thought's dance therein had kicked  
up dust  
By trampling on all else: the world lay  
prone,  
As—poet-propped, in brave hexameters—  
Their subject triumphed up from man to  
God.  
Caius Octavius Cæsar the August—  
Where was escape from his prepotency?  
I judge I may have passed—how many  
piles  
Of structure dropt like doles from his free  
hand  
To Rome on every side? Why, right and  
left,  
For temples you've the Thundering  
Jupiter,  
Avenging Mars, Apollo Palatine:  
How count Piazza, Forum—there's a  
third  
All but completed. You've the Theatre  
Named of Marcellus—all his work, such  
work!—  
One thought still ending, dominating all—  
With warrant Varius sang 'Be Cæsar  
God!'  
By what a hold arrests he Fortune's  
wheel,  
Obtaining and retaining heaven and earth  
Through Fortune, if you like, but favour  
—no!  
For the great deeds flashed by me, fast and  
thick  
As stars which storm the sky on autumn  
nights—  
Those conquests! but peace crowned  
them,—so, of peace!  
Count up his titles only—these, in few—  
Ten years Triumvir, Consul thirteen times,  
Emperor, nay—the glory topping all—  
Hailed Father of his Country, last and best  
Of titles, by himself accepted so:  
And why not? See but feats achieved in  
Rome—  
Not to say, Italy—he planted there  
Some thirty colonies—but Rome itself  
All new-built, 'marble now, brick once,'  
he boasts:  
This Portico, that Circus. Would you  
sail?  
He has drained Tiber for you: would you  
walk?  
He straightened out the long Flaminian  
Way.  
Poor? Profit by his score of donatives!

Rich—that is, mirthful? Half-a-hundred  
games  
Challenge your choice! There's Rome—  
for you and me  
Only? The centre of the world besides!  
For, look the wide world over, where ends  
Rome?  
To sunrise? There's Euphrates—all be-  
tween!  
To sunset? Ocean and immensity:  
North,—stare till Danube stops you:  
South, see Nile,  
The Desert and the earth-upholding  
Mount.  
Well may the poet-people each with each  
Vie in his praise, our company of swans,  
Virgil and Horace, singers—in their way—  
Nearly as good as Varius, though less  
famed:  
Well may they cry, 'No mortal, plainly  
God!'  
Thus to myself myself said, while I walked:  
Or would have said, could thought attain  
to speech,  
Clean baffled by enormity of bliss  
The while I strove to scale its heights and  
sound  
Its depths—this masterdom o'er all the  
world  
Of one who was but born,—like you, like  
me,  
Like all the world he owns,—of flesh and  
blood.  
But he—how grasp, how gauge his own  
conceit  
Of bliss to me near inconceivable?  
Or—since such flight too much makes reel  
the brain—  
Let's sink—and so take refuge, as it were,  
From life's excessive altitude—to life's  
Breathable wayside shelter at its base!  
If looms thus large this Cæsar to myself  
—Of senatorial rank and somebody—  
How must he strike the vulgar nameless  
crowd,  
Innumerable swarm that's nobody at all?  
Why,—for an instance,—much as yon  
gold shape  
Crowned, sceptred, on the temple oppo-  
site—  
Fulgent Jupiter—must daze the sense  
Of—say, yon outcast begging from its  
step!  
What, anti-Cæsar, monarch in the mud,  
As he is pinnacled above thy pate?  
Ay, beg away! thy lot contrasts full well  
With his whose bounty yields thee this  
support—  
Our Holy and Inviolable One,  
Cæsar, whose bounty built the fane above!  
Dost read my thought? Thy garb, alack,  
displays  
Sore usage truly in each rent and stain—

# ‘IMPERANTE AUGUSTO NATUS EST—’

Faugh! Wash though in Suburra! 'Ware  
the dogs  
Who may not so disdain a meal on thee!  
What, stretchest forth a palm to catch my  
alms?  
Aha, why yes: I must appear—who  
knows?—  
I, in my toga, to thy rags and thee—  
Quæstor—nay, Ædile, Censor—Pol! per-  
haps  
The very City-Prætor's noble self!  
As to me Cæsar, so to thee am I?  
Good: nor in vain shall prove thy quest,  
poor rogue!  
Hither—hold palm out—take this quarter-  
as!

And who did take it? As he raised his  
head,  
(My gesture was a trifle—well, abrupt),  
Back fell the broad flap of the peasant's-  
hat,  
The homespun cloak that muffled half his  
cheek  
Dropped somewhat, and I had a glimpse  
—just one!  
One was enough. Whose—whose might  
be the face?  
That unkempt careless hair—brown, yel-  
lowish—  
Those sparkling eyes beneath their eye-  
brows' ridge  
(Each meets each, and the hawk-nose rules  
between)  
—That was enough, no glimpse was  
needed more!

And terrifyingly into my mind  
Came that quick-hushed report was whis-  
pered us,  
'They do say, once a year in sordid garb  
He plays the mendicant, sits all day long,  
Asking and taking alms of who may pass,  
And so averting, if submission help,  
Fate's envy, the dread chance and change  
of things  
When Fortune—for a word, a look, a  
nought—  
Turns spiteful and—the petted lioness—  
Strikes with her sudden paw, and prone  
falls each  
Who patted late her neck superiorly,  
Or trifled with those claw-tips velvet-  
sheathed.'  
'He's God!' shouts Lucius Varius Rufus:  
'Man  
And worms'-meat any moment!' mutters  
low  
Some Power, admonishing the mortal-  
born.

Ay, do you mind? There's meaning in the  
fact  
That who so conquers, triumphs, enters  
Rome,

Climbing the Capitolian, soaring thus  
To glory's summit,—Publius, do you  
mark—  
Ever the same attendant who, behind,  
Above the Conqueror's head supports the  
crown  
All-too-demonstrative for human wear,  
—One hand's employment—all the while  
reserves  
Its fellow, backward flung, to point how,  
close  
Appended from the car, beneath the foot  
Of the up-borne exulting Conqueror,  
Frown—half-described—the instruments  
of shame,  
The malefactor's due. Crown, now—  
Cross, when?

Who stands secure? Are even Gods so  
safe?  
Jupiter that just now is dominant—  
Are not there ancient dismal tales how  
once  
A predecessor reigned ere Saturn came,  
And who can say if Jupiter be last?  
Was it for nothing the grey Sibyl wrote  
'Cæsar Augustus regnant, shall be born  
In blind Judæa'—one to master him,  
Him and the universe? An old-wife's tale?  
Bath-drudge! Here, slave! No cheating!  
Our turn next.  
No loitering, or be sure you taste the lash!  
Two strigils, two oil-drippers, each a  
sponge!

## DEVELOPMENT

My Father was a scholar and knew Greek.  
When I was five years old, I asked him  
once  
'What do you read about?'  
'The siege of Troy.'  
'What is a siege and what is Troy?'  
Whereat  
He piled up chairs and tables for a town,  
Set me a-top for Priam, called our cat  
—Helen, enticed away from home (he  
said)  
By wicked Paris, who couched somewhere  
close  
Under the footstool, being cowardly,  
But whom—since she was worth the pains,  
poor puss—  
Towzer and Tray,—our dogs, the Atreidai,  
—sought  
By taking Troy to get possession of  
—Always when great Achilles ceased to  
sulk,  
(My pony in the stable)—forth would  
prance  
And put to flight Hector—our page-boy's  
self.  
This taught me who was who and what  
was what:

## DEVELOPMENT

So far I rightly understood the case  
At five years old: a huge delight it proved  
And still proves—thanks to that instructor  
sage

My Father, who knew better than turn  
straight

Learning's full flare on weak-eyed ignorance,

Or, worse yet, leave weak eyes to grow  
sand-blind,

Content with darkness and vacuity.

It happened, two or three years afterward,  
That—I and playmates playing at Troy's

Siege—

My Father came upon our make-believe.  
'How would you like to read yourself the  
tale

Properly told, of which I gave you first  
Merely such notion as a boy could bear?

Pope, now, would give you the precise  
account

Of what, some day, by dint of scholarship,  
You'll hear—who knows?—from

Homer's very mouth.

Learn Greek by all means, read the "Blind  
Old Man,

Sweetest of Singers"—*tuphlos* which  
means "blind,"

*Hedistos* which means "sweetest." Time  
enough!

Try, anyhow, to master him some day;  
Until when, take what serves for substitute,

Read Pope, by all means!'

So I ran through Pope,  
Enjoyed the tale—what history so true?

Also attacked my Primer, duly drudged,  
Grew fitter thus for what was promised

next—

The very thing itself, the actual words,  
When I could turn—say, Buttmann to  
account.

Time passed, I ripened somewhat: one fine  
day,

'Quite ready for the Iliad, nothing less?  
There's Heine, where the big books block

the shelf:

Don't skip a word, thumb well the  
Lexicon!'

I thumbed well and skipped nowise till I  
learned

Who was who, what was what, from  
Homer's tongue,

And there an end of learning. Had you  
asked

The all-accomplished scholar, twelve years  
old,

'Who was it wrote the Iliad?'—what a  
laugh!

'Why, Homer, all the world knows: of  
his life

Doubtless some facts exist: it's every-  
where:

We have not settled, though, his place of  
birth:

He begged, for certain, and was blind be-  
side:

Seven cities claimed him—Scio, with best  
right,

Thinks Byron. What he wrote? Those  
Hymns we have.

Then there's the "Battle of the Frogs and  
Mice,"

That's all—unless they dig "Margites" up  
(I'd like that) nothing more remains to  
know.'

Thus did youth spend a comfortable time;  
Until—'What's this the Germans say is

fact

That Wolf found out first? It's unpleasant  
work

Their chop and change, unsettling one's  
belief:

All the same, while we live, we learn, that's  
sure.'

So, I bent brow o'er *Prolegomena*.

And, after Wolf, a dozen of his like  
Proved there was never any Troy at all,

Neither Besiegers nor Besieged,—nay,  
worse,—

No actual Homer, no authentic text,  
No warrant for the fiction I, as fact,

Had treasured in my heart and soul so  
long—

Ay, mark you! and as fact held still, still  
hold,

Spite of new knowledge, in my heart of  
hearts

And soul of souls, fact's essence freed and  
fixed

From accidental fancy's guardian sheath.  
Assuredly thenceforward—thank my

stars!—

However it got there, deprive who could—  
Wring from the shrine my precious

tenantry,

Helen, Ulysses, Hector and his Spouse,  
Achilles and his Friend?—though Wolf—

ah, Wolf!

Why must he needs come doubting, spoil  
a dream?

But then 'No dream's worth waking'—  
Browning says:

And here's the reason why I tell thus  
much.

I, now mature man, you anticipate,  
May blame my Father justifiably

For letting me dream out my nonage thus,  
And only by such slow and sure degrees

Permitting me to sift the grain from chaff,  
Get truth and falsehood known and

named as such.

Why did he ever let me dream at all,  
Not bid me taste the story in its strength?

Suppose my childhood was scarce qualified

## DEVELOPMENT

To rightly understand mythology,  
Silence at least was in his power to keep:  
I might have—somehow—correspond-  
ingly—

Well, who knows by what method, gained  
my gains,

Been taught, by forthrights not meander-  
ings,

My aim should be to loathe, like Peleus'  
son,

A lie as Hell's Gate, love my wedded wife,  
Like Hector, and so on with all the rest.

Could not I have excogitated this  
Without believing such men really were?

That is—he might have put into my hand  
The 'Ethics'? In translation, if you please,

Exact, no pretty lying that improves,  
To suit the modern taste: no more, no

less—  
The 'Ethics': 'tis a treatise I find hard  
To read aright now that my hair is grey,

And I can manage the original.  
At five years old—how ill had fared its

leaves!  
Now, growing double o'er the Stagirite,  
'At least I soil no page with bread and milk,

Nor crumple, dogsear and deface—boys'  
way.

### REPHAN<sup>1</sup>

How I lived, ere my human life began  
In this world of yours,—like you, made

man,—  
When my home was the Star of my God  
Rephan?

Come then around me, close about,  
World-weary earth-born ones! Darkest

doubt  
Or deepest despondency keeps you out?

Nowise! Before a word I speak,  
Let my circle embrace your worn, your

weak,  
Brow-furrowed old age, youth's hollow  
cheek—

Diseased in the body, sick in soul,  
Pinched poverty, satiate wealth,—your

whole  
Array of despairs! Have I read the roll?

All here? Attend, perpend! O Star  
Of my God Rephan, what wonders are  
In thy brilliance fugitive, faint and far!

Far from me, native to thy realm,  
Who shared its perfections which o'er-

whelm  
Mind to conceive. Let drift the helm,

<sup>1</sup> Suggested by a very early recollection of a prose  
story by the noble woman and imaginative writer,  
Jane Taylor, of Norwich [actually Ongar.]—R. B.

Let drive the sail, dare unconfined  
Embark for the vastitude, O Mind,  
Of an absolute bliss! Leave earth behind!

Here, by extremes, at a mean you guess:  
There, all's at most—not more, not less:  
Nowhere deficiency nor excess.

No want—whatever should be, is now:  
No growth—that's change, and change

comes—how  
To royalty born with crown on brow?

Nothing begins—so needs to end:  
Where fell it short at first? Extend

Only the same, no change can mend!

I use your language: mine—no word  
Of its wealth would help who spoke, who

heard,  
To a gleam of intelligence. None pre-

ferred,

None felt distaste when better and worse  
Were uncontrastable: bless or curse

What—in that uniform universe?

Can your world's phrase, your sense of  
things

Forth-figure the Star of my God? No  
springs,

No winters throughout its space. Time  
brings

No hope, no fear: as to-day, shall be  
To-morrow: advance or retreat need we

At our stand-still through eternity?

All happy: needs must we so have been,  
Since who could be otherwise? All serene:

What dark was to banish, what light to  
screen?

Earth's rose is a bud that's checked or  
grows

As beams may encourage or blasts oppose:  
Our lives leapt forth, each a full-orbed

rose—

Each rose sole rose in a sphere that spread  
Above and below and around—rose-red:

No fellowship, each for itself instead.

One better than I—would prove I lacked  
Somewhat: one worse were a jarring fact

Disturbing my faultlessly exact.

How did it come to pass there lurked  
Somehow a seed of change that worked

Obscure in my heart till perfection  
irked?—

Till out of its peace at length grew strife—  
Hopes, fears, loves, hates,—obscurely

life,—  
My life grown a-tremble to turn your life?



## REPHAN

Was it Thou, above all lights that are,  
Prime Potency, did Thy hand unbar  
The prison-gate of Rephan my Star?

In me did such potency wake a pulse  
Could trouble tranquility that lulls  
Not lashes inertion till throes convulse

Soul's quietude into discontent?  
As when the completed rose bursts, rent  
By ardors till forth from its orb are sent

New petals that mar—unmake the disc—  
Spoil rondure: what in it ran brave risk,  
Changed apathy's calm to strife, bright,  
brisk,

Pushed simple to compound, sprang and  
spread  
Till, fresh-formed, facetted, floretted,  
The flower that slept woke a star instead?

No mimic of Star Rephan! How long  
I stagnated there where weak and strong,  
The wise and the foolish, right and wrong,

Are merged alike in a neutral Best,  
Can I tell? No more than at whose behest  
The passion arose in my passive breast,

And I yearned for no sameness but differ-  
ence  
In thing and thing, that should shock my  
sense  
With a want of worth in them all, and  
thence

Startle me up, by an Infinite  
Discovered above and below me—height  
And depth alike to attract my flight,

Repel my descent: by hate taught love.  
Oh, gain were indeed to see above  
Supremacy ever—to move, remove,

Not reach—aspire yet never attain  
To the object aimed at! Scarce in vain,—  
As each stage I left nor touched again.

To suffer, did pangs bring the loved one  
bliss,  
Wring knowledge from ignorance,—just  
for this—

To add one drop to a love-abys!

Enough: for you doubt, you hope, O men,  
You fear, you agonize, die: what then?  
Is an end to your life's work out of ken?

Have you no assurance that, earth at end,  
Wrong will prove right? Who made shall  
mend  
In the higher sphere to which yearnings  
tend?

Why should I speak? You divine the test.  
When the trouble grew in my pregnant  
breast

A voice said 'So wouldst thou strive, not  
rest?

'Burn and not smoulder, win by worth,  
Not rest content with a wealth that's  
dearth?

Thou art past Rephan, thy place be Earth!'

## REVERIE

I KNOW there shall dawn a day  
—Is it here on homely earth?  
Is it yonder, worlds away,  
Where the strange and new have birth,  
That Power comes full in play?

Is it here, with grass about,  
Under befriending trees,  
When shy buds venture out,  
And the air by mild degrees  
Puts winter's death past doubt?

Is it up amid whirl and roar  
Of the elemental flame  
Which star-flecks heaven's dark floor,  
That, new yet still the same,  
Full in play comes Power once more?

Somewhere, below, above,  
Shall a day dawn—this I know—  
When Power, which vainly strove  
My weakness to o'erthrow,  
Shall triumph. I breathe, I move,

I truly am, at last!  
For a veil is rent between  
Me and the truth which passed  
Fitful, half-guessed, half-seen,  
Grasped at—not gained, held fast.

I for my race and me  
Shall apprehend life's law:  
In the legend of man shall see  
Writ large what small I saw  
In my life's tale: both agree.

As the record from youth to age  
Of my own, the single soul—  
So the world's wide book: one page  
Deciphered explains the whole  
Of our common heritage.

How but from near to far  
Should knowledge proceed, increase?  
Try the clod ere test the star!  
Bring our inside strife to peace  
Ere we wage, on the outside, war!

So, my annals thus begin:  
With body, to life awake  
Soul, the immortal twin  
Of body which bore soul's yoke  
Since mortal and not akin.

By means of the flesh, grown fit,  
Mind, in surview of things,  
Now soared, anon alit  
To treasure its gatherings  
From the ranged expanse—to-wit,

Nature,—earth's, heaven's wide show  
Which taught all hope, all fear:  
Acquainted with joy and woe,  
I could say 'Thus much is clear,  
Doubt annulled thus much: I know.

'All is effect of cause:  
As it would, has willed and done  
Power: and my mind's applause  
Goes, passing laws each one,  
To Omnipotence, lord of laws.'

Head praises, but heart refrains  
From loving's acknowledgment.  
Whole losses outweigh half-gains:  
Earth's good is with evil blent:  
Good struggles but evil reigns.

Yet since Earth's good proved good—  
Incontrovertibly  
Worth loving—I understood  
How evil—did mind decry  
Power's object to end pursued—

Were haply as cloud across  
Good's orb, no orb itself:  
Mere mind—were it found at loss  
Did it play the tricky elf  
And from life's gold purge the dross?

Power is known infinite:  
Good struggles to be—at best  
Seems—scanned by the human sight,  
Tried by the senses' test—  
Good palpably: but with right

Therefore to mind's award  
Of loving, as power claims praise?  
Power—which finds nought too hard,  
Fulfilling itself all ways  
Unchecked, unchanged: while barred,

Baffled, what good began  
Ends evil on every side.  
To Power submissive man  
Breathes 'E'en as Thou art, abide!'  
While to good 'Late-found, long-sought,

'Would Power to a plenitude  
But liberate, but enlarge  
Good's strait confine,—renewed  
Were ever the heart's discharge  
Of loving!' Else doubts intrude.

For you dominate, stars all!  
For a sense informs you—brute,  
Bird, worm, fly, great and small,  
Each with your attribute  
Or low or majestic!

Thou earth that embosomest  
Offspring of land and sea—  
How thy hills first sank to rest,  
How thy vales bred herb and tree  
Which dizen thy mother-breast—

Do I ask? 'Be ignorant  
Ever!' the answer clangs:  
Whereas if I plead world's want,  
Soul's sorrows and body's pangs,  
Play the human applicant,—

Is a remedy far to seek?  
I question and find response:  
I—all men, strong or weak,  
Conceive and declare at once  
For each want its cure. 'Power, speak!

'Stop change, avert decay,  
Fix life fast, banish death,  
Eclipse from the star bid stay,  
Abridge of no moment's breath  
One creature! Hence, Night, hail, Day!

What need to confess again  
No problem this to solve  
By impotence? Power, once plain  
Proved Power,—let on Power devolve  
Good's right to co-equal reign!

Past mind's conception—Power!  
Do I seek how star, earth, beast,  
Bird, worm, fly, gained their dower  
For life's use, most and least?  
Back from the search I cower.

Do I seek what heals all harm,  
Nay, hinders the harm at first,  
Saves earth? Speak, Power, the charm!  
Keep the life there unamerced  
By chance, change, death's alarm!

As promptly as mind conceives,  
Let Power in its turn declare  
Some law which wrong retrieves,  
Abolishes everywhere  
What thwarts, what irks, what grieves!

Never to be! and yet  
How easy it seems—to sense  
Like man's—if somehow met  
Power with its match—immense  
Love, limitless, unbeset

By hindrance on every side!  
Conjectured, nowise known,  
Such may be: could man confide  
Such would match—were Love but  
shown  
Stript of the veils that hide—

Power's self now manifest!  
So reads my record: thine,  
O world, how runs it? Guessed  
Were the purport of that prime line,  
Prophetic of all the rest!

## REVERIE

'In a beginning God  
Made heaven and earth.' Forth flashed  
Knowledge: from star to clod  
Man knew things: doubt abashed  
Closed its long period.

Knowledge obtained Power praise.  
Had Good been manifest,  
Broke out in cloudless blaze,  
Unchequered as unrepressed,  
In all things Good at best—

Then praise—all praise, no blame—  
Had hailed the perfection. No!  
As Power's display, the same  
Be Good's—praise forth shall flow  
Unisonous in acclaim!

Even as the world its life,  
So have I lived my own—  
Power seen with Love at strife,  
That sure, this dimly shown,  
—Good rare and evil rife.

Whereof the effect be—faith  
That, some far day, were found  
Ripeness in things now rather,  
Wrong righted, each chain unbound,  
Renewal born out of scathe.

Why faith—but to lift the load,  
To leaven the lump, where lies  
Mind prostrate through knowledge owed  
To the loveless Power it tries  
To withstand, how vain! In flowed

Ever resistless fact:  
No more than the passive clay  
Disputes the potter's act,  
Could the whelmed mind disobey  
Knowledge the cataract.

But, perfect in every part,  
Has the potter's moulded shape,  
Leap of man's quickened heart,  
Throe of his thought's escape,  
Stings of his soul which dart  
Through the barrier of flesh, till keen  
She climbs from the calm and clear,  
Through turbidity all between,  
From the known to the unknown here,  
Heaven's 'Shall be,' from Earth's 'Has  
been'?

Then life is—to wake not sleep,  
Rise and not rest, but press  
From earth's level where blindly creep  
Things perfected, more or less,  
To the heaven's height, far and steep,

Where, amid what strifes and storms  
May wait the adventurous quest,  
Power is Love—transports, transforms  
Who aspired from worst to best,  
Sought the soul's world, spurned the  
worms'.

I have faith such end shall be:  
From the first, Power was—I knew.  
Life has made clear to me  
That, strive but for closer view,  
Love were as plain to see.

When see? When there dawns a day,  
If not on the homely earth,  
Then yonder, worlds away,  
Where the strange and new have birth,  
And Power comes full in play.

## EPILOGUE

At the midnight in the silence of the sleep-  
time,  
When you set your fancies free,  
Will they pass to where—by death, fools  
think, imprisoned—  
Low he lies who once so loved you, whom  
you loved so,  
—Pity me?

Oh to love so, be so loved, yet so mistaken!  
What had I on earth to do  
With the slothful, with the mawkish, the  
unmanly?  
Like the aimless, helpless, hopeless, did I  
drivel  
—Being—who?

One who never turned his back but  
marched breast forward,  
Never doubted clouds would break,  
Never dreamed, though right were  
worsted, wrong would triumph,  
Held we fall to rise, are baffled to fight  
better,  
Sleep to wake.

No, at noonday in the bustle of man's  
work-time  
Greet the unseen with a cheer!  
Bid him forward, breast and back as either  
should be,  
'Strive and thrive!' cry 'Speed,—fight on,  
fare ever  
There as here!'

# A CHRONOLOGICAL LIST

OF

## ROBERT BROWNING'S POEMS AND PLAYS

1833. PAULINE: A Fragment of a Confession.
1835. PARACELSUS.
1837. STRAFFORD: An Historical Tragedy.
1840. SORDELLO.
1841. Bells and Pomegranates, No. I, PIPPA PASSES.
1842. Bells and Pomegranates, No. II, KING VICTOR AND KING CHARLES.
1842. Bells and Pomegranates, No. III, DRAMATIC LYRICS.  
Cavalier Tunes—  
I. Marching Along.  
II. Give a Rouse.  
III. My Wife Gertrude.<sup>1</sup>  
Italy and France—  
I. Italy.<sup>2</sup>  
II. France.<sup>3</sup>  
Camp and Cloister—  
I. Camp (French).<sup>4</sup>  
II. Cloister (Spanish).<sup>5</sup>  
In a Gondola.  
Artemis Prologizes.  
Waring.  
Queen-Worship—  
I. Rudel and the Lady of Tripoli.  
II. Cristina.  
Madhouse Cells—  
I. [Johannes Agricola.<sup>6</sup>]  
II. [Porphyria.<sup>7</sup>]  
Through the Metidja to Abd-el-Kadr, 1842.  
The Pied Piper of Hamelin.
1843. Bells and Pomegranates, No. IV, THE RETURN OF THE DRUSES: A Tragedy in Five Acts.
1843. Bells and Pomegranates, No. V, A BLOT IN THE 'SCUTCHEON: A Tragedy in Three Acts.
1844. Bells and Pomegranates, No. VI, COLOMBE'S BIRTHDAY: A Play in Five Acts.
1845. Bells and Pomegranates, No. VII, DRAMATIC ROMANCES AND LYRICS—  
How they brought the Good News from Ghent to Aix.  
Pictor Ignotus. Florence, 15—. Italy in England.<sup>8</sup>  
England in Italy.<sup>9</sup>  
The Lost Leader.  
The Lost Mistress.  
Home Thoughts from Abroad (I. 'Oh to be in England.' II. 'Here's to Nelson's Memory.'<sup>10</sup>  
III. 'Nobly Cape St. Vincent.'<sup>11</sup>)  
The Tomb at St. Praxed's.<sup>12</sup>  
Garden Fancies—  
I. The Flower's Name.<sup>13</sup>  
II. Sibrandus Schafnaburgensis.<sup>14</sup>  
France and Spain—  
I. The Laboratory (Ancien Régime).<sup>15</sup>  
II. The Confessional.  
The Flight of the Duchess.<sup>16</sup>  
Earth's Immortalities.
- <sup>1</sup> Afterwards called 'Boot and Saddle'.  
<sup>2</sup> Afterwards called 'My Last Duchess'.  
<sup>3</sup> Afterwards called 'Count Gismond'.  
<sup>4</sup> Afterwards called 'Incident of the French Camp'.  
<sup>5</sup> Afterwards called 'Soliloquy of the Spanish Cloister'.  
<sup>6</sup> Afterwards called 'Johannes Agricola in Meditation', was first printed in *The Monthly Repository*, vol. x, N.S. 1836, pp. 45, 46.  
<sup>7</sup> Afterwards called 'Porphyria's Lover', was first printed in *The Monthly Repository*, vol. x, N.S. 1836, pp. 43, 44.  
<sup>8</sup> Afterwards called 'The Italian in England'.  
<sup>9</sup> Afterwards called 'The Englishman in Italy'.  
<sup>10</sup> Afterwards printed as the third section of 'Nationality in Drinks'.  
<sup>11</sup> Afterwards called 'Home Thoughts from the Sea'.  
<sup>12</sup> Afterwards called 'The Bishop orders his Tomb in St. Praxed's Church', was first printed in *Hood's Magazine*, vol. iii, March 1845, pp. 237-239.  
<sup>13</sup>, <sup>14</sup> First printed in *Hood's Magazine*, vol. ii, July 1844, pp. 45-48.  
<sup>15</sup> First printed in *Hood's Magazine*, vol. i, June 1844, pp. 513, 514.  
<sup>16</sup> Sections i to 9, first printed in *Hood's Magazine*, vol. iii, April 1845, pp. 313-318.

# LIST OF ROBERT BROWNING'S POEMS AND PLAYS

## DRAMATIC ROMANCES—*Contd.*

Song, 'Nay but you, who do not  
love her'.  
The Boy and the Angel.<sup>1</sup>  
Night and Morning (I. Night,<sup>2</sup>  
II. Morning).<sup>3</sup>  
Claret and Tokay.<sup>4</sup>  
Saul.<sup>5</sup>  
Time's Revenges.  
The Glove.

1846. Bells and Pomegranates, No. VIII  
and last. LURIA; and A SOUL'S  
TRAGEDY.

1850. CHRISTMAS-EVE AND EASTER-  
DAY.

1855. MEN AND WOMEN. In Two  
Volumes—

Vol. I. Love among the Ruins.  
A Lovers' Quarrel.  
Evelyn Hope.  
Up at a Villa—Down in the City.  
(As Distinguished by an Italian  
Person of Quality.)  
A Woman's Last Word.  
Fra Lippo Lippi.  
A Toccata of Galuppi's.  
By the Fireside.  
Any Wife to Any Husband.  
An Epistle containing the Strange  
Medical Experience of Karshish,  
the Arab Physician.  
Mesmerism.  
A Serenade at the Villa.  
My Star.  
Instans Tyrannus.  
A Pretty Woman.  
'Childe Roland to the Dark Tower  
came.'  
Respectability.  
A Light Woman.  
The Statue and the Bust.  
Love in a Life.  
Life in a Love.  
How it Strikes a Contemporary.  
The Last Ride Together.  
The Patriot: An Old Story.

## MEN AND WOMEN—*Contd.*

Master Hugues of Saxe-Gotha.  
Bishop Blougram's Apology.  
Memorabilia.  
Vol. II. Andrea del Sarto (called 'The  
Faultless Painter').  
Before.  
After.  
In Three Days.  
In a Year.  
Old Pictures in Florence.  
In a Balcony.  
Saul. (See note <sup>6</sup>.)  
'De Gustibus —'.  
Women and Roses.

Protus.  
Holy-Cross Day.  
The Guardian Angel: A Picture  
at Fano.  
Cleon.  
The Twins.<sup>7</sup>  
Popularity.  
The Heretic's Tragedy. A Middle-  
Age Interlude.  
Two in the Campagna.  
A Grammarian's Funeral.  
One Way of Love.  
Another Way of Love.  
'Transcendentalism': A Poem in  
Twelve Books.  
Misconceptions.  
One Word More. To E. B. B.

1864. DRAMATIS PERSONÆ—

James Lee.<sup>8</sup>  
Gold Hair: A Legend of Pornic.<sup>9</sup>  
The Worst of It.  
Dis aliter visum; or Le Byron de  
nos Jours.  
Too Late.  
Abt Vogler.  
Rabbi Ben Ezra.  
A Death in the Desert.  
Caliban upon Setebos; or, Natural  
Theology in the Island.  
Confessions.  
May and Death.<sup>10</sup>  
Prospect.<sup>10</sup>

<sup>1</sup> First printed in *Hood's Magazine*, vol. II, August 1844, pp. 140-142.

<sup>2</sup> Afterwards called 'Meeting at Night'.

<sup>3</sup> Afterwards called 'Parting at Morning'.

<sup>4</sup> Afterwards printed as the first and second sections of 'Nationality in Drinks'.

<sup>5</sup> First part only (sections 1-9); the second part was added and included with it in 'Men and Women', 1855, vol. II, p. 111.

<sup>6</sup> First printed in a pamphlet entitled *Two Poems. By Elizabeth Barrett and Robert Browning*. 8vo. London, 1854.

<sup>7</sup> Afterwards called 'James Lee's Wife'.

<sup>8</sup> First printed in *The Atlantic Monthly*, vol. XIII, May 1864, p. 596.

<sup>9</sup> First printed in *The Keepsake* for 1857.

<sup>10</sup> First printed in *The Atlantic Monthly*, vol. XIII, June 1864, p. 694.

# LIST OF ROBERT BROWNING'S POEMS AND PLAYS

## DRAMATIS PERSONÆ—*Contd.*

Youth and Art.  
A Face.  
A Likeness.  
Mr. Sludge, 'The Medium'.  
Apparent Failure.  
Epilogue.

1864. Orpheus and Eurydice. F. Leighton.<sup>1</sup>

1868. Deaf and Dumb.<sup>2</sup>

*Not included in this edition.*

1868-9. THE RING AND THE BOOK.

In Four Volumes.

1871. BALAUSTION'S ADVENTURE,  
including a Transcript from Euripides.

1871. PRINCE HOHENSTIEL-SCHWANGAU, SAVIOUR OF SOCIETY.

1872. FIFINE AT THE FAIR.

1873. RED COTTON NIGHT-CAP COUNTRY, OR TURF AND TOWERS.

1875. ARISTOPHANES' APOLOGY,  
including a Transcript from Euripides, being the Last Adventure of Balaustion.

1875. THE INN ALBUM.

1876. PACCHIAROTTO AND HOW HE WORKED IN DISTEMPER: with other Poems—

Prologue.

Of Pacchiarotto and how he worked in Distemper.

At the 'Mermaid'.

House.

Shop.

Pisgah Sights. I.

" " II.

Fears and Scruples.

Natural Magic.

Magical Nature.

Bifurcation.

Numpholeptos.

Appearances.

St. Martin's Summer.

Hervé Riel.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> First printed in the Catalogue of the Royal Academy Exhibition 1864, afterwards called 'Eurydice to Orpheus'.

<sup>2</sup> First printed in *The Poetical Works of Robert Browning*, six vols. 1868; vol. vi, p. 151.

<sup>3</sup> First printed in *The Cornhill Magazine*, March 1871.

## PACCHIAROTTO—*Contd.*

A Forgiveness.

Cenciája.

Filippo Balduucci on the Privilege of Burial.

Epilogue.

1877. THE AGAMEMNON OF ÆSCHYLUS. (*Not included in this edition.*)

1878. LA SAISIAZ.<sup>4</sup>

1878. THE TWO POETS OF CROISIC.<sup>5</sup>

1879. DRAMATIC IDYLS—

Martin Ralph.

Pheidippides.

Halbert and Hob.

Ivàn Ivànovitch.

Tray.

Ned Bratts.

1880. DRAMATIC IDYLS: SECOND SERIES—

[Prologue.]

Echetlos.

Clive.

Mulýkeh.

Pietro of Abano.

Doctor —.

Pan and Luna.

[Epilogue.]

1883. JOCOSERIA—

Wanting is—What?

Donald.

Solomon and Balkis.

Cristina and Monaldeschi.

Mary Wollstonecraft and Fuseli.

Adam, Lilith, and Eve.

Ixion.

Jochanan Hakkadosh.

Never the Time and the Place.

Pambo.

1884. FERISHTAH'S FANCIES—

Prologue.

1. The Eagle.

2. Melon-Seller.

3. Shah Abbas.

4. The Family.

5. The Sun.

6. Mihrab Shah.

7. A Camel-Driver.

8. Two Camels.

9. Cherries.

10. Plot-Culture.

11. A Pillar at Sebzevah.

<sup>4, 5</sup> Published together in one volume.

# LIST OF ROBERT BROWNING'S POEMS AND PLAYS

## FERISHTAH'S FANCIES—*Contd.*

12. A Bean-Stripe: also Apple Eating.  
Epilogue.
1887. PARLEYINGS WITH CERTAIN PEOPLE OF IMPORTANCE IN THEIR DAY. (*Not included in this edition.*)
- 1889.<sup>1</sup> ASOLANDO: FANCIES AND FACTS—  
Prologue.  
Rosny.  
Dubiety.  
Now.  
Humility.  
Poetics.  
Summum Bonum.  
A Pearl, A Girl.  
Speculative.  
White Witchcraft.

## ASOLANDO—*Contd.*

- Bad Dreams. I.  
" " II.  
" " III.  
" " IV.  
Inapprehensiveness.  
Which?  
The Cardinal and the Dog.  
The Pope and the Net.  
The Bean-Feast.  
Muckle-mouth Meg.  
Arcades Ambo.  
The Lady and the Painter.  
Ponte dell' Angelo, Venice.  
Beatrice Signorini.  
Flute-Music, with an Accompaniment.  
'Imperante Augusto natus est — .  
Development.  
Rephan.  
Reverie.  
Epilogue.

<sup>1</sup> Published on December 12th, 1889, the day of Browning's death.

# INDEX OF TITLES

ABBAS, Shah . . . . .	644	Death in the Desert, A . . . . .	483
Abd-el-Kadr, Through the Metidja to . . . . .	209	Development . . . . .	683
Abt Vogler . . . . .	479	De aliter visum; or, le Byron de nos Jours . . . . .	475
Adam, Lilith, and Eve . . . . .	627	Doctor — . . . . .	617
After . . . . .	244	Donald . . . . .	622
Agricola (Johannes) in Meditation . . . . .	426	Dramatic Idyls. First Series . . . . .	584
Amphibian . . . . .	520	"    "    Second Series . . . . .	603
Andrea del Sarto . . . . .	432	"    "    Lyrics . . . . .	207
Another Way of Love . . . . .	239	"    "    Romances . . . . .	317
Any Wife to Any Husband . . . . .	235	Dramatis Personæ . . . . .	467
Apparent Failure . . . . .	518	Dreams, Bad . . . . .	667-9
Appearances . . . . .	535	Drinks, Nationality in . . . . .	210
Arcades Ambo . . . . .	672	Druses, The Return of the . . . . .	248
Artemis Prologizes . . . . .	421	Dubiety . . . . .	666
Asolando . . . . .	665	Duchess, My Last . . . . .	317
At the 'Mermaid' . . . . .	528	Duchess, the Flight of the . . . . .	340
BAD Dreams . . . . .	667-9	EAGLE, The . . . . .	643
Balcony, In a . . . . .	456	Earth's Immortalities . . . . .	215
Baldinucci (Filippo) on the Privilege of . . . . .	546	Easter-Day . . . . .	409
Burial . . . . .	546	Echelos . . . . .	603
Bean-Feast, The . . . . .	671	England, the Italian in . . . . .	325
Bean-Stripe (A); also, Apple-Eating . . . . .	658	Englishman (The) in Italy . . . . .	327
Beatrice Signorini . . . . .	675	Epilogue to 'Asolando' . . . . .	688
Before . . . . .	243	Epilogue to 'Dramatis Personæ' . . . . .	519
Bifurcation . . . . .	533	Epilogue to 'Ferishtah's Fancies' . . . . .	664
Bishop Blougram's Apology . . . . .	437	Epilogue to 'Pacchiarotto' . . . . .	551
Bishop (The) orders his Tomb at Saint . . . . .	435	Epistle (An) containing the Strange Medical . . . . .	
Praxed's Church . . . . .	272	Experience of Karshish the Arab . . . . .	
Blot in the 'Scutcheon, A . . . . .	207	Physician . . . . .	422
Boot and Saddle . . . . .	320	Eurydice to Orpheus; a Picture by Leighton . . . . .	497
Boy (The) and the Angel . . . . .	597	Evelyn Hope . . . . .	216
Bratts, Ned . . . . .	232		
By the Fire-side . . . . .		FACE, A . . . . .	498
CALIBAN upon Setebos; or, Natural Theology . . . . .	492	Failure, Apparent . . . . .	518
in the Island . . . . .	651	Family, The . . . . .	646
Camel-Driver, A . . . . .	653	Fears and Scruples . . . . .	532
Camels, Two . . . . .	237	Ferishtah's Fancies . . . . .	642
Campagna, Two in the . . . . .	670	Fifine at the Fair; prelude and epilogue . . . . .	520
Cardinal and the Dog, The . . . . .	207	Filippo Baldinucci on the Privilege of Burial . . . . .	546
Cavalier Tunes . . . . .	543	Flight of the Duchess, The . . . . .	340
Cenciaja . . . . .	654	Florence, Old Pictures in . . . . .	221
Cherries . . . . .	359	Flower's Name, The . . . . .	210
'Childe Roland to the Dark Tower came' . . . . .	396	Flute-Music, with an Accompaniment . . . . .	679
Christmas-Eve . . . . .	448	Forgiveness, A . . . . .	538
Cleon . . . . .	603	Fra Lippo Lippi . . . . .	427
Clive . . . . .	291	French Camp, Incident of the . . . . .	317
Colombe's Birthday . . . . .	213	Fuseli, Mary Wollstonecraft and . . . . .	627
Confessional, The . . . . .	495		
Confessions . . . . .	317	GALUPPI's, A Toccata of . . . . .	220
Count Gismond . . . . .	214	Garden Fancies . . . . .	210
Cristina . . . . .	626	'Ghent to Aix, How they brought the Good . . . . .	
Cristina and Mònaldeschi . . . . .	565	News from' . . . . .	208
Croisic, The Two Poets of . . . . .	225	Girl. A Pearl, a . . . . .	667
'DE Gustibus——' . . . . .	496	Give a Rouse . . . . .	207
Deaf and Dumb; a Group by Woolner . . . . .		Glove, The . . . . .	323
		Gold Hair: a Story of Pornic . . . . .	472
		Gondola, In a . . . . .	330



## INDEX OF TITLES

Grammarian's Funeral, A . . . . .	350	Memorabilia . . . . .	245
Guardian-Angel, The. A Picture at Fano . . . . .	244	Men and Women . . . . .	419
HAKKADOSH, Jochanan . . . . .	630	Mesmerism . . . . .	321
Halbert and Hob . . . . .	588	Mihrab Shah . . . . .	649
Heretic's Tragedy, The . . . . .	351	Misconceptions . . . . .	238
Hervé Riel . . . . .	537	Monaldeschi, Cristina and . . . . .	626
Holy-Cross Day . . . . .	753	Muckle-Mouth Meg . . . . .	671
Home-Thoughts, from Abroad . . . . .	226	Mulýkkeh . . . . .	607
Home-Thoughts, from the Sea . . . . .	226	My Last Duchess . . . . .	317
House . . . . .	529	My Star . . . . .	232
Householder, The . . . . .	521	NATIONALITY in Drinks . . . . .	210
How it Strikes a Contemporary . . . . .	419	Natural Magic . . . . .	533
'How they brought the Good News from Ghent to Aix' . . . . .	208	Ned Bratts . . . . .	597
Hugues (Master) of Saxe-Gotha . . . . .	246	Net, The Pope and the . . . . .	670
Humility . . . . .	666	Never the Time and the Place . . . . .	641
'IMPERANTE Augusto natus est——' . . . . .	681	Now . . . . .	666
In a Balcony . . . . .	456	Numpholeptos . . . . .	534
In a Gondola . . . . .	330	OLD Pictures in Florence . . . . .	221
In a Year . . . . .	242	One Way of Love . . . . .	239
In Three Days . . . . .	241	One Word more. To E. B. B. . . . .	453
Inapprehensiveness . . . . .	669	PACCHIAROTTO (Of) and how he Worked in Distemper . . . . .	522
Incident of the French Camp . . . . .	317	Painter, The Lady and the . . . . .	672
Instans Tyrannus . . . . .	321	Pambo . . . . .	641
Italian (The) in England . . . . .	325	Pan and Luna . . . . .	620
Italy, The Englishman in . . . . .	327	Paracelsus . . . . .	14
Iván Ivánovitch . . . . .	590	Parting at Morning . . . . .	215
Ixion . . . . .	628	Patriot, The . . . . .	317
JAMES Lee's Wife . . . . .	467	Pauline; A Fragment of a Confession . . . . .	1
Jochanan Hakkadosh . . . . .	630	Pearl, a Girl. A . . . . .	667
Jocoseria . . . . .	622	Pheidippides . . . . .	586
Johannes Agricola in Meditation . . . . .	426	Pictor Ignotus . . . . .	426
KING Victor and King Charles . . . . .	185	Pictures (Old) in Florence . . . . .	221
LA Saisiaz . . . . .	554	Pied Piper of Hamelin, The—A Child's Story . . . . .	337
Laboratory, The . . . . .	212	Pietro of Abano . . . . .	609
Lady and the Painter, The . . . . .	672	Pillar at Sebzevar, A . . . . .	656
Last Duchess, My . . . . .	317	Pippa Passes . . . . .	165
Last Ride Together, The . . . . .	335	Pisgah Sights, I . . . . .	531
Last Word, A Woman's . . . . .	216	" " II . . . . .	531
Life in a Love . . . . .	241	" " III . . . . .	554
Light Woman, A . . . . .	335	Plot-Culture . . . . .	655
Likeness, A . . . . .	498	Poetics . . . . .	666
Lippo Lippi, Fra . . . . .	427	Ponte dell' Angelo, Venice . . . . .	673
Lost Leader, The . . . . .	208	Pope and the Net, The . . . . .	670
Lost Mistress, The . . . . .	215	Popularity . . . . .	245
Love among the Ruins . . . . .	217	Porphyria's Lover . . . . .	358
Love in a Life . . . . .	241	Pretty Woman, A . . . . .	239
Lovers' Quarrel, A . . . . .	218	Prospice . . . . .	496
Luria . . . . .	362	Protus . . . . .	355
MAGICAL Nature . . . . .	533	QUARREL, A Lovers' . . . . .	218
Marching Along . . . . .	207	RABBI Ben Ezra . . . . .	481
Martin Relph . . . . .	584	Relph, Martin. . . . .	584
Martin's (St.) Summer . . . . .	536	Rephan . . . . .	635
Mary Wollstonecraft and Fuseli . . . . .	627	Respectability . . . . .	240
Master Hugues of Saxe-Gotha . . . . .	246	Return (The) of the Druses . . . . .	248
May and Death . . . . .	496	Reverie . . . . .	686
Meeting at Night . . . . .	215	Roses, Women and . . . . .	242
Melon-Seller, The . . . . .	643		

# INDEX OF TITLES

Rosny . . . . .	666	Time's Revenges . . . . .	325
Rudel to the Lady of Tripoli . . . . .	452	Toccata of Galuppi's, A . . . . .	220
ST. MARTIN'S Summer . . . . .	536	Too Late . . . . .	477
Saisiaz, La . . . . .	554	'Transcendentalism' . . . . .	419
Saul . . . . .	226	Tray . . . . .	596
Saxe-Gotha, Master Hugues of . . . . .	246	Tripoli, Rudel to the Lady of . . . . .	452
Scruples, Fears and . . . . .	532	Twins, The . . . . .	334
Sebzever, A Pillar at . . . . .	656	Two, Camels . . . . .	653
Serenade (A) at the Villa . . . . .	238	Two in the Campagna . . . . .	237
Shah Abbas . . . . .	644	Two Poets of Croisic, The . . . . .	565
Shop . . . . .	530	Tyrannus, Instans . . . . .	321
Sibrandus Schafnaburgensis . . . . .	211	VILLA, Up at a—Down in the City . . . . .	219
Sludge (Mr.), 'The Medium' . . . . .	499	Vogler, Abt . . . . .	479
Soliloquy of the Spanish Cloister . . . . .	212	WALL, A . . . . .	522
Solomon and Baïris . . . . .	625	Wanting is—What? . . . . .	622
Song . . . . .	215	Waring . . . . .	332
Sordello . . . . .	97	Which? . . . . .	669
Soul's Tragedy, A . . . . .	384	White Witchcraft . . . . .	667
Spanish Cloister, Soliloquy of the . . . . .	212	Wife (Any) to Any Husband . . . . .	235
Speculative . . . . .	667	Wollstonecraft (Mary) and Fuseli . . . . .	627
Star, My . . . . .	232	Woman's Last Word, A . . . . .	216
Statue (The) and the Bust . . . . .	355	Women and Roses . . . . .	242
Strafford . . . . .	66	Worst of It, The . . . . .	474
Summum Bonum . . . . .	667	YEAR, In a . . . . .	242
Şun, The . . . . .	647	Youth and Art . . . . .	497
TALE, A . . . . .	582		
Through the Metidja to Abd-el-Kadr . . . . .	209		

# INDEX TO FIRST LINES

## OF

### SHORTER POEMS AND SONGS

A CERTAIN neighbour lying sick to death . . . . .	646	First I salute this soil of the blessed, river and rock! . . . . .	586
A king lived long ago . . . . .	180	Flower—I never fancied, jewel—I profess you! . . . . .	533
A Rabbi told me: On the day allowed . . . . .	617	Fortù, Fortù, my beloved one . . . . .	327
A simple ring with a single stone . . . . .	667	Frowned the Laird on the Lord: 'So, red-handed I catch thee?' . . . . .	672
Ah, but how each loved each, Marquis! . . . . .	626	Give her but a least excuse to love me . . . . .	176
Ah, did you once see Shelley plain . . . . .	245	Going his rounds one day in Isphahan . . . . .	643
Ah, Love, but a day . . . . .	467	Good to forgive . . . . .	554
Ah, the bird-like fluting . . . . .	679	Grand rough old Martin Luther . . . . .	334
All I believed is true! . . . . .	321	Grow old along with me! . . . . .	481
All I can say is—I saw it! . . . . .	533	Gr-r-r—there go, my heart's abhorrence! . . . . .	212
All June I bound the rose in sheaves . . . . .	239	HAD I but plenty of money, money enough and to spare . . . . .	219
All service ranks the same with God . . . . .	167	Hamelin Town's in Brunswick . . . . .	337
All's over, then: does truth sound bitter . . . . .	215	Heap cassia, sandal-buds and stripes . . . . .	46
All that I know . . . . .	232	He was the man—Pope Sixtus, that Fifth, that swineherd's son . . . . .	671
All the breath and the bloom of the year in the bag of one bee: . . . . .	667	'Heigho!' yawned one day King Francis . . . . .	323
Among these latter busts we count by scores . . . . .	355	Here is a story shall stir you! Stand up, Greeks dead and gone . . . . .	603
And so you found that poor room dull . . . . .	535	Here is a thing that happened. Like wild beasts whelped, for den . . . . .	588
'And what might that bold man's announcement be' . . . . .	647	Here's my case. Of old I used to love him. Here's the garden she walked across . . . . .	532
Anyhow, once full Dervish, youngsters came . . . . .	644	Here's to Nelson's memory! . . . . .	210
As I ride, as I ride . . . . .	209	Here was I with my arm and heart . . . . .	477
Ask not one least word of praise . . . . .	658	High in the dome, suspended, of Hell, sad triumph, behold us! . . . . .	628
'As like as a Hand to another Hand!' . . . . .	471	Hist, but a word, fair and soft . . . . .	246
At the midnight in the silence of the sleep-time . . . . .	688	How I lived, ere my human life began . . . . .	685
'Ay, but, Ferishtah,'—a disciple smirked . . . . .	655	How of his fate, the Pilgrims' soldier-guide. . . . .	651
BEAUTIFUL Evelyn Hope is dead . . . . .	216	How very hard it is to be . . . . .	409
Boot, saddle, to horse, and away . . . . .	207	How well I know what I mean to do . . . . .	232
But do not let us quarrel any more . . . . .	432	I AM a goddess of the ambrosial courts . . . . .	421
But give them me, the mouth, the eyes, the brow! . . . . .	497	I am a painter who cannot paint! . . . . .	175
CHRIST God who savest man, save most . . . . .	318	I am indeed the personage you know . . . . .	538
Cleon the poet (from the sprinkled isles . . . . .	448	I am poor brother Lippo, by your leave . . . . .	427
Could I but live again . . . . .	531	I and Clive were friends—and why not? Friends! I think you laugh, my lad . . . . .	603
Crescenzo, the Pope's Legate at the High Council, Trent . . . . .	670	I could have painted pictures like that youth's I dream of a red-rose tree . . . . .	242
DARED and Done: at last I stand upon the summit . . . . .	554	I hear a voice, perchance I heard . . . . .	27
Dear and great Angel, wouldst thou only leave . . . . .	244	I know a Mount, the gracious Sun perceives I know there shall dawn a day . . . . .	452
Dear, had the world in its caprice . . . . .	240	I leaned on the turf . . . . .	469
Dervish—(though yet un-dervished, call him so . . . . .	643	I—'Next Poet?' No, my hearties . . . . .	528
ESCAPE me? . . . . .	241	I only knew one poet in my life . . . . .	419
'FAME!' Yes, I said it and you read it . . . . .	565	I said—Then, dearest, since 'tis so . . . . .	335
Fear death?—to feel the fog in my throat . . . . .	496	I send my heart up to thee, all my heart . . . . .	330
Fee, faw, fum! bubble and squeak! . . . . .	353		
Fire is in the flint: true, once a spark escapes . . . . .	649		

# INDEX TO FIRST LINES

I sprang to the stirrup, and Joris, and he . . .	208	Oh Galuppi, Baldassaro, this is very sad to find! . . .	220
I've a Friend, over the sea . . .	325	Oh, good gigantic smile o' the brown old earth . . .	470
I will be happy if but for once . . .	666	Oh, Love—no, Love! All the noise below, Love . . .	664
I will be quiet and talk with you . . .	468	Oh, the beautiful girl, too white . . .	472
I wish that when you died last May . . .	496	Oh, to be in England . . .	226
I wonder do you feel to-day . . .	277	Oh, what a dawn of day . . .	218
If a stranger passed the tent of Hóseyñ, he cried 'A churl's!' . . .	607	Once I saw a chemist take a pinch of powder . . .	654
If one could have that little head of hers . . .	498	On the first of the Feast of Feasts . . .	517
If you and I could change to beasts, what beast should either be? . . .	667	On the sea and at the Hogue, sixteen hundred ninety-two . . .	531
Is all our fire of shipwreck wood . . .	467	One day it thundered and lightened . . .	627
It happened thus! my slab, though new . . .	669	Only the prism's obstruction shows aright . . .	496
It is a lie—their Priests, their Pope . . .	213	Others may need new life in Heaven . . .	667
It once might have been, once only . . .	497	Out of the little chapel I burst . . .	396
It was roses, roses, all the way . . .	317	Out of your whole life give but a moment! . . .	666
JUNE was not over . . .	239	Overhead the tree-tops meet . . .	184
Just for a handful of silver he left us . . .	208	Over the ball of it . . .	531
KARSHISH, the picker-up of learning's crumbs . . .	422	Over the sea our galleys went . . .	49
Kentish Sir Byng stood for his King . . .	207	PETRUS Aponensis—there was a magician! . . .	609
King Charles, and who'll do him right now? . . .	207	Plague take all your pedants, say I! . . .	211
'Knowledge deposed;' then!—groaned whom that most grieved . . .	656	Pray, Reader, have you eaten ortolans . . .	642
LAST night I saw you in my sleep . . .	667	QUERY: was ever a quainter . . .	522
Let them fight it out, friend! things have gone too far . . .	243	Quoth an inquirer, 'Praise the Merciful! . . .	649
Let's contend no more, Love . . .	216	Quoth one: 'Sir, solve a scruple! No true sage . . .	653
Let us begin and carry up this corpse . . .	350	ROOM after room . . .	241
'Look, I strew beans' . . .	658	Round the cape of a sudden came the sea . . .	215
MAN I am and man would be, Love—merest man and nothing more . . .	647	Round us the wild creatures, overhead the trees . . .	643
May I print, Shelley, how it came to pass . . .	543	SAID Abner, 'At last thou art come! Ere I tell, ere thou speak . . .	226
Morning, evening, noon and night . . .	320	Savage I was sitting in my house, late . . .	521
Moses the Meek was thirty cubits high . . .	641	See, as the prettiest graves will do in time . . .	215
My Father was a scholar and knew Greek . . .	683	Shall I sonnet sing you about myself? . . .	529
My first thought was, he lied in every word . . .	359	She should never have looked at me . . .	214
My grandfather says he remembers he saw, when a youngster long ago . . .	584	Sing me a hero! Quench my thirst . . .	596
My heart sank with our Claret-flask . . .	210	So far as our story approaches the end . . .	335
My love, 'this is the bitterest, that thou . . .	235	So, friend, your shop was all your house! . . .	530
NAY but you, who do not love her . . .	215	So, I shall see her in three days . . .	241
Never any more . . .	242	'So say the foolish!' Say the foolish so, Love? . . .	667
Never the time and the place . . .	641	So, the head aches and the limbs are faint . . .	651
Nobly, nobly Cape Saint Vincent to the North-west died away . . .	226	So, the three Court-ladies began . . .	670
'No, boy, we must not'—so began . . .	546	So, the year's done with! . . .	215
No, for I'll save it! Seven years since . . .	518	Solomon King of the Jews and the Queen of Sheba Balkis . . .	625
No more wine? then we'll push back chairs and talk . . .	437	Some people hang portraits up . . .	498
No protesting, dearest . . .	536	Stand still, true poet that you are! . . .	245
Not with my Soul, Love!—bid no Soul like mine . . .	656	Still ailing, Wind? Wilt be appeased or no? . . .	469
Now, don't, sir! Don't expose me! Just this once! . . .	499	Still you stand, still you listen, still you smile! . . .	534
Now that I, tying thy glass mask tightly . . .	212	Stop, let me have the truth of that! . . .	475
O THE old wall here! How I could pass . . .	522	Stop playing, poet! May a brother speak? . . .	419
O worthy of belief I hold it was . . .	620	Stop rowing! This one of our bye-canal . . .	673
Of the million or two, more or less . . .	321	Such a starved bank of moss . . .	565
Oh but is it not hard, Dear? . . .	627	Suppose that we part (work done, comes play) . . .	641
		[Supposed of Pamphylax the Antiochene . . .	483

## INDEX TO FIRST LINES

TAKE the cloak from his face, and at first . . .	244	Verse-making was least of my virtues: I	
That fawn-skin-dappled hair of hers . . .	239	viewed with despair . . . . .	655
That second time they hunted me . . .	325		
That's my last Duchess painted on the wall	317	WANTING is—what? . . . . .	622
That was I, you heard last night . . .	238	We two stood simply friend-like side by side	669
The fancy I had to-day . . . . .	520	We were two lovers; let me lie by her . . .	533
The grey sea and the long black land . . .	215	What a pretty tale you told me . . . . .	582
The Lord, we look to once for all . . .	352	What girl but, having gathered flowers . . .	667
The morn when first it thunders in March . .	221	What, he on whom our voices unanimously	670
'The Poet's age is sad: for why?' . . . .	665	What, I disturb thee at thy morning-meal . .	654
'The poets pour us wine—' . . . . .	551	What is he buzzing in my ears? . . . . .	495
The rain set early in to-night . . . . .	358	What it was struck the terror into me? . .	681
The swallow has set her six young on the rail	468	What's become of Waring . . . . .	332
The year 's at the spring . . . . .	171	When I vexed you and you chid me . . . .	653
There is nothing to remember in me . . .	471	Where the quiet-coloured end, of evening	
There's a palace in Florence, the world		smiles . . . . .	217
knows well . . . . .	355	'Why from the world,' Ferishtah smiled,	
There's a woman like a dew-drop . . . .	277	'should thanks . . . . .	664
There's heaven above, and night by night .	426	'Will sprawl, now that the heat of day is best	492
There they are, my fifty men and women .	453	Will you hear my story also . . . . .	622
'They tell me, your carpenters,' quoth I to		Wish no word unspoken, want no look away!	644
my friend the Russ . . . . .	590	Woe, he went galloping into the war . . .	666
This is a spray the Bird clung to . . . .	238	Would it were I had been false, not you .	474
This now, this other story makes amends .	630	Would that the structure brave, the manifold	
This strange thing happened to a painter		music I build . . . . .	479
once . . . . .	675		
This was my dream: I saw a Forest . . .	668	YET womanhood you reverence . . . . .	672
Thus the Mayne glideth . . . . .	57	'You are sick, that's sure'—they say . . .	603
Touch him ne'er so lightly, into song he		You blame me that I ran away . . . . .	672
broke . . . . .	622	You groped your way across my room I the	
'Twas Bedford Special Assize, one daft Mid-		dear dark dead of night . . . . .	646
summer's Day . . . . .	597	You in the flesh and here . . . . .	668
		You know, we French stormed Ratisoon .	317
Up jumped Tokay on our table . . . . .	210	Your ghost will walk, you lover of trees .	225
		You'll love me yet!—and I can tarry . .	181
VANITY, saith the preacher, vanity! . . .	435	You're my friend . . . . .	340



SET IN  
GREAT BRITAIN  
AT THE  
UNIVERSITY PRESS  
OXFORD.  
PRINTED BY  
RICHARD CLAY AND  
COMPANY, LTD.  
BUNGAY.







